





# MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 08

*Flying Alone*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià)

(网游之战御天下)

by

**Flying Alone**

(孤单地飞)

# Synopsis

---

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 701: Book of Revelations - The Eighth Chapter

---

Even though Snowbark was already a Level 142 high level player, he would not be fast enough to stop SuikoTaro and his party members from getting away through the entrance of the dungeon. For that, they could only sigh heavily, to express how unfortunate it was for them. After all, it was really a rare opportunity for them to gaze their eyes upon a rare specimen of beauty like Chen Xue Yao.

However, there was one person who stayed behind instead of running into the dungeon like the other 5 of his party members. Snowbark burst into laughter when he saw that. Since that the pretty lady had escaped, they decided to have some 'fun' with the idiot who stayed.

"You swine! You're quite daring yourself, aren't you?" Three of The Myth players blocked off Zhang Yang's escape route so that he could not escape later. The remaining players in front of Zhang Yang were staring at Zhang Yang with their arms folded. They looked like they were waiting for something 'interesting' to happen.

"Alright, take off all your equipment and bark like a dog, now!" Snowbark laughed continuously.

"Take them off now! Take them off!" the others were beginning to hustle Zhang Yang up.

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and smiled vaguely. Then he said, "I'm not like you. You guys rather act like animals while you can act like human beings!"

"F\*ck you! How dare you scold us!" one of them who was only Level 10 pulled out his blade and pointed at Zhang Yang. Well, he tried to act tough because Snowbark was there.

Pff!

Zhang Yang was not in the mood to play around. He stabbed his sword hard into the chest of that player. His sword went through the chest of the player clean and caused 100,000 damage to the arrogant player. It was just a regular attack which caused an immensely terrifying amount of damage! That attack had completely killed off that player. With a powerful swing of his sword, the dead body of that player spun midair and dropped heavily onto the ground.

Most of the players had experienced a PvP match. However, not all of them would have the opportunity to see such a bloody scene. In an instant, other than Snowbark himself, the others were terrified to the point that they froze. They were all just Level 10+. It was a coincidence that Snowbark brought his little brother along to grind their levels. So, they came here together to farm for Experience Points and Equipment.

Well, the player that got slaughtered by Zhang Yang was in fact Snowbark's little brother. He just joined 'God's Miracle' a couple of days ago. Because he had an elder brother who had reached Level 142, he thought that he could act like a boss in the game. Even though he saw that the equipment on Zhang Yang was flashy as f\*ck, he still taunted Zhang Yang. Judging by the appearance of Zhang Yang's shiny equipment, anyone should know that Zhang Yang was definitely not a low level player.

Of course, Snowbark could not bear to see his little brother killed right in front of him. So he raised his staff and shot out a blast of flame towards Zhang Yang.

'-8,763!'

An insignificant amount of damage was dealt on Zhang Yang. That only moved about 1% of his HP bar. After all, Zhang Yang's Maximum HP had increased up to 950,000 HP.

Including Snowbark himself, everyone dropped their jaws,



staring at Zhang Yang! They were all on the same party as Snowbark. So they could clearly see the amount of damage Snowbark caused on Zhang Yang. He had only dealt approximately 9,000 damage to a player they had thought weak. Judging by that, they could deduce that Zhang Yang had over 1,000,000 HP!

He must have activated his Transformation Skill!

Snowbark had more experience and knowledge than everyone in his party. He immediately made an assumption based on his own logic. He quickly took a few steps backward so that he could defend himself against any surprise attack from Zhang Yang. At the same instant, he also activated his own Transformation Skill --- Class C Infernal Wolf Inheritance!

Zhang Yang staggered for one brief moment upon seeing that. What the hell is wrong with this guy? Zhang Yang had not revealed his true identity yet, and this guy was already acting extra cautious. He even activated his final triumph card! However, Zhang Yang would never waste his {God of War Transformation} on a small fry, like Snowbark. So he charged towards Snowbark without activating his Inheritance Transformation.

"You prick! How dare you kill my little brother! I shall tear you into pieces!" Snowbark became more confident than before after he activated his Inheritance Transformation. He raised his staff and pointed its tip at Zhang Yang. Then he began to chant a spell.

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang waved his hand and activated his Skill. Snowbark could feel that he was being pulled by an irresistible force towards Zhang Yang. The force was so strong that Snowbark almost kissed Zhang Yang's face after he was pulled to Zhang Yang's front, and stopped there all of a sudden. Of course, his chanting had been interrupted, completely.

'-112,349!'



With a swing across his throat, Snowbark received a tremendous amount of damage. He initially had over 180,000 HP. Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, he boosted his Maximum HP up to a total of 1,800,000 HP. Of course, he could not afford to receive such a high amount of damage! Furthermore, that was not the only attack Zhang Yang launched. Upon his regular strike which filled up his Rage Bar, he activated his {God of War Battle Axe} closely with his previous attack and dealt '-328,733!' to Snowbark! Zhang Yang had begun revealing his wretched claws at his 'victims'.

Let's just say if Snowbark takes the first hit without dying, the second hit that yet to land on him would be a fatal blow to his guts!

He quickly activated his {Apparate} and got himself out of the danger with the attempt to pull some distance between himself and Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang pursued on with his {Charge}. It was impossible to chant a spell in peace when you're confronting Zhang Yang!

"God damn it!" Snowbark began to panic. He gulped down a bottle of [Temporary Invincibility Potion] and a golden light flashed through his entire body. A glittering barrier covered him entirely, keeping him safe from Zhang Yang's attacks. So he no longer feared Zhang Yang anymore. He used the little time he bought for himself to chant his spell.

It was really ironic that this guy was using a [Temporary Invincibility Potion] that Zhang Yang mass-produced in the market. It was like crushing a rock on one's feet. Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at himself. However, the effect of the potion would wear off after 5 seconds. So, Zhang Yang allowed Snowbark to do what he wanted to do.

Snowbark threw out two spells at Zhang Yang consecutively. Each blow caused about 75,000 damage to Zhang Yang. With his Inheritance Transformation activated, Snowbark had acquired a boost of additional 200% damage that almost doubled the initial

amount of damage he could deal on Zhang Yang. That had made his attack quite effective on Zhang Yang!

If another regular player without activating his or her Inheritance Transformation was standing there, these two hits would have taken at least half of his or her HP bar! Zhang Yang lost over 20% of his HP. Because of that, Zhang Yang's remaining HP was almost similar to Snowbark's HP now.

After seeing Snowbark performing outstandingly, his 'underlings' were screaming and shouting in excitement. They even tried to butter Snowbark up by saying some nice hearing words. However, good things will never last forever. 5 seconds later, the golden barrier faded. The effect of the [Temporary Invincibility Potion] was over.

1 second before the effect of [Temporary Invincibility Potion] was over, Zhang Yang had activated his {Charge Up Strike}. The moment Snowbark came out of that protective 'egg shell', Zhang Yang's 1-second global cooldown for his Skills was over as well. He struck his {God of War Devastation} right in the face of Snowbark!

'-1,010,658!'

Before Snowbark could even react, his HP bar was struck down to approximately 300,000 HP! Meanwhile, he had not realized that his HP bar had reduced so much. He continued to chant his spell in comfort.

On the other hand, his 'underlings' could see everything, crystal clear from the side. They were so shocked that their eyes were wide open, and their jaws were dropped.

One single attack that could cause 1,000,000 damage? What sorcery was that?! In their puny hearts, 1,000,000 damage was so terrifying that even a Celestial Tier boss would be instantly killed!

Snowbark finally threw another {Fire Ball} at Zhang Yang and caused about 82,000 damage to him. Just as he was about to taunt

Zhang Yang, he finally realized that his HP bar was about to hit the bottom. His face instantly turned pale.

{Killing Cleave}!

'-472,212!'

"Argh!" Snowbark did not even get his chance to activate his life-saving Skill or any other accessories that could have saved his life -- only if he ever had an Accessory that could grant him a brief moment of invincibility to begin with, which he did not. Or else, he would not have taken a bottle of [Temporary Invincibility Potion]. One bottle of that thing cost 500 gold pieces! It was extremely expensive! After screaming miserably like a little b\*tch, he collapsed onto the ground and dead.

However, after one brief moment, he stood back up on his feet and both of his HP bar and MP bar went back up to 10%! He did not even look back at Zhang Yang as he began to race towards the dungeon's entrance.

Huh?

Zhang Yang was shocked to see that. Could Snowbark be carrying a [Resurrection Monolith] with him all the while? That was some great stuff! Zhang Yang was determined to snatch that item from Snowbark.

He immediately activated his {Spear of Obliteration} and threw the energy surging spear straight towards Snowbark! However, Snowbark was agile. He ran so fast that he was already reaching the dungeon entrance. Well, it remained a big question on whether Zhang Yang's {Spear of Obliteration} hits Snowbark or not!

On that critical moment, 4 players charged out of the entrance! It was Chen Xue Yao and the other male players, except SuikoTaro.

Snowbark revealed a relief facial expression when he was just a few steps from entering the dungeon entrance. However, he froze immediately when the 4 shadows emerged from the entrance.

Before he could even react, his body had smacked straight into Unkillable Cockroach! That stopped him from entering the dungeon in time. Meanwhile, the {Spear of Obliteration} arrived!

'-118,893!'

The Inheritance Transformation would be considered over once the player died. Snowbark only had 10% of HP and MP on him when he was resurrected. That being said, he only had approximately 18,000 HP left on him. There was no way that he could have survived that attack. He immediately let out a miserable scream once again and stayed dead on the ground this time! Well, he even dropped a blue covered book on the ground upon his death.

"Get that book! Quickly! Get it back for me!" Snowbark screamed like a little b\*tch in his party chat. It sounded like he was terrified.

Huh?

Zhang Yang widened his eyes as he saw that those underlings of Snowbarks charging towards the book. So he immediately activated his {Horizontal Sweep} and wiped them out like he was cleaning dust off the floor.

Meanwhile, Unkillable Cockroach and the others were staring at Zhang Yang like they had just met a god. Those players that they thought they could never defeat were all lying dead on the ground before them! They had remembered clearly how regretful those dead players looked like.

Could it be really him? After being with him all the while, was he not tricking them from the start? Could he be the real Zhan Yu?

Phew! If he really is, then they would have something to show off to their friends!

Zhang Yang picked up the book and took a closer look at it. He was surprised to have picked up such a unique piece of item! His

face was filled with joy, immediately!

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 8] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: All party member within the range of 100 meters from the holder will receive an increment of 5% damage dealt. Similar effects will not stack. If the holder is killed, he or she can resurrect immediately on the spot and have 10% HP and MP. This effect can only be triggered once every 10 hours. Similar effects will not stack. If the holder is killed by other players while the resurrection is under a cooldown period, then this item will surely be dropped from the holder. The item can only be brought along by the player. Cannot be destroyed.

Use: Combine with the item [Book of Revelation: Chapter 7] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 9] together.

However, it was really shocking to see that these goons were actually capable of getting a Legendary Item!

Furthermore, how would such an item be in the hands of Snowbark? Would Liu Wei really be that generous to let his subordinates keep hold of such a rare and valuable item? Snowbark was not a Tanker like Zhang Yang. Letting him hold on to such item would be disastrous and risky. It would be much safer if Liu Wei holds on to it himself. Well, he had over 12 Tankers on his 'Suicide Squad,' lining up to use their {Sacrifice} on him. Surely the chances of his survival would be much higher than Snowbark!

Then, this item must have been secretly kept by Snowbark himself. Liu Wei must have not known about this at all!

So, this explained why he was so afraid to die. He had immediately activated his Inheritance Transformation was because he was so worried that he might drop the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 8] if he ever dies. Unfortunate, he did die in the end. It gave not only pleasure to Zhang Yang but also a great 'gift'.

Well, Zhang Yang had really earned something really valuable, this time around!

# Chapter 702: Identity

---

With Cheng Xue Yao's help, the Unkillable Cockroach trio was able to waltz out of the dungeon with their chests held out proudly. They had said it then, it would not matter for them to lose their experience points since it was only worth a day's work. In fact, they were only saying that to get to Cheng Xue Yao's good side.

On the other hand, SuikaToro was greatly dismayed. He was Level 99 and was about to reach Level 100. He was that close to entering the Chaos Realm! A further chapter of the game! Hence, he bit down his pride, thought over it thoroughly and realized that he did not have the urge to gamble. If he is able to win the lovely lady's heart with the bet, he would be all in for it. However, at that point, it was already too late for him. Eventually, SuikaTaro had decided to give up all up and used a [Teleportation Scroll] to leave the dungeon.

With the dead bodies on the floor, the trio walked over to Zhang Yang. With excitement and admiration, they asked, "Are you really Zhan Yu?"

"The one and only." Said Zhang Yang with a smile. After he claimed the [Book of Revelation], he was rather in a good mood!

The trio jumped with joy and cheer happily. They opened the in-game screenshot function and played it cool with Zhang Yang, as if he was part of their crew! They were so happy that they could take a picture with the strongest player in China and possibly the whole world! Imagine the glory they could fish out with the picture with the tagline saying: Lookie here! World's Strongest is our bro~!

Zhang Yang smiled awkwardly and turned to Cheng Xue Yao. "The dungeon has been raided, and you've got the good friends here. I'll be leaving then."

"No. You did nothing there! You have been making those potions



for more than an hour!" Cheng Xue You puffed her cheeks out angrily. She knows that Leveling was important and Levels determined the strength of a character. She had realized that when she saw the Level 99 SuikaTaro slicing the monsters up like tomatoes! If he was that strong, how would Zhang Yang be when he is already Level 153?!

Even though she was indeed a beginner, she was still good at basic mathematics!

Zhang Yang laughed at her petty comments and bade her farewell, either way. He took out and equipped the [Lover's Charm] and teleported to Han Ying Xue.

The four girls were still clearing quests all over the place and were gathered together to fight a bunch of Spectres. Zhang Yang joined the party and helped clear a few monsters. In the meantime, Zhang Yang nudged Sun Xin Yu's slender waist and caught her attention. "Here. Have this. It's an extra life!"

Sun Xin Yu took the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 8] and kept it in her inventory. Zhang Yang had no problem handing over the book to Sun Xin Yu since she was a Thief class that would excel at keeping itself alive. Since Zhang Yang already possessed another book in his possession, the effects would not stack together. Might as well diversify the effect so that Sun Xin Yu could gain the extra damage buff when he is not around. The only person that Zhang Yang could not trust the book with was Wei Yan Er. The grumpy, reckless little girl was the worst candidate to have the book. When she gets into battle, she only cares about killing and not guarding herself. If she insists on having the book, Zhang Yang would rather have Han Ying Xue give her the [Resurrection Monolith] instead, since it possessed the same instant revival effect.

The party continued playing until it was nightfall in the real world. Cheng Xue Yao made Zhang Yang come to her for just a simple goodbye greeting before leaving the game. Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao logged out and bade each other goodbye before she

left the office. Zhang Yang could not read her like how he would read other females easily. The woman swayed her hips and catwalked out of the office with such a seductive aura around her. Her thin fabrics ironed themselves out on her butt, and Zhang Yang could make out the outline of her \*ss perfectly. Uff...That shape was just too good to be true!

...

Later that night, Cheng Xue Yao held a cup of red wine and sat down in front of her computer. She had just come out from her bath and was dressed in a loose and comfortable nightgown. Her supple breasts were plastered beneath her thin clothes as her long, dark hair sways in her back. She flung out her hair to sent a few water droplets off her wet hair.

"Meow~" A white Persian cat come out of a corner and leaped onto its master's lap. The woman gently caressed the feline and continued using her computer. She typed something on the keyboard and the image of Zhang Yang appeared on her screen. She read each article slowly and finally sighed. "I see that you're that famous, huh. But..why would you hire private investigators to dig out the past? What does Liu Wei have to do with you? Are you two more than just game rivals?"

"Meow!" The white Persian cat brushed her head on Xue Yao's chin, inviting her to play. The feline creature reached out with its claws and tried to clamber up. However, with little effort, the cat had only managed to pull down her nightgown and her clothes fell down her shoulders, revealing her supple breasts and pink nipples to the poor mammal. Sadly, she was alone in her room, then. Such an erotic scene could only be enjoyed by the cat alone. Her breasts were on par with Han Ying Xue's herself!

"Whitey? Where did you learn to undress a woman? Haha! Did you learn that from a bastard?" Cheng Xue Yao gently caressed the cat's head and placed the feline on the floor. She could not even bothered to adjust her gown and let it slide off her silky smooth

skin. Naked, she waltzed to the window of her room and stared down at the street beneath her. There was a smile on her face. A genuine smile.

"Mr. Zhang...Can I really trust you...?"

...

In a poorly lit room, somewhere at the corner of the city.

A beautiful woman was sitting in front of her computer talking with a rather good-looking man through the computer screen. The woman was tall and had a perfect complexion. Her body figure was good and slender. She even had a tiny mole on the corner of her lips that only enhanced her seductive aura.

"...Why...How could you fail!?" said the young man on the screen. There was an intense dissatisfaction in his voice as he grunted as he kept his composure stoic and cool. His complexion did not give off the kind of impression that an angry person would portray.

The woman wiped away her cold sweat. She had been following the man for more than 2 years now, she had seen the man with a face that speaks of peace and harmony, yet she knew that he was capable of making people disappear. Permanently.

She quickly explained her situation. "During the interview session, there was another woman there...She was chosen instead..."

"Oh. Is that so..." the man's stoic expression changed. Although it was extremely subtle, the woman was able to pick up hints of him being intrigued. "How could you, a woman like yourself lose to any other?"

"I'm sorry." The woman apologized while bowing her head in front of the computer screen.

"Hmm. In that case, I would really love to have a look at the woman who defeated your beauty," said the young man. Perhaps it was an unconscious move, but the man soon reverted back to

his stoic expression after smiling slightly. "Find another angle of attack. I have only 6 months left to get what I want!"

"Understood, sir," The woman bowed down. The connection ended.

The woman raised her head only to realize that the man had finally hung up. Her breathing was hastened and ragged. She pulled the drawer under the desk and took out a picture of Zhang Yang coming out from a limousine. The woman played with the piece of polyester plastic and grinned. "Sigh...You may be good looking, but who asked you to pick a fight with Young master Hua over a woman. Then again, perhaps you're in luck. At the very least. You could have me in your bed." She got off her seat and tossed the picture on the desk. She picked up her phone and fiddled with it for a moment before sighing heavily. "Why are the women in this country so oppressed! After this, I should go off to a place where no one knows me. Starting from scratch does not seem that bad..." The woman lay on the bed and snuggled with her pillow.

...

Zhang Yang could not help but notice that something was extremely odd. It was a sixth sense of his. Right when he had just received a new bootylicious boom secretary the other day, a few days later, another one comes in. Out of the original six secretaries he had, one of them had left the job for marriage, and the other left the country. In just five short days, he had lost two "obedient" secretaries! Was it all just coincidence?

Zhang Yang praised the organization's efficiency at picking secretaries for him, as the new one was also a beauty to behold. Although she was not on the same level as Cheng Xue Yao, she was at the very least better than the old one. There was something special about her. For others, some might pay attention to a girl's hairstyle, the smile, or other specific feature that made her easy to remember. As for the new secretary, it was her mole on the corner

of her lips. There was a certain seductive aura that was only emphasized when she smiled.

Zhang Yang could not put down the feeling of uneasiness about the latest girl. He decided to find someone to investigate her origins. It could be something bad. Perhaps, Liu Wei, or even the annoying Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang got into the game and was greeted immediately by Cheng Xue Yao. In the office, she was well-mannered, and even behaved like a real secretary! However, in the game, she was different. She addressed Zhang Yang rather intimately, as if both of them were close friends, not that it bothered Zhang Yang at all.

The woman's leveling speed was rather fast. In just a few days, she had managed to push herself to Level 30 and forced Zhang Yang to teach her the ways of a Spellcaster. Hence, the two of them developed a rather close friendship. Not as close as his real friends, though.

The other secretaries in his office were all using nicknames. Zhang Yang knew that Xiao Yue, Xiao Fan, or Xiao Min were pseudonyms. The latest girl was named Liu Xin Min, and she was an exceptional vixen. Whenever she has the chance, she would bring Zhang Yang files, coffee, or anything at all just to lower her chest and let Zhang Yang enjoy the full view of her deep cleavage. It was an act that Zhang Yang did not dislike much.

...

Playing games are the same as drawing, singing, or dancing. It's a matter of inert talent, that not all humans have. To play such a high-leveled realism game such as 'God's Miracle,' one would need to have the highest of reaction speeds. It was something that could be trained but required a long time to do so. We are not talking about a year or so. It has to start since birth.

Cheng Xue Yao does possess such a talent, and Zhang Yang felt that with a little cultivation, she could become one of the top 10

Spellcasters of the world! Hence, at the moment, Zhang Yang placed Xue Yao in the secondary guild with Fatty Han.

Although he was greatly intrigued by the sudden recruit, he was unable to resist the lady's charm. With just a simple feminine greeting, Fatty Han had succumbed to anything she asked for. For the next few days, Fatty Han had brought Xue Yao across numerous dungeons. In truth, she needn't even ask, Fatty Han was just a wolf and would wag his tail obediently to do anything that she asks.

Zhang Yang had two chapters of the [Book of Revelation], naturally, he was fascinated by the entire book. He went asking around for the book and if he is to find someone with the book, he would have to apologize for it. To complete the Legendary tier item, he would willing to go all ends, including, killing the player for it.

However, he bore little to no expectation of finding the rest of the chapters in time. Zhang Yang and Snowbark both had the chapters in hand, and the system had not indicated any information about it. It was unlike Inheritance Fragments. Even though someone might have the chapters in their inventory right beside him, he would not know about it! Hence, it would be extremely tough to find the rest of the chapters for the [Book of Revelation].

Zhang Yang got back home from the office and had dinner with the girls in his mansion. Later that day, he logged back into the game and was immediately recruited by the four girls to their party. They had found a good training ground which required him to be the tank. The five of them went to town and had their equipment fixed, items resupplied, and set off for Sauron's Castle to head towards their destination.

"Hey, dummy. I heard that you have a new friend," said Han Ying Xue with a smile on her face. Despite that, the tone of her voice carried a sharp intonation, as if her words could turn into blades

that would slice off Zhang Yang's neck.

That little brat!

Zhang Yang glared at Wei Yan Er angrily. Yesterday, Fatty Han had to go off to help Xiao Wei buy some grocery. He then begged Zhang Yang to babysit Cheng Xue Yao. Thus, he agreed and brought the girl to Poison Fireland dungeon. Unfortunately, the little girl found out about it and decided to pay them a visit. She had come all the way from Chaos Realm and found Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao walking into the dungeon. Zhang Yang caught the little brat and persuaded her to keep her mouth shut about it by bribing her with a brand new LV bag. Sadly, even that branded handbag was not enough for the little girl to keep her mouth shut.

Wait a minute...Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue both knew about it, and there was nothing that he could do about it. However, why was Daffodil Daydream being conscience about it...

The little brat... When Zhang Yang glared at her, she turned her head quickly to avert his gaze and whistled nonchalantly as if she had done nothing.



# Chapter 703: Mythical Dragon Realm

---

"What are you talking about? A new friend?" Zhang Yang shook his head vigorously. "Ahh. I know what you mean. It's a new recruit with potential! Fatty Han said that he had something to do. I simply brought the new recruit for a dungeon raid the other day. Is that what you mean by new friend?"

"Noob tank, I have you know that our policy of truth is as simple as lowering your head humbly. Deny your claim, and we will forcefully dig it out." Wei Yan Er poked Zhang Yang.

"Those who lower their heads humbly, can even escape the wrath of a God. Those who deny their claims, could even go back home safely. So, little brat, what are you planning to claim from me? I have always been a straightforward man." Zhang Yang was nearly cornered by Wei Yan Er.

"I heard that new friend of yours is a super beauty. Is that correct?" said Han Ying Xue, again with the smile of hers.

"Yeah...well...She might be. But compared to you and the Ice Queen, she's miles away. I don't think that anyone could be a match for the both of you." Zhang Yang tried to divert the heat away to cool down the raging beast.

Even though they knew that Zhang Yang was just trying to get away by saying sweet things, but words of praise coming from the one they love, was still something worth being happy about. Their stoic expression somewhat softened a little. Wei Yan Er, on the other hand, shrugged and sang a song, "Liar liar pants on fire, teabagging in the face of hell,~~"

"Little brat!" Zhang Yang snarled. "It's all because of you and your big mouth!" Zhang Yang clenched his fist. The little rascal was such a tough nut to crack that they had been receiving calls from the university, concerning Wei Yan Er's notorious activities. She was once caught setting fire in the campus' football field, and even

punctured a lecturer's car!

"Where are you taking me to? A gigolo shop?" said Zhang Yang as he realized that they had spent some time traveling.

"With that face of yours? I don't think anyone would want to have that."

"Hoho. You might be thinking too little of me. I certainly recall that a certain princess from a certain country has a certain interest to a certain someone here. Hm?"

"Please. Don't flatter yourself." Han Ying Xue waved him off and said, "We are going to a place called the Mythical Dragon Realm."

"What is that?" Zhang Yang heard of the name before, but could not remember from where.

"What? Even the official website released the advertisement for some time now! What are you doing on your computer all day? Surfing a certain web page for lonely dudes at night?"

"Hmm...I see that the foxy vixen has spent some time with you now, hasn't she?" said Han Ying Xue. By vixen, she meant Cheng Xue Yao.

"Come on! There's only a certain level of jealousy a woman can have!" Zhang Yang snarled back.

"The Mythical Dragon Realm is a map that spawns randomly. It's a little like a dungeon but there's no fixed spawn point. Furthermore, the monsters inside the Mythical Dragon Realm will not spawn again after being killed. Once all the bosses on the map are killed, the map will despawn." Daffodil Daydream explained it to Zhang Yang, based on the information she obtained.

After her explanation, Zhang Yang listened and remembered something similar that he had encountered in his past life. One thing was for sure, that the spawn point was never the same. Back then, the spawn points he encountered were beneath a willow tree. Other times, they were at the bottom of the ocean! Searching for

the entrance of the map is like searching hay in a stack of needles! Although difficult to find, the map does provide a lot of benefits. Sadly, even though he found the entrance, he did not have the chance to enter the map himself.

"We found the entrance to the Mythical Dragon Realm yesterday. It's called something-something Spectre Kingdom. The monsters inside were so strong that we cannot continue on without a tank!" said Han Ying Xue.

"Fufu. Looks like I'm useful, after all!" said Zhang Yang nonchalantly as he gave a sweet glare to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. However, the two ladies rolled their eyes at him, leaving Zhang Yang a little letdown.

The team had spent over two hours traveling across Mar Gaia Forest and finally reached the destination. The entrance was a glowing portal that was hidden between two large boulders. Despite its glowing appearance, the entrance was so well hidden that it was hard to see.

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow. He turned to Han Ying Xue and stared at her suspiciously. This sort of place could not be found that easily...Perhaps, Han Ying Xue had gotten lost and stumble upon the entrance by sheer luck... As expected of the broken compass...

"Why don't you bring in Fatty Han or Lost Dream?" said Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er gesticulated 'no' with her hands and said, "There's an entry limit. Only five could enter at a time."

"Huh. No wonder you picked me."

The Mythical Dragon Realms had four different modes. Small, Medium, Large, and Extra Large. 5 players would trigger the Small map, 25 players for the Medium map, 500 players for the Large map, and 10,000 players for the Extra-Large. As the map grows

bigger, so does the number of monsters and bosses inside. Naturally, the difficulty would be harder as well.

Wei Yan Er walked towards the entrance. However, when half of her body entered the portal, she was thrown outward.

"Eh? Could it be...? There's someone inside!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Hehehe. This place is way off the city. How could someone find this place? Looks like b\*tchy snow is not the only one who's a broken compass!"

"Please. I'm...I'm just bad with directions! That's all!" Han Ying Xue defended herself. She does not like it when someone points out her one weakness.

"Which bastards dared to take our map!" cried Wei Yan Er, on the verge of crying. She tried again and again to enter the portal but was kicked out each time.

"GRAH! We shouldn't have left the map, then this wouldn't happen!"

"It's not like we wanted to. Our equipment were in need of repairing."

The four ladies sighed. If the map was occupied when they had discovered it, it would not matter. They felt a little disgruntled since they were the first to enter the map, and had even killed a few of the monsters inside! How would they expect someone else to enter the map after just one night! The place was in the middle of nowhere!

"There is a chance we can enter. I think, if someone is killed inside the map, they would have to leave the map in order to revive. If they have no healers in their party, that is. Well, I'm going to sit down here for a while. If you guys insist on going in, let's wait here then. When one of them gets out, we can go in and kick them out!" said Zhang Yang.

Open-world events were meant to be fought over for. You may be

the first to discover them, but it does not mean that they would belong to you. How else would guilds wage wars against each other for random bosses or Territories!?

"Of course we will wait! The Map belongs to us! I will not let anyone else take it away from me!" said Wei Yan Er proudly.

"Well then. I shall lie down here and wait." Zhang Yang found himself a nice flat rock and lay down flat. He then gestured to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue and said, "Come, my fair ladies. Lay with me and talk about us!"

As Zhang Yang finished his sentence, he spotted a player that was riding on a mount that looked like a giant bug flying towards him. When he was closer, Zhang Yang could see the man's surprised reaction on his face when he spotted the party.

Zhang Yang smiled and rose back to his feet. "Looks like someone did die inside. That means, one of us may go in and kick four players' sorry butts. Who wants to do the honor?"

"ME! ME! OH! ME!" Wei Yan Er screamed with joy. She did not wait for Zhang Yang to give her the green light and leaped into the portal. As predicted, the player that had just arrived was a player that had died inside the map and was forced to revive outside the map.

"You..." The player was called "Eastern Lee". He was a Sacred Knight and perhaps was the only player in the party that could revive and heal. That was the reason why he had to get out and return to the map.

"Move aside! And, call out that girl who just went in! Don't make us kill you!" said Eastern Lee bravely. Even though he was facing four opponents, he stood tall and stoic with no signs of faltering. He then pointed his name tag and said, "Look here. I'm a member of the guild Eternal Flame! I'm not someone you can easily cross with!"

The only reason that Eastern Lee could be so boastful was due to Zhang Yang and the rest of the party had hidden their profile information. Even if Eastern Lee had one hundred players behind him, the man's ball will shrink back into his pelvis when he knows that he was threatening the strongest players in the world!

"Would Yan Er be okay inside?" said Han Ying Xue worriedly. Eastern Lee was Level 146 and was supposedly part of the main raiding party of the guild. If that is the case, the other four party members inside would be the same level as him. There was a chance that Scholar Musou and Longrich, the two strongest players of Eternal Flame would be inside the map! Both of them had A class Inheritances and would be on par with Wei Yan Er. It would be a rather dangerous situation for the little girl.

Zhang Yang proceeded to speak in the party channel, "Little brat! Come out now. I'll go in to wipe them all for you!"

"WHYYYY! Are you looking down at this little lady!?" said Wei Yan Er protesting his command. However, as hot-headed as she was, the little girl was not stupid. She knows that when Zhang Yang says something in this manner, it was for her own good. She then obeyed and came out of the portal, no sooner later.

They were having their conversation in the party channel, hence Eastern Lee could not hear their voice. From his perspective, he thought that Zhang Yang was calling out his party member inside out of fear. The man smiled smugly and scoffed. He then moved towards the entrance of the door blatantly and sighed. He saw Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu and was captivated by their beauty. If the Mythical Dragon Realm was not at stake there, he could have recruited them into the party and bragged of his position in the guild. Perhaps, with a few Mythical tier equipment and some gold, he felt confident that he could entice the two ladies over to his side.

"Excuses me. Since when did we allow you walk inside?" Zhang Yang roared and attacked the man. Zhang Yang sheer force had

knocked Eastern Lee back a few steps and took more than 100,000 damage. The attack alone had drained away more than 50% of his HP.

Wei Yan Er popped out of the portal and jumped at the player.

"Hmph. Prudent." Sun Xin Yu dashed with lightning speed and stabbed Eastern Lee behind his back. Her two swords danced around and dealt three instances of damage.

Eastern Lee falls immediately to the ground dead. With three ultra-strong DPS concentrated their attacks on a single player, no player could survive unless they are in their Transformation state. Still, if he at least knew the identity of his killers, he would be less confused and bewildered!

As such, Eastern Lee was enraged. He passed the information of what that had just happened outside the portal to the players inside. He had asked them to prepare for an assault. If they cannot deal with the players standing guard outside the portal, there was no way for him to go in the map to support them.

Fortunately, the players inside had not ventured deep. With haste, the four players inside rushed to the exit. However, at that moment, they did not think of a proper plan. What if it was just a strategy to lure them out? If the four of them exits the map, the enemy could go in easily! Since the map only allowed 5 players at a time, they cannot do anything until Zhang Yang clears the map or dies halfway through! It was a gamble that they could not afford to bet!

As they were hesitating, Zhang Yang entered the map and found himself surrounded by four players.

Scholar Musou, Sniper, Level 148!

Longrich, Cryomancer, Level 149!

Zhang Yang locked his targets on the two generals of Eternal Flame.



# Chapter 704: The Four Man Team

---

The enemies were all mounted on their mounts, however, mounts were prohibited from flying in the map, hence, the players were not airborne, but merely riding their mounts like a horse. Besides Scholar Musou and Longrich, the other player present was Ink Wave, a Level 146 Guardian and Wind Chime, a Level 145 Bandit. Obviously, all of them were of the guild Eternal Flame.

"Hey! Don't you know who we are?" said Wind Chime as he brandished his swords out, grinning with smugness on his face as he threatened Zhang Yang.

"Before you get your sad face off this map, pay us 100,000 gold coins as a compensation for wasting our time. Mind you, don't even try thinking of running away. Pay up or I will find you and kill you every single day. The only way you'll reach Level 150 is in your dreams!"

"Stupid. That's just being too nice to them." Ink Wave snorted.

Wind Chime laughed, "It's fine. Rather than wasting more time debating here. I'd rather kill him right now. We still have a boss to kill. I've read about it, there will be a strong boss in every Mythical Dragon Realm! Hehe. We might even get ourselves some nice Holy tier equipment!"

Longrich did not participate in the mocking spree. Instead, the man rode his mount closer to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang stood still motionless. When Longrich got close enough, he widened his eyes and said, "You're...Zhan Yu!"

"What..?"

Everyone stopped talking and paid attention to Longrich. Was that really Zhan Yu? The man who's the top in the game!?

Zhang Yang laughed hysterically and said, "Well...I guess I can't help it when I'm just handsome!"

Zhang Yang then summoned the Phoenix and Felice out to the open.

When the fiery bird emerged out, everyone's doubts were immediately cleared. It was his trademark. As for Fatty Han, no one would even care.

There's no doubt about it then, a man with a shield, a fiery bird, a young female Battle Companion, the one and only legendary Guardian, Zhan Yu!

Wind Chime sucked in a deep breath. It was at that moment when he knew he f\*cked up big time. If he knew earlier that the man was Zhan Yu of Lone Desert Smoke, he would rather quit Eternal Flame and not offend the strongest player in the entire world! The traumatizing event that had happened three to four days ago, the period when Lone Desert Smoke was still hunting every member of Eternal Flame flashed through his mind. He does not want to be the reason Lone Desert Smoke resumes the hunt!

Longrich remained cool as a cucumber and said, "Zhan Yu. You're strong. I have to admit that I can never defeat you in a fair fight. Yet, I'm sure that you cannot defeat the four of us at the same time. I'll have you understand that both Lone Desert Smoke and Eternal Flame are guilds that make China stand strong. Our petty quarrel will bring nothing but defamation and discord between each other. Now, let's talk about fair play. We were the ones who found this place before you did. By all means, make yourself presentable and allow us to continue, while guild master Zhan Yu retreats."

Zhang Yang was impressed by his logic. However, he could not allow them to proceed, for it will only force him to get out of the realm!

Zhang Yang laughed when he noticed Longrich said something about him losing a 4v1 match. He was even impressed that a person of great combat skill could also have great negotiation technique.

"Yes. You are correct. However, you have made a mistake there. It's not just me alone here. It's three versus four! Even so, I can easily take care of all of you easily."

Longrich knew that. Zhang Yang was right there. Felice and the Phoenix pet both had Transformation skills. Their transformation skills was so strong that it made them as strong as a B class Inheritance players after Transforming, and with super strong equipment at that! They were the perfect killing machines! Longrich froze in place when Zhang Yang called his bluff. Longrich wanted to talk their way out instead of fighting. The fact that he knew Zhang Yang's pet and battle companion could Transform was not that big an issue. The main issue there and then was that the four of them might lose to Zhang Yang!

Out of the four of them, there were two A class Inheritances, one B class, and one C class. The most important issue was that they had no healer on the field. If Zhang Yang targets Wind Chime, the weakest of the four, the enemy might come in to reinforce Zhang Yang. If it happens to be a healer, Longrich and the rest would be killed without a doubt.

That was the reason why Longrich wanted to talk instead of letting his fists do the talking.

Scared as if he was being pushed to a corner, Wind Chime roared.

"You think I'm scared? We too have Battle Companions and battle mounts!" Perhaps it was the feeling of helplessness, or the fight or flight nature of humans, Wind Chime presented himself to be intimidating when compared to the rest, who were still hesitating to make the first move. Wind Chime drew his swords out and got ready to fight.

Zhang Yang smirked. He knew that man had no choice but to fight. So what, if they had battle companions and battle mount? Can they Transform like Felice and Phoenix could?

The enemies began to mutter amongst themselves. It does not

seem like they were debating, but were planning on how to tackle Zhang Yang. In the midst of discussing, Scholar Musou chuckled a little and turned to Zhang Yang, "Guild master Zhan Yu, are you determined to fight and be our enemy?"

"Without a doubt!"

Zhang Yang puffed and made the first move. Before the enemies could form a formation, Zhang Yang rode in with Phoenix and targeted Longrich first. A player's magic resistant is at its weakest before he could transform. However, since S class Inheritance Transformation could provide 40% magic nullification chance, magic attacks would be a lesser threat compared to physical attacks.

The reason he had chosen to attack Longrich first was due to the abnormal glare of the man. It felt like a viper hiding somewhere he could no see, waiting to strike at a given time.

The Phoenix bird swiftly glided through the ground and arrived beside Longrich in a split second. Without wasting time, Zhang Yang gracefully sliced across Longrich's side and dealt 118,932 damage. Zhang Yang damage had instantly hacked away 1/3 of the enemy's HP.

With that single attack, Zhang Yang's Rage bar was filled instantly. Zhang Yang locked on and landed a {God of War Devastation}.

{Apparate}!

Longrich's reaction was as quick as Zhang Yang himself. Before the attack could land on his character, Longrich blinked away like a flash of lightning, leaving Zhang Yang to cleave nothing but the air where he once stood.

Zhang Yang could not help but praise the man for his lightning fast reflexes. However, Zhang Yang's reaction speed was much faster than he. After all, he was the number one player in the

whole world. He activated various of skills and made himself appear right in front of Longrich, no matter how hard he tried to escape Zhang Yang's death grasp. Felice and Phoenix moved in to attack.

Wham! Bam!

Two tongues of flamethrowers were spat out, landing directly on Longrich's character and engulfing the man in a sea of flames. However, two words popped out.

Immune! Immune!

Longrich had activated {Ice Barrier}. Both of them might seem to have done a lot so far, but in reality, everything had only happened in less than 2 seconds! Just then, Scholar Musou and the other two side characters arrived within Zhang Yang's area of attack.

Zhang Yang smirked, it saved him time anyway. Zhang Yang immediately changed his target to Wind Chime. Both Zhang Yang and Wind Chime were melee classes, hence, for Wind Chime to attack him, he must expose himself to the danger of being attacked himself.

The attacks that landed on Zhang Yang first was of Scholar Musou's arrow. He landed three attacks, with each supposed to deal 80,000 basic attack. However, Zhang Yang had only taken less than 40,000 damage. Zhang Yang was not as surprised as Scholaar Musou. He was so shocked at Zhang Yang's strong defene. Just how tough could the Guardian be!?

Just then, Wind Chime and Ink Wave arrived and landed their attacks on Zhang Yang. Both Ink Wave and Wind Chime did not use {Charge} nor {Vanish,} since the skill will force the player to dismount. Just the mount alone could provide a huge boost of over 100,000 HP! Neither of them were willing to let that go to waste. Unlike Zhang Yang who had the skill {Beast Taming}, the enemies could not dismount and still have their pets active in the field. Once they dismount, the pet will disappear from the field in 2

seconds.

Zhang Yang welcomed the enemies with a quick {Horizontal Sweep}, dealing powerful 200,000 damage. The Phoenix spewed out a long trail of fire that dealt close to 80,000 fire damage to the opponent.

The combined attack had nearly killed the two of them. Panicked, Longrich quickly roared.

"Use our Inheritance Transformation skills now. Don't wait for the boss! If we can't even kill Zhan Yu now, we would not even have the chance to see the boss' shadow!"

Longrich disabled his {Ice Barrier} and quickly put on a [Bandage] to heal himself. However, he did not activate his Transformation skill immediately just yet. Although Transforming provided a massive boost to one's HP limit, it will not restore a player's HP. If the player had 50% before Transforming, he would have the same 50% HP after Transforming. By numbers, it will be a huge waste if they do not restore their HP back to 100% before Transforming.

Longrich was attacked by Zhang Yang earlier, if he uses his Inheritance Transformation right now, he would have only have 1,500,000 HP, which was far from his maximum HP of 9,000,000 HP!

Right then, if he could only restore 10,000 HP, he could gain over 300,000 HP after Transforming!

Zhang Yang saw Longrich's reaction and what he was about to do. Without hesitation, he activated the Phoenix Transformation skill and turned towards Longrich to attack. He would not allow Longrich to restore any HP. Zhang Yang had only managed to disrupt one out of the four enemies there. If all four of them were to activate their Inheritance Transformations, he would have to do the same if he wants to stay alive.

Zhang Yang shot towards Longrich at intense speed. Pushed to

his limits, Longrich did not care about restoring his HP anymore and activated his Transformation skill immediately. His Inheritance was the Death Swamp Inheritance. His Transformation had turned his entire character into a humanoid shaped pile of dark, gooey, viscous liquid. The same liquid flowed from his character to 40 meters around him, creating a swamp-like environment. Since the Phoenix was not flying, its movement speed was affected greatly when it tried to move in the thick liquid.

It was Longrich's Inheritance special effect, to reduce all target's movement speed by 50%! A damage-less {Thunder Strike}! The thing that made it strong was the slow effect did not have a fixed duration, but was a permanent aura effect!

Longrich took aim and shot a Frost arrow at Zhang Yang right after he became a swamp man. His Inheritance had granted him 400% damage boost! Zhang Yang had taken close to 160,000 damage from the Frost arrow.

The Phoenix pet had originally 700,000 HP at most. After Transforming, its HP would reach as high as 14,000,000 million. Combined with Zhang Yang's own close to 1 million HP, both Zhang Yang and the Phoenix's shared HP bar was as high as 15 million. Even though his own HP was not full when he activated the Phoenix's Transformation skill, it was still as high as 13 million HP!

Wind Chime and Ink Wave had consumed a bottle of potion and activated their Transformation skills. One grew twin horns from the forehead and gain a tail and an ox's lower half. Wind Chime had turned into a minotaur. On the other hand, Ink Wave had turned into a human shaped pile of mud.

C class Inheritance, Minotaur Inheritance and the B class Inheritance, the Mud Cloud Inheritance.

However, even though they may have taken a bottle of healing potion earlier, they had suffered a great deal of damage from



earlier attacks and had only managed recover 50% HP, despite activating their Inheritance Transformation. Each Inheritance Transformation will grant the player a healing skill. Right then, it will only a matter of time for them to use it to save themselves.

Scholar Musou was the only player around that has a full health at then. He hesitated a little but activated his own Transformation skill, after the others did. His Inheritance was the A class Lord of Flame Inheritance, granting him the appearance of a burning stone golem.

Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Mobility Potion] and regained his original movement speed. The effect of the potion was shared with the Phoenix, since Zhang Yang was currently mounted on the Phoenix. Hence, with his original speed restored, Zhang Yang zoomed in and reached Longrich's face.

Shush!

He swung his sword, but it dealt no damage to Longrich as the swords cleaved the air beside him.

Longrich's face lost all its blood, turning him pale white. He knew the skill. He had seen it once before with his own eyes. It was a skill that would allow Zhang Yang to deal a super-charged up attack after missing a target at the first strike!

Panicked, Longrich calmed himself down and activated his accessory's Invincibility effect.

As the game number one player, Zhang Yang's entire character was often analyzed from top to bottom. Everyone knew about him and his skills, as if he was a major world-level boss. Hence, almost all professional players knew about Zhang Yang's {Charge Up Strike} and the devastating power that it held!

Longrich's reaction to activate his Invincibility skill was indeed a wise move.

# Chapter 705: Dominance

---

There is a saying in olden China warfare, that one should not use dirty tricks to win a war. But that was in the olden days, and the future is now!

Zhang Yang smirked evilly and turned around to attack Wind Chime.

Shush!

Another sword miss!

Huh? Aik?

It was not just Wind Chime. He was about to lose his mind when Zhang Yang changed his target abruptly. In fact, Ink Wave, Longrich, and Scholar Musou was stunned, What was happening? Could {Charge Up Strike} be used without a cooldown? Could the effect of {Charge Up Strike} be stacked? Or was it something else...?

Longrich widened his eyes as he realized the truth, they had been duped. It was not a skill, but a simple basic attack that was meant to miss! When Longrich realized that, it was too late for him. He had wasted a precious skill!

Right then, Zhang Yang was already in Wind Chime's face. For him, it was an incredibly difficult decision on whether to use his long cooldown skill to protect himself. It would be a trick again! He only had a C class Inheritance then, he would only have 700,000 HP after Transforming. If Zhang Yang's attack is the real deal, Wind Chime would be killed if he does not use his protective skill! But what if, Zhang Yang was faking it?

Safety first. Might as well use it since there were four of them there. As long as none of them die in battle, they could slowly grind away Zhang Yang's HP!

After debating with himself for a second, Wind Chime activated

{Blur}. Wind Chime's {Blur} was at Level 10, granting him the ability to dodge an attack at a 95% rate. If he were to still take an attack instance during the skill active duration, it would be black luck for him to step out of the house.

RAWR!

The Phoenix closed in and spew a long trail of fire at Wind Chime's direction. As the flame engulfed the enemy, the word "Missed!" popped out. It was as expected. Even though the Phoenix was dealing Fire damage, its attack was still a physical attack, hence, it would be affected by {Blur}. However, Felice was still in her Dragonhawk form, her attacks would be of a true Spellcaster. With a quick blast of flame, her attacks had landed on Wind Chime's character and dealt 80,323 Fire damage. Sadly, even though the attack had landed, Felice was not in her Transformation state; the damage she could deal was only but an ant's bite.

Still, Wind Chime's HP was left with only over 700,000 HP. If Felice attacks continuously, she could kill Win Chime in less than 10 hits! Wind Chime's HP recovery skill would require EP. The more EP he holds, the better he could heal when he activates the skill. At that moment, due to the skill - {Blur's} activation, Wind Chime had gained a momentary short duration where he could put the matter of life and death aside whilst he attacks Zhang Yang.

Ink Wave and Wind Chime had moved in at the same time. To make sure that they would not take the attack from the Phoenix together, Ink Wave had moved towards Zhang Yang's left side and was slower than Wind Chime, and arrived by half a second later. He was a Guardian, hence, his attack was naturally low. Vy activating his Transformation skill, he had gained a massive 300% boost in attack power, his DPS was still as weak as a C class Inheritance player.

However, as a tank, his duty lay at protecting instead of attacking. He was supposed to be taking hits instead of his party

members. When both Ink Wave and Wind Chime were attacked earlier, he was a little unnerved and was unable to perform as well. Right then, he could and was ready to unleash an array of protective skills.

Since Zhang Yang was able to move freely due to the [Mobility Potion], Ink Wave did not waste any of his EP to restrain him. Instead, he chased after him and attacked with his normal attacks to build up more EP and Rage.

Zhang Yang had forced his opponents to waste one accessory skill and one Thief powerful skill in exchange for a bluff! Even so, he was unable to attack anyone at the moment. Right then, Ink Wave was still attacking Zhang Yang, hence, instead of chasing anyone else, he turned around to attack Ink Wave instead.

Shush! BANG!

Zhang Yang's sword was parried away by Ink Wave's shield, even though Zhang Yang's movement was fast. Still, Zhang Yang Strength attribute point was so much higher than his simple sword attack had sent him staggering back. As a result, Ink Wave was unable to use {Shield Bash,} for he had been pushed out of its range.

Zhang Yang smirked. Unlike the typical Japanese anime, attacking does not require one to shout out their own skill names. Even though Zhang Yang had only used a normal attack, the opponent does not know that. He had made the opponent waste a {Block}! However, it would be a waste if Zhang Yang remains passive, since {Block} had only over 6 seconds of cooldown.

Phoenix had only 2 seconds of attack interval rate. It then flapped its massive fiery wings and spewed out a long trail of fire and dealt 168,933 damage to Ink Wave. Compared to Ink Wave's long 8,000,000 maximum HP, the Phoenix's attack was not at all strong. Even though he was left with only 5,000,000 HP, it was a tall mountain to bring down.

There were four of them, excluding their battle companions and battle mounts, for they were too weak to even be considered an adversary. Their attacks were too weak and their grades were too low. Dealing damage to Zhang Yang was a problem. It all came down to the players themselves. Both Scholar Musou and Longrich were A class Inheritance players with basic attacks reaching as high as 200,000 damage. Ink Wave and Wind Chime were weaker by a certain degree but their basic attacks could still deal more than 120,000 damage. One wave of attack could deal roughly 500,000 damage to Zhang Yang, which was extremely problematic for him.

After calculating all the possibilities, Zhang Yang had determined his next target. He had decided to first terminate Ink Wave before anyone else. Ink Wave may be a tank class player with superior defensive and weak offense, and he would be extremely hard to kill. However, it was a necessary effort that he must put out. A Guardian is meant to protect the teammates and could dish out a large number of skills to control the opponent. Zhang Yang would know that best, because he was a Guardian! For two lifetimes!

{Charge Up Strike}!

Zhang Yang's attack hit the air and Ink Wave knows that Zhang Yang was aiming him. He felt confident of his HP and could take the hit. Who knows, Zhang Yang might even fake it again!

{God of War Heavy Axe}!

'-877,173!'

Ink Wave was obviously wrong about Zhang Yang's massive power output. However, he was lucky that he had over 5,000,000 HP to begin with. He would still have 4,000,000 HP left if Zhang Yang were to attack with the Phoenix earlier. He was not going down just yet!

Ink Wave could not be more than happy when Zhang Yang had chosen him to be a target instead of the others. Zhang Yang might

have a better set of equipment, an array of skills, yet he had chosen to fight the tank! Could he be as dumb as a boss?!

What a hoot! An undeserved reputation!

Ink Wave activated {Shield Wall} and kited Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Phoenix away from his teammates. By the time {Shield Wall} ends, he would have already accumulated enough EP to use his HP recovery skill. He could activate {Last Vigor} to increase 30% HP and restore almost close to 3,000,000 HP!

As time passed on, Ink Wave was brought to believe that Zhang Yang could be defeated by the four of them!

However...

{Glare of the Death God}!

Zhang Yang had finally unleashed his ultimate skill and cast a cloud of shadowy cloud over Ink Wave's character.

Zhang Yang rarely uses this skill in public. He had never used it once in the Individual Ranking Competition either. Hence, even when the shadowy cloud formed a grinning skull, Ink Wave had not taken it seriously then, for he had thought that {Shield Wall} was strong enough to hold the attack at bay.

"KILL!" Zhang Yang roared.

With Zhang Yang taking the lead, the Phoenix and Felice zoomed in to attack as fast and as frequently as they could. {Glare of the Death God} works differently when used on bosses, compared to players and monsters. Unlike boss fights, the trigger rate will only deal 1% of the total HP of the boss. While used on players, the skill will directly drain away 99.99% of the HP, leaving the player with only 1HP left.

As such, the poor Guardian was so unlucky, that after just four attack counts, the skull grinned and bit down on his character, leaving him with only 1 HP.

Felice's fiery attacks landed and could only deal over 4,000 damage to Ink Wave, for the {Shield Wall} was still active. Still, even though her attack was reduced from 80,000 to 4,000, it was more than enough to end Ink Wave's life!

Ink Wave died without using his HP recovery skill!

All three remaining players were baffled. What just happened? Ink Wave still had over 4 million HP and he had {Shield Wall} protecting him! How could he be instantly killed with just a fire attack?

At then, Zhang Yang's [Mobility Potion] ended and the glowing effect beneath his feet faded.

In just 10 seconds, Zhang Yang had already killed a player, and a tank at that too! How would normal people react to that!?

Zhang Yang turned to the rest of the Eternal Flame member and smiled innocently. "It's 3v3 now!"

Scholar Musou and the rest were left bewildered. What a powerful and bold statement! They had 4 of them in the beginning, and was reduced to 3 in just 10 seconds!

"It's fine! 3 of us will be enough!" They could lose the fight, but not lose any more members. Three of them roared and charged altogether at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang dismounted and activated his {Shadow Clone} skill. Instantly, the field had 7 Zhang Yangs laughing maniacally.

Which one was the real Zhang Yang?!

The opponent was left dumbfounded again. It would be impossible to find out the real one with just AoE skills. Zhang Yang had over 950,000 HP and would have only around 800,000 HP at that moment. It was not a number that could be killed with a few hits!

If they were to fight one by one, all of them would totalled up

their HP to a staggering 5,000,000 HP! Furthermore, even if he is left with 1 HP, he could easily mount on the Pheonix again and gain a huge HP boost! The main problem was Zhang Yang's impregnable defense! To actually deal 1,000,000 damage on him, would mean dealing 2,000,000 damage to other normal players!

How do they solve the problem with the clones?

After a split second, Scholar Musou roared. "Retreat!"

He knew that the clones had a time limit. In the most recent Territorial war for Sauron's Castle, he saw the recordings of Zhang Yang's fight. Professional analysis had deconstructed Zhang Yang's technique and skills in order to search his strengths and weaknesses, providing vital information for others to use against him.

The one method they had found to be useful to counter the shadow clone was to create enough distance amongst themselves. Drag the time long enough and the clones will disappear after two minutes.

It was a good call. Out of the two hour Inheritance Transformation duration, two minutes of running around was nothing but a walk in the park.

All three of them started to split up and run in different directions. Both Scholar Musou and Longrich had flight capabilities. Since they were not allowed to fly in the map, gliding in the air for a few seconds was still allowed.

After running for a bit, they had realized that Zhang Yang had not even activated his Transformation skill! What a disgrace! Two A class Inheritance players, and a C class Inheritance player have been sent off running by a normal player!

It was dominance! The level of power where one could inflict fear in another's soul!

Zhang Yang kept his cool and proceeded to chase after the three



of them. However, instead of overextending himself, he "glided" towards the closest one, which was Wind Chime. The player had used {Blur} not too long ago and if he is allowed to run away, he could easily regain {Blur} after 5 minutes. It would be a waste to let that happen, since it would be harder to trick him into using the skill again.

"Crap!" Wind Chime cried, and quickly jumped off his mount and used {Vanish}!

# Chapter 706: Victory

---

Zhang Yang turned his head immediately to an empty patch of land and commanded the Phoenix to attack that area. As the trail of fire blasted the area, Wind Chime was forced out of the shadows.

That was an intense shocking revelation for Wind Chime.

"How could you detect me!?" said Wind Chime as he panicked. "I was using {Sprint}!"

"Haha! I knew that you were going to use {Sprint,} and that's exactly why I could predict your location. If you hadn't, I would probably have lost you!" All seven Zhang Yangs laughed and used {Charge} at Wind Chime, stunning him all at the same time.

Aggravated. Wind Chime could do nothing but to accept the fact that Zhang Yang was strong. He had already activated {Sprint} at the instant he entered Stealth. It was a complex command that only a proficient Thief player could execute. Little did he know that Zhang Yang had anticipated his move and predicted where he would be!

Putting aside that he was caught red-handed, Wind Chime had other serious problems to worry about. Zhang Yang's attacks were like the claws of a bear. His sword sliced and diced, hacking away Wind Chime's HP bar to the bottom!

Scholar Musou bit his lips and turned to Longrich. "Should we go back?"

"...Go back? Which out of the seven Zhan Yus would you want to take?" Longrich almost laughed cynically.

"...D\*mn!" Scholar Musou fell silent.

After Transforming, each of them had strong AoE skills. However, the cost of activating the skill will usually be 3 EP. The entire battle had only taken less than 20 seconds. In just that short

amount of time, they had only gained 1 EP each. What could they do with it?

What a confounding situation. If they had 100 EP, they could at least do some serious damage to all Zhang Yang, including the original one. One of them could deal close to 80,000 damage. If all three of them ganged up together, they could easily destroy all Zhang Yangs and even force the original Zhang Yang to get back on his Phoenix.

As they spoke, everyone in the party could see the chat. Wind Chime had concluded that the other two had no intention to come back for him anymore. Hence, with all that was left with him, he had steeled himself to gain at least 3 EP to activate his recovery skill and deal a little more damage to Zhang Yang before he is killed.

He had no clue as to which one was the real Zhang Yang, hence, he shifted his target to the Phoenix, since he knew that Zhang Yang will eventually get on it. Might as well reduce the Phoenix's HP to reduce Zhang Yang's odds.

It was actually an obvious and straightforward strategy. Out of the hundreds of millions of players worldwide, perhaps, Zhang Yang was the only weird mutant that was a Warrior and could have a pet, like a Hunter. Furthermore, the pet he owned was a Phoenix! A Legendary Beast that had the ability to Transform like an Inheritance player! Hence, in normal circumstances, no one in their right mind would target an adversary's battle mount. It was a common mistake, since normally, battle mount would disappear after a normal Warrior dismounts. In fact, a Hunter's pet would be too weak to deal any threatening damage, hence, under normal circumstances, no one would kill the pet.

Both Scholar Musou and Longrich saw what Wind Chime was doing and had an epiphany. Both were a little mad and ashamed of themselves. It was inevitable. Again, Zhang Yang was the only oddball that they had seen so far in the game that could own a pet

like Hunter. In fact, at that point in time, it was known that there was a total of three players who owned a Legendary Beast as their pet or battle mount. Then again, perhaps the number could increase someday.

Now that they had a plan, the two players turned back to the battle and began to attack the Phoenix at their longest, 30 meters range.

If you can't defeat an adversary's sword's play, it would be better to aim at their fingers!

Zhang Yang did not react to their sudden change of plans and only aimed at Wind Chime. As long as he kills Wind Chime in 30 seconds, he would die before he has the chance to use his recovery skill.

It was a certainty that every Inheritance Transformation player would have a recovery skill. Unlike the S class Inheritance, other classes would require 3 EP to be used. For example, Wei Yan Er's {Ripple of the Shadow} would require 3 EP to activate to restore 50% HP. With every additional 1 EP, the skill will restore 10% HP in the next second.

B class Inheritance skills were weaker. For example, Fatty Han's {Bat Form} will require the same 3 EP, and every additional 1 EP will only extend the skill's duration by 1 second. Technically, Fatty Han would require 10 EP to restore full health. An A class Inheritance player would need to spend an extra 2 EP.

C class Inheritance recovery skills are basically 3 EP for 30% HP restoration. Every 2 additional EP will restore 10% HP in the next second.

Wind Chime had over 3 million HP then and he would restore at least 900,000 HP with a single trigger of his recovery skill. It's not that Zhang Yang was afraid of him, he just wanted to save more time and squeeze out less effort while doing so.

Zhang Yang {Shadow Clone} skill had only 10% attack power of the original caster. However, six clones would grant Zhang Yang an additional 60% attack power. Paired with the Phoenix and Felice's attack, Wind Chime was just a strawman waiting to be hacked away by a sickle.

Why didn't he use any accessory to grant him Invincibility? That was due to the fact that accessories itself were rare. Players who are able to fill in the empty accessory slots are lucky! To have an accessory that also possesses an additional active effect would be extremely rare! Perhaps, in the entirety of the Eternal Flame guild, only Scholar Musou, Longrich, and Ink Wave possessed such luxurious items!

As Zhang Yang was beating down Wind Chime, Scholar Musou and Longrich were attacking the Phoenix. The problem was, Phoenix was in its Transformed state. With more than 30,000 Defense value and 20 % Magic attack nullification rate, the both of them were using forks to scrape the steel plates off the Empire State Building!

The best thing was that, Longrich's attacks were not Ice based! They were Fire based magic attacks! All attacks that lands on the bird will only heal it! By the time he realizes it, it would be so late!

Wind Chime was still attacking without stopping. The worst part for him was the fact that he did not know which one was the real Zhang Yang. He wanted to throw a few skills to debuff him, but it was only a one time thing. If he misses the skill, it would be extremely wasteful! In the end, right at his last drop of HP, Wind Chime cast {Blind} on a random "Zhang Yang". Sadly, the skill landed on the wrong person.

"Argh!" With a swift stroke, Zhang Yang ended the player's life.

He then brandished his sword and flicked the blood off the blade. He turned to Longrich and Scholar Musou and grinned, "It's 3 versus 2 now!"

With an intense malicious aura, Zhang Yang had successfully inflicted fear into the hearts of the enemy! However, despite the danger, the two survivors were professional players. They kept calm and cast aside all negative thoughts, solely focused only on attacking the Phoenix.

Then again, it was bad for Zhang Yang to kill these two at this point of the melee. They had A class Inheritances with 30% Magic nullification rates. With their flight capability, they could dodge Zhang Yang's attacks easily. Their only threats were Felice and Phoenix's attacks.

However, Zhang Yang could fly as well!

Zhang Yang jumped back onto the bird. Since attacking the Phoenix was the same as attacking Zhang Yang, he felt no need to hide his true identity any longer.

"Zhan Yu! Prepare to die!" Scholar Musou roared at an intense volume and clapped his hands. A magic circle appeared around him as his eyes glowed with an intense, fiery trail. A ball of flame came shooting down from the sky and slammed down on Zhang Yang brutally. The ball of flame bounced off Zhang Yang and landed on the ground, creating a massive crater. In an instance, the flames died down a little, and concentrated itself around a stone golem which emerged out of the crater.

[Fire Demon Lord] (Elite, Summoned)

Level: 148

HP: 1,480,000

Defense: 5,920

Magic attack: 21,002 – 29,002

Skills:

[Growth]: Gains 1% HP, Defense and Magic Attack for every kill.

[Flame Rock]: Hurls a burning rock towards a target and deals

200% Magic Fire attack. Instant. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

The summoned unit was the ultimate skill of the Lord of Flame Inheritance. It requires 10 EP to activate and summons out a Fire Demon Lord. The summoned unit will last for 10 minutes. For every EP used during the cast, it will extend the active duration of the summoned unit for 10 seconds. The summoned unit was strong. If protected, it could grow with the skill and become extremely strong after every successful kill. As expected of the A class Inheritance's Ultimate skill.

At the same time, Longrich activated his own ultimate skill and created a black whirlpool in the "swamp" environment. As long as any target steps into this range, they will take 100,000 of Shadow Damage!

Similarly, it has a short active duration and required EP to last longer. Although they were only A class ultimate skills, they were still strong enough to deal large damage, pushing Zhang Yang to the verge of death! His HP had dropped below 20%!

The two surviving players then activated their skills similar to that of {Killing Cleave} (skills that can only be activated when a target's HP is less than 20%). In an instance, the overall damage done to Zhang Yang was increased dramatically.

Zhang Yang kept his cool. He still had the {God of War Radiance} to instantly restore 100% HP. There was no reason to be afraid!

{Charge Up Strike}!

Zhang Yang swung his sword and dealt 0 damage. Right then, Longrich's face was drained of color. His skill {Apparate}, and {Ice Barrier} was still in cooldown. He had no choice but to take the incoming devastating hit.

{God of War Devastation}!

'-992,832!'

Longrich has taken some damage from the battle earlier. Even though Zhang Yang may have been damaged, Longrich suffered a great deal of damage from the combined attack of Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Phoenix. Before he knew it, he too had entered the danger zone.

He knew of the power of a Warrior's combined {Indiscriminate} and {Killing Cleave}. If he takes the attack, his head would roll. Hence, in a state of panic, Longrich decided to heal himself. Sadly, with {Destructive Smash}'s effect still on him, he had only managed to heal at a 25% efficiency, boosting his 5% HP to 30% HP.

After Longrich healed himself, Zhang Yang followed and healed himself back to 100% HP. That's a whopping 14,793,620 HP in total!

It was the main reason why Zhang Yang wanted to kill Ink Wave first in the first place. Without his {Destructive Smash}, Zhang Yang would not have to fear the reduced healing effect. If the tank is left alive till the end, Zhang Yang might have only healed 50% of the intended amount!

"F\*CK!" Both Longrich and Scholar Musou yelled with agony. Just when they had tried their best to kill Zhang Yang, he had simply turned the tables around by healing himself back to full HP!

Zhang Yang continued his barrage of attacks on Longrich unrelentingly. He had forced the opponent to use their ultimate skills and also their healing skill! Right then, they had no cards left on the table.

"Musou! We're leaving!" said Longrich halfway through as he jumped to safety and rushed over the exit. If Zhang Yang has only 4 or 5 million HP, they could still put up a fight. However, 14 million was a ridiculous amount of HP! The main issue there was that the Phoenix was too strong. It was merely comparable to a B class Inheritance player yet it possessed HP much higher than an A class Inheritance!

Such a Legendary Beast!



Zhang Yang patted the Phoenix, feeling grateful for Fatty Han's efforts in making this possible.

Since the beginning of the battle, Zhang Yang had never attacked Scholar Musou. Somewhat, he felt like he was being ignored. It was the sort of feeling that he was not worthy to be even seen as an opponent!

The two of them left the map safely. As expected, players with flying capabilities were hard to stop. By the time Zhang Yang left the portal to chase them, the two players were already 50 to 60 meters away!

"Woah there! Did you seriously just win a match against four players?!" Wei Yan Er gasped.

"Yeah."

Zhang Yang stood by the party, instead of chasing after the players. Although the Phoenix movement speed was fast, it was roughly the same speed or slower than an A class Inheritance Transformation flying speed. He could give chase if he uses his own S class Transformation.

Then again, it would be a waste. After all, the main objective was to take over the Mythical Dragon Realm in a hostile fashion. Now that they had forcefully made them leave the map, and even had the opponents wasting their Inheritance Transformation skills, they would be able to proceed uninterrupted for some time, unless the enemy would actually swallow their pride inform their guild of this most embarrassing series of events and rope them in.

# Chapter 707: Blood Thirsty Skeletal Soldier

---

"Hahaha! You should have seen their faces when they jumped out of the portal! Hahaha! They looked like clowns!" Little Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang scoffed and replied. "You're right. They are nothing but clowns! The fight was rather enjoyable, though!"

If Longrich and Scholar Musou could hear their conversation, they would perhaps, turn around and fight Zhang Yang to the death. They were, at the very least, players who had entered the top 15th Individual rankings. Anyone within the top 100, while possessing A class Inheritances were strong. If Zhang Yang were to call them clowns, where else could he find a true rival?

Even if someone were to complain about Zhang Yang's bad gaming etiquette, he had the right to say such things. Technically, he had faced 4 players alone, excluding the fact that Felice and the Phoenix were not players themselves. Out of the three Transformation skills, he had merely used the Phoenix's skill to defeat all four of them.

The party spoke about Zhang Yang's feat. Especially, the little girl who was clearly out of her mind when she said that she too could do the same if she had been allowed to enter the map instead of letting Zhang Yang.

The party entered the portal and ventured deeper into the map. Unlike the outside world, the place differed greatly. Like the Sahara Desert, the Spectre Kingdom was devoid of life. There was nothing but dirt and sand all over the bare valley. The sky and earth was dyed in an eerie reddish hue that extended to the horizon.

As far as they walked, there were no signs of any monsters. Perhaps, they had been cleared earlier by the Eternal Flame members.

As they walked, only the sound of the Phoenix wings could be heard. After Transforming, the bird had gained a massive constitution and was flapping its wings like a whale. Luckily, it had the skill to freely change its body size. Zhang Yang then controlled the bird and shrunk it down to the size of a horse.

The party of five continued on and came to an entrance of a huge valley. After crossing the threshold of the converging hills, the scenery changed immediately. The red hue was still there, but the field was suddenly teeming with countless Skeletal Soldiers.

[Blood Thirsty Skeletal Soldier] (Spectre, Normal)

Level: 160

HP: 104,448

Defense: 4,360

Melee Attack: 21,992 – 29,992

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% physical melee attacks. 10% chance to inflict one additional attack.

[Leap]: Leaps across obstacles towards the target.

Note: Only the strongest warriors may leave the valley to face the trial to become one of the close guards of the Necromancer Lodac.

The soldiers in the field were attacking each other. Swords clashed on as bone fragments were sent flying everywhere. Even though there was no blood to be shed, the battle field was still vicious and filled with intense malice.

"Woah woah! Don't go about fighting like that. If you want to fight, fight us! Don't waste the hard-earn experience points!" cried Wei Yan Er as she saw countless of monsters being cleaved down by their own.

"Calm yourself. Look at the spawning rate," said Zhang Yang as he pointed at the spot where the monsters were killed. The

moment a Skeletal Soldier falls, a new one would rise up from the earth to replace it. The number of monsters in the field was constantly being replenished.

"Wow! Look at that speed! If we could just camp here for good, we could gain a Level a day!" cried Wei Yan Er joyfully. By then, with their attack power and their monster killing rate, they could easily match with the monster's spawning rate. In a normal scenario, a player's killing rate would be much faster than the monster's respawn rate. Hence, much of the time spent on grinding was running around to search for more monsters in a new map. Training here would cut down their traveling time down to zero! They could, practically spend just one day to gain a level!

Zhang Yang laughed and shook his head, "It does not work that way I'm afraid. These monsters were fighting each other for a reason. Perhaps, when we enter the field and start killing, they would not be spawning so rapidly."

"What? That's just...It doesn't make sense!" Wei Yan Er pouted disgruntledly.

"Nothing has to. Even if they do not respawn after we kill them, the number of monsters available right now would be plenty enough! Don't be too greedy, little brat!" said Zhang Yang as he maneuvered the Phoenix to kite all the monsters there. The Legendary Beast's defense was so strong that normal monsters could not deal any damage to it.

"Yeah. You mustn't be greedy like a certain someone. He likes to take more than he can hold!" Han Ying Xue muttered angrily.

Zhang Yang signed and frowned. The woman was such a jealous sour patch. So what, if Cheng Xue Yao was beautiful? Zhang Yang only had one overworked cock that had to satisfy two pussies at home! Every single time they jumped on him, they would demand for every single drop of his precious semen. Zhang Yang could swear that one day his balls will shrink back into his pelvis! Even

Yu Li, his first love had to wait for more than 10 days to a month to get a chance to be with Zhang Yang! If someone wants to complain, Yu Li should be the first!

To kite all the monsters in the valley in one go, the Phoenix had taken close to 6 minutes to travel back and forth. Any longer than that, and the monster's aggro will drop back to zero.

Keep in mind that the monsters in the valley were all normal tiered. Thousands of them coming in a large swarm would still be lethal. A sea of white skeletal with their eyes glowing bright emerald green flames was not a normal thing to deal with.

"Get behind me!" Zhang Yang cried. Even though there were thousands of enemies, they were all weak. Their attacks were so low that they could not deal any damage to Zhang Yang. For him to tank all the monsters, would be fine but the four other ladies behind him did not have equally high defense. They would die easily if Zhang Yang could not hold the defense line. It was most certainly dangerous, since the Sacred Knight of the Eternal Flame had died in battle.

It was close to impossible to control the aggro of more than thousands of monsters at that moment, without the aid of the Inheritance Transformation. At most, he could control a few nearby monsters around him and let them form a natural barricade to block the monsters behind. However, he would need to look out for monsters that could leap from the back.

When the Phoenix returned, it brought back a party of skeletal soldiers along with him. Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Power Potion] and braced for the moment of impact. When the Phoenix returned to his side, Zhang Yang swung the sword horizontally and casted {Horizontal Sweep}.

At then, Zhang Yang's normal attack could instantly kill a normal tier monster with ease. What more of a 200% AoE skill! In an instance, Zhang Yang had instantly crushed more than 10 monsters

around him. The skeletal soldiers fell to the ground and were turned into bone powder by the stampede of monsters that moved to the front.

Sadly, even though {Horizontal Sweep} was strong, it was not a penetrative attack type. It had a rather limited strike zone and would not hit an enemy behind it, unlike {Blast Wave} which had a fixed AoE, which was 3 meters in front of Zhang Yang, shaped like a cone. {Blast Wave's} attack was penetrative. That means that all monsters standing in the 3 meter cone shaped AoE will receive damage.

Unfortunately, neither did the {Horizontal Sweep} nor did the {Blast Wave} triggered the sword's echo effect.

"Sigh...Noob tank. Looks like your sword is living up to your name. A noob sword indeed." Wei Yan Er teased Zhang Yang and threw a small handmade bomb that was created by Hundred Shots. The bomb exploded from within the crowd of monsters and dealt 2,000 Fire damage in a 3 x3 meters AoE.

The bomb was a product of the Engineer profession. It cost a rather high amount of money, yet it did come in handy when blasting monsters. Wei Yan Er was a natural born bombardier, hence, her inventory was stuffed full with explosives.

Even though the damage caused by the bomb was low, it did have high attack interval of only 1 second. Basically, a player can keep on bombing the monsters endlessly and cause high cumulative damage. It was especially useful for melee players who could not attack monsters that were out of their range. Might as well use the bomb to attack, since there was nothing that Wei Yan Er could do then.

Everyone was standing with their backs leaning against a side of the mountain. Technically, they were all safe and had only needed to worry about the monsters 180 degrees of their frontal direction. Zhang Yang blasted the monsters with {Blast Wave} and dealt

40,000 over damage, stunning them for 4 seconds.

After being stunned, the monsters behind the stunned monsters leap across them and landed close to Zhang Yang.

The Phoenix opened its fiery beak and blasted a long trail of flame that reached out as far as 30 meters. As the flames surged on, the monsters were burned with 200,000 fire damage and were instantly killed. The moving skeletal soldiers were immediately turned into a pile of scorched bones and gave the party valuable experience points.

"WAHHH! MONEY!" Wei Yan Er cried with pain when she saw the pile of coins kicked around everywhere by the incoming skeletal soldiers. She was infuriated and drew out her axe. She leaped out behind Zhang Yang and kept on throwing bombs as she picked up the coins.

Zhang Yang laughed hysterically and said, "Little brat. Perhaps you could try and join the ISIS for proper bombing lessons!"

"Hehehehe. After that, I will bomb your dog house!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Now that you mention it, how long has it been since you last took care of the dog?!" Zhang Yang sternly scolded.

"Ah...Hmph! Stupid monsters! Kick my coins!? I'll bomb your bones!" Wei Yan Er quickly changed the topic elsewhere and ran away from Zhang Yang. The dog was finally bought by Zhang Yang after being pestered by Wei Yan Er. However, after only three days of playing, the little girls had thrown the dog aside and had refused to take care of the poor canine. If Sun Xin Yu had not been a dear and took good care of the pup, the dog would have long left the house to search for a better owner.

The Phoenix was performing rather strongly at then! Since the Phoenix had activated its Transformation skill, its normal attack had received an extended range boost that increased its attack

range to 30 meters. All it took was two seconds, and the entire wave of monsters would be killed instantly. Within a few minutes, all of the monsters that were kited back to Zhang Yang were killed, leaving a pile of shiny equipment and glittering coins.

Normally, the normal tier monster would not drop much equipment, to begin with. Perhaps, out of 100 units, only 1 of them would drop one piece of equipment. However, the number of monsters right then exceeded the thousands!

Sadly, the equipment was left there to collect dust. None of them could spare any time to pick them up. Especially Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, they kept on urging Zhang Yang to quickly kill the monsters to allow them to pick the equipment! If they take too long to kill the monsters, the equipment will eventually disappear!

Hence, after a quick discussion between the two sisters, Han Ying Xue took a large bundle of bombs from Wei Yan Er and participated in the bombing!

"Sigh! Hundred Shots could not be that weak. The bombs he created can only deal 2,000 damage! If only they could deal 20,000 damage, that could be swell!" said Wei Yan Er while sighing.

"Think carefully of what you just said. Making a 2,000 damage bomb would have already burn a hole in his pocket. If he makes a bomb that deals 20,000 damage, that would have cost Hundred Shots' entire fortune!" Zhang Yang laughed.

The bombs can be used to damage targets and had its own independent cooldown system. While using it against multiple targets, it could provide a significant damage. It may be only 2,000 damage, and it was an extremely small number compared to Zhang Yang normal attacks, but for normal players, it was still a number that would make a difference!

Hence, the bombs cost and materials were extremely high, preventing large-scale production.



Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue at Zhang Yang and said, "Hmph! Uncle Hundred Shots is not like you! A stingy old man!"

"Old man...?" Zhang Yang chuckled awkwardly.

Although the number of monsters was high, their HP were too low, to begin with. Hence, the party split up a little to attack from multiple angles to increase the AoE. By the time the monsters could reach them, they would already be half dead.

After 10 minutes or so, all thousands of monsters in the field were killed, providing a massive boost of experience points to the party. Daffodil Daydream was close to leveling before she had entered the map and after defeating the sea of skeletal soldiers, she had reached Level 150!

# Chapter 708: Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper

---

After reaching Level 150, the best thing that they could do then was to equip their Level 170 Holy tier weapons!

Daffodil Daydream was the first to equip hers. She swapped out her old staff for the new [Shadow Lord's Staff] and gained a massive boost to her attack stats. For any class, or any player at all, the best way to gain higher damage was to equip a stronger weapon!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er continued to clear the loots on the ground. However, there were drops of more than thousands of monsters. How long would they take to pick them all? In the end, Zhang Yang had only permitted them to loot all the equipment and item. As for the coins, it would be a waste of time, since the total coins they could loot would only sum up to several thousand gold coins. It was a number which was valuable to noob players, but worthless to Zhang Yang and his party.

Although they were greatly disgruntled, it was something that they would have to give up on. The team moved on and left the valley, and proceeded to a lake that was filled with dark water.

The lake was surrounded by high cliffs on both sides. There was no clear land route that circled around it. Furthermore, the map had restricted flight. Flying mounts could only soar to a certain height and glide for a short distance. The only way to cross the lake then, was to swim across.

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle. Han Ying Xue had her Crimson Gold Crab, while the others had to rely on [Underwater Breathing Potions] and hitch a ride on both Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's mounts.

After the pets moved into the water, they shot across the water

like torpedoes, towards the other end. The problem was that, on land, the lake was so huge that they could not see the other end. Underwater, the vision was shrouded in such darkness that they could not even determine the right direction without resurfacing every once in a while.

Out of the sudden, a shady entity appeared in their line of sight. A long trail of bubbles followed the entity as it broke the water in half, as it traveled like a speeding missile. As it approached the party, the surface of the water burst open like an explosion. A huge four-legged creature revealed itself to stop the party. The creature has a violet scale body and had spikey bones protruding out of its back. The head of the creature was shaped like a duck, and had a flat beak like a platypus. Its long neck was as long as its entire body!

[Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 165

HP: 4,950,000

Defense: 6,640

Melee Attack: 43,947 – 52,947

Skills:

[Water Impact]: Strikes the water around it and knocks every target within 30 meters of its character for 20 meters back. Deals 40,000 melee attack.

[Spike Pierce]: Fires of the spikes on its back. Randomly targets a single target to deal 150% melee physical attack.

Note: The Creeper was once the Lord of the Lake. However, after the essence of the Spectres corrupted the lake, the beings that live in the lake have turned into fellow Spectres. Losing all sense of pain, the Lord of the Lake only became even stronger and vicious.

When the monster appeared, the first target it attacked was Wei

Yan Er. Its massive beak was spread wide open, revealing six eerie rows of sharp teeth, as it sank them into Wei Yan Er's petite body.

"Aiyayaya! Stupid monster! Why are you attacking me first!?" cried Wei Yan Er. She unlatched her axe from behind her back and gave the monster a good swing. As expected of a Berserker. The little girl's strength was a complete mismatch to her timid body. With a powerful swing, she managed to strike the monster back!

Han Ying Xue laughed hysterically and said, "Yan Er, did you know, the only way to get bigger is to have more fat in your body! How are you going to grow cup sizes when you are burning all your fats away?"

"HAN YING XUE! ENOUGH WITH MY FLAT CHEST! I WILL BREAK UP WITH YOU!" The little girl shouted at the top of her lungs. Perhaps it was not just Han Ying Xue, Teasing the little girl about her flat, small, undeveloped chest was also other players hobby.

When the little girl was raging on like a mad king kong, the Creeper grew angrier as well. It was the Lord of the Lake! Its strength and superiority were unmatched to any being that lingered in the lake! To think that it could be slammed back by a timid creature, its anger grew exponentially, as it shrieked in a high pitch cry that was so deafening, even underwater. The Creeper zoomed forward and attacked Wei Yan Er again.

This time, Zhang Yang reacted quickly. With a quick push, the Mythical Turtle shot in front of Wei Yan Er and charged at the monster, stunning him. Zhang Yang hurled his sword downward and cleaved the monster's back.

The Creeper recovered quickly from the stun and charged towards Zhang Yang. Out of the blue, the Creeper rose vertically and slammed downward with such force that Zhang Yang and everyone else was pushed away. They had also taken 40,000 damage.

Even though the battle log had indicated that Zhang Yang had received 40,000 damage, the amount of HP that he lost was only 7,255, due to his overwhelming defense and damage absorption. Swiftly, Zhang Yang used {Charge Up Strike} and landed a {God of War Heavy Axe}!

'-1,133,883!'

An impressive damage text floated upwards the monster, which was equivalent to almost 20% of its HP. Even though the monster's description had mentioned that the monster would not feel pain, the essence of life that was hacked away from it was enough to cause it to rage on furiously.

"Woohoo! Dummy is getting stronger!"

"Wow. If guild master could equip the Ascended tier weapon, would the damage go up as high as 2 million, with {Charge Up Strike}?"

Back then, during the war in Emerald Kingdom, Zhang Yang had taken the chance to land the killing blow towards the King and managed to collect an Ascended tier two-handed axe. Sadly, the axe would have to wait until Zhang Yang reaches Level 180 before he can equip it.

"Oh yeah! Noobie tank is hiding that Ascended axe! Come on! Give it up!" Wei Yan Er eyes glinted with joy and greed. The little troublemaker was almost craving for a stronger weapon in order to have a stronger attack power than Zhang Yang.

"Don't even think about it!" said Zhang Yang almost immediately before Wei Yan Er could reach out. It was one of his goals to equip a Level 180 Ascended tier weapon in order to surpass his former self when he was only Level 179 before he "died". To pass the threshold was to enter a new realm, a checkpoint of strength!

"Hmph! Stingy!" Wei Yan Er muttered. However, when she turned back her head to Zhang Yang, the next utterance was

simply too shocking to believe. "How bout a kiss to change your mind?" Wei Yan Er even attempted a seductive wink. There was some kind of expression on her that was rather enticing.

Zhang Yang nearly choked on his own breath. He quickly turned around and saw that Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Daffodil Daydream had the same darkened expression. All of them had assumed that he was some kind of lolicon pervert, tricking Wei Yan Er! As quickly as his reaction speed could be, Zhang Yang quickly turned to the little girl and said, "Little brat! I'm warning you! Watch what you're saying there! I'm the one that will be in trouble!"

Han Ying Xue ignored Zhang Yang and grabbed Wei Yan Er. "Yan Er, did that dummy did anything to you? Anything at all!?"

A little surprised, Wei Yan Er shook her head and explained, "No. But he has always been bullying me. Calling me names like, brat and little girl. He even said that I was a naughty girl! He cursed me, saying that I will never be able to grow my chest! What a bastard! Punish him!"

Zhang Yang nearly cracked out a laugh, but resisted it, as the tension of the atmosphere was truly a bad timing to do so.

"Well then, where did you learn how to kiss?"

"Huh? Kiss? I've never kiss before. At most, I'll kiss you on the cheek. That's all. It was just a method I learned from the girls back in the university dorm. They said it was a good way to make guys bow down to their wishes! Sigh...Looks like Noobie Tank was too good...that or...noobie tank is a girl!?"

Zhang Yang frowned furiously and ignored the monster for a moment to give the little girl a good rap on her head.

"Wei Yan Er! You're coming back to the house! You are not allowed to stay in the university dormitory! Bloody hell! What on earth are you learning there!? Everyone agrees?" said Zhang Yang.

"Yes." Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and even Daffodil Daydream nodded their head in unison.

The battle did not take too long, and before they knew it, Zhang Yang had landed the killing blow. The Creeper turned belly up, floating to the surface for a while before sinking back deep into the lake. Wei Yan Er rubbed her head in pain as she quickly swam to the dead body to loot all the items before they sunk in along with the body.

Not too far from the first fight with the Creeper, another similar Creeper emerged out of the depths and attacked the party. The battle continued on but had only dragged the time Zhang Yang and the party to move forward.

The map was too large, to begin with. Half a day later, they could not even see the end of the lake, for the hue of the water was too dark! Zhang Yang grunted with annoyance and checked the world map. Lo and behold, they were only a little more than a quarter of the distance from the end! Since it will be a while before they could finish the map, they logged off together and Zhang Yang went for a quick exercise. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue both were awake at the moment and followed him to the gym to workout. The difference between them however was, one was training to maintain an optimal fighting condition, while the other two were just stretching out to maintain a slim waist and ample breast to butt ratio.

After the workout session, Zhang Yang left to the office to sign a bunch of papers. After a quick swish and flick of his magnificent ball pen, Zhang Yang logged into the game. The four ladies had already started off without him. When Zhang Yang logged in, Han Ying Xue had quickly cried out for him to hurry over. Since Zhang Yang was not present then, Han Ying Xue had used Messick as a replacement for the tank. The pervert scoundrel had been going on with his foul mouth, which was surprisingly effective at making the monsters attacking him alone. Too bad, even the ladies that he

was supposed to protect were disgusted at his foul mouth!

When Zhang Yang arrived, Han Ying Xue immediately unsummoned Messick. Only then, the ladies in the party could calm down.

The party continued on forward and only managed to clear half of the massive lake by noon! They had to log out to continue later after lunch. Naturally, Zhang Yang had to have his lunch in the company's cafeteria with the 6 super beautiful secretaries. One would feed him while the other would ask to be fed. It was like a plaything for a King! Sadly, Zhang Yang was not enjoying the blissful moment that 99% of the men in the world would enjoy. Zhang Yang could not help but suspect that every rich man in the world would face similar treatment. Who on earth would want that!?

After lunch, Zhang Yang returned to his office for some real work. As usual, he was handed over a bunch of papers to sign. Zhang Yang had ordered important documents to be handed to him as a priority to allow him to finish his work as soon as possible, to not interrupt his gaming time!

Just the black water lake alone had taken the party close to one whole day and one whole night in real time. Only 24 hours later, the party had managed to cross the lake and walked on the land at the other side. Thankfully, the abundance of monsters and their incredible amount of experience had allowed Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to gain a level. Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were still at the same level, but gained so much experience points that they could gain a Level in just a half a day's time.

At the other end of the lake, there was a triangular, steep cliff. In its side was the entrance of a cave.

The party did not hesitate to move on. With Zhang Yang taking the lead, the party entered the cave, one after another. Since the cave was considered an indoor environment, everyone's pet,



except for Zhang Yang's Phoenix was automatically unsummoned. At that moment, Zhang Yang's skill {Beast Taming} was greatly admired by everyone.

As he recalled, there were only 20 or more [Indistinct Skill Books] in his previous life. Moreover, the skill {Beast Taming} had appeared more often than the rest. However, the chance of getting the skill book was almost the same as striking a 5 million dollar lottery ticket!

The cave led them downward. As they ventured deeper, the walls of the cave started to turn to dirt to hot molten lava. The entire cavern system was brightly lit up by the intense, red-hot glow of the molten rocks. As the temperature grew higher, everyone started to sweat like pigs, their faces glistening with sweat!

"If only Sister Daffy is a Cryomancer! She could conjure some ice to reduce the heat around here!" said Wei Yan Er.

"It's better to just get on with the place!"

Everyone sped up and heard a bird's cawing sound. Seven oddly large crimson birds emerged from the flowing lava and charged towards the party.

[Adult Crimson Fire Crow] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Magic Attack: 25,048 – 35,048

Skills:

[Fire Breath]: Spews a trail of fire, dealing 200% Magic Fire Attack to a target. If the target carries the effect of {Flare}, damage is increased by 50%.

[Flare]: Blasts a wave of flame, 30 meters around the caster. Stuns all target for 3 seconds and deals additional 50,000 Fire damage

within 15 seconds.

Note: Born of hot molten lava, the Crimson Fire Crows are vicious and wild beasts. They attack in groups and could even defeat large monsters, such as the Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper!

# Chapter 709: Crimson Fire Crow

---

"That's...That's a Crimson Fire Crow!" cried Zhang Yang happily.

"What about it?"

"That monster will drop something called the Crimson Fire Essence! Its one of the materials for crafting the [Amateur Power Potion]!" said Zhang Yang as he rushed over to the monster in delight.

"[Amateur Power Potion]?!" Everyone was shocked.

"How much does it boost?"

"30% attack power!" said Zhang Yang. "Advance tier will give 40% boost! If it's the same as the [Beginner Power Potion], a Transmuted grade 10 could increase the effect by 100%! That [Amateur Power Potion] could provide a massive boost of 60% damage for a short amount of time!"

60% attack boost was not a small number. Naturally, the attack boost would not stack with the bonus effect of strong equipment. Players with strong equipment effects would not gain much benefits from [Power Potion]. It was estimated that the true bonus attack they gain from a 60% attack boss [Power Potion] would only grant them a 20% increase in overall DPS.

"It would not be much, since you don't have the recipe to craft [Amateur Power Potions]!"

Zhang Yang smiled and continued his attacks. "These Crimson Fire Crow will drop the recipe. Though the chance is extremely low, it will be worth it! It's luck now!"

"Well then. It's time to wipe the floor clean of the monsters, then!" said Daffodil Daydream, with an innocent smile.

"Wee! I smell money!" cried the little girl with joy.

"ARKK ARKK!" The crow cawed loudly and blasted out a wave of

fire that stunned everyone and inflicted the debuff {Flare} on them.

Wave after wave was unleashed by the rest of the 6 Crimson Fire Crows, inflicting a total of 7 stacks of {Flare} on the party.

Zhang Yang immediately purged the debuff with {Warrior's Will} and struck one of the crows with a sure Critical strike {Destructive Smash}, dealing 480,000 damage.

Han Ying Xue and the rest had purged their own debuffs with skills or accessory effects. One stack of DoT effect would not harm them much, since its just 10,000 damage every 3 seconds. Seven stacks however, could deal 70,000 damage, and that would hurt. Even if just a bit.

The Phoenix excelled best. Not only did it have immunity to Fire damage, it could also absorb all incoming fire based attacks and restore its HP with it! It's the best anti-fire, anti-burn monster! The true Lord of Flames!

As the flames kept on pouring down on the party, the Phoenix single-handedly took care of all the Fire Crows and turned them into fried meat, extra crispy. Even though they were elite tier and had higher HP than normal, one wave of monster would only have 7 counts of monsters. Zhang Yang and the party had no problems at all in dealing with such measly numbers. Ignoring the speed of killing, the Phoenix alone could take care of all the monsters with no healers!

Hmph! As expected of the best Phoenix!

Some time later, all seven Fire Crows dropped down from the sky and vomited out a pile of loot, including two thumb sized, fiery red crystals. It was as red as a ruby that glimmered with an intense vermillion hue.

"Only two? We killed seven of them and only two [Crimson Fire Essence]? What a stingy monster! There's no recipe around, either!

Pfft!" Wei Yan Er grunted.

"Sigh...Do you know not patience in your book of virtue? If we can farm one [Crimson Fire Essence] from 10 crows, you can kneel down do your ancestors' altar and burn joss sticks to thank them! Don't mind the recipe. You can start complaining when we don't gain a single one of it after wiping out all the monsters here!" said Zhang Yang as he taps Wei Yan Er's head.

The party continued on further and met more waves of Crimson Fire Crows. They were all in groups, with numbers ranging from 3 to 9. Technically, the Crimson Fire Crows were strong, due to the skill {Flare}. However, it was useless in the face of the Legendary Beast Phoenix! The best way to fight was to allow the Phoenix to fly into the fight, generating that little aggro, so that the party could wipe them all clean without sustaining any damage.

As the party ventured further and deeper, Zhang Yang's inventory slots had started to gather more [Crimson Fire Essence] yet there were still no signs of any recipes. Initially, Zhang Yang was assured that it would be found eventually, however, as they killed more and more crows, he started losing hope. The best way to describe their situation was that they had a lot of meat to be grilled, but no griller nor coal around to start the fire pit!

Thankfully, the lava cave had a rather huge system of caverns inside. On one hand, there was still hope of finding more crows, on the other hand, it was getting hotter and hotter! Even though the cavern was splitting up here and there, it was fairly easy to explore. Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu both gained a level by noon. However, by then, they had only managed to explore roughly 15% of the entire place. Zhang Yang predicted that they may need to spend close to 2 to 3 days' worth of time to completely explore the cave.

On one hand, they had the time of the world to spare. Might as well spend some time grinding their levels there, for the killing rate and experience points was more than the outside world. With

a blink of an eye, two days had passed and everyone had filled up more than 50% of their experience bars. If they could spend another two more days, they could gain a Level that easily. Normally, the same level would have consumed (in-game time) a whole month! The reason they could do it was, one, they had no need to run around the map to hunt hot spots for monsters. Secondly, the monster count inside the map was too abundant. Those two reasons alone, had increased the grinding rate by a notch, allowing Zhang Yang and the party to gain a level in just 12 to 13 days of in-game time.

The party walked to the end of the cave and entered a new brightly illuminated cave. The cave was at least three times bigger than the space they were in before, as large as a football stadium.

The cave was made out of hot, molten lava. Sitting in the middle of the cave was a huge Crimson Fire Crow that was clearly different compared to the ones that they had defeated a while back. This Crimson Fire Crow was bigger, and had feathers that glowed with molten lava. Compared to the rest of the crows, the big one was far vicious. Its face and body was scarred, yet the feathers that grew on top of its head were magnificent, like a crown.

[Crimson Fire Crow King] (Rare Mythical, Beast)

Level: 170

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 7,000

Magic Attack: 25,150 – 35,150

Skills:

[Fire Breath]: Spews a trail of fire, dealing 200% Magic Fire Attack to a target. If the target carries the effect of {Flare}, damage is increased by 50%.

[Flare]: Blasts a wave of flame 30 meters around the caster. Stuns

all target for 3 seconds and deals additional 50,000 Fire damage within 15 seconds.

The big crow was obviously the boss of the Crimson Fire Crows. However, its stats were not too strong, compared to the other crows. The only thing it had, was more HP and slightly more attack. However, the one thing that had Zhang Yang intrigued was the word "Rare". Somehow, he knew that the recipe for the [Amateur Power Potion] will be on it.

"Oh ho...A rare boss!" cried Wei Yan Er. "Hey hey hey hey! Look! Look! At the boss' feet there! There's a tiny bird!"

Playing around the boss' feet was a palm-sized tiny Crimson Fire Crow. Its body was like a regular crow. Somehow, it looked like a bootleg version of the Phoenix. Perhaps, it would be several times weaker than the real Phoenix!

[Juvenile Crimson Fire Crow] (Mythical tier Flying Mount)

Level: 0

Note: Can be tamed.

"A mythical tier mount!"

Everyone had their hair standing on edge. Taking aside the fact that Zhang Yang's mount was an Ethereal tier, which was able to gain tiers automatically. The other party members' mounts were merely Violet-Platinum tier and Yellow-Gold tier. Wei Yan Er had the Violet-Platinum Winged-Tiger mount. While Daffodil Daydream's flying mount was only a Yellow-Gold tier, which was only used for travel. Her battle mount, however, was the mount she had obtained from the twelve-horoscope mountain. At least, it was a Violet-Platinum tier.

Even the stone cold Sun Xin Yu was surprised to see such a rare mount!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Kill the boss first and roll for your luck!"

"Noobie tank! You're so cruel! How could you kill a chick's mother right in front of it?!"

"Oh! Is that so? Well then, let's skip this boss then!"

"NOOOO!!"

"In that case, shut your whining! I'll deduct your pocket money the next time you try to act smart!"

Even though the Crimson Fire Crow King might have the title of a boss, it was no different from a higher leveled Elite tier monster. Zhang Yang took the liberty to handle it alone and killed it soon after. The four ladies then rolled for the mount as Zhang Yang went for the loot. Happy and satisfied, Zhang Yang found an Alchemy recipe which was none other than the one that he had been looking for, while hunting in the cave for 2 days. Zhang Yang learned the recipe and found out, that besides the [Crimson Fire Essence], the other material he required to craft the [Amateur Power Potion] was an herb called [Blazing Mushroom].

Zhang Yang had an abundance of high leveled herbs collecting dust in his own personal warehouse. After he returns to town, Zhang Yang could start mass producing the potions. Sadly, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] could never collect the [Crimson Fire Essence]. This little crystal can only be farmed from monsters or bought from players. Since most players were oblivious to its use, and the essence crystal can only be used to craft the [Power Potion], so might as well sell them to Zhang Yang since he would be buying them for 50% extra coins than selling them to NPC! NPC are none other than the system, the company itself. The NPC would only offer the players 2 silver coins at most, for the essence! The completed [Amateur Power Potion] could fetch up to 5 gold coins each! When a guild wants to be the first to explore a dungeon, they would have to mass purchase the potions. Zhang Yang could sell them for a higher price of 20 to 30 gold coins each! They would still buy them!



The selling price for each potion would be roughly 5 gold coins in long term. Now that Zhang Yang was going to buy the ingredients for only 5 silver coins each, the profit he would be earning are 10000% Investor would die to invest in a venture for as low of 100% or 200% profit comeback! What would anyone be silly enough to stop earning for the 10000% profit margin!?

A long time ago, Zhang Yang had Yu Li to learn Alchemy profession to have her produce potion in his stead. However, when Zhang Yang acquired the skill {Alchemist's Intuition}, he learned the recipes of all the rare potions himself and concocted them himself. Sadly, he would have to set aside some time to grind and concoct potions as well! It would be a rather hectic time for him!

Other than the recipe, the boss had also dropped a Level 170 Mythical tier Leather armor boots. Zhang Yang kept the boots. Perhaps, he could sell it for only 10 to 20 gold coins.

On the other hand, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the girls had rolled for the mount. Sun Xin Yu was the first to roll but failed at only 28%. The little brat and next, followed by Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream was the last. However, after one round, all of them had failed to seal the mount and would need to start again.

In the second round, the little girl was lucky. She sealed the crow and obtained the Mythical tier Flying Mount. Contrary to popular belief, a flying mount was mainly for traveling, however, the most important factor of all mounts was their tier and strength. The higher the tier, the more it could improve their owner's survivability in battle.

Wei Yan Er summoned the little red crow out and prepared to train it. She then turned to the magnificent Phoenix and said, "Look at the little cutey pie~~~ Awww~~~ It's so cute I'm gonna die!!! Hahaha! Noobie tank! Don't think that I'll trade it with you! This is mine!"

# Chapter 710: Darok

---

After the party was finished with the Crimson Fire Crow King, there was nothing left but to go out of the steamy hot cave. The party circled around the walls of the cave and managed to find a small opening that led to the outside of the cave. After squeezing through the pathway, they were led to another large cave, with a gigantic palace situated in it. The structure of the castle was built in accordance to the shape of the cave itself. There was no other way but to go into the castle.

The castle itself was extremely old. Cracks were here and there, showing signs of severe deterioration. The first chamber of the castle was opened wide, since there were no doors to enclose it. From outside, the party could see countless of Spectre infested monsters that were patrolling around aimlessly. The sounds of their eerie cries, coupled with their extreme numbers was only an early indication that their journey forward will be tough.

Zhang Yang opened the map and examined the size of the palace. It was expectedly huge. Zhang Yang tried to scroll to the far end but was blocked from doing so. Looks like that was the end of the Mythical Dragon Realm. The last boss should be inside.

"Let's go. We're about to clear the map!"

The five-man party went into the castle with Zhang Yang taking the lead. According to the official guideline, every Mythical Dragon Realm will have one final boss. Since the realm had spawned in a Level 150 – 180 map, the final boss should be a Holy tier boss. Right then, all Holy tier equipment, weak or not, were extremely rare and precious. Even Zhang Yang himself had two Holy tier equipment, hence, most of his equipment were Ethereal tier.

As they approached the swarm of monsters, the little girl cried with excitement. "Oooooo! I can't wait to get my hands on a Holy tier two-handed axe!"

"Hm. If there is one, it will be yours, then. I'll be nice enough to lend it to you!" said Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had no need for a Holy tier equipment since he had an Ascended tier two-handed axe waiting in his personal warehouse! All he had to do now was to grind his level up to Level 180 to equip it! Naturally, he did not need to fight over the axe.

The party entered the first hall and encountered their first wave of monsters.

[Shrieking Witch] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 5,250,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,833 – 60,822 (Physical Shadow Attack)

Skills:

[Terror Shriek]: Let out a terrifying shriek, inflicting {Fear} on a target for 5 seconds.

[Possession]: Possesses a target and controls it. The effect lasts indefinitely until the target's HP drops below 10%.

Note: The Shrieking Witch is one of the many loyal servants of Darok. She has the ability to inflict fear into the hearts of the enemy. Using that fear, she could use them as their plaything. Many of adventures that had tried to subdue Darok has fallen into the hands of the witches.

"Crap! What a troublesome skill!" Daffodil Daydream grunted. "The shrieking skill is inevitable, but the controlling skill will be a pain in the butt!"

"It would be best to dispel the skill the moment the monster controls you. That, or we might have to fight amongst ourselves."

"Sigh...If only I have the chance to whack the noobie tank."

"What?"

"What?"

However they may complain, they had already reached the bridge and had to cross over it. Zhang Yang took the initiative and started first with a {Spear of Obliteration}. Naturally, since the number of monsters was overwhelming, he had to be careful not to lure too many of them at a time. He tried to clear the monsters one at a time, due to the mind-controlling skill. If he had drawn in three monsters, he might cause the entire team to be killed!

"All that lives shall be ours!" cried the witch as she turned to Zhang Yang. The witch was considered a higher leveled Spectre since she was able to maintain her original human appearance without any signs of decay. Her entire body was cloaked in a thin white fabric that was plastered against her skin. Unlike the other women and female bosses that Zhang Yang have met, the witches were plain normal girls. Average Janes, at that.

The witch attacked Zhang Yang by clawing him with her hands. That was nothing to be afraid of, since her attacks were like using a pair of wooden chopstick to whack a titanium steel wall. However, that was not the main attack pattern. In just a few normal hits, the witch will shriek, causing Zhang Yang to run amok for 5 seconds.

Even though he had {Warrior's Will} ready to be used, Zhang Yang had chosen to reserve the skill for {Possession} instead. Although he had not the faintest idea of whether the skill could be dispelled, it was still worth a try.

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the team started their attack on the witch once Zhang Yang gave them the green light. Although the other members of the party might occasionally OT Zhang Yang, it was not a problem since the witch's attack was too low to be threatening, even without Han Ying Xue healing them.

When {Fear} on Zhang Yang wore off, the witch then proceeded to cast the most troublesome skill, that was {Possession}.

A large white cross made of skeletal formed behind Daffodil Daydream. Her eyes were shrouded in a thick white layer of cloud and her hands were stretched to be crucified. After one second, her expression turned blank and emotionless while she pointed her staff at Han Ying Xue and blasted off a fire missile towards her, dealing over 60,000 damage.

"I cannot dispel the skill! I cannot even use any items or accessories! I'm completely locked out!" said Daffodil Daydream in the party channel.

"Time to kill sister Daffy!" Wei Yan Er was the first to jump in action and hurled her gigantic axe at Daffodil Daydream.

Sun Xin Yu blinked step behind Daffodil Daydream and started her attack combo.

"Careful! Be careful! Look at the HP bar! Stop at 10%!" said Zhang Yang. Although Sun Xin Yu had higher attack damage than Wei Yan Er, Zhang Yang was extremely worried for Wei Yan Er instead, since the girl was a maniac with the axe. She might accidentally slip up and kill Daffodil Daydream!. That was the main reason why the skill {Possession} was the most troublesome skill ever. It required one to attack one's own teammate in order to save them!

Within a few seconds, Daffodil Daydream was freed of the curse at 8% HP. Sun Xin Yu had sharp eyes. Her final attack had dealt enough damage to knock down 11% HP to 8% at the right amount. Right then, her blade stopped and she withdrew from her. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was a ruffian. Before she could see Daffodil Daydream was already freed of the skill, she was already too late.

{Apparate}!

Daffodil Daydream had anticipated Wei Yan Er's carelessness and teleported her way out of danger the moment she regained control.

"Stupid! Are you really trying to kill Daffy?!" Zhang Yang scolded.

"Sorry! My bad! My hand slipped! Nishishishi!"

Han Ying Xue had immediately healed Daffodil Daydream the instant she was within range. Thankfully, the skill {Possession} had an extremely long cooldown time. Before the witch could use the skill again, the party had already ended her 5 million HP.

After the first battle, even Wei Yan Er had insisted that Zhang Yang be careful with kiting the monsters. One was enough to send them into a huge disarray. If Zhang Yang accidentally lures in a huge swarm, they might be seriously looking at death's door.

Fortunately, the monsters present in the first hall was mostly skeletal soldiers. The ratio of the witch and the skeletal soldiers were almost 1:9. Even though it was extremely dangerous, where Wei Yan Er had even nearly killed Han Ying Xue that one time, the team was able to thread through the needle hole.

Three hours of fighting later, they had cleared the entire palace of monsters and confronted the final boss.

The final boss was a Spectre wizard with a typical black magician robe and a long crimson-violet staff. Molded on top of the staff was a white human skull that was glowing in an emerald-green hue. Although the robes covered his entire body, the hands that held the staff were visible. It was dried up, shriveled, like a corpse. Shrouded in darkness, only the glow of the Spectre's green fire was visible underneath the robes.

[Spectre Evil Wizard, Dorak] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 180

HP: 1,800,000,000

Defense: 18,470

Magic Attack: 85,228 – 125,228

Skills:

[Possession]: Possesses a target and controls it. Effect lasts indefinitely until the target's HP drops below 10%.

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% magic Shadow attack on a target. Channeling: 2 seconds.

[Shadow Trap]: Randomly casts 40 Shadow Traps around the field. Triggers when players step into the trap, dealing 400,000 Shadow damage.

[Ring of Shadow]: Summons 9 gigantic rings of shadow. The Rings will roll around the battlefield and deals 300,000 Shadow damage on impact.

Note: The King, the Rule, The Lord of the Spectre Kingdom! Dorak was born with an innate talent for the Dark Side. His ambition was to rule over the powers of Shadow, and he had completely abandoned his human self and became a Spectre Wizard. Now, his mastery of the powers over Shadow had even received recognition from the Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich.

"Hey, dummy! Look, there's no Constitution skill! The boss does not have any recovery skills!"

"Hm. That's good then. Since the entry limit was only 5 men. The system has designed this boss fight to be that of a dungeon. Do not underestimate the boss, for each of its move is designed to fight 5 players. He would never be as stupid as the other bosses we fought before. Look at the boss' skills. All of them requires us to be on our toes at all times."

"But, don't we have Inheritance Transformations? Since the boss does not have a recovery skill, this should be a cakewalk!"

"Please. It's not like the developers had anticipated that players would be as strong as us. Do you think the developers would have the time to design the map solely for our level?"

"Enough of your explanation! I'm sick of it, noob tank! Let's get this over with and get my axe!"

Zhang Yang pinched his brow and shook his head. "It's not like

you could equip it as soon as it drops! The boss is Level 180. This means that the equipment he drops would be Level 180 as well! The only thing you could do if you pick up a two-handed axe is to place it in your inventory to gather dust!"

"Hmph! Level...Level...Level!" Wei Yan Er mumbled. "Everything is about levels, isn't it! Fine! I'll work hard! It's not like Level 180 is going to run away or anything! Equipment is more important!" Wei Yan Er snorted.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and rapped the top of her head hard.

"Alright. If everyone's ready to fight, follow me and attack after I have pricked the boss! Use your Transformations, now. Together. The faster we fight, the quicker we can leave this God-forsaken place! I'm starting to get bored of this wretched place, anyway!"

Daffodil Daydream raised her timid little hand, asking for permission to say something. "Erhm...wouldn't it be extremely dangerous if one of us is controlled while transformed? 10% would be a tough target to reach."

Han Ying Xue butted in. "If I may, our HP would be greatly increased after Transformation, who on earth has the time to fight you if you are controlled?"

Zhang Yang thought about it for a while and said, "I think it would be fine. Since we would be attacking at our strongest during our Transformation states." Zhang Yang explained it carefully. He wanted Han Ying Xue to maintain everyone's HP at around 10% and above. It would be easier to counter the mind controlling skill. It may seem dangerous, however, even the weakest one, Daffodil Daydream would have 12,000,000 HP, with Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}. 10% of that would be 1,200,000! It had exceeded her own basic HP of only 320,000 HP. Even if they were to accidentally take a hit from the boss, their HP would not be in real danger.

"True..."



"But, we still have to be careful!"

Everyone nodded and Zhang Yang gave the signal. Everyone activated their Transformation skill, including Felice and the Phoenix as well. A total of 7 Transformed characters the battle. At that moment, their party consisted of three S class Inheritance and two A class Inheritance players. With the Transformed battle mount and Battle Companion, the entire server could not possibly replicate such a party!

Zhang Yang soared to the sky and shot down at the boss. With the standard {Spear of Obliteration} hitting the boss, the battle was started.

"Ho ho...It's been a while since living beings have walked into this realm!" Dorak took the attack and floated towards Zhang Yang slowly. "Perhaps I should welcome you with open arms, especially when you are here to be my slaves!"

Zhang Yang chained his attack with several skills, followed by the attacks of the entire team behind him. Since Zhang Yang had already decreed that everyone only retain 10% of their HP, Han Ying Xue did not heal, but switched to offensive spells. Having more HP would only be troublesome for the party when the boss uses {Possession}.

Without recovery skills, the party did not face any trouble. Hence, even if they had extremely low DPS, the main issue in defeating the boss would be time! At that moment, Zhang Yang's party cumulative DPS was around 1,450,000! Technically, if everything goes smoothly as planned, they would only need 20 minutes to kill the boss! That is, if they are able to successfully endure the shadow traps, and the Ring of Shadow!

# Chapter 711: The Way to Fight is to Lose?

---

"I applaud your efforts of entering my realm with only the five of you!" Dorak laughed with a deep, husky voice that was both eerie and bold. He then lifted his staff and fired {Shadow Arrows} again and again, dealing 200,000 damage to Zhang Yang.

However, despite being powerful, the attack was like a mosquito bite when Zhang Yang is in his Transformation state. He had 40% magic nullification chance. Hence, technically, he would only take on average of 50,000 to 60,000 shadow damage and lose around 30,000 HP per second. It was too low!

"Come on! Pump it up! Give me more pain!" Zhang Yang provoked him. If he is possessed then, it would be extremely difficult to push Zhang Yang's HP down to 10%. Perhaps, he would even kill everyone, before then!

Then again, it was supposed to be a good thing, yet the boss' low damage hitting was proving to be a little troublesome. At the rate of 30,000 damage per second, the boss would need to take 19 minutes to damage Zhang Yang down to 10%. By then, he would have been controlled countless of times.

"Pest should do nothing but be squashed! Save your tongue, after I kill you, I shall turn you into a headless knight! Perhaps, you can find solace in knowing that you will never speak again!" Aggravated, the boss fired all his {Shadow Arrows} at Zhang Yang. After several blast, he grabbed his staff with both of his wrinkled hands and stabbed into the ground. "Ring of Shadows! Fatten these intruders!"

Gulong! Gulong!

Nine rings of shadow appeared, lining up in a straight line on both left and right of Darok. Like a Ferris wheel that had gone out of control, the rings started rolling towards the party. Since the place was designed like a dungeon fight, all skills were evadable. At

every gap between each ring, there will be a meter wide gap that player could stand in to evade the attack.

While that was supposed to be the case, Zhang Yang and the party was not moving away from the rings. Instead, they took the hit deliberately. Each of them took a hit and suffered 300,000 shadow damage. While Zhang Yang and his party were "eating" the attack, Felice and the other battle mount and battle companion were dodging the rings to avoid the damage. Since they were not considered as player characters, they could not be controlled. Dodging the attacks would be the only be the natural thing to do. 300,000 damage was more than enough to kill them in one attack.

The rings rolled from the boss, towards the back of the palace, and back again towards him, hitting everyone once more.

"Haha! Is that chaotic enough for you?! Let's make it better!" the boss laughed hysterically and stabbed the ground with his staff again. Surrounding him, shadow pits were forming. The size of the traps were roughly 2 meters wide and was forming, only 50 meters around the boss. The traps placements were extremely random and the traps were overlapping each other.

"Oh! Nice!" cried Wei Yan Er happily as she charged towards the traps to spring it.

Again, normally, players would dodge the traps, and for good reason as well. Each of the traps could deal as much as 400,000 shadow damage and could kill non-Transformed, non-tank players. However, even though the traps were overlapping over each other, there will always be a way to dodge all skills of the boss. The gap between each trap was wide enough to allow players to dodge them and evade the rolling rings of shadows.

After being sprung, the traps will automatically be removed from the battlefield, Zhang Yang and everyone deliberately moved around the field, stepping on each trap to take the damage. Amongst them, Wei Yan Er was fastest and sprung the most traps.

It was deliberate, since the little girl had the Darkness Inheritance with a natural high tolerance to shadow attack. Even though she had stepped on 14 {Shadow Traps}, the damage she had taken was only around 1,680,000. The little girl went on complaining that the boss was just too weak!

"What mad fools!" even the boss was astonished at the party's extremely unorthodox method of fighting! However, as the system dictates, after all the traps are sprung, the boss will automatically replenish them again.

"Sigh...we should have taken some damage before Transforming earlier! It's so hard to lose HP now!"

In the most common situation, players would want to have the highest HP possible during a boss fight. There are even times when the healer had to burn all their MP just to keep the players alive! However, right then, who would have thought that a party would want to have their HP lowered as fast as possible!? Who in the right mind would do that!?

After a few more rounds of {Shadow Traps}, the boss grinned eerily and turned towards Wei Yan Er. With a quick blink, his entire character had turned into a puff of smoke that zoomed through the battlefield to seep into her body.

A familiar skeletal cross appeared behind Wei Yan Er and her hands were swung open as if she was being crucified. Her eyes turned white and she had lost control of her body.

"Haha! It has always been my favorite form of entertainment to see friends killing each other!" The boss had controlled Wei Yan Er character and spoke through her mouth. The little girl then turned towards Sun Xin Yu and charged towards Sun Xin Yu.

At the very moment when the boss had turned into a puff of smoke, Zhang Yang trailed it immediately and waited beside Wei Yan Er ready to react. With a quick smash, Zhang Yang stunned Wei Yan Er with {Blast Wave}. Everyone, including the battle

mounts and battle companions had attacked the little girl!

Fortunately for the party, when Wei Yan Er "betrayed" them, she had lost the right to gain the benefit from Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}. Similarly, the party had lost the right to gain the benefit from Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura}, causing the team to lose a little of their damaging power.

However, the little girl's attack power was extremely high. Since she had already Transformed, she could kill two to three players in their team! However, her current opponent was primarily Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. In less than half a minute, both of them managed to dispel the control of the boss by hitting the little girl down to her last 9% HP.

PUFF!

"GURAAHHHH" Wei Yan Er arched her head back and screamed at the top of her lungs, and the same dark smoke burst out of her mouth as she expelled the boss from inside her body.

"Waaa! That was scary! I almost died!" cried Wei Yan Er.

The battle resumed back to the "normal" pace when the boss reformed back at his original spawn point.

Although Wei Yan Er had managed to get herself to 10%, before she was freed from the control of the boss, she had managed to deal enough damage to the party. Zhang Yang was still left with 59% HP, Sun Xin Yu had 48%, Han Ying Xue had 45% HP, and Daffodil Daydream had over 43% HP.

The boss continued his pace and set up more traps and casted {Shadow Arrow} on Zhang Yang.

Now that Wei Yan Er had left with 10%, she had stopped taking more hits and switched to the normal evasive style. Perhaps she was getting better after playing the game, after so long. Occasionally, she could stand at a spot and take no damage at all. At time, she soared around the field, dodging all the traps and the

Ring of Shadow, laughing hysterically while she was at it.

Without the healer doing her job, the HP of the entire party dropped faster than usual. By the time the boss used the second {Possession}, everyone, but Zhang Yang was left with 10%. Only Zhang Yang had trouble getting his HP down to 10% in time. He still had over 19% HP left!

It was inevitable, since his damage reduction and absorption were too high and efficient. At one point, he had even removed his shield to reduce the absorption level. Only then, he was able to reduce his HP down to 19%. That or it may have ended up even higher!

Since Zhang Yang was the only person in the party who had over 10% HP, the second {Possession} struck him.

"Everyone, be careful when you're attacking Zhang Yang. His attacks are too strong!" said Han Ying Xue as she cast {Regeneration} on everyone and prepared {Holy Shield}.

It was extremely dangerous indeed to fight Zhang Yang. Note that when the boss controls a player, the controlled player will use all its active skills. Zhang Yang's skill {Destructive Smash} was so powerful that it could reduce Han Ying Xue's healing rate by 75%. It was extremely dangerous, since she could not heal the others in time.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had only over 19% HP left. It was easy to free him from the boss' control.

"Hahaha! You don't know how long have I waited for this moment, noob tank!" Wei Yan Er glided across the floor and stunned Zhang Yang. She then brought down her axe and cleaved Zhang Yang with high damage. Since Zhang Yang had already removed his shield, everyone had a better time attacking Zhang Yang.

"What have I done to wrong you?" said Zhang Yang through the

party channel. Even though he was not able to control his own character, he could still send messages through the party channel.

"Evil henchman! I shall punish you in the name of the moon!" said Wei Yan Er while she posed like the character in Sailor Moon.

Sun Xin Yu used {Shadow Step} to disappear from the battle for a brief second before entering stealth with {Vanish}. She then moved behind Zhang Yang and stunned him before attacking. All of the party members, besides Zhang Yang had less than 10% HP. Hence, they could not afford to trade blows with Zhang Yang. In the worst-case scenario, they might actually be overwhelmed by Zhang Yang!

Fortunately, even though the players could still use their skill, the boss would not use them too often. On the other hand, since he knew that he would be the one that would be controlled, Zhang Yang had preemptively used all his status-removing skills beforehand, rendering him being stunned by Sun Xin Yu without resistance.

After {Ambush}, Sun Xin Yu extended the stun with {Kidney Shot}, extending the stun time by 10 seconds to allow the party to deal enough damage. Right at the last moment of the stun, Zhang Yang's HP dropped below 10% and he was freed from the boss' control.

As the boss laughed at the "wounded" players, he laughed maniacally and attacked Zhang Yang, while scorning them. "Your doom is close!"

Zhang Yang took a hit from the {Shadow Arrow} and awoke from the stun. He then immediately reequiped the shield and continued his attack on the boss.

From the party's perspective, the real battle had just begun then!

Since they would no need to heal, and could not lose any more HP than they had then, everyone was extremely careful while

moving around the battlefield. They had to avoid all the traps and the rings of shadows. In such a scenario, when a party is forced to survive with less than 10% HP while attacking the boss, it would be a difficulty that even Zhang Yang's party would find hard to continue.

Those with lower control skill would surely be dead then, as they were too busy avoiding the traps and rings, forgetting to prioritize their matters.

Perhaps it was one of the main factors when designing the boss. To allow players a chance to survive in the battle, the designer of the boss had not bestowed any recovery skills to the boss. It would be a hopeless battle if the boss could regenerate HP while the entire party is too busy avoiding the skills!

Han Ying Xue was at her best. She would not dare lower her guard, even for a second, since they were all at the 10% HP threshold! Despite the fact that all their HP bars were at the very least, at 1,200,000 HP since all their Transformation skill were active. At most, they could take one trap and one attack from the Ring of Shadow.

Zhang Yang was on a whole other level. At 10%, his HP was at 4,000,000 HP! It was almost the same as a B class Inheritance Transformed players!

Since none of the party members then had over 10% HP, the skill {Possession} was completely taken off the floor! The only things that the boss was firing constantly were the {Shadow Traps} and {Ring of Shadows}.



# Chapter 712: Savage Bone Crushing Hammer

---

The most dangerous part of {Possess} was its ability to control players. Players who are controlled by the boss would be more dangerous than the boss. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his gang rather kept their HP down to danger level of 10% remaining rather than become possessed by the boss.

For normal players, even if the boss did not have {Possess}, the {Shadow Trap} and {Shadow Roller} were already extremely difficult to deal with. While they are dodging either one of those attacks, they might get hit by the other. Each attack could deal up to 300,000 damage to 400,000 damage! So, how many players in the game could afford to sustain so much damage over time, then?

However, for high Tier players, the boss would be easy to slay, if the boss did not have the Skill {Possess}.

All they needed to do would be dodge, hit, and dodge and hit again!

Upon getting used to the pace of the battle, the boss would no longer be a threat to them

Without the interruption of {Possess}, the party began to unleash their full potential, dealing damage to the boss as aggressively as they could. It did not take long before they crushed the boss's HP bar from 70% to 40%, then from 40% to 20%!

"No--- No! You imbeciles! You pests! How is it possible that you bunch of useless beings could deal so much damage to me!" Darok had received quite a number of blows to his face. He was heavily wounded as he appeared pathetic now. However, that was just the visual effect in the game. The boss's strength was not affected at all. He became even more hysterical and violent than before after his HP bar dropped below 20%.

Right after the HP bar had dropped below 20%, the {Shadow Roller} that the boss activated became much faster. Zhang Yang and his gang had even lesser time to adjust their positions on the battlefield now.

"Stinky boss! Don't you know you're not the only one who can go crazy!?" Wei Yan Er gulped down a bottle of [Beginner's Power Potion] to boost her Attack power. Then she activated her {Indiscriminate}, closely followed by her {Killing Cleave} to greet the boss!

'-1,604,698!'

An immense damage value popped out right on top of the boss. Wei Yan Er was very satisfied with the amount of damage she dealt with that strike of hers. It was impossible to see a 7-digit damage value in the early stage of the game after all!

"Argh ---" Darok was infuriated. He let out a raging roar and waved his staff around. However, he could only shoot his {Shadow Arrow} at Zhang Yang all thanks to the Aggro System of the game. So the boss could only throw his Skills on the player who had the most aggro value.

"I'll punish you on behalf of the moon! I'm Sailormoon!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud as she swung her battle axe around like a mad lady.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. Then he said, "Sailormoon? You're still not there yet! But you're most suited to be called 'Psycholoon'! That name should live up to your reputation!"

"Wah! You stinky noob tank! How dare you underestimate me!" Humph! Humph! I should have sliced you into pieces when you were possessed just now!" Wei Yan Er unleashed all her super powerful Skills onto the boss while her {Indiscriminate} was still in effect. Well, part of her was venting out her anger, because Zhang Yang did really provoke her.

17%, 14%, 11%!

Without a Skill that could recover his HP, the boss was like being made of water. His HP bar was dropping so steeply that it went down to 10% in just a brief moment!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Shoof! A dark skull began to form right on top of the boss! Very good! It was like putting icing on a cake that looked pretty in the first place!

Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Shadow Clone,} right after throwing his {Glare of the Death God}. At the same instant, 7 'Zhang Yangs' appeared and all of them began to slaughter the boss aggressively. That really boosted the efficiency of their assaults on the boss.

Although these Shadow Clones could not really deal high damage, their attack rates was similar to Zhang Yang's. In other words, if Zhang Yang could hit 3 times in a second, every single one of the Shadow Clones would be able to do that as well. The only difference was the amount of damage that they could deal was much lesser than Zhang Yang's. Other than that, there was also the gang, Battle Companions and the Phoenix pets! Their attacks were insanely packed up together! If there was anyone witnessing this battle, all they could see were the afterimages of blades and Skills raining down upon the boss.

"What is this!?" Darok let out a terrified scream. Looks like he saw his own death coming.

"We're killing you!" Zhang Yang replied as he was laughing out loud! Meanwhile, everyone did not stop. Instead, they were getting pumped to finish the battle once and for all. So their attacks were getting even more aggressive than ever!

'-18,000,000!'

'-18,000,000!'

The boss received a damage of approximately 20,000,000 damage consecutively. His HP bar continued to drop like hell. In under 6 seconds, the effect of {Glare of the Death God} had been triggered 10 times over! After the bombardment of attacks from Zhang Yang and his gang, Darok had only less than 1% HP remaining. That was only 5,890,000 HP left now!

"God damn pests!" Darok began with his final struggle. However, an amount of HP that was lower than 6,000,000 HP was not enough to hold up against the insane party. Instantly, the boss was slain with little effort. Darok collapsed onto the ground heavily and died. 5 streams of white lights merged into their bodies. Each of them received a total of 36,000,000,000 Experience Points, They could see that their Experience Bars jumping up with their own eyes.

The moment after the boss was slain, the {Shadow Traps} and the {Shadow Rollers} that were planted all across the ground vanished without a trace. The entire palace had returned to its original state. Peaceful and quiet.

"Wahaha! The boss dropped a Two-Handed Weapon!" Wei Yan Er was agile as f\*ck when it was time to pick up the loots. She already picked up a hammer, twice the size of a regular human. She was rubbing her face against the hammer as we speak.

"Unfortunately, this is a hammer!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

"You're the hammer!" Wei Yan Er understood what Zhang Yang was trying to imply. She shot back.

The boss dropped a total of two pieces of Holy Tier equipment. One of them was the Two-handed hammer that Wei Yan Er was hugging. The other one was a pair of pale-gray gloves. There was also a vague crimson radiance radiating across the surface of the gloves. Because of that, the gloves looked mysteriously fascinating.

Other than that, the boss had also dropped two books, one [Skill Point Crystal], and last but not least, a dark-colored order pendant

that was the size of a palm.

Zhang Yang immediately picked up the order and took a closer look. Holy god! That was actually a [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order]!

The Lone Desert Smoke had remained a Level 4 Guild for quite a long time. Their Experience value had been full for quite a while now. They had been waiting to get a [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order] to finally level up their Guild.

"Tsk! If we sell this to Snow Seeker, I wonder, how much would she be willing to pay us, then?" Wei Yan Er's eyes were beginning to glitter once again. The little brat told Zhang Yang that her classmates were organizing a Summer Camp soon. Meanwhile, she had already spent all of her salary, up to next year's. So, she was super poor right now. Of course, it would be natural that she would try anything possible to get some money now.

The first piece of [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order] that had ever appeared in the entire game was not to be given to anyone else, of course. No matter how much money others were willing to pay, there was no way Zhang Yang would be stupid enough to sell it! So, he immediately used the [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order] without even look at that little brat's f\*cking face. Instantly, the server began to announce and congratulate Lone Desert Smoke on being the first to ever become a Level 5 Guild. As usual, the entire guild received an additional reward. Each member of Lone Desert Smoke could enjoy earning an additional of 100% Experience Points for the next 3 days.

Zhang Yang was clever this time around, He quickly switched off his private message channel so that other guildmasters like Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and the others could not 'interrogate' him about the Guild Upgrade Order. Well, he was genuinely terrified of them now, especially Snow Seeker. She was born to be smart and cunning in the art of entrepreneurship and business. She could wrap you around her finger and confuse you just by spinning some words. You would not even know if you've stepped

into her trap or not! Well, by the time you realize it, everything would have been too late.

Of course, it was very easy for Zhang Yang to 'handle' Snow Seeker. All he needed to do was to act all 'hoodlum' on her. This pretty woman would definitely blush and retreat after that.

"Alright, enough with the fuzz. Just place the equipment down, will you?" Upon seeing the little brat hugging tightly onto the hammer, Zhang Yang hustled her to hand out the equipment so that everyone could see. He smacked the little brat's forehead with his finger.

"You hoodlum! I'll sue you for harassment!" Wei Yan Er tightened her teeth and waved her fists around at Zhang Yang, growling.

Zhang Yang laughed even harder and said, "Come one, who would want to believe that I would harass a boy with tits! Wait. A boy without tits! Wait, that's just a boy. Whatever. Hahaha!"

"Humph! I hate you!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyeballs back intensely. However, after she looked at the attributes of the hammer, she immediately smiled again. She then posted the attributes of the hammer, even though she was already treating it as her own. Well, she had always been the little brat that loved to show off.

[Savage Bone Crushing Hammer] (Holy, Two-Handed Hammer)

Attack: 23,810 – 33,810

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 7,582

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Damage by 40%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 10%.

Equip: When hitting a target, there is a chance that you might crush the skull of your target, causing the target to not be able to move at all for 3 seconds.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

The Attack power of this weapon was almost twice the Attack power of Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer]! However, it made perfect sense, because this weapon was a Level 180 Holy Tier weapon. It would be a disgrace to be a Holy Tier weapon if its attributes were not so powerful!

"You jealous?" Wei Yan Er kept the hammer in her inventory while bragging how lucky she was, like a little b\*tch. Well, she had only reached Level 150 not long ago. She would still need to grind another 10 levels before she could equip that weapon.

Zhang Yang did not intend to indulge her at all. He just pointed his finger at the other Holy Tier equipment, those pair of gloves.

[Crimson Goblin Gaunlets] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +640

Vitality: +8,402

Strength: +2,060

Agility: +875

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 16,800 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Haih... who told me to choose the hammer first..." Wei Yan Er

shrugged a little and said, "Noob tank, it's all yours! Be grateful!"

Zhang Yang laughed and kept the gloves in his inventory. He was currently equipped with Level 130 Mythical Tier gloves called [Silent Destroyer Glove]. It had been obsolete for quite some time now. However, other than his Accessories, every equipment on Zhang Yang would be at least Ethereal Tier.

As for his Accessories, well... Accessories were just hideous, these days. Most of the players were still clinging on to their level 60 Accessories until today.

"This is weird... this boss is a Spell-type boss right? Why is it dropping Physical-type equipment then?" Han Ying Xue was annoyed, "This is not fair to some people!"

"Stop complaining already... let's have a look at the two Books first, shall we?"

In the end, the first book they looked upon was actually a Blueprint for Leather Work profession players. So, Sun Xin Yu took it. The blueprint allowed the player to craft or make Ethereal equipment! However, even though Ethereal equipment could be sold at high prices, Sun Xin Yu would most probably not get into making them. Meanwhile, the second book was a Skill Book for Spellcasters. So they threw it over to Daffodil Daydream without any hesitation.

[Blizzard]: Causes 300% Magic Attack of Frost Attack to the target. If the target is in a Frozen state, then the attack will surely be a Critical Hit. Cast time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Even without the Critical Hit effect, causing 300% spell damage in every 2 seconds was good enough for Daffodil Daydream. She could now use a Skill with higher damage now. However, it was unfortunate that she was not a Cryomancer. Without the Skill [Ice Ring] to freeze her target, she could not fully utilize this Skill.



However, if this Skill could be used together with the Hunters' {Frost Trap}, then Daffodil Daydream should be able to use the Skill at its fullest potential. Other than that, Zhang Yang's {Frost Strike} might also trigger a Freeze Effect on his targets. So Daffodil Daydream should have quite a lot of chances of using this Skill at its fullest.

The last piece of [Skill Point Crsytal] was taken by Zhang Yang. Upon swallowing it, he acquired another additional Skill Point. His first choice was to upgrade his {Shadow Clone} to its highest grade. When his {Shadow Clone} is upgraded up to Grade 7, he could summon 7 Shadow Clones at the same time to aid him in battle. Putting aside the fact that he could gain an additional 70% of his output, having 8 Zhang Yangs on the battlefield would be terrifying!

# Chapter 713: Probing into the truth

---

After distributing everything, everyone took out their scrolls and left the Mythical Dragon Realm. Well, this realm was going to collapse automatically, soon. It remained unknown how long would it take for this realm to spawn again. Also, there was no telling where the realm would spawn either. Players would have to look it up from scratch.

After arriving at the main city, Zhang Yang quickly inserted a Level 6 Strength Gemstone into the socket of his [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets]. Until he reaches Level 160, he would not be able to equip it. Zhang Yang was currently at Level 154. He only needed 50% more to reach Level 155. From that perspective, it would not take long before he reaches Level 160.

Also, another happy thought crossed his mind. When he reaches Level 160, he also gets to borrow the little brat's hammer for a spin.

Among the ingredients required to make [Amateur's Power Potion], Zhang Yang had kept a substantial amount of [Blazing Mushrooms] in the warehouse. Furthermore, he could also command his [Herb Foraging Familiar] to gather them for him. On the other hand, the [Crimson Blazing Essence] could only be used to make [Amateur's Power Potion]. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was the only one who had the recipe to make that. There was no way that players could get it from the Auction House or other shops. Some players even sold them to NPCs for some money after they inadvertently coming across them.

Zhang Yang made a deal that he would pay anyone 8 gold pieces for every piece of [Crimson Blazing Essence] that they could bring him. That amount of reward was slightly better than the 4 gold pieces that the NPCs would offer. Zhang Yang believed that the players would not mind walking a few steps further just to earn some extra gold pieces. Well, he did not dare to mark the price up anymore to prevent any crooked businessman from taking

advantage of the situation. They might even try to snatch Zhang Yang's business by offering higher rewards to get them.

From that point of view, we know that The Little Merchandize had grown famous. Every small detail that was happening in the shop was being 'monitored' by everyone in the game. Some businessmen knew that Zhang Yang was purchasing [Crimson Blazing Essence] from the players with higher prices. So they also purchased quite a number of the item and kept it to themselves. They did not purchase too much because they were concerned that it might be a tactic Zhang Yang used to trick them into wasting their money.

After all, there was no true or false when it comes to business. Some people would make or buy a certain number of items that are less valuable first. Then they would purposely blow up the value of those items so that their values might increase. When the price of those items rocket up, they would sell those items that they kept secretly, long before the prices had gone up to earn a fortune! With that sort of tactic, they could easily cripple their competitors in the same field.

Zhang Yang withdrew a large number of [Blazing Mushrooms] from his bank. Then he put them according to the ratio of 3:1 with the [Crimson Flame Essences] into his inventory. Afterwards, he put the remaining of the [Blazing Mushrooms] back to the bank. He would only take them out again after he manages to purchase more [Crimson Flame Essences].

Zhang Yang arrived at the Alchemist Shop and bought some empty bottles. Just when he was ready to make some potions, he received a sudden message from Chen Xue Yao. She requested for help in clearing her next dungeon.

Since he could still sit back and make his potion, Zhang Yang did not reject her request. So he hopped onto his Phoenix pet and flew over to where Chen Xue Yao was. The two of them entered the dungeon. Zhang Yang was making his potions at the rear while his

Phoenix pet and Felice took care of the monsters.

The two of them were attempting to clear the Level 70 Vestibule of Stones. Therefore, the Phoenix pet and Felice were more than enough to wipe out the monsters and bosses in the dungeon oppressively. Zhang Yang did not feel any stress at all while he was making his potions at the rear of the battlefield. He did not waste any second of his time.

"You're so famous now, so you must have a lot of enemies, right?" Chen Xue Yao asked Zhang Yang out of her curiosity.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "That's right! Anyone would suddenly appear on my back trying to stab me! I can't even rest without the need to worry about people trying to kill me!"

"Hmm... some people are really born to be bad! To me, games are just games. Why would they bring the grudge into real life!? Humph!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Are you talking about that Heaven's Pride?" Then he shook his head and said, "That prick is just the type of people who would seek revenge for the smallest grievance! He's very used to be arrogant! So don't mind him!"

"So, how did he made enemies with you?" Chen Xue Yao asked.

"Well, during the Soaring Sword Competition in Shang Hai, he used some dirty tricks trying to frame me!" Zhang Yang told Chen Xue Yao about the 'prostitution incident' that happened long ago in Shang Hai. Of course, everytime he mentioned Liu Wei's name, he was practically spitting it out.

"Oh... so that's how it happened." Chen Xue Yao nodded. "You must hate him very much now!"

Zhang Yang smiled. Well, the grudge that he held against Liu Wei would never be understood by any other person in the entire world other than him. Even if he was willing to honestly tell others about how Liu Wei forced him to perish together, others would only

think that he might have hit his head a little too hard.

Chen Xue Yao stayed quiet while she was picking up the loot that had been dropped by the boss upon its death. She seemed to be troubled by something.

"This man is not simple at all. He must have something more than just grudges against Liu Wei! Damn it! How can he be so stubborn! Can't he just tell me something I want to know? Must I use my final triumph card as well to get him talking?"

"Or should I just come clean and tell him everything from scratch? If only I can get him to help me, it might be much easier to cripple the Liu family?"

"No! Mum and dad were killed because they were too trusting! If I accidentally pass the information to Liu Wei's lackeys without knowing it, I will be the next to go! I must not repeat their mistakes! Or else mum and dad would have died for nothing! Their sacrifices would have been for nothing!"

"So, he hired Private Investigators to find me... what is his true agenda then? Is he working for Liu Wei too, or is he really trying to get rid of him? Although they are enemies on the outside, sometimes, that might not be true. Business partners are always enemies on the outside but secretly, they are close friends... Only god knows if he would betray me for money! Come on, Chen Xue Yao! Just sacrifice your body, and you can get to know about the true relationship between him and Liu Wei!"

Zhang Yang had no idea at all what was going through that little head of his pretty secretary. When he turned all the ingredients he took along into a bunch of [Amateur Power Potions], they had already cleared the entire dungeon once --- the Vestibule of Stones was only a 5-player scale dungeon. It was a rather simple dungeon. Furthermore, Phoenix pet and Felice were extraordinarily powerful! They were basically clearing the dungeon, like cutting through butter with a hot knife!

After clearing up the dungeons a couple of times, Zhang Yang teleported himself back to Sauron's castle. One of the reasons why he was willing to help Chen Xue Yao was because low-level players would definitely not be capable of clearing a dungeon all on her own. Furthermore, now that the central point of the game was more focused in the Chaos Realm, it was extremely hard for her to form a descent party as well. Most of the low-level players would have their friends who were higher leveled guiding them through a dungeon. Furthermore, only those who did not belong to any guild would be forced to clear out a dungeon all by themselves. That was one of the main reasons why they could not gather too many powerful equipment. Other than that, they also lacked cooperation skills. So, they could only clear out dungeons in Normal Mode. Well, a party usually would be disbanded after they were wiped out several times in Hard Mode of the dungeon.

Not to mention, Chen Xue Yao was gifted in the art of gaming. That was also one of the most important reason Zhang Yang was willing to help her. Of course, there was also that reason where she looked gorgeous. After all, Zhang Yang could have some eye candy for his eyes just by staring at her. If she was an ugly horse, Zhang Yang would not have agreed to meet her at all.

Those [Amateur Power Potions] that underwent Transmutation could increase an additional 60% damage to players at the most. It was a great effect that would really make a difference in a battle. The effect of the potions could last for 10 seconds, after all. Plus they only needed 60 seconds to cooldown before players could use again. The average of the additional DPS increment could reach up to 10%! For Zhang Yang who had not activated his Inheritance Transformation, that additional 10% damage could increase approximately 3.75% of his DPS performance. It was just astonishing!

However, when Zhang Yang activates his Inheritance Transformation, the additional increase in his Attack power would

drop from 3.75% to only 1.3%. By then, the change would not be as significant.

Of course, Zhang Yang would keep the Transmuted [Amateur Power Potions] only for his own people. He put the others for sale at his Little Merchandize Shop. However, players would need to reach Level 150 before they could consume those [Amateur Power Potions]. Therefore, the number of players who could take an [Amateur Power Potion] was so low that even a person could finish counting the number in two hands.

Potions such as [Mobility Potions] and [Invincibility Potions] would find more usage in PvP matches. Meanwhile, [Power Potions] were more sought after when players are up against monsters or bosses. It would not matter if the bosses were from Open World Maps or Dungeons. Sometimes, players would get so close to killing the boss before they fail. With the power-up of [Power Potions], they could get the job done easier. These [Amateur Power Potions] would become popular when players are beginning to reach Level 150.

Right before they left, Zhang Yang added Chen Xue Yao to the main guild of Lone Desert Smoke. He had clearly seen how capable she was in the game. He could also see her potential of becoming one of the best players in the world, as well. Other guilds would be looking for talented players like Chen Xue Yao. Other than that, since the guild had just been upgraded to a Level 5 Guild, Zhang Yang would need to recruit another 10,000 members into his guild. Of course, he must recruit those who are really going to contribute to Lone Desert Smoke to fill in the slots.

"Silly Yu! Come and accompany me! I'm going to gather some cooking ingredients!" Without giving Zhang Yang a chance to reject, Han Ying Xue pulled Zhang Yang deep into the forest.

Han Ying Xue had already upgraded her 'Cooking' to the highest level. However, to make sure that she can handle everyone's HP bars which were getting longer and longer when their levels were

getting higher, she would need to cook up some snacks that could increase her healing efficiency. The best [Snacks] that could be found in the Bakery shop was the Level 120 [XXL Jumbo Cheese]. When Zhang Yang and his party equip their Level 150 Holy Tier equipment, each of them would have to take at least two [Snacks] before their HP bars are fully filled. That would be wasting some of their precious time.

Han Ying Xue bought a Cooking Recipe. The Recipe was called 'Diced-Chicken Burger'. However, the ingredients needed to make a [Diced-Chicken Burger] were extremely rare. They could only be gathered from Level 150 maps. Furthermore, the Auction House at the current stage of the game did not sell this item yet. So, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had to go out hunting for the ingredients all by themselves.

[Diced-Chicken Burger] (Consumable)

Use: Recovers 500,000 HP and 200,000 MP over 15 seconds. Can only be used when player is not in combat mode. If you eat the entire snack, you'll also acquire an additional 200 Strength Attribute, 200 Agility Attribute, 200 Intelligence Attribute or 200 Spirit Attribute. The Attribute that you will acquire depends on your highest Attribute. Effects will last for 15 minutes.

Required Level: 150

The main ingredient for making a [Diced-Chicken Burger] was [Chicken Meat] that could be acquired by slaying Arrow-Tailed Chicken. Of course, the other ingredients were [Chilli] and [Flour]. [Flour] could be purchased from shops in the main cities. However, players had to hunt down the Arrow-Tailed Chickens to get their meat. [Chilli] could be gathered from low-level maps and areas. Therefore, the only problem the players had was collecting the [Chicken Meat].

Hang Ying Xue hopped onto Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet. The two of them flew straight into a forest and walked around in the forest.



They were trying to find some Arrow-Tailed Chickens to kill.

Although these chicken monsters were rather common in this forest, they were scattered. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had to search around in order to find one. Therefore, the two of them did not get many of them, even after wandering around, killing Arrow-Tailed Chickens for about two to three hours. However, Zhang Yang was not bored at all, because he had the lady that he loved at his side, keeping him accompanied.

After walking for a while, the two of them heard the clashing sound of metallic weapons. They looked at each other for a brief moment. Then, they slowed down their Flying Mounts down and sneaked up towards the direction where the sounds came from. All they saw were two different groups of players battling against each other.

Zhang Yang was bored with what he saw. Such clashes were far too common in game. So, he had no reason at all to waste his attention on other people's affairs. He may try to get himself involved if he ever sees people battling against a boss. But PvP matches? Well, he is not that free to do something so pointless.

However, Zhang Yang tilted his mouth a little after observing for a little while. There was a group of 13 players, trying to kill another group of only 2 players. What caught his attention was that the two players were not faltering or losing the battle. Instead, they were holding up pretty good! One of them was a Guardian while the other was a Holy Knight. Both of them were holding shields.

These two players were both Thick-Armored type players. While the Holy Knight could heal better and protect their allies better than a normal Healer could, the Guardian also had an abundance of methods to defend himself. The two of them seemed to be working together like they had been doing this for a long time. It would take a lot more than just 13 players to kill them! This is what people would call a 'Dual-shield Team'.

Of course, having very powerful Defence would mean that the player had to forego on increasing their Attack power. That is the cost that one must pay to obtain a Turtle-shell level kind of Defence power! It was just how things work in an online game. Therefore, the advantage of these two Classes working together would be acquiring super high Defence while their disadvantage was that they would not have the firepower to finish their opponents off fast.

Ten Dusk, Guardian, Level 144.

Female Raid Covent, Holy Knight, Level 143.

These two Tankers did not belong to any guild currently. It was actually quite impressive that they could manage so well and they could still get equipment that were above average! Of course, their equipment seemed to have been obtained from dungeons. Therefore, they were just Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment. It was not considered as top Tier equipment yet. However, these equipment were already considered as some of the top mainstream equipment.

Most importantly, there were no high Tier player in the group of 13. Their equipment seemed to be much lower in Tier than the equipment of Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent. Therefore, they still could not kill Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent even though there were just two of them.

# Chapter 714: Information For Sale

---

The 13 players were all from a guild called 'Contra'. It should be a small guild. Zhang Yang had never heard of it in both of his lives. He had practically committed every noteworthy guild to memory. If this guild was not in his memory banks, it had to be rather insignificant.

Although it would be best to come to this map after players have attained Level 150, the other Level 120 – 150 maps were crowded with players from all around the world. It would be almost impossible to find a peaceful spot to farm. Therefore, many players have begun running over to this map the moment they hit Level 140. As long as they do not encounter any Level 170 monsters, none of them would have to suffer at the hands of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game.

However, players must be of certain standard before they can survive in the new map. Monsters in the Level 150 – 180 maps were basically one Tier higher than the monsters in lower level maps such as Kandiya Grasslands and Aomori Moss Land. A Level 150 - 180 map was not the place for all Level 140 players to come and crash.

"Let's leave!" The two of them lost interest after they observed the battle for a short while. Zhang Yang waved a little and the two of them turned around and was ready to leave.

However, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent suddenly raced towards Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, without any warning! Meanwhile, the 13 players from Contra had arrived at their spot and rounded them up. That included Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, of course!

Female Raid Covent reacted extremely quickly and said "Haha! Now that my brother and sister are here, let's see, who's going to take care of who now!"

"There's just the four of you! We're still going to beat you up like pigs!" one of them who seemed to be the leader of the party said, "You bastards! How dare you humiliate my girl! There's no way that you're getting out of here alive!"

"Pui! You wife's the one who grew an ugly face! Look at her! Her face looks just like the face of a monkey's butts! And look lower a bit! There's no chest! Look even lower now! She doesn't even have curvy butts! She looks like a prepubescent! You're telling me that you're still going to treasure her!? You pedobear!" With his foul mouth, Female Raid Covent had really made them angry enough to shoot themselves in the heads.

"Boss! Boss! Don't do anything rash just yet! He, he, he's Zhan Yu!" Well, the Phoenix pet had given it away. One of them could recognize Zhang Yang by looking at his appearance as well. He could not even finish his words properly.

"Zhan, Zhan Yu!" The leader's name was 'Boasting Swordsman'. After looking at Zhang Yang atop his Phoenix pet, he took in a deep cold breath and fell silent.

"Haha! Be afraid! This is our boss!" Female Raid Covent did not seem to know when to stop talking, "Just listen to me. Your girl over there loves to wink her sexy eyes at anyone she sees. Just look at her again! I can tell that she's not the type who would settle down quietly! You better find a new one!"

"Darling! I'm not that type of girl! He's humiliating me! You must get him to apologize to me! Or else you're never going to 'hmm hmm' with me!" Among the 13 players from Contra, there was one female elf that looked like a Spellcaster. She was acting all spoiled up on Boasting Swordsman.

"You shut up!" Boasting Swordsman immediately shouted angrily at the girl and said, "It's all because of you acting lewd all the time! Look at the mess you got us into! They were just passing by peacefully at first. Then you insisted on wanting them party up

with them! Did you just have an eye for the both of them? You planned to have a 3P session behind my back, didn't you?!"

"What are you talking about!? I'm very loyal to you, okay?!"

At first, Zhang Yang did not intend to be a human shield for Ten Dusk and his friend. However, after hearing what Boasting Swordsman had to say, he was infuriated. His face turned dark and he said, "Just leave... before I change my mind."

Boasting Swordsman felt awkward after that. Even if he had over 100 guts in his stomach, he would never dare provoke Zhang Yang. However, he did not feel so good after being chased away by the other people like a pest. So he forced a smile and led his party to retreat at once.

"Haha! Thank you so much, my brother!" Female Raid Covent was acting as if he had been friends with Zhang Yang for many years, though the fact was that he just met Zhang Yang a few minutes ago. Then, he scanned his eyes across the body of Han Ying Xue and said, "Yo, brother! Your girl is too damn fine! The front and the back are all there! The only imperfection is her face! But no one can see when the lights are out! The sensation of the touching and grabbing are the things that matter the most! Cover the face, bang the base!"

What the f\*ck! What kind of thick-faced prick is this?

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Did anyone ever tell you that your mouth stinks?"

"A lot of them! But sometimes I just don't care! Hehehehehe!" Female Raid Covent spoke like a man of marked individuality. Then he rested his arm over Zhang Yang's shoulders as if nothing had happened back there. His 'wretchedness' was even higher than Fatty Han's!

"Zhan Yu?" On the other hand, Ten Dusk was acting much more matured and poised. His face seemed serious all the time. It was

truly a wonder that he would end up with a wretched friend like Female Raid Covent.

Since his Phoenix pet had given his identity up to the others, Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Yes."

"This is weird! You're not as handsome as I am! How are you so famous then?" Female Raid Covent fixed his eyes on Zhang Yang's face. Then his eyes scanned Zhang Yang from head to toe. Then he continued to say, "But nevermind, I'm going to surpass you and become Number One in the entire game!"

What a thick-faced son of the b\*tch!

Zhang Yang did not even have the intention to ask what happened between these two with those players from Contra. Well, he was 90% sure that it must have been because of that loud mouth of Female Raid Covent. He did provide them a great 'sample' right here, right now. So Zhang Yang smiled and said, "So let's part ways now!"

"Aiyoyo... don't be so hasty!" Female Raid Covent quickly stopped Zhang Yang and said, "We're here because of fate. Can't you feel my passion? I want to know more about you!"

"NO!"

"Come one! Don't be so cold to me!" Female Raid Covent was acting like a piece of chewing gum and glued himself on Zhang Yang. It was really hard to get rid of him now. "You even brought a girl with you to grind! You have my style! Unfortunately, that boring man over there is not interested in ladies. He even chased away all of my girl fans. Or else with my charm leaking about, girls would scream and shout in excitement while following me around!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely at what Female Raid Covent had to say. This fellow is really too good at acting friendly with strangers! He looked at Ten Dusk realized that he was frowning

too. It seemed that this Female Raid Covent was really a wretched package of 'trouble' to begin with.

"Oh, right! Are you interested in taking on a boss with us?" Female Raid Covent suddenly changed a new topic, "It's a Holy Tier super boss! So, what do you say we try it out together? We'll split the loots fifty-fifty!"

This man did not sound trustworthy, though. Zhang Yang looked over towards Ten Dusk. Ten Dusk looked back at Zhang Yang and he said, "It's a Level 175 Holy Tier boss. He's called Ghostface Monkey King. Unfortunately, we can't beat that boss."

It made perfect sense. A super boss on an Open World Map would have a HP Recovery Skill. Furthermore, these two only had powerful Defences. They did not have much of an Offence to begin with. Even if Zhang Yang goes up against the boss with his {God of War Transformation} activated, he might not even be able to beat the boss.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, "However, we only have two Healers and two Tankers. How much DPS do you expect us to muster? We won't even get past his HP regeneration!"

"Well, you can call your other friends along. But we're still splitting the loots fifty-fifty!" Female Raid Covent spoke like he was fooling around, "Only we know where the boss is. So, what do you say about this? If you go, at least you're going to get something. But if you don't, you'll get nothing at all!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "A Level 175 boss would drop Level 170 equipment. Even if those equipment have the Special attribute that reduces Required Level by 20 levels, you still need to be Level 150 to equip them. Let's make another deal. After we split the loot fifty-fifty, I will use two of my Level 140 Ethereal Tier equipment to exchange one of your Level 150 Holy Tier equipment. Think about it! You get 2 in return while I only got one. It's a fair trade!"

Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk looked at each other and nodded at the same time. "Deal!"

Yes, Holy Tier equipment are extremely valuable and rare at the current stage of the game. However, players could only wear them when they reach the Required Level to be eligible to wear them. It was not like everyone need to show themselves off in a Fashion Exhibition or what. Currently, Ten Dusk was Level 144. It would still take about two and a half months for him to get up to Level 150. Meanwhile, exchanging 1 Holy Tier with 2 Ethereal Tier equipment sounds much better than holding onto the equipment that they could not wear yet for so long. Other than that, having two Ethereal Tier equipment on them would definitely not be weaker than having one Holy Tier equipment on them. More importantly, they could equip the Ethereal Tier the moment they get it. After weighing the pros and cons, they decided to take the deal.

After they had struck the deal, Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk began to lead Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue to the location of the boss.

"So I see that you guys have not joined any guild yet. I'm just wondering, how did you guys manage to get good equipment like these Mythical Tier equipment?" Han Ying Xue was asking out of her curiosity. Of course, she was asking Ten Dusk. Well, Mythical Tier equipment can only be found in the Hardcore Mode of a dungeon. Meanwhile, the game developer decided to spice up the game for players to be more active in clearing dungeons. They made every equipment that players find in the Death Swamp to be 'bound upon pick up'. Players would not be able to sell the equipment they farm from that dungeon anymore.

If players would like to get their hands on Mythical Tier equipment which was deemed to be the most popular and powerful equipment in the current stage of the game, they would have to work their \*sses off to get them on their own.



"Well, there are many Gold Parties out there. As long as they're willing to pay up, we will join in and help them clear dungeons like Death Swamp. Well, sometimes they even pay hundreds of thousands to us by the end of it. So after earning a few rounds, we have enough money to keep ourselves up to date!" Female Raid Covert cut in before Ten Dusk could say anything.

Well, a Gold Party is a party where some players with good equipment bring some players with weak equipment into clearing some dungeons. The price of having these powerful players running errands for the weaker players would be based on the number of equipment they could get. This is one of the tactics that the players came up with to defy the 'bound upon pick up' feature for the new dungeon Death Swamp. However, the equipment of players who hired others would not have equipment that were up to the standard. Well, in a 5-player scale dungeon, lacking one powerful DPS could make the whole situation very difficult to deal with. Therefore, there were only a few powerful guilds that were capable of forming Gold Parties.

Lone Desert Smoke also had Gold Parties. However, Zhang Yang and his gang would never waste their time on running errands like that. Well, they could handle everything by themselves anyway. So, Han Ying Xue had no knowledge at all about what a Gold Party is.

The four of them went through a series of twist and turns across the mountains. After traveling for over 3 to 4 hours, they finally arrived at the entrance of a small valley. Flowers and other green plants were flourishing across the entire valley. The place seemed magically peaceful and green. By the west side of the valley, there was a lake of the size of almost one-third the entire valley.

The entrance of the valley was very hard to spot. Well, it was hidden in plain sight. Of course players would miss it if they were just flying by the place.

Therefore, the most difficult part about such bosses would be

finding them in the first place. Otherwise, there was no boss in the game that players could not take down, not yet.

As they proceeded forward, they went along the side of the lake. After a moment of walking, the four of them arrived at a sandy white beach. There was a large ape, covered in coal-black fur, sleeping by the beach. It was spouting out flames from its nose. The blazing air current was so strong that the sands were swept up from the sandy ground as if there was a fan blowing the sand away, one wave after another.

This ape was at least 10 meters high. If it stands up straight, this ape should be as tall as a 3 story house. Its eyes were sunken deep into its face. Its fangs protuded from its mouth, making it look extremely ferocious. Well, that was most probably why it was called a Ghostface Monkey King, then.

[Ghostface Ape King]

Level: 175

HP: 17,000,000,000

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,154 - 200,154

Skills:

[Ground Hammer]: Shakes the ground with pure power and causes the ground within the area of 50 meters to crack and break. All targets within the effective range will receive 200,000 Physical Damage. All targets will be stunned for 3 seconds.

[Slam]: Slam onto a target causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The Healing Efficiency of the target will be reduced by 50%.

[Beast Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

[Summon]: Summons the same number of Elite Tier Ghostface

Monkeys, based on the number of players on the boss's Aggro list.

Note: Ghostface Monkeys were born to be ferocious, and they love to kill. They can get even more ferocious than you can possibly imagine to those who trespass their territory.

# Chapter 715: The Ghostface Monkey King

---

"See? Isn't the boss looks powerful? Me and my depressed man here could not even defeat it even activating our Transformation Skills!" Female Raid Covert noticed that Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue was frowning intensely upon seeing the boss. So he spoke proudly.

What the hell is wrong with this guy? He was showing off about how he and his friend got defeated by the boss!

Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] first. Then he informed Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shots and the others about the situation. After using his [Party Summon Order], everyone was teleported to Zhang Yang's location. After seeing two strangers standing right beside him, everyone was curious.

However, Female Raid Covert widened his eyes at Wei Yan Er. Then he said, "What a cute loli! Come, I will bring you to see some goldfish!"

Wei Yan Er felt a cold shiver up her spine after realizing how Female Raid Covert was staring at her. She quickly hid herself behind Zhang Yang and said, "Hamsap1 uncle! My brother-in-law is here with me! You better don't try anything funny!"

Hamsap uncle? This little brat has been corrupted for real! She even knew the correct term to use, now!

Zhang Yang shook his head and pointed his finger at the boss. "Starlight, you'll be the tanking the boss when the battle begins. Is your Transformation Skill still available now?"

Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had activated their Transformation Skills when they were clearing the Mythical Dragon Realm. They had not expected to encounter another Holy Tier boss so soon after their previous encounter. Truth be told, Zhang Yang could still handle the boss's

attacks. Each of the normal attacks from the boss would only cause approximately 200,000 damage. However, it would be much easier to let Endless Starlight take the lead with his Inheritance Transformation activated.

"Roger, boss! And yes! Mine is still available!" Endless Starlight quickly nodded.

"How about you guys?" Zhang Yang looked at Hundred Shots, Lost Dream, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Still here!"

"Still available!"

They nodded as well.

"Very good! Then our DPS should probably reach up to 1,000,000. The boss has a total of 17,000,000,000 HP and it's capable of recovering 1% of its total HP once in every 30 seconds. That would mean the boss can recover 570,000 HP per second. Our effective DPS would be about 430,000 damage. Theoretically speaking... we should be able to take out the boss in about 70 minutes, give or take!" Zhang Yang said.

"Oi! Brother-in-law! Aren't you forgetting about us two?" Female Raid Covent suddenly protested.

"You Hamsap uncle! How dare you take advantage of me!" Wei Yan Er was not stupid. She immediately laid her protest on Female Raid Covent as well!

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, "So, how much Damage Output can you provide, then?"

"... basically none." Female Raid Covent instantly squatted down and started to draw circles with his finger. However, he jumped back up and said, "But, my walking kill-joy over there packs quite a punch!" He ran over and locked his arm with Ten Dusk's arm. That intimate gesture could really give others a great chill up their spines.

Zhang Yang ignored that hamsap uncle and continued to speak, "There are two things that we need to be aware of, here. One, his [Ground Hammer] is an AoE attack. The impact will spread and stun anyone who can't get away in time. If the rate of the boss activating this Skill is frequent, it could become a threat that we cannot ignore. Furthermore, it will also decrease our efficiency of dealing damage to the boss. So no doubt that the boss battle will be prolonged a little. Other than that, we must be careful about the Elite monsters that the boss can summon. There are 12 of us here. The boss will summon 12 Elite Ghostface Monkeys. I will, erm, Me and Ten Dusk will lure the monsters when they appear. Everyone will have to focus on clearing out the monsters first before we focus back on the boss!"

If there were only 12 Elite monsters in the entire boss battle, Zhang Yang could slowly kite the monsters around until they're dead. However, the boss would not just activate his [Summon] once throughout the entire boss battle. Each [Summon] would bring out 12 Elite Tier monsters. If the number of the monsters adds on by 12 every time the boss activates its [Summon], the situation could get out of hand, and the entire party would get wiped out!

"Hamsap uncle! You can actually contribute by killing yourself now! Then, we will only have to battle against 11 monsters!" Wei Yan Er shrugged and said, "For the sake of our party, you should sacrifice yourself for the greater good!" before Female Raid Covent could even stand back on his feet, he squatted back down and continued to draw circles with his finger. Then he said, "How can you underestimate me! I'm also a powerful Healer you know! I can even heal your breasts so that they would become F-Cup!"

F-Cup! Wei Yan Er raised her eyebrows a little. Currently, her boobs were borderline A-cup. After hearing what that hamsap uncle had to say, she was infuriated. She was on the verge of smashing that hamsap uncle with her battle axe.

"Alright! Starlight, be ready to move!" Zhang Yang quickly said. He wanted to prevent the little brat from killing Female Raid Covent before the boss battle even starts.

Endless Starlight just nodded. Then, he immediately activated his King Long Transformation. Instantly, he transformed into a gigantic King Kong. After thumping his chest, he rode his poor little wild boar and charged towards the boss.

"Hahaha!" Female Raid Covent instantly burst into laughter after seeing that scenario. "A King Kong of that size riding a wild boar! You're too much, man! Are you some sort of comedian in real life?"

Endless Starlight was also dissatisfied with his own appearance. Also, there was barely any hair on his entire body. Some strands were just long enough to 'protect' some parts of his body. As he charged forward, those strands would float in the air along the wind. After hearing what Female Raid Covent had to say, he felt depressed.

"Ooh! Ooh! Ooh!" Speaking of which, the boss was also an ape. After noticing that a King Kong was charging towards it, the boss did not falter. Instead, it stood up on its hind legs. Its eyes glowed as it thumped its own chest. Then, the boss charged towards Endless Starlight.

A loud bang was heard when Endless Starlight and the boss clashed into each other. The boss was extremely strong. It managed to ram Endless Starlight so hard that he was pushed a few steps back. However, the boss played a dirty trick on Endless Starlight. He took hold of Starlight's hairy crotch, grabbed, and twisted it!

"Haha! Starlight! Aren't you supposed to tank with the boss, not make out?"

"Hmm, the two of you are made by the gods to be a perfect match! Just get together already!"

"It's a wonderful year for gay couples, didn't you know!"

Fatty Han and Lost Dream were laughing out loud at him. Furthermore, Female Raid Covent was also making fun of him. Endless Starlight was filled with grievance and anger at the same time because of that. Why must this f\*cking boss be so f\*cking wretched!?

This Ghostface Monkey King must be horny now. Every single hit from the boss was aiming straight for the crotch of Endless Starlight. The worse part about it was that the boss seemed particularly excited while drooling. Its eyes were glowing intensely, as it was making the 'Ooh Ooh' sound repeatedly.

"Starlight, why don't you just satisfy the boss then?" Fatty Han was about to crack his own pot. "Maybe you'll have a bunch of Ghostface little monkeys by the end of next year! You can go out bringing them with you by then! You can defeat anyone or any god you like! No one will stand in your way!"

However, Fatty Han and Lost Dream were the only ones who were making fun of Starlight. The others were standing by at the side. The moment Endless Starlight had the boss locked on him, they charged out and launch their assaults on the boss. They went and surrounded the boss in their tactical formation. Those who could still activate their Transformation Skills began to activate theirs without hesitation. The moment the Red Dragon pet and Phoenix pets activated their Transformation Skills, the scene became glorious!

To reduce the Healers' pressure, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han rode their own pet mounts. They did not summon out their other pets as well. Meanwhile, the others also did not summon their Battle Companions that would only become a hindrance.

Meanwhile, Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk were clever enough to understand the situation, They did not summon their Battle Companions as well. One of them was riding on a Black



Leopard, charging towards the boss, while the other one was riding on a large Scorpion, joining up with the Healers in the rear.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Because the party would take more than just an hour to defeat the boss, theoretically speaking, Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all in throwing out his strongest Ultimate Skill. However, it was an unfortunate attempt. Before the dark mist could form into a dark skull on top of the boss, the Skill was resisted.

Everyone sighed heavily. However, none of them took it to heart. After all, everyone knew how low the success rate of this Skill was.

"Ooh!" Upon being surrounded by Zhang Yang and the party. The boss was receiving high values of damage. It instantly roared out in anger and tapped its chest for a few rounds. Then, the boss slammed its hands onto the ground and created a very powerful impact of shockwave! It was like smashing a gigantic sledgehammer onto the ground!

Instantly, the shockwave swept the dust and sand on the ground along with it, as it spread out into the surroundings. The ground was cracked and countless of spiky rocks emerged from beneath the surface of the ground, causing a basic damage of 200,000 damage to everyone.

Although top Tier equipment had the ability to absorb a certain amount of damage, the Holy Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had on him could only absorb as much as 10,000 to 20,000 damage. Meanwhile, the others only managed to absorb about 8,000 damage, at most. Such a small amount of damage absorption attribute could do next to nothing for Zhang Yang's gang. Other than the Tankers who had Damage Immunity attributes, the others were basically sustaining a full 200,000 damage from the impact of the boss's {Ground Hammer}.

Those who had activated their Transformation Skills could still afford a damage of 200,000. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had

boosted their total HP up to at least 20,000,000 HP. They would not feel much pain from that attack. Meanwhile, Although Sun Xin Yu and the ladies could not activate their Transformation Skills, they still had over a total HP of 300,000. As long as they did not die from that wave of attack, the Healers would be able to fill their HP bars back.

After the 3-second Stun Effect, Han Ying Xue quickly waved her staff around and made it her priority to throw her healing Skills on the players who had not activated their Transformation Skills. By doing so, she managed to prevent the boss from killing those players instantly with another wave of {Ground Hammer}. After activating her Inheritance Transformation, Fantasy Sweetheart's healing capability had increased tremendously. She was almost as powerful as Han Ying Xue in such regard now. The two of them combined their strength to heal the rest of the party.

Although Female Raid Covert did not seem to be reliable at the start, his awareness on which player to heal first was quite astonishing, actually. He was trying to heal up those whose HP bars were still very low. Streams of holy lights were flashing across the wounded, raising their HP bars back to their full states.

Even though Holy Knights did not have the ability to heal many players at the same time like Priests do, but they excelled in single target healing. Each of them had their own share of advantages and flaws. The Priests would heal the entire party, while the Holy Knights would heal those who were in a more critical state.

After tens of seconds of healing, everyone's HP bar was back to their full health states, except for Endless Starlight.

It seemed that the tens of seconds of healing was the best that the Healers could do. In other words, the party would only be able to sustain the impact of the boss's {Ground Hammer} once every ten seconds. That was the rate of {Ground Hammer} that they could take on without being taken down. If the boss were to activate its {Ground Hammer} a little more frequently, then the entire party

might get wiped out.

Fortunately, the boss only activated its {Ground Hammer} after every 10 seconds. The second wave of impact caused a heavy damage to everyone just like the first time. After some mental calculations, everyone knew that the {Ground Hammer} had 30 seconds of cooldown period. However, when the boss only had 20% HP left, the rate of the boss activating its {Ground Hammer} would be shortened down to 20 seconds, or 15 seconds short, or it may even be 10 seconds!

They could only focus their firepower for now. Even though the boss had a Skill that could recover its HP, but having the boss lose a total of 430,000 HP per second was a good progress, so to speak. Everyone could witness that the boss's HP bar was visibly dropping.

"Ooh! Ooh!" The Ghostface Monkey King was beginning to roar in rage. It smacked its own chest raw and screamed to the sky.

Instantly, 12 mini-sized Ghostface Monkeys appeared from all directions of the battle ground. They were charging towards Zhang Yang and the party while making the sound of 'Ooh Ooh Ooh'. They were extremely agile. They would have no problem keeping up with mounts.

[Ghostface Monkey] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Stomps the ground and causes 50,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 3-meters from the monster. All targets will be afflicted with Stun Effects for 1 second.

Zhang Yang immediately commanded his Phoenix pet and charged towards the Ghostface Monkey. At the same time, he also said, "Ten Dusk! Get those monsters away from our ranged-combatants!" Zhang Yang was not very confident with Ten Dusk because he was an outsider after all. So he also commanded, "Hundred Shots! Support Ten Dusk and lure the monsters away!"

TL Note:

1. Hamsap (literally means Salty-wet) – means horny or perverted.

# Chapter 716: Empowered Damage Output

---

After activating their Transformation Skills, the Red Dragon pet and the Phoenix pet had a 30-meter long flaming tongue. Although the amount of damage from their attacks were based on their Melee Attack power, their melee attacks were basically far enough to be considered range attacks. Therefore, Hundred Shots was standing together with the range-combatants as he was launching his attacks at the boss. After hearing Zhang Yang's command, he immediately nodded and turned his Red Dragon around. Then he commanded his Red Dragon to spit out a blast of {Dragon Breath} at the monsters.

With the advantage of having a 30-meter attack range, Hundred Shots was able to lure the monsters over to him. Meanwhile, he had over 20,000,000 HP upon riding on his Red Dragon. So he had no reason to fear, even if he is surrounded by a bunch of Elite Tier monkeys.

Ten Dusk had revealed his true power in being an outstanding Tanker. With a blast of his {Blast Wave}, he stunned all 12 monsters at the same time and began the process to get the aggro values from the monsters. 4 seconds after the monsters were stunned, the Ghostface Monkeys began to recover. Before the monsters could even do anything, Ten Dusk struck out a blast of {Thunder Strike} reducing the movement speed of 6 Ghostface Monkeys.

Because he had not yet created enough aggro values to surpass the aggro values that Hundred Shots had on him, the 6 monsters charged at Hundred Shots without even looking at Ten Dusk. However, that was good enough for them. The monsters could not deal any damage to them, yet.

Naturally, Zhang Yang had lured the other 6 Ghostface Monkeys on his side. He immediately kited the monsters towards the other 6 monsters on the other side. Well, he wanted to gather all 12

monsters in one spot first before he could begin to slaughter them up.

The movement speed of the Phoenix pet was extremely agile. It did not take long before Zhang Yang managed to gather all 12 monsters in one spot. Right after the monsters were lured into place, Zhang Yang hopped down from the Phoenix pet and activated his {Thunder Strike} upon them. Well, his {Thunder Strike} is already enhanced. Not only could it slow the monsters down over a longer period of time, its effects were also much stronger!

However, even Zhang Yang was not capable of getting enough aggro values over a short period of time to pull the other 6 monsters that were pursuing Hundred Shots over to him. Fortunately for him, players and monsters were completely different in term of 'improvising' according to the situation. Even though the 6 monsters were currently fixed on pursuing Hundred Shots, Zhang Yang could kite the monsters towards Hundred Shots and gather all 12 monsters in the same spot.

As long as the monsters are all gathered in the same spot, then Zhang Yang and the others would be able to unleash hell upon them. Since both Zhang Yang and Ten Dusk had {Thunder Strike} to slow the movement speed of the monsters, there was no need for anyone to worry about going OT.

"There's no need for everyone to focus on the Elite monsters. Fatty Han alone is more than enough!" Zhang Yang said. Two Phoenix pets and one Red Dragon pet were the most powerful AoE attackers in the area currently. No one in the party could match their AoE attacks. Well, if that is the case, the others would be better off focusing their attacks on the boss. They should just let the 'professionals' handle the AoE attacks on the 12 Elite Tier monsters.

Legendary grade pets like the Phoenixes and Red Dragon had very strong AoE attack capabilities. After activating their

Transformation Skills, they could become even more powerful than before! Each {Dragon Breath} could cause up to 200,000 damage to all targets within range. Not to mention, {Dragon Breath} could be used once every 2 seconds! Theoretically speaking, 25 shots of {Dragon Breath} would be able to empty out a total of 5,000,000 HP. With two of these pets coming together, 25 seconds was the time needed for them to wipe out every Ghostface Monkey within range.

As for Ten Dusk, he basically did not have to do anything.

"That's awesome!" Female Raid Covent immediately gave two thumbs up at the Phoenixes and the Red Dragon. Well, he had never seen anything like this before.

After wiping out the monsters, Zhang Yang and the others switched their priority back onto the boss and continued to launch their attacks.

"Ooh!" The Ghostface Monkey King roared out loud furiously. Those Ghostface Monkeys were probably its sons and daughters. Seeing them being wiped out right in front of its eyes, the boss was so infuriated that it activated {Ground Hammer} straight away. The impact of the Skill did quite a number on everyone.

For most of the parties in the current stage of the game, {Ground Hammer} was definitely a fatal threat to them. A normal player with a full set of Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment would only have a Maximum HP of 180,000, give or take. Even on a mount, they would only have 250,000 HP at the most. Meanwhile, normal Healers would not have the capability to heal as much as 300,000 HP over 30 seconds. The normal players would have died upon receiving the third {Ground Hammer}.

However, Zhang Yang had two top Tier Healers, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart. Furthermore, Female Raid Covent was deadly serious in combat, even though he was a little bad mannered. His performance in battle had revealed his literacy and

awareness towards his surroundings. If he does not speak without his brain, Zhang Yang might have considered recruiting him into Lone Desert Smoke.

{Summon}, {Ground Hammer}! Holding on against waves of attacks from the boss, the party began to get comfortable and familiar with the attack pattern of the boss. The situation was no longer intense as before.

When players were battling against a boss in a dungeon, they had to make sure that they were always on point. They must know when to hit, when to retreat, and where to retreat to. Their movements in the battle would be strictly limited as well because of all that. Even if they manage to reduce 90% HP of the boss, they would get wiped out instantly if any one of them get careless or act recklessly.

However, a battle against an Open World boss would be very different from battling against a dungeon boss. There were not many tactics involved in a battle like that. In other words --- numbers! Therefore, judging by the complexity of a boss's Skills, an Open World boss is not as powerful as a dungeon boss. Even if someone on the party screws up, it would only cost the individual player's life. That player's mistake would not drag the entire party down with him or her.

Players who die in such a large scale battle could be replaced by other players, against an Open World boss. If one player's death could cause the entire party to be wiped out, then it would become impossible for players to take down an Open World boss. That is just how the game developers have designed the game to be.

"You two seem to get the hang of it! You're both skilled and powerful! Why don't you guys join a guild?" Fatty Han asked out of his own curiosity.

Ten Dusk did not say a word as usual while Female Raid Covert answered straight away, "Both of us have work in real life. We only



have a little time to jump in the game. Well, in a few more months, we're getting sent out. So, you get the idea. That means we will only be able to play this game while we're sleeping."

Sent out? That should be a term used by officials of the government department. Sent out could mean they are going to be sent over to certain states across the country to be local officials! Usually, people who get 'sent out' would mean that they have quit their jobs. If they quit their jobs, they would have more time to play. Now that they were saying that they would become even busier ... could they be working for the government as government servants then?

Looking at that goofy face of Female Raid Covent, everyone sighed. If this fellow is really going to become a local official of a state, there would be no telling what kind of trouble he would get himself into.

"Oi! What kind of faces are you showing me now!" Female Raid Covent shouted in a strange voice as he was preparing to launch his {Holy Light}. The sacred scene did not suit his personality at all.

"Oh, right! My man, have you gotten the tickets I told you to get?" He suddenly tapped his forehead and asked Ten Dusk.

"Got them already. No worries." Ten Dusk answered coldly.

"Haha! This time, I'm going to confess to my goddess Luo Xin Ran. With my handsome look and my elegant way of speaking, she will definitely fall for me the moment she lays her eyes on me!" Female Raid Covent laughed like a pervert.

"Elegant way of speaking? That's more like an elegant way of spitting! Pui!" Endless Starlight was basically the same as Female Raid Covent was. His mouth was foul as f\*ck as well! He immediately cracked a joke at Female Raid Covent.

"Luo Xin Ran? That Super Star celebrity Luo Xin Ran?" Fantasy

Sweetheart stared at him with her eyes wide. She spoke softly, "Female, female something something, don't you think you're setting your standards a little too high?"

She was being courteous by not telling him in the face that he was being 'a toad lusting after a swan's flesh'.

"Who's Luo Xin Ran?" Wei Yan Er rubbed her nose a bit and asked. She seemed puzzled.

"Argh! Yan Er, have you not heard or seen Luo Xin Ran before?" Fantasy Sweetheart had been following the celeb gossip. So she revealed a face that suggested 'how could you not know about my idol?'

Wei Yan Er was being honest. She just shook her head.

"Luo Xin Ran is a singer who got famous about 4 or 5 years ago. When I was still studying in my university, my roommate was very obsessed with her. He even had posters of her stuck on his bed and his side of the walls." Zhang Yang said.

"Now, the entertainment industry is moving towards the direction of gaming. So, be it filming a movie, a series or making a music album, the entertainment industry tend to select the environment in a game as their background sceneries more often now. Luo Xi Ran is currently doing her final tour for her concert. She will be hitting the game market soon after that!" Female Raid Covert continued to explain like a professional.

Since the first movie 'The Heart of the Knight' that used the background sceneries in 'God's Miracle' had been a success about a year ago, more and more movie companies were trying to get their shots in the game as well. The main reason was due to the fact that they could save a lot of energy and minimize environmental risks if they just take the background and sceneries from the game. Furthermore, the visual effects and special effects were much better than what they could do in real life. They could also perform a series of life-threatening stunts without having to worry at all.

Everything in the game was virtual, after all. Other than that, celebrities no longer needed high-cost cosmetics to make them look good. They could just use the interface of the game to design whatever outlook they wanted. Therefore, the traditional film industry took a fatal blow to their gut. If they do not wish to move their \*sses towards 'God's Miracle', the super high cost of making a film would be the very reason their companies would go bankrupt!

Those traditional celebrities were also starting to join the fame. However, the appearance of a person could be adjusted according to one's free will. As long as you can design it, you can appear with that appearance in the game. Therefore, basically, everyone in the game looked handsome and pretty. Therefore, being a traditional celebrity was not an easy path. Time no longer favored them. Only the celebrities with true talent in acting and singing could continue to make a profit like kings and queens.

After all, this is a new era where anyone can potentially become a celebrity.

Zhang Yang suddenly remembered. His company happened to have signed a contract with Luo Xin Ran. One of her concert tours would be staged in Zhou Shu. However, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu Wei Yan Er and the rest of the ladies that he lived with were not into celebrities. So they did not remember much about it. Now that someone had mentioned it, they remembered.

The battle went on for an hour without everyone noticing. Because the boss only uses its {Ground Hammer} and {Summon} repeatedly, the party could not deal the amount of damage that they theoretically spoke about earlier before the battle. However, they still managed to reduce the boss's HP bar down to 20% entering the stage of 'Killing Cleave'.

In an instant, everyone took out their [Amateur Power Potion] and gulp it down. Then, it was time to unleash their madness upon the boss. Everyone was slicing and dicing like there was no tomorrow.

The Ghostface Monkey King was beaten up so badly that it was screaming in its own ape language. The boss also increased the rate of activating its {Ground Hammer} to once in every 20 seconds!

Because of that, the Healers were forced to carry a massive burden. However, that was not the limit of the boss yet! When the boss's HP bar drops down to 10%, the rate of the boss activating its {Ground Hammer} would become even faster than before. When that happens, the three Healers would have to puke their guts out if they want to keep up with the boss.

The {Glare of the Death God} had finally cooled down. However, Zhang Yang did not use it immediately. He wanted to wait until the boss's HP bar reaches 10%. The reason was simple. If the Skill could work, they would be able to kill the boss faster in its most dangerous state!

15%, 12%, 10%!

Throwing out {Glare of the Death God}!

Phew! A dark skull appeared right on top of the boss!

The Skill was not resisted! Wicked sick!

Because they had the advantage in numbers, Zhang Yang did not have to activate his {Shadow Clone}. With their current rate of attacks landing on the boss, it would be enough for them to fully trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} over 10 times.

"What the f\*ck! What kind of Skill is this!?" Female Raid Covert screamed like a little girl after he saw the series of damage values popping up on top of the boss. He was so shocked that he could not even close his jaws! Each damage value was not merely tens of thousands or hundreds of thousands. They were tens of millions instead!

Under that kind of bombardment, it did not take long at all before the boss let out a miserable roar and died. Its gigantic body

collapsed down onto the body of Endless Starlight, pressing him down, as if the boss was forcing itself onto him! The gayness of that scene was imprinted into the back of everyone's skulls!

# Chapter 717: High Tier Territory

---

The loot that the boss dropped were quite satisfying. There were two Holy Tier equipment and four Ethereal Tier equipment. All of them were Level 170 equipment. Meanwhile, there was also one Skill Book and one Skill Point Crystal.

Because they had two outsiders this time round, Zhang Yang could not give the Skill Point Crystal to his party members based on their turns anymore. At first, Zhang Yang tried to get the Skill Point Crystal by offering equipment, gold pieces or some high Tier potions to the two of them. However, they seemed to know how valuable that Skill Point Crystal was. They did not intend to give it to Zhang Yang at all.

Hence, Zhang Yang let them have it, and he picked the Skill Book instead.

--- for Zhang Yang's party, they could still get plenty of Skill Point Crystals by challenging new bosses in the future. However, if the Skill Book contains some powerful Skill, then it could become far more valuable than just one Skill Point Crystal. So, Zhang Yang decided to take his chance on that.

The Skill Book was named 'Superior Force Strike'. The Skill could only be obtained by Warrior Class players. Because Wei Yan Er had never liked this Skill in the first place, she directly passed the Skill Book to Zhang Yang without showing any interest in it.

However, when Zhang Yang posted the description for the Skill, the little brat began to cry like a little bitch. She even cried and choked Zhang Yang, asking him to spit the Skill Book out and return it back to her. See? That's what we literally call a little b\*tch!

[Superior Force Strike]: Improves the rate of triggering the next additional attack after you have used your {Force Strike} 2 times every time you upgrade your {Force Strike} by 1 level.

Furthermore, the additional attack will be a Critical Hit.

Initially, this {Force Strike} was a rather lackluster Skill. At its level 1, this Skill could perform a powerful strike on the target immediately, dealing 100% of melee damage with a 5% chance to trigger an additional attack. With each level upgrade, the rate of triggering the additional attack would increase by additional 5%.

Upon adding that up, even if the Skill reaches Level 10, there would only be a total 50% chance to trigger the additional attack. In other words, the Skill could only deal 150% additional attack to the target. Compared to the other Skills that could deal an additional 200%, 250% or even 300% melee attack, this {Force Strike} did not seem to be powerful at all.

Furthermore, no Warrior would add their precious Skill Points on {Force Strike}. It would be like having a donkey kicking your brain!

However, the outcome becomes different if a player gets this {Superior Force Strike}. Upon getting the Skill up to Level 10, the player would have over 100% chance of triggering an additional attack. More importantly, the additional attack was guaranteed to be a Critical Hit! Based on that alone, the player could achieve additional an 300% attack of the Skill's initial attack. The damage dealt would be instantly amplified!

Of course, the player would have to make sure that the Skill is fully upgraded. In other words, 9 Skill Points would be spent in order to do so. Or else, having only a 10% rate to trigger the additional attack would be pathetic.

Getting so many Skill Points would be a difficult thing for other players to do. However, Zhang Yang did not find it hard at all. All he needs to do is to kill a few more bosses and get a few more 'First Clear' of dungeons. By then, he should be able to collect enough Skill Points for that purpose.

"Wu wu wu... Stinky noob tank! Give me back my Skill Book!"

Wei Yan Er filled her cheeks with tears as she clung on to Zhang Yang's back. Meanwhile, she was also weighing her battle axe in her hands, as if she was considering whether to use it or to use another powerful weapon to attack Zhang Yang.

Female Raid Covent felt an itch in his heart. He immediately spoke, "Little loli! Let go of that animal and come cling on me!"

"Little brat, time to look at the equipment. I can give you the equipment if they are Heavy Armor type." Zhang Yang patted the little brat's head. Finally, the little brat stopped mourning. She lifted her butt and went over to the loots. Because Zhang Yang had made a promise to Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent earlier on, he had Hundred Shots bring two Level 140 Ethereal Tier equipment from the warehouse along. Then, he traded 2 Ethereal Tier equipment for 1 Holy Tier equipment agreed on. By the end of it, Zhang Yang had succeeded in getting the two Holy Tier equipment into his possession.

Meanwhile, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent were content with the deal as well. After all, having two Ethereal Tier equipment currently could give them more benefits than having only one Holy Tier equipment. It was a win-win situation for both sides. As for the remaining Level 170 Ethereal Tier equipment, Zhang Yang did not care too much about them. He took two of them and left the other 2 to Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent.

Upon settling the deal, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent did not leave immediately. They stayed to look the attributes of the two Holy Tier equipment that they had given to Zhang Yang. Well, they did work their \*sses off, taking down the boss. They wanted to see what kind of equipment the boss had dropped upon its death.

Wei Yan Er picked up a small and thin necklace made out of small white bones with her left hand while picking up another leather jacket with spots and stripes all around it in her right. Then she asked, "So which one do we look at first?"



"Necklace!"

"Clothes!"

"I want to see little Yan Er's pretty face!"

Female Raid Covert was instantly beaten up by everyone around him. After that, he went aside, squatted down and began to draw circles with his finger again, squinting through his banged-up face.

Wei Yan Er smiled and used the [Identifying Scrolls] that Zhang Yang had given her to identify the two equipment. Then she posted the attribute of the necklace, first.

[Holy Bone Necklace] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +3,967

Strength: +979

Agility: +919

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 7,930 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 848 damage when being hit.

Equip: When being hit, there is a certain chance that the 'Holy Bone Defence' will be triggered. Reflects 20% damage received back at the attacker.

Required Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

This equipment was suitable to all Classes. Everyone was cracking their knuckles. They were eager to snatch the piece for themselves. Without wasting any more precious time, they rolled to see who could claim it. By the end of it, Wei Yan Er rolled out with a 94 points and claimed the prize.

"Hmm... my power to Curse has improved a lot!" The little brat nodded and she quickly put the necklace on. Although the appearance of a necklace that is made of bones was a little

disturbing to look at, this little brat had a totally different taste. She found it nice to look at.

The powerful attributes of the necklace had left Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covert speechless. They had not even tasted the sensation of having an Ethereal Tier equipment yet. It was natural for them to be astounded by the attributes of a Holy Tier equipment.

Wei Yan Er then posted the attributes of that leather jacket as well.

[Shadow Killer Rhodine's Jacket] (Holy, Leather Armor)

Defense: +384

Vitality: +15,870

Strength: +1,652

Agility: +3,915

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 31,740 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 damage when being hit.

Equip: Shortens the cooldown for your {Vanish} down by 30 seconds.

Required Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Leather Armor are best suited for Thieves and Hunters. However, because this equipment had the special attribute that could improve the efficiency of {Vanish}, it became obvious that this equipment would best suit Thieves.

After Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream rolled, the leather jacket was

claimed by Sun Xin Yu. That leather jacket had really boosted her attributes a lot. Especially her HP amount, it was basically double the HP amount she had when she was wearing an Ethereal Tier equipment, which only provided her about 7,000 additional HP.

After they were done with the loots, everyone went back to what they were doing. Female Raid Covert was still trying to follow Wei Yan Er around. However, he was dragged away by Ten Dusk and the two of them left.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue continued on to search for cooking ingredients. A few hours later, Han Ying Xue had finally gathered enough [Chicken Meat]. However, she continued to bug Zhang Yang in order to accompany her while she cooks. After that, she had made quite a number of tasty spicy [Diced-Chicken Burgers].

The good thing about player-made [Snacks] is that they provide an additional boost. For instance, Zhang Yang could acquire a 400 Strength attribute by ingesting a snack made by a player. Well, having an increase of 200 damage in his DPS would be very useful for him.

Zhang Yang went back to his Little Merchandize Shop. Currently, he managed to gather a large number of [Crimson Blazing Essence]. However, it was still far away from being enough. Unfortunately, most of the players would just throw them away even after they get it from slaying monsters and bosses. They were just a burden for them because they had absolutely no use for them. After all, a player's inventory slots were limited.

Unless Zhang Yang largely increased the price of each [Crimson Blazing Essence] that he was willing to pay, or else the situation would stay the same. 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] for 8 gold pieces? Most of the players would not want to go through so much trouble just to earn such a small amount of gold. The time that they could use to collect 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] would allow them to collect more Herbs and Mines. They could have

collected double, or even triple the amount of herbs and mines in the same amount of time. Furthermore, they could earn an amount of gold that would be ten times higher the amount of gold they could get with 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences].

However, the question was still the same. Once Zhang Yang increases the price that he is willing to pay for the [Crimson Blazing Essences], many crooked sellers would sense it. They would be able to realize the true value of these [Crimson Blazing Essences]. Then, they would take advantage of the situation and start buying them as well. It would be pretty annoying to compete with these crooked f\*ckers.

Well, looking from a long-term perspective, when the second and the third recipe for making [Amateur's Power Potions] appear, the value of these [Crimson Blazing Essences] would increase tremendously. So, let the price be raised, then! Since the cost of buying these [Crimson Blazing Essences] would not be higher than the amount of profit he makes from selling the [Amateur's Power Potions], he could afford to raise it.

Zhang Yang increased the price he was willing to pay for every 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] to 10 gold pieces. Many players were motivated to gather the [Crimson Blazing Essences] now. However, other crooked sellers had sensed it as well. Some of them even tried to compete with Zhang Yang by saying that they would buy 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] with 11 gold pieces! They were trying to mark the value of these [Crimson Blazing Essences] higher because it seemed to be a perfect time to do so.

However, Zhang Yang was not moved by their actions at all. Even if they were shouting out to the market saying they would pay 11 gold pieces or even 20 gold pieces for 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences], the price that Zhang Yang was willing to pay was still fixed at 10 gold pieces per set. Zhang Yang knew better than anyone, he was the only one who could make [Amateur's Power Potions] in the current stage of the game. Those crooked sellers

would be just wasting their efforts, trying to spend more of their fortune over something that they could not use.

Of course, if they are patient enough to wait until the second and the third recipes for [Amateur's Power Potion] appear, then the value of [Crimson Blazing Essences] would increase even further. By then, they might get richer by selling them out.

2 days later, Zhang Yang had bought a substantial amount of [Crimson Blazing Essences]. However, a large number of [Crimson Blazing Essences] were sold to the other crooked sellers. Well, Zhang Yang was the only one who could 'process' these things. Those crooked sellers were just trying to buy as much [Crimson Blazing Essences] in hopes that they would earn something out of it in the future. However, when they were beginning to run out of capital and all that, they would be forced to sell those [Crimson Blazing Essences] to the Little Merchandize Shop. Only a few of them could really hang on until the very end.

After all, profit that can be touched and used is the thing that mattered the most for most of the crooked sellers. Only a few of them fools would actually want to try out some long-term investment.

Zhang Yang took out every single [Crimson Blazing Essence] that he got from his Little Merchandize Shop and began his 'mission' to make them all into [Amateur's Power Potions]. However, when he was almost halfway making all of the ingredients he had into the [Amateur's Power Potions], he received a public notice announced by the system.

'Server Announcement: A new Territory has been spawned in The Plagued Land. The Territory Conquest will start officially at 7 p.m tomorrow. The location of the Territory will be announced 30 minutes before the Territory Conquest takes place.'

The second High Tier Territory had revealed itself! The only thing that remained a question was, which Region would be the

one who claim this Territory to themselves then?

"Little Yang, are we going to join in?" Fatty Han immediately contacted Zhang Yang through their own chat.

"Of course we are! We're going to kill some players!" Wei Yan Er was excited about it.

Zhang Yang was a little conflicted. From the perspective of business, having one or two of these high Tier Territories would only give a player the same benefit. The player would not be getting more profit for getting two high Tier Territories. Zhang Yang was the only one who had claimed a high Tier Territory in the entire China Region. So everyone from China Region would have to use the Teleportation Circle in his new high Tier Territory.

Therefore, if he takes another Territory now, not only would he not be increasing the number of his 'customers', he would also need to pay a substantial amount of money to maintain the second high Tier Territory he gets. That would include the Teleportation Circle of the new Territory. That would be a disastrous loss of money for him to bear.

--- Of course, if the second high Tier Territory is claimed by another guild from China Region, then they would be affecting Zhang Yang's current business.

# Chapter 718: Forrest Gump's Fortress

---

There were only a total of 4 high Tier Territories in the entire server. If Zhang Yang decides to take another one for himself, then the other Regions would definitely get offended. They would start stirring up trouble and messing things up for him. Zhang Yang would not be worried if only one Region does that. However, getting challenged by 2, or 3 Regions and having them work together? That would be a disastrous situation for even him, wouldn't it?

From that point of perspective, Zhang Yang had no reason to join the Territory Conquest. Furthermore, if he ever gets himself killed in the Territory Conquest, he would lose a large amount of Experience Points. Well, what's even worse was that if either of him or Sun Xin Yu dies, they would even drop the pieces of [Book of Revelation] that they were currently carrying!

After giving it some thought, Zhang Yang made his decision and said, "Yes! Of course we're joining! However, we're not there to claim the Territory. We're joining with two main purposes! Number one, we'll stop those Japan-Korea Region from taking over the Territory! Number two, we'll look for the other chapters for the [Book of Revelation]!"

Those who have acquired a broken chapter of [Book of Revelation] would definitely want to collect the remaining broken chapters of it. So, how would they be able to do so then? The best way for them to get it was to join some public war event, such as a Territory Conquest! All they needed to do was to look out for any players who resurrect immediately after they die. Those players would either be holding a piece of [Resurrection Monolith] or holding a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]!

It could be risky, but it could be the greatest opportunity as well. So, why not take a bet and try their luck out there, then?

Fortunately for all of them, it would only take another 10 to 12 hours before all of their Inheritance Transformations Skills are ready again. After all, they did activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills about two days ago. When the clock strikes 7 p.m tomorrow, they would be ready to join the Territory Conquest at their full strength!

Because joining the battle of Territory Conquest would not bring them any direct benefit, Zhang Yang and his party were taking things super easy. They also did not send any of their guild members over to join the Territory Conquest. If they do, the Lone Desert Smoke would be suffering an unimaginable number of casualties. There was no reason to sacrifice their own guild members, because their main aim was not to claim the Territory.

On the next day, everyone had rested well enough. They gathered at a spot in The Plagued Land. Meanwhile, it had been quite a while since the last Territory Conquest happened at Souron's Castle. There were many more Level 130 players currently. Although The Plagued Land was designed to be inhibited by the undead and Spectres, there were more living beings moving around on that map now.

Many players could roughly guess the location of the Territory. Most players were gathering at the center point of the map. They were just waiting for the clock to strike 6:30 p.m, so that the system announcement would announce the exact location where the Territory Conquest would take place.

Zhang Yang and his gang were still taking things casually around. At 6:30 p.m, the system announcement informed everyone about the name and position of the location.

--- Forrest Gump's Fortress.

Compared to the Territory Gateways, a high Tier Territory was much larger. Looking from afar, the fortress was full of steel barricades that made the castle walls look thick and impenetrable!



The castle walls were at least fifty or sixty meters tall. The black and dark appearance of the fortress looked like a foul beast that could crawl out of the walls and roar ragingly into the sky at anytime.

Zhang Yang and his party did not go in at all. When the Territory Conquest begins, everyone that is still standing within the area of the Territory Conquest would be teleported out of the vicinity. It was 7 p.m now. The server once again put another announcement to mark the beginning of the Territory Conquest.

'Server Annoucement: Currently, the Territory Order is being held by the player: Savage Lord! There will be a special marking on the player who is holding the Territory Order. The player will not be allowed to leave the area of the Territory Conquest!'

'Server Announcement: The Territory Conquest has begun! Commencing the Count Down!'

Savage Lord? Was this Territory unlocked by the India Region, then? So, how did the Territory Order end up on the hands of that single minded man instead of the hands of Hourglass Figure? The reason was simple. She was a Hunter after all. Even though she was holding a Class S Inheritance, she would not be half as tough as Savage Lord who was a Guardian.

In an instant, the players were gushing into the Forrest Gump's Fortress like a tidal wave. Judging by how packed they were squeezing together, there were at least a million of them!

That's right. Less than 30,000 players took part in the Territory Conquest over the Souron's Castle. Well, most of the mainstream players had reached up to Level 130 within just a month. It would not be a surprise at all to see more than a million players battling over a Territory.

Well, it was still early, though. If the players were given another half a month or one month, there would be more than tens of millions taking part in this battle!

After all, there were over 20,000,000,000 players from all around the world playing 'God's Miracle' as of today. Meanwhile, Level 130 was not that high of a level cap for the players to achieve. Look at Zhang Yang. He was about to break through the level cap of Level 160!

Han Ying Xue could not help but reveal a pale face. Then she said, "If there were so many of them when we were trying to claim Sauron's Castle, we would not have made it, right?"

"Hmm... that's why having the Territory Order is not a good thing. Well, there is a saying... hmmm.... Yea, right! When the eel and the clam grapples, it is the fisherman who profits! It's hard to snatch the Territory order in the crowd and stay safe, as well." Zhang Yang looked at the arrow-indicator that beamed down, deep in the middle of the fortress. That arrow-indicator was the indicator that clearly showed the location of the player who was holding the Territory Order. There was nowhere for the person to hide at all!

Zhang Yang and his gang did not set foot into the Territory at all. Judging from the crowd that was gushing into the fortress, even if a player holding a broken chapter of [Book of Revelation] is killed and the broken chapter of the book was dropped, there would be no way that Zhang Yang and his gang could sneak in and get the item without dying. Meanwhile, the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] was 'bound upon pickup'. Whoever holding it would definitely drop it when the player is killed. As long as those players do not go back to their main cities, they would definitely drop the item at some point.

"However, that Savage Lord must have come up with some sort of plan before he is so bold to trigger a Territory Conquest. At least the players from India Region must have been persuaded to help him!" Lost Dream laughed and said.

"Little loli ---" a passionate and yet irritating voice was heard across everyone's ear. Female Raid Covert and Ten Dusk appeared

in front of everyone all of a sudden.

"You two again!?" Fantasy Sweetheart did not say it out loud. Ten Dusk was cool. However, everyone could not stand Female Raid Covent because of his mouth.

Instead, Endless Starlight and Fatty Han were welcoming Female Raid Covent with open arms. They even wrapped their arms around like brothers. Well, feathers of the same bird flock together after all.

"So, are you guys here to snatch the Territory Order?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Hehe, my luck has been great throughout my entire life! Maybe, by the end of all this, I'll be the only one standing. When that happens, all I need to do is to bend down and pick up the Territory Order! Then the Territory will be mine!" Female Raid Covent spoke without any sense of shame.

Everyone laughed it off. Well, they were currently free. So they did have spare time to chat a while.

However, just when everyone was laughing, the sky suddenly darkened and the dark clouds were beginning to move irregularly fast. There were also flashing of flames and rumbling of thunders in the sky. Instantly, the entire place looked like a doomsday scenario!

"Oh no! This must be the effect of a [Forbidden Scroll]!" Zhang Yang cried. Then he calmly said, "Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Fantasy, you three activate your Inheritance Transformation Skills right now and start healing! The rest of us, other than Witchy Snow, we take off our equipment!"

Zhang Yang immediately summoned his Phoenix pet as well and commanded the Phoenix pet to activate its Transformation Skill. Instantly, Zhang Yang boosted his Maximum HP up to a total of 20,000,000 HP! That buffed him up good enough to survive a

direct hit of 3,000,000 damage from the [Forbidden Scroll]! He asked Hundred Shots and Fatty Han to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills because both of them still had their Phoenix pet and Red Dragon. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han could still command their pets to activate their Transformation Skills after that. They would have Transformation Skill-level power for over 3 hours!

Meanwhile, Fantasy Sweetheart and Han Ying Xue must not activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills at the same time. In other words, Han Ying Xue should only activate hers after Fantasy Sweetheart's Inheritance Transformation is over. They had to keep a Healing Inheritance Transformation Skill activated throughout the entire battle. Therefore, Zhang Yang made a crucial decision.

Why did he asked everyone else to take off their equipment? That was because the [Forbidden Scroll] deals damage by percentages. Although the effect of the scroll had a limit of dealing a maximum of 100,000 damage, it did not set a minimum damage to the targets. Even if a player only has 10 HP left, the Forbidden Scroll could only deal 1 Damage per second to that player.

Meanwhile, if a player's HP is low, it would be easier for that player to be healed. Of course, Healers could never take off their equipment. Without a high amount of MP in hand, they would not be able to heal up their party members even if their party members have a low HP amount.

Everyone had been through a lot together. So they were working together in perfect sync. They did what Zhang Yang asked them to without any hesitation. Now, Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart would be able to survive a solid hit from the [Forbidden Scroll]. They would only have to make sure the other six members of the party are healed properly, so that they could survive as well.

--- as for Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent, they were totally

ignored by Zhang Yang and his party members! Now that they barely made it out alive themselves, how would they have time to save others?

Boom!

The entire sky was scorched in a sea of flames. Countless meteors rained down from the sky. The entire scenario looked like a high budget Domsday movie. It was definitely a spectacular scene to behold! Whether or not if the players are struck by the meteors, everyone was losing 10% HP in each passing second. Meanwhile, those who had more than 1,000,000 HP were losing 10,000 HP in each second. The damage dealt on them was not being reduced or weakened by any Skills or effects!

Fantasy Sweetheart and Han Ying Xue were busting their \*sses trying to heal. Meanwhile, the others had taken off their equipment and were on standby mode to gulp down their potions. However, the moment when the [Forbidden Scroll] was triggered, everyone entered combat mode. When everyone is in combat mode, it became much more complicated for them to take off their equipment. It would take about 10 seconds to take off each piece of their equipment!

However, it could make a huge difference if they could just take one of their equipment off before the [Forbidden Scroll] begins to rain hell upon them. One equipment would really make a large difference especially when their equipment are very high Tiered! Taking one equipment off could reduce tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands HP off their total Maximum HP. In other words, it could literally mean that they could reduce the DPS that the Forbidden Scroll could deal on them by thousands or even tens of thousands of damage points!

The bombardment of meteors continued on for over 30 seconds. After the meteors were done showering, the entire fortress was left devastated! The initially fortified walls were broken down into pieces of rubbles. The entire place no longer looked grand and

magnificent. Meanwhile, the players from all Regions were suffering heavy casualties. At least 90% of them were killed by that wave of attack from the [Forbidden Scroll].

Most importantly, among the 10% of the survivors, 90% of them had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills!

Truth be told, the Territory Conquest would last for 3 hours long. Those who already activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills would not last until the end of the battle. Unless, they take out all of their competitors while their Inheritance Transformations are still in effect. Without the support of their Inheritance Transformations, they would most likely lose.

After all, not everyone could perform as outstandingly as Zhang Yang who could take out a player who has activated a Class C Inheritance Transformation without activating his own Inheritance Transformation! Well, that was only limited to the circumstance where the player only activates a Class C Inheritance Transformation. Even Zhang Yang would be forced to kneel if he had to battle a player who activates a Class B Inheritance Transformation without his Inheritance Transformation.

"I wonder, who is the bastard who activated the [Forbidden Scroll]!" Daffodil Daydream said out of her curiosity. Well, Zhang Yang made the right decisions and gave the right command to his party members. Furthermore, there were two very powerful Healers supporting everyone in their full strength. So, no one on the party was killed.

"Outstanding! Cunning but admirable!" Zhang Yang nodded and praised, "The player who used the Forbidden Scroll knew! If he or she ever used the Forbidden Scroll at such an early stage of the battle, that player could force most of the players here to activate their Inheritance Transformation! Meanwhile, using the Forbidden Scroll could filter and eliminate most of the lower level players to reduce the burden everyone has to bear on the battlefield when there are too many players! Meanwhile, two

hours later, the Inheritance Transformations would all be over by then. From there, many more players will be eliminated because they no longer are powerful enough to hold on until the end. By then, if Savage Lord or any of his party members activates another [Forbidden Scroll], it would be perfect for them! They would definitely be able to secure their victory over this Territory Conquest!"

"Why can't we get more of those [Forbidden Scrolls] already?" Endless Starlight ranted.

"Well, there are already two [Forbidden Scrolls] under our possession for now. That's already a good achievement, you know?" Zhang Yang shook his head. Then he said, "Well, looks like this is a good time for us to head down there to check on the battlefield. So many have died. We might be able to get something real nice among their dead bodies!"

When players are killed in action in the game, they would drop 20% of their items. Well, look at the number of players who got killed during the meteor rain! When Zhang Yang and his gang looked upon the battlefield, all they saw were countless glowing things glittering all over the place. What's more were all sorts of potions lying quietly on the ground waiting for someone to pick them up. There were also quite a number of survivors picking things up from the ground. They did not even bother to attack the others around them at all.

However, players who got wiped out by the wave attacks from the [Forbidden Scroll] were not that strong themselves. The items and equipment they dropped were not as good as everyone expected them to be.

# Chapter 719: A Second Forbidden Magic

---

More surprisingly, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent were both still alive!

Ten Dusk survived, because he had followed Zhang Yang's instructions and took off a few pieces of his best equipment. That included his shield which added the most Vitality attribute onto him. Meanwhile, Female Raid Covent put up an outstanding performance on utilizing his healing capability. Even though he could be annoying at times, well, most of the times, but he managed to heal up himself and his best pal Ten Dusk as they were showered by the meteors!

Zhang Yang was very curious about it. Ten Dusk did had removed a few pieces of his best equipment on him to reduce his own Maximum HP so that he could reduce the pressure on his Healer partner. However, he seemed to still have over 200,000 HP on him after that. He would require a healing amount of 20,000 HP in each passing second in order to stay alive.

As Holy Knights could focus on healing one target better than a Priest could, a Priest with the same Tier equipment as Female Raid Covent might not be capable of healing 20,000 HP per second. On the other hand, a Holy Knight with the same Tier equipment as Female Raid Covent could definite heal that much per second. However, not only did Female Raid Covent need to heal himself, he also needed to make sure that he could heal his best pal Ten Dusk! How did he manage it, then?

Did he have a Holy Knight's capability to focus heal one target at a time, while also healing multiple targets like a Priest?

This is quite a broken character!

Zhang Yang continued to ask more questions. After a series of questioning, Female Raid Covent finally gave up on hiding his 'secrets'. He posted a link to one of his Skills.



[Holy Blessing]: Blesses a target with holy blessing. When you are healing any other target in your party, the Holy Blessing will also heal the target you marked earlier with the same amount of HP that you can heal on your other target. The effect will last for 1 minute. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

So that was it!

So, all Female Raid Covent needed to do was to cast a {Holy Blessing} on Ten Dusk before he focuses on healing himself up. One healing Skill healing two targets at the same time? That was just awesome!

This Skill was a perfect addition to a Holy Knight's Skill List! It could really make up for the disadvantage of a Holy Knight of not being able to heal many targets efficiently at the same time! However, the 30-minute cooldown was a real bummer. It defined the Skill as a life-saving Skill. Well, if this Skill is learned by a Priest, there would not be much of an improvement for the Priest in any way. Well, Priests were designed to be very powerful at healing multiple targets in the first place. Furthermore, their healing capability on a single target was not that bad as well.

Zhang Yang extended his sights further out on the battlefield. All he saw was that the battle was beginning to reach its climax. Many players began to hop onto their Flying Mounts and charged towards the fortress. They were headed towards the direction of that gigantic virtual arrow indicator! In a Territory Conquest, nothing mattered at all. The only thing that mattered was to snatch the Territory Order. That would be the only thing that kept the players from leaving the battlefield there and then.

"Darling ---" A cheerful voice rang out at them. It was Dusk Phoenix! She was riding on a snow-white eagle, flying towards Zhang Yang from afar. After landing on the ground, she hopped down and tried to throw herself into Zhang Yang's arms.

Female Raid Covent widened his eyes and muttered to himself,

"What a pretty little lady!"

"Humph!" Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue shoved themselves between Zhang Yang and Dusk Phoenix. Both of them glared at her, expressing their seniority.

Dusk Phoenix quickly pulled over and stopped right in front of the two angry ladies. Then, she began to speak with them in a low voice. Only god would know what they were talking about.

At the same time, the Hell Family were arriving one after another. After seeing Dusk Phoenix getting so close with Zhang Yang and his two ladies, they could not help but to feel depressed and angry at the same instant. Every one of them were glancing at Zhang Yang with murderous intent. If a stare could kill, Zhang Yang would have died over a thousand times or maybe, a million times! His 'little brother' was in most danger. That part of him would have definitely been sliced into too many pieces to count!

However, who wouldn't know how to glance? Zhang Yang patted the little brat's shoulder. The little brat was playing nice with Zhang Yang this time. She shoved her hands on both sides of her waist and stared right back at the players of Hell Family like she was going to swallow them up whole! Well, that was her favorite 'game' anyway.

Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Dusk Phoenix were talking among themselves. Zhang Yang had no idea what they were talking about at all. After talking on for quite some time, Dusk Phoenix turned towards Zhang Yang and said, "Darling, you have to help me! Help me get that Territory Order!"

"I'm not free!" Zhang Yang rejected her offer outrightly. His main purpose was to try out his luck at the opening stages of the battle to see if he could pick up the other broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]. Previously, the Lone Desert Smoke had the advantage over the entire Territory Conquest. However, the guild still suffered some heavy casualties. There were only a few of them left

by the end of the previous Territory Conquest. Zhang Yang would not want any of his guild members to die for no reason.

It was getting harder and harder to earn Experience Points, nowadays!

"Dar---ling---" Dusk Phoenix began to sidle up to his body. Her actions sent everyone from Hell Family bursting in tears. The only thing they had not done were to bang their heads against a wall.

"Silly Yu, since we're going to kill some players, let's help her!" Han Ying Xue pulled Zhang Yang's arm a little.

Sun Xin Yu did not say anything. She just nodded.

Fine! These two had become the Samaritans of the day now! Now he was the bad-mannered one! What bad luck! Zhang Yang sighed and nodded as well. However, he decided to kill every single one of the Hell Family players other than Dusk Phoenix. Well, his main purpose is to check to see if any of them could be carrying one of the broken chapters of [Book of Revelation].

--- even if they did not carry one with them, they should die as well! Who told them to stare at him like that? Furthermore, killing them would be a contribution to the China Region. It could also weaken one of the other Regions' strength. It could be deemed as a noble gesture to China Region!

The battle was getting intense. Players were battling against each other at every corner of the battlefield. However, those battles were completely unnecessary. Well, Zhang Yang saw a player from North America Region battling against a player from Africa Region. They had started battling each other simply because the player from North America Region was acting racist. He had actually called the guy from Africa Region 'Captain blackie'!

Zhang Yang and his gang were waiting out for the perfect moment. They were waiting patiently like fishermen. They took their sweet time, because there was no need for them to rush. The

battle would go on for quite a while before things would start to settle down a little bit. Meanwhile, Dusk Phoenix was doing the same thing as well. She knew that there would not be a difference between obtaining the Territory Order 1 minute before the Territory Conquest ends, or getting the Territory Order right now. As long as she holds the Territory Order by the end of the Territory Conquest, she would be claim the Territory as her own. Furthermore, she would become the primary target of everyone the moment she gets her hands on the Territory Order. So, why put herself in so much danger when she could just sit back and let the others kill themselves first?

The intense battle went on. Countless players were killed, and they were sent back to their main cities. The pace of the battle began to slow down as time went on. 10 minutes into the battle, 40 minutes into the battle, 60 minutes into the battle!

Players would just activate their Inheritance Transformation 60 minutes into the battle. If they do so, their Inheritance Transformations would definitely last long enough until the Territory Conquest ends. Furthermore, the players could accumulate EP, even if they activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills a little earlier. After all, EP is the essential energy that players needed to activate their Inheritance Skills. Without enough EP, it would be pointless even if they had their Ultimate Skills ready.

Therefore, after battling for over 60 minutes, most of the players in the battlefield activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. At first, Zhang Yang and his gang were just sitting at once corner, watching the battle quietly. However, they could no longer do that anymore as the heat of the battle had spread too far out. So they began to make their move.

"Noob tank, we should get into the battle now!"

"Cousin sis, let's go now! Kill them all!"

"Sister Sun, let's go out and play!"

Wei Yan Er could no longer sit quietly. She began to move and spin around, making noises like a little b\*tch.

Female Raid Covent quickly came up trying to play along, "Cute little loli, come! I'll take you over to the battle now!"

Wei Yan Er quickly shook her head like there was no tomorrow. Then she said, "Cousin sis taught me before! You're the type of hamsap uncle that loves to trick little girls! You must be thinking of tricking me so that you can sell me away into the mountains! I'm so clever! How would I ever fall for that!"

"It's brother! Not uncle!" Female Raid Covent immediately tried to correct the little brat. He tried to tell her that he was still young.

However, Wei Yan Er backed off and hid behind Zhang Yang once again. Then she pointed her finger at that hamsap uncle and said, "Brother-in-law! Beat him up!"

Everyone could not help but to hold their laughs. With this little brat around, no one would get bored at all.

90 minutes into the battle! 120 minutes into the battle!

About 130 minutes into the battle, the sky started to get blotted out by storm clouds, and the entire area became dark all of a sudden. Wind began to whistle and the ground was instantly covered in frost and snow!

"What the f\*ck! It's another [Forbidden Scroll]!" Lost Dream screamed like a little b\*tch.

Countless frost spikes emerged from beneath the surface of the ground and caused immense damage to everyone in the surroundings! Under the catastrophic rumbling, the entire fortress started crumbling apart. It was already a fortress with broken walls. With this wave of snow and frost attacks, the fortress had totally lost its form. It no longer looked anything like a fortress!

"This should be all the money spent by Hourglass Figure, I assume!" Zhang Yang praised. "The first [Forbidden Scroll] was to forced most of the players to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills. The second one was to ask everyone who had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills earlier on to leave the battlefield immediately! Good thinking! Really! Unfortunately, they'll need more scrolls to do that!"

Everyone rolled their eyes at Zhang Yang. Was he trying to talk nonsense or was he trying to be sarcastic? If they really had 10 [Forbidden Scrolls] in their possession, would there still be a point of them trying their luck here? They could just spam their [Forbidden Scrolls] without any hesitation. Other than Zhang Yang who could boost his Maximum HP up to 40,000,000 HP by activating his Inheritance Transformation Skill, no one could have survived.

Meanwhile, if Hourglass Figure finds out about that, she would definitely be popping her veins so badly that she might just die of heart attack. Well, in her previous attempt, she had spent a fortune and a lot more effort just to get one [Forbidden Scroll]. This time, she actually managed to get two of them! So Zhang Yang was wondering, how much effort and money did she spend to get so many guilds in her Region to bring her these two [Forbidden Scroll] then?

After the second wave of 'Forbidden Magic Attack', players who survived the first wave of the attack by activating their Inheritance Transformation Skills were killed. The number of players on the battlefield had been largely reduced once again. There were not more than 3,000 players left!

Meanwhile, those who survived were basically the best among best, the elites among the elites!

Zhang Yang and his gang did not make their moves just yet. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were healing everyone back up. Currently, everyone had activated their

Inheritance Transformation Skills. That included Zhang Yang, of course. Now that each of them had lost at least 3,000,000 HP, even Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to take quite some time to heal back so much amount of HP. Furthermore, Fantasy Sweetheart's Inheritance Transformation had already expired.

Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk had also activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. One of them transformed into a void demon, while the other transformed into a creature full of spikes all over his body. He looked just like a hedgehog!

Void Walker Transformation! Steely Spike Transformation!

Unfortunately, those two were just Class B Inheritances! However, it must have been quite difficult for these two guildless players to get a Class B Inheritance for themselves. Well, a player with an Inheritance Transformation Skill would always be welcomed by any guild in the entire server. Not to mention, these two had Class B Inheritances which were extremely powerful as they were. Well, Class S Inheritances and Class A Inheritances were extremely rare after all.

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Fatty Han and said, "Fatty, try to get these two into our Sub-guild!"

Although there were still available slots in the main guild, Female Raid Covent was really unreliable at this point, even though his skills in battle were pretty dope. If they straight away put him into the main guild, he might scare many girls and ladies in the main guild away! He might even do something horrible to them, so to speak. Meanwhile, most of the players on the sub-guild were elder players. They should be able to tolerate his perverted attitude, just a little.

Fatty Han and Female Raid Covent were both flocking under the same roof. The two of them should share the same 'interest' after all. These two might have become best buddies in the Sub-guild, one day in the future. By then, there should be two powerful

players with Class B Inheritances in the Sub-guild.

"Alright, it's about time we show the crowd some nightmares!" Zhang Yang and his gang were almost done with their healing. Their HP bars were back to their full states once again. Zhang Yang pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and raised it straight up into the sky.

"Oh yea! Finally we're going to kill someone!" Wei Yan Er cried out loud like a crazy b\*tch. She was the first one to charge into the battle.

She was holding a Class A Inheritance. Upon activating her Inheritance Transformation, she could fly in the sky. Rolling across the sky like a shroud of dark black smoke, the little brat had flown straight into the fortress. Her huge battle axe was floating along with the dark black smoke. It looked oddly spooky in a sense. Unfortunately, the little brat could only equip her powerful hammer when she is Level 160.



# Chapter 720: A Chaotic Battle

---

Zhang Yang and his gang were putting up an excellent performance on the battlefield. They were like a hot knife cutting through butter. No one on the battlefield was able to stop them. They were basically being rolled over by a gigantic tank! They were screaming in misery begging for mercy while turning into white light and streaming back to their graveyards!

Because Fantasy Sweetheart's Inheritance Transformation had expired a little while ago, Zhang Yang had asked her to teleport back to the main city. If she ever gets killed in the battle, she would lose a lot of Experience Points. Most importantly, they were just there to kill players. They would not be surrounded by too many enemies at the same time. Han Ying Xue alone was more than enough to support the rest of the party.

Dusk Phoenix and her 'guards' had also followed Zhang Yang and his gang from behind. They took advantage of the situation and charged towards the direction of the Territory Order with ease.

It did not take long before they arrived at a tall building. This tall building looked very sturdy and strong. Although it had sustained over two waves of Forbidden Magic attack, the building was only half destroyed. It seemed that Savage Lord was using this towering building as his safe house to fend off attacks from his enemies.

However, those were just weak attempts from the other players. The parties that represented the top of the top had just entered the battlefield --- Lone Desert Smoke, Hell Family, Justice League, Crimson Rage and many more!

Well, those who survived this long had their Inheritance Transformation Skills activated. Furthermore, their Inheritance must be at least be Class B Inheritances. Those who held Class C Inheritances should have fallen by now.

"Zhan Yu! You've got your own Territory now. Why are you here

trying to snatch it from us!" Hourglass Figure knew very well that she could not afford to battle against all these powerful parties. She had to see if there were other alternatives to resolve the situation. Well, one of the main reasons was because Zhang Yang and his party was the strongest party in the entire China Region!

Other than that, Zhang Yang and his party should be the easiest party that can be convinced to leave. The reason was simple. Zhang Yang already has Souron's Castle. It would make no sense at all if he tries to take another Territory for himself. Furthermore, it would be better that the second high Tier Territory does not fall into the hands of any other party from China Region. That way, only would Zhang Yang enjoy the profit all to himself.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "We're here just to join in the fun! Don't mind us, my pretty Hourglass Figure!"

Hourglass Figure almost popped her veins after hearing what Zhang Yang had to say. Well, who would not mind about the existence if a super strong party standing in the middle of the battlefield? Joining in for fun? Was that an understatement or a joke?!

Although she already spent a large sum of money to use two [Forbidden Scrolls], those scrolls could really bring some catastrophic damage to the normal players alright. However, it would take more than just a few [Forbidden Scrolls] activated together at the same time to kill players who have already activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. Even if she activates many [Forbidden Scrolls] at the same instant, those players might still survive!

For instance, Zhang Yang had boosted his Maximum HP up to over 20,000,000 Hp. Well... if Zhang Yang even activates his {Radiance of the God of War}, anyone would have to throw 26 [Forbidden Scrolls] at the same time to kill him! Or else, he could still survive like a cockroach! How insane was that!?

Hourglass Figure gave some thoughts about the situation and commanded Savage Lord, "Give me the Territory Order, now!"

Savage Lord did not dare to defy her, of course. He passed the Territory Order to Hourglass Figure and the large arrow indicator immediately switched onto her. At the same time, everyone received a system notification about it. Hourglass Figure was now the holder of the Territory Order.

Hourglass Figure smiled vaguely and took a closer look at the Territory Order. Then, she suddenly threw the Order out into the opening. The Territory Order landed on open ground.

"Miss ---" Savage Lord and the others were begin to panic. Did she just throw away the Territory Order that they worked so hard to obtain in the first place? Not only had they busted their \*sses to clear and unlock the Territory, the two [Forbidden Scrolls] that they used earlier on would have been for nothing now! They had almost spent every single dime in their guild account, after all!

However, Zhang Yang could not help but to praise her quietly. This b\*tch was one cunning creature!

To hold the Territory Order now would be like holding a piece of gold while standing in the middle of a bunch of bandits and thieves. She would definitely be the primary target of everyone else! However, if she gives out the Territory Order now, she would lead the bandits and thieves into killing each other. When everyone is bleeding and wounded, she could just lead her party out and snatch the Territory Order back at the last possible minute of the Territory Conquest.

During the Territory Conquest on Sauron's Castle, if the three [Forbidden Scrolls] had not made the situation much better for the China Region, Zhang Yang could have done the same thing as Hourlgass Figure just did. He would have made the same decision as well.

The black Territory Order was just lying on the ground quietly,

there. The furthest player away from the Territory Order was just 40 meters away from it. Anyone who was on a mount or in their Class A or Class S Inheritance Transformation forms could have snatched the Territory Order from the ground within seconds.

However, no one dared to move a step now. Everyone knew, the first to move would be the first to go. Everyone would be aiming their 'guns' at that idiot! Who would survive the bombardment from so many players?

Well, maybe Zhang Yang or God's Left Hand could after all!

Both of them were holding Class S Inheritances, and the both of them were able to hold a shield in their hands. Therefore, their Defences should be incredibly tough. Upon activating their Inheritance Transformation, the two of them would acquire a 40-time increment to their Maximum HPs. However, Zhang Yang was well equipped with both Offence and Defence. Meanwhile, God's Left Han was well equipped with Defence and Healing-Type attributes. Therefore, he was a little tougher than Zhang Yang. However, his Attack power was a little underwhelming when compared to Zhang Yang's Attack power. Well, at least his Attack power was a little stronger than Endless Starlight's.

Whoever who goes forward would die a horrific death!

From that moment on, the surroundings became dead silent. No one dared to take the first step to move towards the Territory. Everyone was staring their eyes out. They were hoping that some idiot would charge in and break the silence of the battlefield.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely. Suddenly, he made a move. However, he did not move towards the Territory Order. Instead, he charged straight at a party of 7 called the 'Undying Souls'. It was a party from the Japan-Korea Region. Anyone would know they were Japanese by looking at the names on top of their heads. Instantly, they became Zhang Yang's primary targets!

The 7 of them were terrified the moment they saw the 'monster'

charging right at them. They could not even lift a finger --- what the f\*ck is wrong with him? We did not even move for the Territory Order! Why are you charging at us? Did your brain just get flooded?

Other than them, the other parties were shocked as well. They had no clue at all as to why Zhang Yang would do that! However, it did not matter them at all. Just kill them! The more he kills, the better it would be for the other parties! As long as Zhang Yang does not attack them, nothing would matter at all!

The moment Zhang Yang acted, Han Ying Xue and the others followed without hesitation. Every one of them began to launch their attacks at the 7 players from the Japan-Korea Region, like throwing a wave of tsunami at them.

Judging from the looks of it, the seven players had quite unique and powerful equipment on them. They were either holding Class B Inheritances or Class A Inheritances. Or else, they would have been long dead by now. However, now that they had encountered a super powerful party containing three players with Class S Inheritances leading the front, they were forced to accept the fate that they were all going to be tortured badly to their deaths.

6... 4... 2... 0!

About 3 to 4 minutes later, the seven Japanese players were killed. However, only two of them dropped their equipment. Wei Yan Er picked them up immediately right after that.

--- there were no signs of any broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] or [Resurrection Monolith].

Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer] that was dripping blood around as he gazed at the other parties around him.

Everyone single one of them felt a chill up their spines when their eyes met Zhang Yang's. They could not help but lower their heads. They were comforting themselves, saying that they were

not scared of him. They just did not want to battle that insane maniac, because others would take advantage of them if both sides are heavily wounded.

However, it was really a sight to behold! Zhang Yang could spread fear into the hearts of everyone just by looking at them.

"My next target should be you!" Zhang Yang raised up his sword and pointed it at Longrich, Scholar Musou and their gang.

"Why us?" Ink Wave screamed like a little b\*tch.

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "I just can't stand the sight of you!"

He fluttered his radiating wings and flew straight towards Eternal Flame's party of six. Swinging his blade straight at them, Zhang Yang looked like a dragon flying in the sky.

Longrich and the others quickly struck back at them. They felt so insulted in front of everyone! What the f\*ck! They did not even get their hands on the Territory Order yet! Why would he target them at all? This Zhang Yang came all the way to a Territory Conquest to kill people just because he could not stand the sight of seeing them? He did not even intend to get the Territory Order in the middle of a Territory Conquest! That was just unacceptably outrageous!

Even though Longrich and his gang were quite skillful, they were completely worthless before Zhang Yang and his powerful party. It did not take long before they were all killed and sent back to their main city.

Right after that, finally, a party could no longer resist the temptation of the Territory Order lying, there waiting for them to grab. They charged in and snatched the Territory Order from the ground. There it went, the triggering of a chaotic battle!

"Kill them!" Wei Yan Er lost herself to her own excitement now. After killing Scholar Musou and the others, she had not have

enough yet. So, she charged towards Captain America and the other members of the Justice League and launched her attacks at them.

Captain America and his gang had really come across an unexpected calamity now! As they battled against the Africa Region party, they had not expected this little brat to charge in and interrupt them like a hurricane. They could still survive if Wei Yan Er was the only one cutting in. Unfortunately, she was leading Zhang Yang and his entirely insanely powerful party members towards them as well!

Well, there was no way that Zhang Yang and the gang would let the little brat charge into battle without any backup. So, every single one of them followed her closely and charged at Captain America and the Justice League.

"Heart of Destruction, we'll help you get the Territory Order. First, help us take out Zhan Yu and his gang!" Captain America made a crucial decision. If they have to battle against the strongest party from Lone Desert Smoke, they would definitely go down in no time. Furthermore, they were currently battling against the other party from Africa Region at the same time! They would never survive that!

"Haha! I'll hold your words to it!"

Instantly, a blonde man wearing a purplish robe began to wave the staff in his hand. A frost dragon appeared and charged at Zhang Yang and his gang.

Heart of Destruction, Level 152, Cryromancer, Male Human, {Dark Palace}!

So he is the one Spellcaster with the Spellcaster's Class S Inheritance!

"Let me handle him!" Sun Xin Yu cut in and said. She slid herself over to Heart of Destruction's rear in one split second. The two

players with Class S Inheritance clashed head-on. One of them must fall, that is the only way the battle could end.

Zhang Yang wrenched his focus back on Captain America. Although he was eager to try out his skills with Heart of Destruction, Sun Xin Yu had demanded that she would be the one who takes the enemy down. Well, she was Zhang Yang's wife after all. Zhang Yang had no choice but to let her have at it.

Zhang Yang diverted his attention over to Captain America.

"Zhan Yu! You're a lunatic!" Captain America was also feeling humiliated like how the players from Eternal Flame and Undying Souls felt. What the hell! He did not even have the Territory Order on him! Why is Zhang Yang aiming at him!?

"Haha! Unfortunately for you! You're destined to die by the hands of this lunatic!" Zhang Yang laughed like a madman and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at Captain America.

"You bastard! Just wait till the end of this Territory Conquest! I'm going to command everyone from North America Region to launch a full-scale war against China Region!" Captain America was screaming in rage. To prevent being wiped out by Lone Desert Smoke, he was forced to work together with Heart of Destruction and withdraw himself from the competition of getting the Territory Order. Not only was it humiliating for him, it was also so infuriating that his rage was enough to burn the entire heaven to kingdom come!

"I'm just worried that you guys might not come by the end of it!" Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Devastation} and caused approximately 1,000,000 damage on Captain America, "And if you're daring enough to come, I will make sure you and your people get no opportunity to retreat!"

Even though Captain America had over 10,000,000 HP, but he was unable to withstand such a powerful damage from a single hit



for too many times! However, he immediately returned Zhang Yang his medicine. He raised his right arm up and threw a spear straight at Zhang Yang!

'-702,783!'

That was not a {Spear of Obliteration}! That was an Inheritance Skill of the Titan Inheritance called {Titan's Grip}!

[Titan's Grip]: Causes 250% Melee Attack of Chaos Damage to the target. If this Skill is activated when you're in your Titan Transformation, your Attack will increase by 10% for every 2 Titan EP you have on your EP bar. Can stack up to a total of 50%. Cooldown: 1 minute.

# Chapter 721: Book of Revelation: Chapter 4

---

{Titan's Grip} was indeed powerful, but Zhang Yang's Defence was insanely powerful! Even though Chaos Damage could ignore Defence, the attributes of 'Damage Immunity' and 'Damage Absorption' could still reduce the damage dealt on Zhang Yang. The amount of damage that Zhang Yang received from Captain America had been reduced down to only approximately 700,000 damage.

Yes, the amount of damage dealt on Zhang Yang was not weak at all. However, if both of their amount of Maximum HP bars were compared side by side, Captain America would be the one losing out by a gap.

Furthermore, that amount of damage was not the highest damage that Zhang Yang could deal!

{Brutal Smash}!

Zhang Yang stunned Captain America and activated his {Charge Up Strike} straight away. With a swing that missed, he swung another stronger strike right into the face of Captain America.

Although Captain America already knew that Zhang Yang had such a Skill, he had already activated his Skills and Accessories a while back then to break himself free from Zhang Yang's {Blast Wave} and {Heroic Leap}. So he had to endure the 4-second Stun Effect and Zhang Yang's merciless strike right in his face!

'-2,942,073!'

Zhang Yang continued on with his {God of War Heavy Axe} and caused an immense damage on Captain America. It was an explosive damage that could be fatal to anyone during a PvP match!

"Bastard!" Captain America let out a long, raging roar. Then he began to whirl his heavy axe around and engaged in a fierce battle with Zhang Yang. Both of them had support from their own

healers. However, {Destructive Smash} could cause a reduction of 75% on both of their Healing Efficiencies. Because of that, the Healers no longer be able to catch up with the pace of the battle.

Captain America was holding a [Titan's Ripple] in his hand. As long as he accumulates 8 EP, he could fully recover his HP bar. Therefore, he was not too worried about the situation he was currently in. Although {Destructive Smash} had reduced 75% of his Healing Efficiency, his {Warrior's Will} was about to be done with its cooldown. As long as he can use his {Warrior's Will} to remove all the negative effects on him, Captain America could immediately recover his HP back to its full state.

However, Zhang Yang was not the only one that Captain America had to face. Felice had also activated her Transformation Skill! Felice was ferocious and deadly enough when she was in her Dragonhawk form. Endless waves of {Fire Missiles} rained upon Captain America as the battle went on. Although there was a 30% chance of the attacks being resisted, her attacks when she goes berserk were astounding!

Fierce battles were happening at every corner of the battlefield. That black Territory Order was either kicked or smacked about by a swinging weapon. It was flying around across the battlefield without anyone being able to get a grip on it.

Captain America was on the brink of collapse. His HP bar had dropped below 20% after Zhang Yang and Felice had bombarded him like hell with their attacks. The situation was extremely dangerous for him. If Zhang Yang could just activate his {Indiscriminate} and goes on with another powerful attack, he might be instantly killed with one single hit from Zhang Yang!

Among Warriors, especially Berserkers, when their HP bars are below 20%, 99% of them would be as good as dead!

He quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} and cleared out every single negative effect on him. At the same time, he activated the

special effect of his [Titan's Ripple]. A golden circle appeared and flashed across from his head to his toe. His HP bar was fully recovered all in an instant! He cried in rage and said, "Zhan Yu! Do not be mistaken and think that you can do whatever you like! Even if you can kill me, I'll still make you pay!"

"You're overestimating yourself a little too much! Don't you think?" Zhang Yang let out a battle cry. Then he steadily raised up his left hand and activated his {Glare of the Death God}.

Well, during a boss battle, this Skill had extremely high rate of being resisted by bosses. However, it was a different story in PvP! Every single activation of the Skill would become effective! A dark skull immediately formed right on top of Captain America's head.

"OH SHIT ---!" Captain America quickly flapped his wings, trying to escape after he read the description of the {Glare of the Death God}. He struggled like that was no tomorrow, attempting to survive for the next 5 seconds!

However, Zhang Yang swatted at the retreating buttcheeks of the flying American. Well, Captain America was not really lucky at all. Zhang Yang triggered the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} with his third hit on Captain America. That wretched dark skull right on top of him immediately, opening up its jaws and swallowing him whole. After that, he was left with only 1 HP!

The Phoenix pet quickly spat out its flaming tongue, giving the final blow to Captain America and ending his life!

Captain America's body began to collapse right after he died. However, right before he touched the ground, he suddenly got back on his feet with 10% HP left! He ran like hell, trying to escape.

Oh! There must be something on him!

Zhang Yang fluttered his radiating wings again and flew towards Captain America. Well, since Captain America's Inheritance Transformation was now inactive, there was no way for him to

escape from Zhang Yang. Within one split second, Zhang Yang arrived at the rear of Captain America and he gave Captain America a good slice on his back.

Argh!

Captain America let out a miserable scream and collapsed straight onto the ground. However, Zhang Yang was really surprised to see that this fellow actually came back to life for a second time! He came back with 10% HP left, just like he did when he came back during the first time! However, he dropped a piece of small monolith upon his second death.

That... that was a [Resurrection Monolith]!

However, this fellow could still stand up after he died! This must be because he was currently holding one of the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]!

Zhang Yang picked up the [Resurrection Monolith] and threw out his {Spear of Obliteration} at Captain America. The poor Captain America once again let out a miserable scream and smacked the ground with his corpse. This time, he no longer got back on his feet again. Instead, he turned into a stream of white light and got teleported back to his main city.

"Zhan Yu! I'll never let ---" His raging scream was cut off one moment right before he died.

A book was dropped from his dead body. Zhang Yang did not hesitate to pick it up immediately, the moment he saw it.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combine this chapter with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5].

Such a pleasant gift! He dropped one [Resurrection Monolith] and a broken page of the [Book of Revelation]! Well, he was too

generous!

Zhang Yang was filled with joy. He was currently holding [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3]. He could now combine it with the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] that he just acquired. He immediately put the two [Book of Revelation] chapters together. He saw a 10-second progress bar appearing right on top of the two chapters. A stream of holy light flashed across them and the two chapters were perfectly combined together into one.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 3 and Chapter 4] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: Everyone on the same party of the holder that stands 100 meters from the holder will acquire an additional 10% increase to their damage dealt. Same effects will not stack. If the holder is killed, the holder can choose to resurrect on the spot where he or she dies with 20% HP and 20% MP. This effect can only be triggered once in every 9 hours. Same effect cannot stack. If the holder is killed by other players during the resurrection cooldown period, the holder will definitely drop this item. This item can only be brought along by players, and cannot be destroyed.

Use: Combine this chapter with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5].

The effects had been enhanced! The amount of damage increased had raised from 5% to 10%! Meanwhile, the amount of HP and MP upon resurrection had been increased from 10% to 20%! Meanwhile, the cooldown period for the effect of this item had been reduced from 10 hours down to 9 hours! Sun Xin Yu was currently holding the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 8]. That being said, there should be a total of 8 chapters of [[Book of Revelation]. Judging from the enhancement from combining two chapters, Zhang Yang could deduce that when they manage to collect all 8 chapters of the [Book of Revelation] and combine them all together, the final item should be able to give them an 80% damage bonus, and 80% HP and MP upon resurrection and 3 hours of

cooldown period.

Zhang Yang had also deduced that the complete [Book of Revelation] should provide one extra special effect for whoever who is holding it. It should not just provide additional attributes. Things would never be so simple when it comes to items with the label 'Legendary'!

Hmm... killing players in order to search for 'treasures'. Zhang Yang and the gang had acquired a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] with ease. It was much easier than killing a boss! Zhang Yang was determined that when he ever see Captain America again, he should thank him and kill him a couple more times just to be sure that he no longer had any gifts hidden from them!

Well, there was no telling what Captain America would have in mind if he ever knew that Zhang Yang and his gang were treating him like a 'lucky charm' that would drop items for them! However, he did lose both the [Resurrection Monolith] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4]. He must be squatting at a corner, drawing circles in the ground with his finger.

So how had things gone between Sun Xin Yu and Heart of Destruction then?

Zhang Yang turned his head around and take a peek at the battle. What he saw was that Sun Xin Yu and Heart of Destruction were engaged in a very fierce battle. The two of them were exhibiting the skills and agility of Top Tier players. They were moving around, adjusting their positions while throwing blows of attacks at each other. Both of them managed to maintain the rate of HP reduction at minimum. Currently, both of them had approximately 60% HP left on each of them. There was no telling if any of them had activated their HP Recovery Skills or not!

Huh?

Zhang Yang was stunned by what he saw. Within his sight, there

was a milky white orb of light shining on Sun Xin Yu, right above her head. It was shiny and highly noticeable! Zhang Yang could still see it even if he is hundreds of kilometres away from her! Did she activate some sort of new Skill?

He looked around and saw that there was also another source of milky white light shining down upon another player. That player was actually a member of Paragon from Europe Region. His name was God's Left Hand and he was the one who obtained the Class S Apocalyptic Knight Inheritance!

Could Zhang Yang now detect a holder of a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation,] now that he had combined two chapters of it into one?

If that's the case, all he needed to do is to defeat God's Left Hand, before he could get another one broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] then?

After he made up his mind, Zhang Yang flapped his wings and flew straight at God's Left Hand.

"Hmm!" God's Left Hand was a strong and masculine man in his 30s. He had blue eyes and blonde hair. Every equipment on him shone in the light. It was obvious that he was not wearing anything normal at all. He had a shield in his left hand and a hammer in his right hand. Unfortunately, the hammer was not a two-handed weapon. That had caused his Attack power to be much weaker --- of course, it was only much weaker when he was compared to Zhang Yang.

However, the attributes of God's Left Hand were more biased towards Tanking and Healing. Theoretically speaking, this player could have the most powerful Defence and sustainability. As long as a boss does not have a HP Recovery Skill, God's Left Hand could have soloed the boss without a problem. From this point of view, he could be much more awesome than Zhang Yang!

--- now, this is what a real cockroach look like!



From another perspective, if Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent were to merge into one player, that would be the God's Left Hand! Well, of course, God's Left Hand would have much higher HP and Defence. Also, he would have a much more powerful Healing Ability!

It would be extremely difficult to find anyone on the entire server who could defeat God's Left Hand, especially when he has already activated his Inheritance Transformation Skill!

However, Zhang Yang did not falter. He had his most trusted {Destructive Smash} to weaken the Healing Ability of the God's Left Hand. Furthermore, he possessed an Attack power that was far beyond the Attack power of God's Left Hand! Even if God's Left Hand goes all out on him, he would still be able to deal more damage to God's Left Hand.

"Zhan Yu!" God's Left Hand rose up in the sky and left his opponent on the ground. He went up to face Zhang Yang head on. He said, "I don't even have the Territory Order now, so what can you gain by battling me?"

"I have no interest in the Territory Order at all. However, that broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that you brought with you, is something that I'm really interested in! I'll claim it for sure!"

"Hmm!" God's Left Arm was shocked. His face darkened a little and he admitted, "How did you know I have a piece of the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]?"

Zhang Yang was not so sure at first. He had just wanted to trick him for a bit. However, God's Left Hand had unintentionally admitted that he had one on him. That confirmed Zhang Yang's suspicion --- chapters that are combined into one provided the ability for the player to locate the other missing chapters of the [Book of Revelation].

He laughed out loud and said, "I just guessed!"

"YOU ---" God's Left Hand was infuriated after knowing that he had been fooled. However, he did not charge at Zhang Yang like an idiot. Instead, he calmed himself and took a deep breath. Then he did not say a word. Well, starting a battle with Zhang Yang would only do more harm instead of any good to him. He was here to obtain the Territory Order, not to kill anyone!

Meanwhile, he also knew well about the reputation of Zhang Yang. If he really tries to kill Zhang Yang with his current Attack power ... well, the Territory Conquest could have ended by then!

Initially, God's Left hand wanted to wait for the number of players in the battlefield to be reduced by a certain number before he could reach out to snatch the Territory Order. With his Defence and Healing Ability, he could definitely hold his ground until the Territory Conquest ends. Well, if Zhang Yang has come up to interrupt him, he would have no chance at all to snatch the Territory Order for himself. So how should he proceed then?

# Chapter 722: A Fierce Battle with God's Left Hand

---

God's Left Hand was conflicted with the choices that lay in front of him. However, Zhang Yang had come up to him with a clear aim. He just wanted the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that God's Left Hand had on him!

In a blink of an eye, Zhang Yang flew up to God's Left Hand and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at God's Left Hand with full force!

Clang!

The swing was greeted by God's Left Hand with his shield. He blocked Zhang Yang's powerful strike down and roared in rage, "Zhan Yu! Do not think that I'm afraid of you!"

"Chi chi cha cha... you really are a man of many words!" Zhang Yang was calm. He told his party members not to dwell on random players anymore, through the party channel. Instead, he told them to focus on finishing off the other 7 members of Paragon!

Well, Zhang Yang had absolute confidence that he could defeat God's Left Hand. However, God's Left Hand was not stupid. His main objective was to secure the Territory Order. He would break off and escape the moment he sees his opportunity. No one would want to die for nothing! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was determined to snatch the broken chapter of [Book of Revelation] that God's Left Hand was holding. Therefore, the best way to do it would be to cut off any possible routes that his target could use to escape. He asked his party members to defeat the other 7 members of Paragon to ensure that they would not be able to help God's Left Hand escape when the time comes.

Unfortunately, Sun Xin Yu was still engaged in a battle that she could not walk away from, with Heart of Destruction. Otherwise,

Zhang Yang and his gang could have taken out their enemies in a much easier and faster manner! After all, God's Left Hand was not made of paper. He was definitely not a normal character.

"Zhan Yu! You'll definitely regret this!" Having known that he and his entire party had been targeted by the Lone Desert Smoke, God's Left Hand decided not to dwell on his conflicts to get what he wanted. He decided to go all out on Zhang Yang and his gang.

"Haha! Then let's battle! You should stop talking!" Zhang Yang began to whirl his sword around, causing damage to God's Left Hand. His attacks were aggressive and precise!

On the other hand, God's Left Hand had activated some sort of Skills that was similar to Zhang Yang's {God of War Shield}. His Damage Immunity had greatly increased. Initially, Zhang Yang's {God of War Battle Axe} and {God of War Devastation} could deal a basic damage of approximately 1,000,000 damage. However, when his Skills landed on the heavily armored body of God's Left Hand, each of those Skills were only managed to deal approximately 600,000 damage! The damage dealt by Zhang Yang had been greatly reduced!

However, the attacks of God's Left Hand were even more pathetic. Even though he was also equipped with a Skill that increased 300% of his Attack, he was only holding a one-handed weapon after all. So he could only deal as much basic damage as 600,000 damage to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang did not have to activate his {God of War Shield} and he could already reduce the damage received from God's Left Hand down to about 480,000 damage just by relying on his 20% Damage Immunity attribute. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's Defence and Damage Absorption could further reduce that itch. So, each of the attacks from God's Left Hand that landed on Zhang Yang could only deal as much as 400,000 damage, tops. With all that, Zhang Yang only had to sustain one-third of the God's Left Hand's total damage he could deal on Zhang Yang.

However, that did not mean that he would lose for sure. He still had a legendary Tier Skill up his sleeves that he had yet revealed!

[Holy Knight's Tolerance (Passive)]: Every time struck, there is a rate that your {Grace of Divinity } can become an instantly activated Skill. This effect will not be triggered within the next 10 seconds.

[Grace of Divinity]: Heals a target. The amount of HP healed will be 300% of your Magic Attack. Casting time: 2 seconds.

In a PvP match, having a Skill that would take a progress bar to chant and having a Skill that could be instantly casted could make a huge difference in battle. The chanting of a Skill could be interrupted as long as the enemies are given even 0.1 second to act on it. Therefore, a Skill or a Spell that could be chanted instantly would be the best and the safest of all. As long as the players are not impeded by any Status Restriction Skills, they would be able to use their instant Skills without a problem!

Although both of them were affected by the effect of the {Destructive Smash}, the basic amount of HP that {Grace of Divinity} could recover was 210,000 HP. Even though God's Left Hand only had 25% Healing Efficiency for the moment, he could still recover approximately 50,000 HP every time he activates his {Grace of Divinity}. Things were still looking good for him!

Of course, he would not be able to turn the tide of the battle for himself and his party members just by relying on that. Knights still had a Skill that could bestow upon them a short moment of Invincibility. When his HP bar is reduced to a certain level, he could just activate that Skill to clear out any negative effects on him. Then, all he needed to do was to heal himself as much as he could. Even though his Healing Efficiency had been steeply reduced during that 8 seconds of Invincibility, he would not be using his {Grace of Divinity} now, wouldn't he? Instead, he would be using a more powerful healing Skill called the {Divine Prayers}. He could heal up to 400% of his Magic Attack value with that! With

half of the effect, he could heal up to 140,000 HP every time he uses it. So, God's Left Hand could basically heal at over 560,000 HP over the 8-second timeframe of Invincibility!

Not to mention that he was also equipped with other Accessories that could grant him more Invincibility timeframes. Upon stunning his opponents, he could take his sweet time chanting his Spells. God's Left Hand was obviously plotting something wretched behind Zhang Yang. He planned to torture Zhang Yang to his demise by relying on his super powerful Recovery Ability!

Even Sun Xin Yu might be slowly tortured to her death eventually if she comes across such enemies! However, Zhang Yang's HP bar was way too long. So there was no telling that who would be the one who dies by the end of this battle.

"Zhan Yu! I've warned you! You're going to regret this!" God's Left Hand laughed out loud as if he already won the battle.

Unfortunately, {Glare of the Death God} had been used on Captain America earlier on. If it wasn't for that, Zhang Yang could have used that Skill to cripple this super tough turtle shell Defence. However, Zhang Yang did not regret using that Skill on Captain America at all. If he did not kill Captain America, he would not have gotten [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] and a [Resurrection Monolith] in the first place.

Zhang Yang had no interest to waste his breath on his opponent. So he charged out together with Felice and Phoenix pet. The three of them maximized their damage output and brought hell upon God's Left Hand. Although Phoenix pet was no longer in its transformed form, Felice's Berserk form was still in effect. The damage output of the three of them combined had exceeded that HP Recovery Rate of God's Left Hand!

"F\*CK!" God's Left Hand's arrogance was wiped away coldly in an instant. Even though his Attacks had managed to reduce Zhang Yang's HP bar at quite a remarkable rate, but the two of them were

losing HP at a very different rate. If the situation goes on like this, he would be the first to go.

Meanwhile, the number of his party members was slowly decreasing. They were being slaughtered up by Wei Yan Er and the rest of Zhang Yang's gang, like animals. So it was not possible at all for him to get support from his own party members.

"Zhan Yu! There is no beef between us. Why are we slaughtering each other? You'll need to use your Ultimate Skills to kill me or the other players. We'll be giving exactly what Hourglass Figure wants!" God's Left Hand attempted to beg again. "So how about I owe you one right now if you're willing to stop this battle at once?"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "Alright, just hand me the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] on you. Then we can shake our hands and make peace!"

"... Zhan Yu! You're taking it too far!"

"You're from Europe Region, and I'm from China Region. Isn't it the 'natural order' of this game for players from different Regions to kill each other, then? So just shut up and fight!" Zhang Yang began hitting in an even more aggressive manner. Upon activating his {Charge Up Strike}, he immediately unleashed his {God of War Devastation} causing a total of 2,000,000 damage on God's Left Hand. Even with all his super tough Defence, God's Left Hand was not able to hold up against such a hit for too many times!

After all, the equipment on him was not as good as the equipment on Zhang Yang. His initial HP was only approximately 500,000 HP. After boosting it up by 40 times, he would only have over 20,000,000 HP. In that sense, he was not on the same par as Zhang Yang!

After a fierce struggle, God's Left Hand suddenly made up his mind about something. He struck Zhang Yang with his {Sanction} and stunned him for good. After that, he did not escape. Instead, he flew towards the fortress as quickly as he could right after that!

Zhang Yang was not equipped with many Status Removal Skills. He would have to wait for 4 seconds before he could recover from the Stun Effect. Well, he would never let his 'target' get away. So with a light roar, he fluttered his wings and pursued God's Left Hand. Of course, he also brought along Felice and his Phoenix pet.

However, the movement speed of a Class S Inheritance upon activating the Inheritance Transformation was too fast for Felice and Phoenix pet to follow. So, Zhang Yang kept Felice back into the Battle Companion Slot. However, he did not have time to unsummon Phoenix pet. Well, pets would be kept back to the inventory once they get too far from their owners.

The pursuit went on intensely.

God's Left Hand was filled with humiliation. With his Class and Inheritance, he was supposed to be powerful enough to stand up against Zhang Yang! However, his equipment was not as good as Zhang Yang's. He only had one piece of Holy Tier equipment on him right now. Furthermore, his Holy Tier equipment was just a cape which did not provide him much of a boost on his attributes. So now, he only had one option left, to run as fast as he could. It was a fatal blow to both his pride and his confidence!

It was really unfortunate for him, because he could not afford to die he was holding a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation,] after all. Now his plan was to gain a certain distance between himself and Zhang Yang. Then he would use his Teleportation Scroll to flee to his main city. The progress bar of the Teleportation Scroll would need 10 seconds to fill up. One hit between that 10-second timeframe would interrupt the progress of activating the Teleportation Scroll.

10 seconds! That was the timeframe that he strived to acquire!

However, Zhang Yang was only 4 seconds behind of him even though he started pursuing God's Left Hand a little later. He would never give up on God's Left Hand, now!



God's Left Hand was filled with rage because he had to run. Ever since he acquired his Apocalyptic Knight Inheritance, he had been acting as if he was invincible. How would he be able to stomach this? Getting his \*ss whooped to the point that he has to run from his enemy! If this ever gets out to public, he would lose his dignity!

He kept looking back to check on Zhang Yang. Well, of course, Zhang Yang would be there tailing him! Both of them were holding Class S Inheritance, so their movement speeds were basically the same. The distance between them was maintained at a distance of 200 meters.

Because the person behind could adjust himself towards the target to go for the shortest route, God's Left Hand did not dare to even take a turn while he was flying full speed ahead. He just continued flying forward in a straight line.

As expected, the situation went on for quite a while. It would continue on until one of their Inheritance Transformation fades. Therefore, the only problem was, whose Inheritance Transformation was going to end first. Well, if any of them fell from the sky, they would not be able to summon their pet mounts at all.

God's Left Hand flew higher and higher and shouted, "Zhan Yu! How long more can your Inheritance Transformation last? Be careful that you do not fall to your own death!"

"Haha! Mine will surely last longer than yours!" Zhang Yang did not falter. Instead, he challenged God's Left Hand with his words.

They two of them began playing a psychological game on each other. Well, whoever's Inheritance Transformation ends later, that would be the winner of this battle!

Flying higher and higher into the sky, they did not intend to stop at all!

The two of them had left the vicinity of the fortress. Looking

from afar, both of them looked like two human figures flying higher and higher into the sky. Even if there were players down on the ground, they would not be able to see what was flying up there. The two of them were just moving too fast for any human eye to catch them!

'Server Announcement: The Territory Conquest has ended. The final holder of the Territory Order is --- Player Dusk Phoenix! Forrest Gump's Fortress is now officially a Private Territory. All players within the vicinity will be teleported back to their main cities immediately!'

The pursuit went on until the Territory Conquest was over!

Although Zhang Yang had left the fortress, Hundred Shots and his other gang would constantly update him with the outcome on the battlefield. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue must have made a sweet deal with Dusk Phoenix. They actually agreed to help that Phoenix achieve what she wanted. By the end of it, she got the Territory Order and kicked Hourglass Figure right in between her crotch! Everything she had done up to this point had been for nothing! Well, at least she indirectly aided Dusk Phoenix in cleaning up the mess for a bit in the early stage of the Territory Conquest!

As long as India Region does not claim a high Tier Territory, Hourglass Figure would never suffer any loss in her income from the Territory Gateway that she was holding. Therefore, even though she was extremely unwilling to accept the fact that she had lost the high Tier Territory, she was not overly disappointed with the outcome. The only thing that she really lost miserably were the two [Forbidden Scrolls] that she used during the Territory Conquest. After all, she had spent a fortune just to get them.

Zhang Yang's Inheritance Transformation could last for another 5 minutes. He must be ready to descend onto the ground 30 seconds before his Inheritance Transformation would come to an end. Or else, he would become a meat pie on the ground upon

falling!

He believed that God's Left Hand would also attempt to descend to the ground about 30 seconds before his Inheritance Transformation ends. No one would be stupid enough to let themselves fall to their own deaths and lose a substantial amount of Experience Points! However, if God's Left Hand's Inheritance Transformation would really end a minute after Zhang Yang's, that would give him enough time to leave Zhang Yang behind! Furthermore, if God's Left Hand is daring enough, he could even turn around and try to kill Zhang Yang!

The outcome of the battle would be decided in one split moment!

# Chapter 723: Book of Revelation: Chapter 10

---

God's Left Hand was getting anxious. His Inheritance Transformation could only last for another 3 minutes. If he does not land in time, he would be falling to his own demise!

Of course, it had been a while since he had not engaged in battle with Zhang Yang. So he was no longer in his Battle Mode. Even if he really falls to his own death, he would be deemed as dying of 'Natural Cause'. It would not affect him at all. He would not lose any Experience Point or drop any equipment after he dies.

However, he would be resurrected on the spot where he dies, all thanks to the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that he was holding. Furthermore, the situation would be far more dangerous than he could ever imagine when he would only be resurrected with only 10% HP on him. A single hit from Zhang Yang might kill him again on the spot! When that happens, he would not only lose Experience Points, he would also be losing the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that he was holding!

Damn it! Sometimes the items were little too good to be true. Well, if the broken chapter does not resurrect him on the spot, he could have released his soul to the Graveyard and choose to get resurrected there. 10 minutes would be required for a player to be resurrected at a graveyard. He could go to the Action House to deplete that amount of time.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes!

God's Left Hand could no longer risk it anymore. He had to descend to the ground now. He could only hope that he could use the trees of the forest to cover his tracks. His best bet was to attempt to vanish from Zhang Yang's sight. After flying low in the forest for a few seconds, his Inheritance Transformation had finally ended. He instantly transformed from being a 'god' back to a human.

God's Left Hand quickly took out his Teleportation Scroll and hid himself in the surroundings. A small teleportation circle was formed right underneath his feet. He could get himself out of the god-forsaken place after 10 seconds of activation. Meanwhile, he sworn that he would gather the best men in his organization and hunt every single member of the Lone Desert Smoke whenever they are alone. He wanted Zhang Yang to pay for what he did to him!

9, 8, 7... 3!

"Were you waiting for me?"

Just when God's Left Hand was beginning to feel relieved, he heard the annoying and familiar voice across his ears. At the same time, a blade came down on his neck.

God damn it!

God's Left Hand could only activate his {Sacred Block} to block Zhang Yang's attack. He had to interrupt the teleportation circle that was almost formed. Or else, with Zhang Yang's current Attack power, especially when he is still in his transformed form, he could have instantly taken God's Left Hand out with one single swing of his sword! Furthermore, once a player is attacked while the teleportation circle was forming, the process would be interrupted.

However, this {Sacred Block} was a little different than expected!

{Block} allowed players to have 100% of blocking Physical Damage from the enemies. Meanwhile, {Sacred Block} only provide players 50% chance to block both Physical Damage and Magic Damage from enemies. It all depended one's luck of activating this Skill successfully. Obviously, he might have done something bad in his life to deserve such an unlucky fate!

'249,830!'

As the blade slit through his body armor, God's Left Hand was heavily wounded again and his HP bar had dropped down to 20%

left, putting him into his 'Killing Cleave' stage.

"Zhan Yu! I swear I will come back and kill you! Just wait and see!" God's Left Hand knew that he had no chance at all to run away now. So he sulked and let out a raging roar.

"I'll be waiting for you!" Zhang Yang said. Meanwhile, his Rage Bar had hit its maximum cap and Zhang Yang activated his {Killing Cleave} without any hesitation at all.

'-1,161,022!'

God's Life Hand instantly received a total of damage that exceeded a million! He let out an 'Argh!' and collapsed onto the ground. However, he came back to life with 10% HP bar, immediately right after that. Zhang Yang was well prepared for that. Upon the 1-second global cooldown of all his Skills, he struck out with his {God of War Devastation} to end the battle at that instant. Well, the impact of his {God of War Devastation} was so oppressive that he left a large hole right in the middle of God's Left Hand's chest. Blood was oozing out madly right from his chest wound. Once again, God's Left Hand collapsed on the ground and stayed dead. After dropping the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation], he no longer came back to life.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 10] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combine this item with the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 9].

Chapter 10? Furthermore, it did not mention anything about a chapter 11. That being said, it was now confirmed that there would only be 10 chapters of [Book of Revelation].

Very well! With Sun Xin Yu holding one broken chapter of the book, Zhang Yang now had over 4 chapters of the [Book of Revelation] in his possession. More importantly, he had acquired two consecutive chapters that he could combine them into one. He had obtained the ability to locate the other missing chapters of the

[Book of Revelation]. That has made it much easier for him to collect the remaining ones!

God's Left Hand, Captain America. Both of them had been really good people today. Zhang Yang would never forget about their 'goodwill'.

That gratitude echoed through deeply into Zhang Yang's heart.

If God's Left Hand and Captain America could only knew what he was thinking now, they could have gone mad to point that their noses would become crooked! They would and hunt Zhang Yang down and eat his heart out.

Now that the Territory Conquest was over, Zhang Yang used his teleportation scroll to get back to Sauron's Castle. While Han Ying Xue and the others were chatting casually, they saw Zhang Yang returning. So, they began to ask Zhang Yang if he came back with any prizes worth checking out.

Zhang Yang revealed the description for the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3 and Chapter 4] so that everyone on his party could see and admire them.

"So when you get all 10 chapters of it, you can resurrect yourself with full HP bar once every hour, I assume? Little Yang, did you just believe in Brother Chun<sup>1</sup> again?"

"Well, if boss really believes in Brother Chun again, he should be able to resurrect himself with full HP whenever he wants! Since boss needs to wait for a cooldown period before he can resurrect himself again, I'm going to say that boss is only believing in Brother Ceng<sup>2</sup> !"

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight partnered up to tease Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang only smiled at them. However, he also saw that Female Raid Covert and Ten Dusk were also there, trying to blend in with them. He turned to stare at them.

"Hehe!" Female Raid Covent came up to Zhang Yang and started acting like his best pal again. Then he said, "I've decided to get myself to know more about the little loli and be friends with her! So, I joined your guild! So are you touched to hear my decision? Did you feel so excited that you're about to cry? With me joining your guild, the entire world will tremble in fear!"

"Hmm! Yes! It's the fear of disgust!"

Wei Yan Er was spitting and sticking out her tongue at Female Raid Covent. Then she said, "I'm never going to befriend you, hamsap uncle! My brother-in-law! Beat him up!"

Everyone was laughing the two of them. With this 'weird and hamsap uncle' in their club, their party became merrier than before now.

Captain America and God's Left Hand had also began launching their attacks on the Lone Desert Smoke. However, they were only capable of attacking the guild's members. Zhang Yang was undaunted by their pathetic attempts. If they would like a fight, he would always be ready for them. So, who should be the ones scared now? For the next few days, the two sides had suffered heavy casualties. It affected them all so badly that they could not progress with their level grinding at all. It did not take long before they came to an agreement to cease fire on each other.

As more players were reaching Level 150, more players became capable of venturing into the Level 150 – 180 maps. In just a short period of time, another two high Tier Territories were unlocked. Therefore, another two Territory Conquests happened right after that.

Zhang Yang and his gang went to join in the fun as usual. However, Zhang Yang did not notice any milky light shining upon anyone across the battlefield. Zhang Yang and his party members simply left then, since there was no reason for them to stay. Well, they had no desire to snatch the Territory Order after all. So when



they knew that there were no broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] found in the vicinity, they had no reason to stay at all. If they ever get themselves killed, they would only lose a substantial amount of Experience Points.

Furthermore, using that 3 hours to kill some monsters would earn themselves quite a tremendous amount of Experience Points. So, why should they waste their time in a Territory Conquest that does nothing beneficial for them, then?

By the end of it, the two high Tier Territories had been claimed. Each of them was claimed by Savage Lord from the India Region and Dark Palace from the America Region. That Hourglass figure was really a rich b\*tch. While they were claiming Cynthia's Town, she actually used another two [Forbidden Scrolls]!

Well, one of the main reasons was because the Lone Desert Smoke and the Hell Family did not join any of the two Territory Conquests. In the most crucial moment of that Territory Conquest, Hourglass Figure did not hold back at all. She even threw out the two [Forbidden Scrolls] without any hesitation, even though she failed previously. By doing so, they managed to secure the Territory Order and claim victory over the Territory Conquest in Cynthia's Town. Meanwhile, Dark Palace had also used the same tactic. He also used [Forbidden Scrolls] and secured the Territory Order in the other Territory Conquest.

After that, all four high Tier Territories had been revealed to the public. They were known as Sauron's Castle, Forrest Gump's Fortress, Cynthia's Town and White Horse Bay. So, the next big event that was going to happen in the game would be marching into the 'Anthylor The Holy City'. Well, no one would be able to conquer that place. Meanwhile, players would be able to bind themselves to the Teleportation Circle on that site. Therefore, even though there were four Regions who did not get to conquer any high Tier Territory, they need not have to worry at all. They could still bind themselves to the Teleportation Circle in the Holy

City when they manage to reach Level 180.

Zhang Yang and his gang were busting their \*sses, trying to get their levels up as quickly as they could. Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were trying extra hard. The two of them could only equip the equipment that they obtained earlier on when they reach Level 160. Therefore, they were very motivated to grind their levels. However, it was really difficult to find a good spot to farm. Well, not all monsters would give players a substantial amount of Experience Points after they are slain.

After more than a month of hardship on grinding their levels, Zhang Yang finally became the first to reach Level 160 in the entire server.

After switching to his [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets], Zhang Yang's HP had finally exceeded 1,000,000, under the boost of his {Vitality Aura}. Now, he had over 1,050,000 HP! It was a terrifying amount of HP for a player to have. If he changes his name, other players might mistake him as a boss in the Open World Map!

Other than that, his attack had reached up to the range of 115,409 - 137,489 damage. With each attack reaching over 100,000 damage, Zhang Yang would be capable of killing a full HP player of the same level as him who is wearing a set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, with a single swing of his sword.

Upon reaching Level 160, Zhang Yang had also acquired an additional Skill Point. So, he added the Skill Point to his {Shadow Clone}. After adding the Skill up to Level 10, he would focus on adding his Skill Points to his {Force Strike}. Well, that Skill had become worthy of his investment after it was enhanced into {Superior Force Strike}.

Zhang Yang went to see Ares The God of War to learn another new Skill. Well, he could not escape being lectured on why he had been improving his Strength so slowly. After that, he had finally acquired a new God of War Inheritance Skill for reaching Level

[Tribulation]: When struck, reflects the same amount of damage you receive back to the attacker. Last for 10 minutes. Cooldown: 2 hours. Required: 10 God of War Energy Points.

Although the cooldown period of the Skill was stated as 2 hours, the Inheritance Transformation Skill could only last for 2 hours as well. In other words, he could only use this Skill once, after activating his Inheritance Transformation. However, this Skill could make him immensely powerful, even though it could only last for 10 minutes. Just imagine this. When he is surrounded by his enemies, the amount of damage he receives from his enemies would be reflected back right at his enemies! Furthermore, he could also strike his enemies with {God of War's Crushing Strike}. His Phoenix pet and Felice would be there to spam their AoE attacks on his enemies as well. By the end of it, it would be difficult to say who would be the one cornered!

Meanwhile, on the second day after Zhang Yang reached Level 160, the officials made an announcement that the 'Spectre Invasion' arc had been activated. A whole new historic chapter was waiting for the players to explore.

The background theme of 'God's Miracle' had always been about Spectre and Demons invading the world. All races must rise together to go up against the invasion. At the current stage of the game, the Spectre had created a new secret weapon and they were just one step closer to launching the most violent attacks on the alliances that were formed to protect the world.

After the 'Spectre Invasion' patch was released, there were countless signs of Spectre activities all around the main cities, and also the villages, small towns and fortresses. However, those were just signs that came before a large-scale Spectre Invasion. They were designed and placed across the entire server just to set up the mood for the players.

## TL Note:

1. Brother Chun: A term derived to refer to some figure that you could trust to ensure that your 'dream' will come true.
2. Bother Ceng: A term used to make fun of other people on the internet after the term 'Brother Chun' was created.

# Chapter 724: The Spectres Invade

---

As for what had happened in his past life, Zhang Yang recalled that when the Specter Invasion started, he was only Level 50 or so. He could only be a side-character, killing random small minions at the side of the map, while the other "heroes" charged into the real fight with Angus, Lord of the Seven Spectre King. While others had face trouble fighting him when they were already higher levels than he was, Zhang Yang could not even set foot in the fight! It might be a surreal fantasy, but the truth was factual, a Celestial tier boss, Angus had descended down to the human realm and brought the doomsday with him!

Even though each major city should have their own Celestial tier boss, due to several story plot devices, they were untouchable. Even the bosses in neutral grounds could not be touched as they were all friendlies. Players would not even give it a try since firstly, it would be extremely difficult, and secondly, there was no reason to.

As for the Ten Evil Demon Lords, and the Seven Spectre Kings, they were all considered to be open-world bosses. Under normal conditions, they were considered to be undefeatable targets. Their powers were so strong that they could snuff out all players with just a simple blow of their noses. Hence, theoretically, even if all players from all corners of the world were to join forces, they would be completely wiped out as well. 100% clean.

To defeat a Celestial tier boss, one must have a Celestial tier equipment set. However, Celestial tier equipment would only drop from a Celestial tier boss! It's a complete loop. Hence, without special conditions, a Celestial tier boss could never be killed.

At that moment, the game version was still held during their Spectre Invasion patch. It was made to be a small introduction to the real threat that will come eventually. As such, if players can find, trigger, and complete a few crucial quests, they can fulfill a

certain condition where players could bring in the King or the Baron of the Kingdom to participate in the war against the Celestial tier boss!

However, mind that the NPCs were only mostly Ascended tiers. Unless they have an army of Ascended tier bosses lining up, tanking the Celestial tier boss with only a few Ascended tier NPC would go poorly. Technically, the odds were still in favor of the Celestial tier boss, however, with help from players, they might still have a chance of defeating him. At that point, the Celestial tier boss will drop the Celestial tier equipment.

Zhang Yang may have more than several tens of millions of HP, but in the face of a Celestial tier boss, it would simply take a normal attack to kill him. Even if he uses his Inheritance Transformation, the boss would still be several Levels ahead of him. With the Level Suppression system still in effect, no one, including Zhang Yang could deal more than 1 pitiful damage!

All who were in the face of the overwhelming Celestial boss were nothing but tiny ants!

Zhang Yang could recall the memories of his past life when the Spectre Invasion event was still ongoing. It was the first time in history that all players in the battlefield were wiped clean, and all major cities were overrun by Spectre except one that stood strong, because all of the lower level players were hiding behind the walls. That was how powerful Angus was.

Naturally, the system had not made it impossible for players. After every short period of time, the Spectre army will withdraw on their own and the NPC army will form a counterattack force to try and defeat Angus. Every time the raid fails, the NPC army's strength will be slowly increased until Angus is defeated.

However, there will be a drawback. Every time the NPC army and players are defeated by Angus, the number of drops from Angus will be reduced. According to the data released by the officials, if

Angus is killed in only the first try, he will drop one of the 6 major classes' - 13 pieces set equipment! All the Celestial tier equipment were Unique. Even if any one person is able to get their hands on one of the 13 set equipment, they would be greeted with immeasurable fame and glory!

If the first attempt fails, the second attempt will drop only 10 set equipment. The third will only drop 7, and 4 for the fourth time. After the fifth time, the boss will only drop one of the set equipment. If players are still unable to defeat the boss, there will be no more set equipment, only regular equipment without set effects. After more failures, the number of possible Celestial tier equipment drop will be reduced even further.

Eventually, if players are still unable to defeat Angus, the NPCs will be stronger than Angus, and the boss will only drop one regular Celestial tier equipment. Although it may sound weak, it was still a Celestial tier.

Naturally, having a full set of regular Celestial tier equipment will be far weaker than having a full set of Celestial tier set equipment!

In his previous life, Angus was defeated only after the seventh trial, and all set-equipment was removed from the drop list. The boss was killed and only dropped four regular Celestial tier equipment. Even so, due to the extremely limited drops, a massive war had erupted among all players.

However, even if they won the war and claimed the Celestial equipment, they would have to train for more than a year in order to reach the Level Requirement which was Level 230, Level 200 if they had a special Level reduction effect.

The main point was not the Celestial equipment, but the Celestial boss! That was how strong it was.

Zhang Yang clearly recalled that all four equipment were claimed by four different individuals, which was One Sword Stroke,

Hourglass Figure, Captain America, and God's Left Hand. That time, Captain America had, of course, possessed the God of War Inheritance.

Zhang Yang felt a shiver down his spine thinking about. Who knows how many time would they need to try this time...

It was a Celestial tier set equipment hanging right there just for him. Even Zhang Yang could not resist the temptation, and started to fantasize.

As long as a town is occupied by Humans, Orcs, Elves, and Dwarves, they will be attacked by Spectres. As such, they were named as the Attacked Villages. Different level of maps will be invaded with the appropriate level of monsters. Even the beginner's village will be swarmed with Level 10 monsters.

The Spectres will attack the cities every one hour, and will have one boss leading the charge. The boss' level will be adjusted according to the map's Level as well. If the Spectre were to attack Sauron's Castle, the boss' Level will be Level 170, similar to the monsters of which the boss was leading.

However, since the boss was not the final boss of the corresponding map, the equipment dropped from it would not have the special Level reduction effect. Hence, it was not as valuable to others. However, it was still in demand, since Mythical tier equipment that are farmed from dungeons were bound on loot. It cannot be traded nor sold. Hence, there was still a certain value to the equipment obtained from open-world bosses. Especially, when the most wanted equipment were Level 140. Better than nothing, right?

The only new dungeons available then were the Level 170 dungeons. Right then, there was a Level 160 dungeon that could be raided. However, Zhang Yang did not want to raid, rather, he did not know how to do it. Going in alone would be suicidal and stupid. Also, if he does manage to obtain the First Clear Reward, it



would be a waste, since the other members would not be able to obtain the perks.

It was still better to set his priorities somewhere else. Zhang Yang went to White Jade Castle and headed to the Explorer's Guild, an establishment that would post the main quests for the Spectre Invasion event.

The NPC that gives out the quest was a greenish little gnome. No one knows, but the little NPC had randomly just appeared out of nowhere and stood there as if he had been waiting for Zhang Yang for a long time. Zhang Yang came to him and the little gnome gestured Zhang Yang to bend over lower. "Hmph! Rude! Bend over a little, my neck is hurting, just looking at your stupid face!"

Zhang Yang popped a vein in his forehead and he did just that. Zhang Yang found himself a chair and sat down.

"I've come to accept a request, Guraj, not to listen to your complaints!"

Gnomes are the kind of species that are afraid of fights. Hence, the system had implemented a kind of system where if the player offends the NPC, the quest that the player receives will be of no use to them. Zhang Yang had learned that the hard way in his previous life.

"Fine." said the Gnome as Zhang Yang would not allow the Gnome to leave his sight. "What kind of quest would you like to accept here? I have a few lying around, errands of running here and there. I also have some that require stealth and strength to infiltrate the enemy's base to retrieve top-secret military intelligence."

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he was not too rude with the Gnome. The quests he offered to Zhang Yang were plenty in variety! In his previous life, Zhang Yang was only offered random running errands!

"Give me the hardest you've got!"

"Ho ho ho, if you think that you're that invincible, I have one that might snap you back to reality! Head over to Spectre Outpost located in the Forest of Clouds. Find out the reason behind the rising activity of the Spectres," said Gulaj.

'Ding! Gulaj has a quest for you: The Spectre's Secret. Will you accept it?'

[Spectre's Secret] (Difficulty Level: B)

Description: Gulaj wants you to head over to the Spectre Outpost located in the Forest of Clouds. Find out the reason why the Spectre have begun to move about. After your investigation, report back to Gulaj.

Progress: Understand the Spectre's Secret 0/1

Quest Reward: Experience Points: +5,000,000 Military Points: +100

Military Points!

Zhang Yang smiled with such satisfaction. The reason why he was happy to able to retrieve better quests was because of the Military Points. Military Points are useful only during the Spectre Invasion event. The more you have, the more soldiers you could hire. Correspondingly, the larger your army, the higher the chance of you defeating Argus.

100 Military Points might be an insignificant amount, but it was far better than the 1 or 2 Military Points reward for completing random errands.

Zhang Yang had not shared the news about the quest with anyone else, since Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were lower than Level 160. Most of the quests that were related to the Spectre Invasion event were Level 160 and above. Plus, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were extremely busy leveling in order to reach Level 160 as soon as possible to join Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang teleported to Sauron's Castle and rode the Phoenix towards the Forest of Clouds. After three to four hours of bored flying, he came to a place that looked like a mass grave, situated nearby a number of towers. Countless of towers were built there with numerous Spectre monsters going in and out of it. Just the numbers alone would be like fighting the entire of China!

Zhang Yang flew downward and landed. Since there were no clues as to where he should start searching for clues, Zhang Yang decided to check out the towers one by one in order to fulfill the quest requirement. Zhang Yang scouted the area and soared to the skies soon after. He made his way swiftly and made the Phoenix a smaller size before summoning Felice out and wreaked havoc to the entire place.

Zhang Yang made his way into the tower entrance and killed his way through. The interior of the tower was like the famous Catacombs underneath Paris. There were bones embedded in the walls of the tower! The worst part of it all was that, it seemed like the tower was only built in a few days' time, for there was still fresh blood oozing out of some of the bones. Maggots coupled with rotten flesh kept falling down from above, as Zhang Yang made his way upwards the tower.

There was a group small skeletal soldiers, grouped in 12, that were patrolling around. They were only normal tiers and as they spotted Zhang Yang, their first instinct was to charge in blindly. However, no matter how many monsters there were then, they were nothing but normal tiers. With several quick swings, Zhang Yang killed them all. As a reward, the skeletal soldiers dropped many [Frosty Inscribed Cloth].

Those [Frosty Inscribed Cloth] could be used to craft [Level 7 Frosty Inscribed Bandages] which could heal over 100,000 HP in 10 seconds. Since Zhang Yang had the title to increase the [Bandage] effect, he could heal over 200,000 HP. However, his HP limit was so high that 200,000 HP was just about 20% of his entire HP bar. It

was neither too little nor too much. Yet, it was somewhat still insignificant.

After collecting all the loot, Zhang Yang followed the flight of stairs upwards. Occasionally, Zhang Yang's heavy character made stepping on the boney staircase a difficult process, since he appeared to be cracking them. Though it was just a sound effect and not a real physical event, it was made purely as a scary ambience.

Zhang Yang moved up to the second floor and found a change in the monster type. On the ground floor, the monsters were nothing but normal tier skeletal soldiers that posed no threat to him. On the second floor however, there were many scrawny, meatless, muscles-less elite tier Spectre Wizards.

[Warfront Spectre Wizard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 165

HP: 4,950,000

Defense: 6,640

Magic Attack: 24,446 – 32,446

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% Magic Shadow attack to a target. Range: 30 meters. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Death Waves]: Blasts a deadly wave that is meant to corrupt the living and mend the dead. Deals 40,000 Shadow damage to all non-Spectre based target and heals all Spectres type targets by 20,000 HP.

## Chapter 725: Tower Clearing

---

Although the skill {Death Wave} would not heal the caster himself, it could be used to heal others. Hence, if two Spectre Wizard were to stand side by side, they could technically heal each other endlessly, making the battle much harder. If he kites too many of them at the same time, it would be really difficult. Stack them up to a certain amount, all the monsters could basically heal themselves back to full health if Zhang Yang is unable to kill them all in a blast!

What a sad case indeed. Zhang Yang had initially thought that he could at least perform a fast mass-kill since the tower floor was crowded and small. Sadly, due to the AoE healing {Death Wave}, Zhang Yang had to change his killing style to one at a time! The slowest, boring-est, lamest style ever!

If {Destructive Smash} was an AoE attack, he could have just kited of the monsters in together and wiped them all without having to worry about their healings! At most, if he is unable to handle the damage, he could just rely on {Shadow of the Void} to escape!

Zhang Yang carefully aimed {Spear of Obliteration} at the monsters at the edge of the crowd and kited him towards himself. The monster was drawn away from the bunch of monsters, allowing Zhang Yang to fight the monster alone.

After a certain distance, Zhang Yang moved towards it and attacked. After a normal attack, Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was filled. He used {Charge Up Strike} and landed one {God of War Devastation} dealing more than a million damage to the monster.

'-29,373!'

A powerful attack landed on Zhang Yang which made Zhang Yang winched a little. 30,000 damage was not a small amount. As such, facing a magic type monster, a Guardian loses his tankiness.

All his thick armor is ineffective. With his HP, he could at least take 35 hits of the {Shadow Arrow}. Technically, if the monster wants to kill Zhang Yang, he would need to last for 70 seconds.

"Shi shi shi shi!" The Wizard laughed in a weird manner and blasted out a dark wave. The wave dealt close to 18,000 damage to Zhang Yang. That was the skill {Death Wave}. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had only drawn in one monster, hence, the skill was only an AoE attack instead of a healing skill.

"Laughing? Really?" Zhang Yang sliced the monster on and on before striking the monster with a {God of War Heavy Axe}, dealing more than 300,000 damage with a single blow.

Another {Shadow Arrow} was being casted by the Spectre Wizard. However, before the spell could finish, Zhang Yang landed a {Crash Magic} on the monster and disrupted the spell cast. For the next 3 seconds, the monster was silent and could only deal physical attacks on Zhang Yang by knocking on him with his wooden staff.

Since magic type monsters would have low physical attack, the attack was not only unable to deal any single damage to him, but also triggered Zhang Yang's {Block}. As such, Zhang Yang was able to use {Shield Bash} to forcefully bash the wizard's boney face in.

"Aurgh!" The wizard cried with rage. Elite or not, Zhang Yang was unrivaled in strength. In just half a minute, Zhang Yang with the combine attack of the Phoenix and Felice, was able to defeat it. The monster had rewarded Zhang Yang with a large sum of 5,000,000 experience points. Still, it was not a surprise. An elite was an elite monster, even though the monster had only attacked Zhang Yang roughly around 10 times, with both {Shadow Arrow} and {Death Wave}, the monster was able to deal a total of 400,000 HP, which was 40% of Zhang Yang's HP!

To be safe, Zhang Yang did not proceed to kite the second monster. Instead, he sat down and bit down a [Chicken Burger] to

restore his HP back to 100% before engaging again.

One by one, Zhang Yang killed all of the monsters on the second floor. Sadly, he had taken more than half an hour to do so. After finishing up the boring floor, Zhang Yang made his way up the staircase. Before he could reach the third floor, he came across a large monster that was standing guard at the entrance.

[Warfront Spectre Wizard Captain] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 10,490

Magic Attack: 43,569 – 63,569

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% Magic Shadow damage to a target. Range: 30 meters. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Death Wave]: Blasts a deadly wave that is meant to corrupt the living and mend the dead. Deals 80,000 Shadow damage to all non-Spectre based target and heals all Spectres type targets for 40,000 HP.

[Spectre Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate would not be affected by skills.

A mini-boss?

Even though it was merely a Mythical tier boss, it would be a worthwhile fight. Why reject something when it's given to you for free?

After restoring all his HP, Zhang Yang took charge, followed by the Phoenix and Felice behind. Even though the boss may have the annoying HP recovery skill, it was still limited by the maximum HP. So, the boss might have a maximum HP of 8,500,000 HP, which means, that every 30 seconds, it could heal 85,000 HP. That's only 3,000 HP per second. Zhang Yang's DPS was far

stronger than that puny number.

"Hmph. Humans. Your days on this land are numbered!" said the boss as Zhang Yang approached him. With a bold expression, he lifted his staff and blasted Zhang Yang with {Shadow Arrow}.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang glided through the floor and attacked the boss. Once Zhang Yang had landed his attack, both the Phoenix and Felice started their attack. Both of the Battle Companion and the Battle Mount had reached Level 160. Their combined DPS had reached as high as 50,000, which was almost as high as Zhang Yang's DPS. The Phoenix will continue to upgrade its tier, turning into a Holy tier battle mount after Level 170. Sadly, if Felice's seal is not broken by then, perhaps both her Level and tier would not increase any further.

Technically, Zhang Yang would only need 40 seconds to kill the boss. On the other hand, the boss would only need half of that time to kill Zhang Yang. With brute force alone, Zhang Yang will die. Hence, Zhang Yang had to use a variety of skills to survive the battle and kill the boss. With {Shield Wall} lasting for 10 seconds, and the use of {Shadow of the Void} to allow Felice to take charge of the aggro control, he could easily outplay the boss' DPS. It was easy enough for Felice to tank the boss in her {Spectral Tiger Form} since she would have 610,000 HP.

The boss' recovery skill was nothing much to be concerned about, for it only heals 85,000 HP once. At most, each healing instance could blot out one instance of attack. Hence, in just 40 seconds, the boss died and rewarded Zhang Yang with a pile of random items.

Zhang Yang picked up all the items and found some rather valuable loot. There was one Mythical tier equipment, three Violet-Platinum tier equipment, and the rest was considered to be junk.



[Blouse of the Shadow Death] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +2371

Intelligence: +1096

Spirit: +484

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,190.

Equip: Increases your damage and healing rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 160

Shadow Death Set Equipment (1/5): {Hat of the Shadow Death}, Blouse of the Shadow Death, {Glove of the Shadow Death}, {Boots of the Shadow Death}, {Tights of the Shadow Death}.

Three Equipment Set Effect: Increases magic damage and healing rate by 20%

Five Equipment Set Effect: Upon receiving an attack, there will be a 1% chance to send yourself into the Nether Realm for 3 seconds. You cannot be targeted by both enemies and allies alike.

Set equipment! Not bad!

What a rare encounter, considering that fact that it had been a while since Zhang Yang last saw a set equipment. Though the Three Equipment Set Effect could add 20% damage, it was not enough to compensate for the difference of tiers between higher tiers. Still, it was valuable to other players who could never get their hands on Ethereal tier!

Perhaps, there was a chance that each of the towers in the vicinity would have a mini boss inside. If Zhang Yang is to clear all the towers, he could farm all the required set equipment and sell them as a complete set in town for several hundreds of thousands gold coins.

Zhang Yang took out two [Chicken Burger]. As his HP was too long, eating just one [Chicken Burger] could only heal him by 500,000 HP. It was not enough.

As mentioned before, Battle Companions were like players. They could use [Bandages] and consume items to restore their HP. For Felice, one [Chicken Burger] was more than enough to restore all her HP. As for battle mounts, their HP would automatically regenerate once they leave the combat mode. Their HP regeneration rate was so strong that they could completely heal themselves back to full health in only 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang proceeded on to the third floor and the monsters had changed again. From skeletal soldiers, to Spectre Wizards, the third floor monsters were all rotten, zombie-like monkeys. A single jump of them could send them coming from as far as several meters away. It was completely unlike those Spectre monsters!

[Warfront Death Leaper] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 165

Defense: 6,640

Melee Attack: 37,947 – 57,947

Skills:

[Leap]: Leaps towards the target. Can leap over obstacles.

[Death Blade]: Deals 150% melee physical attack. Cannot be evaded. Cannot be blocked. Reduces the target's healing rate by 50%. Last for 10 seconds.

Compared to the magic type monsters back, Zhang Yang was completely unfazed by the strength of the monkeys. With his super-powered defense, he would normally take only 13,000 damage from a monster with 50,000 attack power. However, the skill [Leap] might prove to be a little troublesome. Hence, Zhang Yang played it safe and only drew in two at a time. Luckily, he had a lot of [Chicken Burger] courtesy of Han Ying Xue, allowing him

to survive many battles!

A typical Level 120 recovery snacks cost 2 gold coins each, whereas the Level 150 [Chicken Burger] were even more expensive. On the other hand, the [Chicken Burgers] can never be found elsewhere. It can only be crafted. The only method of obtaining it is to buy it from players or make it themselves by hunting chickens, pluck peppers, and buy flour from shops. It will be expensive.

Suffice to say, 5 gold coins each was a good deal. At most, it could cost the exact same price as a real-life chicken burger! However, in reality, how many burgers could you eat? Only Zhang Yang could spend a fortune and eat all those burgers in the game. Typical players would rather pair up with a Priest or a Sacred Knight to save up unnecessary spending.

That was one of the main reason why healers were weak in attack, yet were extremely welcome in an outdoor party.

There was a total of 30 Leapers on the third floor. As Zhang Yang kills two monsters at a time, he took close to 39 minutes to clear the entire floor. Similarly, there was a mini boss standing guard at the entrance of the fourth floor.

[Warfront Death Leaper Captain] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Leap]: Leaps towards the target. Can leap over obstacles and stuns the target on impact for 2 seconds.

[Death Blade]: Deals 200% melee physical attack. Cannot be evaded. Cannot be blocked. Reduces the target's healing rate by

50%. Lasts for 10 seconds

Despite having the same skills as the elite version of the Leapers. The boss' skill had an extra stunning effect and an extra 50% added damage. The difficulty had only been increased by a tiny notch.

## Chapter 726: More Set Equipment

---

After restoring his HP, Zhang Yang brought Felice and Phoenix up front to attack. He still insisted on attacking alone instead of calling his friends.

"Fresh FREEEESH FREEEESH MEAT!" cried the Leaper Captain as he leaped towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had earlier sent away Felice and Phoenix, hence, he was the only one who suffered from the stunning effect.

While the stun effect was still ongoing, Felice and the Phoenix attacked the boss without waiting. Felice's DPS was perhaps one tier higher than the Phoenix, hence, the aggro value generated on her was double that of the Phoenix. Hence, the boss had chosen Felice as his attack target. Sharp claws flung around, slicing and dicing Felice. Although she was wearing metal armor, it did not stop the claws from cutting through. Blood was spilt everywhere.

Zhang Yang recovered immediately and use {Charge} to instant close the gap between him and the boss.

Zhang Yang's DPS was twice as much as Felice's. With {Shield Oath} in effect, he could generate more aggro. After only 3 seconds of attacking, Zhang Yang had taken control over the boss and managed to save Felice.

With the godly skill {Block}, all physical attack type targets were in a shorter hand of the battle. Coupled with Zhang Yang steroid-pumped defense, the boss' normal attacks could only deal as much damage as 4,500 DPS.

On the other hand, while the skill {Death Blade} could only be activated once every 10 seconds, dealing as high as 100,000 per strike on average. The damage dealt on Zhang Yang was only as much as 53,000 damage which was around 5,300 DPS. Hence, his skill damage was higher than his normal attack.

Combined, the boss true DPS was at least 10,000. He would take at least 100 seconds to kill Zhang Yang. Compared to the previous wizard boss, this leaper boss was much weaker.

Zhang Yang did not need to even use {Shadow of the Void} to escape the battlefield, for he could tank safely until the boss was killed.

Similar to the previous boss, this leaper boss had dropped one Mythical, and three Violet-Platinum tier equipment. The Mythical tier item was a set equipment at that!

[Soul Reaper Arm Guard] (Mythical, Leather Armor)

Defense: +96

Vitality: +1259

Strength: +247

Dexterity: +580

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 2,510.

Equip: Increases damage and healing rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 170

Soul Reaper set equipment: {Soul Reaper Mask}, {Soul Reaper Chest Plate}, Soul Reaper Arm Guard, {Soul Reaper Pants}, {Soul Reaper Boots}.

Three Set Effect: Increases damage and healing rate by 20%.

Five Set Effect: On every successful attack, grants a chance to increase Dexterity by 10% for 10 seconds. Effect cannot stack.

What a loot! The previous set equipment was a Cloth armor, and the next was a Leather armor! Perhaps, the last floor, Zhang Yang could find a Heavy Armor equipment!

There were a total of 15 towers in the vicinity and if he is lucky, he could farm two pieces of all the classes' equipment sets. Zhang

Yang slobbered a little as he thought of the money that he could earn from gathering all the equipment!

Zhang Yang proceeded into the fourth floor and reached the end of the tower.

On the fourth floor, the monsters were different. That time, they were all knights riding on hell horses, clad in heavy armor. Their swords were slung behind their back and were scrapping the floor as they were as long as 3 meters.

[Warfront Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Death Strike]: Deals a powerful strike on a target. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Has a 50% chance to deal 200% damage.

[War Stomp]: Leads the horse and charge towards a target. Closes the gap between the target instantly and stuns the target for 1 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

Zhang Yang sighed with relief. Finally, the monster was not the kind that could cast any major debuffs on him. Sadly, as a compensation, the Death Knight were the kind that deals more damage than the rest of the monsters. Double damage was not something to be underestimated. If Zhang Yang is stupid enough to engage 10 Death Knights at once, he could be in deep trouble. If 10 of them activate their skills, 5 of them would have the chance to deal double damage. Even with Zhang Yang's steroid-pumped defense, he would take 250,000 damage all at once. That's 25% of his total HP.

It's too powerful to even be normal.

Alone, it would be impossible. Perhaps, if someone like God's Left Hand came up, paired with a healer behind, he would have the potential to survive. Sadly, even if he survives, he might not be able to defeat the monsters. Surviving and defeating were two whole different things. To put it bluntly, God's Left Hand could not possibly produce damage that is as high as Zhang Yang. Even at his best, he would be much weaker than Zhang Yang.

With Felice and Phoenix supporting him, it looks like it would be a while before someone else could even match with Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang started the battle with {Spear of Obliteration} and fought one monster to gauge its strength.

The Death Knight took the hit and charged towards Zhang Yang, stunning him for 1 seconds.

SHRING!

With lightning speed, the long blade behind his back was swung downward, cleaving Zhang Yang's neck, dealing 53,000 damage. That was the {Death Strike,} and it had managed to land a double damage!

Pfft! What luck...

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. After recovering from the stun, Zhang Yang laid down a barrage of attacks and took down the Death Knight in only half a minute. Similar to the previous monsters downstairs, the Death Knight had a handful of [Frost Inscribed Cloths].

Zhang Yang took a break to restore his HP after fighting three Death Knights. Zhang Yang was dissatisfied with the killing speed. If only Felice could obtain a healer form after the next seal is broken...Zhang Yang was not greedy. He would not ask something like Han Ying Xue's healing capability. In fact, if Felice could heal like any other common healers, Zhang Yang could then be a perpetual killing machine that does not need to reload nor refuel!



But, right now, Zhang Yang would have to play nice with the elite tiers.

While Zhang Yang was complaining he was too slow, the rest of the player could never reach his level of efficiency. In fact, the level of difficulty was so high that normal players would have to assemble a full team of DPS, tanks, and healers to engage the monster. Zhang Yang alone could kill three Death Knights before having to rest!

Fortunately, the number of Death Knights on the floor was not too much. In fact, Zhang Yang had taken close to 30 minutes to clear the entire floor. At the end of the floor, there was a mini-boss as well. Like the others, the floor boss was a captain of the monster. However, unlike the other floors, the boss was not guarding any entrances. He was sitting down behind a desk, writing on some sort of parchment.

If the annoying Wei Yan Er was there, she could have asked why and how could a Death Knight ride a horse inside a tower, and why would there be a captain writing something down? Zhang Yang could have answered with a simple reply. Shut your mouth and kill the boss. That's all there is to it!

[Warfront Death Knight Captain] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 8,750,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Death Strike]: Deals a powerful strike on a target. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Has a 40% chance to deal 200% damage, and a 10% chance to deal 300% damage.

[War Stomp]: Leads the horse and charges towards a target.

Closes the gap between the target instantly and stuns the target for 1 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

Although the boss' {Death Strike} was slightly upgraded, its normal attack was all too similar to that of the elite monsters. Even though the skill had a 10% chance to deal triple damage, it was only 10%! Perhaps the boss was fated to be a mediocre character in this map. At least, he had close to 9,000,000 HP, which suits a boss well.

Naturally, faced with a physical attack target, Zhang Yang had not need to hesitate to attack. Even though the boss had dealt triple damage attack several times, 100,000 damage was easily "dodge-able" with {Shield Wall}. With a quick {Shadow of the Void}, Zhang Yang had Felice replace him as the tank and killed the boss easily.

As expected, the boss dropped a set equipment that was of the Heavy Armor type.

[Death Conqueror Chest Plate] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +170

Vitality: +2519

Intelligence: +1160

Spirit: +514

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 2,320

Equip: Increases damage and healing rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 170

Death Conqueror Set Equipment: {Death Conqueror Helmet}, Death Conqueror Chest Plate, {Death Conqueror Armlet}, {Death Conqueror Greaves}.

Three Set Effect: Increases damage and healing rate by 20%.

Five Set Effect: After every successful casting, restore 10% MP of the spell's MP cost.

The chest plate was meant for a Sacred Knight. Perhaps, there should be one for a physical attack type like Zhang Yang. However, since the boss had only dropped one Mythical tier equipment, there were no more left to be found in the tower. However, there was still hope, perhaps he could find one that is suitable for him in the other tower.

Once the boss was killed, the parchment that he was writing on glowed. It was the system notifying the player, that the item as interactable.

'Ding! You have acquired a [Command Order]. Sadly, due to your rusty Spectre Language mastery, you cannot decipher any of the words written on the parchment. You should collect more [Command Orders] and report back to Gulaj. The Gnome has been in contact with the Spectre, since he had been doing business with them!'

Zhang Yang received the system notification when he picked up the parchment. As such, to finish the quest, Zhang Yang would have to go through all 15 towers, and 15 final floor bosses in order to collect all [Command Order]. It might be bothersome, but it was something Zhang Yang did not mind doing, since he could obtain a massive amount of experience points and equipment! On the other hand, it was not bothersome at all!

Zhang Yang went down to the ground floor and exited the first tower. He then headed to the second tower closest to him, and killed his way in.

The tower was compromised of basically the same kind of monster. The ground floor would have normal tiers, the second floor would be magic types, and the third floor would be the Leapers, and the fourth floor had the Death Knights. In summary, Zhang Yang would take close to 2 hours or more to clear one tower.

15 towers would take him 30 hours in total. Convert that to real time, and it would be a span of 8 hours.

Zhang Yang killed his way through all the tower and by the time he was done with the 11th tower, he stopped for a while and logged out to go back home. In his inventory, there was a Cloth Armor set equipment, Leather Armor set equipment, Heavy Armor set equipment, which was divided into three more types. Overall, the separated equipment was too cluttered in his inventory. It was messy. Zhang Yang had four defensive equipment and had two healing types, and two DPS types. There were even some that were the same kind, making it extremely difficult to farm a complete set by the time he was done with all the towers.

# Chapter 727: The Proof is Here

---

Liu Xin Mei was flustered. Her eyes were glued to the computer screen yet her attention was elsewhere.

She had been Zhang Yang's secretary for more than a month now, yet she failed to seduce the man himself. She failed to capture the moment when Zhang Yang tried to take advantage of her. After so long of letting herself go, Zhang Yang had never once even tried to make a move on her. As such, she was beginning to think that the man might be a eunuch! How else could she explain it when Zhang Yang was not even remotely interested in touching six super-hot, super sexy, super model secretaries! Could there be such a modest man in this century?!

It would not be true. Perhaps, was he trying to over compensate himself for not being able to pitch a tent, by hiring six hot boodilicious babes to follow him? What was going on!?

Liu Xin Mei sighed. She was not concerned about Zhang Yang's well-being but rather her own mission. She could not get what she wanted. Young Master Hua had already given her a deadline, which was half a month. However, Liu Xin Mei had been "working" for Zhang Yang for more than a month! She had been in contact with Zhong Xiu Hua a few days back and the man had already expressed his displeasure with her work. If she stalls her mission any longer, she might be replaced by someone else who could get a man to work up a sweat!

Liu Xin Mei finally averted her gaze from the computer screen. Frustrated at her own failure. It was rather dull, Zhong Xiu Hua's plan, that is. However, blackmailing was supposed to be direct and simple. Convolutated plans will only be messy and might not be as effective. The oldest method of blackmailing was always the best at doing their job. It's because it was the best at it, hence, that was why many had ended up using them. It does not matter what Zhong Xiu Hua wants with it, as long as she gets her hands on it.

It was a recording, a piece of evidence that Liu Xin Mei could use against Zhang Yang. A scene where Zhang Yang is trying to or is actually doing a girl other than his girl. Zhong Xiu Hua would then release the recording the day Eternal Flame finally defeats Lone Desert Smoke. One was to obtain all the fortunes of Lone Desert Smoke, and the second was to obtain Sun Xin Yu's heart. He would be the one that wins it all.

Liu Xin Mei pushed her chair back and scooted over to peek at Zhang Yang's office. She grinned. She had found a way around the mission. It would be to record Zhang Yang cheating on someone. It does not need to be specifically her. Hence, she had no need to sacrifice her own chastity in order to do so!

Over the past month, she had made full use of her own overtime duration. When Zhang Yang leaves the office, she would stay back with the excuse of work and planted hidden cameras all around Zhang Yang office. The cameras were in place so well that she could capture every angle from above. She had even invested in the best miniature cameras. The camera can capture video in UMHDR mode. The recordings would be so clear that you could practically zoom in to check the person's nostrils hair!

Yesterday, she had even placed a bottle of red wine in his office wine cabinet that was laced with drugs. Not typical drugs, but a high concentration aphrodisiac! The concoction she had picked was better than the rest. It does not induce a sudden unexplainable rush of horny-ness. Instead, it builds up over time and will push the individual into a beast with a raging sex drive!

The dosage she had laced the wine with was enough to make an impotent man poke his pole to the heavens. Liu Xin Mei was sure that Zhang Yang would not be able to sit still after drinking a single cup! Especially, when six bootylicious babes were always trying their best to have Zhang Yang take a peek at their overly exposed meat!

Liu Xin Mei had even prayed that the role would not be her, since

the dosage she had mixed into the wine was so strong that Zhang Yang would be able to ram a sow till its pregnant! If she is the one getting humped, she might not be able to walk for several days! Heck, she might even take up the bed for the entire week!

That sort of treatment should only befall to those sly minxes!

Liu Xin Mei grinned. They say that a woman's jealousy could start a world war. Especially if the reason was another woman being better than her! She was, naturally, referring to Cheng Xue Yao. Cheng Xue Yao had indirectly become the office's goddess. Her presence alone was enough to make all men's eyes glued to her. She would receive a crap ton of love letters to make a book! The flowers she received on her desk every morning was enough for her to open a flower shop!

Hence, the sense of jealousy that had built up over the month had Liu Xin Mei wishing that Cheng Xue Yao would be the one getting f\*cked silly.

...

"Beep!"

The fax machine came alive and started to print out several documents. Zhang Yang was still in his office, packing his stuff and was ready to leave when he noticed the documents. He picked them up and glance at them. Immediately, he smiled.

The documents were from Zhang Yang's private investigator. The reports were all about the backgrounds of Cheng Xue Yao and Liu Xin Mei. After a thorough investigation, Liu Xin Mei's background was extremely plain. She had been through junior school, all the way to university and graduated with flying colors. All work posts she had been in was too plain to even noticed. In short, all she had was her looks and her brains.

On the other hand, Cheng Xue Yao's background was extremely interesting. Her father was Jing State's police officer while her

mother was working in Liu Industry's as an accountant. It was the same company that that bastard Liu Wei owned. Four years ago, Liu Wei was charged with rape. However, the victim was unable to hire a private lawyer hence, she had resorted to the public prosecutor instead. The case was handled by Cheng Xue Yao's father personally. Mr. Cheng was a man of justice. Even though Mr. Cheng was known to the Liu family and many other higher officers, he had placed impartial judgment on Liu Wei and investigated the case thoroughly. Eventually, he had succeeded in uncovering many of Liu Wei's hidden crimes and managed to collect a whole load of evidence to use against him. At the same time, Mrs. Cheng, Cheng Xue Yao mother's had audited the accounts Liu Wei's company and found many mistakes in the accounting. She too, had collected evidence that could be used to charge Liu Wei.

However, the Liu Industry was Jing State's powerhouse. They were not someone like the Chengs who would topple over easily. Facing with such a disadvantage, Mr. Cheng had resorted to contacting his superior officer. During then, the Deputy Major of Jing State was Luo Xi Yuan.

Sadly, unknown to Mr. Cheng, Luo Xi Yuan was already in Liu Wei's payroll. He was already convoluting with the Liu family since the beginning. On the surface, he had convinced Mr. Cheng that they will bring down the Liu family with the hammer of justice. However, under the table, he had already contacted the Liu family about the evidence. Eventually, when both Mr. and Mrs. Cheng had submitted all the evidence to Luo Xi Yuan, they were both involved in a fatal "accident" on their way back home.

When the incident occurred, Cheng Xue Yao was still studying overseas. When she returned to the mainland, she disappeared without a trace. The private investigator that Zhang Yang hired had deduced that Mr. and Mrs. Cheng had contingency plans. They wanted their daughter to be kept out of reach from the poisonous



fangs of the Liu family. He also guessed that they had kept the original evidence somewhere safe. Hence, he had tried to search for Cheng Xue Yao himself, but failed to do so. He added that Cheng Xue Yao and he had made contact before Zhang Yang had requested the investigation. He was genuinely surprised when Zhang Yang sent her photo!

Zhang Yang read the report thoroughly and made his own conclusion. Perhaps Cheng Xue Yao had managed to trace the investigate backward and found Zhang Yang himself. As a result, she had thought to investigate the person holding Zhang Yang's lease and have herself to "infiltrate" behind the enemy's line. That was probably the reason why she had turned up to become Zhang Yang's secretary.

They say, that the best hiding spot was where your enemy would never expect it! Who would have thought they the person they seek was merely disguised in plain sight!

"Hoho. Now I understand. It looks like she has a grudge against the Liu family. No wonder she is always trying to get on my nerves and ask me about Liu Wei! She might reveal her true self to me if I could prove that my vengeance with Liu Wei runs deep as well! Maybe, she could join forces with me to fight Liu Wei...Could it be...that she has the evidence to all of Liu family's crime?"

Zhang Yang widened his eyes with delight. The Liu family had barricaded themselves well by being the powerhouse of Jing State. To dig out the past without consequences would be hard without Liu Wei finding out. As such, although both of Cheng Xue Yao's parents had succeeded, it had been at the cost of their own lives.

"It's time for you to die." Zhang Yang grinned.

"Kok kok kok!"

Someone was knocking on the door and after two seconds, the door was opened gently. Cheng Xue Yao walked in slowly with elegance and the utmost lustful stature. She smiled and addressed

Zhang Yang. "Mr. Zhang Yang. I'm moving to a new place today. I would like to invite you to my house-warming party!"

Zhang Yang clenched his fist tightly to resist her charm. That woman was so elusive yet alluring! No wonder she could become someone of importance. If Liu Wei finds her, she might only end up being his plaything!

If Zhang Yang had not received the investigation report, he might have even considered planning his life with her in the equation. This precious creature's magnetism was just too strong! Even Zhang Yang himself could not be certain that he would not do something to her!

However, now that he had the new-found knowledge about Cheng Xue Yao, he felt some sort of connection with her. A different kind. He could even have her working side by side together to topple the Liu family! However, in order to do so, he must get his hands on the evidence that she had, hence, he must play well with her.

Zhang Yang smiled back. "Sure thing! I must say, this is a little too last minute. I have no time to even get you a present!"

"I have no need of such things. It would be the best present if Mr. Zhang could be there!" said Cheng Xue Yao happily.

Zhang Yang snapped his fingers and recalled something. He walked to the wine cabinet and took out a bottle of wine. "I cannot have you leave empty-handed. Perhaps this bottle of wine should suffice?"

"1982 Chateau Lafite Rothschild! I cannot possibly accept that! It costs more than my yearly salary!"

"Please. It's pocket change to me. Take it and let's go!"

The two left the office. Liu Xin Mei had left the office earlier than them. If she had not, she would be terribly upset seeing that Zhang Yang had taken away the bottle that she had "implanted" in his

office with every tool and gadget in his office! Even if Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao banged each other brains out to the roof, there will be no proof!

Cheng Xue Yao had her own car, so did Zhang Yang. With her taking the lead, she drove forward with Zhang Yang following closely behind. She drove around Zhou Su City and reached to her own place within a few minutes.

Her place was not of the ordinary. It was a hotel styled apartment. She lived on the 24th floor. Both of them took the lift quietly and arrive at her doorsteps. Her apartment was not too big, yet it was furnished grandly. The best thing about her apartment which Zhang Yang liked and hated the most was the scenery of the entire Zhou Su City.

Zhang Yang had not invited anyone else, hence, when Zhang Yang had asked, she merely gave vague answers. Cheng Xue Yao excused herself to the kitchen to pour the wine into proper cups.

From the corner of the kitchen, Cheng Xue Yao peeked into the living room, watching on Zhang Yang as he watched the scenery with a complicated expression on his face. At that moment, without Zhang Yang noticing, Cheng Xue Yao took out a pack of white power and poured it into one of the wine cups.

"You may be secretive Mr. Zhang, but this Truth Serum will have you reveal everything you have! Hmph! You cannot hide everything there Mr. Zhang. Hm...hm...hm..." Cheng Xue Yao poured the wine and mixed it thoroughly. "Drinking this would not cause any harm, but you will feel intense headache for a few days. That's for being so secretive with me!"

Poor Zhang Yang had no idea what was coming at him. The same cup of wine was laced with extreme aphrodisiac and now Cheng Xue Yao had even added in the Truth Serum! It was unclear whether the two chemicals would react with each other to produce something that could make Zhang Yang a complete idiot or the

embodiment of lust itself!

Cheng Xue Yao herself was oblivious to the fact that Liu Xin Mei had purposely added a concentrated dosage to make Zhang Yang as powerful as a bull, since she suspected that Zhang Yang had a problem with his junior!

With the two glasses of wine in her hand, she waltzed gracefully to the window and offered Zhang Yang the one that was laced with the Truth Serum. She then cheered and said, "To your health Mr. Zhang."

"To your happiness. Miss Cheng."

Surely enough, something big was going to happen that night. Real big.

# Chapter 728: Everything Out

---

Cheng Xue Yao took the chance to toast Zhang Yang and both of them gulped down the entire content of the cup in a single gulp. If any bartender sees the two gulped down the exquisite wine like cheap booze, he would have flipped out and taken the bottle of wine for himself.

"Mr. Zhang...Can I ask you a question?" asked Cheng Xue Yao with a grin. The alcohol had started to work up all the way to her cheeks. In fact, both Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao were dyed in red.

"Ask away!" said Zhang Yang. He was beginning to feel the effect of the wine in him and felt wavey and tipsy. It got so hard to concentrate on anything at all, that any word that came out of his own mouth was forgotten immediately.

"What is your name?"

"hick My name? Hehe. Zhang...wait for it...Yang! Zhang Yang."

"Who are your parents?"

"My parents? Lets...see...they are nobody. Their names are Zhang Xian Yu, and Fang Li!"

"Who do you love most?"

"Ho ho...I would have to say...The witchy snow, and the ice cube!"

Two of them? What a pervert! Cheng Xue Yao clicked her tongue with disgust. Still, she was happy enough to know that the drug was working. Zhang Yang will then reveal any secret that he had inside and will not even remember what happened in between it! She had used it once when she had met with the private investigator Zhang Yang had hired. The poor man had drunk a cup of coffee laced with the Truth Serum and told everything about his client!

"What grudge do you have with Liu Wei!? Are you playing? Are you just putting an act of hostility but are merely following his orders?"

"Liu Wei...? The son of a b\*tch? I want to collect any kind of evidence that can be used against that f\*cker! And I could do it by having Cheng Xue Yao handing me the evidence! After that, I will send him and his entire nest of vipers down the drains!"

Cheng Xue Yao was stunned. "How did you know that Cheng Xue Yao had any evidence?"

"Hehe. It's just a guess. I'm not sure either!"

Cheng Xue Yao frowned. She knew that Zhang Yang was not telling a lie, but the answer he gave had only made her suspicions of Zhang Yang being not sure himself. She continued to ask more question until she had finally dug out the truth. Zhang Yang was not a puppet of Liu Wei! He in fact, bore a deep grudge with the man and wished nothing but destruction upon him!

She asked more specific questions about the names of Liu Wei's associate but gained no sort of information about them. She had even asked more and more questions until she was sure that Zhang Yang and Liu Wei was like water and oil. However, there was a part which she could never understood properly. She asked about details of Liu Wei and how he had wronged Zhang Yang. She understood the part where a certain name named Lin Yu was forcefully taken away from her and had his guild disbanded. However, the odd question was about the time and place. He said he had once played 'God's Miracle' in his past life. He had even said something about Liu Wei and him dying together by jumping off a building!

That fact was rather intriguing but not of importance. Cheng Xue Yao only wanted to know that Liu Wei was his enemy and not an ally!

She continued to pour more of the expensive liquid into their

cups and made Zhang Yang drink the entire bottle to reduce the suspicious. She sat down by his side and tried to sober up herself. Although she had only drunk one cup of wine, the alcohol in it was strong enough to intoxicate her to a certain degree. The effect of the Truth Serum will fade quickly. In fact, it would only last for roughly an hour after consumption. The headache and dizziness will soon come after.

She sat down, staring at the scenery of Zhou Su City, when she felt a heat wave rising from beneath her womb. It was unexplainable. Something was happening in her, which felt all too familiar. Her lady part was drenched! Both man and woman were the same. Don't let any member of the opposite gender tell you otherwise. When they have the sudden urge to do it, they will solve it with each other or alone nonetheless. She had only lived to bring down the Liu family and had even needed to keep herself off the grid. She had no time to spare for a love life. Hence, when the urge comes to her, she will either use a flexible cucumber, or solve it herself with her own fingers.

At that moment, she felt the same urge, but it was several times more intense! It was so strong that she would not mind having any man scratch the itch! When the indecent thought popped out in her mind, she felt an intense embarrassment. However, that had only enhanced the need in her! She had to do something to get rid of it!

"What is going on!?" Cheng Xue Yao had merely touched her expanding clit and felt a surge of pleasure that sent her back arching up!

At then, Zhang Yang woke up. It felt like a truck had rammed his head. The intense pain and the sensation of memory loss was not a pleasant wake-up call. However, there was a consolation prize for him. Lying down beside him was the girl who had invited him over to his house. She was moaning intensely with both her hands sneakily caressing her chest and hoohhaah. Her lips and cheek

were moist, covered with both drooling saliva and glistening sweat that seemed to drench her clothes.

He was not in control of his actions. It felt like his body was being steered by pure instinct alone and his consciousness was being pushed to the backseat of a car! However, after much effort, he managed to take control of his own actions. His thoughts came back and managed to talk some sense into him. The aphrodisiac is not a drug that will affect a person's psyche. It will only amplify a person's want for sex by 10 to 100 fold, depending on the person's will. Even if it was just a glass of wine, Cheng Xue Yao had taken enough dosage herself to make her incredibly horny! In fact, both of them were!

Zhang Yang steeled his mind and reasoned with himself to not just tackle the woman and devour her like how he devoured Yu Li!

However, just because he was able to control himself now, does not mean that he could keep the angelic side of him victorious. The effect of the drug had only just kicked in, after 30 minutes or 1 hour, the effect will reach its peak performance, turning any man into a crazy bull on steroids. Like a certain advertisement, the bulls with wings!

The two of them realized what they were careening into just then, and tried their best to be in control. As such, Zhang Yang started to engage in boring conversation to "break" the mood. However so, their eyes were constantly glued to the other's sensitive parts. As much they could deny it, they were so enthralled!

"Argh...It's it just me? Or is it getting kinda hot in here?" said Cheng Xue Yao as she wiped away her sweat and fanned herself with her hands. However, only one would know what was going on with oneself. She tried to leave, wanting to get away from her potential victim. She stood up but her legs failed her completely. With a gentle thud, she fell down on the carpet floor.



Zhang Yang instantly moved towards her and tried to lift her up. However, the moment when the two of them touched each other, an intense spark of heat burst out. The two of them glued their eyes together and kissed each other.

At first, it was merely a light touch of the lips. However, Cheng Xue Yao could no longer contain herself. She moans at the sudden warmth that attacked her lips and she craved for more. After one simple kiss, she planted her tongue in his mouth. Her constant moan of pleasure intoxicated Zhang Yang. His hands moved on their own and slithered underneath her blouse and played with her breasts. Lo and behold, she did not resist it. No. In fact, she welcomed Zhang Yang's rough hands. She had even guided his hands to her peaks and cupped her hands on his.

Cheng Xue Yao's assets were as good as Han Ying Xue. In fact, hers might be even better. The softness of them was so pleasurable that Zhang Yang could not remove his hands from Cheng Xue Yao's chest! Which one of his hands were busy with her chest, his other hand acted on its own as well. Swiftly, he unlatched her lower skirt and pulled down her thongs. With experience, Zhang Yang knew where to slide his hands in. His did not need to even look as he traced his hands from her hips down to her buttocks and slowly made his way to the frontal forest of pleasure that had been flooded for god knows how long! With a gentle, fluid motion, Zhang Yang slid one of his fingers into her cave.

"AHHHH~ I'M-I'M---I'M COMING!" Cheng Xue Yao moaned like a lioness and hugged Zhang Yang tightly.

"Woman. I need your help as well...Please...help me solve this..." said Zhang Yang as he removed Cheng Xue Yao's fair hands off his shoulders and have them greet with Zhang Yang Jr.

"Will it be enough with just my hands?" Cheng Xue Yao asked yet she acted on her own without even waiting for a response. The two of them stopped talking and started to allow their actions to do the talking.

Cheng Xue Yao wrapped her soft hands gently around the stiff rod and stroke it with the right amount of pressure.

Once....twice...trice...and Zhang Yang had unloaded his cream on Cheng Xue Yao's face. Unlike the witchy snow and the ice cube, Cheng Xue Yao did not even react in disgust. In fact, she licked the droplets off her hand with her tongue. The lustful expression on her face only amplified Zhang Yang power. Just as junior there was about to have his rest, Zhang Yang himself had sent a powerful wave to it and make it stand strong again!

As the moon hung high in the night sky, the two of them were entwined together in opposite directions. Zhang Yang's head was buried in between Cheng Xue Yao's thighs, while Cheng Xue Yao was busy with Zhang Yang's groin. After Zhang Yang had lost count the times Cheng Xue Yao swallowed his load, the atmosphere in her house finally calmed down. The two of them took turns to wash themselves and dress up. It was extremely awkwardly for the two of them afterwards.

It was, after all, a sudden, mysterious call for lust. Although Zhang Yang had not pounded the punnani pumps, what they did was, at an extremely grey area which was almost touching the black part.

By the end of route 69, both of them had concluded that something in the wine had made them that way. However, it would not matter if they find out what was it. What matters most then would be how they are going to solve that awkward tension.

"I'm guessing that you have something with you. Some sort of evidence that can be used to bring down Liu Wei and his nest of vipers?" Zhang Yang decided to drop the act and started to engage with the serious topic.

Cheng Xue Yao had understood that Zhang Yang was not Liu Wei's accomplice, hence, there was no reason to continue her act. She nodded. "You must have investigated who I am? No? You've

guessed right. A few years ago, when both my parents had submitted the evidence, they kept the original copy somewhere safe. When I came back from my overseas studies, I was handed a will. However, the will that the lawyers gave me was strange. Eventually, I found the real will. Before my parents had passed away, they left me a message, revealing what they did."

"I understand that. However, I need you to listen to me now. Please give me the evidence, so that I can be the one dropping the hammer of justice."

"I understand. I'm not someone who can simply lift the hammer of justice without any consequences. Very well. I shall hand over the evidence to you. It's currently kept safe in the bank's vault. I'll deliver them to you tomorrow."

Now that the two of them had confirmed each other's identities and affiliation, they had no need to beat around the bush any longer. However, after they ended their serious conversation, the awkwardness in the air returned.

"...Erhm...It's getting late now. I better get back home," said Zhang Yang as he grew uneasy.

"Ah. Yes. There's the door."

After taking off, Cheng Xue Yao's calm composure broke down. She sat at the sofa where they had just sucked each other off and hugged herself, crying. "What a bastard! He almost had me! How could he just leave me hanging like this! Pervert! Fool! Useless scum! He has two women at home and so many secretaries at work! Why would he pick me for!"

With rage, she stomped on the floor with all her might but ended up hurting herself.

"Just you wait. After we have dealt with the Liu family, I shall have your head as well!"

...

When Zhang Yang came back home, it was already 2 past midnight. Even though he had called them to inform about his lateness, his time of arrival was too late that both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were both suspicious of him. Furthermore, there was the lingering scent of Cheng Xue Yao's womanly scent latching on his entire body. Hence, without any effort to hide it, Zhang Yang told the truth of what had happened to him.

Luckily, the two women were rather understanding. He was drugged and had no power to resist the unknown urge.

After being scolded by the two babes, they punished him in bed and gave him a warning to leave Cheng Xue Yao alone. Never again should he ever get too close to that woman.

Naturally, he knew that Cheng Xue Yao had no reason to drug him. That leaves the other five secretaries as possible suspects. But then again, when all five of them were suspicious, four of the senior secretaries were loyal to him, since they were there even when old man Wei was still alive and kicking. That shortens the number down to one. Liu Xin Min. Even though her background was clean, it could be manufactured easily with the right people. As such, the arrowhead now points to Zhong Xiu Hua alone. With his connection and circle of powerful people, that sort of task would be nothing but a walk in the park. He had the objective and the motive to do so. When a man would do something as extreme as to break the law just to get the love of his life, it would be unacceptable. Sun Xin Yu would never forgive such a man!

Right then, without proof, there was nothing that he could do. But then again, Zhang Yang was not an officer of the law, suspicions alone was more than enough to make a person to act. He shall let someone check his office at work for anything suspicious and have Liu Xin Min be kidnapped somewhere until he finds out the real truth about her. If nothing turns up, he would let her go. If something is found, he would then try to use her against Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang took off his clothe and laid down on his bed. He took the gaming helmet, put it on, and sleep. The sucky sucky session with Cheng Xue Yao had placed a toll on him, that he was sore all over. Most importantly, the massive headache was still assaulting him!

# Chapter 729: Destruction of the Mithril Refinery

---

After logging into the game, Zhang Yang continued to raid the four remaining towers. After spending close to 10 hours or so, Zhang Yang cleared all the tower and headed back to White Jade Castle to report to Gulaj.

Although the quest had taken close to 30 hours, the rewards that he reaped were rather worth their while. Equipment alone was already worth a crap ton of coins. There were 3 complete sets of Cloth Armor type, 2 complete sets of Leather armor type, and 1 complete set of a Heavy Armor type. There were still 15 random equipment that could make up 3 sets which will end up leaving 6 pieces of equipment to spare.

Even though they were only Mythical tier, having a set equipment was still worth a lot of gold coins, even though they were not the strongest equipment around these days. It would be worth a lot more to those set equipment hoarders! If the equipment is the right one, the price of it could reach as high as a few hundreds of thousands.

Zhang Yang waltzed his way casually, instead of rushing his way towards the Explorer's Hall to submit his quest to Gulaj.

"I see...Ho...Very interesting indeed!" said Gulaj as he examined the reports from Zhang Yang. After he had read all the reports that Zhang Yang had given him, Gulaj crossed his arms and calmly addressed the matter to Zhang Yang. "It would seem that the Spectres have obtained an ancient magic created by the God of Darkness himself. It has something to do with producing a secret weapon called the Darkness Falls.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Spectre's Secret. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points, 100 Military Points!'

Zhang Yang asked, "Gulaj, could you give a little more information about Darkness Fall?"

The greenish little Goblin raised his head and turned around. "It is common knowledge that all Spectre are afraid of the light. The fire in the sky. Or as they called it, the Right Eye of the Benevolent God. As all Spectre are an atrocity to the gods, in daylight, their powers would plummet. In fact, they could only cough out 60% to 80% of their true strength."

Gulaj took a chair, sat on it and lit up a smoking pipe before continuing. "Understanding their weakness is part of my job. And so are their strengths. When the sun sets and the moon rises, the Spectre can fight at their full power. Darkness Fall is their ultimate weapon for a good reason. It is not something that will directly destroy the world. No it's far worse than that. It a magic barrier that will encase the all land, preventing the sun from casting its rays onto the earth. The land will lose all its warmth. Darkness Fall, is what the name literally meant. Darkness shall befall the earth for all eternity, stripping away all warmth and light. The earth shall decay and the Spectre shall prosper with all their might."

Gulaj sucked in a puff of smoke and finished the pipe in a single suck. "There's something else. Darkness Fall has the ability to turn soulless corpse as their own. Use your bucket head and think carefully about what I just said. If Darkness Fall gets activated, all who have perished in the world will rise. Think of all the past heroes and legendary warrior rising up, only joining the Spectres! Could you imagine Ares the God of War raising his sword against all of life?"

Clearly, Darkness Fall was not some menial quest.

"Hm. I understand the depths of the situation. Tell me, has Darkness Fall been successfully built?"

"Sigh...You're the same as those powerful warriors that are all

muscle and no brain! If the Spectres have managed to build the Darkness Fall, would I be here still talking to you?" said Gulaj with an annoyed expression.

"A simple no would suffice," said Zhang Yang with a straight face. "So, it is not completed yet. Either that or it is not activated just yet. If I could destroy that thing. I would still save the land."

"Hahaha! Destroy it? Boy, are you far too ambitious for your age. Still, I applaud your bravery and kindness. If you want to destroy it, you best make haste now. I have scouted the Spectres and they are doing some shady activities lately. I suspect that the construction of Darkness Fall has almost reached its completion stage. That is probably the main reason behind the recent Spectre attacks."

Gulaj hops off the chair and crossed his arms again. "Warrior. You have my trust. I hereby bestow on you a crucial mission for the sake of all beings that lives and breathes. Head over to Ryu Ayer Castle and strike them at their source. Hidden behind the stone walls is a large Mithril Refinery. It takes a large quantity of Mithril to construct Darkness Fall. If you could disrupt their resource production, they could never even finish the construction! Imagine having a massive sailing ship without its deck!"

'Ding! Gulaj has a quest for you: Destroy the Mithril Refinery. Will you accept it?'

[Destroy the Mithril Refinery] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Gulaj has entrusted the task of destroying the refinery in Ryu Ayer Castle to place a halt to the production of Mithril which was crucial to the construction of Darkness Fall. Warrior, Ryu Ayer Castle is heavily fortified by Spectre. To protect the refinery the Spectre had increased defense in and out of the castle. You cannot do this alone.

Progress: Destroy the Mithril Refinery



Participant Limit: 10

Reward: Experience Points +10,000,000 Military Points: +500

'Ding! You have received a quest item: Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – 3rd Gen. Prototype x 1!'

500 Military Points?! That much?! What more, the quest could be shared with 9 more players! However, those who had not yet reached Level 160 could not initiate the Spectre Invasion quest. Even if Zhang Yang is to recruit Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, they could only help out but not receive any quest rewards, even after completion.

No! This cannot be allowed. 500 Military Points was a large number that could not be ignored. 5 Military Points could hire one normal tier soldier. Elite tier soldiers would cost 100 Military points. 500 Military points could be exchanged for 100 normal tier soldiers or 5 elite tier soldiers! It's so precious that Zhang Yang could not ignore it!

Zhang Yang was stunned. He stopped his tracks and went into deep thought. Since the quest does not have a limited time, and the reward is already fixed to begin with, Zhang Yang decided to postpone the quest until his core members had reached Level 160. Until then, he will be doing side quests and earning menial amounts of Military Points.

Hundred Shot's Red Dragon and Fatty Han's Phoenix were godly grinding aides. However, their prowess can only be emphasized when there is a sea of monsters. Although they could still kill individual monsters at a faster rate than normal players, it was not much to be accounted more. After all, multi-target killing is their specialty.

The problem then, was most of the hunting grounds were occupied with many players. If Zhang Yang was to forcefully conquer a zone for himself, he would have to sortie his guild to do so. Even though Lone Desert Smoke was capable of such a feat, it

would not be worth the time and effort of doing so. What more, it would only be an act of self-sabotage.

In the end, it will always come down to the same problem in any MMORPG game. The more the players are, the lesser monsters there will be for everyone.

There was another way to gain levels fast. That is, to fight in dungeons, over and over again. However, at their average level then, a Level 140 dungeon's monsters would have Level 155 monsters as the highest. Players who have reached a higher level will only receive reduced monster experience points. However so, the rate will definitely be higher than chasing after monsters in an open-field.

If Zhang Yang is to take the First Clear Achievement of the Death Abyss Grouped Dungeon, he would not fight in the War Canyon, anymore. However, it was still an undecided choice. War Canyons do have their fun. Players could use their Transformation there to fight a large number of strong players. Even though China can never place their footing on the first place, they were always moving up and down at the second and third place. At the very least, they could try the normal mode.

As for grinding, there was no need to go for the Hardcore mode since the entry limit was once every seven days. It would be good to farm some strong equipment there. As for experience points, normal mode would suffice, since the monsters were easier than normal and secondly, they could repeat the dungeon as many times as they want.

As such, Han Ying Xue and everyone else formed a party and raided the normal mode of the Death Swamp dungeon to quickly reach Level 160. All the effort invested into grinding was just to reach Level 160 to qualify for the Spectre Invasion quest.

After sleeping soundly for one night, Zhang Yang came to the office the next day with a heavy heart. Cheng Xue Yao was not

present. She had only left him a message saying that she will leave to An Jing City to retrieve the evidence. It would take close to a week to travel back and forth.

Zhang Yang took the message and placed it aside for now. The bridge is closing in, and it was almost time for him to cross it to meet his foe. As much as Cheng Xue Yao's dignity, if something were to turn up wrongly, he will take her in as his women. As much as scoldings from the two lionesses at home, he will take it willingly and earnestly. At that moment, he was greatly torn. In one hand, he had a chance to have the exquisite woman, on the other hand, he already had two lionesses at home who loved him dearly. The conflict in him only made him guilty.

Again, he will cross that bridge when he gets to it. For now, he would need to solve some other stuff. Zhang Yang sent a professional to check the office. Lo and behold, they found a total of 27 hidden cameras. According to the professionals, those were extremely expensive, and top-quality cameras that spy agencies would use! When Zhang Yang knew about, an unknown rage boiled up in his stomach. It was extremely fortunate that he had been a good boy in the office and had never even touched them once! What could happen if he is caught during the act!?

As such, Zhang Yang called Fatty Han to the office and planned an abduction. After working hours, Zhang Yang had Fatty Han sabotage Liu Xin Min's car and abducted her after. They brought her to a hidden, soundproof room. Zhang Yang blindfolded her, muffled her hearings, and even used voice changing tools to change his own voice to hide his identity. The interrogation starts and ended rather quicker than expected.

The fear of the unknown is humanity greatest threat. Not knowing what that is going to happen will send a person into mental stress. Liu Xin Min was unable to see, hear, nor make any noise as the time slowly passed by. She was not someone trained to overcome the stress. Heck, if she is Charlie's Angel, she would have

escaped the room in a heartbeat. In fact, Zhang Yang did not need to do anything at all. All he did was left her there for one night and she had caved in immediately.

Liu Xin Min had revealed everything that she knew about her employer to Zhang Yang. After confirming about the true enemy, Zhang Yang removed the blindfold and revealed himself to her. Naturally, she was both angry and shocked. However, when Zhang Yang had released her restraints and allowed her to leave, the women refused to leave his side. She spouted something about Zhong Xiu Hua being a man that would never allow loose ends to roam free. Especially after being caught. As she is to go back home and act as if nothing has happened, she will be "taken care" of.

Zhang Yang remained unfazed and unmoved. However, Fatty Han always had a soft spot for a woman begging for help. As such, Liu Xin Min's sharp eyes had brought her to Fatty Han's legs and pleaded him instead. Failing to resist her charms, Fatty Han had agreed to lend a hand whilst posing like a hero to save the damsel in distress.

Zhang Yang was fine with it. He had no objection to whatever that Fatty Han does. On the other hand, with Sun Xin Yu on the line, Zhang Yang could never end the hostility towards Zhong Xiu Hua. Since the man had taken his first step, Zhang Yang shall do the same. If not, he will only be treated as a fool. It is all a game of chess, then. Like Chess, if someone has moved their Bishop to a position to kill his King, he must do something to block it. As such, he allowed Fatty Han, his "Knight" to distract the opponent by taking out the pawn. Although that would not do much damage to Zhong Xiu Hua, it does help divert his attention.

Fatty Han had arranged a hidden place to live in Zhou Su City and had Liu Xin Min to live there for some time. It was a good plan to have her at his side, since there was still valuable information that he could get out of her. The woman had been tangled with Zhong Xin Hua for so years, so there would definitely be something

that would be useful to him.

There was just one thing that bugged Zhang Yang, Zhong Xiu Hua was not Liu Wei. If Zhang Yang does manage to collect evidence to use against Zhong Xiu Hua, they could only solve this quietly. It was all the same for him as well. If Zhong Xiu Hua wants to strike Zhang Yang, he would have to do it covertly to avoid Sun Xin Yu. If the two great political families clashed, it would be something far worse than an all-out war in 'God's Miracle'.

As events reached to a certain point where Zhang Yang could not extract any more useful information from Liu Xin Min, Zhang Yang then placed his focus on the game to collect more Military Points, whilst waiting patiently for Cheng Xue Yao to return from An Jing City.

In a few days later, Zhang Yang was doing his work in his office when he received a video call. The man in the screen was slightly older than Zhang Yang had anticipated and was rather handsome. The man had a cold yet mature aura around him. When Zhang Yang picked up the call, the other side did not speak. He merely stared at Zhang Yang and hung up after a quiet scoff.

Without a doubt, the man was Zhong Xiu Hua!

The man knew something was odd when Liu Xin Min had not contacted him for a while and decided to reveal his face to Zhang Yang. It was a message. A message to tell Zhang Yang that he was unfazed and unscathed at what Zhang Yang had managed to do. The man was too self-centered and was ridiculously confident. That was what Zhang Yang saw in the man. With Sun Xin Yu as his ultimate Aegis, if the two of them were to have a war with each other, it would only be limited to the game. Zhang Yang smiled. He may not be a genius in politics and business, but he could at least handle three Zhong Xiu Huas at the same time in the game!

## Chapter 730: Skeletal Smith

---

One week later, Cheng Xue Yao returned to Zhou Su City. However, after delivering the documents to Zhang Yang, she disappeared immediately without giving Zhang Yang a chance to redeem himself. Zhang Yang only managed to catch a glimpse of her back as she left the building in a hurry. If there was something he could do, he would. But then again, he had already obtained the major piece that he required to complete his next task.

After that, he only passed the documents to Sun Xin Yu and let her work her magic on it.

Liu family had established themselves for a long time had amassed more than hundreds of millions of fortune. They had connected themselves to the network of officials in Jing State. It would not be easy to topple over the Liu family, especially since their fate was connected to the Jing State. It was not just the economy, but the magistrate itself, since corrupted politicians like Luo Xi Yuan will be brought down to their knees.

Hence, even with Sun Xin Yu's background, there was no way that such a feat could be completed within a few days. It would, in fact, required tremendous planning and execution which would consume more than two to three months! At most, the entire Liu family would be gone from the map in half a year's time. That, and a proper aftermath clean up. Sun Xin Yu had to be prepared for the worse or Jing State will plummet into a massive state of chaos.

Anything related to politics was not Zhang Yang's forte. Hence, he had Sun Xin Yu handle the mess and waited patiently.

When he was thinking about Liu Wei, naturally, the subject of Lin Yu came up as well. Zhang Yang foresaw that right then, she had probably just entered the game. Should he pursue the girl that he loved in his past life? He had two women that he truly loved dearly then. Again, there was a conflict stirring up in his mind. In

the end, Zhang Yang had steeled his decision not to interfere with her life. Since Lin Yu would not remember anything, he best leave her alone. Forget the past and forge a new future. Perhaps...it would be for the best for the two of them.

It was already the middle of November when Endless Starlight, the last member in the party reached Level 160. Zhang Yang gave everyone a good day off to prep themselves for the Spectre Invasion quest.

It has been three months since Zhang Yang had reached Level 160, and the system had launched the Spectre Invasion event. It was rather slow then, and Zhang Yang wanted to speed things up a notch. Similar to the case of Liu family. He kept on asking Sun Xin Yu about the progress of it and she would only reply with one same answer. "Patience."

Though it was rather annoying, Zhang Yang had no reason to doubt Sun Xin Yu. Zhang Yang had been waiting for years to burn Liu Wei down to ash, might as well add a few days to that timer.

The party then followed Zhang Yang across the Isaac Mountains and came across Ryu Ayer Castle. The true location was located towards the North West of the map. After several hours of flying in the sky, they had finally arrived at the Refinery. As mentioned by Gulaj, there were too many Spectres of all shapes and sizes coming in and out of the mine. There was a huge refinery station close to the mine with several hot machines working restlessly.

The mission was easy and straightforward. Zhang Yang would only need to plant the [Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – 3rd Gen. Prototype] and bomb the entire place down to smithereens. The problem was, after circling around the entire refinery, there was no indication as to where he should place it.

"Looks like the quest would not allow us to slack. I'm guessing that we should clear all the Spectres to proceed with the quest!"

Everyone descended down to the ground and split apart.

Everyone moved individually and killed their way slowly. No sooner after the weak ones were defeated, a large skeletal monster, wielding a large hammer rushed towards the party.

[Skeletal Smith] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Heat on Heat]: Deals 100% melee physical attack on a target. Inflicts [Heat on Heat] debuff dealing additional 100% attack on the next attack. Lasts for 10 seconds. Can be stacked.

Note: A master of the art of Smithing before they passed on and revived as a Spectre.

Zhang Yang stopped his tracks immediately when he noticed the monster's skill. As such, Endless Starlight was the first person to charge into the fight and became the punching bag for the Smithers. The poor idiot was being led to slaughter by Zhang Yang and he had not even realized it. He smiled proudly and said, "Boss, are you sick today? How am I able to tank all the monsters?

'-23,739!'

'-69,533!'

'-103,343!'

'-152,909!'

"WHAT!!!"

There were four monsters attacking Endless Starlight at the same time. The first attack was normal, but the three other attacks were so strong that Endless Starlight was greatly startled by it.

Tanking just one monster would not be hard. It would be long



before the tank would not be able to handle the stacked damage amplification. However, having four attacking at the same time would be suicidal. That was merely the first trigger of {Heat on Heat}, if the second trigger comes in, the damage will start with 200,000 as the lowest!

Not even Zhang Yang could handle such intense barrage, so how could Endless Starlight?

As such, Endless Starlight had lost 30% of his HP and finally figured out why would Zhang Yang had allowed him to take the first hit!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Hold up! I having a stomach ache! Hold on first without me!"

"WAAAA! Boss! Don't do this to me! I'll die!" cried Endless Starlight as he activated {Sacred Protection} to gain 10 seconds of invulnerability and dispel the debuffs on him. It was an act of desperation, since he would not know when the monster would use the skill again!

"Little Yang! How could be so cruel to little Starlight? Not even an animal would be that evil! Nishishishi," said Fatty Han.

It was merely a joke. Zhang Yang would never allow anyone in his party to die without reason. He then jumped to the front and attacked one of the monsters with {God of War Devastation} to draw the attention of one monster, and used {Provoke} to pull one more. He had removed two threats on Endless Starlight and eased his load.

Fight just one Smither would not be a problem since the skill cooldown and effects were the same. It would be impossible to stack the effect up. On the other hand, when two or more Smithers are there, it would be dangerous, since one of them would use the skill before or after the other. 10 seconds later, all four Smithers raised their hammer and struck Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight with {Heat on Heat}. Even if the effect was 0.1 second from

expiring, a new skill landing on it will ultimately stack the effect, refreshing the debuff back to 10 seconds.

Initially, Zhang Yang was not sure of the specifics of the skill. However, when two of the monster struck Zhang Yang, he had taken one hit after the other and received a total damage of over 60,000.

After another 10 seconds, when the monsters were about to strike Zhang Yang again, he threw out {Thunder Strike} first and delayed their movement speed and the timing of the skill strike. Although it was merely a split second, it was good enough to remove the debuff on him. When the new {Heat on Heat} landed on Zhang Yang, he had merely taken 200% damage, instead.

Endless Starlight did not have any active slow skill. However, roughly a month ago, he had managed to obtain the skillbook {Superior Devotion} which added a 50% movement speed debuff on top of the DoT aura effect. His skill was strengthened, allowing him to slow down enemies just by being close to them.

Now that both tanks had managed to solve the problem with {Heat on Heat} the Skeletal Smithers were nothing but monsters with HP to hack away. 5 million HP? It's nothing but soft tofu waiting to be crushed by Zhang Yang's party.

As they got accustomed to the skills, they started increasing the pace. From 4 monsters at a time, they were able to increase the numbers to 6. It was made possible due to the powerful DPS of the party. Even though they could not kite any more than 6, the progress was still faster than normal. Still, after one whole night, the party had only managed to clear less than 30% of the entire refinery. Everyone else logged out when dawn arrived. One hour after breakfast, they continued on with their progress.

Zhang Yang the other hand, was busy with his daily routine. He left the party to Endless Starlight and logged out to have his exercise and work at Silky Soft Holdings. Although he would be

missing out on a lot of experience, it was a number which he did not mind losing. He was far higher than anyone of them. By the time he logged back into the game, everyone else had already pushed a good distance from where he had stopped.

Eventually, Zhang Yang's party had taken two real-time days to finish clearing the entire refinery. The party would have never done something that like that, however, after they had listened to Zhang Yang's advice about the importance of Military Points, they had caved in and proceed to wipe the map of all Spectres. All their actions were for the later glory. The more Military Points they collect, the easier it would be to defeat Angus later on.

The best of all, was the fact that Angus would drop Celestial tier equipment!

With the Celestial tier equipment hanging out there like a piece of carrot for a donkey, the party had gain the inspiration and vigor to complete the quest. It was merely a grinding session that was extreme boring. That was all!

Alas, after fighting for long, the party had reached the center of the refinery. It was an empty tiled place with at least 40 meters of clean tiles laid out. As the party was killing their way on, they felt a tremendous shaking wave. A large skeletal monster came crawling out of the land. With a long blade resting on its back, the green-emerald flame flickered in its eye sockets as it stared at the party.

The massive skeletal monster was seven meters tall. It had the appearance of a human skeleton, yet it possessed a long bone tail! It seemed like the tail had grown with the man! On the other hand, there was another odd feature about the monster. It had a unicorn-like horn that was growing out of its forehead, glowing with a faint abyssal like darkness.

[Longador - The Dragon Race] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 180

HP: 1,800,000,000

Defense: 18,470

Melee Attack: 139,398 – 213,398

Skills:

[Tail Whip]: Strikes all targets within 40 meters. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Deals double damage to targets which are moving. Casting: 0.5 seconds.

[Death Blade]: Deals 150% melee physical attack to a target. Deals double damage to targets that are moving. Casting: 0.5 seconds.

[Sloth Aura]: Sends out a disturbing aura to 40 meters around the caster. Attaches a bomb to any targets every 2 seconds that will explode in 2 seconds, dealing 200,000 Fire damage to all targets within 10 meters. The bomb will diffuse immediately if the target moves constantly for 1 second.

Note: The Dragon race was a myth. No one in history had ever laid eye upon a real humanoid Dragon race and lived to tell the tale. The problem was that no one in history had ever claimed to impregnate a female dragon. Similarly, no female human has ever claimed to be impregnated by a male dragon.

# Chapter 731: The Dragon Race – Longador

---

Everyone including Zhang Yang himself, gasped at the array of skills that the boss had.

With the {Sloth Aura} in effect, players will be forced to move around every 4 seconds, or they will deal 200,000 AoE damage! Worse of all, if they are moving, they will receive double damage from both {Tail Whip} and {Death Blade}. The situation was so bad that the party was caught between getting killed by sharks in the ocean, or tigers on land.

Fortunately, the {Sloth Aura} bomb effect will only detonate after 4 seconds. All they had to do to remove the debuff was to move within 1 second after obtaining it. On the other hand, both {Tail Whip} and {Death Blade} had casting times, which allowed players to decide whether to take it or to avoid it. Naturally, taking the hit was far better than allowing the bomb to detonate! Anyone would rather take the double damage rather than inflict damage to anyone around them!

The match would be a messy one. When a character moves, they cannot attack. Hence, the entire party will be producing crippled DPS. Still, it was extremely fortunate that the boss did not have any HP recovery skills.

Since the quest was limited to only 10 participants, Zhang Yang believed that the final boss would not spawn if he had brought more players over the limit. Now that the final boss had appeared, all they had to do was to kill it to complete the mission!

"Alright. Time to shine guys!" said Zhang Yang as he activated his Transformation skill. Everyone else followed immediately after. They had all been reserving their skills for several days. All for the sake of defeating the final boss for the S class quest!

One by one, everyone shone brightly as their character glowed with a beautiful radiant light. All except Wei Yan Er and Fatty

Han. Wei Yan Er was engulfed in a dark cloud, turning her entire character into a pitch-black entity. Fatty Han himself had grown fangs and had a black mental cloak that turned him into a vampire. Just like the boss, those two were like monsters!

"Go!" said Zhang Yang as he took the lead and charged towards the boss.

Zhang Yang did not bother explaining the strategy since the boss' skill was there for everyone to read. Everyone knew what they should and should not do, for they have been fighting for more than two years side by side! Repetition is the progress to mastery. Even Fatty Han had gotten used to controls and even the battle flow.

Was it you lot that tried to destroy my refinery!?" Longador pulled out his blade and swung it hard at Zhang Yang. "Lord Angus' plans shall never be foil by the likes of you. Leave! Or suffer a painful death by my blade!"

Longador's force was so strong that Zhang Yang was sent flying away. Even though he had managed to block the attack with his shield, he was unable to withstand the boss' sheer power. With a quick flap of his wings, Zhang Yang shot himself towards the boss and sliced the boss' chest open.

"URGH!" The boss grunted. Even though the boss was in a fit of rage, he was unable to attack for his attack intervals was determined by the 2 second attack interval. However, instead of attacking with his sword, Longador hurled his fist to strike Zhang Yang. The oncoming attack was so fast and unpredictable that Zhang Yang was unable to guard it.

With a loud thud, Zhang Yang was sent flying again.

"Aw!" Zhang Yang tried to move but it felt like every rib cage had been broken by the attack. His breathing was ragged. After merely 1 second, Zhang Yang managed to get back to his feet and rushed towards the boss and landed {Cripple Defense}. Wei Yan Er

followed up and smacked out {Cripple Defense} to stack it up to 5 counts. Only after that, the party started to attack.

"Woah. I've never seen a boss could also use supporting attacks!" said Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang was not the only person who had taken a fist attack. Everyone else was randomly targeted and will be disrupted for a brief moment. Although it was not considered as a real damaging attack, it would still affect the DPS of the player. What's more, the attack was completely random! If the boss hates your face, then prepare to take a fist to your face!

The situation had turned a little worse. Since everyone will be rendered motionless for a second after being struck by the fist, the bomb that sets in might go off! It would be a disaster if that happens. On the other hand, the attack will also directly affect the party's attacking ability. Magic attack classes will be the ones that suffer the most. When a player is casting a spell, be it healing or attacking, the fist attack will ultimately disrupt the spellcasting, forcing the player to recast the skill all over again.

It was unfortunate that the boss had long arms. In just a few steps, the boss could punch the range attackers who were standing at the maximum range. Hence, it would be impossible to escape the range of the boss' serious series punch!

Physical attack class player would be luckier if the fist landed on them for their attacks do not require any casting animation. They could still move around only after 1 second of recovering. The worst would always be the Spellcasters since they had to keep on monitoring the bomb on their character. They could not just ignore them to heal or attack.

"Haha! Little bugs! I'll smash you to bits!" Longador stopped moving and a progress bar appeared on his head, that sped up in the blink of an eye.

Everyone stopped moving instantly and was ready to take the hit.

The boss turned around and unleashed his tail to strike everyone. Everyone took the hit, taking the damage head-on. 140,000 was the lowest value and 220,000 was the highest. Even though they were all in their Transformed state, if the healer does not keep up the healing, the entire party will eventually plunge into a dangerous state. The party had not reached the level where they could easily be killed by boss with their HP.

"Weakling! You are nothing!" Longador grunted boldly. Another progress bar appeared and disappeared in a flash. The boss took out his sword and prepared for a swing.

It was the {Death Blade} and Zhang Yang was not afraid of it. With his legs carrying his character, he held his shield up high, ready to block the attack.

PANG!

The boss swung his massive blade and struck Zhang Yang's shield. The powerful strike was rendered powerless in the face of a Guardian.

"Stupid boss! Taste my axe!" Wei Yan Er hovered over to the boss in her smoke form and cleaved the boss at his neck.

Even though both Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu each had the [Book of Revelation,] the damage aura could not stack on each other. Only the stronger one, Zhang Yang's 10% damage increase was applied to everyone. Hence, even though the little brat had lost its {Axe Mastery} 5% damage increasing buff, she still gained a boost of power from Zhang Yang's aura. Furthermore, a Holy tier weapon was far stronger than an Ethereal tier could be.

Even though the little girl only a class A Inheritance, she was able to rely on her two-handed weapon to deal the strongest attack! Even Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang could not deal that much damage in a single strike! However, to compare a character as a whole, Zhang Yang had Felice and the Phoenix to add up to with his own devastating attacks. As such, Zhang Yang was still the highest DPS



in the party, followed by Wei Yan Er as the second, and Sun Xin Yu as the third. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were far behind them.

The most pitiful one was Lost Dream. Alone, he could take on two Hunters at the same time. However, now that both Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had Legendary Beast as their pets, their damage was too much for Lost Dream to compare. Daffodil Daydream, on one hand, had the A class Inheritance. Before Transformation, her damage would be on par with Lost Dream. However, after Transforming, the power boost she gains will overwhelm even Lost Dream.

Hence, Lost Dream was rank at the lowest in the damaging ranking board. To be fair, he was still higher than Endless Starlight, Han Ying Xue, and Fantasy Sweetheart because they were tanks and healers.

After some time, the battle had started to heat up. The boss' attacks had started to pick up the pace as it used its {Tail Whip} attacks rather frequently and dealt a great deal of cumulative damage. Right then, the battle had progressed for some time and everyone's attention was starting to wane. From time to time, they would take a blast from the bomb and even take double damage from the skills.

"Hahaha! Run like the insects you are!" The boss laughed after he sent Zhang Yang flying off his feet, showing off his grand stature as a Holy tier boss.

While Zhang Yang was busy trying to strike with {God of War Devastation} and {Heavy Axe} as frequently as he could, the battle was still progressing slowly. As for the newly obtained skill {Tribulation}, he wanted to keep it quiet and not use it for the moment.

Since the boss did not possess any HP recovery skill, the party's overall DPS was not being suppressed or rather "absorbed". However, the biggest problem with the fight was the fact that

Longador could use supporting attacks which will give pause to the party's killing speed. That, and the occasional running around to dispel the bomb's effects on them greatly slowed their speed. At that point, their highest DPS rating was only around 1,000,000.

Then again, it was only 30 minutes of fighting before the boss will be killed!

80%...60%...40%...

When the boss' HP had dropped down to 30%, Zhang Yang activated {Tribulation}.

For the next 10 minutes, any damage that Zhang Yang receives from the boss, would simply be reflected back at him! The best part of the skill was that the damage value that is "reflected" was not calculated by the damage that Zhang Yang receives. The skill accounted the boss' basic attack or rather, the unsuppressed damage! For example, if the boss' attack is meant to deal 200,000 damage, Zhang Yang would naturally take only around 80,000 damage after going through his Defense and damage absorption passives. {Tribulation} will not cause the 80,000 damage, but instead, it will cause the full 200,000 damage.

The reflected damage that hits back will go through the Defense of the boss and only strike him for 181,530 if the boss' defense value is 18,470.

Zhang Yang defense was far greater than the boss. Even moreso when Zhang Yang is in his Transformed state. His Defense had reached as high as 80,050. The number was so high that any player with a one-hand weapon would not deal any significant damage to Zhang Yang! Hence, Zhang Yang was not worried about the boss going berserk. In fact, he welcomed it. The more damage the boss could deal, the better the damage that Zhang Yang could reflect back to his face!

{Tribulation} would work best when the boss' HP reaches under 20% and 10%, since the boss will go berserk, increasing his attack

and skill rate. Technically speaking, if Zhang Yang has a higher HP than the boss, the overall reflected damage would be so great that Zhang Yang would not need to attack to kill the boss!

Sadly, to keep the skill secret, Zhang Yang had never once used the skill in PvP battle nor the Individual Ranking battles. If his secret was known to the world, none will even come to his challenge! That, and players will devise a plan to counter his skill. It was his powerful, deadly secret.

The boss raged on as his HP dropped lower and lower. Although the boss still has over 500,000,000 HP, it was not showing signs that it was aware of the damage that was being reflected back at it. How could it be?

"Wow...noobie tank. I feel bad for calling you a noob tank. Your skill is clearly out of this world!" said Wei Yan Er with admiration and a little hint of envy.

Although having {Tribulation} could reflect damage, the caster would still have to sustain damage as well. Then again, it was like having an extra hand to attack!

## Chapter 732: Two-Handed Weapon

---

Although the boss was clearing attacking with all it has, it would never stop the party from attacking him on and on until it reaches 20%.

It was time for the killing strike!

As mentioned before, like Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er who possess {Killing Cleave}, other classes had the skill that could increase damage, once the target has lower or equal to 20% HP. When the conditions are met, the skill can be activated to increase one's power. As such, the party had activated their "killing" skills. Wei Yan Er took a bottle of [Amateur Power Potion Transmuted Grade 10] and unleashed {Indiscriminate}. She rushed over to the boss and consumed all her Rage to cast {Killing Cleave} on the boss.

'-3,226,163!'

The damage that she had dealt that instant was so powerful that even Zhang Yang had to stop and praised the girl.

"Good job!"

"Wahahaha! This but expected of me! Haha! Now I don't feel bad for calling you noob tank! I am the wonder girl who has learned the sacred arts of the Nine Suns! I am invincible! Call me the Invincible Wonder Girl!" Wei Yan Er proudly praised herself. The smug grin on her face was then immediately wiped out by a fist from the raging boss, causing her to spin around in the air.

Luckily, she was in her Darkness Transformation state, physically, she sustained no damage. However, the fist was so powerful that the cloud of smoke that was surrounding her was blown away! It took only an instant for the smoke to return to her, though.

"Haha! Serves you right for looking down at someone!" said Fatty Han.

"Hmph! Stupid boss! You may be strong, but I am stronger! Go ahead and curse the gods for making me your opponent today!" said Wei Yan Er as she collected her composure and proudly hovered in the air. She then swooped down to the boss and kept her attacking rhythm at the highest.

That was why no one in their right mind would call Wei Yan Er a woman, even though she was already reaching 20 years old. The girl was practically a little girl on the inside! How could someone like her find a matching partner? Then again, the fact that she was extremely popular in campus, begged to differ. In campus, many young men had fallen for her charming young looks and did not care to see what her family background was. She had even managed to be elected at one of the Zhou Su University idols! Based on what Han Ying Xue had said, she was, in history, the "flattest" girl idol ever worshipped by fans! Sadly, the little girl was like a cow listening to Bach or Beethoven. Zhang Yang was initially afraid, but relaxed that the girl would never fall for the man trying to pick her up. All their efforts will only go in the right ear and exit from the left without being processed.

Romance and love would be determined by fate. When the gods have decided a partner for the little girl, she would fall for one who will accept the person she was. Right now, she is still young. There was no reason to worry for her future. Yet.

"Die! Die! Die!" the boss screamed out loud as the killing aura started to grow stronger. The flame in its eye sockets burnt brighter than before. The boss was raging since he was being defeated by a bunch of running ants! What sort of shame would a person feel!? Be it {Tail Whip} or {Death Blade}, all skills were unleashed repeatedly at an alarming rate.

Yet, the more damage it ditched out, the more it will receive from Zhang Yang. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had retained {Tribulation} until then. It was the best time and place to use it.

"Hell yeah!"

"Awesome!"

"Good job Little Yang!"

Everyone praised Zhang Yang for his skill and laughed as the boss was getting angrier.

Despite their sudden burst of jolly, their HP bars were still limited. Even though the entire party had unleashed their Transformation skills, they could not tank the rapid use of {Tail Whip}. However, it was not much trouble. If things get too dangerous for them, Han Ying Xue could simple restore everyone HP with {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} and let the boss enjoy fighting them again from the start!

15%...10%...

When the boss' HP dropped below 10%, its attack rate was increased by one fold. Naturally, the damage reflected back on it increased as well.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Ah...what a waste. But then again, it was not much trouble. The party's DPS power was so strong. It would not be a problem for them to kill the boss in a matter of minutes.

"Ants! Pest! I will kill you all! I will bury your bones and crush them all into sand that will build my new towers!"

"Bla bla bla! Enough with your grumbling. Don't you see that Death is coming to you soon! I want you to remember the name of your killer, that is Wei Yan Er! When you go down to hell and greet Yan Lou Wang (1), don't forget to report the manner of your death!" said Wei Yan Er while she dusted off her shoulders. It was a gesture of smugness that she had learned from watching Hollywood movies.

Daffodil Daydream giggled and said, "Yan Er dear, the boss is a

western character. When he dies, he will meet Lucifer. Not Yan Lou Wang!"

"What? Oh! Meh..."

"Curse you!" cried the boss as it hurled fist after fist at the little girl. Even though the fists were as annoying as such, it was merely an act of desperation.

It was horribly easy for the party to quickly end his life.

The massive boney structure crumbled apart and fell to the ground in pieces. Longador's voice echoed through the land when he died. "The God of Death shall revive me...You will see me...again...Kill...death..."

A bright light glowed around his body before dimming down and dropping the loot and experience points to the party.

"Stupid boss. If you do come back, I'll kick your boney butt with my Celestial tier axe! Haha!" Wei Yan Er kicked the now lifeless skull of the boss with her might, to release her pent-up rage.

"Hey! Enough wasting time. Little girl, go and do what you love most."

"Heeheehee~" As expected of a little girl, when asked to do something she likes, she would do it with a flash.

Unexpectedly, the boss had dropped two Holy tier equipment, four Ethereal tier equipment, one [Skill Point Crystal], three High grade [Aura Stone], and one skill book. It was the [Aura Stone] that no one had expected to see from the boss drop.

The [Skill Point Crystal] was distributed accordingly and after major discussion, and it was decided that Zhang Yang will take all the [Aura Stones] to upgrade [Vitality Aura]. As such, the entire party could enjoy having an additional 40% Vitality boost. It was extremely useful for both boss fight and PvP battles. Although Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} and Han Ying Xue's {Life Aura} were equally important, those will come later.

The two Holy tier equipment were weapons. One of them was a black long blade which was the same as the boss. The other had a one-handed sword which had a half-opaque, blue colored blade.

Wei Yan Er first posted the long blade to the party.

[Deleia, Death Scythe] (Holy, Two-Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 23,810 - 33,810

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 7,582

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 40%.

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 10%

Equip: On a successful attack, grants a chance to direct reap the soul of the target, dealing 30,000 Chaos Damage.

Level Requirement: 180

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

"Wuuu~~~" Wei Yan Er wept as she looked at the weapon in her hand and the axe on the floor. "Why must it be this way! Why must you make me choose?! I want both!"

"Nah ah! Only one."

"Grr... Fine! Noobie tank can have the new weapon. I am but a kind hearted girl. Plus, I've developed some feelings for this one right here."

Everyone laughed when she said she was kind-hearted, for everyone knew that she was the exact opposite. If you hang out with her long enough, even a monkey could read her face and know what she'll do next. The reason why she would not want the new weapon is because she did not want to spend more money socketing her equipment!



It's the characteristically stingy little girl!

Since only Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were the only players in the party who could use two-handed weapons, Zhang Yang took it after Wei Yan Er gave it up. Sadly, the Sword of Purging Devourer was unable to transfer its powerful effect to another weapon. Zhang Yang had outgrown the almighty weapon.

It was really hard to believe that the weapon had been stuck with him for more than two years. In all MMORPGs, players swap weapons all the time. To be honest, there would definitely be more than one weapon used for two years. Then again, two years was really the upper limit. If the game developers had not released any new expansions of the game and increased the Level Cap, the strongest equipment will remain until the end of time. For example, the forgotten new class called the Shaman.

Naturally, the Sword of Purging Devourer was extremely rare for it had seals that can be broken to allow the weapon to grow stronger. That or the weapon would have been discarded long before the dinner of the same day.

"D\*mn son. New weapon huh! The boss is gonna be OP af!" said Endless Starlight with admiration. Since he did not have special Inheritance effect which allowed him to equip two-handed weapons, he could only settle for the designated weapon for his class. Still, even though his equipment was good, his DPS contribution to the party overall DPS was extremely low.

"Imagine that. OP HP and OP DPS. What makes the guild master then? A god? Hahahaha!"

"Contain your excitement there, boy! There's one more sword for you!" said Wei Yan Er.

[Frost Bane] (Holy, One-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 12,330 – 20,330

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 5,832

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 40%

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 10%

Equip: Grants a chance to freeze a target for 3 seconds on every attack.

Level Requirement: 180

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

The sword was strong and powerful if it is used by a quick sword user like Bandit. Even though the weapon attack of a one-handed weapon and a two-handed weapon differs greatly, the effect the weapon has does not. For example, the additional equipment effect for both Frost Bane and the Scythe was the same.

Bandits have quick attack interval speed, hence, they could gain an additional effect compared to the other classes. Both Endless Starlight and Sun Xin Yu could use one-handed swords but since Sun Xin Yu had the S class Inheritance, which grants her the bonus 5% Critical chance and damage, the priority was then given to her. Endless Starlight's class job only applied to Hammer.

As such, clenching his broken soul with pain, Endless Starlight gave up the sword to Sun Xin Yu. Wei Yan Er walked to Endless Starlight and pats his back to cheer him up. "Don't be sad for this. Next time, I'll find one one-handed hammer for you!"

The last item was the skill book, which was given to Daffodil Daydream. It was [Superior Inferno,] which was her skill.

[Superior Inferno]: Increases Inferno damage by 30% and grants a stunning effect. Lasts for 3 seconds.

Inferno is a skill that is only available to Pyromancers. With the caster as the center point, a wave of flame is shot out to 15 meters

around the caster, dealing 100% magic fire attack. Now that she had obtained the upgrade, she could deal an additional 30% damage and a 3 seconds stun!

After distributing all the items, the boss' corpse disappeared as well. Like any other boss, if players do not loot all the item, the dead body of the boss would not disappear. They would not be able to continue with the quest, then!

[Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – 3rd Gen. Prototype] (Quest Item, Usable)

Use: Place the bomb and skedaddle guys! Technically, the bomb should explode after 10 seconds. But the bomb was contracted by the infamous Goblins. Their productions have always been notorious for being "overly" powerful. Perhaps you should be extra cautious of the bomb!

Note: Tick Tock Tick Tock. KABOOM? Explosion that you can trust! Goblin Tech Incorporation. The explosive that you can trust.

# Chapter 733: Ancient Spiritual Beast King

---

Zhang Yang planted the boss and quickly signaled the retreat. However, only after 2 seconds, the bomb exploded prematurely. The explosion was so strong that everyone, including the heavily armored Zhang Yang was blasted away like paper planes in a storm. Worst of all, the explosion almost took off all their HP.

What a useless Goblin tech...

Everyone stopped their tracks to rest and recover their HP. Fatty Han had panicked at the last second and quickly morphed into his bat form to suck on Endless Starlight's HP.

The quest had ended, yet their Transformations had over 1 hour of active duration remaining. Since it would be waste to let it expire, the party decided to go their own way to grind. After the Transformations ended, they regrouped back at Sauron's Castle and teleported back to White Jade Castle to submit the quest.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Destroy the Mithril Refinery. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points, 500 Military Points!'

Everyone got their reward successfully and was not impressed by the experience points. It was rather bad since 10 million experience points was only the same as two elite tier monsters. Still, they were all satisfied with the 500 Military points given.

"Haha! Not bad for some scrawny humans," said Gulaj. He then stood on a chair and said, "I have some bad news. Even though the Spectre have lost their main production of Mithril, they were still able to buy from...\*ahem\*. They were still able to obtain their Mithril from my brethren. The production of Darkness Fall is still going on!"

"Heroes. Do not fret. There is still hope for the land. Right now, you can still put a stop to Darkness Fall by destroying their Energy

Crystal Processing Base Factory! Without enough Energy Crystals, they will be unable to continue their research for Darkness Falls!"

'Ding! Gulaj has a quest for you: Destroy the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory. Will you accept it?'

What treachery! How could the goblins be selling their Mithril to the enemy!? What a money-minded bastard! Their greed for gold was far worse than the Dwarves!

Everyone nodded their heads to accept the quest.

[Destroying the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory]  
(Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Gulaj wants you to destroy the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory of the Spectre. By destroying their base, they were unable to continue their research to finish Darkness Falls. According to Gulaj, the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory is located in the Antijar Basin of the Volcanic Dragon Mountain. Be warned, the Spectres have reinforced their defenses. You must bring a team of strong adventures to survive.

Participant Limit: 10

Progress: Destroy the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory

Quest Reward: +20,000,000 Experience Points, +500 Military Points

"Here. Take his. I have made some modifications to it myself. I can assure you that it will not be like the last time," said Gulaj as he dropped a stack of rolled explosive that looks exactly like the one you can see in Looney Tunes. Acme, to be exact.

Everyone rolled their eyes. So what if Gulaj has personally modified it? It would just be the same! The only difference it had was the name!

Just when the party was about to leave for the quest, a group of women players came to the NPC. They were the elites of Crimson

Rage, including Snow Seeker. It would seem that she, Mellow Venom, and Thorny Rose were the main attacking force for Crimson Rage. At that moment, they had just reached Level 160 and probably was rushing over to start the Spectre Invasion quest line.

"Hello, guild master Zhan Yu. What kind of quest did you receive? Would it coincide with ours?" said Snow Seeker with such elegance that she was Zhang Yang elder sister. It was extremely polite and sweet yet Zhang Yang knew better. She was merely acting that way. If anyone falls for her sweet talks, they would be completely swallowed by her!

Wei Yan Er was the fastest then and had already shared the quest description to her. After a long, hard look, Snow Seeker laughed bitterly and said, "Ah. It seems that there will be a problem. It's the same as ours."

Everyone was puzzled. They knew that they had only just killed the boss for the previous quest. It was impossible that the system would refresh the quest when some else receives the same quest. Hence, Zhang Yang reached a conclusion. The previous quest will only unlock the subsequent quests which could then be taken by anyone. There will never be a case where one side will be the best. That will eliminate all contenders. It would be fair since if a party is unable to complete the quest, they could never proceed any further. To be fair, if the party fails to destroy the Mithril Refinery, the Spectre would have won, then, wouldn't they?

Hence, the last battle with Angus required players to complete all the quests until Angus himself is forced to show up on the battlefield. That, or the minions of Spectre will keep spawning in towns to disrupt peace. Nothing too damaging, but just enough of a bother for players to get off their \*sses and solve.

Using the quest unlocking system, every player will have a chance to try out the quest even if they could never succeed in beating it. Hence, they will gain familiarity with either the

monsters or the final boss fights until they could actually complete it. That is, if they were strong enough to endure the repetition.

Yet, the main story quest for the Spectre Invasion was available for all, but could only be completed by one party, and that party will be the only party receiving the reward. Technically, there was no limit as to how many parties could try to defeat the boss.

Two parties stood still, 20 pairs of eyeballs glared at each other awkwardly. When Wei Yan Er made a sudden jerk, the Crimson Rage party responded by quickly taking out their [Teleportation Scrolls] to leave the place immediately. Lone Desert Smoke followed later, a split second slower. Only one party could receive the reward. That would only mean that the quest completion will be a race! A race of countless parties around the world that had reached Level 160! The competition is hot and running.

Zhang Yang was the only one amongst them who chose to stay at White Jade Castle to socket his new equipment. After enhancing them, he would then teleport to Han Ying Xue using the [Lover's Charm]. A Level 6 Strength Gemstone could provide 200 Strength. Same goes for Dexterity. By enhancing the Gemstone, Zhang Yang could increase the value by 50%. Since the equipment could socket two Gemstone at a time, that would be 600 attribute points. Be it Strength or Dexterity, both were fairly important for Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu!

After equipping his new weapon, Zhang Yang's attack power was at 154,194 – 182,194 after calculations. Since {Vitality Aura} had reached its max level, the bonus it provided was now up to 40% Vitality. Even though weapons will not provide Vitality points, his HP was already boosted to 1,140,490. And that was only in his normal state!

Zhang Yang was quick with his hands during socketing and quickly teleported back to the party and found Crimson Rage's party was slower. They were frantically chasing them.

Snow Seeker was determined to stick to Zhang Yang's party - no matter what. Since the quest had a participant limit of only 10 players, if the quest is similar to the previous quest, Snow Seeker would still have a chance to plant the bomb first after Zhang Yang defeats the boss.

Main story quests had a Unique attribute to them. Once they have been completed by a party, the quest will automatically be deleted from all players who have accepted the quest.

The problem lay with both Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker, or rather Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage. During the fierce battle in Sauron's Castle, Crimson Rage was the one guild that stood by Lone Desert Smoke till the end. They were a great help to Lone Desert Smoke. That goes without saying. Hence, Lone Desert Smoke would never turn their backs to them or play them out!

Snow Seeker had anticipated that, and pressed on the chance that they could still obtain the quest reward. Even though technically both guilds had a 50% chance to complete the mission, in reality, Crimson Rage only had a small 10% chance to overthrow Lone Desert Smoke.

Naturally, Snow Seeker was no god. She could not have known the difficulty of the boss and that Zhang Yang's party had already used their Transformation skill. Toe to toe, Snow Seeker's party would have the upper hand since all of their party members had their Transformation skill ready for the final boss. However, based on the conditions of the battlefield, they might need a few days to clear all the monsters, just like the Refinery. That time alone was enough for Zhang Yang and his party to finish their Transformation cooldown. Hence, Snow Seeker's plan will still go on.

After flying for 10+ hours, the party had finally left Mar Gaia Forest, through the Forest of Clouds and entered the Antijar Basin. The party took 3 to 4 hours more to reach their final destination, the Volcanic Dragon Mountain.



"Pfft. How does the mountain look like a dragon?" said Endless Starlight, unimpressed when he saw the scenery. The mountains were covered with red maple trees that dyed the entire landscape with a deep crimson red. However, only the color matched its name, not the shape or size. There was nothing of the mountains that depicted a dragon.

"Don't mind that. Find the factory!"

At that moment, Lone Desert Smoke was still leading, with the girls of Crimson Rage far behind. Zhang Yang reached the peak of the mountain and spotted many elemental beings. There were stone, fire, water, and air elemental beings all busy roaming around on a mushroom-like structure.

Zhang Yang selected the structure and was shocked to see that the structure was a living being!

[Spiritual Beast] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 175

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 10,000

Magic Attack: 60,175 – 90,175

Skills:

[Light Energy Ray]: Blasts out a destructive ray and deals 200% magic Natural damage to a target. Range: 50 meters. Instant. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Exploding Energy Crystal]: Hurls Energy Crystals from its body to all targets within 50 meters. Deals 100% magic Natural damage. Stuns the targets for 3 seconds.

Note: The Spiritual Beast can naturally produce Energy Crystals via combining the light of the sun and Carbon Dioxide. Only Elemental Beings and the Spiritual Beast are close. Any other beings that attempts to get close will lead to his self-induce

explosion. Permanently stationary.

"Oh! So the Energy Crystal that we have been using to power the Teleportation points comes from this big \*ss dickhead!" Fatty Han exclaimed.

The man was never one to sugarcoat his words. Hence, the women around him were greatly offended. Of which, he did not give a single f\*ck.

Zhang Yang scouted the area and could not find a boss or a point of indication of where to plant the bomb. Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he realized that this mission will be the same as the previous one. Only by killing monsters, will the quest proceed.

"So, where do we start?" asked Hundred Shots.

There were four large areas, separated by elemental beings.

"Let's start with the Air elementals first." Said Zhang Yang. Fire and Water Elemental being will surely be magic attack type. Earth elementals will have superior defense, hence, the most logical and easiest target to start with would be the Air elementals.

Now, Crimson Rage was separated from Zhang Yang. The girls chose to attack the water elementals first, but will immediately change their position if the boss does appear.

Sadly, unknown to Zhang Yang, Fatty Han had betrayed Lone Desert Smoke by succumbing to the draws of the lustful woman of Crimson Rage. He had offered up the information of the quest of the Mithril Refinery to them, allowing the girls to understand everything they needed to know about the mission.

# Chapter 734: A 'Fun' Situation to All Parties Indeed

---

After getting down from his pet mount, Zhang Yang went up to the head of his party. He threw his {Spear of Obliteration} as the signal to charge.

"Mourd'za leidenla!" the aggro of the two spirits were locked to each other. When one of them was lured over, the other one would follow. They were speaking in a strange and unexplainable language while they were charging towards Zhang Yang. These spirit beings were probably as tall as 5 meters. Their entire bodies were formed from a mixture of different gases. Some of the gases were gray, while some of them were white. These spiritual beings had two hands but no legs. They were levitating around mid-air.

[Volcanic Dragon Mountain Air Spirit] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Jetstream]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage on a target and blasts the target 10 meters backward.

[Self-destruct]: Detonates upon death. Causes 50,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 100 meters.

[Recuperate]: If there happens to be a Spiritual Beast in the vicinity of 50 meters from the monster, it can flee into the Spiritual Beast to recuperate its own HP.

Because the monsters had the capability to blow themselves up, the party could not afford to lure too many of them at the same

time. Well, the players could time the intervals between each of the monster's death. However, the purpose of luring a bunch of monsters over would be to kill them all as quickly as possible. If players want to plan out the interval between the deaths of each monster that they encounter, they would not be able to lure many monsters and kill them all at once. In simpler words, killing monsters all at once with AoE attacks would not let players control which monsters to kill first because AoE attacks would just bombard whichever monsters that were within the effective range of the Skills. With every monster detonating themselves after they die, it would make the entire situation to go out of hand if they ever try to kill so many of them at the same time.

Hence, it would be better to lure a little lesser of them monsters before letting themselves all out on the monsters. Zhang Yang had to be aware that Wei Yan Er would lose herself, once her excitement on killing monsters takes over her sanity. She might just go on and kill everything, causing everything to explode at the same time. Her action would surely lead to everyone's death.

Elite Tier monsters could be extremely dangerous for normal players. However, they could never post any threat to Zhang Yang and his gang. It did not take long at all for Zhang Yang and his party to take out these monsters. However, their {Self-destruct} were really powerful. Each explosion would cause 50,000 Nature damage to each of Zhang Yang's party members. There were a total of 22 targets if the Battle Companions and Pets were included. So each explosion managed to deal as much damage as 1,100,000 damage!

"What the hell! Terrorist! Bombers!" Everyone began to laugh.

After clearing a few more waves of these monsters, the party arrived before a Spiritual Beast's giant mushroom cap. They lured 3 Volcanic Dragon Air Spirits at the same time. However, right before monsters were about to die, they turned around and hid in the 'rod' of the mushroom cap.

Instantly, the Spiritual Beast that seemed to be dead was suddenly activated. It shot a beam of ray towards the entire gang.

Everyone could see the process with their own eyes. The three Volcanic Dragon Air Spirits were inside the 'rod' of the mushroom cap. They looked like three extra moles that suddenly appeared in the 'rod'! Meanwhile, the HP bars of the three monsters were recovering at a rapid pace.

"What the... so this is like a healing rod for them?"

Well, this 'rod' packed more of just a punch in the art of healing! Not only could it heal many targets at the same time, it also had very strong attacks!

However, even though this mushroom cap 'rod' had a very high amount of HP, it had a fatal weakness. It cannot move around like normal monsters do! It was just planted firmly on the ground! If players could not defeat it, they could just retreat by backing off. Players would not need to worry that this powerful Spiritual Beast would pursue and kill them.

Although this Spiritual Beast was labeled as an Elite Tier, its HP and Attack were much more powerful than a Mythical Tier boss. It was not easy for the players to take it head-on. However, even though this monster had over 50,000,000 HP, Zhang Yang and his gang could deal over 900,000 DPS even without activating their Inheritance Transformation. It would only take about a minute to kill this monster.

However, it seemed that things were not as simple as they thought. The 3 Volcanic Dragon Air Spirits came out of the 'rod' with their HP bar full again!

Before they could take out the Spiritual Beast, it would be futile even if they try to take out the three monsters first. These monsters could just jump back into the 'rod' to fully recover their HP bars again, every time they are about to die. Therefore, everyone aimed their attacks at the Spiritual Beast first.

The Spiritual Beast did not just sit on its \*ss, waiting to meet its own demise, of course. It began to throw out some crystalized Spiritual Energy into its surroundings. Those crystalized Spiritual Energy immediately exploded right after they landed. Instantly, the attacks caused quite a number of damage to the gang! Han Ying Xue and Sweetheart Fantasy began to heal everyone as quickly as they could. Well, the three monsters would be detonating themselves when their HP bars are emptied. There would definitely be casualties if their HP bars are not healed back up.

After running around in the surroundings like cats and dogs, they finally took care of the giant fellow and the three little monsters. Everyone was exhausted after the busy session. Truth to be told, the correct way of taking care of that situation was to lure the three little monsters 50 meters away from the Spiritual Beast. By doing so, the three monsters would not have the opportunity to heal themselves at all.

As for the Spiritual Beast, it would depend on whether the players want to take it out or not. Well, the system designed the monsters to stay in one spot. Maybe the players could just plant a bomb on the monster and blow it to kingdom come. There was actually no need to engage the monster at all.

However, Zhang Yang and his party have been known to be extremely powerful. Even though it was quite troublesome to take on the Spiritual Beast, they would have to take the long way around if they don't kill it. That would cost them a lot more time than just killing it. As long as they stay cautious while dealing with the Spiritual Beast, nothing should go wrong.

Zhang Yang and his gang wiped out any monsters that got in their way. However, the monsters were too numerous. Zhang Yang and his gang took one day to clean up a quarter of the entire Air Spirit Region. On the second day and the third day, the two parties of Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage had been camping at the site. The number of monsters in that area was just too abundant.

Furthermore, there were no other players interrupting them to take their share. Therefore, the two parties managed to enjoy the abundant Experience Points from killing hordes of monsters!

--- the area had implemented a mirroring technology. Those players who had not reached Level 160 and had not received the quest would not be able to see nor enter this battle area.

However, on the fourth day, a third party had entered the area --- Land of Savages from the India Region!

They did not try to pick a fight with the other two parties. They chose to clear out the monsters in the Fire Spirit Region. It did not take long before a fourth party entered the vicinity. It was the Hell Family from Europe Region. They chose to clear the Rock Spirit Region. Right after that, the fifth and the sixth parties had also entered the 'arena'. They were the Justice League from the America Region and the Wolf Warrior from the Africa Region.

As the entire region was too big to begin with, the Air Spirit Region itself was enough to have 10 parties killing monsters in the vicinity, without having to compete with each other. Therefore, none of the parties provoked any other party into a fight. Everything was peaceful among the parties so far. They were just minding their own businesses --- no one would want to engage in a battle that would not benefit them at all. Well, high Tier players rarely engaged in battle with each other. Meanwhile, normal players would have raised their weapons and charged at the other players from their enemy Region without any hesitation.

However, when a boss or a location of a countdown bombing is spawned, the peacefulness between these high Tier players would be broken right away. When that happens, everyone would not be able to avoid a fierce battle among themselves. After all, only one party could complete the main story quest.

On the fifth day and the sixth day, more and more parties entered the Spiritual Region. Currently, only the top Tier players managed

to reach Level 160 and enter this region. If there are any conflicts happening between them, the battle would become as fierce as it would be whenever there is a Territory Conquest!

Meanwhile, the current situation did not have a 3-hour timeframe, like Territory Conquests did. There was no time limit at all in such a battle in this region. Furthermore, it still remained unknown whether there would be a boss in the region or not. Even if the players are a little bit weaker than the others, they could just lay low until a boss is spawned. When the others are busy battling the boss, they could just interrupt the battle and kill those players. With the boss's 'help', they should be able to take out their opponents without much of a problem.

Even though none of them had provoked any battle among themselves, everyone knew that a high degree storm was about to explode soon. The moment when a boss is spawned, everyone would start killing each other.

As expected, more and more parties were entering the region on the seventh and the eighth day. They were all top Tier players from different Regions as well.

'Ang!' In the morning of the ninth day, a long and muffled roar echoed throughout the entire region. It was ear-piercingly loud! Right in the middle on top of the Volcanic Dragon Mountain, a gigantic Spiritual Beast was suddenly spawned. Compared to those Spiritual Beast that were only 50 meters tall, this mushroom capped Spiritual Beast was approximately thousands of meters tall! It looked like a gigantic mushroom had grown on top of the Volcanic Dragon Mountain. The mushroom cap had reached out to a radius of 500 meters wide. The size of that cap had completely covered the entire mountain.

[Ancient Spiritual Beast King] (Holy, Elemental)

Level: 180

HP: 18,000,000,000



Defence: 18,470

Magic Attack: 85,228 – 125,228

[Skills]:

[Light Energy Ray]: Shoots out a beam of destructive ray towards the target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Nature Damage to the target. Range: 1,000 meters. Instant chanting. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Timed Energy Charge]: Throws out its spiritual energy into its surrounding, causing 200,000 Nature Damage to all targets in 1,000 meters. All targets will be stunned for 3 seconds.

[Energy Mine]: Plants a spiritual energy on the ground. When a player gets too near to the spiritual energy, the spiritual energy will explode and causes 150,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 30-meter radius of the blast.

[Elemental Constitution]: Recovers 1% once in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovery will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: As the only remaining ancient Spiritual Beast, this Spiritual Beast has a gigantic body mass that would send fear into the hearts of men. Its only weakness is that it could only move in and out from the hole it dug itself out of.

The moment when the boss was spawned, all parties immediately stopped what they were doing. However, none of them went up to battle the boss.

A Holy Tier boss was a disastrous threat to any of the parties at the current stage of the game. Meanwhile, the first party that engages themselves in battle with the boss would immediately become the primary target of the other parties as well. The other parties would take advantage to take out their competitors, without a doubt in their minds. So whoever who goes up first would be wiped up in a matter of seconds!

From that moment on, none of the parties moved out. All of them were waiting for someone to make their first move. However, the boss would not stay idle either, even though no one was attacking it. After all, this mushroom capped Spiritual Beast had over 1,000 meters of attack range. That would also mean that its aggro range would reach out by 1,000 meters!

Instead of the players making their first move on the boss, the boss launched its first attack out. It shot out a beam of ray towards a Priest from a party that hailed from the Europe Region. A damage of 220,000 instantly took away half of the Priest's HP bar! Shoof! Another beam of ray was shot out right after that. Well, because none of the players were attacking the boss, the mushroom head did not have a specific target to focus on. So it was randomly shooting its attacks out at anyone who was on its aggro list.

So now, the real question had changed. Should they fight or should they escape!?

Without a further moment of hesitation, most of the parties had made up their mind. They began to fly away from the boss on their Flying Mounts. Well, who would be stupid enough to charge in and die?

However, everyone who tried to flee had discovered a very awkward situation. The area of 1,000-meter radius around the boss had been cut off by a layer of invisible air wall! In other words, whoever who was within the aggro range of the boss had been trapped! There was no way that they could escape from the boss now! Players who were outside the vicinity could not get in while the players within the vicinity could not get out!

Obviously, this was the battle stage. Without taking out the boss or the boss taking out all the players, the air wall would stay!

Well, that was awkward as f\*ck. It would not even matter whether you hit the boss or not. The boss would just come over and hit you! Furthermore, the boss had its trustworthy {Light

Energy Ray} that could allow the boss to focus its attack on one target. Then the boss also had its {Energy Mine} and {Timed Energy Charge} to deal AoE attacks to the players in its surroundings. As long as you're engaged in the battle with the boss, you'd be the one suffering!

# Chapter 735: A Seize

---

The boss did not give everyone within its attack range a moment to hesitate. It began to throw countless of small pinkish crystalized square boxes to its surroundings. It did not take long before the entire space of the area was filled with these small pinkish crystalized square boxes. Suddenly, every single one of those crystals exploded. It was the boss' {Timed Energy Charge}!

Boom!

Violent currents of energy whirled across the entire area. Everyone could see that space itself was being torn apart by the whirling force of the energy flow with their own eyes. A crack that looked like a black hole appeared right in the middle of the air. Everyone in the vicinity sustained over 200,000 basic damage! That wave of attack was fatal to most players in the surroundings. Well, a DPS player that is well equipped with a full set of Level 150 Ethereal Tier equipment could only have over 400,000 HP. Meanwhile, Spellcasters like Priests would have even lower amount of HP, even if they have a full set of Level 150 Ethereal Tier equipment on them! They would most likely have about 340,000 HP, give or take!

Although everyone in the vicinity had mounted on their Mounts to boost their Maximum HP, how many of them would be able to have a full set of Ethereal Tier equipment? It would have been very fortunate if they even have a Mythical Tier Pet Mount. Furthermore, mounting on a Mythical Tier pet could boost one's Maximum HP up by 200,000 HP, at best. A player would only have at most, 600,000 HP after that.

Even if that is the case, the players would still be suffering a great deal of damage after sustaining a total of 200,000 damage.

Everyone was an easy prey to the boss now. If they do not fight back now, they would be as good as dead! Furthermore, they would

not be able to rejoin the boss battle if they ever get killed. The main reason being, that there was an invisible air wall surrounding the entire area now. If any of the party manages to hold their ground until the very end, they might even get to kill the boss and claim everything for themselves!

Therefore, all parties within the vicinity decided to strike back at the boss. They began to bombard the boss with everything they had.

The body mass of the boss was just too big for anyone to comprehend. Its mushroom head had already occupied an area over 500-meter radius wide. Therefore, there was no way that anyone would have missed the target. The entire target was even bigger than what everyone could see!

"We'll be attacking from the top!" Zhang Yang shouted. Then, he led his party and flew towards the top of the mushroom cap. A large number of players began to launch their attacks around the bottom of the mushroom cap as aggressively as they could.

Zhang Yang did not intend to fix the aggro of the boss onto him. However, his damage output was just too powerful. Furthermore, his passive Skill {Shield Oath} even provided him a 20% additional aggro value. Therefore, it did not take long before he became the primary target of the boss. The boss began to spam its {Light Energy Ray} on Zhang Yang!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, his Defence was high enough for him to hang on. Each {Light Energy Ray} could only deal approximately 140,000 damage to him. Furthermore, he had Han Ying Xue supporting him from his rear. She managed to heal him up good, all by herself. Other than that, Fantasy Sweetheart and a few other Healing-type Battle Companions were also supporting Zhang Yang from the rear as well.

None of them had activated their Inheritance Transformation just yet. That was mainly because, no one understood how

powerful the other parties are, and how long would the boss battle take. If the boss battle takes longer than 2 hours, then their effort would become pointless if they activate their Inheritance Transformations a little too early. They would end up doing the heavy work for the other parties instead!

Everyone was on the same page, hitting hard. However, everyone understood as well that when the HP bar of the boss is reduced to a certain level, this fragile 'bond' between them would be broken in an instant. Everyone would be competing against each other to be the one slaying the boss. After all, everyone was striving to be the ones who complete the main story quest of the game!

Fortunately, even though the Ancient Spiritual Beast King was a Holy Tier boss, it was not deemed as one of those super powerful World Tier bosses! World Tier bosses would definitely have the capability of bombarding everyone with countless waves of AoE attacks! They would not have any AoE Skill that have a long cooldown of 30 seconds!

Long before this, Zhang Yang had encountered a boss named 'Martyr Unduin'. Although Martyr Unduin was just a Gray-Silver Tier boss, it was a World Tier boss. With only one of its {Shin Fire Ball}, the boss managed to torch the entire ground up without even have to wait for the Skill to cooldown!

If this boss could also spam its {Timed Energy Charge} without the need to wait for any cooldown period, everyone in the vicinity would be wiped up, in a matter of minutes if they do not activate their Inheritance Transformations.

Upon battling on for 5 to 6 minutes, the boss's HP bar had been reduced by 10%. Judging from that pace, the boss would be taken out in about an hour! Furthermore, no one had activated their Inheritance Transformations just yet. If everyone activates their Inheritance Transformation in the first place, they could have taken down the boss twice as fast as they could now!

However, everyone knew how to do the math. Therefore, players began to activate their Inheritance Transformation the moment their HP bars were healed back to their full state!

Suddenly, there were at least 20 players hopping off from the back of their Flying Mounts. They were flying with their own powers. Those players were either holding a Class A Inheritance or a Class S Inheritance.

The HP bar of the boss was reducing at an insanely fast pace. However, instead of calling the boss a beast, the boss looked more like a plant. The boss only struck out its {Light Energy Ray} and {Timed Energy Charge} even though it was whacked up badly by the players. Sometimes, it would also activate its {Energy Mine,} trying to get players to step on them.

At the beginning of the boss battle, the boss was a threat that everyone could not ignore. However, now that everyone had cast aside their prejudices for the moment to focus their attacks on the boss, the boss was now facing a large bunch of top Tier players all around the world! It was a combination of powerful formation that no Region could form. Every single high Tier player from all around the world were together in this! After everyone activates their Inheritance Transformations, they obtained a large amount of boost on their amount of HP. Because of that, the threat that the boss posed in the beginning of the boss battle had been minimized.

The higher the HP amount, the higher the Margin of Error that players would have. They could also give their Healers more time to heal, if they had more HP. Because of that, it would become harder for the boss to decrease the number of players in the boss battle.

In the blink of an eye, the mushroom head boss had become so pathetic to look at. Its mushroom head was bombarded with players' attacks so badly that it looked like the surface of the moon! There were countless holes all over it!

80%, 70%, 60%!

The HP bar of the boss was decreasing even faster now! The boss could not help it, because most of the high Tier players had activated their Inheritance Transformations now. Even though the boss had insanely powerful attacks, it had an AoE Skill that could not be triggered frequently. Just imagine it. If the boss could activate its {Light Energy Ray} once every two seconds, the situation would have become very different now. The players would still be struggling, even if they activate their Inheritance Transformations!

40%, 30%, 20%!

When the boss's HP had entered its 'Killing Cleave' stage, finally, there were a small number of parties who could no longer hold their heads low. They broke the fragile 'bond' of alliance among the players and started slicing up their 'teammates'!

The first party that went rogue was a party from the Africa Region. They launched their ferocious attacks on another party from Australia Region that was positioned closest to them. Because of that, the PvP matches began to bloom across the battlefield. Things became messy in no time at all! Well, it was actually an expected outcome. The boss would only drop a few powerful pieces of equipment. Even one party would complain that the loots were far from enough for a single party! Furthermore, there could only be one party that completes the main story quest. The only way to 100% secure that was to eliminate all opponents in the vicinity.

Someone had started the war. So, the others followed. More and more parties began to attack the other parties around them. As long as they were not from the same party, just kill them!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his party did not make any move on the other players. They were very focused on bringing the boss down, Because the boss had {Elemental Constitution} that could let the boss recover a certain amount of HP over the time, they could



not afford to let the boss stay idle and heal itself back up! However, everyone was reserving their powerful Skills that had a longer cooldown period for the moment. They planned to use them only at the last possible moment right before the boss dies.

As the battlefield was getting more intense in every passing second, everyone began to get serious. They no longer held back their powerful Skills. They began to activate their super Skills and Spells on their opponents. The visual effects of the Skills bombarding out was just stunning! If anyone is just there to enjoy the view of it, that person would be able to enjoy a spectacular view!

The party battles had begun. The rate of the boss losing its HP began to slow down. If the AoE Skill of the boss could be described as a drizzle before that, then the boss's AoE attacks had suddenly become extremely threatening! Players were slaughtering among themselves while their HP bars were dropping like hell. Even Healers could no longer keep their HP bars up anymore. If they are not careful, they could be taken out by the boss's AoE attacks all of a sudden!

"Zhan Yu!"

Suddenly, a loud roar was heard. 3 parties flew up to Zhang Yang all of a sudden. They were parties from the Justice League, the Dark Palace and the Undying Souls. Every one of them was glaring at Zhang Yang with murderous intent. Obviously, they had come up with a deal that they would be sticking up together until they have taken down Lone Desert Smoke.

"Zhan Yu, you really have a lot of enemies, huh? Haha!" Another party had appeared. They came up to the Lone Desert Smoke --- it was the party from Paragon that was led by God's Left Hand!

Among these 4 parties, there were two players with Class S Inheritance and at least 3 players with Class A Inheritance! Their combined strength had definitely exceeded the strength of Zhang

Yang's party! If they really go head-on with the four parties, Zhang Yang and his party would definitely lose without a doubt!

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu! Need a hand?" Snow Seeker suddenly appeared and smiled. She had led her army of ladies over and stood side by side with the Lone Desert Smoke.

Real friends would not only add icing on the cake. They would offer timely help or support!

Fatty Han immediately screamed, "Ladies from Crimson Rage! You're the best! I'm willing to shoot for you until I die!"

Piak!

Everyone began to whack him up for good. They were aiming their fists and palms at his face. Instantly, Fatty Han was struck to the point that he spun in the air over and over again.

"4 VS 2! Zhan Yu, you still have a small chance of winning, don't you think?" God's Left Hand said coldly. He had been pursued by Zhang Yang before. He even got killed by Zhang Yang and dropped his previous broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]. So, of course he had a score to settle with Zhang Yang.

"Then count us in!" Suddenly, Dusk Phoenix waved her hand and all of her members of the Hell Family went up and stood side by side with the Lone Desert Smoke as well. Although everyone from Hell Family was not willing to do it, who would dare to defy the order of a real-life princess then?

"Dusk Phoenix!" God's Left Hand was infuriated. Then he roared in rage and said, "Don't forget! You're also one of the parties from Europe Region!"

"Cut that crap of yours! So you're saying that you can join forces with the North America Region and the Japan-Korea Region, but I can't join forces with China Region? Oh my pathetic, little God's Left Hand, do you have a stroke or something?" Dusk Phoenix glared at God's Left Hand with rage and said. God's Left Hand was

so infuriated that he was trembling in rage.

Fatty Han just got up from being whacked. He immediately scratched his head and said, "God's Left hand? Hehe, from what I can see, you're jerking off so often that you're godly indeed! We should just call you God's Masturbating Left Hand! Because it's very obvious that you've been jerking off too much that your IQ has decreased, no, deceased, sorry!"

Upon hearing what Fatty Han had to say, everyone laughed out loud. Even the people from Undying Souls, Justice League and Dark Palace were trying to hold back their own laughters.

"You bastard!" God's Left Hand was no longer calm. He fluttered his wings and charged straight at Fatty Han with murderous intent. Right after he made the first move, his party members followed him into battle. Meanwhile, Captain America and his goons did not stand idly. They would not allow Zhang Yang and friends to slaughter God's Left Hand and his party up. So they also charged into battle.

"Oi! Yellow hair guy! I'm not going to get gay with you! You've picked the wrong guy! Starlight! He's all yours! You don't have to hold back for me! Wreck his \*sshole!" Even though the big battle had begun, Fatty Han was still fooling around with his words. He turned and aimed his arrow at a Thief while he screamed in a strange voice.

"Brother Fatty! I don't do gay as well!" Endless Starlight replied in a weak voice.

"Starlight! Keep God's Left Hand busy!" Zhang Yang began to assign combat roles to his party members. God's Left Hand had an extremely tough Defence. However, his Attack power was not too powerful. Endless Starlight would be able to keep him occupied for a long period of time. If Zhang Yang went straight up to God's Left Hand, it would be a waste of Zhang Yang's high damage output! He should be focusing on other matters first.

Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu had locked her attention onto Heart of Destruction. Ever since their encounter back in the Forest Gump's Fortress, Sun Xin Yu was pissed because the battle between the two of them was interrupted before they could finish it off. Well, Heart of Destruction had retreated after he found out that there was no way he and his party could claim victory over the Territory Conquest. Therefore, this would be the continuation of their previous battle. No one should interfere this time!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had turned themselves into killers. They joined hands and charged into the alliance of the four 'countries' and begin to slaughter anyone within their cross-sights.

# Chapter 736: Apocalyptic Bondage

---

God's Left Hand was occupied. Heart of Destruction was engaged in a fierce battle. So who was left to stop the greatest threat of all time, Zhang Yang?

No one!

Hourglass Figure and the members of the Land of Savages were engaged in a fierce battle with two parties that held quite some grudges against them. So there was no way that they would cut in to stop Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er. Felice and the Phoenix pet formed together to become a force so powerful that no one could reckon with them anymore! Furthermore, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} could cause all his enemies to suffer a 75% reduction in their Healing Efficiency. Whoever who gets targeted by them, would be as good as dead, even if that player activates a Class B Inheritance Transformation!

Unfortunately, no one on the battlefield had a milky-light shining down on their heads. Obviously, none of them had come across any broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] recently. Zhang Yang could only sigh and rant. Captain America and God's Left Hand must have slacked off too much because they had yet to locate the other chapters yet even after they had so much time after their last encounter.

So, how would Captain America and God's Left Hand feel if they ever find out about Zhang Yang's rant concerning them?

Even though everyone had basically moved their focus onto the PvP matches, they could still deal quite a remarkable amount of damage to the boss whenever they used their AoE Skills --- the body mass of the boss was just too large! Everyone was basically battling on top of the mushroom head of the boss! Well, there was no doubt that the splash attacks of their AoE attacks would burn

the boss as well!

However, the HP bar of the boss was reducing at a much slower pace, because the boss was only suffering damage from players' AoE Skills. Everyone had the same mentality this time. Clear out every single enemy in the vicinity before focusing back to the boss. Well, it was true that the players could take their own sweet time to kill the boss when there are no enemies left around them. Upon killing the boss, they could also claim the loot all to themselves!

Quite a number of weaker parties began to form alliances among themselves. They intended to work together to take down the parties that were stronger than them. After they could finally take out the stronger parties, they would dissolve their Alliance and battle against each other. Well, survival of the fittest! Therefore, there was no guarantee that the strongest party would be able to last till the end, because of that. After all, everyone here should at least have a certain level of skill to make it into this map. Other than players who held a Class S Inheritance or a Class A Inheritance such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Hourglass Figure, the other players would almost be at the same standard in terms of their skills and experiences.

For instance, Lone Desert Smoke was deemed to have the strongest party of 10 in the entire server. However even they could not take it all if 4 parties formed an Alliance to take them on! If it wasn't for Crimson Rage and Hell Family, the entire party might get wiped out eventually. Or maybe, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue who had a Class S Inheritance might survive the onslaught.

"Take out Zhan Yu first!" Everyone from any of the four parties were screaming and shouting the same thing. That 'godly' existence must be eliminated first if they ever want to win the battle. Everyone already knew about Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} and {Charge Up Strike}. If he ever managed to accumulate 39 EP over a battle, Zhang Yang would pump up his

Attack by using {Charge Up Strike} before giving a full powered blow on his opponent with his {God of War Devastation}. That one single strike after the {Charge Up Strike} could cause devastating damage to 40 players at the same time!

With Zhang Yang's current Attack power, that single attack from his {God of War Devastation} after activating his {Charge Up Strike} could reach up to 4,500,000 damage! That strike could deal that high damage to every one of them within the effective range of the Skill! That was the terrifying part of it! However, even though Zhang Yang's party had formed an Alliance with the Hell Family, the system would not recognize that. Zhang Yang's attack would still spread and hit the members of the Hell Family like they were also the enemies --- well, who would still have the time to think about all that? Even if Zhang Yang really collaterally hit the members of the Hell Family, only the 10 members of Hell Family would become the collateral damage of the battle. As long as Zhang Yang could accumulate another 10 EP, he would be able to get things done!

Accumulating 50 EP would require 500 seconds. If Zhang Yang goes out explosively like that once in every 500 seconds, combined with the attacks from the others around him, God's Left Hand and his goons would definitely be wiped out eventually! Maybe God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction could use their fast movement speed they obtained by having a Class S Inheritance, but the other members of their party would definitely be splattered! So what would be the point of only the two of them surviving by the end of that?

Therefore, their first target must be Zhang Yang, the biggest threat of all time!

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. He noticed that everyone was aiming their guns at him. However, he did not show any signs of retreating. Instead, he went all out on them. The Reaper charged up to Zhang Yang and began to whirl his weapon

like a hurricane.

"Are you in a hurry to die?"

"You arrogant f\*ck!"

"Just f\*ck him up!"

The players from the Alliance of the four parties were infuriated by the arrogant attitude on Zhang Yang's face. They began to launch their most powerful attacks on him. They were venting their rage onto Zhang Yang.

{Tribulation} activated! {Shield Wall} activated! {God of War Shield} activated!

Bring it on! The harder they hit the better!

Countless attacks landed on Zhang Yang. However, at the same time, countless attacks were reflected back at those who were attacking Zhang Yang! High values of damage were dealt right back at the attackers!

Zhang Yang looked literally like a hedgehog. The attackers could still deal damage to him. Well, at least their attacks were reflected back at them. Meanwhile, with Zhang Yang's current Defence, the attackers could only deal about 100,000 damage to him, with each of their attacks. However, Zhang Yang could reflect about 200,000 damage back at the attackers. What's the point of even fighting?

Especially after Zhang Yang had activated his {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang would have over 80,000 Defence upon activating his Inheritance Transformation. There would not be any Physical attack that could penetrate that amount of Defence within these 10 seconds. Even if any Spell attacks could land on Zhang Yang, they would not be able to deal much of a damage to him. However, some of the attacks from his enemies were even resisted!

So no matter what, every single attack that landed on Zhang Yang would be reflected back to the players who attacked him! No one in the current stage of the game could have such an ability to



reflect attacks! Hitting on Zhang Yang was like hitting yourself with all you got!

Furthermore, Daffodil Daydream, Snow Seeker and the others would not just stay idle. They were also dealing damage from aside. Receiving attacks from both sides, these players who were surrounding Zhang Yang instantly suffered a tremendous reduction in their HP!

Dumbfounded!

They just stood there dumbfounded!

They were really dumbfounded!

What the hell! How could there be such an insane Skill in the game? How could anyone have survived that!

"Stop attacking Zhan Yu now!"

"F\*ck your mother! I almost got killed because my attacks were reflected back at me!"

The best way to handle the {Tribulation} would be to let one person kite Zhang Yang around for over 10 minutes. After all, the {Tribulation} can basically reflect everything back at any attackers that attempt to attack Zhang Yang. As long as no one tries to deal any damage or a very low amount of damage on Zhang Yang, {Tribulation} would basically become useless.

However, the most important thing was that even if Zhang Yang did not have his {Tribulation}, he would still be as powerful as a god-slayer! They ganged up on him because they were afraid of his terrifying attacks. The situation became awkward for Zhang Yang's enemies because whoever tried to attack him, they would be receiving back a damage value that was higher than the damage they dealt on him. Well, hitting him was like hitting themselves even harder! So they stopped their assaults on Zhang Yang for the moment.

There was only one word to describe their situation right now.

Pathetic!

How about trying to use Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang? Well, Zhang Yang could just use his [Mobility Potion], {Warrior's Will}, or his other Accessories to break free from the Status Restriction Effects! Furthermore, it was not like all 40 of them were battling against one Zhang Yang. Some of them were preoccupied with their own opponents at the moment. They did not get much chance to really focus their firepower on Zhang Yang. If only they could focus all of their attacks on Zhang Yang all the time, they might have a slight chance of taking out Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and whirled his 'death scythe' at his enemies. His God of War EP was slowly accumulating!

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

Shoof! A shadow of an axe flashed across the battlefield. 36 players received a damage of 4,500,000. Because Zhang Yang had activated an AoE Skill that spread out wide into the surrounding, not only God's Left Hand and Alliance members were inflicted with damage, even the boss and a few unfortunate members of the Hell Family were caught in the blast!

His attack was totally dope! Players who activate their Class B Inheritance Transformation lost over half of their total HP! Meanwhile, judging from the intensified situation of the battle, Healers were not able to do a thing to support them. Most of them lost more than 50% of their total amount of HP! It would already be a fortunate thing if their HP did not go down below 20%!

Right after that strike, about 20 players were instantly killed! They turned into streams of white light and reported themselves at the Graveyard!

"Wah! Noon tank, that Skill is too awesome!" Wei Yan Er's eyes

were widened and glittering. Even though she also had her own powerful AoE Skill, that was only 8 times stronger than her Strength attribute. She could only deal approximately 140,000 damage to each of her enemies within her attack range. The damage that Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} could deal would be far more than that!

However, both {God of War Devastation} and {Charge Up Strike} had over 1 minute of cooldown period. Furthermore, Zhang Yang needed to accumulate a certain amount of EP before he could deal that much of a damage to all his foes. It was not like he could just use it anytime and anywhere he wanted.

Facing such an insane attack from Zhang Yang, the Alliance of the four parties were began to falter. Having a god slayer as their opponent, they had no idea how to win the battle.

"Zhan Yu! I'm your opponent!" God's Left Hand managed to tear himself off Endless Starlight. He fluttered his wings and flew up to Zhang Yang. Well, he was probably the only one who had enough Defence and Healing power to make up with the reflective ability of Zhang Yang's {Tribulation}. He is probably the only one who could hold Zhang Yang off from unleashing hell upon his newly formed Alliance!

"I'm not going to waste my time on you! Pui!" Well, there was nothing beneficial getting himself engaged with a player that has a high Defence and a high Healing ability after all. Zhang Yang did not even look at God's Left Hand. He continued to whirl about his weapon at the other members of the Alliance in an attempt to kill as many of them as possible.

"Argh ---" God's Left Hand felt so humiliated that he let out a raging roar. He swung his left hand and threw a beam of white light onto Zhang Yang. The white light sank into Zhang Yang's body immediately.

[Apocalyptic Bondage]: Makes the target focus only on you. Lasts

for 10 minutes.

This was a new Skill that God's Left Hand had learned when he reached Level 160. It was a Skill on the same level as the {Tribulation}. However, this Skill could forcefully acquire aggro from the target!

Instantly, Zhang Yang was like entered a state of 'void'. Other than God's Left Hand, everyone had vanished without a trace! In other words, other than God's Left hand, he could not battle anyone else!

What an impervious Skill! What the f\*ck!? That had really 'disabled' Zhang Yang from the battlefield for good!

{Warrior's Will}? Ineffective!

Invincibility Effect from his other Accessories? Ineffective as well!

The feeling was akin to how Captain America and the others felt with his {Tribulation}. Zhang Yang was annoyed and irritated by this {Apocalyptic Bondage} as much as that!

"God's Masturbating Left Hand! If you really wanted me to kill you so badly, I'll satisfy you! I'm a simple man!" Zhang Yang slit over to God's Left Hand in lightning speed and swung his 'death scythe' straight at his neck. However, Zhang Yang was reserving all of his AoE Skills for the moment.

Although he could not see the others in his surroundings, that did not necessarily mean that he had vanished from the battlefield and ended up somewhere else. Well, a single unit attack could not land on anyone when the player is unable not lock on onto the target. However, an AoE attack did not require the player to lock on their targets in order to hit their foes. As long as their targets are standing within the effective range of the AoE attack, they would surely be hit by the impact of the Skill!

As expected, Hundred Shots and the others immediately reported

back to Zhang Yang after Zhang Yang struck out with his {God of War Crushing Strike} --- effective! Their enemies had been hit by the impact of Zhang Yang's devastating Skill!

However, Zhang Yang was still better at focusing his attack on one single target. Although the impact of his {God of War Crushing Strike} could spread out quite a distance, each strike could only deal an AoE attack of 180,000 Damage. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would need 30 seconds just to accumulate 3 EP. Actually, that was quite similar to the boss's {Timed Energy Charge}. It would not cause much harm to players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation. Well, at least the threat he posed was not fatal.

Zhang Yang's Inheritance had really showed the others how a high Attack power looked like! The name of the God of War prevails. Meanwhile, God's Left Hand was more focused on protecting his party members. The {Apocalyptic Bondage} that was cast on Zhang Yang had crippled his Attack power. Zhang Yang had been restrained so badly that he could only move around like a blind man. If it weren't for the {Tribulation} that he activated on himself, Zhang Yang would have been struck down by the attacks from all of his enemies in his surroundings!

Never underestimate a Class S Inheritance Transformation! Not even a little! Every single one of the Inheritance Transformation in the game had their own unique traits. After all, Class S Inheritances were unique in their own way, in which only one person would have one Class S Inheritance!

Zhang Yang began to unleash his attacks on God's Left Hand like a crazy person. Meanwhile, God's Left Hand was attempting to delay the inevitable. He was defending himself against Zhang Yang's assaults while trying to heal his party members. He did a remarkable job in both defending and healing.

# Chapter 737: Fall between Two Stools

---

However, when it comes down to Healing Ability, no one in the entire server would match the Healing Ability of Han Ying Xue!

Although God's Left Hand's Healing Capability could really pack a punch, he was also half-oriented on his Defence as well. Unlike Han Ying Xue, he did not lose himself fully in the art of healing. Under the circumstance of having a Class S Inheritance, how could a player who cultivates both Defence and healing match the ability of a player who fully cultivates only in healing? Of course, there would be a difference between them!

As long as Han Ying Xue does not die on the battlefield, she could basically assure that everyone in her party could stay alive, at least! Of course, she could only do it under the circumstance that she was not affected by any Status Restriction Skill. She had to be able to healing her party members without any restriction.

The party was holding up solid. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang could only threaten God's Left Hand, because he was being whammied by God's Left Hand's {Apocalyptic Bondage}. So he decided to fully focus on taking God's Left Hand out first. Zhang Yang no longer afford to hold back on him anymore as he began to bombard God's Left Hand with everything he had.

Back in the day at Souron's castle, Zhang Yang had pressured God's Left Hand so much that he could only cry in misery while trying to run away from Zhang Yang. Now that he had some Holy Tier equipment on, his Attack power had increased even further. With him attacking at full strength, God's Left Hand felt a pressure that he had never felt before in his entire life, playing this game!

Fortunately for him, God's Left Hand had also switched a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment before this. Although his shield was still an Ethereal Tier equipment, his total amount of HP had been boosted up to over 700,000 HP. Upon activating his Inheritance

Transformation, God's Left Hand now had over 28,000,000 HP!

With a higher amount of HP, it gave more room for God's Left Hand to maximize the potential of his Healing Ability. If he has too little amount of HP and he gets killed in an instant, there would be no healing to begin with, would there? If he has an average amount of HP, he might get interrupted while he chanting his Spells. When that happens, he might get killed by Zhang Yang with a series of combination attacks!

With a total amount of 28,000,000 HP, even if Zhang Yang charged up with his {Charge Up Strike} before activating his {God of War Devastation} or other high damage Skills like {God of War Battle Axe}, Zhang Yang could only deal a basic damage of approximately 4,500,000 to God's Left Hand --- that being said, Zhang Yang could deal that much damage only if God's Left Hand did not have any Damage Immunity or Damage Absorption!

Therefore, even if God's Left Hand is interrupted while he is chanting, he would not be taken out immediately, even if Zhang Yang chains a combination. On the other hand, as long as he survives Zhang Yang's attacks, he could just constantly healing himself up so that he could drag the battle on for as long as he desired. His main objective was to distract Zhang Yang long enough for his Alliance 'friends' to kill Zhang Yang's party and friends.

At first, the battle began with 40 players VS 30 players. Obviously, God's Left Hand and his newly formed Alliance had the upper hand in the battle. However, thanks to Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} that was charged up by his {Charge Up Strike}, half of his people were killed instantly. Truth to be told, he and his newly formed Alliance were destined to lose even after he managed to isolate Zhang Yang from the others.

Tragically, God's Left Hand noticed that his newly formed Alliance was losing badly. His own party members were barely hanging on because they still had God's Left Hand to heal them.

There was no way that they could annihilate their enemies at this rate. However, the party members of the other parties in the newly formed Alliance could not heal each other. As God's Left Hand could not heal all of them, and they could only wait for their miserable death to come.

The effect of the {Destructive Smash} was definitely a crippling factor to 'healing'. Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} could reduce up to 75% of the enemies' Healing Efficiency. Even though God's Left Hand was holding on for the moment, it seemed that he was just prolonging the inevitable. His HP bar was reducing constantly, even though he was healing himself at his full capacity.

God's Left Hand sighed in his heart. If he had made up his mind to use {Apocalyptic Bondage} at the beginning of the battle, the current situation of this battle might be totally the opposite of the current situation! Well, firstly, he had gotten tangled up with Endless Starlight at the start. Secondly, he did not make his decision quick enough because of Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash}. He did not have the confidence to ensure that his Alliance would hold up long enough before they annihilate their enemies!

Meanwhile, if he dies while doing so, his party would have zero chance of securing the quest to themselves. Well, without a leader with Class S Inheritance, the outcome would surely be very different. Although he really wanted to kill Zhang Yang to show his retaliation, deep down in his heart, he knew. It was quite common for players to slaughter each other up. People would say 'Just Business'. They were just following the game's rules after all.

Therefore, he decided to focus their priority on completing the quest. That was the moment when he put down the resolution to have a death battle with Zhang Yang. However, he had never thought possible that Zhang Yang would come out so aggressively, beyond everything that he had imagined. Zhang Yang actually took the opportunity of a gap and ended 20 of his men! The battle was basically lost!



If he had known that it would come to this, he would have acted differently!

So God's Left Hand immediately made a crucial decision. He began to take a few steps back. With the agile movement speed of his Class S Inheritance, he could seize the chance and start retreating immediately. By then, even Zhang Yang would not be able to catch him. However, because the boss was not yet dead, he could not escape from the vicinity of the boss battle. He could only run around in a limited area.

Heart of Destruction had also made the same decision that God's Left Hand did. After all, when a player with a Class S Inheritance has activated an Inheritance Transformation, it would be really hard for anyone to catch up with their speed.

With the two top Tier players running away, the entire Alliance was wiped out clean in an instant. However, that was not the end of the battle just yet! The three parties immediately turned off to kill the other parties. There were still some cleaning up to do in the area!

When Zhang Yang got out from the {Apocalyptic Bondage}, the boss battle was about to reach its end. Not only did players have to deal with other players in battle, they also had to face the wrath of the boss and its wide AoE attacks. Anyone would have died in that kind of circumstances! Other than Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage and Hell Family, only the Land of Savages still had their heads intact! Meanwhile, the other parties only had their best players left on their parties. For instance, God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction.

When the final HP of the boss was struck out, the 'rod' of the Spiritual Beast King began to break into seven or eight pieces. Then everything began to collapse towards the ground.

--- even though the players were battling against each other, their AoE attacks had been splashing onto the boss. As the battle had

gone on for quite a while, those attacks had slowly tortured the boss to its demise!

Instantly, every player right on top of the 'Mushroom Head' began to fall. Fortunately for them, they were securely saddled up on their Flying Mounts. Players with Class S and Class A Inheritance could fly with their own flying abilities. Immediately, everyone levitated in the middle of the air. However, the next moment was the moment of chaos! Everyone began to descend down towards the spot where the boss was spawned!

It was the moment where everyone needs to snatch the loots dropped by the boss and dismantle the bomb to complete the quest!

"Ice queen, Witchy Snow! You two get really to pick up the loot! I'll throw the bomb! The rest of you, just focus on stopping anyone who tries to get close to us!" Zhang Yang immediately said.

Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were currently in their Inheritance Transformation forms. So, they could fly at their top speed, making them the most suitable candidates to snatch the loots.

Almost at the same time, Crimson Rage, Hell Family and Land of Savages had also made the same decision, assigning the fastest players of their parties to snatch the loots and dismantle the bomb! The rest of their members would be stopping whoever tried to get near!

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang turned around in the air and struck out a conical area of impact wave towards his front. He managed to stun a few players right in front of them while he made his way to the ground.

The situation had become critical. It was like immortals attempting to cross the sea, each of them showing their special prowess! While some of them were showing off their skills and

tactics, the others were blocking each other from getting near to the ground. Some of them even tried to avoid being afflicted by any Status Restriction Skills. The entire battlefield was spectacular.

All of the players with Class S Inheritance had the advantage of super-agile movement speed over the others. So, they were able to fully utilize this advantage of theirs in such a situation. Although the 6 players with Class S Inheritance were coming from different directions, the distance between them and their destination was almost the same. The winner of this race remained unclear.

Because Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had Zhang Yang throwing the bomb, they could fully focus on charging straight at the loot that was dropped by the boss. Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the other three players with Class S Inheritance were taking out their bombs and had thrown them at the spot where the boss died. That was the spot where players could throw the bombs and dismantle the bomb!

As they were descending at high speed, Zhang Yang, Hourglass Figure, God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction were obviously charging towards the direction of the bombs while Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were charging towards the loot! The two spots were just approximately 50 meters away from each other. Well, they did not seem to be two different spot when everyone was still pretty far away from them. However, they began to see that they were actually attt two different spots as they were getting nearer to the ground.

100 meters, 50 meters, 20 meters!

Hourglass Figure and the other 2 threw their bombs towards the ground at the same instant! Right after that, they immediately turned towards the direction of the loots to see if they could still snatch something for themselves.

Zhang Yang grinned while he was descending. 20 meters was

merely a distance that he could pass by in only 0.1 second or 0.2 second! After all, he was at his top speed right now! He suddenly swung his scythe and slashed one of the bombs out of its flying course. Meanwhile, he kicked the other two bombs out of their flying courses as well right before they could land.

At the same time, Zhang Yang took out the bomb in his inventory. After he activated the bomb, he threw it straight into the spot.

--- the untrustworthy bomb made by the goblins would not explode immediately after you throw it out. You'll need to activate it first before you throw it out!

After all, God's Left Hand and the others had started to move for the loots slower than Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. So they could only stare at the two ladies sweeping the loots clean into their own pockets. However, they did not mind that so much because their real focus was on the final reward of the quest, if they could ever complete it, of course! Equipment would always be 'eliminated' when newer Tiers of equipment begin to appear at the later stages of the game.

However, when they turned their heads around, they coincidentally saw Zhang Yang 'cleaning' their bombs away from the spot! They were infuriated so much that their nose became crooked!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three bombs exploded one after another. However, the flashing beam underneath the boss's dead body was still there. That being said, the three bombs did not hit the right spot, and the quest was not completed by any three of them!

Although God's Left Hand and the other two attempted to salvage the situation by attempting to destroy Zhang Yang's bomb, they were not fast enough.

Boom!

A large explosive sound echoed across the entire boss battle area. The explosion was far louder than the previous three bombs when they first exploded by the hands of Zhang Yang. Everyone could feel the impact of the bomb that they were almost blown away by the air! More importantly, the HP of everyone was reduced to 1 point!

Zhang Yang and his gang had experienced the same thing before this. So, they quickly activated their life-saving Skills and took down a bottle of Healing Potion just in case. It would always better to be safe than sorry. Having only 1 HP would make the player extremely vulnerable, one small tap could have killed the player, after all!

After the dust had begun to settle down, the blinking beam underneath the boss had vanished. The phenomenon indicated that the quest had been completed! The others would have to wait for Zhang Yang and his gang to hand in the quest first before they could repeat the quest again.

Well, that was not going to happen anyway!

Hourglass Figure and the others were crying their faces off. If they had known better, they should have charge for the loots instead. Now, it became a fall between two stools for them. They got nothing at all by the end of it.

A tragedy indeed!

Well, there was no point for the players to continue killing each other now. Everyone took out their teleportation scrolls and left the area with regret.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, we've helped you so much! Are you going to cast us aside and pretend that nothing ever happened?" upon returning to Sauron's Castle, Snow Seeker immediately looked Zhang Yang up and smiled at him.

Indeed, without the support of the Crimson Rage, Zhang Yang and his gang would have been wiped out entirely. Even if Dusk Phoenix came to the rescue, the battle would also be 20 VS 40. Zhang Yang and his friends would still stand no chance of winning at all.

Zhang Yang winked at Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, then he said, "Give me the loot that the boss dropped. All of them!"

The two ladies cooperated well with Zhang Yang and threw only the Ethereal Tier equipment over to him. Without saying another word, Zhang Yang shoved them over to Snow Seeker and generously said, "Here you go!"

Snow Seeker rolled her eyes incredulously.

# Chapter 738: Protect the Giant Dragon!

---

Of course, Zhang Yang would not take advantage of the Crimson Rage to such an extent. Even though Crimson Rage was helping themselves by helping the Lone Desert Smoke, they also had the notion to snatch the equipment and complete the quest.

Well, what's done was done. They had extended their help to the Lone Desert Smoke. Without Crimson Rage's support, maybe Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would not die, but Zhang Yang's other party members would have suffered a great loss.

After teasing Snow Seeker for a little while, even though Zhang Yang did not pass the Holy Tier equipment that they got from the boss's loots, he still gave Snow Seeker quite a substantial amount of [Armor Piercing Potions], [Amateur Power Potions] and [Temporary Invincibility Potions], for free, of course. Snow Seeker knew that she would never be able to sweep fortune from Zhang Yang anymore, so she was content with what she got from him.

Everyone went back to White Jade Castle. Zhang Yang and his gang did not rush back to hand in their quest. Because, once they hand in the quest, it would trigger the next phase of the quest! Everyone would be receiving the next quest as well! Meanwhile, now that Zhang Yang and his gang were holding the 'trigger' of the next quest, they could pick any other time to trigger the next quest in the coming days. Well, as long as the Ancient Spiritual Beast King is not respawned just yet, Zhang Yang and his gang could take their own sweet time for the moment.

They gathered by the Identifying Shop in the main city. Since they had returned back to the castle, there was no need for them to waste Zhang Yang's [Identifying Scrolls]. After all, they would not get any discount or benefits if they just use the scrolls to identify their equipment.

The boss had dropped a few equipment that were slightly above average. There were two Holy Tier equipment and four Ethereal Tier equipment --- Snow Seeker went all seductive on Zhang Yang, trying to strike a good deal with him. Well, she did not return the four Ethereal Tier equipment to Zhang Yang. After all, she knew that Zhang Yang must have kept some good stuff to himself. Everyone knew that the Holy Tier equipment was still considered as the Top Tier equipment at the current stage of the game.

Other than that, there were also one [Skill Point Crystal], one [Engineering Recipe], and two [Top Tier Aura Stones].

After some consideration, Zhang Yang passed the two [Top Tier Aura Stones] over to Han Ying Xue, allowing her to enhance her {Life Aura} up to level 9. Having a 27% increase in her healing ability would definitely be helpful to the entire party. Even though {Strength Aura} was also a good choice, limiting a Spellcaster's ability to merely strength would do no good to the Spellcaster or his or her party members. Meanwhile, Hunters and Thieves would require a better touch on their Agility attribute.

The two Holy Tier equipment were a Heavy Armor helmet and a cloth-made boots. Fatty Han was extremely disappointed this time around. Well, he only got one piece of Holy Tier equipment, after so long.

[Rock Guardian's Helmet]

Defence: +640

Vitality: +16,803

Strength: +4,120

Intelligence: +1,750

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 33,600 points.



Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When being hit, absorbs 1,778 Damage.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Because of the additional Intelligence Attribute, it would be better for Endless Starlight to have it. That fellow was smiling so joyfully that his eyes were almost closed. Well, he did look like a pervert after all.

"If that God's Masturbating Left Hand could just look at this piece of equipment, he would definitely be drooling, or maybe stare his eyes out!" Fatty Han laughed. Of course, that curious brat Wei Yan Er kept asking about the meaning behind 'God's Masturbating Left Hand'.

Indeed, that helmet could really boost God's Left Hand up for good. Not only could the equipment provide an increase on Vitality, it could also increase quite an amount of Defence, Attack, and even Intelligence Attributes! There was nothing missing from this equipment at all! It really maximized its function by increasing the attributes of whoever wearing it!

"Let him burn! If we show him this one day, let him burn his eyes out!" Everyone was laughing out loud. If Zhang Yang did not take the initiative to go all out on them while getting blinded by God's Left Hand's {Apocalyptic Bondage} just a little sooner, Zhang Yang and his gang could have lost the battle badly. Naturally, they were irked by the presence of God's Left Hand.

The next equipment was the boots. It had quite a decent appearance and was white in color.

[Lunar's Casual Boots]

Defence: +128

Vitality: +8,402

Intelligence: +2,060

Spirit: +875

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,120 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When being hit, absorb 1,778 Damage.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

After a round of rolling their dices, the exquisite boots was claimed by Fantasy Sweetheart. That had really increased her healing capacity by a notch! The Chinese perverts would say, that could really increase her Cup Size by a notch!

It was natural that Hundred Shots was the one who took the [Engineering Recipe]. However, after he learned it, he smiled bitterly. So it seemed that the recipe taught him how to make [Elemental Bombs]. Before he could even start making them, Wei Yan Er had booked 10 sets of it!

[Elemental Bomb]: (Consumable)

Use: Causes 5,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 3X3 meters where the bomb detonates. Cooldown: 1 second. Range: 30 meters.

Required Level: 150

If it wasn't for the Required Level restriction, those players who were lower in levels could have used these bombs to blow all monsters in the low-level dungeons or low-level regions to kingdom come!

However, the impact of the bomb had improved. Therefore, the cost of making one would definitely increase a lot. Each [Elemental Bomb] would take up a cost of 10 gold pieces to make. So, each set

would require 2,000 gold pieces to make. That made 10 sets cost 20,000 gold pieces! No wonder Hundred Shots smiled bitterly when the little brat asked him to make them for her!

However, everyone was earning quite a tremendous amount of income from the profit coming from Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. Hundred Shots would definitely be able to spend that little bit of money to make them for the little brat. After all, everyone was treating the little brat like their own younger sister. That was the weird part of it. Even though she was literally a little b\*tch, everyone still loved her.

A while ago, they had soaked themselves in the Volcanic Dragon Mountain for over 9 days. Everyone was tired of slaying monsters. So, they decided to give themselves a few days of rest. They wanted to accompany their family for a little bit. It would be wrong to keep soaking oneself in the game. Although 'God's Miracle' looked real inside, everything was still virtual. They do not exist in real life, after all.

Meanwhile, there was some movement in the Beijing region. The organization of Sun had launched a full investigation on the Liu family. The inspection team of Sun family had launched a raid and countless inner circle members of Liu Wei had been greeted with disciplinary measure outside the regular legal system under which they were all detained and interrogated. At the same time, the Liu family business executives were also arrested in full swing. This family was once the 'ruler' of the city. But now, the hammer of justice had been dropped right on their faces! Although the official results had not been declared just yet, everyone knew that they were done for, this time around. Well, their 'reign' had finally been put to rest. So that's how karma works.

After Chen Xue Yao found out about the news, she began to cry in joy. She even hugged Zhang Yang and kissed him violently. However, when Zhang Yang began to feel a little heated up, she withdrew rapidly, leaving Zhang Yang a great memory, the

shadow of her back leaving the office door --- so this was her revenge for grabbing her a few rounds, that night, huh? Should she really try to torture him so much?

Arresting was easy, however, it would really take a long time to slowly find evidence to back up every crime that these officers and Liu family had done in the past. Meanwhile, they would have to consider the influence on the society before they wanted to do something. Well, from the looks of it, it could take up to half a year or even 1 full year. When the incident had begun to fade into the memories of the society, the officials could just sentence Liu Wei and his associates in low profile.

However, good things never last. The words were true. A few days later, something that Zhang Yang find it hard to accept happened --- Liu Wei was released from the prison!

Even though the Liu family was destined to be crippled in the end, letting Liu Wei out of the cage was like giving a psycho a knife and let him out into the street full of people! Sun Xin Yu came back with the news shortly after it happened. Apparently, it was Chong Xiu Hua who bailed Liu Wei out of the cage!

Well, even though Chong Xiu Hua had a very influential and powerful background supporting him, he could not have saved all of Liu Wei's family and his associates. However, things would be different if he just attempts to save one unimportant man! Obviously, Chong Xiu Hua had found out about the relationship between Zhang Yang and Liu Wei. It seemed like he wanted to use that factor to get rid of Zhang Yang!

Well, Chong Xiu Hua did not even have to feed Liu Wei any poisonous words in order to get him moving. All he would need to do was to tell Liu Wei that Zhang Yang was the one who was responsible for the downfall of his entire empire and his family! Liu Wei would make his move on Zhang Yang all by himself! Meanwhile, Chong Xiu Hua need not have to care if things work out or not. He did not even spend much to set everything up. He

just had to sit back and watch a good drama unveil before his eyes.

That was really something to worry about!

Liu Wei had been an arrogant f\*ck who had always used extreme measures on his enemies. When he finds out that Zhang Yang was the one behind the downfall of his family, he would definitely come after Zhang Yang, without a doubt. He would only wish Zhang Yang to be dead. So, only god knows what he would really do to Zhang Yang and his loved ones!

Zhang Yang felt that there was a need to intensify the security measures around them. He wanted to make sure the ladies are safe from Liu Wei. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had nothing to worry about Sun Xin Yu. Firstly, she had all it takes to take care of herself. Secondly, her family background would be a determining factor that ensures Liu Wei would never make a move on her --- unless he no longer wanted to live!

Well, judging from Liu Wei's personality, he would not have put himself in any harm's way even if he wanted to retaliate so badly. Therefore, Zhang Yang only had to worry about Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream. Of course, he needed to worry about Chen Xue Yao as well!

Chen Xue Yao was also one of Liu Wei's most hated person other than Zhang Yang. Other than that, she was living alone out there. Even if something bad happens to her, it would take days to discover if anything bad happens to her.

Zhang Yang had thought about it thoroughly. He spent a lot of money hiring bodyguards from the Security Firm. Well, he was not short on money at all. He could afford it all without a problem now. If anything happens to any of his ladies, he would definitely regret it for the rest of his life! Not only did he hire some extra muscles to guard by his house, he also installed security systems and security cameras all over the place. The ladies would also have bodyguards protecting them from the dark whenever they went

out. That included Chen Xue Yao as well. However, Zhang Yang did not inform her about it though.

From another perspective, Zhang Yang was hoping that Liu Wei would become reckless and come after him. By then, Zhang Yang could have the rights for justified 'self-defense' and take him out of the picture for good! However, Liu Wei would never be so reckless that he would go on and take risks. Instead, he would just hire people to do his dirty job.

Putting everything in his mind aside, Zhang Yang logged into the game again. Upon gathering all members of his party of 10, they went on to hand in the quest.

'Ding! You've completed a quest: Destroying the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory! You have received a reward: 20,000,000 Experience Point, 100 Military Points.'

Guraj was looking at everyone with a content face. Then he said, "Warriors, you've once again defeated the fiery spirit of the Spectre! However, a few of my associates have stolen some of the Energy Crystals and sold them to the god damn Spectres! They value money more than the world! Those nincompoops!"

"This ain't over yet!" Guraj screamed in a strange voice pitch. Then he continued to say, "The Spectre have not halted their development of the 'Darkness Falls'! You must try harder!"

"Creating the 'Darkness Falls' will require an important kind of crystal, that's the Giant Dragon's heart! Those undead Spectres will send an army so huge that the ground will tremble before their marching! They will be launching their assaults on The Green Dragon Elphenise on the Mount Apaq! So fellow Warriors, you must cut off the head of the Spectre Mathuven and show those undead Spectres that we're not to be trifled with!"

'Ding! You've automatically accepted a Main Story Quest: Protect the Giant Dragon!'

[Protect the Giant Dragon] (Difficulty: S-Rank)

Description: The Spectres are still developing their 'Darkness Falls'. Their next target will be The Green Dragon Elphenise's Heart! Warrior, you must put a stop to these Spectres' plan. You must not let them get what they want!

Number of players: 10 (Maximum)

Completion: Bring back the sword hilt of the Skeleton General Mathuven 0/1

Reward: Sacred Badge, + 50,000,000 Experience Points, + 1,000 Military Points

[Sacred Badge] (Accessory)

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Use: Immunes you from any Damage or Status Restriction Effect. Increases your Critical Rate by 20%. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Bound upon pick up.

# Chapter 739: World Boss

---

This quest was automatically assigned to the player. As long as players have reached Level 160, it would not matter where you are, the system will shove this quest onto your quest list by force. Other than that, the Quest Assistant had also given a clear description of the boss of that quest.

Skeleton Admiral Mathuven, a Level 185 Holy Tier boss, a World Tier boss!

As a World Tier boss, this Mathuven should be extremely powerful and difficult to take on! Currently, Zhang Yang had only encountered a Level 20+ World Tier boss called 'Martyr Unduin', Queen Serena, and the 'good' spectre princess. Well, she was faithful to her love, at least.

Mathuven would lead an army of Spectre to launch a full-scale attack on The Green Dragon Alphonse at 7 p.m, 3 days from now. The location of the battle would be Mount ApaQ which was located on the map of Rock Flatland.

Well, the Holy Tier equipment listed in the reward description of the quest was extremely appealing. They were more than enough to send countless players charging into the boss battle. Furthermore, everyone knew how hard it was to even get one piece of Accessory in this game. Most of the Level 100 players were still wearing their Level 50 Accessories until now. Therefore, the appearance of one Level 180 top Tier Accessory as one of the rewards for killing this boss could really get the mainstream players crazy!

Other than that, the notion of battling a World boss would really get people rolling! The boss would definitely drop a powerful Skill Book or a [Forbidden Scroll], or any other extremely powerful item! Well, people would not be focusing their attention on the Holy Tier equipment if they ever knew about this.



Not to mention that the boss would be coming in with a large army. When there were a large number of monsters, players could slay the monsters and earn some Glory Points to be exchanged for some powerful equipment! Even though the top Tier players would not be interested in those equipment, normal players would be. Other than clearing a high-level dungeon, this would be an alternative method for the players to get 'top Tier' equipment for themselves!

Other than that, if the players could slay the boss by the end of the boss battle, every single player who takes part in the boss battle would acquire a level +2 reward! However, if the players ever fail to slay the boss, players from the entire server would receive a penalty of level -3! In other words, no one could afford to lose the boss battle. No one would choose to stay out of this boss battle!

Immediately, the guilds mobilized their entire force onto the task. All Level 130 players would be summoned to enter the Rock Flatland after 3 days. Telling players who had not reached Level 155 to battle a Level 185 boss would cause them to suffer the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. However, gathering hundreds of thousands, or millions, or even hundreds of millions of players together to attack a boss would definitely be effective. With everyone combining their power together, the power level of the players would become tremendous!

Of course, the body mass of the boss would be large enough for millions of players to lay waste to it. Well, there was also a possibility that the body mass of the boss would be much larger than the Ancient Spiritual Beast King. The first benefit of having a large number of players in a boss battle was that players would be able to contribute an abundant amount of damage to the boss. Secondly, with so many players bombarding their attacks on the boss, the boss would not be able to escape or dodge so many attacks at the same time. That would keep the boss in its battle mode!

After all, the boss would only use passive Skills like {Spectre

Constitution} to recover its HP bar. If the boss could recover 1% HP every 30 seconds, it would take 50 minutes for the boss to fully recover one full bar of its HP bar. However, things would work differently if the boss ever gets out of its battle mode. The boss could recover over 10% HP every second! 10 seconds would be all the time the boss needs to fully recover its HP bar!

Just imagine this. The players have managed to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 5% after giving their best efforts. However, they get wiped out all of a sudden. When they run all the way back to the boss, they tragically realize that the boss has fully recovered its HP bar. The players would be crying in misery, and some of them might even wish to die after all the trouble they put themselves through! However, if the number of players is high enough, they could arrange players in formations. Waves of players could be assigned to attack the boss at a different time to keep the flow of the battle smooth. Even if the players could only deal a small amount of damage to the boss, at least the boss would not leave from its battle mode. Then, the players would stand a chance to kill the boss, eventually.

Lone Desert Smoke had done the same thing as well. They also assembled their players who had reached Level 130 or beyond Level 130 to participate in the boss battle. The number of members from the main guild had reached more than 80,000 players!

Everyone was cracking their knuckles, waiting for the 3 days to pass. Mathuven would be the first World boss for most of the players. However, when events such as Spectres invading the main cities happen, the Celestial Tier boss called Angus would naturally be the Super World boss!

The Leader of the Seven Wraith and the leader of the Nine Demons were all Super World bosses. It should be extremely hard to battle against them all! In Zhang Yang's previous life, the players had been able to take down Angus because they received powerful support from a bunch of powerful NPCs. However, there

were still other 15 Celestial Tier bosses staying 'peacefully' in the game.

Even Celestial Tier bosses had their own different grades. For instance, Angus was considered one of the lowest among the other Celestial Tier bosses. Therefore, Angus was only Level 230. However, Madravich was a Level 300 Celestial Tier boss. The difference of levels between each of the Celestials was meant to distinguish the difference between the skills and power level of the bosses. Meanwhile, the last on the grade list was the Demon Lord Kenzack who was also Level 230. During that time, the players had already exceeded Level 200. Well, they were supposed to be capable of slaying Kenzack, because they would no longer be affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game.

However, even after players from all 8 Regions had put aside their prejudices and enmities to take down Kenzack, they were no match for the boss at all. They had attempted to slay Kenzack twice. The players were wiped out by Kenzack with ease!

That should show how powerful a World boss could be!

Zhang Yang let his imagination run wild for a bit. He was imagining the blood-boiling moments when he battled the Celestial Tier boss in his previous life. He could not help but feel pumped and all. He hoped that he could just lure Angus out of hiding and start a war with the boss, right away! However, that would not be possible, if the Main Story Quests are completed yet. Therefore, everyone would only be stuck with continuous events, where the disturbance of the Spectre were ever-present.

However, even though the Spectres that appeared in front of the players seemed weak, as time passes, these Spectres that keep causing disturbance to the cities and towns in the game would become much stronger. Furthermore, they would stop dropping equipment and items soon.

When the disturbance of the Spectre reaches a certain critical

level, the Spectres would acquire the ability to launch their attacks on main cities and Territories to force players into completing the Main Story Quests. By doing so, the development of the drama in the game would continue on.

While Zhang Yang was drifting away into his fantasy world, he suddenly heard loud knocks on his door. Chen Xue Yao came into his room like a snake. She brought a cup of coffee with her as usual --- well, she would come to Zhang Yang trying to understand the development of Liu Wei's cases on a daily basis.

Actually, she only needed to ask once a week. After all, the investigations were pretty time-consuming. However, Zhang Yang suspected that this woman was trying to 'retaliate'. She would always sit on his lap while asking the questions. Did she really need to do that? Furthermore, she had also buttoned up her clothes so tightly that her body shape was obviously shown. She even lowered down the front of her collar so low that her two boobies were half exposed!

That was not all. Why was she wearing suspender straps with fasteners attached to a girdle belt to hold up her sexy stockings? Why would she even wear stockings with laces?! It was in the middle of the day now! Sometimes, she would even purposely 'expose' her underwear to Zhang Yang! Although Zhang Yang could only see it vaguely, Zhang Yang's rich imagination would instantly get his 'brother' rock hard!

"Mr.Zhang, so how have things going with the investigations on Liu Wei's case?" This b\*tch was asking him nonchalantly, like nothing was happening. She placed the coffee on the table right beside them and leaned over towards Zhang Yang's body. Her body scent was tantalizing!

Zhang Yang turned his head over and saw that she was still wearing her light brown OL (Office Lady) uniform. She was wearing a white blouse underneath her uniform. However, her collar was purposely left unbuttoned. From Zhang Yang's angle, he

could clearly see two fair half rounded boobies. Zhang Yang could also vaguely see the side of the light purplish bra that she was wearing.

Witch! Fox! Whatever you can call her! Zhang Yang could not get her off his head anymore after the night where both of them were hugging, touching each other for the whole night. They even kissed! Why is she always trying to seduce him then? Was she really trying to retaliate? This woman most probably thought that Zhang Yang had seen enough of her pretty face and her sexy body. She must have thought that Zhang Yang had enough touching her body as well! And now, she was willing to expose more of her 'wild' parts to him. She was trying to get into Zhang Yang's head so that she could toy with his mind! Every time when Zhang Yang was starting to feel 'heaty', this woman would suddenly withdraw herself from teasing Zhang Yang any further. Everything would just stop there. Zhang Yang would most certainly almost begin to jack himself off!

"Still, it's still under progress! Just wait!" Zhang Yang had no idea how many times has he said that.

"So slow! What's taking them so long to investigate those scumbags! Just drag them out and shoot them in the head, on the piers!" Chen Xue Yao was infuriated. Well, no one could blame her. Her family was killed by these scumbags, after all. She was very eager to see that those scumbags are dragged up to the guillotine and be the one shouting 'off with their heads'!

Well, no one could really blame her for being so vicious. After looking through the evidence that she collected firsthand, even Zhang Yang felt a little disturbed. Making a murder looking like an accident was just child's play. When the Liu Family was starting up their business, they even did something like slaughtering the entire family of their business competitors. While their businesses were getting bigger and bigger, those people did even more crimes just to make themselves comfortable! They even built an entire

secondary school so that they could recruit virgins to have fun with.

After Zhang Yang gave it some thought, he decided not to tell Chen Xue Yao about Liu Wei being released into the 'wild' again. Well, he had thought it through, thoroughly this time. To catch that bastard, Zhang Yang could not really go on killing people. However, it would be possible if Zhang Yang could just disable '5' of his limbs! That would not become any problem at all!

When the Liu Wei problem had been resolved, then only Zhang Yang would tell Chen Xue Yao about it. Now that Zhang Yang had hired some bodyguards to protect her from the dark, telling her now would just make her worry even more.

"... you're here to ask me about Liu Wei, right? Why are your hands touching my thighs then?" Zhang Yang asked her with a straight face.

"Hehe!" Chen Xue Yao smiled and blushed. Her cheeks turned so red and her charm was mesmerizing. She went closer and gave a gentle nibble on Zhang Yang's ear. Then she said, "Do you want me to help you out with my hands again?"

Zhang Yang's heart began to pound instantly. That night, he was 'handled' by her soft and slender hands. Although her hands had not passed through the hall and into the inner chamber, Zhang Yang could already feel a sensation of joy rushing up his head. Instantly, he glared at the beautiful creature's udders. Then he calmly said, "Are you trying to trick me again?"

Chen Xue Yao pulled down her collar even lower and let her two boobies jiggle a little bit. The ripple on her skins of her boobies was just breathtaking to look at. Zhang Yang's pupils went blank. She giggled and leaned her chest against Zhang Yang's back. Then she reached out to Zhang Yang's ear and let out a gentle breath, "Mr. Zhang, you seem to be quite 'heaty' every single day. Didn't the two in your house feed you well?"

"You w\*tch! How do you even dare to say that!?"

Chen Xue Yao could remember very clearly that she was touched by Zhang Yang for good that day. So there was nothing more shameful than that! 'You pervert! I'm going to toy with you so badly that you'll never forget! I'm going to send you into dire suffering! I'm definitely giving that bad breath right back at you!' She never said that out loud, of course. She looked down and saw that Zhang Yang's 'tent' had been set up completely. She knew that she was done toying with him for today. So she quickly stood up and giggled at Zhang Yang. Then, she left Zhang Yang's office in haste.

Zhang Yang was conflicted on whether to cry or to laugh after what happened. This had become something that must happen every single day. However, deep down his heart, he was furious. "Do not mistake me as a paper tiger! If you ever cross a line, I'll not hesitate to devour you and your body entirely!"

Zhang Yang already had Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. He had never intended to screw another woman anymore. However, the thing that happened between him and Chen Xue Yao was considered to be a forbidden affair. After all, no one could have changed the fact that the two of them had intimately touched each other. even though it was not their intention.

Zhang Yang admitted that he had a strong impulse to possess a woman that he loves. If that night had not happened, then Zhang Yang would not have minded her at all. Even if she marries someone, Zhang Yang would not have felt a thing at all. He would just curse whichever bastard who could have her as his wife.

However, these two had seen each other in the nude. They even fondled with every part of their bodies. That had really changed the way Zhang Yang felt for her.

--- you witch! If you dare to do that again tomorrow, I'm going to force myself on you, and you're going to regret that!

Zhang Yang hardened his soul and said quietly.

...

3 days had passed in a blink of an eye. Every top Tier guild had already formed their own parties to enter Mount ApaQ. Even though Mathuven had not been spawned yet, there were multiple sightings of The Green Dragon Elphenise. This Green Dragon would sometimes fly in the sky in its dragon form. Sometimes, it would transform into a cute green elven lady, walking around in the woods.

This Giant Dragon lady was also labelled as a Holy Tier boss. Her power level should not be weak. However, she only had over 1,000,000,000 HP, which was clearly not the HP amount that a Holy Tier boss should have! She deserved to have more HP on her! However, in order for the drama mode to work its course, the developer had designed her to have lesser HP. Players from all eight Regions could heal her with their healing Skills. That 1,000,000,000 HP would make her quite powerful in a sense.

Not only some top Tier guilds, but several smaller guilds did not even have one Level 160 player in their guild. Although it was not possible for them to complete the quest, they could still count on their luck to see if they are able to snatch something useful when the boss dies!

After all, this is a World boss! Only god knows how many good stuff would pour out from the dead body of the boss!



# Chapter 740: Skeleton Admiral Mathuven

---

The Top Tier guilds did not make clear of the vicinity even though the normal players had swarmed into the place. They knew it better than anyone that these low level players were just food powder on the battlefield. They would be wiped out when the boss starts sneezing!

Well, no one would ever have enough of food in powder form anyway. So let them come.

Countless players were waiting and expecting the Spectre Army to arrive.

However, when the players finally saw the scale of the Spectre Army, they almost wet their pants. So, that was why the quest was listed as one of the Main Story Quest. So that was why only players who managed to attain the required level of the quest managed to receive the new quest!

So how large was the scale of the army then? Was it millions? Or was it hundreds of millions then?

Countless Skeleton Soldiers were swarming over the entire mountain. They did not look anything like those Skeleton monsters that were roaming around the cemetery areas in the Open World at all. These Skeleton Soldiers were well equipped with a full set of armor on each of them. Their armor was pitch black, which was a complete contrast to their white bones.

[Skeleton Assaulter] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 180

HP: 117,504

Defence: 4,740

Melee Attack: 24,147 – 34,147

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to a target. There is a 10% chance to acquire an additional attack.

Note: The Skeleton Assaulters are the true and official members of the Spectre Army. Even though they are just the lowest kind of their army, they can still pose a fatal threat to anyone who underestimate them! More importantly, these soldiers know no fear of death. They know no pain! They can give any commander in a battlefield a chill up their spines!

The length of that sword might have reached beyond 200 meters long! This monster should have a very wide attack range, or so it seemed.

[Skeleton Admiral Mathuven] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 185

HP: 50,000,000,000

Defence: 50,000

Magi Resistance: 50,000

Melee Attack: 149,465 – 209,465

Skills:

[Storm Blades]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the effective range of the Skill once in each second. Last for 30 seconds.

[Destructive Smash]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to a target, afflicting the target with 50% Reduction in the target's Healing Efficiency.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP healed will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: Mathuven is well known as a General with extraordinary capabilities serving under the ranks of Angus. His loyalty lies in executing every single order given by Angus.

A total of 50,000,000,000 HP?!

Players who could see the HP amount of the boss frowned intensely. If the boss does not have the HP recovery Skill {Spectre Build}, it would be possible for the players to take the boss down, even if the boss had more HP than that. However, everything changed when the boss has that Skill along with him.

With a total HP of 50,000,000,000, the boss could recover over 1,670,000 HP in each passing second, so to speak. If the damage dealt by the players could not get up to that amount of damage, the boss would basically lose nothing at all. His HP bar would not even move if that was the case! Well, it was not really that difficult for the players to deal so much damage to the boss. However, players would have to bear in mind that the boss could attack them, as well! The boss could deal AoE attacks to all players within the attack range with its {Storm Blades}.

Putting aside the rate of the boss activating its {Storm Blades}, each activation of the Skill could potentially cause over 5,000,000 damage to each player that is standing within its attack range. Even though the Skill is deemed to be a Melee Skill, the strike could spread out for over 200-meter radius wide. Because the boss had a long-\*ss blade, he could wipe out the players more efficiently, even though the boss was just a melee-type boss.

Because of that, the players could deal less effective damage to the boss over a limited timeframe. If the rate of the boss activating his {Storm Blades} is a little bit higher, even the players with Inheritance Transformation would not survive long while standing near the boss! Just imagine it! An approximate 200,000 damage per second is really deadly! It would only take approximately 200 seconds to empty out an entire HP bar of 40,000,000 HP!

Han Ying Xue might be able to hold up against that amount of damage, if she is in her Inheritance Transformation form. However, even though she was a Healer more focused on her

ability to heal multiple targets around her, she should only be capable of making sure 3 other players around her remain alive under that sort of circumstances. It would be out of her league if she is asked to heal more than 3 players around her. That should prove how difficult it was for players to hold out against the firepower of the boss!

Of course, the situation was not as f\*cked up as things have been forecasted. They would be having an extremely powerful NPC to support them.

[The Green Dragon Elphenise] (Holy, Dragon)

Level: 180

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defence: 18,470

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398 (Depends on Physical Attack, however, deals Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Light of Life]: Recovers 1% HP in every 5 seconds. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Note: The Green Dragon is a giant dragon species that are close to mother nature. They are extremely close to the Elves. They even became the protector of the Elves.

Elphenise is a very powerful tanker to tank against Mathuven. Furthermore, she could also recover her own HP. Her HP recover per second could reach up to 200,000 HP! She could still recover over 100,000 HP even if she gets afflicted by the effect of {Destructive Smash}. As long as the Skeleton Soldiers are not in the way interrupting her, Elphenise would still be capable of healing herself without the help of the players. She could really last for quite a long period of time under the bombardment of Mathuven's attacks.

"Spectre! Why are you invading my territory!?" Elphenise had transformed into the appearance of a female elf. She was levitating while she asked Mathuven about it.

"Humph, humph, humph! By the order of my master, Angus, I'm here to claim your heart!" Mathuven laughed in a strange voice.

"How dare you!" Elphenise let out an angry roar and transformed into her dragon form immediately. She transformed into a green dragon that was approximately 300 meters long. Her appearance was actually more intimidating than the appearance of that skeletal Mathuven! The moment she opened up her mouth, Elphenise spat out a stream of {Dragon Breath} and torched every single Skeleton Soldier in the area of 200-meter radius around her with green flames. Those Skeleton Soldiers were burned to crisps within seconds!

Even if Phoenix pet and Red Dragon pet had activated their Transformation Skill, they would only be able to spread their AoE attacks as far as 30 meters out. The attack range of the Green Dragon was definitely on a whole new level! Well, it was actually normal. Just think about it, would a player with a full set of Ethereal Tier armor be as powerful as an Ethereal Tier boss?

"Hehehe! Charge! Kill them all!" Mathuven gave his order for his army to charge forward. Countless Skeleton Soldiers charged towards the Green Dragon at full speed. They were so closely-knit that they looked like a tidal wave gushing towards Elphenise! Even though these monsters were just food for powder, they were just like the players. Even if one monster could only deal 10,000 damage, the total damage that the entire horde of the army monsters could deal would be terrifying as well!

From that perspective, the boss's single attack would be very limited when it comes to battling a large number of players. So, the boss would be relying on his 'underlings' to channel their damage output on the players as well! However, the boss could really deal a number to the players with his AoE attacks! With just one simple

whirl of his {Storm Blades}, players who were low on HP were instantly wiped out!

Of course, the players would not just stand there and let the Skeleton Soldiers slaughter them up. Firstly, when the Green Dragon that was acting as their 'Natural Shield' is gone, the boss battle would become even worse than it is now! Since players would only lose some durability of their equipment, everyone from all 8 Regions joined forces to fight against the Spectre Army. They did not fight amongst themselves at all.

The current situation was on accord with the background themes of this game. It was true that things were not always peaceful and harmonious among these guilds in the newly formed 'Alliance'. There would always be battles or wars happening among themselves. However, these guilds had banded together like a family when they battled against the Spectre Army. They would never turn against each other at a time like this!

These Normal Tier Skeleton Soldiers would crumple with a bang before Top Tier players like Zhang Yang himself. However, they were extremely daunting to the average players. Especially for those who had not reached Level 150, the players would have to band into parties before they could take out one single Skeleton Soldier!

Zhang Yang sent his Phoenix pet forward. Meanwhile, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were leading up front as they charged into the horde of monsters. With two Phoenixes and a Red Dragon slaying monsters at the frontline, the players had no need to activate their Inheritance Transformation just yet. It did not matter how many monsters were charging towards them, those monsters had to die the moment they entered the range of the pets' attack range.

"Remove yourself from my Territory, Spectre!" Even though Elphenise was a female dragon, her temper was not to be trifled with. She took the initiative to launch her attacks towards Mathuven.

"Hehehe! Are you so eager to die?" Mathuven raised his sword and swung it towards Elphenise at full strength. Just right before the shiny blade could cut her neck, Elphenise raised her gigantic claws to deflect Mathuven's attack. The impact between the sharp claws and the blade sparked intensely.

"Such a pitiful strength you have!" Mathuven said with disdain. He grabbed the giant sword with both of his arms. Then, his body began to spin at high speed. As he accelerated further with his spin, he looked like a silver gyro top.

{Storm Blade}!

Players who were within the attack range of the boss were receiving a high damage value at every passing second! That 200,000 damage could instantly kill any players with armor set that was lower than Ethereal Tier! Even players with a full set of Holy Tier equipment would not be capable of receiving the full damage from the boss's {Storm Blade}. A few rounds of the attack sent the players to their own demise!

30 seconds later, there were no players within the area of 200-meter radius from the boss that survived the attack of the boss. The only one that was standing beside the boss was Elphenise!

Zhang Yang and his gang had not activated their Inheritance Transformations yet. That was because they had no idea how long the boss battle would be! All players from 8 Regions seemed to have joined their forces together for the moment. Well, the main reason was, because killing monsters and launching attacks on the boss would earn the players some 'Glory Points'. However, everything would change the moment the boss collapses and dies. Everyone would be pouring onto the loot that the boss would be dropping, because the loot would be on a 'first come first serve' basis.

The players in the vicinity were being extra careful to not get caught up in the attacks of the boss. At the same time, they were

trying to slaughter as many monsters around the boss as possible. Even though 'Glory Points' are actually useless to the Top Tier players, if they could just kill the monsters around the boss faster, the Green Dragon would be in a safer state. After all, the Green Dragon was the players' super gigantic 'Meat Shield'!

Meanwhile, as long as the Green Dragon does not die, the boss would not leave his Battle mode. Because of that, the players would stand a chance at taking down the boss! Or else, the boss would straight away be swayed from his Battle Mode and there would not be any players left on his Aggro List right after he uses his {Storm Blades}. When that does happen, the boss would be able to recover his HP bar very quickly! By then, how should the players proceed on slaying the boss?

Although Zhang Yang did not activate his Inheritance Transformation yet, his Phoenix pet was a fearsome weapon at causing AoE destruction to the monsters. The two Phoenixes and a Red Dragon were unleashing their worst on the monster hordes. These three legendary creatures had taken out at least hundreds of monsters alone! Unfortunately, the sea of Experience Points they earned by killing the monsters were being shared among others like Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang, even though they were putting in very little effort in supporting them.

Wei Yan Er was acting like a terrorist. She took out the [Elemental Bombs] made by Hundred Shots and threw them into her surrounding randomly. Not only the monsters in her surroundings were bombarded to hell, players from other 7 Regions were also blown to kingdom come, even though they were innocent!

Unfortunately for them, even after the 8 Regions had joined forces to form a temporary 'Alliance', the system would still consider them as enemies in the game. Any AoE attacks would splash on the players from other 7 Regions as well.

The battle had begun to hit its climax. The flashes of beautiful



and colorful Skills were astonishing to behold!

The monsters were restricted by the Aggro system of the game. However, players could move freely according to their own free will. Therefore, they were much more flexible and agile than the monsters on the battlefield. The Tankers were lining up on the front while the Healers were healing them up from the rear. Meanwhile, DPS players were focusing their attacks on the boss and the monsters. They were very well organized. Only some of the smaller guilds were unable to survive the hordes of monsters that were charging at them. They had no choice but to drown in the monster hordes.

However, the number of players was no lesser than the number of the monsters. It was just that, there were not many Level 150 players on the battlefield. Therefore, most of them were suffering the effect of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. They could not deal as much damage as they should be doing, in the first place! However, after half an hour of intense battle, the army of Skeleton Soldiers was almost wiped out!

# Chapter 741: Siege

---

Meanwhile, the players had also suffered quite a number of casualties. Those who still had their Flying Mounts with them were still doing fine. They could just fly into the air whenever they ran low on HP. However, those who did not possess Flying Mounts had nowhere to run when their HP bars go low! Well, players who had not even reach Level 150 suffered the most. Because of the Level Gap Suppression of the game, they had to receive two times, three times, or even five times the damage they usually did. That was outrageous for them!

However, there was nothing to do for the players who died. They could only run all the way back to their dead bodies to resurrect themselves. It would only take about half an hour to get back, all the way from the Graveyard. In a way of saying in Chinese, one will become a heroic man 18 years later. This was much faster than that. Players could already come back heroically to the battlefield, half an hour later.

Because no one had really launched their attacks on the boss yet, the boss had not lost a single drop of his HP. It was not enough to move the HP bar of the boss when only the Green Dragon is battling the boss. The boss's {Spectre Build} could just fully recover Mathuven's HP bar whenever it kicked in. In the meantime, Elphenise had lost over 10% of her HP bar.

Theoretically speaking, it would take up to 5 hours for the boss to kill the Green Dragon, even if there was no interruption at all, from any players, or any sort of monsters in the vicinity.

"Heal the Green Dragon, now!" Upon clearing out the monsters around them, the players began to shift their attention to the boss. Parties from different Regions stood together to protect the Green Dragon lady. Each of them was sending their best troops of Healers over to the Green Dragon. The Healers then lined up by the rear of the Green Dragon and started healing her.

Because the body mass of the Green Dragon was gigantic, standing 30 meters behind her would also be standing approximately 300 meters away from Mathuven. Theoretically speaking, the Healers should be in a safe distance from the attack range of the boss's {Storm Blades}. However, that was just a theoretical assumption. It was not like the boss would just spin like a gyro top from where he was standing. If the boss decides to take a spin around the Green Dragon, the Healers at the rear would be instantly killed!

However, that would not affect the boss battle too much. If one dies, there would be a dozen more to fill in! The players had arranged the second batch, the third batch, or maybe even the tenth batch or the twentieth batch of Healers standing by. They were all prepared to fill in the places when the first batch of the Healers die. Well, the DPS of the boss's single unit attack could deal up to 150,000 damage. So 20 Level 130 Healers should be able to heal that much amount of HP back. After all, the ability to heal the Green Dragon would not be affected by the Level Gap Suppression at all!

Furthermore, the Green Dragon had her own way to heal herself. Therefore, the HP bar of Elphenise was beginning to recover bit by bit, even though she was receiving a tremendous amount of damage from Mathuven. Currently, the HP bars of the two bosses were at their full state. Both of their HP bars did not sway far from being full, despite raising up hell on earth!

So now, it was time for the players to launch their attacks on the boss. That should cover up the shortage of firepower of bringing the boss down to his knees. Well, that would also mean that the death counts of the players are about to start as well!

"Charge!"

Countless players were charging towards the boss like a tsunami wave. Although 99.99999999% of the players were destined to get nothing from the boss' loot later on, the players could still earn

some 'Glory Points' after the boss dies. Well, as long as they contribute, they would get some 'Glory Points,' as promised. Furthermore, those who contributed in bringing down the boss would receive +2 levels as part of the reward as well! Therefore, everyone was giving their very best at throwing their attacks onto the boss.

Zhang Yang and his core party members did not make any move for the moment. Even though the goal of all 8 Regions was the same at the moment, players from different Regions were not really 'Allies,' all thanks to the system of the game. Their AoE attacks would still spread to players from different Regions as well. Meanwhile, the only thing that was waiting for the players without Inheritance Transformation Skills was death! If they are caught in the AoE splash attack of the players from their enemy Regions and die, they would not only lose a large amount of Experience Points, they would also lose their precious equipment and potions.

The higher the level, the harder it gets for a player to elevate their level. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his core party decided not to make any move, until deemed necessary. However, they were trying to estimate the rate of the boss losing his HP so that they could gauge when to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills. It was only possible for players to hold their ground against a freaking boss and survive the boss's attacks head on when they have activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. Well, they would still need to search for Healers to heal them up.

Meanwhile, Mathuven was extremely good at spraying his AoE Skills into the surrounding, of course. He was a World Boss, after all. The cooldown for the boss's {Storm Blades} was only 1 minute long! Furthermore, the boss had not increased the rate of activating his {Storm Blades} just yet. Once the boss's HP bar has been reduced to 20%, it would be possible that the boss would not stop once he starts spinning!

20% HP sounded like a small number. However, 20% of 50,000,000,000 HP would be a total of 10,000,000,000 HP! So, how could the players be able to deplete that amount of HP in a short period of time then?

Under the merciless bombardment from the boss, the number of casualties was rising relentlessly. However, at the same time, the players were charging into the boss like madmen. Thanks to them, they managed to contribute little by little before they died one after another. The amount of the accumulated damage dealt on the boss was quite astonishing. The HP bar of Mathuven had finally begun to fall!

Some players even learned from the mistakes of others. Since they could only forcefully deal 1 damage to the boss, they might as well take off every single equipment off and use their White-Wood Tier weapon to hit the boss. It could also forcefully deal 1 damage to the boss, after all. By doing so, the players would not have to suffer losing 10% of their equipment's durability.

--- there was one thing that even Celestial Tier equipment could not match with the White-Wood Tier equipment. The White-Wood equipment had no durability at all. They could be used for all eternity and they would never be broken! From that perspective, the White-Wood equipment could be the true Legendary equipment!

Zhang Yang did not dare to approach the boss as well. Well, he had the [Resurrection Monolith] and the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] with him. If he ever goes into battle and gets killed by other players, he would definitely be resurrected on the spot. If he gets killed again after that, he would definitely drop the [Resurrection Monolith]. Another death would cause him to drop the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]! That would be a tragedy far worse than dying for all eternity!

Furthermore, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were also holding a Legendary item each. One was holding another broken chapter of

the [Book of Revelation,] while the other was holding the [Resurrection Monolith]. Well, having more than one player holding a Legendary item in the same party would allow the party to defeat a boss in a dungeon easily. However, the party would have their hands tied in many ways when it comes to a battle royale! Any reckless actions would lead them to their doom.

However, even if they did not have the [Resurrection Monolith] and the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation], any Top Tier player would not have charged in recklessly as well. After all, none of the Top Tier players could afford to lose a large amount of Experience Points. Top Tier players would have to basically go through heaven and hell just to collect enough Experience Points to level up. Furthermore, 'Glory Points' was not their priority. So there was no reason worthy enough for them to risk getting killed in the boss battle.

No player was capable of tanking against the onslaught of the boss for long without activating their Inheritance Transformation. Because of that, the HP bar of the boss was reducing so slowly that everyone was frowning! The players could not even reduce 0.1% of the boss's HP bar, even after tens of minutes of bombardment. If this goes on, they would not even be able to defeat the boss, even after days!

Zhang Yang could not help but recall his past life. While he was doing the 'King Kong Inheritance' quest, the situation was similar. The final boss of the Inheritance quest was as oppressive as this Mathuven. Zhang Yang and his guild had spent over 3 days defeating the boss!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. Then he spoke into his own party chat, "Guys, don't come with me."

He rode out with his Phoenix and arrived at a spot, 30 meters from the boss.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resisted!

What the f\*ck! Zhang Yang cursed quietly deep down his heart. Then, he flew back to his party members in silence. He went in while the boss's {Storm Blade} was cooling down. Therefore, he did not sustain any damage at all.

"Haha! I've told you many times over, little Yang! You must wash your hands after using the toilet! You see! It affects your luck a lot when you're using those hands of yours to throw it!" Fatty Han immediately laughed out loud.

Endless Starlight went with the flow and started teasing as well. However, Female Raid Covent, one of the three wretched f\*ckers did not join in. Instead, he was teasing Wei Yan Er. He had no time nor interest in teasing Zhang Yang at all. The little brat tightened her teeth, as she was swinging her fists round and round, trying to fend off Female Raid Covent.

Well, Wei Yan Er was not a patient person to begin with. It did not take long before she lost it and started throwing her attacks at the boss. She patted her 'Crimson Red Crow' and commanded it to attack the boss. She had no concern at all if she dies and loses Experience Points. She just wanted to have fun!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, and he did not stop her from going all out. First of all, she had just levelled up yesterday. She would not lose much of her Experience Points even if she really dies. The only thing that she needed to worry about was that she might drop her equipment upon her death. After all, her hammer was a Holy Tier weapon.

It was a fortunate thing that Zhang Yang and his gang did not join into the boss battle for the moment. However, the 80,000 Lone Desert Smoke army had been divided into 100 platoons in order to take on the boss. Of course, they were taking turns at engaging the boss. As long as the little brat is attacking the boss within their own 'turf', she would not be caught up in the attack of

other players from other Regions. So even if she really dies, all she needs to do is to run all the way back to her dead body from the Graveyard.

At a time like this, no players or no guild would have the time or the effort to spare, killing players who were running all the way back to their dead bodies. If anyone does that, that player would become public enemy number one in an instant! That player would have to bear the consequence of being hunted and killed over and over again by all players from all 8 Regions!

Meanwhile, the little brat was smart as well. After she attacked the boss for 15 seconds, she would retreat a little so that her Mythical Tier pet Crimson Red Crow would have enough time to get her out of the area of 200-meters. That would keep her in a safe distance from the attacks of the boss. As time passes, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and the others joined the boss battle, one after another.

As more and more players were joining the boss battle, the HP bar of the boss was beginning to reduce at a faster pace. However, the players had to relentlessly dodge the {Storm Blades} of the boss. Because of that, the players could only reduce approximately 3% HP of the boss in an hour. Judging from that, they would need at least 30 hours to empty out the boss's HP!

Zhang Yang had also joined the boss battle, like everybody else. They were using the 'hit and run' tactic. Zhang Yang had not yet activated his Inheritance Transformation, though. Since he could only deal damage to the boss for a quarter of the entire time, he could only deal a very limited amount of damage to the boss.

One hour later, Zhang Yang made his second attempt at throwing his {Glare of the Death God} on the boss --- Resisted once again!

2 hours, 3 hours, 4 hours... the time was passing without much of a notice. The HP bar of the boss was still reducing at a very slow pace. Some players had died 10 times over! These 'food for powder'



were spending most of their time, running back to their own dead bodies. After they resurrect themselves, they would just charge in like martyrs. Hmm... there was no regret in life anymore. So, let's just run back to the dead bodies and do it all over again!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Huh? It was not resisted this time!

Finally, on the 11th hour, Zhang Yang got lucky and he succeeded in casting the {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss! At that instant, countless players were hitting the boss at the same time! In less than 0.1 second, the boss began to receive a large value of damage!

'50,000,000!'

"What the f\*ck! My arrow caused 50,000,000 damage to the boss! Holy sh\*t! I'm awesome!"

"Roll on your eggs and dream on! If you can really cause 50,000,000 damage with only one single hit, why are you still here then? If that's true, you could have instantly killed Zhan Yu! You should have become number one by now!"

"F\*ck you, man! I didn't lie! I really did cause 50,000,000 damage to the boss just now!"

The special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} had been triggered 10 times over. A large number of players were astounded by the 'might' of the special effect. A few of them actually rose up arrogantly and claimed that they might have discovered their 'Hidden' Skills. They even claimed that they were capable of becoming Number One on the entire server!

Well, one single hit that could cause 50,000,000 damage really sounded bad \*ss, though. If a player could do such a thing, they would not need any equipment or weapon anymore! They could have conquered the entire server just by attacking their enemies with normal attacks!

Those few players immediately turned around and started attacking other players who had a beef with them. Of course, they were instantly whacked to death by everyone around them --- F\*ck these b\*tches! It was definitely not the time for players to battle against each other, now! Finish them off and let them cool their heads at the Graveyard, then!

Well, those were just insignificant events happening around the battlefield. Zhang Yang did not think much about it at all. Instead of standing idly, he continued to hit and run. Even though he could only deal a little amount of damage to the boss, at least he was contributing.

24 hours of the in-game time had passed. In real life, a night had passed. Many players had to go to work, or go to school. Some of them applied for leave to stay in the game, though. However, because of the time zone, a number of players were logging off the game. As quickly as they went, others were logging in.

# Chapter 742: The Fall of Mathuven

---

The HP bar of the boss had been reduced to 36%. In between that, 10% of the boss's HP bar was reduced by the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. Judging by that alone, the total firepower of the players was looking weak! Meanwhile, the players could only survive for so long because they had the Green Dragon to keep the boss occupied. If the boss could run around as he liked, this battle could have ended far earlier, with all the players being wiped out.

Zhang Yang's luck was not really that great that day. Or should we say, that the boss had a high resistance against the {Glare of the Death God}? Look at Zhang Yang. After so many attempts, only one was not resisted. However, because of that one trigger, the boss battle had been shortened by 3 hours! That was quite a marvelous outcome!

If each of the tens of thousands of players' 3 hours are added up together, how many hours would that be?

It was obvious that the boss could not be taken out in a short amount of time. Although player 'God's Miracle' was equal to sleep and rest, it would be extremely exhausting for the brain cells and neurons to get the game working. As night fell, the players began to feel hungry and tired. Therefore, Zhang Yang told everyone to take an hour rest and get their empty stomachs filled.

--- it would definitely take more than just 3 hours of in-game time to empty out the remaining 36% HP bar of the boss. There was no need to worry about the other players taking out the boss all of a sudden!

However, they were not able to take their break in peace. They were still worried that the impossible might suddenly become possible. So those who took their meal had logged back into the game after 7 or 8 minutes. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue and

Daffodil Daydream were putting on their make up. Zhang Yang rolled his eyes to the back of his skull at the two ladies after he saw them putting on makeup. Well, they're not going out to meet any guests. So, why the hell are they grooming themselves up nicely? It's not like anyone other than Zhang Yang would see their faces!

However, after Han Ying Xue threw a smile at him as she glanced out of the corner of her mirror, he could not help but to feel swayed a little. Instantly, he was thinking of how to let Han Ying Xue 'welcome' him as a big guest. Today was Saturday. Zhang Yang did not have to go to the office. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu had taken a shift to rest. The little brat had moved back to Zhang Yang's house for quite a while now. So she did what the other ladies were doing and put the blusher on her face. Well, of course, she turned her own pretty little face into a monkey \*ss by the end of it.

After toying with the cosmetics for some time, she felt bored. So, she went to the side to toy with the little doggie. The doggie was initially hers. However, she left the doggie to starve when it was still a little puppy. It had learned a hard lesson and knew better than to trust the brat. The doggie would not let the little brat hug it at all. It just ran and hid on the lap of Sun Xin Yu. As expected, that little b\*tch felt offended without even knowing that she had tortured that poor little soul before. She kept yelling at the doggie with anger. She even pointed fingers at the doggie saying that the doggie was devoid of gratitude after all the time she spent 'taking care' of it. Well, everyone knew that this little b\*tch was a real b\*tch after all.

After fooling around for a bit, everyone began to log back into the game. No one could really take it easy just yet. After all, the World Boss was not yet being taken care of!

When they logged back into the game, the HP bar of the boss had dropped to 29%. Well, it seemed that the players would be taking a lot more time in order to kill the boss.

"When the HP bar of the boss drops to 20%, the boss is going to

spam his {Storm Blades} without stopping at all. By that time, everything will have to depend on players who have Inheritance Transformations, us!" Zhang Yang assembled the guildmasters of the top Tier guilds. Then he tried to propose a deal with them.

Indeed, normal players could still be the 'food for powder' at this moment. They could still take advantage of the cooldown period of the boss's {Storm Blades} and contribute a little on dealing damage to the boss. However, when the boss began to activate his {Storm Blades} more frequently than before, normal players would not even be able to get near the boss! Well, even Zhang Yang would fall if he got too close to the boss when the boss was using his {Storm Blades} at a more frequent rate!

Logically speaking, anyone would take some time to charge over 200 meters just to get to the boss. Even the Phoenix pet needed approximately 4 seconds to fly across that distance. If anyone charges into the effective range of the boss's {Storm Blades}, that person would have to sustain approximately 700,000 basic damage. Even if Zhang Yang activates his {Vitality Aura}, he would only have over 1,140,000 HP on him. So how many hits could he take with that amount of HP, then? Anyone could do the math.

Only the players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation were worthy of staying around the boss when the boss enters his 'Killing Cleave' stage. Meanwhile, they would have to apply the 'hit and run' tactic as well in order to stay alive long enough to kill the boss! Inheritances like Class C Inheritance could boost the player's HP by 10 times higher. A non-Tanker player with an entire set of Level 150 Ethereal Tier armor set would only have a basic 400,000 HP. The amount of HP the player has could be boosted up to 4,000,000 HP upon activating the Inheritance Transformation. Therefore, the players would have to retreat back to a safe distance in order to replenish their HP bar after hitting the boss for a while. If they do not do that, they would die very quickly.

However, the players also had the advantage in number. There were a lot of Healers parking themselves just right outside the area of a 200-meter radius around the boss. As long as a friendly unit comes up to them, they would just throw their Healing Skills on the player regardless of which guild the player was from. By doing so, the players would be able to re-engage into battle a little quicker.

Up until this point, all Regions had formed an unspoken rule. For example, the China Region had taken over the direction of eight and nine o'clock around the boss. The Europe Region had taken over the direction of four and five o'clock around the boss. The Regions had split the boss's surrounding area into different 'territories'. Players would not run into the 'territories' of their enemy Region at the least.

24%, 23%, 22%, 21%, 20%!

When the HP bar of the boss dropped to 20%, Mathuven began to go insane. He could chain his {Storm Blades} with a {Destructive Smash}. After that, he would immediately use his {Storm Blades} again. The flashing of Mathuven's blade was so frequent that normal players no longer had the chance to get near to the boss. They were no longer capable of contributing in bringing down the boss.

The sole firepower of the Green Dragon lady was not enough to even make up with the boss's {Spectre Build}'s HP recovery. 30 seconds later, the HP of the boss was recovered back to 21%. The pace of the boss battle was restored to the initial pace. Once again, the boss would only use his {Storm Blades} once every 60 seconds.

If there were no players with Inheritance Transformation in the vicinity, the HP bar of the boss would be forever stuck at 20%. Then the boss would become 'immortal' in a way!

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang took the initiative to activate his Inheritance

Transformation. There was no reason for him to be selfish anymore. If he acts selfishly and reserved his Inheritance Transformation at this point, they will not be able to take down the boss. When that happens, everyone in the server will receive a penalty of -3 levels! No one could afford to receive such penalty!

Meanwhile, players from all other Regions were beginning to activate their Inheritance Transformations as well. Every top Tier player in every Region no longer held themselves back. Obviously, they were thinking of a bigger picture. There was no reason for anyone to hold back now!

Zhang Yang was the first one to charge at the boss. Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, he had over a maximum of 45,000,000 HP on him. With his super thick Defence, Zhang Yang should be able to last quite a long time under the bombardment of the boss!

Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu immediately followed Zhang Yang closely behind. As discussed earlier on, Han Ying Xue would only heal the three of them. By doing so, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu would be able to stay within the attack range of the boss's {Storm Blades} without retreating at all. At the same time, they could unleash their attacks on the boss without worrying that they might die. The three of them were unleashing the full potential of a player with a Class S Inheritance!

On the other side, God's Left Hand, Heart of Destruction, Hourglass Figure and the others were beginning to charge at the boss as well. God's Left hand and Heart of Destruction glared at Zhang Yang with rage for a moment. However, they did not stir up any unnecessary battles. Instead, they vented their anger towards the boss.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely after realized that the two did not come for him. Well, these two were still considerate enough to look at the bigger picture. They had really proved to be very reliable because they were acting maturely. That's most probably

why they could become Top Tier players.

A few seconds later, players with Class A Inheritances had arrived. Well, they had a slightly slower flying speed compared to the players with Class S Inheritances. The next batch that arrived were the players with Class B and Class C Inheritances. They arrived on their flying pets. At that moment, the players did not use any other ground pets that were high Tier than their flying pets, even though they had more powerful ground pets.

Why? Because ground pets were moving very slow compared to the flying pets. Players would need to retreat when their HP bars are halfway down. They would need to move fast in order to move away from the effective range of the boss's {Storm Blades} in one piece. Without the support of the flying pets' fast movement speed. The players would only be able to hit the boss for 5 seconds before retreating. With a flying mount, the players would be able to hit the boss for 10 seconds before having the need to retreat!

Although the difference was only 5 seconds, the efficiency of the players' damage output would be improved twofold!

After all, these players were all transformed. First of all, their Attack power had been increased multiple times over. Furthermore, those who had Inheritances of Class C above were basically Level 150 by now. So only a few of them were affected by the Level gap Suppression function of the game. They could all deal full damage to the boss.

Under those circumstances, although the number of players with Inheritance Transformation was smaller, however, they were able to deal much more efficient damage to the boss than the players without Inheritance Transformations did. Ideally speaking, if they do not need to retreat after hitting the boss for awhile, they could deal even more damage to the boss within the same timeframe!

After all, the normal players were able to deal only 1 damage to the boss with a single hit. On the other hand, these players could



deal tens of thousands of damage to the boss with a single hit! In other words, one player with Inheritance Transformation could replace tens of thousands of normal players in the boss battle!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resisted!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. However, he should be satisfied with the current situation as it was now. The {Glare of the Death God} was successfully casted on the boss once throughout the entire boss battle. However, it could be said that he had single-handedly reduced over 10% of the boss's HP bar! So what else would he want, then?

"Pest! Insolence countless pest!" Mathuven was infuriated by the attacks. He began to roar in anger, "I'm going to kill you all! Kill you all!"

The boss roared in rage. However, he could not change the fact that his HP bar was reducing slowly. 19%, 18%, 17%... if the pace of the battle could just continue on, the players would be able to empty out the boss's HP by within one and a half hour!

Without even a single doubt, the next {Glare of the Death God} was stubbornly resisted by the boss as well. However, the HP bar of the boss had dropped to 11%!

Victory was just within everyone's grasp!

However, the players were also quite exhausted and suffered quite a number of casualties as well. A small number of them attempted to stay and hit a few more times before retreating. Because of their 'greed', they were forced to activate their life-saving Skills to survive the boss's {Storm Blades}. Still, some of them did not make it and they were slaughtered for good! Meanwhile, once the players were killed, they would not be able to rejoin the battle anymore. The reason was not because they could not resurrect themselves to join back into the battle. It was because

their Inheritance Transformations would no longer be available after they die. There was no way that those players would be able to get close to the boss without the support of their Inheritance Transformation which boosted their Maximum HP several times higher. They would only be sending themselves to their own demises once again if they even try to get near to the boss.

9%... 7%... 4%... 2%!

As the HP bar of the boss was reducing, the players that were dealing damage to the boss began to have devious thoughts. Well, this was a World Boss after all. So the loots that the boss would drop upon his death must be extremely valuable. Before that, the boss still had quite a substantial amount of HP left. So no one had thoughts about snatching the loots. However, now the boss was about to die, the initially formed 'Alliance' was beginning to crumble. Everyone was thinking for themselves now. The moment when the boss dies, how should they proceed on snatching the loots? That was everything on the minds of every single player who was around the boss. Well, who wouldn't want to get more good stuff for themselves?

Without any discussion, everyone descended to the ground from the sky. They wanted to get in range when the snatching starts. Meanwhile, those who were low on HP were not willing to retreat at a crucial moment like this. They could not risk that one moment when the boss dies, they might be far away from the boss. So they stayed to lower down the risk of the other players snatching the loots first.

However, that 1% or 2% HP of the boss would require the players to hit on for another tens of minutes. So it would take a while more before the boss would finally die. Well of course, those greedy bastards were naturally slain by the powerful impact of the boss's {Storm Blades}. Without their Inheritance Transformation, they had lost their capability to snatch the loots.

1%! 30,000,000! 20,000,000! 10,000,000!

Everyone began to raise their spirit because the boss was about to die!

5,000,000! 2,000,000! 1,000,000!

"NO---" Mathuven let out a miserable scream and collapsed heavily onto the ground. His gigantic sword was shattered into pieces. Among the shattered pieces of the sword, the hilt of the sword was flashing frequently. So that must be the quest item!

Almost everyone was charging towards that flashing hilt at the same instant!

"What an imbecile! Can't even get the thing done! I'll do it myself!"

Suddenly, a cold and deep voice echoed through the entire area. Every single player in the vicinity was suddenly 'imprisoned' somehow. A dark shadow sudden broke out of a void space in the middle of the air. The entire area was overwhelmed with the terrifying aura in an instant. Dark clouds began to cloud the entire sky. The atmosphere was astoundingly terrifying!

The moment that dark shadow appeared, the dark shadow lashed out at at the Green Dragon! The jab was so unexpected and fast that no one could react until it happened!

"ARGH ---" Elphenise cried miserably after the prodding. This powerful Holy Tier boss was being killed instantly by one single jab?! That was insane! Upon her death, her gigantic heart glowing in green radiance was grabbed by the hand of the dark shadow!

"Enjoy your remaining lives while you still can! Not long after, the entire land will be devoured by darkness! Everyone on this land will become one of my slaves!" The dark shadow tore the void space open and went away.

# Chapter 743: A Sight to Behold: The Lord of the Seven Spectre King

---

Although the dark shadow appeared incredibly sudden, it also left the vicinity incredibly fast as well. However, everyone was able to have a good look at the information of the dark shadow!

[Angus, The Lord of the Seven Spectre King] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defence: ???

Melee Attack: ???

Skills: ???

Note: Angus was once a human warrior who was kind and brave. However, because his great merits made the King uneasy. So, the King framed him and exiled him to the land of the orcs. He succumbed after cutting through hordes of orcs. His undying vengeance had resurrected him from his death. From that day on, he became a Spectre! His strength is undoubtedly powerful. It did not take long for him to become the Lord of the Seven Spectre King, the highest of the higher in the realm of Spectre. He is the one Spectre that will send tremors across the entire land!

Although there were a lot of question marks, everyone was taking in cold breaths by just looking at the NPC's name and his Tier.

A Celestial Tier boss!

The power of a Celestial Tier boss would surely be unique and powerful. This Angus took out the Holy Tier Green Dragon lady with one punch! Of course, that was definitely a part of the drama of this game. Even a Celestial Tier boss would not have dealt 1,000,000,000 damage in a single hit! If that is possible, the players

would never stand a chance at defeating that boss!

The moment Angus left, the terrifying aura instantly disappeared. Everyone regained control of their own movements again!

Snatch!

The once 'imprisoned' players continued to fly towards the loot. They instantly activated their Invincibility Effect --- if they had any on them at the moment. It would not be ideal to attempt killing the other players at that instant. It would be more important if the players throw their Status Restriction Skills on their opponents while making themselves invulnerable to all Status Restriction Skills. By doing so, they would still stand a chance to snatch the loots from the ground!

The bunch of players landed on the ground. They looked like a swarm of grasshoppers stomping into the yard. The boss had initially dropped at least 20 pieces of equipment and items. However, they were all swept cleaned from the ground in one short instance!

The players were mercilessly ferocious when it came down to snatching loots!

Everyone was looking at each other after that. They were judging the others for being so mindless. However, they had not thought that they had actually acted the same way. At that time, it did not matter if they manage to snatch any loots or not, everyone was frowning. They were expressing that they did not manage to get anything good up from the ground!

Well, it made perfect sense why everyone was acting in such a way. First of all, there were countless players in the vicinity. Whoever tried to show off what good stuff he or she gets would definitely become the primary target of everyone who had not acquired anything out of the snatching session.

Even though Mathuven was a World boss and he did drop quite a number of loots, but those 20+ pieces of equipment and items would be far from enough to be distributed among so many players. Even if they equally divide the loots among the guilds, only 20+ guilds would be satisfied with the outcome of it! After all, the entire China Region had more than just 20 guilds. Surely not every Top Tier guild would be able to get any benefits from the snatching. If the guilds were to battle against each other to spark a wave of new guild wars, even Lone Desert Smoke would be overwhelmed!

Zhang Yang swept through the crowd with his eyes. His main purpose was to spot if anyone had a 'holy' light shining down on their heads. The player with the light shining down on them would be the person who was holding a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]! However, other than Sun Xin Yu, everyone seemed 'clean'. Therefore, he had no intention to provoke anyone this time around.

Truth to be told, he really wanted to kill as many players as he wanted so that the players would drop the items and equipment they picked up from among the loots. However, Zhang Yang had no idea who picked up the loots. Attacking players without any clue might spark a guild war between his guild and the other guilds!

So, it would be wise to stand down this time. Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to retreat a little and have a look at Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and the others. He wanted to check on them to see if any of them had managed to pick up anything good.

Well, hehe! The quest time had been obtained by him!

After killing the boss and looting the loot on the ground, there was no reason for any one of them to stay. Everyone began to tear their Teleportation Scrolls and left the area. They were teleported back to their own Territories. Even though most of the players did not get anything from the loots, they were not disappointed at all.

After all, as long as someone manages to pick up the Hilt of Mathuven and hand it in, everyone who takes part in the boss battle would be rewarded with +2 levels!

Other than that, everyone managed to earn quite a number of 'Glory Points'. Those lower level players were already on their way to see the Officer NPCs that were located at every main city. Well, the 'Glory Points' could be used to exchange for some good equipment after all. Although the military equipment that they could exchange from the Officers were a little bit weaker than the dungeon equipment of the same level, these military equipment were still the best choice for players that were not capable of clearing Hardcore Mode of a dungeon by themselves.

Zhang Yang and his party members gathered by Sauron's Castle. Then, they began to look at the 'fruits' that they harvested from the boss battle!

Zhang Yang did not even aim to get any of the equipment for himself. Even though a Holy Tier equipment was extremely valuable and rare, he would only be able to use the equipment for another half a year even if he could get a Level 160 – 180 Ascended Tier equipment for himself. However, if he could get some unique items such as a Skill Book, he could use the Skill or other useful items efficiently until he reaches Level 300!

For instance, look at Zhang Yang's {Charge Up Strike}! For another instance, look at Zhang Yang's {Glare of the Death God}! These Skills are something that can not be compared to any equipment available out there. These Skills could be described as one of those legendary 'equipment'!

Therefore, Zhang Yang only aimed to acquire the quest item --- Mathuven's Hilt! Furthermore, he could complete the quest by handing the quest item to the NPC. Not only could he earn Experience Points and 'Military Points', he could also acquire a piece of Holy Tier Accessory for every member in his party!

One small quest item in exchange for 10 pieces of Holy Tier Accessories sounded to be too good a deal right?

When Zhang Yang showed his party members the Mathuven's Hilt, everyone began to put a smile on their faces. Then everyone laughed. Even though not all of them managed to secure anything from the loots when the boss died, they could still get one precious piece of Holy Tier Accessory just because had Zhang Yang acquired the Mathuven's Hilt! That really made every single one of them the final winner of the entire boss battle!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang did not just snatch one item. He also managed to secure two pieces of [Top Tier Aura Stones]!

The moment he revealed the two pieces of [Top Tier Aura Stones], Han Ying Xue immediately snatched one of them and put it to use. She finally enhanced her {Life Aura} to its max level! The other [Top Tier Aura Stone] was given to Sun Xin Yu. Zhang Yang's main intention was to let her enhance her {Critical Aura} as much as possible. Because Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had {Companion Aura} that would only work on pets. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} could only boost the party's Strength. It would definitely be more efficient if they enhance a Skill that could boost the Critical Rate of the entire party!

After that, Wei Yan Er also revealed one piece of loot that she managed to snatch. It was a heavy armor that radiated in a dark silver light!

[Skeleton King's Chest Plate] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +16,803

Strength: +4,120

Agility: 1,750

{Level 6 Socket 1}



{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 33,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level 20.

The moment the attributes of the armor were revealed, the three party members that needed Heavy Armor became really interested in getting it. After rolling for it, Zhang Yang managed to triumph over that little brat and Endless Starlight with 76 points. He secured that armor and put it on immediately.

"God damn it! I'm the one who snatched it in the first place! How did it end up in the hands of noob tank!?" Wei Yan Er pouted as she complained with absolute prejudice.

Han Ying Xue threw a sexy smile at Zhang Yang. Well, she did not acquire any good equipment. Instead, she got a precious [Forbidden Scroll]!

[Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] (Consumable)

Use: Activates an Eclipse. Causes tremendous amount of damage to all enemy targets within the range of 10-kilometer radius. All targets lose 10% of their HP. If the target has less than 50,000 HP, that player will suffer a minimum deduction of 50,000 HP; if the target has more than 200,000 HP, then the target will suffer a deduction of 200,000 HP maximum. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 150

"This... this is an enhanced version of a Forbidden Scroll!" Everyone took a cold deep breath.

It works just like the apocalyptic special. This scroll would reduce 10% of all targets' HP in each passing second. However, this scroll did not have the limitation of a minimum deduction of 50,000 HP

and a maximum deduction of 100,000 HP. Furthermore, the effective range of this scroll could reach out to 10 kilometers!

In other words, this [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] could deduct a maximum of 6,000,000 HP of a target within its effective range! Well, it would still be fair because players' equipment would be getting better and better as the game advances. The limitation on a Forbidden Scroll in deducting a maximum of 100,000 HP no longer threatened players with Class C Inheritance Transformations. Meanwhile, if that deduction is increased up to a maximum of 200,000 HP, that could even pose quite a threat to players with Class B Inheritance Transformations.

Other than that, the limitation on the minimum HP deduction of the Forbidden Scroll had created the tactic of talking off equipment to minimize the damage received. However, the effect had been largely nerfed. After all, players who were losing 50,000 HP in every second would require a very powerful Healer in order to stay alive!

"This is good stuff!" Zhang Yang quickly put the Forbidden Scroll into his inventory. Because the 'destructive' little brat's eyes were glittering with 'grave danger', Zhang Yang had to act fast and keep the Forbidden Scroll away from her to prevent her from snatching the scroll. Well, if she ever gets the scroll, she would definitely 'test' it out for fun and waste it away!

"Having this 'toy' in our possession is like having another nuke at disposal!" Zhang Yang laughed. Then he decided to put the Forbidden Scroll on sale after he went back to the main city. However, he would put the minimal bidding for the scroll as 99,999,999,999,999 gold pieces. That was one amount that even if someone manages to sell the entire earth, would still have not enough gold pieces to buy that scroll! Well, his initial intention was not to sell that scroll. Zhang Yang just wanted the news to spread out. He just wanted to send a message to all his enemies to f\*ck off, or else he would slam them to death with the scroll!

--- There were only 4 high Tier Territories in the entire server. So it was natural that the other 4 Regions who did not possess any of the 4 high Tier Territories would launch a Territory Conquest on the Territories. Now that Zhang Yang had the words running through everyone's ears that he had a new Forbidden Scroll, at least, Sauron's Castle would receive lesser challenges from the other Regions.

Other members of the gang had nothing to offer as they couldn't move as fast as others. Meanwhile, even though Daffodil Daydream had activated her Class A Inheritance Transformation, she had run out of Status Removal Skills when they began to snatch the loots. As she was flying in the sky, she was stunned for a few seconds. Therefore, she could not get anything out of the loots. And now, everyone turned their eyes over at Sun Xin Yu.

Sun Xin Yu's face was covered with a black cloth as usual, making it impossible to read her expression. She took out a book from her inventory and threw it over to Zhang Yang.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 1] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combine this item with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2].

"Haha! Another broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] has shown itself!" Everyone was pleasantly surprised.

Sun Xin Yu looked at Han Ying Xue with her very mysterious, provocative eyes. Her intention was clear. She wanted to indicate that she found something much more useful than Han Ying Xue.

Although the effect of the [Forbidden Scroll] was extremely powerful, it was a one-time item, after all. Meanwhile, the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] could be combined with the other broken chapters to become a Legendary item. The benevolent see benevolence and the wise see wisdom. Whichever works better depends on the person and how the person defines

them. Well, even though the [Forbidden Scroll] could only be used once, it was so powerful that it could be used to threaten other players or even guilds in the game. So, if Zhang Yang decides not to use it, he could just store it nicely to use it as a 'nuke'.

Han Ying Xue was not willing to give in to that ice queen, as usual. She gave a vague humph back at Sun Xin Yu. After that, the two ladies turned and looked at Zhang Yang at the same instant. It seemed that they wanted the man to decide who did better, this time around.

This... this is like telling a man to step either on a Lego block or a coral. Picking either side would not end well at all! Therefore, Zhang Yang acted like he did not notice it at all and said, "Let's go back to hand in the quest!"

Well, the reward of this quest was a piece of Holy Tier Accessory, after all!.

Everyone was filled with joy and excitement. Even Zhang Yang only had two pieces of Mythical Tier Accessories. Now might be his best chance to switch one of his lousy Accessory for a better one!

Zhang Yang and his gang went back to the main city through the Teleportation Circle, one after another. They went back to look for the green little goblin Guraj so that they could hand over the quest for the rewards.

# Chapter 744: Dark Source Stone

---

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Protect the Giant Dragon! You have received the rewards: 50,000,000 Experience Points, 1,000 Military Points.’

‘Ding! You have acquired an Item: Sacred Badge.’

‘Ding! You have acquired the additional reward: +2 Levels!’

Well, it was unfortunate that the appearance of Angus had led to the demise of the great Green Dragon lady. She got killed by a single blow from Angus! However, the entire event was just an ‘accidental event’. As a quest, the players did their best at making sure that Mathuven does not kill the Green Dragon. Angus appearing out of nowhere was just part of the ‘necessary’ drama.

It was a predetermined event. The script had already been set down that the Spectre would succeed on acquiring the heart of the Green Dragon, creating ‘Darkness Falls’ to terrorize the world. Therefore, it would not matter even if the players fail to protect the Green Dragon in the quest. The outcome of the quest would remain the same.

The reward of increasing by two levels was certainly a good consolation for every player in the game. Zhang Yang had shot up to Level 167, instantly. Comparing to his previous life, he would be half a year ahead of his own progress in his past life now! In his previous life, Zhang Yang had the advantage of having high Tier players babysitting him through the dungeons. Well, part of it was because he was quite a lucky bastard to be able to meet high Tier players whenever he waited the entrance of dungeons. Meanwhile, there were no players snatching or competing against him in the low-level regions of the maps. So, Zhang Yang managed to level up very quickly before he reached Level 100.

"Heroes and heroines, even though the heart of the giant dragon has been acquired by the Spectre, but you have slain that \*sshole

Mathuven! That should give quite a blow to the morale of the Spectres!" Guraj praised Zhang Yang and his gang. Then he said, "However, the fact that the Spectre have acquired the Heart of the dragon cannot be undone anymore! They can now finish developing their 'Darkness Falls'! Therefore, you must work harder at stopping them! Go! Blow up their warehouse! They are storing a large number of [Dark Source Stones] in their warehouse! Those stones are the last items they need to complete building their weapon of mass destruction! Blow them up to kingdom come!"

‘Ding! Guraj has given you a quest: Dark Source Stone. Will you accept it?’

Everyone selected ‘Accept,’ of course. There was no reason for them to decline at all.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: Goblin’s High Explosive Bomb – Enhanced Destroyer IV.’

"Hey! What are you guys staring at? Go now! Did you really think I was going to treat you to a dinner!?" Guraj immediately hustled Zhang Yang and the gang out from the Adventurer's Society.

The location of the ‘Dark Source Stone’ quest was located back at the lair of the Spectre, The Plagued Land. However, it was not the Malevolent Tower where Wraith King of Death - Madravich lay. After all, who would be foolish enough to provoke the Celestial Tier boss, the Leader of the Seven Wraith! According to the official information of the game, Angus is just a Level 230 boss while Madravich is a Level 300 boss! The difference between the strengths of the two boss is huge!

The moment Zhang Yang and his gang received the quest, every other player who was Level 160 and beyond received the quest as well. Furthermore, because players who participated in the boss battle to slay Mathuven had acquired the reward of +2 levels, many players who were stuck at Level 158 suddenly shot up to Level 160.

Because of that, the number of Level 160 players had increased drastically.

For instance, Female Raid Covert, that \*ss-face, was also one of them! Well, he and his best pal Ten Dusk had formed a new party with Galileo and the other powerful players in Lone Desert Smoke's sub-guild. They ventured over to the location of the quest with great spirits. They even claimed that they would overtake Zhang Yang's progress and complete the quest before Zhang Yang and his gang even gets close!

Well, an utter ss would remain an ss for all eternity!

After a few similar quests, they knew that they needed to slay many monsters for many days in order to let the system spawn out the location where they could throw the bomb. Well, when the number of monsters slain reaches a certain number, only would the boss for the quest be spawned. Furthermore, the boss must be taken care of before the players can throw the bomb and complete the quest.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's party of ten did not rush at all. They were going around doing random stuffs while getting themselves prepared for the quest. After all, they had been battling Mathuven for over 30 hours. The last thing they needed now was more fighting.

Lying on the bed with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were having the 'fun' of their lives, like a dragon dominating two phoenixes! Zhang Yang did a splendid job of pleasing the two ladies, to the point that they were totally dominated by him. After they were done, they got close together and whispered into each other's ears. After feeding each other some sweet words only meant for husbands and wives, the three of them logged back into the game. When they arrived, they realized that they were the only ones who had not arrived at the gathering. Everyone was guessing what took them so long.

Daffodil Daydream could still keep the secret to herself. However, Wei Yan Er could not resist the temptation at all. Without much of an effort, the other gang managed to tease the little brat into telling the truth saying that Zhang Yang and the two ladies were in the same room all the while! Everyone let out a surprised ‘Oh!’ and fixed their eyes on the three of them.

That little brat!

Zhang Yang quickly picked up Wei Yan Er like picking up a cat and threw her over to Han Ying Xue. Well, he intended to prevent that little brat from exposing more and more ‘private’ saucy tales of his and the two ladies. Well, if that does happen, Zhang Yang’s prestige as a leader would drop like hell.

Zhang Yang and the gang made their way to The Plagued Land. The moment they crossed the border, they saw that the entire motherland of the Spectre was grey. The entire land was basically a wasteland. There were countless of skeletal corpses roaming around the mountains and the wilderness of the entire land.

However, they also noticed that many guilds had already entered The Plagued Land. There was quite a number of parties in the area at the moment. Some were flying in the sky, while the others were on foot, slaying monsters. Further away, there were also other parties arriving from all directions at the same time. They were all going to the same place, after all.

This Main Story Quest was open to all. As long as the players reach the Required Level of the quest, they would be able to take part. Therefore, no one could keep the boss all to themselves. They would have to compete against each other in order to kill the boss and claim the loot to themselves. Well, that was most probably the main reason why the competition among the parties was getting more intense at every passing second! Zhang Yang and the gang were extremely annoyed. They had been busting their \*sses to snatch the quests to themselves. However, they would have to repeatedly charge back into the crowd when the next quest is



issued. It was really tiring!

Well, if the system did not set the quest to be open to all, taking down Mathuven would be almost impossible! Lone Desert Smoke would not be capable of taking down Mathuven all by themselves, after all. Mathuven was labeled as a World Boss for a reason. Players from all around the world should join forces in order to take down w World Boss. Other than that, they would have to trigger the drama mode to see if they get a powerful NPC to support them in battle!

The warehouse where the Spectre stored their [Dark Source Stones] was located in the Rokuta Castle. That place was a fully fortified fortress. The fortress was built on a cliff. The only way in and out was the front of the fortress. There were countless Magic Cannons around the castle walls as the Defencive placements of the castle. If the players really want to march into the castle through the front, they would only do so at a heavy cost.

However, players with flying mounts would not be facing that much of a problem getting into the castle. They could just fly straight towards the entrance at full speed. Well, they would only have to suffer one or two blasts from the Magic Cannons. At the current stage of the game, the HP amount that the players had would be sufficient enough to survive one or two blasts from the Magic Cannons. Well, each blast of the Magic Cannons could cause only 150,000 damage. That amount of damage was far from enough to instantly kill a player with better Tier equipment.

Without wasting any breath, Zhang Yang and the gang split out and entered the castle through the front entrance. Although they were greeted with a few blasts from the Magic Cannons, they were able to withstand the amount of damage that the Magic Cannons could cause on them without the help of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart.

Upon landing into the castle, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly healed everyone back up. When everyone was

back at their full health states, the party began to slaughter any monsters in the vicinity.

"Rawgh ---" Suddenly, a gigantic, white-boned, corroded beast appeared before the gang. It was about ten meters tall and 30 meters long. This creature looked like it had been patched up with some glue and some broken bones. Its rotten meat had some bone spikes growing out of it. There was also greenish and greyish liquid flowing out from the beast's body. The beast was gross and hideous to look at!

[Concentrated Acidic Corrosive Beast] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 5,250,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Strong Hydrochloric Acid]: Causes 3,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 20 meters radius once every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. Stacks up to 3 layers maximum.

[Strong Nitric Acid]: Causes 10,000 Nature damage to all targets within the range of 20 meters once every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cannot be stacked.

[Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction]: If the target is afflicted with 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} and {Strong Nitric Acid effects}, the target will receive additional 100% damage.

"What the f\*ck! This monster is a little bit more powerful than I thought!" Everyone was surprised to see the description of the monster.

"Hehe! Nitric Acid Hydrochloric!" Fatty Han suddenly began to imagine some f\*cked up thing in his mind. Well, everyone knew better that it had to mean more than that. The 'Nitric Acid

Hydrochloric' in his mind must be something crooked.

"Come on, fatty! Nitric Acid Hydrochloric is science! So stop thinking weird things in that dirty head of yours!"

"Boo --- you burst my steam!"

Well, since that the monster had presented itself nicely in front of them, they just charged in and slaughtered the monster. Zhang Yang was the vanguard, as always. He began by throwing a {Spear of Obliteration} at the monster. '-193,892!' a high damage value popped out on top of the monster, Zhang Yang's current Attack power had increased so much that it was about to be as much as his Attack power when he activates his God of War Transformation!

"Owh!" The corroded beast groaned in pain. It let out a raging roar and quivered. Suddenly, countless greyish, green liquid spewed out from its body into the surroundings. However, there was no one standing within the range of 20 meters from the beast. The liquid was spraying onto the ground without touching anyone, or anything.

However, when Zhang Yang and his gang went up to the beast and started their attacks on the beast, the beast began to quiver again and sprayed the gooish liquid from its body. This time, everyone had no way of dodging the liquid because they were very close up to the beast. They were afflicted by the corrosive effect of the acidic liquid. Those liquid were so gross that the ladies were screaming like little b\*tches! However, the firepower of the party was extremely powerful. They took less than 10 seconds to slay the beast. The beast did not even get its chance to spray the gooish liquid for the third time.

The gang proceeded forwards after that. The entire castle was flooded with these corroded beasts. Because of the {Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction}, Zhang Yang and the gang did not dare lure too many monsters at once. Or else the DOT that 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} and {Strong Nitric Acid effects} could

cause on them would be disastrous! Well, they would be receiving an additional 100% damage from the monster's attack when that happens.

"Hey, little lolly! Where are you guys now?" Female Raid Covent barged into Zhang Yang and his gang's party chat all of a sudden. He was not willing to give up on trying to tackle the little brat, after all.

After Zhang Yang and his gang revealed their location, the two parties gathered quickly in the castle. The 20 of them joined forces to clear out the monsters. Of course, they were able to clear out the monsters in the area more efficiently by doing so. Well, comparisons are odious. Even though Ten Dusk and his party also had handsome, skilled players like Galileo, they were no match at all to Zhang Yang and his gang when it comes to comparing!

When Zhang Yang and his gang kill two to three corroded beasts, Galileo and his other party members had only managed to kill one corroded beast. The difference between the capabilities of the two parties was striking!

Unfortunately for them, the core party of the Lone Desert Smoke had 3 players with Class S Inheritance, 2 players with Class A Inheritance, and 5 players with Class B Inheritance! Furthermore, the players also had 3 Legendary Tier pets and one Battle Companion capable of activating a Transformation Skill to support them in battle! There was no other party in the entire server that would have such a powerful lineup!

The interior of the castle was open on all sides. Everyone could see different parties battling corroded beasts at every passage in the castle. However, the players deduced that they would need to kill the monsters for days before the boss shows its face!

The number of monsters in the castle was abundant. Although the number of players in the vicinity was high, they had no need to worry that they might run out of monsters to kill. They had no

need to snatch other players' monsters as well. This area was a rare area for the players to grind for Experience Points!

Well, the players were not really riled up yet at the moment, It was most probably because they had been through a long boss battle not long ago. They were certainly bored out of their brains by now. Well, a repetitive thing would definitely get the players bored, just like having them go to the office and work every day.

Because of that, Zhang Yang disbanded the party and commanded them to take a day off. He wanted everyone to breathe some fresh air out in the real world for a bit. However, they should keep their phone switched on. If the boss suddenly spawns, Zhang Yang could still reach them, and they could still log into the game in time. Since they logged out of the game in the castle, it should be much easier for them to gather again when they log back into the game.

# Chapter 745: Newly Researched and Developed Corrosive Beast

---

Coincidentally, there was a Christmas party at the Zhou Shu University at night. Zhang Yang brought the ladies over to the university to visit Wei Yan Er. The more the merrier, right? With Zhang Yang's current achievement, he could be considered as an honored Alumni of the university. Whenever there was a tenth anniversary or a fifth-anniversary celebration going on in the university, Zhang Yang would definitely be invited over to attend.

It has been more than two years since he graduated. Zhang Yang walked down memory lane. He remembered that he was all alone when he was walking on the roads in the university. Now, he had so many ladies around him. Furthermore, these ladies were just beautiful! His life had changed so much ever since he left the university. He could not even believe the contrast between his past and his current situation! The difference was like heaven and earth!

Since Zhang Yang had arrived, he decided to take a short moment to reconnect with Yu Li. Well, because of that, he disappeared from the sights of Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue for more than an hour. The two ladies kept trying to interrogate him about his whereabouts for the past hour --- does he need an hour to go to the washroom?

At night, it was natural that there were quite a number of pretty ladies around the vicinity of the vent. Each age bring forth new beauties on this noble land. Even though he had not yet seen someone as beautiful as Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, the ladies that he saw could still score a 7, or even 8 out of 10. Well, Zhang Yang did get a good wash of his eyes that night.

Han Ying Xue pouted gracefully and gave a nice pinch on Zhang Yang's waist. The pain spread out throughout his entire body as he

cried in misery. Well, that witch did not really know that Zhang Yang had no bad thoughts on his mind at all. He was purely admiring the beautiful 'sights' that lay before his eyes. If he really wanted to be a playboy, there were tons of pretty ladies in his office, waiting to welcome him with their two legs wide open!

That night, none of them logged into the game. They had a good rest throughout the entire night.

On the second day, everyone logged into the game after they woke up. Then they continued to venture deeper into Rokuta Castle. After a good rest, everyone seemed to be more energetic and refreshed. Unlike yesterday where they were moving like zombies, they were more fired up as they slew the monsters in the surroundings today.

Well, thanks to the +2 levels reward, more players have managed to enter the Rokuta Castle. Well, quite a number of them had almost reached Level 160. The reward had brought them up to Level 160 and beyond. Some players knew that it would be extremely hard to snatch the boss for their own benefits or to complete the quest. However, they still came along because they wanted to see if they would be lucky enough to take advantage of others and get some Holy Tier equipment.

Well, Holy Tier equipment was still rare among the players. Even Lone Desert Smoke had less than 40 pieces of Holy Tier equipment in their possession. Normal players would have no other chance of acquiring one at the moment.

One day, two days, three days... time lapsed slowly. Most of the monsters in the castle had been slaughtered. Well, this region had been temporarily added to fulfill the conditions of the quest. So, the monsters in this region would not respawn once every 5 hours, like the other Elite Tier monsters out in the other areas. Well, as long as players could clear out the monsters in this vicinity, the boss would be spawned.

When a party manages to complete the quest and hand in the quest, this region would automatically vanish. As described in the quest description, this area would be 'leveled down to the ground by a bomb'. However, if no one could complete the quest and hand in the quest in one month, the monsters in this region would respawn. That would give the other parties a second chance to complete the quest.

Because the number of parties that entered the region was more than enough, there was basically no monsters left in the vicinity on the fifth day. The moment the last monster was slain, everyone in the region heard a thunderous roar echoing through the entire region. Right in the middle of the square of the castle, a gigantic corroded beast spawned. This beast was about hundreds of meters tall. It was about hundreds of meters long as well. Its body mass was about the size of a small mountain. The body mass of the monster was far larger than any other building in the vicinity of the entire castle.

[Newly Researched and Developed Corrosive Beast]

Level: 180

HP: 18,000,000,000

Defence: 18,470

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398

Skills:

[Strong Hydrochloric Acid]: Shoots concentrated corrosive Hydrochloric Acid to all targets within the range of 50-meter radius. Targets will be afflicted with 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} effects. Each layer of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} effect will cause 20,000 Nature Damage to each target once in every 3 seconds. One layer will be removed once in every 15 seconds.

[Strong Nitric Acid]: Causes 10,000 Nature damage to all targets



within the range of 50 meters once in every 3 seconds. Last for 15 seconds. If the target has 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} effects, the effects will turn into the effect of {Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction} and cause 300,000 Damage to the target.

[Bone Spikes]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovery will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: This is a weapon of war that has been newly developed by the Spectres. Because the number of this monster is extremely rare, this weapon cannot be duplicated to form a massive army.

The moment when the boss was spawned. The entire castle was immediately sealed by an air wall! The players who were outside the vicinity could no longer go in! That was actually a safety measure made by the developers of the game. They wanted to prevent any players from taking advantage of the other players who had worked hard to bring down the boss. Some players would take advantage of other players by waiting for other players to bring down the HP bar of the boss. When the boss is about to die, these players would rush in to snatch the outcome of the battle for themselves.

However, the intelligence of the players was not to be underestimated. In the previous boss battle when players were battling against the Spiritual Beast King, some players attempted to use 'player planting' tactic, and they worked. The so-called 'player planting' tactic was to let most of the party's players go offline first. Only a few of them stayed to observe the battle. When the battle reaches its crucial moment, those players would inform their party members to come back online. By doing so, they could reserve their strength until they were required to engage in battle.

However, it seemed that they had also underestimated the intelligence of the game designers. Those who attempted to use the

‘player planting’ tactic had soon found out that they would appear by the Teleportation Circle that they tied their Teleportation Scroll on! What a tragic situation!

Well, they only can blame themselves for that. If ‘player planting’ could be used anywhere players wanted, too many players would abuse the tactic. If ‘player planting’ could be used anywhere and anytime, then players would be able to form a 1,000-player party to enter a 50-player scale dungeon! They could just allow 950 players to go offline first. When one player in the dungeon dies, they could just ask a new substitute to log back into the game and continue in the dead player’s place! It would become outrageous, because players would be able to challenge dungeon boss with numbers!

This corroded beast boss was not that hard to kill for a top Tier party. Unlike Mathuven who was a World Boss which required players to swarm up in order to kill him, this corroded beast boss could be taken down by 10 powerful players who have activated their Inheritance Transformation.

Therefore, killing the boss was not the top priority for the top Tier parties. Their top priority was to clear out their opponents while the air wall is still around!

Instantly, a chaotic battle royale began! In just an instant, hundreds of players were mercilessly terminated. They were forcefully turned into streams of white light before they were forcefully sent back to the Graveyard! Furthermore, because of the air wall, the players who got killed could only choose to resurrect themselves in their weakened forms. Or else, they would have to wait until the boss battle is over before they could run back to their dead bodies in the castle.

Zhang Yang combined two of his parties into one. So, he and his newly merged party of 20 began to take out their opponents as well. Well, whoever had come for the boss should realize that they would have to go through a lot of players before they could get to

the boss! No one on the battlefield would go easy on anyone. Only idiots would roll dices to see who gets to the boss first. Furthermore, those who could not afford to 'play' could just leave with their Teleportation Scrolls!

Some parties tried and died. Some parties were acting carefully. So they gathered back to the main cities. Meanwhile, there were also some parties hiding into buildings around the castle. They were hoping that they could charge out and take advantage of the others who were battling out there at the crucial moment of the boss battle.

Of course, the boss was not weak at all. Because no one had the boss's aggro fixed on anyone, the boss began to unleash its deadly attacks at the players in its surrounding randomly! The boss would activate its {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} once almost every minute. Meanwhile, it would also activate its {Strong Nitric Acid} once every 15 seconds. Theoretically speaking, players would have to suffer the boss's {Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction} effect once in every passing minute. Not everyone could sustain 300,000 damage and still stand still like nothing has happened!

The players on the battlefield had to handle the PvP matches that came straight up at them while sustaining damage from the boss's attacks head-on. The stress level was enormous. The players were activating their Inheritance Transformation one after another, as the battles went on. It would be a stupid attempt to try reserving their best Skills at a time like this. If they did, they would definitely be wiped out by other players.

Under the bombardment from two sides, the number of casualties was rising tremendously. Players were getting killed at every passing moment, every passing second. They were turned into white lights and went back to the Graveyard. It did not take long before the top Tier players were the only ones who remained on the battlefield. For instance, Lone Desert Smoke, Hell Family and Land of Savages were still battling fiercely on the battlefield,

Most of the parties had merged their forces together to form an Alliance with the intention to take out the parties that were much more powerful than them. When their worst enemies were all dead, the Alliances would dissolve and they would turn against each other to see who would last till the end.

Fierce battles were happening on every corner of the battlefield. The weaker parties were being eliminated one after another. Well, among the strong there is always a stronger. Even top Tier parties from top Tier guilds like Dark Palace and Paragon had been eliminated, one after another as well! Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage managed to hold until the very last by the end of the battle royale. For that, Zhang Yang had paid a heavy price as well. He even gave up the chance of completing the quest over to the Crimson Rage. However, the Lone Desert Smoke would still get to keep the loot other than the equipment.

Truth be told, this quest would only reward each player with 500 Military Points. Although Zhang Yang felt a heartache while giving away the 'ticket' to completing this quest, he would be able to earn even more if the boss would just drop a Forbidden Scroll or a powerful Skill book.

Actually, Crimson Rage could have taken out the boss all by themselves with ease. As two extremely powerful parties joined their forces together on this, they took less than an hour to slay the boss.

However, this boss was not as generous as Mathuven. It only dropped 2 pieces of Holy Tier equipment and 5 pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment. However, no one would really care about those equipment if they knew how the game worked. Each party took one piece of the Holy Tier equipment. Other than that, a Skill Book and piece of Skill Point Crystal were dropped as well. So Zhang Yang picked them up, as he was promised that he could. Meanwhile, the bomb was thrown by Snow Seeker, because Zhang Yang had agreed to let them have the quest.

Upon completing the quest, everyone went back to their respective main cities. Along the way back, they distributed the equipment among themselves. The only Holy Tier equipment was a pair of leather boots. Hundred Shots got lucky that day. He won the equipment over by rolling out the highest score. Meanwhile, the Skill Book was obtained by Ten Dusk.

[Radiance of the Brave]: When hit, there is a 1% rate that you can recover your HP by 3 times of the damage value you receive.

The Skill seemed to promise a very efficient effect. However, the rate of triggering it was too damn low. It would be like recovering your HP by 3% the amount of all damage taken. In other words, the players would have a 3% Damage Immunity to himself or herself. Meanwhile, the player would still be vulnerable to the effect of {Destructive Smash}.

The moment the main quest was handed in by the Crimson Rage, Guraj no longer had any Main Story Quests left to offer. However, naturally, some greedy goblin had sold some more [Dark Source Stones] to the Spectre again. Because of that, the Spectre were able to continue on with the development of their 'Darkness Falls'.

Judging from a certain perspective, the 'Spectre Invasion' should be called 'Goblin Invasion'. Why? Because the completion of 'Darkness Falls' was basically made possible, all thanks to the goblins.

The remaining quests just had players running errands. Players were required to pass messages around from this spot to another spot, quite apart from each other. Everything seemed so simple. Well, it seemed that the story has progressed, nevertheless. There was no way to prevent the 'Darkness Falls' from being built. Therefore, all races in the entire region would be required to band together in order to fight against the Spectre, Or else, the entire land would be devoured by darkness itself!

According to the Official's message, after one month of the in-

game time, 'Darkness Falls' would be completed. Meanwhile, Angus will sooner or later be leading the Spectre Army to invade the four high Tier Territories. Once they have conquered all four of the high Tier Territories, the Spectres would be using the four Territories as their bases of operation to invade the 8 Territory Gateways. After they manage to conquer the Territory Gateways, they would pass through the Teleportation Door at the Ten Barren Seas to enter the main cities. From there onwards, the Spectres would start slaughtering all players from all Regions on their own soils.

When the four high Tier Territories are under siege, there would be no telling which Territory will Angus go for first. Whichever Territory he goes to will be the one Territory that will suffer the worst fate among all four Territories.

Well, the Spectre Army would only have the advantage in numbers without Angus's presence. Players would still be able to fend off the Spectre Army with ease, by relying on the Graveyard of their Territories. However, if a Celestial Tier boss joins into the battle, the boss could easily wipe out the players by just raising his fingers around. There will be no chance at all for the players to fight back!

Meanwhile, the massive NPC Army would only gather at the Territory Gateways. Therefore, the four high Tier Territories were destined to fall momentarily.

# Chapter 746: Darkness Falls

---

30 days' time was not long enough, especially when it was the altered in-game time. Everyone took that chance to raid bosses to raise their Levels and strength. However, little did they know that it would be a complete waste of time. Their opponent was a Celestial tier boss where 99% of all players around can only deal a pathetic 1 damage. They could only make a difference if they could reach Level 200 by the end of the given time.

Zhang Yang had managed to reached Level 169 by the end and was incredibly saddened that he was unable to reach Level 170 before the great war. Then again, even if he is able to reach Level 170, it would not allow Zhang Yang to equip the Ascended tier weapon in his storage, since that equipment required Zhang Yang to be Level 180.

Besides the players, the NPC army was making preparations themselves. All soldiers were gathered together at the frontlines to form a strong and solid formation. Such an army would help against the monsters. Sadly, they would not be of much use when Angus himself comes forth to the front lines.

Zhang Yang pestered his party to keep on completing quests that could earn them Military points. Even though it would be a waste of time, Zhang Yang still pushed them to do it. In his previous life, Zhang Yang's Level was too low to even participate in the great war. All he could do was to clean up random, low-level monsters. During then, he had heard of the importance of Military points, and it was not just to hire soldiers. Details about the importance of it was unclear to Zhang Yang. He could only guess that it was somewhat important to the boss.

As time goes went on by, the decisive battle arrived. Zhang Yang was so happy that Queen Serene herself had stepped out to his aid and defended Sauron's Castle! None of the other Territories had such privilege to be paid such a visit from an Empire's queen! It

was most probably due to the fact that Zhang Yang had a "good" relationship with Queen Serena.

At that moment, with the powerful Ascended tier boss at their side, everyone but Zhang Yang had the utmost confidence to defeat the boss. They had placed their hopes in Serena to fight the boss while the players swarm the boss and lay down any damage they could dish out.

All but Zhang Yang was happy about it. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had witnessed the downfall of all the players seven times before they were able to defeat Angus in the eighth attempt. By then, all eight major regions, all 64 Ascended bosses were sortied to fight the boss but were unable to defeat the boss until then. That was how powerful Angus, a Celestial boss could be.

Even though Serena had the Meteor Sword, making her stronger than the average Ascended tier boss, she alone was not as strong as the combined number of 64 Ascended tier bosses! Furthermore, they had received a total of 7 buffs while Angus was weakened by 7 times before they could win!

Despite the hardship, players could still fight in the war, not against Angus, but to farm experience points from the monsters in the war itself. Although Angus was practically invincible, the monsters were spawning endlessly. As long as Angus remains alive, so would the monsters' spawn rate. It was a chance that cannot be ignored! For once it slips away, there is no chasing it.

There was no doubt that the first attack attempt will result in an inevitable failure. It would be nice if they could defeat Angus on their first try and obtain all 13 Celestial tier set-equipment. It was nice to hope, but it would be an impossible task to accomplish. Zhang Yang had estimated that they would only win the war on either the third or fourth attempt. It would still be nice for the equipment drop to be set equipment.

On the first day of New Year, the war started. The war that



everyone had anticipated and prepared for has arrived. The system had automatically sent out quests to all players above Level 160. Parties that were able to defeat Angus will receive 2 Skill Points as a reward, limited to only 10 players! Furthermore, if Angus was killed then, all players that had participated in the war will receive a Level +2 reward. Similar to Skeleton Admiral Mathuven.

The calm before a storm was the similar sensation Zhang Yang felt in the silence of the battlefield. As his suspicion rose, the bright daylight was eclipsed by a sudden intrusion of dark clouds. Within an instance, the sun, the blue skies, was covered over with darkness, as if the night had fallen. Cold winds blew by, along with the cries of sorrow and dismay across the horizon.

Darkness Falls has been activated!

The echoes of soldiers marching could be heard right after the sun was blotted out.

"Enemy sighted, commander!" cried the Elven scouts, who had superior vision. Zhang Yang did not need superior elven eyes to know that. With his normal vision, he could already spot the oncoming enemies from the horizon. They were like a pitch black wave that came swarming in like black tar. Over the hills, mountain, and field, the number of incoming Spectre monsters were uncountable. It was going to be a tough fight, since there was more than one type of monster. Skeletal soldiers were the easiest to deal with, while the others were zombies, Abomination, Necromancer, Death Knight, and even a siege tank!

The siege tank was unlike any Zhang Yang had ever seen. The tank was made from the combination of the bones of their enemies merged together with eerie, disgusting, exposed muscle and tendons. The problem with the "tank" was that the corpses that were used to build the tank was enchanted with some sort of powerful spell. When an attack lands, the eerie structure will burst, emitting out poison gas that will temporarily convert NPC soldiers into Spectres.

What an ingenious method to start a war. Normally, siege tanks would be used to break down thick castle walls, yet the Spectres have used them to change the tide of war by converting the enemies to their allies!

"Ready the troops!" Among the army of the Empire, came a loud bellow from a man fully clad in shiny golden armor. He raised his sword high and with his horse standing on its rear legs.

With the horse stomping down, he cried, "ATTACK!"

PEW PEW PEW!

The army that Serena had brought to the base fired countless of lit oil barrels towards the enemy. The barrels exploded on the ground and caused high AoE damage.

The Spectre retaliated by bringing out their catapults that were armed with rotting corpses. The corpses landed behind the castle walls and spread green, toxic gas that immediately converted all soldiers into zombies. As such, the enemy had managed to attack both in and out of the castle.

The exchange of catapults lasted for several tens of minutes before both sides ran out of munitions. Shortly after, the Spectres were the first to blow their horn to signal the attack. The entire swarm of Spectres came swarming towards the castle, like rodents.

"Knights! Press on!" cried the same general. Before he could complete his order, Queen Serena stood tall at the edge of the watchtower at the top of the castle and cried out, "ATTACK! FOR THE GLORY OF MANKIND!"

Her soldiers roared with vigor and fervor as they charged out of the castle walls and attacked the Spectre. Sadly, the number of human soldiers were only by the tens of thousands. Compared to the Spectre, they were only a small island, versus the entire ocean!

Queen Serena took charge of the command and cried, "Sentries march on! ARCHERS ATTACK THE REAR! SPELLCASTERS!

## PREPARE YOUR ARCANE BLASTS!"

More and more commands were shouted out and the NPC army obeyed her commands. As such, even though the NPC army were greatly overwhelmed, they held their ground well. In fact, through Serena's strategical command, the NPC army had not suffered any losses. For the moment. Then, players from China started to pour out from behind the NPC army and flanked the Spectres from the left and right.

Zhang Yang was standing next to Serena at that moment, and he wanted to go down to the battlefield to gain some experience points. However, Serena had mistaken his actions for battlelust and stopped him.

"Hold on for now. Let the troops handle the weak ones first. The strong like you will only be needed in the battle field when more powerful enemies appear. It will be a boost of morale if you appear later in the battle."

"Yes. I hear and obey, your highness."

Although Zhang Yang had knelt down and expressed his desire to acknowledge the queen's order, he was greatly disgruntled. He had wanted to go down to reap some precious experience points! However, Queen Serena had only come to his aid due to the Relationship. No other territory had such service from their own castle Baron. Even though Zhang Yang was eager to go down to lay down some kills, he had pushed his desire away and listened to the queen. It would be for the wiser, since the queen might be angered. Who knows what she might do to him! As such, Zhang Yang remained on the watchtower.

Even though the Spectre forces were swarming in like locusts, under the command of Queen Serena, the NPC army, paired with players, were able to strike down the incoming Spectres like the locust that they were. Right then, the number of Level 100 players in China had reached over 100 million. Most of them had decided

to camp at Sauron's Castle. Even though most of them were unable to get inside the castle, as more and more players had exited the castle to enter the battlefield, most players were able to teleport in and join the fight.

The exchange of attacks continued on and many players fell in the fight. However, the flow of the battle remained unshaken as the graveyard was near. The time taken to revive again was extremely quick and easy. As such, players were able to rejoin the fight while the Spectre soldiers were suffering great losses until their reinforcements arrives.

It was estimated there were around 1 to 2 billion Spectres, then. Since players were able to keep on reviving, Sauron's Castle will not fall since players were able to keep on reviving, as if they had endless reinforcements!

Right then, it was only matter of time for the Spectre soldiers to be wiped out. The only thing to worry about then, was when the final boss appears. When Angus arrives, that will be the final decisive battle since the winner will be decided in merely a short time.

Eventually, 3 hours had passed and the Spectre soldiers suffered the most losses. Initially, they came in like a tsunami, but players were able to stop that rushing wave by hacking away at the front ones first and slowly chasing after the soldiers behind!

"Useless scum..."

A cold, deep voice was heard and amidst the gory battlefield, a black portal appeared. Out came a large character that floated midair. Abyssal darkness seeped out from his entire character and formed an absolute void around him.

The darkness around him was so dark that everything around him was rendered 2D. Even though Darkness Falls had merely turned day to night, light could still exist somewhere in the field. Angus was different. He seemed to be carrying a blackhole around

him! An existence that could swallow light, even!

[Angus, The Lord of the Seven Spectre King] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 23,000,000,000

Defense: 100,000

Magic Defense: 100,000

Melee Attack: 633,914 – 833,914

Skills:

[Blade of Obliteration]: Deals 100% melee Chaos damage to all targets within 500 meters.

[Death Cleave]: Deals 150% melee Chaos damage to a target. Cannot evade. Cannot block.

[Despair Aura]: Creates a Cage of Despair around a target every 3 seconds. Targets will be immobilized. Aura Range: 200 meters.

[Death Feeds]: Each target that Angus kills will restore 1% HP. Recovery rate cannot be affected by any skills.

Since the battle was part of the story plot, even though Angus Level had exceeded the players' ability to check his stats, players were still able to observe and examine him. It was then, when everyone gasped in unison. 23 billion HP is not a number to joke about.

Truthfully speaking, the boss' HP was not an exaggeration. Even though players could only deal 1 damage at a time, there were 100 million players then, and if everyone hits the boss 230 times, they could kill the boss with ease! The problem lay with the boss HP recovery skill. One death will restore 1% HP? That's just OP beyond reason!

The boss' attack was more than 100,000. At that point, no one could heal that much in an instance! It would be useless to rely on

numbers alone to defeat the boss. Strategy? What is that? The players were all so grossly underequipped! Defeating the boss will only be a pipedream!

"From this day forth, the world shall be mine! Let Darkness engulf the land and the Spectre shall take it all! Death shall come to those who live!"

# Chapter 747: A Losing War

---

The key to defeating Angus is to not die by his hands. A single death will only restore 1% of his health. That number would be as high as 230,000,000!

No wonder none had managed to kill Angus at the first try! Using massive numbers to defeat the boss was not only inefficient, but would also give free health to the boss! However, the current player's Levels were so low, no one would be on par with the boss! The only way of surviving the war and defeating the boss was to rely on the NPC!

The problem was that the system had not made things that simple. In his previous life, the NPCs had gone through seven attempts and was only able to defeat the boss on the eighth attempt, only when the NPCs had been greatly strengthened. Sadly, due to their failure, Angus' death had only dropped four random Celestial non-set equipment.

As the battle started, some lazy players skipped over the examining the boss' skills and charged into the frontline and died blindly. Hence, if no one takes the helm in leading the mass players, the boss will be completely immortal. No one can defeat the boss, even if players have Celestial bosses at their aid!

"Impudent Spectres! You dare invade the White Jade Empire?! I shall have your head on a stake! Let that be a lesson to all Spectres! No! Perhaps I shall wipe all Spectres off the face of the world!" Serena leapt off the watch tower and flew, without wings, towards the center of the battlefield. With quick reflex, her royal gown was immediately transformed into a grand combat gear. She pulled out her sword and was ready to charge.

"Such a bold human female...Now your place. It is I who shall wipe all humans! Heed my words and surrender to darkness!" Angus laughed and threw out a long, thin blade out of the air and

used it to charge towards Serena.

"Sword of Life and Death!" Serena cried out and unleashed her ultimate skill to face the strong Angus. Sadly, even though she could inflict as much as 600,000 damage, it was merely a tiny itch for the Celestial tier boss!

"HMPH!"

With a quick swing of his sword, Angus struck Serena. Although Serena had managed to parry the sword swing, she was blown away as if she was weightless.

"Weak..."

The Queen emerged out of the crater that she was blast into and forcefully tore off her right shoulder plating. "Curse you Spectres!" She concentrated her powers into the Meteor Sword. The blade glowed with an intense white radiance.

"Holy Light, Cross Soul Slash!"

"OOFH!" Angus grunted with pain. Serena's attack was of Holy attribute, which was extremely powerful against the Spectres. With the godly power of the Meteor Sword, she was able to deal more than millions of damage.

"Seems like you're all but talk. Come at me, evil being. I shall purify you!"

"Watch your words, little girl. I am the Lord of the Seven Kings."

"Lord or not. You're nothing but a monster that I will destroy."

Serena stomped her feet into the ground and kicked herself off at supersonic speed to clash against Angus. As such, the two bosses started exchanging blows. Even though Serena had the advantage of her Holy attribute and was using it to overwhelm the boss, Zhang Yang had no confidence in her. The boss had that OP healing ability. A single use of {Blade of Obliteration} could kill many players around 500 meters from where he stood. At the rate



of things, Angus will never have his HP lowered!

Ever since the start of the battle, Angus had been an indestructible boss! However, Serena was no ordinary Ascended tier boss. She wields the Meteor Sword, hence, even though she will have trouble killing Angus, she, herself had proved to be extremely tough to kill as well!

"Feel despair!" Angus bellowed and swung his sword hard, downwards to cleave Serena. With great power, she held her stance even as her feet slid back and block the downward slash with all her might. The resulting impact was so powerful that the impact had blasted off a wave that sent the earth around her cracking and scattering into sand. Serena borrowed the momentum of the boss' swing and spun around the air to slice at the boss from the sky. The sword landed cleanly on the boss and had ever more destructive power that a power compressed air blasted the sky, sending the dark clouds to scatter away. For a glimpse, the sun's rays were able to shine upon the land of darkness.

Players had not surrounded Angus for they realized their own strength was lacking. The only choice they had was to fight the smaller ones to earn a few experience points.

Now that Queen Serena was in the battle herself, Zhang Yang had no reason not to attack. He called forth his Phoenix and rode the bright burning bird downward. Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, when Angus had made his appearance, the Spectre forces were already on the verge of being wiped out. Hence, after only 30 minutes or so, Zhang Yang had cleaned the entire battlefield up. Angus was the only Spectre left standing.

Without players coming forth to attack him, Angus had long since cut down a player. Hence, uninterrupted, Queen Serena had hacked his HP down to the last bit.

As expected of the Queen of the White Jade Empire, a character

who never even came to being in his previous life and joined the battle of Angus. In fact, she might even be stronger than Angus himself!

If only there were more strong NPCs like Serena aiding the fight, the boss fight would probably have ended long ago. That is, if stupid players would stop rushing in to die for Angus.

Zhang Yang hesitated for a moment. There was one question that was circulating in his mind for some time. Should he use his Transformation skill then?

Besides Zhang Yang, no one else could fight toe to toe with the boss even if they have used their Transformation skill. Angus was a world boss, and his skill {Blade of Obliteration} rage and cooldown were not something to be taken lightly. He could wipe out many players by simply swinging his sword and the occasional use of {Death Cleave}.

On the other hand, the boss had an average basic attack of 730,000. Under the power of the Level Suppression system, the boss will deal close to double the damage. That means, the destructive power of {Blade of Obliteration} could reach as high as 1,460,000. By average, the boss will use his {Blade of Obliteration} once every 2 seconds. Hence, his DPS would be as high as 730,000. It would take only 14 seconds for the boss to kill someone will 10,000,000 HP.

Zhang Yang defenses and HP were not strong enough to withstand that amount of damage and survive. Plus, the boss attack attribute was Chaos type; they would never be affected or reduced by Defense or Magic resistances. Even if Zhang Yang was to Transform, he would not last longer than 100 seconds with his 52,000,000 HP!

That would only mean that S class players like Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and himself could only survive damaging the boss for a hit or two before running to safety and to restore their HP. The

situation could never be so dire. Just when the boss was overleveled, now, the players would be forced to run out of the attacking range of 500 meters!? What sort of battle is that?

It could not be helped then. The current players then, could not even defeat a regular Ascended tier boss, what more a Celestial tier!?

Right then, a group of players, riding on their flying mounts were flying through the sky to attack the boss. There were not many of them, but merely in groups of a thousand or more. Zhang Yang did not even need to squint his eyes, for their speed was extremely fast. They were all players from the European server.

"Take the boss! Get the loot!" Someone from the group had yelled out and the entire group roared with fervor. They charged into the boss range as if the boss was about to be taken away by someone else.

"Stupid fools!" Players who were standing on top of the watch tower behind the castle wall cursed. A tragic event was about to unfold.

"Blade of Obliteration!" Angus grunted and unleashed his sword swing. Almost half of the players that charged towards the boss died. The other half that survived the swing managed to survive, only because they had already activated their Transformation skill. On the other hand, due to the death of many, many players, the boss had restored his HP back to 100%!

"Ignorant fools!" cried Serena and she pointed her sword up high. Again, she concentrated her powers into the sword and cried, "Sword of Life and Death!"

Shush shush shush!

Not only was Serena attacking the boss, her targets included the players from other regions, other than China! Since they were not of the same allegiance, the players from Europe were all Serena's

enemies, and her attacks had landed on them as well.

With two bosses attacking together, players were still being killed, even though they had used their Transformation skills. In less than a few swings, all the C class Inheritance players fell, followed closely by the B class players, and A class players.

Fortunately, the only S class Inheritance holder, God's Left Hand was not so stupid to charge at the boss like idiots. Or else, he would be the first S class Inheritance player that would be killed by the boss!

"Hahahaha! All who live shall be food for my soul! Come to me and die by my blade! I shall reap your lifeforce!" said Angus as he restored his HP back to 100% and smiled with such satisfaction.

"Insolent fool. Life is not something that belongs to you! Heed my words, O evil lord, I shall cut you down!" Queen Serena stood strong, even though the situation was extremely dire. It was that stoic stance of a Queen, the utmost confidence in her own power.

"Know your place! Fool!" Angus grunted with anger. The two bosses then continued their swordplay.

When there's one idiot, there will be the next, and the next as well. The next group of greedy players that soared towards the boss were the players of India. When they saw how the boss had cut down the players from Europe. They decided to take note of the boss' skill and carefully examined his attack pattern. As such, there were no second group of idiots that charged into the boss to die.

No sooner after, players from North America, Australia, and South America had gathered. Obviously, they had obtained the news about Angus and had come over to get the loots. However, the boss was so strong that none of them was able to formulate a battle plan to fight the boss.

Still, they were players with diehard stubbornness, trying to

fight and only managed to deal that 1 pathetic damage. It was a bet, to see if they could deal enough damage to be able to grab the loot later when the boss is defeated. The main problem was that their greed was Angus's nourishment. Every player that was stupid enough to get close to the boss was killed and was converted to be his HP. As such, Angus HP had never dropped below 95%.

Even though Serena had devastating powers, her DPS was not as strong as Angus's HP restoration. As the battle dragged on longer, Serena started to grow weary. The winner of the fight was most definitely getting obvious.

"Protect the Queen!"

"Defend her highness!"

Soldiers of the Empire rushed over to surround Serena and group peeled off to attack Angus. Sadly, like players, they were not able to even deal any significant damage. Like players, they were only "nourishment" for the boss. As time goes, the boss had only become stronger while Serena had only become weaker.

At one point, Serena's HP had dropped so low that all the army had rushed into the battle to fight.

5%...3%...1%...

When Angus was about to strike the killing blow, Serena's Meteor Sword glowed with an intense radiance and engulfed Serena, rendering her invulnerable. With a saddened voice, Serena cried, "Withdraw! All troops, withdraw!"

"Don't think you can escape the reaper's grasp!" Angus moved forward closer to Serena.

With a quick roar, Serena cleaved the space in front of her and created a break in the spatial dimension. The crack opened wider and became a portal for her to escape. In an instance, the portal closes, leaving the anguished and enraged Angus roaring to the sky.

As per shown by Queen Serena, all 64 bosses from all regions of the world cannot die. They can only be defeated. How else could they become stronger, then! If they die, they would only become Spectres that would be added to the enemy's forces!

# Chapter 748: The Search for Reinforcement

---

When the main pillar of hope was broken, players had no other place to rely on and was turned into mincemeat by the boss. Right then, no player was capable of standing toe to toe with the Celestial tier boss. Hence, the only sensible route left for them was to run away.

The boss did not allow anyone on the battlefield to escape. He truly intended to kill every single player there were then. He then pulled out his sword and sliced a dimensional doorway. At then, the dimensional doorway expanded fully and out came a swarm of monsters. With Angus leading the command, the swarm of newly spawned monsters attacked the players like locust swarms.

Now that Angus was the only superpower left on the battlefield, players were completely outmatched and overwhelmed. A single swing of his {Blade of Obliteration} was able to wipe out the weak players within 500 meters! With such powerful killing skill, Sauron's Castle was overrun easily.

Fortunately, before Sauron's Castle was overrun, Zhang Yang and his party were able to charge towards the Teleportation Circle and left to Morning Town. There, he stood by and commanded what's left of the players around to make their defensive stance. Serena had temporarily returned to White Jade Castle to recuperate from the battle. Hence, half of the Empire's soldiers were sent back to protect the defenseless queen. As such, the chance of Morning Town being overrun by Spectres was 99.99%

It was what the plot had laid out for players to realize the truth of Spectre Invasion. If they could not even invade past the borders of Chaos Realms, what would Spectre Invasion really mean, then?

After Sauron's Castle was overrun, the next territory to be conquered by the Spectres were Forrest Gump's Fortress, Cynthia's Town, and White Horse Bay. They were all turned from player's

resting spots to Spectre base camps. As such, after all territories deep in the Chaos Realm were taken over, they had proceeded to march forth to enter the eight major regions. There was no one who could put stop to their march. Angus was too powerful, then. His army had easily trampled over towns like they were weeds in the field.

With the players falling back to their own major cities, Angus' forces continued to press their attack and infiltrated the pre-Chaos Realm regions. As such, the invasion continued on further. Without anyone able to put a stop to the Spectre invasion, Angus' forces had managed to take control 56 out of the 64 major cities of the entire world. He had only allowed one major city to survive for every region. As such, the Spectre Invasion event had reached its climatic point. It was up to players to decide on how to fight the boss. By then, Angus himself had not settled down anywhere permanently. He kept on switching in between the four territories in Chaos Realms. Unless players kill their way back, Chaos Realm will be done for.

When all territories and access to the Chaos Realm are taken away, the entire game seemed to have fallen back to the beginner's stage. It was still possible for players to make their way to the Chaos Realm. They would need to be strong enough to attack their way through the Ten Barren Seas and through the portal to Chaos Realm. It would be easier for Level 100 players since they would not have to travel far beyond the gates of Chaos Realm to reach their respective training grounds. Level 150 players were faced with a tough scenario. They needed to travel extremely far into the Chaos Realm to reach their respective training grounds.

Naturally, the system would not make something like grinding levels an impossible task. They had allocated monsters to spawn between Level 100 to Level 180 around each city and territory to allow higher level players to gain some levels. Imagine all players from 8 major cities gathered in one major city, the monsters



spawning in the area alone was not enough to satisfy all players at once. Hence, chaotic battles erupted between guilds just to occupy the training grounds for their own use.

As such, the game had plunged into the dark ages. Players all around the world wanted to open up the path to Chaos Realm and to reclaim their land back from Angus. With both lands and the Celestial equipment hanging right there for them to take, the only method for them to grab the prize was to grind their way up higher and higher.

The system had given players 1 months' time of preparation whereby the NPC of major cities will "respawn" and assume their counterattack. The timing for all regions to start their own counterattack was not the same date. It was designed based on which region is the first to get attacked. Each region will have 3 days to attack and defeat Angus. If Angus is not defeated within the given period of time, all players will be removed from the battlefield, and so is Angus. The battle will then be declared as a loss for the players. By the looks of it, the first region to start their counterattack was South America. Australia will be the next in line, followed by Europe, North America, Africa, Japan-Korea, India, and finally China. Based on the recent battle of the other region, they would not be able to defeat Angus even when their NPC boss receives a 10% strength buff. Amongst all, Queen Serena will have the highest chance to defeat Angus for she was far stronger than any other Ascended tier boss. She was the only one capable of defeating Angus. That was the reason was Angus was only defeated after seventh attempts. That is how strong was a Celestial tier boss. There was no way the system would allow players to get their hands on the Celestial tier equipment. Furthermore, after defeating the boss, players who have had participated in the war shall receive Level +2 reward and obtained the title, "Savior of the Land". All of the given rewards are only limited to only players of a single region that had defeated Angus.

Since Zhang Yang was sure that the first attempt will end with a failure, he had not wasted a single Military Point. As such, within the one-month preparation of time given, Zhang Yang had continued to amass more Military Points by completing quests offered by the NPC. After the first war attempt, everyone had then realized the importance of Military Points.

NPCs that were hired through spending Military points were not just to put up more fight with Angus. If that is the case, Military Points would be worthless, since Angus's sword strike would kill them all and heal himself.

Those soldiers that were hired could be used as a means to share the damage received. It was by a percentage, and 1% at most. However, players can use that to their advantage. When NPC soldier hired by a player exceed 99, the player himself would only receive 1% of the incoming damage. The rest of the 99% damage will be distributed evenly to the rest of the 99 soldiers. The problem was that, normal soldiers will not have such skill. Only elite soldiers could be so useful in battle.

Elite tier soldiers will cost 100 Military Points each. Technically, to have the maximum damage distribution, one must have 9,900 Military Points! Zhang Yang had only amassed 3,890 Military Points then, and could only hire 38 elite tier NPC soldiers. At most, the soldiers will be able to tank the 38% of damage received, whereas the remaining 62% will kill Zhang Yang in no time at all!

The elite NPC soldier were like mobile HP potions. When fighting Angus himself, the NPC soldiers can be placed far behind the frontlines, since the "Shared Life" skill works within a 1-kilometer distance. The soldier could be placed far behind the attack range of the boss and remain alive. If one could find 99 Level 100 healers, they could help to heal the NPC soldiers behind, while the attacker (the player) can tank Angus and continue the fight longer than usual.

The qualification of looting the boss drop does not work the same

way as it would be when fighting normal boss. In summary, players must be able to deal more damage than the NPC to be able to gain the authority to loot the drops.

Hence, to make things easy, players would have to make sure they could survive long enough in the battle to deal enough damage. Not to mention, they would have to remain alive till the end to prevent their effort from being wasted. That was the importance of the Military Points.

Zhang Yang had advised all his party members to not waste any of their Military Points earlier on. Hence, together with Zhang Yang, they too had run around the castle, completing missions given by the NPC in town for Military Points. Even though most of the quest were only worth 1 or 2 Military Points. They had to be satisfied with it.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Search and Sanction. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points, 5 Military Points!’

Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he acquired the quest reward. He then hunkered down and raised his voice to Gulaj. "Goblin, do you have any harder quests for me? All the quest that I have done so far were so easy. Are you taking me for some spineless bastard?"

"Hmph! Don't get too cocky, Human!" The Goblin crossed his arms. "Fine. If you want something challenging. I have an urgent mission that might be difficult, even for you. It's not about strength this time. Finish it, and I'll give you a handsome reward."

‘Ding! Gulaj has a Hidden Quest for you: Search for Reinforcements. Will you accept it?’

Haha! You could trigger a hidden quest that way too!

Zhang Yang accepted the quest immediately and checked its description.

[Search for Reinforcement] (Difficulty Level: Unspecified)

Description: Listen close the wind blows. Can't you hear the

sorrows and despair in the air? The Spectres have proven themselves to be a formidable foe. All those that live and breathe in the Union will face an unstoppable, destructive force. At times like this, we must combine our forces to combat the evil. Go out to the wild and search for helping hands!

Progress: Undesignated

Participant Limit: 1

Reward: Military Points based on the number of reinforcements recruited.

The reason why the quest difficulty was not set was due to the freedom of the player. They could simply find random NPCs, or recruit a Holy tier boss. It all depends on the level of the NPC and, the reward will correspond to that.

To search for a helping hand...Zhang Yang immediately thought of thousands of names. One of which stood out better than the other. Merlinda – Song of the Forest! The kidnapped princess, the new Priestess of the Moon for the Elven race. She had reached the highest position amongst the elven race, she should be far stronger than before! She was at the very least leader of Elves, being an Ascended tier was the very least tier that she should be.

She has the skill - {Higher Regeneration} which could restore 5% HP every second. Logically, Zhang Yang could heal himself back to 100% HP in only 20 seconds. With Merlinda helping Zhang Yang, he could activate his Transformation skill and survive the boss fight without even relying on the NPC soldiers! It may sound nice, but it was not realistic. A transformation state will only last for 2 hours. Defeating the Angus within 2 hours was not logical nor sensible! Hence, Military Points would still come in handy.

Zhang Yang had rescued Merlinda three times. Hence, there will be higher chance that he could recruit her to join the fight against the Spectre. Some might even wonder why could Zhang Yang need to personally recruit the Elves when they were part of the four

major races in the Union aside from Humans, Orcs, and Dwarves. The reason was simple, like Humans in the Chaos Realm, the Elves were not an ally to the Union. They were part of the races that lived in the Union but had not pledge their allegiance to the Union. Only some of the Elves were part of the Union and not all.

On the other hand, there was one more name that could be of help. Smaug The King of the Forgotten One. He belonged to a separate Spectre group that had alienated themselves from the rest of the world. The best part was, he was a Celestial tier boss! In the past, Zhang Yang and Smaug had gone on an adventure together to save his wife. As a sign of friendship, Smaug had given him the [Friendship Jade]. He could try his luck to recruit the Forgotten King. If he manages to, he could perhaps defeat Angus at the first counterattack!

If all goes well, Angus will be the only Spectre boss to be feared of. On the other hand, the human side would have eight Holy tier boss and one Celestial boss to fight. The chances of victory was extremely high! Perhaps, there would be a chance for him to get all 10 Celestial tier set equipment!

How exciting!

Zhang Yang stopped for a moment and thought it through. Smaug could be harder to recruit, since he was a Spectre as well. Even though he bears the name "Forgotten King" and alienated himself from the other hostile Spectres, they were still Spectres, to begin with. In fact, there was no reason for him to fight for the humans either!

Tch!

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue. It will be hard, but even so, Zhang Yang will try his best.

Zhang Yang planned his route and soared to the sky with the Phoenix. He had no choice but to fly, since Tukula Fortress had been overrun by the Spectres as well. In fact, only White Jade

Castle stood strong from the invasion, as well as the other major cities around the world. Perhaps, it was because Queen Serena was resting there.

Zhang Yang flew quickly and swiftly through the land and entered the Chaos Realm through the portal in the Ten Barren Sea. His first stop was the Elf's Sacred Ground.

# Chapter 749: Unauthorized Entry

---

Holy Land of the Elves Athuran, was a Level 180 – Level 210 map. The map had probably not been visited yet since the creation of the game and Zhang Yang could be the first player to set foot into the map. Trees were growing ever so tall, that were several hundreds of meters tall. The entire map was practically filled with the sky-scraping trees! As far as the trees grew, there was a bigger one that had planted itself in the center of the map. The tree was far older, taller, and bigger than the rest of the trees. The crown of trees was growing so vast and wide that it spanned nearly over several tens of kilometers. That was as wide as the entire map itself.

That was the Sacred Tree of the Elven race, known as the Gustrea tree, also known as the Tree of Life, and the Source of Life. Legend has it that the Elven race was birthed from the tree itself. It was said that the Moon God had chosen this particular tree and find it capable of producing life itself. That was the description given from the official guide. What the Moon God did to the tree remained completely unknown. Probably someone as perverted as Fatty Han could find an answer to that mystery.

The map was too strong for Zhang Yang. At then, he was only Level 169 and could not afford to even fight the monsters. He could, but it would not be his norm. Anyone in their right mind would not just simply waltz into a dangerous area and fight the monsters there, which were clearly far stronger than them! Zhang Yang then made his way carefully through the thick forest, careful as he flitted through the trees, so that he would not accidentally lure in monsters of which he knows that he could never defeat via normal means. He did not have that much time to spare.

Out of the blue, Zhang Yang heard a loud cry of a hawk. He turned his head back and saw a large shadow zooming towards him at great speed. The incoming beast was huge and clawed at Zhang Yang, leaving a long gash on his metal armor.

‘-67,720!’

Zhang Yang sustained a strong attack and saw clearly of his attacker. It was a huge, Horned Hawk. Its wings were as long as 7 meters wide when spread open and had an iron-like claw that was strong enough to leave a scraping line on his armor.

[Wild Horned Hawk] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 205

HP: 263,850

Defense: 8,080

Melee Attack: 49,447 – 69,447

Skills: ???

Zhang Yang was unable to view the beast’s skill, since the level gap between him and the hawk was 36 Levels. Still, it was not something that he would worry about, since normal tier monsters would not have many strong skills. If the monster is several more Levels higher than Zhang Yang, he would not even be able to view its attack, HP, and even Defense.

The damage that Zhang Yang had just received was a rather unlucky shot, since it was doubled due to the Level Suppression System.

Zhang Yang pulled out the Reaper’s Scythe from his back and attacked.

‘-87,333!’

Hmph. Not too bad. At the very least, Zhang Yang could deal higher damage than what the beast could do to him. At that moment, Zhang Yang was rather lucky enough to have his damage reduced down by 50%.

Sadly, the damage was not enough for Zhang Yang to generate many Rage points. The damage and attack he dealt was enough to generate only 62 Rage points which only allowed Zhang Yang to



cast one skill.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-456.205!’

Although the strike was able to kill the beast instantly, it was already being reduced by 30%! If he had not been suppressed by the system, he could have dealt even higher damage!

What a useful skill, {Charge Up Strike} was paired together with {God of War Devastation} or {God of War Heavy Axe}, Zhang Yang could deal 9 times the value of his normal attack! Even though there was the Level Suppression reducing his damage, it was still an OP attack! Still, it was just a normal tier monster, if the monster that had attacked Zhang Yang was an elite tier, he would have turned tail and run away.

Due to the Level of the map, the normal monsters there would have the attack power of a Mythical tier boss! Paired with the Level Suppression system, monsters there would have been a higher threat than an Ethereal tier boss is to Zhang Yang. That was just a normal tier monster. If Zhang Yang is unlucky enough to stumble upon an elite tier monster, its threat level would be as high as an Ethereal tier boss! With the Level Suppression system working on him, it would be his loss if Zhang Yang tries to fight!

Zhang Yang concluded that he would have to spend some time there, hence, he had decided that he would fight normal tier monsters and escape if he stumbles upon an elite tier monster.

"Big Brother!" cried Felice as she appeared from her Battle Companion U.I after Zhang Yang had defeated the hawk and flew for some time. She stood on the back of the Phoenix and stared at the distance with a nostalgic expression hanging on her face.

Even though players and the Battle Companion had the contract that binds them together, battle companions could still choose to

break the contract and discard their owner anytime they want to. However, that would be extremely rare. Commonly, even high tiered battle companions were just strong servants who would not put up a fight with their owner. The act of Felice coming out of her Battle Companion U.I by herself was extremely rare!

Zhang Yang was shocked and instantly replied, "What's wrong?"

"There---" Felice raised her slender hands and pointed at the direction of the Tree of Life. "I sense something there. Its...Its... calling for me..." Gradually, Felice eye's lost their focus, as if she was being possessed by something.

Hmph? Could it be that Felice had found another spot to gain yet another tier?

Zhang Yang smiled and complied. "Let's go there then!"

Felice quickly shook her head and regained her composure. She nodded. "Alright." She morphed into her Dragonhawk form and flew towards the Tree of Life. Zhang Yang followed closely from behind.

"Halt!" cried two female Elven archers who were riding Horned Hawks, and stopped Zhang Yang and Felice. They were only dressed in tight leather armor which only emphasized their slender bodies.

It was inevitable that all female character designed in the game would be beautiful. In fact, 99% of all female NPC characters in the game had voluptuous boobies and slender waist. Zhang Yang and Felice descended and landed on the ground. The female Elves followed and got down from their mounts. As they did, their jiggy-jugs were jiggling around as they jumped down from their mounts. What a sight to behold!

Zhang Yang could not resist and had to stare at them for a good second before responding to them. "My name is Zhan Yu and I am an adventurer from White Jade Castle. I am here with an urgent

request for Merlinda – Song of the Forest."

"The great priestess of the moon is not someone whom you could visit anytime you want!" said the female bowmen. "Please leave this sacred ground of the Elves. No good shall befall you if you try to linger."

"Big brother..." Felice muffled her voice with her hands as she turned to Zhang Yang with her big, unblinking eyes. They craved for love and attention.

Sigh...

Zhang Yang could not resist. At then, be it asking Merlinda to fight by his side, Zhang Yang had a better reason to go into the land of the Elf for Felice's sake! Zhang Yang smiled innocently and said, "Please talk to Merlinda and let her know that it is Zhan Yu who wishes to speak with her. I'm sure that the great Priestess of the Moon will know how to decide my fate."

"Insolent fool! Did you not heed my words?! I shall have you heed my arrows, then!" cried the Elven archer as she and her comrade drew their bows, prepared to fight.

Zhang Yang laughed at their speedy reactions and quickly stunned them with {Blast Wave}. "Let's go! Felice!"

Zhang Yang and Felice quickly deserted the two archers and rushed towards the Tree of Life. After being stunned for 4 seconds, the two female Elves leaped on their Horned Hawks and chased after Zhang Yang with haste. Sadly, they were no match for the Phoenix's flying speed and was left behind further.

Before Zhang Yang had realized it, the closer he got to the Tree of Life, more Elven warriors had chased after Zhang Yang on their mounts. The problem was that the warriors were Elite tier! It would be extremely difficult for him to lose them!

Zhang Yang grunted disgruntledly and activated the Phoenix's Transformation skill. The Phoenix grew, in size as well as in flying

speed. With the boost of HP, Zhang Yang tanked all the damage and flew past the defenders' barrage.

Arrows landed more and more and dealt a considerable amount of damage to Zhang Yang. Even though the Phoenix had a long HP bar, Zhang Yang feared that he might not be able to last too long. Fortunately, the Phoenix's amazing flying speed was fast enough to dodge some of the incoming arrows. If he had not used the Phoenix's Transformation skill, he might have sustained more damage and had his HP reduced down to below 50%!

It was not the time to fight! He had to get to the Tree of Life! He had a hunch that Merlinda would be somewhere close to the Tree of Life, since it was an entity that was extremely precious to the Elven race! Perhaps if he could meet her, she could stop the incoming forces from attacking him! If he does not stir up a chaotic storm, Merlinda would not even know that Zhang Yang was there to visit her! Those selfish female Elves would not have delivered his message to her in the first place!

He would have to do it himself!

Untransformed, Felice's moving speed will not be as fast as the Phoenix, hence, Zhang Yang had called for her to sit behind him as they sped towards the tree.

As they zoomed forward, the tree did not even seem to get any closer to them! Just how big was the tree?! From where they were, the tree itself was so large that they could fit a city inside! From where he was, Zhang Yang could finally catch a glimpse of the entrance where several juvenile Elves were playing on one of the branches of the tree barefooted. From where he was, the branch looked like a regular tree branch and the children were only the size of ants. Its branches, however, were actually a tens of meters wide. There was no reason to be afraid of falling over either, since there was a great number of leaves the size of footballs field. Falling down on them would greatly reduce the fall damage. Perhaps, it would be fun, even!

Eventually, Zhang Yang was free from harm as the Elven corps were far away from them. Zhang Yang then made his way towards the tree top and found a pool. It looked like someone had chopped off the top of the tree and hollowed it out like a canoe, and filled water in it.

Felice shouted with passion, "There!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head and flew closer to the pool, all the way listening to the angry cries of the Elven corp behind them. Although he could not hear what they were saying, he could have guessed that they were warning them to stay away from the tree top.

Zhang Yang ignored their calls and hovered above the pool of greenish water. Felice jumped off the Phoenix and morphed into her Dragonhawk form. With a loud splash, Felice dove into the water and instantly vanished from his sight. It was not clear to how deep was the water was, since it was quite clear.

"Intruder! You had sullied the Spring of Life! Only death may wash away your grave sins!" cried the Elven warriors as they surrounded Zhang Yang from all directions. Zhang Yang had single-handedly angered the entire Elven race.

They had not immediately attack. In fact, they were holding back their rage to attack. It was probably because they were extremely close to the so-called Spring of Life. If a battle is to erupt on top of the water surface, his blood would spill into the pool. Perhaps, that would be a greater offense.

"Catch him!" cried the Elves.

It was a problem, and while they were hesitating, more Elven warriors coming from behind them! If there were to fight, Zhang Yang would surely be the first to go down.

Zhang Yang started to feel fear creeping up his spine. Was Merlinda even present here?

Out of the noisy crowd, two large beasts burst out. Riding on top of the magnificent beast was a female priestess dressed in a white priestess uniform. The other one was wearing the same uniform, except she was much taller and the other, her mount was exceptionally grand, as it was pure white. It was rather familiar to be fair. It was a unicorn. She looked like a goddess of the moon, was how one would surmise her appearance, even without knowing what a goddess of the moon should actually look like.

Hold on...That's Merlinda! The Priestess of the Moon!

As Zhang Yang had expected, she had gained another tier!

[Priestess of the Moon, Merlinda – The Moon Whisperer]  
(Ascended, Humanoid)

Level: 200

HP: 2,000,000,000

Defense: 32,470

Magic Attack: 162,165 – 242,165

Skills: ???

Note: The Prophet of the Moon God. The Leader of the Elven Race.

What? When did the professional prisoner change her name? The Moon Whisperer was the title only a Priestess of the Moon could inherit. Zhang Yang could not remember what the previous Priestess of the Moon was called, but if Merlinda could inherit the name, she must be the real deal!

# Chapter 750: A Stronger Felice

---

"Hello there!" said Zhang Yang as he casually waved his hand to Merlinda. That disrespectful act had only triggered the Elven warriors around him to curse him even more. The man had not only defiled the sacred waters, and had shown his disrespects to the one above all of them.

When Merlinda removed her hood, her expression was stoic and furious. However, when she saw Zhang Yang was waving at her, she smiled jubilantly and waved back at him happily. "It's been a while!" said Merlinda. The unicorn that she was riding noticed Zhang Yang and puffed angrily while stomping his hooves in midair.

When everyone saw the reaction of their Priestess of the Moon waving nonchalantly back at Zhang Yang, they dropped their weapons and stared at her as if Merlinda was not the same person that they been worshiping all this time.

"Explain the ruckus," said Thea – Moon Glory. She was also a priestess of the moon, but was not at the same rank as Merlinda. In the past, Zhang Yang had meddled with her before.

"This human male breached our defenses and sullied the Spring of Life. His companion is still within the waters." One of the female warrior came up to Thea and reported the situation.

Thea sighed heavily and turned to Zhang Yang with regret in her eyes, "Zhan Yu. You have come from a faraway and had been a savior for all us Elves. You should have been treated as an honored guest. Now that you have trespass our Holy Ground and sullied our Spring of Life, I, for one cannot allow this to slip by. Please leave this place. We owe you our lives for saving the Priestess of the Moon in the past, hence, we shall do the same for you. You shall leave this place unscathed."

"The man has sullied our holy grounds! He must be executed!"

"Priestess! You cannot be serious!"

The other female Elves were greatly unsatisfied with the final verdict and had tried to refute Thea.

"Silence, my sisters. This man—" Merlinda tried to calm everyone.

"But, Priestess!"

"SILENCE!" Merlinda roared with such fury that her powers seeped out of her character. There was sudden burst of energy that made the surface of the water tremble with resonance of her powers. Everyone was completely silent and lowered their heads to show their obedience.

She then rode the unicorn towards Zhang Yang and held his hands. With a gentle smile on her face, she said, "Zhan Yu. Please make yourself at home!"

The other female Elves raised their head with shock at her response when she had invited him into their holy ground, when he was supposed to be executed! Thea turned to Merlinda and gave her a look which practically said, "Are you sure?" and Merlinda gave her a soothing glare that said, "It's going to be fine."

Zhang Yang had basically committed the gravest of crimes amongst the Elven culture. The Spring of Life was said to be the bathing place of the Moon God himself. Only newly born Elven babies were allow to wash themselves in the waters, once in their lifetime. However, Merlinda was the Priestess of the Moon, the prophet of the Moon God. With her holding the position, her words was the law. To defy her commands was to defy the Moon God!

Although the rest of the Elves were pressingly objecting Merlinda's action, they could do nothing but to obey Merlinda.

Before Zhang Yang was about to follow Merlinda back to her chambers, the Spring of Life glowed brightly. An orb floated



upwards and out of the water like the sun that was rising up from the ocean. It was so bright that everyone had to shut their eyes for a moment. Zhang Yang squinted his eyes and he tried to keep his eyes open while trying to identify what was the object was. The light dimmed down but was still glowing, but too shining, but softly and easy to look at, just like the glow of the moon in the night sky.

"It's the Moon God!"

"The Moon God descends!"

"Praise the Moon God!"

The mounted elves descended to the nearest three branches and kneel at the light. Their mouths moved continuously as they prayed hard in the direction of the glowing orb.

Felice could really make a scene! Now that it has come to this, perhaps the Elves would not blame the little girl for sullyng the Spring of Life, they would even have her worship the Moon Goddess, or something as grand as that! Zhang Yang snickered at the thought of it. All he cared was not how the Elves treated her, but Felice breaks the second seal!

Slowly, the light coming from the orb dimmed down darker until one point it looked like an embryo. The outer shell of the orb glowed and everyone could see the insides of the shell. There was a humanoid shape that was curled up in a fetal position. The light glowed brighter all the sudden. The tree briefly trembled as the light grew stronger by seconds. The chants of the Elven warriors around grew stronger and faster.

Crack—

The orb made a loud, cracking sound, followed closely by a loud explosion that broke the shell apart. Felice burst out of the orb of light, like an angel descending down to earth, and landed in front of Zhang Yang. Her armor and appearance was somewhat similar,

yet different. Her hair was longer, her armor was grander and heavier, not to mention, she ‘grew’ too! Those mature features!

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 169

HP: 2,021,040 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 16,850

Melee Attack: 153,077 – 233.077

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear], [Dragon's Spear Barrage], [Absolute Defense], [Dragonhawk Form], [Spectral Tiger Form], [Tree of Life Form].

[Tree of Life Form]: Morphes into the Tree of Life. Able to use all skills available during the Tree of Life form. Unable to use skills during Human form.

Special: {Third Seal}, {Fourth Seal}

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

Zhang Yang smiled and greeted Felice. He was actually holding back from screaming with joy when he saw Felice's new stats. It was already at the level of a Holy tier boss! From then on, Felice was stronger than the Phoenix pet. The Phoenix could only reach the level of Holy tier after reaching Level 170, as for Felice, she was already at that level at Level 169!

Furthermore, Felice's growth rate has reached 12 Stars for all Attribute growth after breaking the second seal! That means one equipment that could add 100 Strength points would grant Felice the ability to gain 120 Strength instead! That includes Vitality, Intelligence, Spirit, and Dexterity! It was the same as carrying a Vitality Aura, Strength Aura, Dexterity Aura, Spirit Aura, Intelligence Aura, all stacking with each other with the player's own aura as well!

Just how powerful could the little girl get!?

When Felice's new appearance was showed to the Elves, they had forgotten the sins that Zhang Yang had committed and proceeded to bow down to Felice. Zhang Yang scoffed at their reaction. The little girl has merely taken a simple bath and she was able to shock the entire Elven race. Perhaps Felice had some connections to the Moon God and was able to receive his blessing. Which Elf in the world could trigger such a reaction just by dipping their head in the water?

Hence, the noisy, hostile commotion ended peacefully and Zhang Yang followed Merlinda to her Moon Shrine. Without further due, Zhang Yang quickly reported the events that had occurred in the land and had asked for Merlinda for her aid to tackle the problem of the Spectre Invasion.

With a worried expression, Zhang Yang started his speech, "I'm sure that the brutality of the Spectre is known to all. Their goal is to eradicate all life on the surface of the earth. The Elves may have the protection of the Tree of Life. Know this, after all Humans, Orcs, Dwarves are removed, they would turn to the Elves next. I understand well that the Elven warriors are fearless and strong. If all Humans, Orcs, and Dwarves could not stop them, how could you? How could you stop someone as strong as the Lord of the Seven Spectre Kings?"

Zhang Yang continued to report on his encounter with Angus and had successfully instilled fear into the hearts of those who were listening. Even though there were the elders of the Elves who clearly preferred to stay clear of the war, Merlinda chose to follow Zhang Yang into battle. With a decisive handshake, Merlinda agreed to set foot into the battlefield. There were those that opposed her decision, but Merlinda used her position as the Priestess of the Moon to reject the teachings of their religion.

However, the battle of Angus would not matter even if Merlinda dispatches a million Elves. Besides Merlinda herself, the strongest

ones there were only Holy tier entities. Their presence in the battlefield will be short and brief. Hence, with Zhang Yang's arrangement and Merlinda's agreement, Merlinda only brought along two other Priestesses along with her.

Zhang Yang lingered for a while in the land of the Elves and went off to Kanjar Fields to look for Smaug. Sadly, he had never set foot into the map before, not even in his past life. Furthermore, the map was not the same as Athuran that had the large, overly obvious Tree of Life. Secondly, the map that Smaug was situated in was much higher Level than the Elves. When Zhang Yang entered the map, monsters from a thousand meters away started to chase after him. He could not even see them coming! Hence, after trying several times but failing to sneak around, Zhang Yang had dropped the idea to search for Smaug and ask for his help. There were too many monsters and Zhang Yang could not even tank the normal tier monster. He was killed twice for lingering too long in the map. After dropping the idea, Zhang Yang turned tail and returned to White Jade Castle.

Merlinda was still in her land and will only come to Zhang Yang aid three days before the day of the counterattack. Hence, Zhang Yang will only be able to submit the quest when she arrives. By the looks of it, Merlinda was an Ascended tier boss, the Military Points given as the reward should be plenty!

Even though Zhang Yang was unable to search for Smaug, he was rather satisfied with his current force. Merlinda has agreed to lend a hand and Felice had even managed to break the second seal to gain a tier, skills, and a new form!

[Felice] (Tree of Life Form)

Level: 169

HP: 1,265,980 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 3,890

Magic Resistance: 16,850

Magic Attack: 82,941 – 142,941

Skills:

[Bloom of Life]: Heals an ally and nine more targets closest to the ally. Heals 100% Magic Attack worth of HP for 15 seconds. Instant cast.

[Praise of Life]: Powerfully heals a target for 300% Magic Attack for HP and continuous to heal the target in the next 10 seconds for 100% Magic Attack for HP. Instant. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Song of Life]: Heals a target for 150% Magic Attack for HP. Channeling: 2 seconds. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Ancient Tree of Life]: Morphs into the Ancient Tree of Life. Increases HP by 2000% and healing rate by 300%. Magic Resistance and Defense increased by 300%. Last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 3 days. Entering either Transformation skill will set all Transformation skill (Dragonhawk Berserk, Spectre Tiger Berserk) into the same cooldown time.

[Redemption]: Instantly heals to full health. Cooldown: 30 minutes. Required: Ancient Tree of Life Transformation.

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

Zhang Yang was given what he asked for. Felice's third Transformation skill was a healer type! Now, Zhang Yang could continue fighting endlessly. Felice could heal Zhang Yang whenever he needs her to!

The time was not yet ripe for the counterattack to start and Zhang Yang wanted to take the opportunity to reach Level 170. He could gain a skill point, which was not all that useful to him. Most importantly, both Felice and the Phoenix could gain an upgrade!

As mentioned before, mounts and battle companions will only receive an upgrade at every 10 Level threshold. By reaching Level

170, the Phoenix could reach Holy tier and Felice would still receive a boost in strength, even though she had already broken her second seal!

Racing against time, Zhang Yang had pumped all his attention into grinding alone and had neglected even having some shakalaka boom boom session with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. In one day and one night whole (real world), Zhang Yang did not pause for one moment and successfully reached Level 170 before the day of the counterattack.

As a repercussion of his actions, Han Yin Xue and Sun Xin Yu had rolled their eyes at Zhang Yang numerous times when they "poked" Zhang Yang junior but was chased away by Zhang Yang. Sun Xin Yu understood his feelings and was merely teasing him. Han Ying Xue however was being a b\*tch she was, had even whispered into his ears saying something like having other men to scratch the itch in her hoojaa. As a response, Zhang Yang got up from his bed, removed his gaming helmet and gave Han Ying Xue a good "spanking" session for teasing him so.

# Chapter 751: The First Attempt to Counterattack

---

Merlinda had arrived two days ago, when Zhang Yang had just reached Level 170. He returned to the city and rendezvous with Merlinda to meet Gulaj together.

"Oh, my heavens. Her Chakra Level is over 10,000!" cried Gulaj with both fear and anxiety as he examined Merlinda through a weird, giant monocle.

Zhang Yang had no idea why he would mention something like Chakra when none of them were even using that system. Still, 10,000 seems to be a high enough number to shock the greedy little goblin. "Goblin, how does it look like? Is my ally strong enough for you?"

"Warrior. Do yourself a favor and sit back and relax. You have done a good job," said Gulaj as he nodded.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Search for Reinforcement. Obtained 5,000 Military Points!'

Holy f\*ck! No wonder the goblin would jumped up to his feet. Zhang Yang would do the same when he saw the reward given to him. It was 5,000 Military Points! Just so you know, Zhang Yang had been working from day to night and had only managed to earn up to 4,256 Military Points! And that was by repeating most of the same missions countless of times! Clearly, the mission reward of 5,000 Military Points was much!

Even though he was just so close to 9,900 Military Points, Zhang Yang did not necessarily required a 99% damage reduction. In truth, 90% was more than enough for someone as tanky as Zhang Yang to survive.

The two accompanied Elven warriors were Thea herself, and Aweena. Neither of them were happily following Zhang Yang

voluntarily. They were there only because they had an obligation to protect Merlinda. As a result, their slight hatred for him was mainly because of his actions of bringing the secretive Elven leader, the prophet of the Moon God out in the open, completely exposed! Merlinda was a little unsatisfied as well. Not because of Zhang Yang taking her out to the open world, but was Gulaj offering Zhang Yang only 5,000 something something. To her, 5,000 was a number that did not suit her! She was someone that was worth at least 100,000!

Since Merlinda and her two escorts were not officialy introduce to the outside world yet, they were registered into the battle as normal adventurers, not as part of the Empire army, but as adventurers' reinforcements.

The seven other regions war against Angus had ended and none of them had any chance to defeat Angus. The previous wars had all been witnessed by the other region players. They could only see, but not participate in the war. The game system had locked down the region that was having the war, preventing players from other regions from coming in to disrupt the fair fight.

Everyone who fought in the first attack now knew Angus's special skill, that is to restore his HP endlessly as he kills. Hence, the war could be easily sabotaged by a small rat. Even though players had the rule-breaking skill to revive after death to rejoin the fight again and again, the boss was still unapproachable. The more players who die under his hands, the stronger he gets. Technically, all the boss would have to do is to spam his skill, and he would get an indestructible body.

If players had not stop being an idiot to rush and attack the boss, Angus will remain as the only entity that could not be kill even though all the Celestial boss in the entire server gathered together to fight him.

With the war coming closer, everyone gathered to discuss about the battle plans with Zhang Yang.



"Little Yang. How are we gonna do this? Should be put all our force into the fight tomorrow, or gather more Military Points and let the NPCs gain strength the next round?" Fatty Han was the first one to voice out his question.

Zhang Yang could not give an immediate answer then, as he was not sure if Merlinda still had the godly healing skill {Higher Regeneration}. If she does, then Zhang Yang would assume a fighting stance against Angus to fight till the end. It was hard to land a final decision since Merlinda's Level was too high for Zhang Yang to examine her skills. There will always be a limit cap for something as powerful as Merlinda's {Higher Regeneration}. For example, the [Forbidden Scroll]. When something that takes HP % into account has a limit as to how much could one lose or gain through a skill or item. If Merlinda's {Higher Regeneration} does not have any limits to her healing and 5% remains true to the number, Zhang Yang would be seriously unkillable. Imagine if Merlinda were to cast the skill on Queen Serena...

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and finally answered, "Full throttle. We go all out with this. Do not hold back."

The biggest difference of the war between this lifetime and Zhang Yang's previous lifetime was that in this lifetime, there is Queen Serena. With her ruling over all 8 major cities in the continent, and the Meteor Sword in her hands, she was much stronger than any of the bosses in his previous life. Just by observing Queen Serena herself during the recent war with Angus, she was able to inflict 10% HP as damage, all by herself! Secondly, Zhang Yang had Merlinda participating in the war. The Ascended tier healer was the leader of an entire race! She would also be stronger than an average Ascended tier boss! Perhaps, there could be some positive reaction when the two powerful women work together on the battlefield! There was also the seven other Barons that ruled the seven other castles in the continent, all serving Queen Serena! They were also of Ascended tier! Combining all

their strength and a few good players in battle, the chances to defeat Angus in this first attempt was rather high!

Zhang Yang laid down his decree firmly and everyone listened and obeyed. Everyone left the meeting and went on to make their preparation. Sun Xin Yu had her weapons and armor repaired, Wei Yan Er finally caved in and socketed gemstones into some of her equipment's empty sockets. Fatty Han and the rest of the party went off to prepare themselves as well. All preparation such as restocking potions, equipment fixing, and etc was done before the day ended.

All other region that had have their attempt at Angus ended the battle in just 5 to 6 hours. The battle was completely sided towards Angus with him killing everyone relentlessly. It was a complete waste of the three days given. That alone had everyone who had participated in the fight to widened their eyes and see how strong was Angus was. They now know that it was important to gather more Military Points and required the NPC bosses to gain several more defeat in order to be stronger to fight Angus.

By the time it was China's turn to have their attempt at fighting Angus, no other players from other region even cared to even watch. Since they were not allowed to participate, why not save that time to grind their levels, and do quests to earn more Military Points instead?

Truthfully speaking, almost all of China players had zero confidence in defeating Angus then. All but players from Lone Desert Smoke had the confidence to end the event at the next war. While Lone Desert Smoke made preparations to fight, the rest of the guilds on China, including the top guilds like Crimson Rage had placed their bets on the second or third attempt instead of going all out with Zhang Yang. Even though it was made clear that the drops from Angus will decrease after several attempts, they had no choice but to place their faith there, since it was, in their opinion, impossible to defeat Angus in the first attempt.

Zhang Yang and his party members had spent all their Military Points to hire elite tier NPC soldiers to be sortied in battle. Amongst them, it was obvious that Zhang Yang had the most NPC soldiers. He had a total of 92 elite tier soldiers ready to put their lives on the front line for him. Han Ying Xue and the others had at most, 50 which allowed them to reduce 50% of the incoming damage. Even so, Angus' attacks that could reach as high as a million damage made it rather dangerous for them to actually stand with Zhang Yang.

It was unfortunate that Military Points could not be transferred to another player. If they could do that, everyone would invest all their Military Points in just one player and have that player stand and fight Angus, in a one-man solo style.

From that point of view, it was reasonable as to why the other guild had not even tried to fight in the next war since none of them have enough Military Points to hire enough elite tier soldiers. With only 8 Ascended tier bosses, it was not enough to bring a smile on the Goddess of Victory.

To have 9,000 Military Points or more, one must continuously accept and complete various quests. By the time they had amassed 9,000 Military Points, the battle would have already ended on the fourth or fifth attempt.

The NPC Spellcasters of White Jade Castle gathered together at the entrance of the castle and worked together to conjure a large portal. It was to save both players and NPC soldier's time from traveling too far. In truth, that was the only way to participate in the war against Angus since he would be randomly placed in a different territory.

When Zhang Yang and his party got through the portal, he was surprised to see that the chosen battle ground was the outskirts of Sauron's castle. Could it be coincidence that the system had allowed players to enact revenge for trampling over their Territory?

Behind Zhang Yang was 92 elite soldiers clad in strong and heavy armor. All of them were lined up neatly, with 2 soldiers standing out of line at the end of the formation. All the NPCs had 5,000,000 HP. Although they may have strong attacking power, Zhang Yang did not plan to have them to fight. Instead, he was only going to use them as 'remote' meat shields, far behind the front lines.

Even though the odds were against them, basically all players who had reached Level 100 were present on the field then. The reason was actually pretty straightforward. Even though they were practically food for the boss, they were there only for one sole reason. That is to kill the monsters before the boss appears. The number of monsters and the rate of their spawn was just too good to be left out.

The war in China was different compared to the other regions. Unlike the other region which had different rulers for each of their major cities, China was unified under the rule of Queen Serena and her seven Barons. It was an Empire with its own Queen Serena to decide on everything, from attacking, defending, or to withdraw.

As such, standing stoically in the front lines, Queen Serena pulled out her sword and point it to the sky as she roared grandly. "Attack!"

OUUUUUUUU!

The sound of war horn was blown from the end of the soldiers and countless Empire soldiers rushed forward, leaving a trail of dust behind. Adding both the number of players and the NPC soldiers, over 100 million pairs of feet had sent the earth to tremble in a massive quake.

THUD! RAWR!

The castle doors of Sauron's Castle fell down, and out came the Spectre monsters, pouring out from the castle, like ants.

The battle started swiftly and players had rushed into the front

lines to have their first kill. It was a good chance to farm experience points instead of letting the NPC soldiers killing them. Everyone had turned on their attack mode to monster only and had not need to fear their skills landing and damaging nearby players. It was common courtesy. In fact, whoever stupid enough to land a hit on player will surely be killed almost instantly. Still, everything could be settled by talking like a gentleman. There was no need for a civil war in the middle of a f\*cking war!

Fortunately no one was that stupid enough to incite a war then. Everyone was only paying attention to kill as many monsters as they can. Players with flying mounts had the advantage of flying over the crowd of players and could attack from the air instead of squeezing themselves like sardines.

Zhang Yang had placed the elite NPC soldier far behind the front lines. He left them there to stand as he and his party rode their mounts to the front to start killing. Even though they were only 10 players amongst the sea of hundreds of millions of players, their killing speed was unrivaled. They were so powerful that their movement speed was only halt for a brief second to allow Han Ying Xue to heal, leaving a huge empty plot of land at their wake.

1 hours...2 hours...3 hours...

As the battle reached the 5 hours time, the Spectre monsters stopped spawning from the castle. Even though there were still more than a million of monster remaining in the battle field, it was a number that could be cleared within a few minutes. Though players themselves had suffered major damage, they could easily revive back to rejoin the battle.

As the last monster was killed, the clouds in the dark sky started to roll in and formed thunderclouds. A bright lightning struck the earth as a humanoid shadow figure emerged from the castle and stood where the lightning has struck. The humanoid figure then floated in midair, releasing a powerful aura as he floats. There was a huge black hole that was emitting darkness that was so black that

it could practically suck in all light that even shone on it.

It was none other than Angus.

"All hands, retreat!" cried Queen Serena. Even though she could not observe Angus properly, she knew that Angus was an adversary that only she could fight toe to toe with. It was time for the Queen to fight the King, alone!

"Retreat? Not so fast, ants!" Angus scoffed and pulled out a thin dark blade. He then swung his sword so fast that it sent out a shockwave that immediately disintegrated a large number of the Empire soldiers, leaving the patch of ground of which the soldier was standing on, empty at the next second.

"Insolent fools. Know your places and die!"

# Chapter 752: The Light of Victory

---

That single swift stroke of the boss had not only cleared a large number of NPC soldiers, but also unfortunate players who had miscalculated the trajectory of the attack. What's more, after they revived at the nearest graveyard, they were not allowed to reenter the castle region! They were blocked by a familiar wall of air.

Some things are best experienced yourself. During the counterattack attempts of the other nations, almost all the audience had not noticed the tiny details. Obviously, the system had already predicted a scenario where players will try to sabotage their own nation. They had indirectly made it easier to surviving players to fight Angus. In a sense, weaker players who allow themselves killed by Angus will be permanently removed from the battle. It was a good way to help stronger players who were actually trying and succeeding in killing the boss. Weaker players would only be "food" for the boss.

Hence, once all the Spectre monsters were killed, players had lost the ability to revive continuously and rejoin the fight. It was a fair way of things. During the fight with the Spectre monsters, players can have their fair share of experience points and during the boss fight, weaker players will be kicked out, preventing stupid people from doing stupid things to jeopardize the entire battle.

Serena was stood in front of the entire army. Next to her were all the other seven Barons. Zhang Yang stood beside them. He only dared to fight Angus because he had already prepared his hired elite NPC soldiers, along with 100 healers to heal the elite NPC soldiers behind. Since each of the elite NPC soldiers will help Zhang Yang take 1% of the incoming damage, Zhang Yang could last longer in the fight against Angus. At most, Zhang Yang would take 5 times the damage from Angus due to his level while each of his soldiers would take at most, 40,000 damage each! With Zhang Yang's meticulous arrangement of healers, they will be able to heal

with one hand behind their back!

"Stay back. You guys cannot survive tanking the boss even if you have a 50% damage reduction. Save your Transformation skills first." Zhang Yang spoke out in the party channel. Besides Zhang Yang alone, the rest of the party had only 50 or so elite NPC soldiers. They would still take a heavy attack. Without Transforming, they would not survive a single hit! Everyone nodded and obeyed. Even the battle crazed little Wei Yan Er understood the gravity of the situation and nodded her head without showing any signs of being disgruntled.

"Merlinda. It's our time!" said Zhang Yang.

"I hear you." Merlinda nodded and smiled at her savior. At Zhang Yang's command, he had Merlinda command Thea and Aweena to stand with the elite NPC soldiers behind to be redundant healers. At the very least, they were extremely strong healers.

The Phoenix roared with all its might and flew towards Angus. The Unicorn followed along and shed its disguise, the horn on its forehead grew longer, and wings burst out of its body as Merlinda soared to the sky.

The sight of fiery trail in the sky, left behind by the Phoenix was a sight that everyone had already gotten used to. However, the unicorn was different. At then, everyone was stunned at the sight of Merlinda soaring through the high sky as she followed Zhang Yang.

That was a Legendary Beast! The Unicorn! It was the same as the Phoenix and the Red Dragon! Could it be, that Lone Desert Smoke was holding all the Legendary Beast in their ranks?! Who was that player riding the Unicorn? Why would she hide her profile? Was she afraid of people chasing after her?!

"They may have Legendary Beast mounts and what not, the boss is still too strong for them!"



"Yes. It's a suicidal run for them."

"Heh. So much for China's number 1 player. He can't even tank for more than a minute!"

Despite their scorns coming out from their mouth, it was obvious that jealousy and envy were building up in their hearts.

"Blade of Obliteration!" Angus roared and swung his sword, releasing thousand of swords in the air, attacking Serena, the seven castle Barons, Merlinda, and Zhang Yang, causing high damage. The NPC were still doing good since they were all at the right level to only take normal damage. Unlike then, Zhang Yang was rather unlucky to receive 5 times the intended damage! At then, Defense, Armor, damage absorption was all useless. Amongst all the defensive passive skills, only the 20% damage reduction skill was useful. From 3,829,935 damage, only 3,036,553 was taken, after 92% damage shared with all the 92 elite NPC soldiers, the final damage that landed on Zhang Yang was only 306,494.

Despite being reduced by a large amount, it was still high for Zhang Yang. At that point, with the Phoenix giving Zhang Yang close to 1.8 million HP boost, 300,000 damage was almost 10% of his entire HP. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had not allowed the rest of his party to join the battle. He had 92 elite soldiers and he had still taken a large damage, what more of 50 soldiers?

Still, he was pretty unlucky to receive the quintuple damage. Under normal circumstances, he should only receive double to triple damage.

With quick reflex, Merlinda clapped her palms together and cried, "Higher Regeneration!" She had cast {Higher Regeneration} not only on Zhang Yang, but also on herself, Serena, and the rest of the Barons!

[Higher Regeneration]: Restores 5% HP every second. Maximum restoration cannot exceed 200,000 HP. Lasts for 20 seconds.

As expected, {Higher Regeneration} had a limit cap to its healing. Even so, 200,000 HP per tick was still high. In fact, Angus' {Blade of Obliteration} could only be cast every 2 seconds. Even though it hit Zhang Yang for quintuple its damage, Zhang Yang would take only 150,000 damage per second. At that point, Zhang Yang had over 3 million HP. 5% of that would roughly be 150,000. Since each healing tick would restore 150,000 HP, his HP would hold out indefinitely! If the healers behind the NPC soldiers do their job without a problem, and Merlinda herself remains alive throughout the entire ordeal, Zhang Yang would be the same as the boss, an unkillable entity!

At then, when something drastic had happened, no eyeballs were averted then. When players from all around noticed Zhang Yang had received the {Higher Regeneration} skill, they could not help but to feel both shock and envy.

What was that powerful healing skill!?

The strongest in-game skills would either damage or heal by percentage! Since the skill was not affected by a player's own attack power, there was no reason for them to get stronger damage stats. If a healer could have that {High Regeneration} skill, he or she would not need to pump Spirit or Intelligence! Even with a full set of Level 1 White-Wood equipment, they could still technically, fully restore a player with 4 million HP within 20 seconds. There was no need for anyone to hunt for strong equipment, then!

Then again, not all players were stupid. One look, and they would know that Merlinda was not a player, but an NPC. They knew that the system would not simply put out skills that would simply break the game. The skill {Higher Regeneration} as shown by Merlinda was not a single target, but a multi-target skill. That was not OP. That's Deadpool's level of game-breaking skill.

With the skill healing Zhang Yang like never before, Zhang Yang finally dared to rush into the boss fight and have him taste his Reaper's Scythe. Merlinda was the same as she was when he

rescued her from the depth of the dungeon. She would keep on repeating the same healing skill over and over again. On the side note, Merlinda had gained a new weapon, a new magic staff that she could use to attack as well! She was not like before where she would just heal, heal, and just heal. That time, Merlinda could cast {Punishment Ray} to attack.

Queen Serena was astonished by the healing skill she had received. She turned to examine Merlinda and turned to Zhang Yang. "Is she your ally?"

"Yes, my queen."

"Wonderful. Perhaps she could remain by my side to strengthen the Empire's forces." Said Serena with a strong sense of ambition.

...

Zhang Yang had a complicated feeling about her wants. If Merlinda remains in the Empire, the entire race of Elves would be brought to light. Zhang Yang had merely pretended to be busy as he continued to attack Angus.

Zhang Yang's {Eagle Eye} could passively ignore 85% of the target's Defense permanently. Hence, Zhang Yang would only need to land one single strike of {Cripple Defense} to ignore all Defenses.

‘-82,302!’

Zhang Yang basic attack lower limit was supposed to be around 160,000. However, despite having the ability to ignore all Defense, his damage was severely reduced. 80,000 damage was something that Zhang Yang found to be low, while the other players of the world would have already dropped their jaws to the ground.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-456,229!’

Sadly, the combined skill had suffered a 30% reduced damage. If

it had not, the stacked skill damage could reach at least over a million damage! Still, the damage was enough to have Queen Serena praise Zhang Yang for his strength. That was because besides herself, even the rest of the Ascended tier Barons could deal only a fraction of what Zhang Yang had just dealt.

Zhang Yang only nodded his head to acknowledge Queen Serena's praise. In reality, he was rather happy. Such a powerful blast of power can only come from combining {Charge Up Strike} and {God of War Devastation}. Despite being able to deal 900% normal damage in a single hit, it had a 1 minute cooldown. It was not long, nor too short to be used as a chaining skill.

Other than the players in his party, all other players around could not observe the damage number inflicted on Zhang Yang, nor his overall HP in general. They could only see the long red bar on his head and a slight drop of it. Weirdly enough, the 10% emptied HP bar was refilled immediately in a blink of an eye. Could it be, that the boss' attack was getting weaker?

At then, a few players that had noticed Zhang Yang's endurance in the battle had rushed into the fight, thinking that if Zhang Yang could, they could as well. In the end, they were instantly obliterated by Angus in a single swing of his sword. Zhang Yang was frustrated by the stupidity of the players. They had wasted all his efforts by "healing" Angus HP from 99% to 100%.

If there are more imbeciles, might as well have them all come at once to let the boss end their lives, there and then. It would be better to have them die earlier than when the boss is at his last 10% HP.

When so many players had died, all the other hot-headed players stopped their tracks. Only then, they knew the real reason why Zhang Yang could endure long enough. The boss' attack was not getting weaker, it was Zhang Yang who was getting stronger! Just how many Military Points did Zhang Yang own!? How many elite NPC soldiers did he manage to hire, to allow the damage to be

negated to such an extent?

1,000 Military Points was only enough for 10 elite NPC soldiers, which was only enough to reduce 10% of the oncoming damage and distribute them to all the 10 soldiers. 10% damage was nothing! NOTHING! When the players had finally accepted the truth of how strong Zhang Yang was, it was already too late for them.

Zhang Yang was not bothered by the players. He was busy calculating and averaging out the damage per second of the boss to find out the rough estimated time needed to kill Angus. When he was finished, he needed to calculate the right time for his party member to use their Transformation skills and enter the fight.

Amongst all the NPC present there, Queen Serena was obviously the one dealing the most damage. With Merlinda healing everyone, Serena and her seven Barons were able to hang on far longer. Although they would still receive damage faster than they could heal, it would be much better than just taking damage! As such, Zhang Yang roughly estimated that the fight can be dragged as long as 20 hours, or more! That is, if there are no more bird-brained players rushing into the fight to "heal" Angus, prolonging the entire fight. If that happens, Zhang Yang feared that not even two Merlinda (s) could save them.

The light of victory was just right there! There is hope!

# Chapter 753: Adequate Preparation

---

Players like Snow Seeker and the guilds she was leading were all good at calculating the odds. They had all seen the wars of the other region and had speculated that China will face the same fate as them. Hence, they had not tried to fight in the first counterattack. Instead, they had placed their faith in the third or fourth attempt.

Even though the number of Celestial tier set equipment will drop to 4 and 1 respectively, the time taken for them to reach the Level Requirement of the equipment would be a year. Hence, even though they could get 4 or 1 Celestial tier equipment, it would not much for them at the moment. It would not be possible for the developers not to host any more events in the coming times that would drop Celestial tier equipment as well. Hence, Snow Seeker and her followers had not spent a single Military Point that day. Mainly, they had not gathered enough Military Points to hire enough elite tier soldiers. Secondly, the odds of the battle were unfavorable for China. Hired elite tier soldiers would not last long. In fact, after the war ends, successful or not, the soldiers will disappear.

The one thing that slipped past everyone expectation of the war, was Merlinda's participation. She alone could change the tide of the battle. Based on the damage dealt and HP healing, the NPC forces could last more than 20 hours fighting Angus. When they finally realized it, regret was the very thing lingering in their mind.

To loot the boss' drop after his death, one must deal enough damage and not simply land a hit. Without Inheritance Transformation skills, no one could approach the boss without dying. His attack range was 500 meters! Then again, what use if a player has Transformation skill? Which healer could heal on par with the damage caused by {Blade of Obliteration}?

The worst part of all was that they could teleport back to White

Jade Castle right then to hire soldiers, but would be unable to return to the battlefield! They would have to run back because the portal created was close and there was the invisible wall that was preventing them from returning to the field. That leaves them one option. That is to stare blindly at Zhang Yang beating the living hell out of Angus.

However, when one is pushed to a corner, players would start to feel intense jealousy towards Zhang Yang. They would try to rush to the boss when he is almost dying and "feed" him back to full health! Merlinda's presence in the battlefield could not retain all the NPC for long, and it was impossible to restore their NPC back to full health. If the battle lasts longer than 30 hours, surely Angus would be the last man standing.

At that moment, Zhang Yang was not focusing on the other player's feelings. All he cared was to attack the boss as fast as he could. Since the Phoenix attacks would be included to his character, his overall damage dealt to the boss was almost second to Queen Serena. Sadly, Felice was unable to gain the damage distribution from the elite soldiers. Even though her HP was slightly higher than Zhang Yang's, 2 million HP was not enough to last longer than 3 seconds when it comes to the boss' attack. At most, she could last for 6 seconds, thanks to the {Higher Regeneration} and that was it.

Although Zhang Yang wanted her to come out to attack, she could only stay in her Battle Companion U.I until Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party use their Transformation skill together. At that point, she could join the fight by activating her {Ancient Tree of Life} Transformation. At that point, her healing capability would exceed the likes of a B class Inheritance healer. Not to mention, her 12 Star Growth rate would further increase her potency, allow the girl to rival that of an A class Inheritance healer!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Meh. Zhang Yang was not disappointed. He had not expected the skill to land since the opponent was a Celestial tier boss. He only had a few Holy tier equipment on him. If he, a level 170 player with a few Holy tier equipment could take out 10% of the HP of a Level 230 Celestial tier boss, that would be unfair.

As Angus gradually lost his HP bit by bit, he had only lost a total of 4% HP in one hour. Technically, they would need 25 hours to kill the boss. However, there was still the unaccounted factor of players who had not used their Transformation skill then. In the worst case scenario where Zhang Yang is forced to run in and out of the field to heal himself, his God of War Transformation would shorten the fight as well.

That was only one of the unaccounted factors that could affect the boss fight. If death of a player was inevitable, 4 deaths would extend the battle by 1 hour. 20 deaths would result in total restoration which would end up with Angus being the victor of the war. Even though a small portion of players had died in the battle with the Spectre monsters, another small portion of players had already left the battle when Angus had appeared. In the end, there were still more than 40 million players in the battlefield then, could Zhang Yang be sure that none of the 40 million players would not jump into the boss fight and "feed" him?

There is a saying, when the poor hungers so, the rich shall be their meal. Lone Desert Smoke had been hoarding all the riches of the land and Zhang Yang was the main culprit. To think that everyone would cower behind his back and allow him to take all the Celestial equipment when none of them could?

Hence, instead of waiting till the boss had lower HP, those nonsensical players with brains the size of a lizard's sh\*t rushed past the NPC soldiers and into the range of the boss, all the while shouting phrases like "We can do it" and "For China". How could one stop them moving on when they were so insistent on dying?



At that point, Angus had lost 7% of his HP. If they die, the boss will restore all his HP. All the effort in the past hour will be wasted. Zhang Yang sighed with heavy heart and commanded all players in Lone Desert Smoke to stop or attack players who refuse to back down from the fight. He even had several of his members activate their Transformation skills to kill the players. Naturally, when Transformation skills are unleashed, no normal players would be their opponents.

After a few of the players were killed, they voiced out their complaints, accusing Lone Desert Smoke of occupying the battle with the intention to kill the boss alone. Those players were as expectedly from The Dominators, Eternal Flame, and The Myth. They were only doing so under the order of their guild masters to tarnish the reputation of Zhang Yang and his guild.

When things got heated up, players around joined the fray and cried foul at Lone Desert Smoke. Without much time at all, Zhang Yang's guild had become public enemy number 1. The one thing that Zhang Yang could not do right then was to retaliate there and then. Unexpectedly, as if Serena senses Zhang Yang was in trouble, she had turned her anger towards players that were not in his party and cried out to her soldiers. "Soldiers of the Empire. Keep all adventurers away from me! Chase them away until they are at least 1 kilometers away! Kill anyone who refuses to obey!"

Instantly, all the Empire soldiers pointed their swords away from Angus and turned around to attack the players behind them. They were all roughly 500 meters away from the boss and started to push all the players until they were 1000 meters away. The number of players exceeded the number of NPC soldiers. However, all the players were separated by guilds and parties. The top guilds were only Level 5 guilds. Even if they were to sortie 75% of their total members, 200,000 players versus a unified army will only result in the players' loss.

At then, all players started to withdraw from the front line when

all the soldiers were pointing their swords, aiming their bows, channeling their spells, all with the intention to harm the players if they refuse to back down.

The battle continued on and Angus was being butchered alive by nine Ascended tier boss! His HP had dropped below 60%!

When players from other region had received the news of the unorthodox method and the conditions of the battle, they had rushed over to witness the war with their own eyes. How could China put a fight with Angus when the rest of the world could not!? They had the same number of Ascended tier bosses, yet why did their power gap differ so? All the other regions had lost the war in merely 5 to 6 hours, yet China was able to continue the fight and was actually showing signs of winning!

They knew Zhang Yang. They knew the pet Phoenix that he had. They knew that Zhang Yang was strong. No one could deny that fact. However, with the Level Suppression system affecting his damage output, how could the man fight Angus toe to toe? Zhang Yang may be strong, but there will always be a limit to it! Could it be, the female on the Unicorn...NPC?! Their eyes bulged out when they saw the prowess of {Higher Regeneration} on all NPCs, including Zhang Yang and his party members! No wonder the NPC could tank so long against the attacks of Angus! Was there such a powerful healing skill? But why didn't they receive such a buff? Why did the NPC not come to their aid when they were fighting Angus then? Could the system be biased to China? It could not be...

Players rode their mounts and tried to get a closer look at the battle between Zhang Yang and the boss, but they were blocked by the invisible wall. Disgruntled, but helpless, all they could do then was to watch how Zhang Yang defeats the final boss.

Zhang Yang noticed that the other players had moved back from the front lines. He then called his party members to ignore the soldiers and joined him in the boss fight. Since they had used their Transformation skills, might as well use them to the fullest. When

all his party members came to his side, Zhang Yang called out Felice and have her morph into her Tree of Life form to assist Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart in healing the entire team. As for the rest of the battle companions of the other players, they were all kept in their respected U.I.s since they were too weak to begin with. Without Transformation skills, they could not possibly survive the crazy bombardment of the boss.

Merlinda had then demonstrated the prowess of her skill and cast {Higher Regeneration} on all his allies within 50 meters from her. It was extremely useful, since Zhang Yang had his {Vitality Aura} maxed out. Even the player with the lowest HP, that was Fantasy Sweetheart, had over 10 million HP! With {Higher Regeneration}, Felice, Han Ying Xue, and Fantasy Sweetheart's supercharged healing, everyone was able to last for as long as 2 minutes before they would need to pull back from the fight to fully restore their HP.

Even though all of them were suffering damage reductions from the Level Suppression system, they were able to compensate that with the damage gained from Transformation forms. Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were able to ditch out strong damage values. Sadly, Hundred Shot and Fatty Han were a little useless then. They were both Level 165 and both their Hunter's pets were only Mythical tiers. Despite being the same Legendary Beast as the Phoenix, the Red Dragon and Fatty Han's Phoenix could only deal damage half of what Zhang Yang's Phoenix could.

With the party all attacking alongside Zhang Yang, the overall DPS was increased slightly. Although it was not too obvious, the numbers will show later on after accumulation. Although everyone could not possibly deal enough damage to be able to loot the drops, they were fine by it, since Zhang Yang was there to swoop all the items later!

On the other hand, other guilds that were unable to sortie to fight the boss could only stare at Lone Desert Smoke with utter

disdain! However, even though they had players with Transformation skills, they could not survive battling the boss, due to the lack of elite tier NPC soldiers! If they even try to do so, they feared that they will be a target of Lone Desert Smoke. Right then, how many guilds had the ability to attack Lone Desert Smoke? Zhang Yang alone had fought 30,000 players alone!

Then again, even though they could not have the equipment then, they were still in for a treat themselves if Lone Desert Smoke wins the battle. The reward for killing Angus was Level +2 and the recipient would be the entire of China! China was the last in the line. If they are unable to defeat Angus then, they would have to wait for a whole cycle. Other regions would have the chance to defeat Angus then! Although the chances of other region defeating Angus was extremely slim, it was not a bet that anyone would be willing to take.

Rather than going home empty-handed, might as well take home a Level +2 reward!

# Chapter 754: Ending the Boss Fight

---

More and more players from all over the world gathered at the outskirts of Sauron's Castle to witness how China was going to perform, or rather, how the stars of Lone Desert Smoke performed. Guilds like Crimson Rage who had a good relationship with Lone Desert Smoke bore no resentment to them and they cheered their allies on wholeheartedly. On the other end of the spectrum, guilds that would curse and resent Zhang Yang would be none other than The Myth, Eternal Flame, and The Dominators.

Amongst the crowded audiences, Liu Wei's cold stare was filled with the utmost killing intent that was capable of making any ferocious wolf cry in fear. The man's entire family had fallen, thanks to Zhang Yang. Although Zhong Xiu Hua came to their rescue, even he could only "save" Liu Wei alone. Before, he could admit that his resentment towards Zhang Yang was not only limited to only in the game. After the incident that befell the Liu Family, Liu Wei now bore so much hatred for Zhang Yang.

The Liu Industry was vast and wide. Apart from the company treasury, they had a few hidden offshore accounts that could not be traced. As Liu Wei was the future leader of the Liu Family, he had knowledge of a few accounts and was able to get the ownership transferred to him before they were all charged and prosecuted.

Hence, even though he had lost support from the Liu Industry, the amassed money was much more than he had once owned, legally. Sadly, even though he owned more than he could imagined, the source of money was not perpetual. Once the money is spent, there was no way for Liu Wei to replenish them. He had lost all his business.

Although Liu Wei was still able to push the guild on until the day he uses up all his remaining cheques. Hence, it would not be long before the guild that was built on money crumbles.

Unable to grasp the reality of his surrounding, Liu Wei was not able to reason well. Hence, not long after Zhang Yang and his party had managed to hack away 30 to 40% of the boss HP, he cried, "It's our turn!"

Be it Zhang Yang or the boss, it did not matter anymore. Even if he knows that he might die and restore the boss' HP, the thought of China winning the boss fight was no longer in his mindset. He was, literally blinded by anger.

Still, he had the perfect defensive formation of 12 Guardians around him. Naturally, even though he and the suicide squad he was leading was able to penetrate the defending Empire soldiers, he still suffered a little damage. The Empire soldiers were under direct orders from Queen Serena herself. Note that NPC's loyalty was absolute. Hence, when Liu Wei tried to burst through the defense line, thousands of attacks landed on Liu Wei. Even with {Sacrifice} on him, the attacks were so strong that the first Guardian was killed instantly. The result was the same, even when the second Guardian had spontaneously cast {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei. Same went for the third, the fourth, until the twelfth. In less than 10 seconds, all 12 Guardians were killed.

However, their deaths was not in vain as Liu Wei had managed to got through the defensive line, flew through the Dragon riders of White Jade Castle, and arrived behind Zhang Yang in a battered condition.

"Zhang Yang! Don't think I'll let you have it your way!" Cried Liu Wei with rage.

Almost instantly, Queen Serena turned around. Like a titan smiting down a tiny rat, her shadow eclipsed the sunlight as she approached Liu Wei.

"I warned you."

She lifted her sword and brandished several swings at super sonic speed, mincing Liu Wei's character into countless of meat cubes,

splattering his blood all around.

Liu Wei's death was instant and swift. The poor bastard had forgotten that Queen Serena was no ordinary NPC. She was a boss capable of inflicting AoE attacks like Angus! Liu Wei's death should serve as a reminder to all players that she was capable of killing anyone! Back then, when she rode back to reclaimed her throne, all players were slaughtered mercilessly.

Fortunately, Angus' {Blade of Obliteration} was slightly slower than Queen Serena's attack. He was unable to kill Liu Wei to restore his HP!

"Trash." Another player from within the crowded audience muttered. He was called Dragon Marquis, or as also known as Zhong Xiu Hua. He had fished Liu Wei out from the public prosecutor's hand just to have him cause Zhang Yang some trouble. However, Liu Wei was not only able to touch him, he was killed almost instantly, by acting rashly, his sanity notwithstanding.

Back to Angus, he was being butchered alive. When he saw Liu Wei approaching him with little to no HP left, he was delighted and wanted to kill him to restore any bit of HP as he could. Unfortunately, he had just attacked and could not attack again 2 seconds later. Queen Serena had cut in, and literally cut the man into thousands of cubes before Angus could.

"Spectre scum. Know that this is the day that Humanity stood against the likes of you and prevailed!" She bore great hatred for the Spectre, due her past. If Zhang Yang had not come to her rescue, she would have continued being a prisoner in the tomb and might even end up joining their ranks!

"Nothing! Nothing can defeat me!" Angus scoffed with confidence, despite having his HP dropping to its end. Angus swung his sword far and wide to demonstrate his powers as a Celestial tier Level 230 boss! However, even though his face was

stoic and calm, Zhang Yang knew that the end was coming, and he was frantically defending himself.

With so many pair of hands attacking the boss from all directions, Angus' death was sealed. The winner of the battle was made clearer as the battle goes on.

Even though his HP was approaching zero, his sword swings was still all-time powerful. However, as long as he could not kill anyone, any stronger attack would not do much for him. Thankfully that the boss had followed the aggro system and attack accordingly. If he had skills that could target at random, he could kill players from across the battlefield. That would truly be the end of the world. Why fight when there's literally no way to defeat such a boss. Zhang Yang gritted his teeth hard. Even though they could win the fight, he would still have to endure as long as 20 hours.

10 hours...15 hours...20 hours...

At that point, Zhang Yang was already tired beyond reason. However, his efforts did not go unrewarded. The boss already had less than 20% HP! It was the time for {Killing Cleave}! At that point, other bosses would have a higher attack rate. However, since Angus' {Blade of Obliteration} had an attacking rate of 2 seconds, it can no longer go any faster. Hence, the DPS of the boss was not raised. As for Zhang Yang, it was showtime.

Zhang Yang unsummoned the Phoenix and leaped into the air, transforming into his God of War form, and attacked the boss. Without the 92% damage redistribution, the Phoenix will be instantly killed! Han Ying Xue and everyone else in the party had long ran out of their Transformation forms. They cannot rely on {Higher Regeneration} to endure the boss' attack.

With {Indiscriminate} active, Zhang Yang went ahead and attacked.

{Glare of the Death God}!



Resist!

Zhang Yang sighed. Since the beginning of the fight, Glare of the Death God had never once landed a hit on Angus. Then again, Angus will be killed, no matter how. Hence, it did not matter, unless a gang of players come up beyond the defensive line of the Empire soldiers and offers themselves to the boss as tributes.

As Zhang Yang activated his Transformation skill, his basic attack was raised up to 455,563 – 534,863. If it was not for the Level Suppression system acting on him, his damage would have been higher than the seven Barons, and would be on par with Serena! As for Merlinda, her task was only to heal Zhang Yang and every NPC present. That was her one role. Do not look down on the healer. If it was not for her healing, Zhang Yang nor Serena could defeat Angus.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Heavy Axe}!

‘-2,305,642!’

Even though Zhang Yang was suffering from the 50% damage reduction of the Level Suppression system, Zhang Yang could still deal such a powerful slam. Sadly, even though his attack was strong, it was merely 0.001% of the boss’ entire HP.

"ENOUGH! YOU ALL ARE BENEATH ME! I AM A GOD! YOU'RE NOTHING BUT ANTS!" Angus bellowed angrily. Even when he has more than 4.6 billion HP, it was a number that was considered to be unsafe for Angus, since 80% of his HP bar was depleted!

"Even an ant will have the chance to rule over the world. I am but the one chosen and beloved by the heavens! I will rule over the lands and bring back the once fallen Empire to its former glory!" Serena jumped forward and cleaved Angus.

"HAHAHAHA! Such an ambitious woman! I shall have your dead body and revive you as a Spectre! The day shall come when you

join our ranks! You will have what you wish, and more, after you die! You can rule the land, the earth, the sky, and even the entire universe!"

"Rest in peace, for that would never be my agenda!"

"Heed my words, human! I will rule over this land! The Spectre shall prevail!"

"Then, I shall dance on your grave!"

Serena charged her sword with holy power and swung her sword. Angus lifted his sword with great speed and blocked the attack. Sparks flew as the two blades clashed. Zhang Yang was blown away by the resulting force. How powerful could they be...

18%...16%...15%...

After several hours, after Zhang Yang's Transformation skill ended long ago, the boss' HP had finally dropped down to 1%! Almost everyone was unable to resist the temptation to land the killing blow. Some of them who had not used their Transformation skills activated them and launched themselves towards the boss in a wild attempt.

Even though the boss' attack range was as far as 500 meters, it would take players on flying mounts 10 seconds to cover. Hence, those with more than 5 million HP would actually reach the end and might, just might land a hit.

100,000,000...

50,000,000...

20,000,000...

As the number dropped exponentially, the players had managed to breach the Empire soldiers defensive line and reached Angus.

10,000,000...

5,000,000...

300,000...

"Rest in peace. And never come back!" Serena sliced off Angus' head and ended the battle.

"Gah..." Angus could not even speak. His spectral body dispersed into the void behind him, along with the rest of the dead bodies of the fallen Spectre monsters. The ball of void expanded as it sucked in more and more bodies. Until one point, the ball of darkness exploded, sending a strong shockwave that sent the stationary Serena's hair backward wildly. As expected of a Celestial boss, starting off incredibly strong when alive, even during death, he would go with a flash!

Serena sighed with exhaustion and dropped the Meteor Sword to the ground. She dropped down to her knees and raised her head to the sky.

"Are you alright? My Queen?" Zhang Yang descended downward and placed a hand on her shoulder.

"I'm fine. I'm just extremely tired."

'Ding! Server Announcement: Lord of the Seven Spectre King, Angus has been slain! Rejoice, fellow adventurers! The time has come to celebrate!'

'Ding! You have received a reward: Level +2!'

Instantly, the entire land of China was illuminated with pillars of light. Those who had participated in the battle, alive or not, had gained 2 Levels, instantly.

"Celestial equipment!"

Some of them had not forgotten about their true aim of fighting the boss. When Angus had perished into nothingness, there were many radiant metallic items that were giving off colorful light on the ground! Those were Celestial tier equipment! The strongest armor and weapons that anyone could have in the game! However, not everyone within the vicinity could loot, they would have to

deal a certain amount of damage to have the qualification to do so.

As such, when they had rushed over to the pile of treasure, their hands merely phased through the pile of items. They could not pick them up! Zhang Yang ran as fast as he could, swooping all the items with both his hands with crazy speed. Everyone, literally everyone around Zhang Yang grew angry and picked up their weapons.

"KILL ZHAN YU!" With the temptation of the Celestial equipment hanging in the balance, no one was thinking straight. They had not care even if Zhang Yang was the number 1 player in the entire of the game. He had taken ALL OF THE ITEMS! ALL! How would anyone think straight then?!

"Impudent fools! Begone!" Serena picked up her sword off the ground and lazily swiped her sword through the air. Almost instantly, a bright crescent beam blasted out and vaporized all the players around. Some of them were still in their Transformed states and managed to survive the attack. As such, everyone retreated immediately. None of them had anticipated Serena, a god-killer NPC, would protect Zhang Yang!

She was, after all, the ruler of the Empire. Technically, all players were her citizens. If they were to try and attack the Queen, they will be branded as traitors of the Empire. They would have their privilege to auction, storage, repairs, socketing, Profession, and many other facilities in the Empire revoked!

With that sort of threat at hand, she was protecting Zhang Yang! No one even dared look him in the eye!

# Chapter 755: Magnificent Treasure

---

Zhang Yang found the whole situation extremely funny. Still, it was still dangerous for him to linger there any longer. Serena was about to return to White Jade Castle as well. It would be best for Zhang Yang to go back to town, where PvP was forbidden. Even though he was able to tank Angus, a Celestial tier boss, he will never be able to tank all of China's raging players.

Queen Serena was still in an attack stance when she escorted Zhang Yang to the far end of the now quiet battlefield. No one dared to approach him when superwoman was right beside him. The Empire's Spellcasters opened up a portal from White Jade Castle and allowed the entire army to return home. Players in the battlefield could use the portal as well.

Zhang Yang thanked Serena for her efforts in the war and quickly bade her farewell. He rushed back and brought Merlinda, and his party members back safely to White Jade Castle.

There was only one way for anyone to kill Zhang Yang to get his Celestial tier drops, and that was to have all other players from other regions to issue a region vs region war and conquer White Jade Castle. As for players from China, they had absolutely nothing else to do but stare blindly at Zhang Yang.

"Little Yang! Come on! SHOW IT! SHOW ME THE TREASURE!" cried Fatty Han frantically, like a hungry monkey.

Zhang Yang snickered, but when he turned to meet the party, everyone was practically behaving like a hungry wolf, silent and ready to pounce on him.

"You guys...calm down, yeah? Why are all of you looking at me like hungry wolves?! I'm not a piece a meat. I'm not tasty!" cried Zhang Yang as he laughed and teased the party further. After a good laugh and teasing, Zhang Yang finally opened up his inventory and showed everyone the haul.

As they weren't able to defeat Angus in the first attack, the drop was reduced from 13 to 10 Celestial tier set equipment and 3 Celestial tier normal equipment. There were even more random items as well, including 7 skill books, 3 [Skill Point Crystals], 9 [Advance Aura Stones], 2 [Forbidden Scrolls], and the Second Chapter of the [Book of Revelation]!

All the Celestial tier set equipment obtained were boots. Besides Templar, Witch Doctor, and Sniper, there were set equipment for the other subclasses. After gaining the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang was able to equip both Berserker and Guardian type armors. However, since Wei Yan Er was there, he would have to resort to taking only the Guardian type armor.

Even though the set effect of the two equipment were different, the basic properties boost was the same.

[God Killer War Greaves] (Celestial, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2560

Vitality: +47343

Strength: +6163

Dexterity: +2515

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 94,680.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%.

Equip: Absorbs 5,472 damage on attack.

Use: Drops a powerful kick on the target and stuns the target for 10 seconds. Effect can be inflicted on targets below Level 230.  
Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 230

Class Requirement: Guardian

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 30 Levels.

God Killer Set Effect: {God Killer Helmet}, {God Killer Necklace}, {God Killer Cape}, {God Killer Chest Plate}, {God Killer Gauntlet}, {God Killer Sheen Guard}, God Killer War Greaves, {God Killer Ring}.

Two Equipped Set Effect: Increases damage reduction rate by 20%

Four Equipped Set Effect: Reduces 10% damage on all allies within 40 meters around the wearer.

Six Equipped Set Effect: Grants a fixed chance to activate {Shield Wall} upon attack. Triggered {Shield Wall} will not affect the player's {Shield Wall} cooldown.

Eight Equipped Set Effect: Automatically triggers {Shield Bash} after a successful {Block}. {Shield Bash} trigger would not cost any Rage points and will not affect the player's {Shield Bash} cooldown. 100% Critical rate. After striking a target with the triggered {Shield Bash}, grant a chance to stun the target for 3 seconds. Stun effect will affect all targets regardless of Level.

Note: There was a legend. A Legend about the God Killer Ash Crux. Ash had slain 8 Gods and used their blood to forge each of the equipment. All the equipment forged with the god's ichor will beseech the wearer with such strength that even the God of Death will shiver with fear.

Since the set equipment was specially "forged" for Guardians, the set effect will be mostly defensive. After collecting all 8 equipment, the set effect granted then will provide a certain degree of damage boost. It was a 100% Critical hit, a zero cost {Shield Bash} that could not only deal massive damage due to Zhang Yang absurd Strength value, it would also stun the target for 3 seconds.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes when he read the description of the equipment: "Stun effect will affect all targets, regardless of Level." That would mean that all bosses, even the Celestial tier bosses could be stunned! WOAHH! As expected of a God Killer armor!

The excitement and happiness, knowing that soon, he would be this strong! However, Zhang Yang immediately realized that he was thinking too far into the future and had forgotten to take account the process. Collecting all eight parts of the set equipment would require Zhang Yang killing eight Celestial tier bosses. Once he collects all the parts...he would definitely be able to defeat the ninth, the tenth, and so on without a problem! In that case, the free {Shield Bash} and stun skill will only be adding salt to the ocean!

Still, by having the eighth set effect would undoubtedly strengthen his overall battle prowess. {Block} has a 6 seconds cooldown period, hence, even though the chance to trigger the {Shield Bash} stunning effect, it would greatly increase its proc rate. During PvP battles, if Zhang Yang is lucky enough to proc the stun effect, the player can kiss goodbye to winning the battle.

Those who are able to get their hands on the Celestial tier equipment would be happy. Since there was more than one player of the same class, there will be tears and sadness in the party. For example, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart lost to Hundred Shots and Han Ying Xue during the rolling for their items. Be it anger or sadness, they could do nothing but to congratulate their partner.

The luckiest one there, besides Zhang Yang, would be Lost Dream. Sun Xin Yu had the S class Inheritance, like Zhang Yang, she would be able to equip both subclasses of equipment. She then chose the Bandit type boots, leaving the Assassin type boots to Lost Dream. There was no need for a roll!

Although some of them were unable to get themselves equipment, it was still, fine since Level 200 was still pretty much at the horizon. They had more than enough time to hunt for another Celestial tier boss, sometime later in the future.

When all the set equipment were distributed, the remaining three Celestial tier equipment were put on display. All three of



them were not subclass specific.

[Muckra's Mjolnir] (Celestial, One-Handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 36,948 – 56,948

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 16,767

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 70%.

Equip: Increases Critical chance rate by 20%.

Equip: Grants a chance to inflict 10 times normal damage on the next attack to a target after attacking.

Equip: Grants a chance increase attack speed by 20% after attacking.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Note: Muckra was a warrior who used magic as his main offense. Although his magic could not defeat a Spellcaster, and his strength could not defeat a Warrior, he was able to defeat them both with a little adjustments to his hammer.

Everyone examined the weapon and were shocked beyond words. Be it the high damage weapon attack, or special weapon effect, both were extremely strong! Perhaps, it was even stronger than a set-equipment!

Both Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight were suited to using the one-handed weapon, however, Endless Starlight had the priority since he was a Defender with the skill {Hammer Mastery}. The man cried his eyes out and thanked his mother for being born, and thanked Sun Xin Yu for allowing his lowly self to accept the weapon and even thanked Zhang Yang for finding him after being

kicked down from the cliff with Daffodil Daydream!

The next item was a Cloth Armor type. Since Fantasy Sweetheart had lost the roll to get the set equipment boots, the Celestial tier dress was given to her.

The last item was neither an equipment nor a weapon, but an accessory. A beautiful metallic ring, designed to curl around the finger of the wearer.

[Unfaltering Faith] (Celestial, Ring)

Vitality: +23671

Strength: +3081

Dexterity: +3081

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 47,340.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%.

Equip: Absorbs 2,735 damage upon attack.

Use: Resets all cooldown to 0 for all skills with less than 30 minutes of cooldown time. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: Level 230

Special: Reduces Level Requirement by 30 Levels.

"Dear ladies and gentleman, since all of you have obtained a Celestial item. May I humbly ask for this ring since this Fatty bro had not able to receive anything?" said Fatty Han, wearing the expression Zhang Yang had seen many a times on greedy Goblins and Dwarves.

Everyone laughed and agreed to let Fatty Han have the ring.

All three [Skill Point Crystals] were distributed accordingly to turns. As for the [Advance Aura Stones], two were given to Sun Xin Yu to increase her {Critical Aura} to Level 10, three were given to Wei Yan Er, three were given to Hundred Shots, and the last one was given to Daffodil Daydream.

As a result, the cumulative aura had increase the entire party stats as such: Vitality +40%, Healing Rate: +30%, Critical chance rate: +10%, Strength: +20%, Pet Damage Increase: +30%.

The two [Forbidden Scrolls] were named [Reaper's Descent], and [Stuttering Focus].

[Reaper's Descent] was an AoE attack skill that had the same effect as other AoE attack [Forbidden Scrolls]. (Deals 10% HP as damage for 30 seconds). The only difference that [Reaper's Descent] had was the upper and lower limit cap at 250,000 and 100,000 damage.

[Stuttering Focus] was a single target debuff that will cause the effect called {Stuttering}. Every 3 seconds, the inflicted target will have a 10% chance to stop moving, attacking, or do any other action. It was similar to [Absolute Binding,] but the effect was effective against targets until Level 230.

If a boss similar to Angus ever appears again, Zhang Yang could use the [Forbidden Scroll: Stuttering Focus] to control him!

Sadly, all Celestial boss were considered Unique. Angus' death is permanent and there would never be a boss named Angus anymore. However, the Spectre system will elect a being that will take over as Lord of the Seven Spectre Kings. Hence, the number of Celestial tier bosses will remain the same, even if they are being killed like ants.

Naturally, all the skill books were distributed according to their class requirement. If there are skill books that could be learned by multiple classes, the distribution method will then be changed to Roll The Dice.

Zhang Yang had obtained skill called [Surrogacy]

[Surrogacy]: Connects with an ally at the spiritual level. When you or the chosen ally receives an attack, the attack damage will be reduced, based on the value of the higher Defense, amongst the

two. [Surrogacy] can only be cast on one target at a time. The Level Gap between the caster and the chosen target must be lower or equal to 30.

Although the skill was pretty confusing and sounded rather useless, it was in fact extremely useful. It could be used on either the DPSer or the healer. In simple words, Zhang Yang can instantly have someone like Han Ying Xue gain the same Defense as Zhang Yang! Furthermore, the skill can also be used on a tank! Zhang Yang could turn a "tofu" tank into a super-powered tank!

On the other hand, if Endless Starlight activates his King Kong Transformation skill, Zhang Yang could use the skill on him, and Zhang Yang could gain Endless Starlight's boosted Defense value! It would be the same for Zhang Yang if he uses his Transformation skill. That would be the best way to use the skill. A free tank! Naturally, the HP value of both the caster and the receiver would remain the same.

The happiest person was Wei Yan Er, not Zhang Yang. The little girl had called shotgun for the skill. As long as she is in the party with Zhang Yang, he would have to use the skill on her so that she could attack till her heart's content.

# Chapter 756: The Additional Effect of the Book of Revelation

---

Truth be told, other than the Celestial Tier Armor set, the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2] was the one item that made Zhang Yang the happiest man on earth.

Zhang Yang had the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 1] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3 - 4] in his possession. By acquiring the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2], he could finally combine all four broken chapters of the book into one!

With all four broken chapters combining together into one, a stream of blinding light flashed across the items. Then, the four items became one.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 1 – 4] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: Increases 20% Damage dealt to all party members of the holder within the range of 100-meter radius from the holder. The same effects cannot stack. If the holder is killed, the holder can choose to resurrect at the same spot where he or she died. The holder will have 40% HP and 40% MP upon resurrection. This effect can only be triggered once in every 7 hours. Similar type of effects cannot stack as well. If the holder is killed by other players when the effect is under cooldown, the item will be dropped. This item can only be brought along, and cannot be destroyed.

Effect: Binds to a Skill and enhances that Skill (Skills that have been enhanced before cannot be enhanced again). Unbinding the enhance effect causes a 24-hour cooldown to the binding feature.

Use: Combines this item with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5].

Huh? Other than the additional damage and the additional Resurrection effect, there was another additional special effect that would allow the holder to enhance Skills?

Zhang Yang quickly brought up his Skill List and selected his

{Block}. Then he proceeded on to select the [Book of Revelation]. Instantly, a stream of dazzling golden light flashed across his entire body. The next thing Zhang Yang noticed was the description of his {Block} had changed.

[Block (Enhanced)] (Level 10): Raises your shield up high, blocks an attack from the enemy head-on. Lasts for 1 second. Upon a successful block, causes 200% Strength points of damage to the target and creates a large amount of aggro. You will acquire 30 Rage Points as well. Cooldown: 5 seconds. Require: Shield.

The cooldown had been reduced from 6 seconds to 5 seconds! Furthermore, the strike back damage had been increased from 100% Strength points of damage to 200%!

Even though the cooldown period had only be shortened by 1 second, it was a 17% improvement in efficiency of the Skill! Initially, Zhang Yang could only activate his {Block} 5 times within a timeframe of 30 seconds. Now, he could activate his {Block} up to six times within the same timeframe. This could really invoke a game-changing effect when taking on certain bosses!

Other than that, this effect could also be unbounded! This effect could enhance any Skills! Of course, Zhang Yang's Skills which are already enhanced, such as {Force Strike}, {Cripple Defence} and {Thunder Strike} could no longer be enhanced any further. Otherwise, those Skills would become too powerful for the game.

This book would basically be as powerful as a Skill Book that contains all the powerful Skills, such as {Superior Force Strike} and {Superior Thunder Strike} for other players if they had this. They could switch between Skills of their choice to bind the book with, once every 24 hours! It would really be a very practical and versatile asset.

Furthermore, these were just additional effects, provided by the combination of 4 broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]. If the remaining chapters of the book were to be collected and

combined together to form the complete [Book of Revelation], there should be more additional effects that the book could offer, right? It would be ideal if the holder gets one additional effect for every chapter combined!

Zhang Yang was grinning in joy. At the same time, he was slightly agitated, because the chapters of the book had to be in sequence in order to be combined into one. So, he could not just take the Chapter 10 from Sun Xin Yu and combine it with the Chapter 8 that he had. Why couldn't these two chapters just function as Chapter 5 and Chapter 6?!

To have such a thought in his mind, Zhang Yang's greed and desired must have overtaken him a little while there.

Other than that, Zhang Yang was not granted with the 'First Clear' of a Celestial boss upon Angus's defeat, after all. It was quite obvious that the battle was already won, because the NPCs did most of the heavy work. That was most probably why the system did not recognize Zhang Yang as the slayer of the boss.

Firstly, Zhang Yang went up to thank Merlinda. He managed to get her to stay in the White Jade Castle for the next few days. Queen Serena had sent forth her men to escort Merlinda to the palace. However, the queen's 'summon' was declined by Merlinda with regret. Two days later, Thea and Aweena pulled Merlinda out of the city quietly, as if they were afraid that Merlinda would be 'corrupted' after staying too long with Zhang Yang.

The moment the quest of slaying 'Angus' was handed in, Zhang Yang and everyone in his party of ten received two Skill Points. Unfortunately, they did not acquire any addition to their levels as rewards. However, from another point of view, the +2 levels that they acquired the moment when the boss was slain was considered as that reward already, wasn't it? The only thing that left Zhang Yang dissatisfied was that everyone who joined the boss battle had acquired the same +2 levels as well.

Zhang Yang added one of the Skill Points on his {Shadow Clone}. After fully upgrading that Skill, he added the other Skill Point to his {Force Strike}. Well, he chose to add the Skill Point to his {Force Strike} because that Skill could have an additional damage of 300%, just like his {God of War Devastation} and his {God of War Battle Axe}, when that Skill hits level 10.

Upon Angus's death, the players naturally had to recover the Territories they lost. Meanwhile, after the death of a super boss, the remaining monsters had nothing left to stand against the players. In just two days, the 7 main cities had been declared to be returned under the ruling of the White Jade Empire. Meanwhile, all Territories had been rebuilt.

Unfortunately, the invasion was not triggered by activating a [Monster Attack Order]. Therefore, it did not matter whether it was Thunderstorm Castle, Morning Town or Sauron's Castle, they all belonged to Zhang Yang. As long as he could secure the main halls of the Territories and clear out all monsters that were still in Battle Mode, Zhang Yang could regain control of the Territories once again. By then, Zhang Yang should be able to rebuild the Territories after he regains his status as the Baron of the Territories.

Of course, he had to spend a fortune to rebuild all that. However, he actually lost way more than that, just because he could not get a dime from the Teleportation Circles for over 1 month. That amount that he could not earn was far more than the millions of dollars he spent to repair his Territories.

After they've destroyed all four 'Darkness Falls' devices in the hearts of the four high Tier Territories, the players claimed total victory over the Spectre Invasion battle! However, it was obvious that the event was far from over. The system notified the players that the Spectres would not admit their defeat just because they failed in their invasion plan. They were hiding somewhere secretive, rebuilding their 'Darkness Falls' so that they could



return once again to lay waste to the land one day!

That would be the theme for the Level 170 Dungeon's 'Spectre's Secret Lair'. Players could form a 50-player scale party to enter and destroy the Spectre's ambition and scheme, once and for all.

When the Teleportation Circles of the Territories resumed their functionality, many players cheered and ran around like joyful children, racing towards a new playground. Some things are not appreciated until they are gone. Therefore, the players were forced to travel around on their Flying Mounts for over a month when the Territories were 'out of order' momentarily. Because of that, they realized the importance of Territories and their Teleportation Circles. Most of the players were depending on the Teleportation Circles to travel back to their main cities from the Territories. Some were traveling across the main cities and the territories just for fun. Zhang Yang felt extremely happy, because of that.

Normal players could continue enjoying the joy and entertainment that the game could offer at the moment. However, the top Tier players had no luxury at all to relax. The next phase of the story was about to begin! They had to get ready for the upcoming competition in acquiring the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of 'Spectre's Secret Lair'! It's going to be way more intense than they could ever anticipate!

The 'Spectre's Secret Lair' was a 50-player scale dungeon, and only players who had attained Level 170 could enter the dungeon. Currently, even Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were still dangling around Level 167, Level 168!

The fact that the China Region was the one who took the credit for slaying Angus had led them to earn a lot of benefits! Players in the entire China Region had acquired a reward of +2 levels. It was particularly effective for the high Tier players.

Not having enough members at the required levels, Zhang Yang could not begin 'snatching' the 'First Clear' of the dungeon's

Hardcore Mode. So, he could only hustle his party members to grind their levels a little faster. All he needed was to have 30 Level 170 players challenge the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode of the dungeon. By then, he should be able to get familiarized with the dungeon boss's behavior.

For the next few days, Zhang Yang took it easy as he grinded his levels. While he was at it, he was experimenting the additional enhancement effect of the [Book of Revelation] that he had acquired a while ago. He switched the effect onto his Skills, one after another to see which Skill had the most to gain.

Some Skills actually became so oppressive after the enhance effect was applied on them. For instance, the cooldown of the {God of War Transformation} had been shortened by 2 hours! The effect sounded too great to be true! Two hours is as long as the duration of the Transformation Skills can last!

However, if the 72-hour cooldown is taken into consideration, the shortening of 2-hour of the cooldown period would not make much of a difference. Furthermore, no one would actually activate their Inheritance Transformation immediately after the cooldown. Everyone would only use their Inheritance Transformation in crucial moments. Normally, players would only use their Inheritance Transformations once in every 4 to 5 days. Therefore, the enhance effect would become pointless for that Skill.

Well, instead of having a 2-hour shortening on the cooldown of his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang would prefer more to have a 2-hour increment on the duration of his Transformation!

Of course, there were also other Skills that become much more powerful after applying the Enhance Effect. For instance, the duration of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} had increased by 2 times longer! Other than that, Skills such as {God of War Devastation} and {God of War Battle Axe} had their cooldown periods shortened a little. For example, if the Skill's cooldown was 1 minute, then the cooldown period would be shortened down to 50 seconds, 30

seconds or even 25 seconds. However, boosting Zhang Yang's Offensive Skills was not as ideal as boosting Zhang Yang's Defensive Skills.

Well, Zhang Yang also had another oppressive Skill called the {Rising Dragon Strike}. Upon applying the Enhance Effect on it, the Skill only received a 'slightly higher chance' of being triggered. However, after Zhang Yang gave it a try, he noticed that there were still less than 0.001% chance for the Skill to trigger! Well, judging from the Skill's damage output and that it was also an AoE Skill, it would be outrageous for the other players and monsters if the rate of triggering this Skill was high.

Finally, Zhang Yang decided to apply the enhancement effect of the [Book of Revelation] to his {Block}. That was Zhang Yang's most frequently used Skill after all. So there was a high value for him to apply the enhancement effect on that Skill.

Zhang Yang arrived at the Rock Flatlands. It was a Level 150 – 180 map that was the standard for players to grind for their levels. He had chosen to come because there were much fewer players here. Furthermore, he might even get a chance of encountering a Holy Tier boss!

Having Felice tagging along with him, Felice would also transform into her Dragonhawk form while she battles the monsters. After clearing out the monsters, Felice would transform into her Tree of Life form and heal Zhang Yang. Therefore, Zhang Yang did not have to take Snacks like crazy after encountering a few Elite Tier monsters.

Zhang Yang did not have a clear direction at the moment. So, after letting his Herb Foraging Familiar out into the wild, he just casually walked around and slew monsters in his surroundings. Well, as long as he earns Experience Points, his destination would be of no consequence at all.

After grinding for an entire day, he arrived at a settlement of

men. It was a village built along the side of a large lake. There should be about thousands of families settling down, over the village. Well, the village was rather large, and could be considered a rural town, if such a thing even existed.

Right in the middle of the village, there was a noticeboard. There were two wanted posters pinned right on the board. One of the wanted posters was flashing vaguely. It was the telltale sign of a quest.

Zhang Yang touched the wanted poster with his hand. He immediately received a new quest.

[Loch Ness Monster in Guura Lake] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: The legendary Loch Ness Monster has been resurrected! A few villagers claimed to have sighted the shadow of the Loch Ness Monster by the northwest of the lake during midnight! Quickly, can someone go and find out what is really going on? After obtaining the truth, please report the news to Sandrake the Chief of the village.

Completion: The secret of Loch Ness Monster of the Guura Lake  
0/1

After reading the description of the quest, Zhang Yang confirmed that the Loch Ness Monster would only reveal itself by nightfall. It was still broad daylight, now. Therefore, Zhang Yang had no need to rush. So, he went to have a stroll around the village, taking out some monsters nearby the village and earning some Experience Points. He would only get back to the Northwest of the lake by nightfall.

"Shakaka!" The moment he landed on the ground nearby the lake, a fishmen rushed out at him from the water.

[Guura Lake Fish-Man] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Fishbone Piercing Shot]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target and the other targets behind the first target. Will cause the targets to bleed continuously. When the targets are bleeding, they will receive an additional 20% damage. Lasts for 10 seconds. Effects cannot stack.

[Flee]: When a Guura Lake Fish-Man's HP bar reaches 20% left, it will begin seeking help from its friends.

# Chapter 757: Loch Ness Monster

---

With the intention of showing the Fish-Man how powerful his {Block} has become after the enhancement, Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield to engage in battle with the monster.

{Block}!

‘-107,298!’ Damage Deflection.

‘-107,298!’ {Shield Bash}!

Because of the 200% additional boost on the Strength attribute, the Damage Deflection of the {Block} was now the same as the damage dealt from Zhang Yang’s {Shield Bash}!

The Fish-Man instantly let out a series of miserable cries. Then it raised up its metallic trident and threw it straight at Zhang Yang. The trident smacked right in the middle of Zhang Yang’s chest and left a large hole right in the middle of his armor and chest. ‘-18,123!’ A damage value popped right on top of Zhang Yang’s head and Zhang Yang was instantly afflicted by a negative effect that caused him to receive an additional 20% damage if he ever gets hit by the monster again.

Piercing type attacks were really intimidating!

Right after the trident was removed from Zhang Yang’s chest, blood began to ooze out right from the wound. It seemed that Zhang Yang would have to look like a bloody walking fountain until the negative effect on him wears off.

Although the damage Zhang Yang received was not high, he visually looked as if he just got hit by a train. The scene was gory. Zhang Yang felt agitated about it. He commanded Felice and Phoenix pet and the three of them began to launch their attacks on the monster. The monster was greeted with intense series of attacks and its HP bar was reducing steeply.

Without activating his Inheritance Transformation, Zhang Yang

could still deal over 450,000 damage per second with the support of the Felice and the Phoenix pet. It would only take approximately 10 seconds for the three of them to take out a total of 5,000,000 HP. However, right before the Fish-Man could be killed, it turned around and began to flee. The Fish-Man was crying out loud in misery, while running away from Zhang Yang. In just a blink of an eye, the monster had ran far from Zhang Yang!

However, it returned shortly after fleeing. Well, it came back with two more Fish-Men, this time!

When Felice had not acquired her Tree of Life form, Zhang Yang would have to be extra cautious when battling Elite Tier monsters. He would need to use his Skills that could stun the monsters that are trying to flee and kill them immediately. If he does not do that, he would not be able to disengage from his battle mode to take his Snacks.

Well, now that Felice had acquired her Tree of Life form, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear anymore. Felice went into her Tree of Life form and healed herself and Zhang Yang with her {Bloom of Life}. After she was done with that, she straightaway transformed into her Spectre Tiger form and attacked the monsters with her sharp and deadly claws. Well, she was dealing quite a number of damage to the monsters all by herself. If the number of monsters increases, Felice would just stop attacking and start healing instead. With her current full set of Holy Tier equipment and her 12 star rating, as long as no {Life Aura} is involved, Felice would have a more powerful Healing Capability than Han Ying Xue already!

No matter how many monsters appear, they would have to die!

Zhang Yang had no way of preventing the monsters from fleeing away. Furthermore, he would need to kite the monsters along with him if he ever wants to pursue a fleeing monster. Well, since the fleeing monsters would just drag more and more monsters back to Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang did not need to lure monsters over to

him. All he needed to do was to keep on slaughtering the monsters that got in his face.

Monsters that would fleeing could really cause a headache of trouble to the players. Players would need to be extra cautious with their controls and the use of their Status Restriction Skills. If they fail to do so, they would end up being swarmed up by the monsters and die!

With Felice aiding him along his side, Zhang Yang would have the capability of enduring so many monsters' attacks at the same time. Furthermore, his own Defence was quite terrifyingly high, to begin with. So he had no fear even if he gets swarmed up by the monsters, all he had to do was to give it his all at slaughtering the monsters that he sees.

10 minutes later, the final Fish-Man fled away to summon its other comrades in the surroundings. However, the other Fish-Men had already been wiped out, so the Fish-Man came back to Zhang Yang all by its lonesome. Zhang Yang slaughtered the monster without putting in much effort.

After clearing out the Fish-Men in the entire area, Zhang Yang continued to explore the surroundings. He wandered around the area for quite a while when something happened. Just when the moonlight beamed down, the surface of the lake was disturbed by some force from beneath the surface of the lake. The ripples of the water spread across the surface of the water that had been still a moment ago. A gigantic shadow emerged on the surface of the water! The moonlight was a little dim at the moment. Zhang Yang could not see the appearance of the monster clearly. The scene was a bit terrifying. Zhang Yang could actually feel an intense chill right up his spine!

Could this be the Loch Ness Monster that the villagers were talking about?

Zhang Yang quickly hopped on the Phoenix pet and flew nearer



to the monster with a pat on the Phoenix. He telepathically commanded the Phoenix pet to spit a breath of fire at the dark shadow.

Boom!

The shadow immediately got caught on fire. It did not take long before the entire shadow was burned down to the ground. The next thing that followed was an 'Aiyak!' across Zhang Yang's ears. The next thing after that 'Aiyak!' was the sound of something heavy falling straight into the water. Splash! It was a shadow of a human being that fell into the lake! Phoenix pet flew up close and salvage the human figure with its claws, like picking up a fish from the water before they went for the shore.

While they were by the shore, Phoenix pet loosened up its claws and dropped the human onto the sandy beach, not too softly. The human figure was crying in pain, due to the not so gentle landing.

[Alex, Blacksmith's Apprentice] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 165

HP: 104,680

Note: Although Alex is still an Apprentice, his talent in inventing is so astonishing that many experienced Blacksmiths are constantly amazed by his work. Some even felt ashamed of themselves!

This was a young man that seemed to be at the age of either 17 or 18. He was neither tall, nor short. He had black hair and a pair of quick eyes.

"So it was you who did all that! Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed. Then he continued to talk, "Let's go! Follow me back to the village and explain it to the chief!"

"Please don't do that!" Alex immediately begged Zhang Yang not to take him in, "I have my reasons for doing such a thing. Please don't let anyone else know about this! Please!"

‘Ding! Alex has given you a quest. You can:

1. Decline and bring him back to the chief in the village by force.
2. Give up the initial quest and listen to Alex’s explanation of why he has been doing this.’

Zhang Yang decisively gave up the initial quest. That quest would only reward him with a measly amount of Experience Points. He could just earn that amount of Experience Points back by slaying a few Elite Tier monsters. Although he might not get anything valuable from completing the new quest, at least he could still try out his luck.

"Alright then. Tell me the reason why you’re doing this! If your reason is valid, then I shall accept your request!"

"Well, this is what it really is about!" Alex began to explain his reason for doing so. "I’m a person that loves to do some weird stuff! Not long before this, I made a submarine and went underneath the bottom of the lake. There, I entered the deepest part of the Guura Lake to investigate. By the end of it --- I encountered a terrifying, gigantic Loch Ness Monster!"

The young man revealed a shocked expression and stammered, "That, that, that monst... monster had eight chains locked on it. But when I saw, saw it, 5 of the chains were broken! When, when I went to look at it for the, the second time, the monster broke its 6th chain already!"

"Long ago, there was a legend in our village. A ferocious beast attacked the villages near our village. By the end of it, tens of warriors had joined hands in order to take down the beast. Well, they did manage to take down the beast in the end! However, that beast’s skin is as tough as gold. There was no way that they could have slain the beast! So, the warriors chained the beast and sunk it down to the bottom of the Guura Lake!"

"I have always believed that it was just a legend. However, when I

saw the beast with my own eyes, I realized that everything about the legend is true! Furthermore, the giant beast is about to break itself free from the chains! I knew that I needed to inform the villagers about the news. However, everyone thought I was pranking them! They even said that I was exaggerating things just to scare them!"

This young man was really a genius! He even made his own submarine! Zhang Yang quickly said, "Then why don't you just take the others to the beast you told me about with your submarine? Just show them where the trapped beast is, and they'll surely believe you after they see it with their own eyes, don't you think?"

"The submarine that I built is meant for only one person... furthermore, others will not know how to operate it! Well, they will never find the place as well! I'm the only one who knows where the beast is!" the young man mumbled.

If that beast is really half as powerful as this young man described it to be, that might be a Holy Tier boss!

Zhang Yang widened his eyes immediately and said, "Bring me to the beast!"

Before he could even finish his own words, he had already pulled Alex onto the back of Phoenix pet.

"No! It's not possible! That place can only be located with my submarine! I've put a mark on the radar of my submarine! If we're going by air, I cannot recognize where exactly the beast is!" Alex immediately shook his head.

"Then, go ahead with your submarine, and I'll follow! That should do the trick!" Zhang Yang took one look at the vast Guura lake and gave up on the notion to search for the monster all by himself.

"Oh!" Alex nodded. Then, he began to lead Zhang Yang to a place

where rocks and corals were piling up high. Among the pile of rocks, there was bizarre-looking boat located in between them. Alex squeezed himself right into the bizarre-looking boat and closed the hatch over the boat. Then, bubbles began to foam up the water around the boat. The next thing happening was the boat beginning to submerge into the water of the lake.

Zhang Yang summoned his Mythical Turtle and hopped right onto its back. Then he also went underwater to follow Alex's bizarre-looking submarine.

Alex's 'Submarine' was actually not bad at all. There was a glass window right on top of the hatch, over the front! However, Zhang Yang could not help himself from look down on the mechanism of this 'toy' --- Alex needed to paddle in order for the entire submarine to work!

Alex was using all his force to step on the paddles, pushing the paddles to move the propellers on the back of the submarine to spin. By doing so, the submarine was able to get some propulsion. It did not take much to make the young man sweat like a pig!

Well, how long would he need to paddle then?!

Zhang Yang used his weapon to hook the submarine along with them. Then he let Mythical Turtle steer the direction of the submarine. Meanwhile, Alex only had to point Zhang Yang towards the correct direction with his finger through the glass window.

Even though they were moving much faster after that, they took more than an hour to reach some sort of a region underneath the bottom of the lake. Zhang Yang could see that there were eight gigantic pillars circling around an empty space down there. Each of the pillars was chained to a thick chain. However, 6 of them were broken. Only two remained intact, locked on a gigantic beast which was located right in the middle of the eight pillars!

It was a beast that looked like a turtle. However, there were

seven solid pillars right on top of the surface of its back. Its neck was long with a monkey head on the end of it. The two ears looked like the ears of a pig! The ears were so large that they could cover the entire head of the beast like a plastic bag!

The beast had four legs. Its claws looked like the claws of a tiger. Furthermore, the tail of the beast looked like the tail of a scorpion. It was really tricky to tell what kind of beast was this!

[Aqua Monkey Moonkin] (Ethereal, Beast)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 11,030

Melee Attack: 76,201 – 116,201

Skills:

[Razor Tear]: Gnaws into the target and causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Venom Tail Paralysis]: Uses its venomous tail to pierce into the skin of its target and inject the venom into its target. Causes 20,000 Nature Damage to the target once in every 3 seconds.

Note: The Aqua Monkey Moonkin is an ancient creature that escaped from the Island in the Center of the Earth. You might stand a chance to acquire some clue about the whereabouts of the legendary Island in the Center of the Earth. The island is rumoured to have gold on every corner of it.

Ah well... so it was just an Ethereal Tier boss.

Zhang Yang sighed in grief. Well, Holy Tier bosses were the most common boss at the current stage of the game. The game even spawned a Celestial boss once to make the game more intense. So, what good could it bring, for Zhang Yang to encounter an Ethereal Tier boss.

He summoned Felice out, to get ready for battle. Unfortunately,

Phoenix pet could not be summoned because they were in an underwater environment. Well, with Zhang Yang and Felice working as a team... it would be more than enough to take down the boss.

--- The normal attacks of the boss could deal an average damage of approximately 50,000 damage to Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang's enhanced {Block} could be activated once every 5 seconds to immunize himself from any sort of damage. Then, he should only be receiving about 15,000 damage from the boss. On the other hand, the Poison Effect could be omitted because it would not be able to be of much of an effect to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang's Defence was just too damn high, judging from a certain perspective. Therefore, the boss could only deal effective damage to Zhang Yang with its {Razor Tear}. The rate of the boss activating its {Razor Tear} would be the only unknown factor to Zhang Yang.

Under the circumstance that the boss would activate its {Razor Tear} once every 10 seconds, the boss would be able to deal additional 9,000 DPS to Zhang Yang. Therefore, the boss could deal a total of 25,000 DPS to Zhang Yang.

On the other hand, Felice could heal over 10,000 HP per second. That should be able to cripple the boss's damage output on Zhang Yang. Because of that, Zhang Yang could simply f\*ck the boss up, even if he closes his eyes and goes straight into battle!

# Chapter 758: Island in the Center of the Earth

---

There was no need to even summon Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang to aid in the battle at all. With Felice going all out on the boss, Zhang Yang could oppress the Ethereal Tier boss without even having to activate his God of War Inheritance Transformation!

Let's just f\*ck that thing up without wasting another breath!

"Chi chi chi!" after being stabbed by Zhang Yang's {Spear of Obliteration} coming from afar, the Aqua Monkey let out a deafening screech. Then, it raised its claws and swung them at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield up high and began to hack and slash at the boss as intensely as he could.

With Felice's current Healing Capability, Zhang Yang could stay at the frontlines, while attacking the boss for quite a while. Whenever Zhang Yang's HP bar reached a dangerous level, Felice could just transform into her Tree of Life form and heal Zhang Yang back up. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's total amount of HP had reached up to 1,300,000 HP. Therefore, Felice would also have many opportunities to focus her attacks on the boss.

However, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow Clone} to shorten the time required to slay the boss. Furthermore, he also took down a bottle of [Amateur Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. Therefore, Zhang Yang's damage output for the next two minutes was terrifying!

He could deal so much damage with his Skills especially his {Charge Up Strike} and his {God of War Devastation}! Those Skills would be really explosive when they were being used by Zhang

Yang in a correct sequence! He could deal up to 1,600,000 damage with the Skills! Meanwhile, his 10 Shadow Clones could provide an additional 100% damage! That had really boosted Zhang Yang's high damage Skills up to the max! His damage output was just terrifying!

In just merely 10 minutes, the boss sunk lifelessly and died. The impact shoved the water into the surroundings, sending a watery shockwave out from the spot where the boss died. A few dazzling pieces of loot dropped right beside the corpse of the boss.

Alex was staring at Zhang Yang from the sidelines with his jaw dropped. That was supposed to be a legendary boss that could not be killed after many others had attempted. Those warriors in the past had all failed to kill it, after all. That was why they imprisoned the boss here until today! Just when the boss almost escaped to continue its onslaught on the villages around, it got killed by a stranger that came from nowhere?!

Could it be, that those warriors in the past were weak?

Although that Aqua Monkey was not a Holy Tier boss and did not drop any Holy Tier equipment, everyone on Zhang Yang's gang did not have many pieces of Holy Tier equipment at the moment. Therefore, a Level 170 Ethereal Tier equipment could still be very useful for any one of them.

Zhang Yang picked up the loots that the boss dropped and shoved them into his inventory.

There were two Ethereal Tier equipment, four Mythical Tier equipment and another piece of Map!

The Mythical Tier equipment was naturally ignored by Zhang Yang. However, the Ethereal Tier equipment was still worthwhile for Zhang Yang to have a look at them. If the equipment are Heavy Armor, then Zhang Yang could still switch them up with the non-Holy Tier equipment on him at the moment. Unfortunately, both of the Ethereal Tier equipment were not. One of them was a



Leather Armor while the other was a Cloth Armor. So, he was forced to keep the equipment for Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang.

After that, he turned his attention towards the Map.

[Treasure Map: Island in the Center of the Earth]

Description: Leads you to the Island in the Center of the Earth.

Note: According to legend, the Island in the Center of the Earth was once a land inhabited by the Dwarfs. The island is rumored to be filled with the wealth of the Dwarfs for over a few generations. However, the island sunk all of a sudden. The whereabouts of the island have remained a legend filled with secrets ever since. As long as you find the mysterious island, you shall be able to find the endless wealth that the Dwarfs left behind! So, what are you waiting for!

This Map could be minimized and maximized at will. When it is enlarged to a certain point, there a crescent-shaped island would appear on the map. The island was separated into three parts. Each part was marked with a skull icon. The three skull icons had different names. They were labeled as 'Stone Giant Rokuta', 'Frosty Chimera Marow', and 'Servant Guardian Tatashu'.

Zhang Yang could only presume that these were the names of the bosses on each of the marked island. However, the map did not show any indication about the Tier and the level of the bosses. Therefore, Zhang Yang had no way of knowing if the bosses were either Mythical Tier or Ethereal Tier, which were just lousy bosses, or the powerful Holy Tier bosses.

Judging by the Tier of the Aqua Monkey boss, these three bosses should at least be Ethereal Tier bosses! Furthermore, it would make no sense if every one of them were just Ethereal Tier. Because bosses that were guarding their respective regions would definitely be more powerful than that. They should be Holy Tier bosses, then!

Zhang Yang quickly contacted Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang. He wanted them to get ready, so that the party could explore the Island in the Center of the Earth by tomorrow. Well, they might be able to farm something precious for the keeping.

It was about time to get off work. However, Zhang Yang suddenly received news from one of his private investigators. Liu Wei had disappeared!

Ever since Liu Wei was bailed out from the jail by Chong Xiu Hua, he had kept himself well-hidden. Even though people could still see him in the game, his real location remained unknown to everyone. Well, he also knew that Zhang Yang was never going to let him walk away intact, especially since now it was a good time for Zhang Yang to take him out. Liu Wei had no power nor money, currently. He could get toyed to death by his enemies anytime, anywhere! So he had to stay low and stay extra cautious!

Zhang Yang did have the notion of crippling him once and for all occur to him on more than one occasion. After all, Zhang Yang would never be at peace, knowing that his 'nemesis' is still at large. Therefore, he sent his private investigators to seek out Liu Wei's hideout. Currently, Liu Wei has done a very good job at covering his tracks. So, they could not get any information about his whereabouts at all.

Yesterday night, that investigator that Zhang Yang hired had finally found Liu Wei's hideout. However, he noticed that the place was empty on the next day. Judging from the mess in the surroundings of the place, Liu Wei seemed to have been taken away by force. There were signs and marks of a struggle all around the place.

Well, the Chinese had a saying. The greatest hermit will retreat into the noisiest fair. This Liu Wei had been staying secretly in a small bungalow by the urban area of Zhou Shu city.

According to the private investigator, Liu Wei was abducted in

the middle of the night! However, who would do such a thing? Liu Wei did countless crimes back then. So it would be logical if he had countless enemies that wanted him dead. Furthermore, he used to have his Liu Family supporting his back, so no one had the balls to touch him at that time. Well, things were different for him now... so...

The first suspect that came into Zhang Yang's mind was One Sword Stroke.

Well, his wife was gang-raped by Liu Wei's hired muscles. Meanwhile, he was also 'castrated' by the hands of Liu Wei himself. That hatred was enough for him to murder Liu Wei over a thousand times. So, how would One Sword Stroke be able to sit his ss off, while knowing Liu Wei had finally become vulnerable? The moment Liu Wei is dipped into sht, he would be the first to take note of that. He might even pay off the guards in jail to give Liu Wei a good rub in his anus!

However, he would not have thought that Liu Wei would be bailed out from jail by Chong Xiu Hua. That would definitely drive One Sword Stroke mad! Therefore, Zhang Yang would not feel it odd at all if One Sword Stroke is the one who abducted Liu Wei.

Well, nothing said could ease him under such circumstances now. So, Zhang Yang could only sit tight and wait for any updates on the news from his private investigator.

After a night's rest, Zhang Yang assembled his party members and head over to the Island in the Center of the Earth. Upon searching through the Rock Flatland for a while, they had finally arrived before a chilly pool. According to the Map that Zhang Yang acquired a while ago, that is the entrance to the Island in the Center of the Earth!

The ten of the looked at each other for a bit, then they dived into the pool.

After diving down for approximately 30 meters below the water

surface, a large whirlpool suddenly appeared in the pool. Everyone was helpless against the suction as they were pulled into the whirlpool, one after another. In just a blink of an eye, they were forced down, hundreds of meters down beneath the surface of the water!

The strong current of force had even taken Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue off the backs of their pet mounts! All 10 of them were stirred around like wet cement in a mixer. They were all so sick that their dinners last night were about to reemerge!

Just as they were about to suffocate, they were pulled right into a cavern. However, their bodies were beginning to float towards the surface of the water. After everything before their eyes became bright, they emerged at the surface of the water like cannonballs!

Splash! Splash! Splash!

The ten of them were shot out of the bottom of the lake into the air above it, 10 meters from the surface. Then they fell back down, one after another.

At the same instant, they found themselves on an island. The sky was crimson red in colour. The smoke and dust in the surrounding were of the same colour as the sky. Meanwhile, they were falling into the lake that was not really big. However, the water of the lake was extremely hot. It was so hot that Zhang Yang and the gang felt as if they were about to be cooked!

Everyone quickly swam towards the shore. After getting out of the water, they felt much more relieved than they were in the now boiling water. However, the temperature and humidity of the surroundings was extremely high. They were sweating like pigs and it made them terribly uncomfortable.

Zhang Yang brought up the Map to check the direction that they needed to go. Then, he led the gang towards the location of the first boss, the Stone Giant Rokuta.

Even though this was an island, but technically speaking, this place looked more like a gigantic cavern. There was a live volcano spitting out flaming red lava. The red dust that filmed the entire sky and the surroundings was actually the volcanic ash.

Therefore, the place forbade players from flying. They could only glide over a short distance below a certain level. Of course, players with Class S and Class A Inheritance could still fly around freely after they activate their Inheritance Transformations. Well, they could still fly in any kind of environment.

"Rawgh!" A beast's intimidating roar echoed across the surroundings. Suddenly, a crimson red monster leapt over a pile of rocks and landed in front of Zhang Yang and the gang. The monster had the appearance of a wolf. Countless whiskers covered the beast's entire neck. Each of the whiskers was as long as 3 to 4 meters! They were like tentacles, wriggling about like they were alive!

[Tendrils of Crimson Wolf] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 175

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Soul Leash]: Uses its tentacles on the targets. Tentacles will drill themselves into the body of the target. If the HP bar of the target is not at its full state within the next 3 seconds, the target will be controlled by the Tendrils of Crimson Wolf.

[Burning Aura]: Causes 30,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the area of 40-meter radius once in every 3 seconds.

[Bite]: Uses its sharp teeth to bite the target, causing 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

The moment after the wolf revealed itself, it charged at Daffodil Daydream who happened to be closest to it. However, Daffodil reacted at a god-like speed. Immediately, she activated her {Apparate} and appeared beside Zhang Yang. At the same time, she threw a {Fire Blast} right at the Tendril Crimson Wolf. By doing so, she managed to lure the monster over to Zhang Yang.

"What the f\*ck!? How can this be an Elite Tier monster!? Look at its HP bar!" Fatty Han was in shock.

"The high the HP amount the better! Remember, we can get more Experience Points after killing it!" Endless Starlight widened his eyes and swung his hammer straight at the monster while charging at it.

The gang began to round up on the monster. Even though the attack of the monster was not really a threat to them, the monster's {Soul Leash} was just purely disgusting! Using its {Soul Leash} in conjunction with its {Burning Aura}, the gang needed Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to constantly heal them in order to keep their HP bars full. Otherwise, people would begin to die eventually.

However, even if a player has a long \*ss HP bar, he or she would still get killed, if he or she does not get support from the Healers in a battle. It took the gang less than 2 minutes before they brought the Tendril Crimson Wolf down to the ground. The monsters collapsed to the ground and died, of course. It was obvious that the Attack power of the entire party was oppressive.

Although this wolf did not drop any equipment upon its death, it still dropped an item.

[Soul Whisker] (Consumable)

Use: Attempts to gain control of your target. If the target cannot cancel or disperse this effect within 3 seconds, the target will be controlled for over 10 minutes. Meanwhile, there is no way that the target can break free from the control. If the target is Level 180

or higher, the target will have quite a high rate of resisting the control effect.

Uses remaining: 3/3

Required Level: 150

Well, this was a surprise. This item is actually quite handy, especially during a Team Battle. It could be used on someone very crucial on the enemy. Well, since everyone would be so busy dealing damage to their enemies, they might just fall for it. If this item is successfully used on someone, that someone would only stand there and let his or her enemies torture him or her!

"Haha! It's so fun! Hell yeah!" Wei Yan Er immediately felt excited. Then, she quickly shoved the [Soul Whisker] into her inventory. Then she began to gaze at Zhang Yang from head to toe.

"Little brat... if you ever dare to use that on me, I'll chase you out of my house!"

# Chapter 759: Frosty Chimera Cub

---

Wei Yan Er's 'evil plot' was seen through by Zhang Yang. So, she could only growl at Zhang Yang and show her teeth at Zhang Yang, as if she wanted to bite him.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, you don't have to be so fierce. Are you looking for a fight? Do you believe that I can defeat you without using my weapon? I can beat you with my shield!"

"I don't believe it!" Wei Yan Er immediately shook her head like she was hitting her head on a drum. Without wasting any more breath, she brought her hammer up in an instant.

Zhang Yang smiled and raised his shield up to block the little brat's attack. Then he said, "Starlight, you lead the party and carry on!"

"Roger!"

The other eight party members went ahead of them. They gave Zhang Yang and the Wei Yan Er their personal space to settle their 'score'.

"Oh yeah! You can't use your Phoenix pet! You also can't let Felice help you!" Wei Yan Er was not an idiot after all. She immediately shouted, "I won't take advantage of you either, don't worry! I'm not going to use my mount and my battle companion as well!"

This little brat was quite smart actually. It seems fair when both sides are not using their mounts and their battle companions. However, her Crimson Red Crow and her battle companion were totally out of their league if they were to battle with Phoenix and Felice head-on. If both of them do not use their mounts and battle companions, Zhang Yang would be the one who was having a disadvantage in the battle.



Zhang Yang did not take it seriously. So he said, "Alright!"

Boom!

The hammer landed solidly on the surface of Zhang Yang's shield. Sparks were pouring across the ground after the surfaces of the hammer and the shield clashed into each other. Instantly, the little brat received a damage of '-95,798!'. After that, Zhang Yang conveniently struck his shield back at Wei Yan Er and activated his {Shield Bash}. Another damage of '-95,798!' popped right on top of the little brat once again.

Zhang Yang's {Block} could be activated once every 5 seconds now. Meanwhile, each of his {Block} could trigger a Damage Deflection effect and present a {Shield Bash} as a free gift to his opponent who hits him. With Zhang Yang's current terrifying Strength attribute and Additional Damage, his basic attack had exceeded 100,000 damage! However, because the little brat also had a high Defence and Damage Absorption, Zhang Yang could only deal 95,000 effective damage to Wei Yan Er.

However, if that kind of damage is dealt on the little brat once in every 5 seconds, Zhang Yang's DPS would reach up to 38,000 damage! Even though that little brat's initial HP had reached over 520,000 HP, she could only take as much as 14 rounds of Damage Reflect and 14 {Shield Bashes} before she would be smashed to her death!

However, the fact that Zhang Yang said he would not use his weapon did not affect his Defence at all. So Zhang Yang would definitely not have any problem tanking against the little brat's attack for 70 seconds!

Therefore, Tanker would always be the worst enemy of the Physical-type players!

If Zhang Yang takes off his Shield before engaging into a battle with the little brat, then that little brat should still have little chance to win against Zhang Yang.

After the battle went on for half a minute, Wei Yan Er's HP bar had been reduced by 50%. The little brat suddenly lit a light bulb above her head. Even though she raised her hammer up high, she did not smash the hammer down at Zhang Yang.

"Hehe, noob tank. I'm not going to hit you. So let's see how you deflect damage back at me!" Wei Yan Er was filled with joy all of a sudden. "Your {Shield Bash} can only be activated if your {Block} is successful. So you're running out of options, right? Wahaha! I'm so brilliant!"

"You won't win either!"

"Humph! You said it yourself! 'Do you believe I can defeat you without using my weapon? I can beat you with my shield!'. So you said you wanted to defeat me! Not get into a tie with me! Noob tank! Come and hit me now! Haha!" Wei Yan Er laughed evilly.

This little brat!

Zhang Yang flicked a finger against the little brat's forehead and said, "Come on! Let's move!"

The two of them caught up with the rest of the gang. Wei Yan Er claimed that she managed to beat Zhang Yang's \*ss up. She was grinning in pride when she was telling the others.

The gang did not encounter many monsters as they proceeded forth. However, each of the monsters were Elite Tier monsters that had over 1,000,000,000 HP. So the party had to put in quite some effort before they could slay one. Meanwhile, the monsters were basically chimeras. Either they had lion heads and bodies of wild boars, or they would just be a leopard with a snake tail. They looked so bizarre.

The size of the Island in the Center of the Earth did not look that big. However, the place was not as small as it looked, after walking across the island. Zhang Yang and his party spent 3 days on foot before they finally arrived at the resting ground of the first Stone

Giant boss.

It was a 50-meter tall Stone Giant. Its entire body was covered in whips and vines that were red. It was lying on the ground having a good sleep. The breaths coming out from the nose was so strong that the sand and dust on the ground were stirred up, forming gentle vortexes as they spread out.

[Stone Giant Rokuta] (Ethereal, Elemental)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 20,000

Melee Attack: 75,903 – 115,903

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Tramples the ground and causes 90,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 40-meter radius.

[Thump]: Strikes the target and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10-meter radius from the boss.

[Blow Away]: Spits out a strong current of breath and blows the targets into the air.

Note: Rokuta has inherited the tradition of the Stone Giant's Glory. It won't wake up from its sleep if it doesn't get a 25-hour sleep.

"Boss! Allow me to do this!" Endless Starlight shouted in excitement. Then he charged towards the boss as the lead.

Well, this boss was merely an Ethereal Tier boss. Zhang Yang could have single-handedly taken care of the boss. Well, it would not actually matter who tank against the boss. So, Zhang Yang had no reason to fight over who should be the Tanker with Endless Starlight.

However, the DPS players were very excited about it. They were dealing damage to the boss like they were on steroids! Actually, every DPS players would love to OT once in a while. Only then they would actually prove their power as DPS players!

However, Zhang Yang was a violent DPS player himself. Furthermore, he could acquire additional Aggro as well. So, no one would be able to cause OT! Well, things would be different for Endless Starlight. Seriously speaking, he should be the real definition of a 'Tank'!

Therefore, everyone was attempting to find their confidence to causing OT. They were hitting the boss as hard as they could.

"What the f\*ck! You guys are mean! Ease up... ahhhh... it's about to OT! Wu wu wu! NO! You're all really mean!" Endless Starlight began to complain. Everyone heard it and laughed out loud.

Actually, the boss was still quite ferocious in a sense. If the boss really switches its focus to players who were not a Tanker, the boss could deal an average of 96,000 damage to the players with one single attack. It would only take about 5 to 6 blows in order for the boss to take out a non-Tanker player. Furthermore, the boss's {Blow Away} could blow players up high into the sky and let the players enjoy the excitement of 'free fall'!

Even though the Skill itself could not deal any damage to the players, however, falling down to the ground from a very high place would definitely shatter a player's body to pieces if the player did not have a Flying Mount to glide and slow the fall.

Furthermore, the {Trample of War} is an AoE Skill. The boss could deal quite a number of damage to Zhang Yang and his party each time it activated its {Trample of War}. The Skill could pose quite a threat to the party.

However, the HP bar of the boss was a little too low to have survived the attacks of Zhang Yang and his party. The gang only took 3 minutes to crush the Stone Giant and forced the Stone Giant

to collapse onto the ground and shatter into small pieces of rubbles across the ground. Upon its death, the boss dropped a few pieces of loot.

Although they were just some Ethereal Tier equipment, they were still Level 170 equipment. After all, Holy Tier equipment which were known to be the highest Tier in the current stage of the game. Meanwhile, how many players would have the luxury to have Holy Tier equipment on them, then? Zhang Yang only had 6 pieces of Holy Tier equipment with him. He would need a lot more pieces of Holy Tier equipment before he could acquire a full set of it.

Everyone quickly focused on distributing the equipment among the loots. After using the [Identifying Scrolls] to identify the equipment, they were able to equip the equipment straight away. It was extremely convenient for them.

After distributing the loots, the gang proceeded forward. They had encountered a lot more rare and bizarre-looking monsters, and earned a substantial amount of Experience Points upon slaying them all! The gang said that even if there was no boss in this area, the Experience Points that they could earn from slaying all those monsters would make the trip totally worthwhile.

Indeed, everyone in the current stage of the game was having a difficult time grinding. Well, it was not because the monsters were difficult to slay. It was because the players could not find a peaceful grinding spot where there would no one to snatch monsters in the area from them! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his gang were the only ones grinding at the Island in the Center of the Earth. All monsters in their surroundings were for them alone to slay. Of course, they would be filled with joy and excitement knowing that all the Experience Points would go to them alone.

Furthermore, the scenery on the island was bizarrely unique. The monsters had rare and bizarre appearances. Zhang Yang and the gang felt like they were venturing into another planet. Even when

they were repeatedly slaying monsters, they were not bored at all. The trees and the flowers were really unique. Everyone could not get their minds back together while staring at those surroundings. They even switched on their video recording function of the game to record everything they saw. They intended to watch the footages back when they were old in the future.

The second boss was the 'Frosty Chimera Marow' which was located right on top of a high mountain. The path to the top of the mountain was a little rugged. However, there was no way that the gang could take another way around to reach the top. Apparently, this entire island had a 'one-way lane' pathway. The players could not travel in any way other than moving forward along the path.

After another 3 days of proceeding forward, the party had finally arrived before the boss. It was also an Ethereal Tier boss. Therefore, it could not pose much of a threat to Zhang Yang and his gang. However, the small little Frost Chimera that was sighted by the side of the boss had Zhang Yang and his gang widened their eyes a little.

[Frosty Chimera Cub] (Ethereal Tier Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 0

Note: Can be tamed.

An Ethereal Tier mount!

Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had already possessed a Legendary Tier pet. So naturally, they no longer had the desire to obtain any other pet mount, including the Ethereal Tier pet, of course. However, the remaining 7 members of the gang were staring at the little Frost Chimera while their eyes were all glittering with hope. Well, other than Wei Yan Er who had a Mythical Tier Crimson Red Crow, the rest of the gang only had Flying Mounts that were just Violet-Platinum Tier, Yellow-Gold Tier, or even Gray-Silver Tier!

Unfortunately for them, a Mount could be easily spotted. However, a Flying Mount would be extremely hard to spot. Those who could get a Flying Mount to fly in the sky should be very grateful!

Because Wei Yan Er already had a Crimson Red Crow, she wet her eyes and withdrew herself from the competition to see who gets the Ethereal Tier Flying Mount. Well, although a Mythical Tier Flying Mount could really enhance her abilities in the game, the others who only had Gray-Silver Tier and Yellow-Gold Tier Flying Mount were in greater need of upgrading their mounts. Therefore, the little brat could only squat on the ground and draw circles with her finger.

After killing the boss, this Ethereal Tier Flying Mount was obtained by Fantasy Sweetheart. This pretty face girl with a pair of huge boobs was bowing at the others, sending them quivering violently. Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were staring at her boobs as they drooled.

The pet leveled up pretty quickly. The main reason being that the monsters on the island gave more Experience Points after they die. Zhang Yang and his gang slew the monsters around the island for another two days. Then, they finally arrived at a castle that seemed to be built by the Dwarfs, judging from its design. This Frost Chimera had leveled up to Level 130. So, Fantasy Sweetheart could ride on it already.

This castle was the end of the entire Island in the Center of the Earth. The final boss - 'Servant Guardian Tatashu' and the Dwarfs' Treasures were located just in the castle.

Outwardly, the castle didn't seem much. It was only 3 floors tall. It was barely larger than a basketball court. However, everyone knew that the Dwarfs loved to dig deep and stay deep. Beneath all that, it had to be far larger.

The gang entered the castle, one after another. The interior of

the castle was dark. Because the interior was an indoor environment, everyone was forcefully pushed down from their 'rides'. Other than Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han, the others had hopped down from their mounts automatically.

Mythical Tier equipment already had extremely glittering Appearance Effect. Therefore, even though the surroundings were dim and dark, the 10 of them and their respective Battle Companions were like 20 super-sized walking candles. They could illuminate half a meter out around them.

Meanwhile, the Appearance Effect of Felice's equipment were the strongest!

--- the little lady currently had a full set of Level 170 Holy Tier equipment on her. So, it made perfect sense that no one among them could best her!



# Chapter 760: Servant Guardian

---

The two Phoenixes were not willing to stay idle either. Normally, they were just two giant birds radiating in a crimson red light. However, they were now two gigantic birds that were blazing hot. The two of them were like two great bonfires illuminating the surroundings of the entire area.

Initially, players who wanted to enter the castle had to purchase some [Torches] before they set foot on the place. However, the two blazing birds were illuminating the surroundings much better than having 100 [Torches] around!

Everyone laughed. With the two blazing phoenixes leading the way, the two giant birds were like two giant searchlights, shedding light into the surroundings. The gang need not worry about falling into a hole out of nowhere.

Although the Dwarfs loved to keep their secrets beneath the surface of the ground, Zhang Yang and his gang took a quick sweep across the 3 floors just to be safe. Well, the 3 floors were not that big. It would not take too much of their time for them to check on the 3 floors.

However, there was no sign of any treasure at all. There was not even a single monster in the vicinity. The only things they could find were dried corpses lying quietly around. Obviously, when the Island in the Center of the Earth sunk, the Dwarves were killed by the sudden deterioration of the environment. They did not even get the chance to react to the change before they died!

After inspecting the 3 floors, Zhang Yang and the gang decided to go further down to the floors beneath to explore.

The moment when they set foot on the first floor beneath the surface of the ground, they realized that the space of the floor was 100 times larger than the space of the floors above the ground! It looked as if there was an entirely secret tower beneath the surface

of the ground, while the three floors on the surface of the ground were just decoratives on the tip of the entire tower!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Everyone was walking on top of the surface of the black rocks that pave the ground. Their boots and greaves knocked hard on the surface of the ground. The sounds of heavy footsteps echoed across the entire floor as they proceeded forward. It was a little strange and bizarre to be walking in the vast and yet quiet place. Everyone could feel the hairs on the back of their neck standing up. Boots that were made of clothes and leathers would not have made such a loud sound. Only the metallic greaves would cause such a loud sound while the players wearing them walked.

"Walk lightly! Come on!" Everyone turned their eyes towards Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Endless Starlight. Their voices echoed into the surroundings and made the three of them feel a little nervous.

"Hehe!" Well Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight attempted to walk lighter. However, Wei Yan Er had always been acting like a gremlin. She continued on to stomp heavily onto the ground every time she put a step forward. Everyone was staring at her with annoyed faces.

Well, it is difficult to go against the anger of all. After noticing that everyone was looking at her in annoyance, she just stuck out her tongue and stopped what she was doing.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

"Yan Er!"

"Little brat!"

Everyone turned their heads over to Wei Yan Er and snapped at her in unison.

Wei Yan Er poured out her grievances through her pretty little face. She raised both of her hands up high and said, "It wasn't me!"

"If it's not you, then who is it?"

Everyone continued to press forward. Thud! Thud! Thud! The heavy footsteps were heard again.

"Yan Er ---"

"Little brat, are you feeling itchy again? Do you want us to beat you up?"

"It really isn't me!" Wei Yan Er cried miserably, expressing that she was innocent. Furthermore, there were 3 of them wearing Heavy Armor. So why would everyone looked at her instead of the other two then?

"It's not Yan Er indeed. She's right beside me. The sound did not come from her!" Han Ying Xue tried to redress an injustice on the little brat. The little brat was baffled with gratitude. She rubbed her hands on Han Ying Xue's boobs, claiming that she's the best human in the entire world.

"Did you guys notice? There are 11 of us here, right now!" Daffodil Daydream suddenly spoke out with a shaky voice.

"Haha! How is that possible! You must be dizzy right now!" Endless Starlight laughed out loud, "Let's count and see! 1, 2, 3... 9, 10, 11! What the ---"

Everyone got an intense chill up their spines. However, because the surroundings were too dark, the Appearance Effect of their equipment could only illuminate half a meter into the surroundings. They could not clearly see anything that was further than half a meter from them.

"I'll count one two three. Then everyone, take a step back at the same time!" Zhang Yang said in the party chat.

"One!"

"Two!"

"Three!"

Everyone took a step backward at the same time. They saw a dark shadow standing at its same spot without taking a step back like they did. After about 1 or 2 seconds later, the dark shadow followed and took a step back as well. 'Thud!'. The heavy footstep was heard once again.

Well, the little brat was clean, after all. However, everyone was so terrified that their heads were numb. Could this be a ghost!?

Zhang Yang quickly summoned his Phoenix pet back to his side. The blazing flames of the Phoenix illuminated the entire place around the gang and the mysterious shadow had finally revealed its true identity.

The skin of that person was white, and the eyes of the person were white as well! When that person realized that Zhang Yang and his gang were staring straight at him, that person had also revealed two rows of white teeth. Because the eyes did not have pupils, everyone felt another intense chill straight up their spines.

"GHOST!" Wei Yan Er screamed in excitement. She immediately pulled her hammer out and smashed it straight into that person.

"Anglo' Basida!" that thing let out a strange voice. Suddenly, its both eyes shot out a beam of crimson red laser and hit the little brat.

‘-56,892!’

Wei Yan Er immediately received a damage value.

After witnessing that solid hit on the little brat, everyone let out a breath and felt relieved immediately. Compared to a ghost, they were not afraid of a monster at all!

[Mechanical Servant] (Elite, Servant)

Level: 180

HP: 2,000,000,000

Defence: 20,000

Melee Attack: 43,649 – 63,649

Skills:

[Death Ray]: Causes 60,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 30 meters.

[Mechanical Bomb]: Throws bombs into the surrounding and detonate them immediately, causing 50,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters.

Note: Mechanical Servants are built by the genius Dwarfs. Many years have come to pass and these Mechanical Servants have many parts broken in them. Even though they no longer perform like how they used to be, they are still very powerful in their own right.

After launching its first attack, the Mechanical Servant immediately fought back and threw bombs at Zhang Yang and the gang. The explosions of the bomb were flashy, and everyone received quite a lot of damage.

"Stinky metal monster! You've made my friends accuse me of doing something I didn't do! You're not the only one who knows how to throw bombs!" The little brat growled. Then, she also took out the Elemental Bombs from her inventory and threw them at the Mechanical Servant

Hundred Shots could not help to feel heartbroken. Well, each Elemental Bomb cost 10 gold pieces. Furthermore, Elemental Bombs were supposed to be used on multiple targets. It would only be a big waste to use one on a single monster.

"This Mechanical Servant has more HP than the other monsters out there!"

"Yea! Its skin is extra thick as well! Look at that amount of Defence!"

Everyone was hacking and slashing their weapons onto the monster as they complained. Indeed, an amount of 2,000,000,000 HP was actually more than the amount of HP of the two previous

Ethereal Tier bosses! If it wasn't because of the Mechanical Servant's attack being rather lackluster, this fellow could be a boss by now! Well, it was exactly what the note said. Because many years had passed and too many parts in the Mechanical Servant are now broken, its attack power was nowhere near its prime. However, its Defence had remained stellar after all these years.

However, it was futile for the monster to have over 20,000 Defence as well. By using {Cripple Defence} and [Armor Piercing Potion], players could ignore over 70% of the monsters' Defence. Therefore, Zhang Yang and the gang only had to deal with the remaining 6,000 Defence of the Mechanical Servant. So, all they needed to do was to hit the monster with their basic attacks, and the monsters would be as good as dead, eventually.

The gang only took a few minutes to take down the Mechanical Servant. Upon its death, the Mechanical Servant dropped some loot onto the ground.

Wei Yan Er acted swiftly as usual. She picked up everything from the ground and went up to the gang with a small sized ball in her hand, "Look at what I found!"

[Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] (Consumable)

Use: Summons a Mechanical Servant to aid you in getting rid of your enemies! However, because the Core Manipulator is a little ancient, the Mechanical Servant can only be manipulated by you for over 10 minutes. After that, the Mechanical Servant will enter 'Free Mode' and attack any target that tries to get near it. You can only summon one Mechanical Servant at a time.

Require Level: 150

"This is interesting. We can use it to scare people during PvP!"

Wei Yan Er has always been a destructive little brat. So after hearing what Zhang Yang said, she quickly kept the [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] as if she was afraid that the others

would snatch it from her.

Not long after, another Mechanical Servant revealed itself from a dark corner of the floor and blended into Zhang Yang's gang. However, it failed to blend in because one Phoenix was tagging along the gang. Under the illumination of the giant blazing bird, the Mechanical Servant had nowhere to hide. So it could only accept the fate of being beaten up by Zhang Yang and gang.

However, not every Mechanical Servant would drop a [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] upon their death. After clearing out the entire floor, the gang managed to salvage 7 of the [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators]! If each of the Mechanical Servant that is summoned with a [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] could be as powerful as the Mechanical Servants they encountered, it could be said that Zhang Yang and his gang have earned a fortune!

Well, since there were 7 [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators], everyone felt the urge to 'spend' one to look at its effect. So they activated one of the 7 [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators]. However, after commanding the Mechanical Servant that they summoned to battle another ancient Mechanical Servant monster, it did not take long before it was smashed into pieces of junks. Everyone was extremely disappointed, to the point that they almost popped a vein.

The Attack power of the Mechanical Servant they summoned was similar to the Attack power of the Mechanical Servant monsters. However, the HP amount that it had was far too little. How could a Mechanical Servant be able to battle against players with merely 200,000 HP, then?

Alright. Since these [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators] had been given to them for free, Zhang Yang and his gang should not ask too much of it.

First floor, second floor, third floor... the gang continued to press

forward, as they made their way deeper into the tower. Because the underground tower was truly vast and huge, Zhang Yang and the gang took almost half a day to clear one floor. Therefore, they finally arrived at the final floor of the castle on the sixth day.

That floor was totally different compared to the tens of floors above them. There was no sign of any monsters on that floor. Zhang Yang and his gang were not greeted by any monsters after walking around for over ten of minutes. It seemed that one boss would be more than enough for the gang to take on.

After some more walking, the gang had arrived at the end of the floor. They finally saw the final boss 'Servant Guardian Tatashu'.

This servant boss was so much larger than the rest of the Mechanical Servants that Zhang Yang and his gang encountered earlier. Furthermore, the boss was not humanoid. It was a gigantic three-headed Cerberus. The body mass of this boss was as tall as a two-floor building. The three dog heads of the boss were salivating profusely with lubricant and hydraulic fluids.

[Servant Guardian Tatashu] (Holy, Servant)

Level: 185

HP: 19,000,000,000

Defence: 30,000

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398

Skills:

[Death Ray]: Causes 180,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 50 meters.

[Mechanical Bomb]: Throws bombs into the surroundings and detonates them immediately, causing 150,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters.

[Servant Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. The amount of HP Recovery will not be affected by any other effects.



Note: This is the King of Mechanical Servant. No matter how many years have passed, it was still loyally guarding the Treasure of the Dwarf.

Everyone did not charge into battle recklessly. Because everyone noticed that there were 20 Elite Tier Mechanical Servants standing right beside the boss! If there were only a few Mechanical Servants, Zhang Yang would not mind them at all. However, the combined power of 20 Mechanical Servants would be a little too overwhelming for Zhang Yang and his gang to take it head-on.

"Let's activate our Inheritance Transformations, then!" Zhang Yang said. Everything had gone down to the last step, that is to take down the boss and obtain the Treasure of the Dwarfs!

"Alright!"

Without wasting more time, everyone activated their Inheritance Transformations and entered their most powerful states.

# Chapter 761: Book of Revelation: Chapter 5

---

"Boss! I'll lure the monsters!" Endless Starlight was giving a pass on luring the boss this time.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "If you can lure the aggro of the monsters around, try it and you'll know it!"

"Pui! Boss! How can you underestimate me that much!?" Endless Starlight was not willing to concede defeat.

However, as they were still having this conversation, Zhang Yang was already making his move. He charged towards the boss like a fearless general and attacked the boss with his scythe.

Servant Guardian Tatashu let out a bored cry. It was very hard to tell whether the boss was feeling bored or painful by just listening to its cry. Then, the boss swung its metallic claws straight at Zhang Yang. It shot out a beam of ray through all six of its eyes. The beam landed on Zhang Yang. Then the 20 Elite Tier monsters began to launch their attacks on Zhang Yang as well. They surrounded Zhang Yang the moment they moved near enough to Zhang Yang.

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang stomped both of his legs on the ground and instantly caused a heavy damage of 150,000 damage to each of the monsters within the effective range of his attack.

"What the hell, boss! You're cheating!" Endless Starlight screamed in a weird tone. Because they could not hop onto the back of their mounts in an indoor environment, Endless Starlight could not outrun the flying speed of Zhang Yang after Zhang Yang transformed. When he finally arrived by the side of the boss, Zhang Yang already gained approximately 7 to 8 seconds of headstart.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then he began to raise his shield as he activated his {Block}. Even though some of the 20 Elite Tier

monsters reached Zhang Yang first and some of them were just beginning to react to Zhang Yang, there were at least 3 to 4 of them already afflicted by Zhang Yang's Damage Deflection. The Damage Deflection caused more than 300,000 damage to each of the monsters!

Poor Endless Starlight. Because he was a Tanker as well, he also had the ability to acquire additional aggro by dealing damage to the monsters. Therefore, in order for him to catch up with Zhang Yang's aggro, Endless Starlight would have to deal more damage than Zhang Yang did! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had managed to strike out with such a high damage output within such a short period of time. It would be extremely difficult for him to deal more damage than Zhang Yang could!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang would be activating his {Tribulation} the moment he has accumulated enough EP. By then, it would not be possible for Endless Starlight to pull the aggro of the monsters over to him anymore!

Fortunately, 100 seconds would be required to accumulate 10 EP. Therefore, Endless Starlight quickly took the opportunity to create aggro on the monsters and deal as much damage as he could on the monsters. He was attempting to lure a few monsters over to him at least, because he did not want to be laughed at again.

Upon activating the Inheritance Transformation, Zhang Yang's Defence power had increased up to 97,980 points. He could just simply ignore the attacks from the Elite Tier monsters without any Passive Damage Immunity and Damage Absorption! Meanwhile, he had also activated his {Surrogacy} on Endless Starlight. So the two of them had an equal amount of Defence as of now. With the both of them having a Defence of 97,980 points on each of them, they would be capable of tanking against so many monsters at the same time now!

Therefore, Zhang Yang said, "Focus on the boss! Endless Starlight and I will take care of the monsters! We'll lure them aside!"

Everyone nodded and turned their attention towards the boss. They began to deal as much damage as they could.

{Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}!

Even though Zhang Yang had not accumulated enough EP to activate his God of War Inheritance AoE Skill, Zhang Yang still had the AoE Skills of a Guardian to use on the monsters and the boss. He could still deal quite an amount of damage to the monsters around him every time he struck out. However, Zhang Yang threw all his single attacks on the boss only. By doing so, he managed to firmly fix the aggro of both the monsters and the boss on him.

Since the both of them were competing to snatch the aggro of the monsters and the boss, Endless Starlight did not use his {Provoke}. Instead, he was spamming his attacks and Skills to gain as much Aggro as possible from the monsters.

He was smart though. He was not blinded by his 'greed' to get the Aggro from all monsters. Instead, he was focusing on the few monsters that had weaker Aggro fixed on Zhang Yang. Because {Horizontal Sweep} was not a penetrative attack, it would be impossible for Zhang Yang to attack all 20 monsters at the same time. Because of that, not every monster would be afflicted by the Damage Deflection of Zhang Yang's {Block}. Therefore, the aggro values on the 20 monsters had their differences.

The intelligence of Endless Starlight paid him off well. Other than that, he was also a player with a Class B Inheritance. 30 seconds after the battle, he accumulated 30 EP. So, he immediately activated his {King Kong Claw} and dealt a damage amount 6 times of his Strength attribute to all monsters within the range of 30 meters. Upon 3 successful activations of the Skill, he finally managed to get the aggro of 7 monsters.

"Hahaha!" Endless Starlight was filled with joy and excitement. While he was laughing in joy, he blinked his eyes at Zhang Yang and said, "Boss! I got 7! 7! You see that!?"

Zhang Yang smiled. Currently, he only had 9 EP on him. Well, let's give that fellow a brief moment to show off.

100 seconds, 200 seconds, 300 seconds!

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

Bam! 21 damage values of '4,830,000' popped up right on top of the boss and the 20 Elite Tier monsters. Instantly, Zhang Yang had snatched the Aggro of the monsters that Endless Starlight had lured back! Furthermore, {God of War Devastation} only consumed 20 EP. So Zhang Yang had 10 EP left to activate his {Tribulation}!

Instantly, the attacks of all monsters including the boss were deflected back at them!

Unfortunately for them, these monsters' attacks were only able to deal 1 Damage to Zhang Yang. Then their attacks were deflected back at them as well. What a tragedy.

However, Endless Starlight was suffering a more unfortunate fate than the monsters and the boss. He put so much effort in getting the Aggro of 7 Elite Tier monsters. However, his efforts were all for naught. Zhang Yang managed to snatch the Aggro of the 7 monsters back in an instance. Well, only god knows how long Endless Starlight would take to deal a 4,000,000 damage to catch up to Zhang Yang. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was also dealing damage to the monsters at the same time. Furthermore, Zhang Yang also had the {Tribulation}'s ability to deflect damage back to the monsters that attacked him. The difference between Zhang Yang's Aggro and Endless Starlight's would only get bigger and bigger.

Well, the fiercest AoE attack was not Zhang Yang. In fact, it was Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet!

Even though the Phoenix's {Phoenix Transformation} was used during the process of clearing out the monsters, the Phoenix pet

had improved up to Holy Tier at the moment. Each of the Phoenix's attacks could deal a basic damage of 170,000. Furthermore, that was an AoE attack! Whoever who tries to compete with the Phoenix pet in dealing AoE attacks should just sigh hard and forget about winning.

Meanwhile, even though both Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had a Legendary Tier pet of their own, the levels of their pets were restricted by their owner's level cap restrictions. Both of them were still stuck at Level 169 at the moment. They were still struggling hard to hit Level 170. Even though it was just one level away, Level 170 was when Legendary pet could ascend into a Holy Tier pet. After all, the attributes of the Legendary pets would increase by almost twofold when they could finally level up from Level 169 to level 170.

Therefore, the total damage dealt by the two pets was only a little higher than the damage dealt by Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet. That obviously showed how much difference 1 level could bring!

In just a brief moment, the few monsters with weaker Aggro turned their attention towards the Phoenix. Endless Starlight filled his cheeks with his tears as he activated his {Provoke} on the monsters, attempting to pull them back at him --- what the hell! Did he really perform that badly that he could not even match a bird?!

Without the Level Gap Suppression in the way and everyone basically having half a set of Holy Tier equipment, this Holy Tier boss was totally out of its league. It did not take long before the boss was slain and dropped tons of loot on the ground.

Upon the boss's death, a chest appeared right beside the dead body of the boss. Everyone turned around and cleared the remaining monsters which did not have much HP left on them as well. It did not take long before the gang slaughtered the monsters up. After everything was out of the way, the gang went back to look at the loot.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were money-grubbers. So, it was natural that they would be the first to go up to the chest first and pile drive on the chest like two damn octopuses. So, Zhang Yang had to distribute the loot to the rest of his gang.

As a Holy Tier boss, Tatashu dropped some Holy Tier equipment alright. However, there was only two Holy Tier equipment. Because the gang managed to get a lot more when they took care of Angus, they complained for a bit. Well, after noticing that there was another chest by the dead body of the boss, the gang felt joyful once more.

Among the two Holy Tier equipment, one was a Heavy Armor Helmet and the other was a pair of Cloth Armor Boots. Other than that, the heavy armor was not one of the powerful Healing Armor Set for Holy Knights. So everyone was relieved.

[Ancient Mechanical Helmet] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +16,803

Strength: +4,120

Agility: +1,750

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 33,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When being hit, absorb 1,778 Damage.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

This helmet was taken by Zhang Yang naturally. Now, his Basic Attack ranged from 203,741 – 234,241 damage. Zhang Yang had finally broke through the damage cap of 200,000 damage. He

became bullsh\*tly powerful now!

On the other hand, the Cloth boots were claimed by Fantasy Sweetheart. Because of that, her attributes had increased by a few notches!

Other than that, the boss also dropped two pieces of Skill Point Crystals. Unfortunately, there was no sign of any Skill Book. However, regular Holy Tier bosses would only drop one Skill Point Crystal. Now that this boss dropped two pieces if it, everyone could accept that extra piece of Skill Point Crystal to be a substitute of another item that the boss should have dropped.

After distributing the loot, it was time to take a look at the chest.

Zhang Yang swung his leg at Han Ying Xue who was sticking herself on the chest. With a powerful swing of his leg, he forcefully kicked her off the chest. Then he said, "Time to open the chest, little brat!"

"Let me hug it for a while more!" Wei Yan Er's eyes were glittering with joy.

"If you're not opening it, I'm going to open it, now!"

"Wu wu wu!" Wei Yan Er pouted. She was expressing her dissatisfaction on the fact that she could no longer hug the chest. She tapped on the chest and said, "Don't blame me. It's noob tank who forced me to do this to you!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. It was just opening up a chest, not a dead body in real life. So should the little brat behave as if she was parting with someone forever?

However, the little brat turned around and she was all smiling again. After chanting for a moment, the chest was opened.

"Wa, noob tank! You've just hit the jackpot!" Wei Yan Er took out a book out of the chest and threw it over to Zhang Yang.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 5] (Legendary, Unique)



Description: -

Use: Combines this item with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 6] together.

Zhang Yang had already possessed the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 1-4]. With this [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5], he would be able to combine the first half of the entire [Book of Revelation] all together now. He also had Sun Xin Yu holding the book's Chapter 8 while he was holding the book's Chapter 10 with him at the moment. Therefore, he only needed to find and obtain the Chapter 6, Chapter 7 and Chapter 9 before he could collect all the Chapters to combine them into the one and only complete [Book of Revelation]!

"Quickly! See if there's still an additional effect after you combine them together!" Everyone was hustling Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang nodded. Then he combined the Chapter 5 with the Chapter 1-4. Unfortunately, the additional effect only increased the additional damage up to 25%. Other than that, the HP amount remained upon resurrection had been increased up to 50%. The cooldown for the book had been reduced to 6 hours as well. However, there were no signs of any new additional special effects.

However, that 5% increase in the additional damage dealt had really boosted the gang up. Even though Zhang Yang's gang only had 10 members, it would still be as if everyone taking a bottle of potion to increase their damage dealt by 50%. Furthermore, the effect stays forever.

"How can there be no equipment this time!?" Wei Yan Er took a deeper look in the chest and told the others. She was feeling disappointed. However, when her hands left the chest, she was holding a scroll and another metallic doll that was the size of her palm.

"Little brat, we have a Forbidden Scroll right here. So, what are you babbling about then?" Zhang Yang laughed.

## [Forbidden Scroll: Thunderstorm] (Consumable)

Use: Activates a Thunderstorm upon all targets within the range of 10 Kilometers and causes immense damage to them. Reduces 10% HP of all targets in each second. If HP is less than 50,000, there would be a minimum deduction of 50,000 HP. If the HP is more than 200,000, then the deduction will reach up to 200,000 HP. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 150

# Chapter 762: Gold Tier Servant

---

Because of that, the Lone Desert Smoke now had over 3 pieces of powerful AoE Forbidden Scrolls. Furthermore, they also had one Forbidden Scroll that could be used to restrict a single target. That being said, the Lone Desert Smoke now had over 4 pieces of Forbidden Scroll in total. Well, who in the world could have 4 Forbidden Scrolls in hand at the same time? That number would scare the daylights out of the other guilds. Some guilds might not even have gotten one Forbidden Scroll after joining the 'God's Miracle,' ever since it started!

Finally, it was time to turn their attention to the metallic doll.

[Servant: Guardian of the Earth] (Gold Tier)

Use: Summons a giant Guardian to fight for you. Lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon one servant at a time. Summon any of the servants in your possession will cause this doll to enter a state of global cooldown. Cooldown: 15 minutes.

Required Level: 150

Bound upon pickup.

A Gold Tier Servant!

Compared to the Silver Tier Servant which had a cooldown of 30 minutes, players who have a Gold Tier Servant would be able to summon their servant once every 15 minutes. That would cover over 33% of the summon rate. It would be a good improvement for players. Unfortunately, the Attack power of the servant could not be improved, nor leveled up!

However, about 10 days in real time would be required to level up to 1 level. So as long as this Gold Tier Servant reaches Level 170, it could be used practically until it becomes Level 190 or Level 200 before players needed to discard it. So that should be half a year after today.

Because the item was bounded upon pickup, this servant could not be passed around for the other players to have fun with it. So after arguing for a while, this Gold Tier Servant had fallen into the hands of that destructive little brat Wei Yan Er. In other words, that servant had become the little brat's new toy.

She immediately summoned the Guardian of the Earth out in attempt to show off in front of the gang. However, when this servant was summoned out, it appeared as a mini version of the Servant Guardian Tatashu. The size of that Guardian of the Earth was just about the size of a pug, instead of a Cerberus. The little 'pug' would shake its three heads once in a while. Sometimes, it even tried to lower down its heads on the ground and yawn. The little thing looked absolutely adorable! It was totally different from its 'big brother' that was ferocious and terrifying to look at.

[Guardian of the Earth] (Gold Tier Servant)

Level: 180

HP: 648,760

Defence: 11,570

Melee Attack: 81,508 – 121,508

Skills:

[Triple Bites]: Tears at the target continuously and causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Protect Master]: Protects the master and absorb all damage the master receives over the next 10 seconds upon activating this Skill. The master will be immune from all sorts of Status Restriction Skills.

Bound.

Judging from the aspect of Attack, this Guardian of the Earth would be a little better than the Phoenix pet and the Red Dragon that Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had. However, if they judged it

based on the fact that the Legendary Tier pets would automatically improve up to a whole new level when they hit Level 170, then this Gold Tier Servant would be way out of its league.

The Skill {Protect Master} was still considered very practical. It could be deemed as one of those Skills that granted players Invincibility. However, the HP amount of the Guardian of the Earth was quite limited. If the enemy target could deal more than 650,000 damage, the servant would die. By then, the 'Invincibility effect' would automatically disappear.

Furthermore, the Guardian of the Earth would not be affected by any Aura Skills. It could only keep its Attacks and HP amount at their initial basic amount. Well, that was awkward somehow.

However, Wei Yan Er was still very happy about getting a new Servant. She kept toying with the Servant and treated the Servant like her pet dog.

The boss had been defeated, and the chest had been looted clean. The gang tore their own Teleportation Scrolls and traveled back to the main city. Well, it had been more than 10 days ever since they set foot on the Island in the Center of the Earth. So, it was time for them to take a break from the hectic hack and slash sessions. Furthermore, it was almost the end of the year now. So, they would have many more things to handle.

Other than that, the second World Professional League Championship was just around the corner. This time, the location of the Championship would be at the sacred holiday location, Hawaii. The parties that would be eligible to take part in the Championship would be decided after the final two rounds of the Class S Professional League Championship.

Among the parties in the China Region, Lone Desert Smoke remained as the indisputable top party. Meanwhile, the second to fifth place would not be decided until the very end of the championship. The points of each party were so close. For

instance, Crimson Rage and Imperial Sky had the same amount of points. Imperial Sky won the second place by the end of it because they managed to earn a hair-breadth of points from other methods.

Obviously, the results would always remain unknown until the very end of the competition.

Meanwhile, the Eternal Flame was performing outstandingly in the Class A Professional League Championship. They had become the unshakable champion in the Class A championship now. Therefore, they were definitely eligible to join the Class S Professional League Championship soon. Scholar Musou and Longrich teamed up together and performed astonishingly during the competition.

Zhang Yang put down the game helmet and he was ready to go home. Suddenly, he received an email. It was an email from the private investigator he hired. However, the email did not have any other news or information other than a link to a news website.

Upon clicking the link, the news webpage popped up. Zhang Yang had a quick read on the news and his face immediately turned white. Well, that was strange.

‘... Two days ago, a male corpse was found by the canal of the city side. The police had identified the male victim as Liu Wei, age 27. He was known to be the first successor to the Liu Enterprise. During the ‘Jian Zhou incident’, Liu Wei was the only one who was not dragged down to the bottom of the ocean by the fall of his empire. According to a person related to the case, Liu Wei had vanished about ten days ago. When he was found, he was already a dead corpse. According to the police investigation information, Liu Wei had suffered a lot of torturing before he breathed out his last breath. The tremendous tortures could be deemed as the main reason he died. However, the reason for the murder remains unclear. The police will conduct further investigation on it.’

Liu Wei, the big bastard that could potentially ruin Zhang Yang's life and legacy are dead?

Zhang Yang sunk into deep thoughts. Although the website posted a photo of the dead body, there was a white cloth covering that face. So there was no way of telling if this news was true, or if it was just a ruse to mislead Zhang Yang. However, the news also stated that Liu Wei had suffered a great deal of ordeal before he died. It would definitely be more than just a robbing or kidnapping for ransom. It was actually pretty obvious that the incident happened because of some hatred towards him.

Well, a lot of people wanted Liu Wei dead, after all. This bastard had done countless forms of crimes that even he lost count himself when his 'Empire' was still powerful and influential. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only knew one person who would kidnap Liu Wei in the middle of the night and torture him over many nights. The only suspect would be One Sword Stroke.

Phew... that should be a good thing as well. Although Liu Wei was not dealt with by Zhang Yang's own hands, at least Liu Wei remains in history now. Even though it was safe to hire muscles and eyes to keep the ladies safe, it greatly inconvenienced them. From now on, no one has to worry about Liu Wei anymore!

Ring! The phone rang. Zhang Yang rejected the call. However, he heard one of his secretaries say, "Mr. Chong, two police officers want to see you now!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "Alright, let them in!"

In just a while, the door was opened. A beautiful and tightly dressed secretary was escorting two police officers into his office. The policeman was probably in his 30s by the looks of it. His body was sturdy and muscular. He had a dark skin tone though. On the other hand, the other police officer was younger. She looked not bad herself. Her waist was quite small. Zhang Yang swept his eyes

across and noticed that the girl also wore a thick make up on her face. She seemed arrogant. Well, she would unintentionally reveal her glamorous face from time to time.

"Mr. Chang, we're from the public security sub-bureau in Xiang Cheng District. My name is Zhao Zong Ping. And this is my partner, Zheng Li Yuan." The dark-face policeman introduced themselves to Zhang Yang. Then they flashed their IDs at Zhang Yang. However, that Zheng Li Yuan had no respect for Zhang Yang at all. Her nostrils were raised so high that Zhang Yang could see the nose sh\*t in them. It was as if her status would fall for talking to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang forced and smile and said, "Come, have a seat."

The three of them sat down and Zhao Zong Ping went straight to the point, "Mr.Zhang, we're here to invite you over to the bureau in order to help us in a murder case. Please cooperate with us and our work!"

Murder case? Could it be Liu Wei's murder case then?

Zhang Yang frowned a little and said, "Well, you can just shoot the questions here, I'll answer them all!"

Slam! Zheng Li Yuan slammed the table and said, "We're telling you to go to the bureau! So just obey! You think this is some sort of market? Did you really think you have the right to negotiate?!"

Zhang Yang suddenly revealed a cold face at them and talked to Zhao Zhong Ping, "Excuse me, may I know I'm actually helping the case or if I am the suspect of the murder case, then?"

"Did you really think we don't know that you and Liu Wei had a history?" Zheng Li Yuan looked at Zhang Yang with disdain, "You must have underestimated our capability to investigate! So, just spit it out! Where did you keep Liu Wei imprisoned for the past 10 days and when did you murder him!?"

How did this b\*tch even become eligible to become a policeman



in the first place?

Zhang Yang glanced at the b\*tch's butt and her round boobs. Well, he actually got some idea on how she could have succeeded in becoming a policeman by doing that. So Zhang Yang remained calm and said, "Based on this Officer Zheng's manner, I would have to decline to walk with you. If you do not have a warrant, please leave."

Zheng Li Yuan could not stand the sight of Zhang Yang's eyes and how he looked at her. Indeed, she could be where she is right now was all because of her body and her skills in bed. So what made her so qualified to look down upon other people then?

Well, she was also considered to be a 'luckless person' after all. She was able to pass the test to enter the public security system. Because she appeared pretty and her pants were loose, she managed to become a mistress of the previous Deputy Director of the bureau. She thought she could get promotions all the way to the top at first. However, that Deputy Director of the bureau appeared to have 'financial problems'. So, he ran away with his tails between his legs by the end of it.

However, even though the 'soldiers' would leave their barrack after a while, the barrack was built by steel and indestructible will. So as long as she stays, she would still stand a chance to become others' mistress and get her promotions. After that, she also seduced quite a number of leaders in the bureau. Well, she really had eyes for those who were 'special'. Or should we say that she was purely unlucky then? Whoever she goes in bed with would face a big problem, not long after. They were either detained, interrogated for committing something illegal, or they were transferred to another post. The worst one was one of them had a heart attack all of a sudden while racing cars!

She even did over 7 to eight times of abortions over the years. Even the doctors tried to talk her out of doing it again! However, she had no choice at all. The leadership of the bureau was changing

a little too constantly. She had no choice but to do what she did best or she would not have survived in there.

This time around, however, the man that she was currently in bed with actually managed to become the Director of the Bureau! That was the main reason why she could behave so cockily. She could just show her arrogance to anyone she meets. Well, she thought she was above everybody else, now in such regards. Maybe she was just trying to vent out her dissatisfaction over the years.

Therefore, she only dared to look down upon Zhang Yang even though she knew that Zhang Yang was a CEO of a large public company. Deep in her heart, she believed that the rich would never be able to match the officers by the end of the day. So she could just let her 'man' pull some strings to make Zhang Yang dead if she wanted to.

She really could not stand how Zhang Yang was looking at her. So she instantly said, "What are you so cocky about! We're trying to be nice to you now! You better take the easy way out now, or we'll be forced to hurt you!"

"Officer Zheng!" Zhao Zhong Ping immediately stopped the b\*tch from doing something really stupid. Everyone knew that the Silky Soft Holdings had great network connections with government officers. Anyone that Zhang Yang knew should be much more powerful than the 'dirty husband' of that b\*tch. It would be wiser to stay away from trouble instead of stirring one up.

Well, that Deputy Zhou must be blind in this. This woman only had a pretty face. Other than that, she only had two chunks of meats and one hole for men to f\*ck. He should just have some fun with this kind of brainless b\*tch and throw her aside. Why would he spend so much effort in promoting her, then? This Deputy would definitely in deep sh\*t one day for having this trouble-stirring b\*tch by his side!

What the f\*ck!

However, this b\*tch really had quite an 'outstanding' ss. It should be extremely satisfying to stick a dck into the hole! Zhao Zhong Ping immediately waved his eyes across the round butts of the b\*tch. He could not help to have some thoughts in his head. Then he immediately kept his eyes away from the butts and turned to Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Mr. Zhang, I would like to apologize on behalf of Officer Zheng. Please do cooperate with us! With policemen and civilians cooperating with each other, we can create a harmonious society!"

As he was talking, he winked at Zheng Li Yuan, who was still blazing with rage.

Zheng Li Yuan was not really that stupid after all. She immediately got the message. Well, as long as they could get Zhang Yang to the police station, they would be able to do whatever they want to him. Well, this b\*tch was the current 'Empress' in the entire bureau after all!

# Chapter 763: Drop it with Money!

---

Back in his school days, Zhang Yang was basically involved in fighting and brawling cases every single day. Therefore, Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had become regulars at the local police station. Therefore, he was very familiar with the half-white and half-black kind of daces. Noticing the two of them were trying to communicate through their eyes, he could not help to smile quietly in his heart.

There are good and bad cops anywhere in the world. He recalled, back when he was still in his first grade of junior high school, he would fight with some hoodlums in the neighborhood and get arrested by the cops. An old cop tried to talk him out of becoming a hoodlum in the underworld. Sometimes, Zhang Yang would be locked up until midnight. The old cop would even buy him something to eat.

However, there were also bad cops. Sometimes, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han would be treated as thieves in the police station. Sometimes they even forced the two of them to admit to being something that they were not part of. Those bad cops would just cage them into a dark room and beat the crap out of them.

Therefore, Zhang Yang was very familiar with what the two had in mind at the moment. So he shook his head and said, "If you have any questions, just ask me now. I'll definitely be a good citizen and do my duty. Or else, please don't delay my time to go home and rest."

Zhao Zong Ping was troubled at the moment. Zhang Yang did not take the easy way nor the hard way. So, he was troubled as to how he should proceed with it. He did not dare to try it the hard way because he had no warrant in his hand. If these two cops really try to take Zhang Yang away by force, Zhang Yang could have easily 'remove' him of his rank. Well, with Zhang Yang's current status in the society, he would really have no problem at all in removing

any officer from the force if he wanted to.

Zhao Zong Ping was indeed in dire need of flattering the Deputy's \*ss. However, if that means losing his current job, then there was no point he should do it at all.

After giving it some thoughts, he finally decided to take the gentle way. So he asked, "Mr. Zhang, do you know Liu Wei personally?"

At first, he began to question Zhang Yang with simple questions. Of course, Zhang Yang was answering all the questions Zhao Zong Ping was throwing at him. Well, even if Zhang Yang did not answer, he could have easily investigated and get all the answers to the questions he asks Zhang Yang.

Slam! Zheng Li Yuan sudden slammed the table again. Then she spoke with her eyebrows raised, "Did you murder Liu Wei?!"

"No!"

"Did you really think you can say no and pretend that you did not?" Zheng Li Yuan spoke in disdain again, "You said that you have a beef with Liu Wei in the game. However, why are there so much evidences provided by you then? Those evidence could really cripple the Liu Enterprise! You two are obviously holding great grudges against each other! So it makes perfect sense that you would kidnap him and torture him to death while he was trying to escape!"

This b\*tch then took out a bunch of photos and slammed them on the table. The photos scattered across the table. The photos showed the same person. However, every piece of the photo was showing that the man was basically 'dissected' into pieces. Well, that corpse could not be identified as a 'man' anymore in some point. Even though Zhang Yang had seen quite a lot of gory stuffs in his life, he could barely stomach it down after seeing such gruesome photos.

So that... was really Liu Wei?

Zhang Yang thought quietly to himself that One Sword Stroke must have lost his mind to be able to do such gruesome thing to Liu Wei. However, thinking about how Liu Wei cut off One Sword Stroke's d\*ck and raped his wife in front of him, anyone would have gone mad and become capable of doing something so insane and gruesome.

Wait a minute!

Zhang Yang suddenly had an idea in his mind. Well, he had passed the evidence provided by Chen Xue Yao to Sun Xin Yu in the first place. Then, the evidence was passed to the authorities by Sun Family. So no one should have known it was him who provided the 'firepower' to take down the entire Liu Family!

So how did this b\*tch knew about it then?

Huh? Apparently, things were not as simple as it looked! That's right. He was no longer the hoodlum who would pick up a fight with other hoodlums on the streets. He had obtained a significant status in the society. He even had great relationships with many high-class leaders in the industries of business and politics as well. He is Mr. Zhang, CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings! So who does this Zheng Li Yuan think she is, flaunting him like this!?

Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang suddenly thought of someone! Well, he already knew about the investigation on the Liu Family in the first place. He was also the one that bailed Liu Wei out of the prison with the intention to screw with Zhang Yang! However, it seemed that Zhong Xiu Hua did not only intend to screw with Zhang Yang. It seemed that he wanted to force Zhang Yang to make a move!

This Zhong Xiu Hua must have been monitoring Liu Wei all the while. If Zhang Yang had attempted something on Liu Wei, he would have fallen into Zhong Xiu Hua's trap and let Zhong Xiu

Hua have a grip over him. If that ever happens, Zhang Yang would only be able to fight Zhong Xiu Hua passively in the shadows.

Unfortunately, Zhong Xiu Hua must have not predicted that someone would have hated Liu Wei more than Zhang Yang did. That person had snatched Liu Wei away before Zhang Yang could do a thing. That person even tortured Liu Wei for several days before he ended his life! That should be it. Zhong Xiu Hua's miscalculation! However, it was not like he gained nothing at all, from that incident. He was clever. He actually tried to pin the case on Zhang Yang!

With Sun Xin Yu working in the shadows, no harm would come to Zhang Yang. However, it really did provoked Zhang Yang a little bit. Other than that, if Zhang Yang always relies on a woman to settle things for him, Sun Xin Yu might look down on him as well.

Liu Wei was dead. So Zhong Xiu Hua decided to salvage and make good use of waste material. Well, he would just try because he would lose nothing at all. Even if he only manages to put a small crack on the relationship between Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu, he would be considered as the winner by the end of it.

After making some logic assumptions in his own head, Zhang Yang smiled vaguely. Then he said, "If you really think I'm the suspect or the murderer, then you should just come with a warrant and arrest me. Well, look at your manners! From now on, I refuse to answer any more of your questions.

"If you're not cooperating, you're going to get the trouble! All of it!" Zheng Li Yuan slammed the table again and shouted like a little b\*tch.

"300,000!"

"What 300,000?" Zheng Li Yuan was stunned to hear it. She wondered why Zhang Yang would say the number out of the blue.

"300,000! You take off your clothes and walk out of here naked!"

Zhang Yang calmly said.

"Are you out of your mind!?" Zheng Li Yuan immediately blushed and shouted in rage back at Zhang Yang. However, she sighed regretfully in her own heart. If Zhang Yang was only asking her to sleep with him, she would have pushed Zhao Zong Ping out of the room and accepted the offer. It would be as simple as opening up her legs and letting Zhang Yang come at her. It would only be like an enjoyment for her.

"3,000,000!" Zhang Yang took out her checkbook and wrote the number on the column. Then he threw the cheque onto the table and said, "You can call the bank to verify the cheque!"

Zheng Li Yuan and Zhao Zong Ping took in a cold breath upon hearing what Zhang Yang had to offer. 3,000,000 dollars was a number that would make two of them regret if they really walk away from the offer. Well, that was probably because their salaries were just so little that they would need to work for their entire life just to get that amount of money. Zhao Zong Ping did not blame Zhang Yang for trying to bribe them. He did not even mind the fact that Zhang Yang was humiliating the two of them with money. All he thought of, was why must he be a man, instead of a woman at that situation!

Zheng Li Yuan tightened her teeth. Well, 3,000,000 dollars was indeed not a small figure at all. She had been sleeping with so many men out there just because she wanted promotions. Now the opportunity awaits... she could earn 3,000,000 dollars just by taking her clothes off and walking out of that building. That... had really got her heart pounding!

However, if she really does it, she would definitely become the 'great insult' to the bureau. She would definitely lose her job! So would it be worth it to risk everything for this one-time opportunity?

Her hands were raised up to the first button of her uniform.



Then she put her hands down. Then she put her hands back up again. She was obviously struggling to decide whether she should do it or not!

"10,000,000!" Zhang Yang took up another cheque, wrote the number down on it. After signing it, he threw the cheque onto the table and stared at Zheng Li Yuan with cold eyes.

Truth to be told, even if he was rich in his previous life, Zhang Yang would not have showed off how rich he is. Well, the main reason was probably because he grew up in a poor environment. He was never fond of such actions. However, looking at these two fellow officers, he had the urge to drop his money on them.

Currently, money was just a figure to him. The Territories he had could earn over hundreds of millions for him in each passing day! 10,000,000 dollars was just a small number to him. With his current income, Zhang Yang would be capable of spending as much as 1,000,000,000 dollars or even 10,000,000,000 dollars with a snap of his fingers!

Zheng Li Yuan was totally crippled by the 10,000,000-dollar offer. So she quickly snatched the cheques over and took off her uniform.

Zhao Zong Ping was enraged. So he immediately shouted, "Zheng Li Yuan! What do you think you're doing!? Please remember that you're a cop!"

"Horse sh\*t! You're just jealous because you can't earn 10,000,000 dollars like how I just did!" Zheng Li Yuan was able to see through the true intentions of Zhao Zong Ping, "I quit being a cop! Woohoo!"

The b\*tch took off her clothes in a very brief period of time. She revealed her set of slightly saggy badonkers. The two nipples were so purplish that they looked black instead! Well, from the looks of it, only god knows how many men have sucked on them. The jungle bush in between her legs was so thick that it had the effect

of covering up her crotch! Eww!

She smiled at Zhang Yang and changed her attitude 180 degree towards him and said, "Mr. Zhang, do you want me to accompany you tonight? I'm very good at treating men like you! I only take 1,000,000 dollars for each session!"

What the f\*ck! Did she really take him as an idiot?

Zhang Yang revealed a cold look on his face and shouted, "Get lost!"

Zheng Li Yuan was not ashamed at all for trying. She took her uniform and also the two cheques that Zhang Yang threw on the table before she left Zhang Yang's office. What a greedy b\*tch! When she walked out of the office naked, everyone was shocked. It was like throwing a 'Surprise, mother\*cker' to anyone that saw her walking naked across the building.

Zhao Zong Ping did not even know how to react. What the f\*ck just happened!? Not only has he failed to bring the 'target' back to the police office, he also lost the Deputy's 'wife' in the process of it! His ears were about to be lectured for a long time.

He knew that people like Zhang Yang were not people to be trifled with. Well, all he could do was to blame himself for trying to lick the shoes of his superior. Now, he has really gotten himself into a mess!

Zhang Yang picked up the phone and called the bank. Then he forfeited the two cheques that he had issued to Zheng Li Yuan without having a single doubt in his mind. A b\*tch like Zheng Li Yuan should be taught a lesson! Letting a b\*tch like her be a cop would only be feeding the flames of evil in society and harming the good people! The earlier she's gone the better!

Zhang Yang made the call right in front of Zhao Zong Ping. Upon witnessing what Zhang Yang just did, Zhao Zong Ping could feel the fear tensing up on his chest. That Zheng Li Yuan had been

fooled! She must have really believed that she had just earned a fortune! Meanwhile, Zhao Zong Ping knew that if he does not act cleverly, he would suffer similar fate as Zheng Li Yuan.

So he quickly stood up and fled building. Although he managed to catch up with Zheng Li Yaun, he did not even try to inform the b\*tch about what just happened. Instead, he was figuring out how to face the wrath of his superior later when he got back to the police station.

Well, this greedy stupid b\*tch had really got her karma after all! She's as good as dead!

...

Zhang Yang asked Sun Xin Yu for help. He wanted her to make an appointment with Zhong Xiu Hua so that he could see that son of the b\*tch face to face when they talk.

Zhang Yang was extremely uncomfortable after being shot at coldly in the dark. Well, it was about time he stands out and let his opponent knows that he was not made of mud or paper! He wanted to show Zhong Xiu Hua that he would get mad if this continues on..

Sun Xin Yu acted swiftly. Two days later, she informed Zhang Yang that the son of the b\*tch agreed to have a meal with the two of them at the Hawkwood Palace Restaurant.

Two days later, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu arrived at the Hawkwood Palace Restaurant. It was a historical restaurant that existed over many years. It was also a iconic spot in the Zhou Shu city.

The Hawkwood Palace Restaurant was not really big. After the two of them entered the restaurant, they were greeted by a waiter and escorted into a quiet and cosy VIP room. There were two huge bodyguards standing right outside the entrance of the room. They looked like two iron generals standing sturdily at the entrance.

"Let them in!" The two bodyguards were blocking the entrance. After a while, a man's voice was heard from within the room. The two bodyguard stood aside and give way to Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu after that. There were only two men in the room. One of them was a young man Zhang Yang once saw on the video call --- Zhong Xiu Hua. He was sitting calmly while sipping on his hot tea. The other man was a skinny and thorough man standing right behind Zhong Xiu Hua. His face was basically emotionless. He did not even move a muscle while standing over there just like a statue.

## Chapter 764: A Solid Hit in the Face

---

However, Zhang Yang could strongly sense that the man had an unexplainable murderous aura blazing deep in him. His presence had really given Zhang Yang a tremendous amount of stress!

"Please, sit!" Zhong Xiu Hua was acting like a civilized gentleman in front of Sun Xin Yu. He looked like an easy going person at the moment. He did not look intimidating at all.

Zhang Yang was tired of keeping up with all these false pretenses. So he sat down with a plonk and pulled his chair a little closer over to Sun Xin Yu. Initially, the table only had three chairs around. The distances between the 3 chairs were the same. Well, it would not matter where Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang sit, the three of them should look like three enemy generals from three different kingdoms. However, because Zhang Yang moved his chair like that, he instantly made Zhong Xiu Hua feel like he was isolated by the two of them sitting nearer together.

Well, this fellow really knows how to do unexpected things!

Zhong Xiu Hua took a closer look at Zhang Yang. Even though the two of them had crossed paths many times in the dark, they had never seen each other in person, in real life. This should be the first time that they are meeting face to face. However, he did not waste much time on Zhang Yang. Instead, he quickly turned towards Sun Xin Yu and said, "Little Yu, you've not gone back to Beijing for quite some time ever since. My mother, my grandpa and my grandma always talk about you! They miss you a lot!"

"Oi! Stop calling my wife like you're very close to her!" Zhang Yang immediately cut in and said. He also rested his arms over Sun Xin Yu's shoulders. He was declaring to Zhong Xiu Hua that he had the indisputable 'sovereignty' over the frosty and yet mesmerizing Sun Xin Yu.

Witnessing Zhang Yang landing his 'porky hand' on Sun Xin Yu,

Zhong Xiu Hua revealed a sense of murderous intent in his eyes. What he could not understand was that Sun Xin Yu did not push Zhang Yang's hand away. Instead, she revealed a sense of comfort and joy on her face. The sides of her lips were slightly raised. That was a smile filled with love and happiness! That was her happy expression!

God damn it! What was so good about this man, then? Did he really have anything that could match Zhong Xiu Hua? Why? Why would Sun Xin Yu abandon him to be with Zhang Yang?!

The reason Zhong Xiu Hua attempted to pursue Sun Xin Yu was more of a political factor. He wanted to form an 'alliance' between the two political families to gain much more benefits. Of course, the beauty of Sun Xin Yu would also match his status. Her appearance would not make him look bad in public either. After all, couples with handsome men and ugly wives or pretty wives with ugly husbands can be found everywhere in the political circle.

And now, Sun Xin Yu actually decided to 'abandon' him. Zhong Xiu Hua felt more humiliated by her decision more than ever. The feeling was like knowing that his wife was having an affair outside! He quietly swore that he would marry Sun Xin Yu in the future. By then, he would punish her and make her understand the cost of not behaving decently as his wife!

However, now that Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were showing off their love in front of him, Zhong Xiu Hua was so infuriated that his grip almost broke the teacup in his hand.

Well, thank god he still managed to bury his tantrum deep inside. He forcefully endured the pain and calmed himself down. Meanwhile, a waiter came up to serve them dishes. That did ease the situation up a little bit.

While they were having their meal, Zhong Xiu Hua kept bringing up the memories about Sun Xin Yu back in the years when he and Sun Xin Yu were still young. He ignored Zhang Yang as much as

possible. However, Sun Xin Yu was not the type that talks a lot. Well, she would not even talk much while looking at a man she hates so much. As Zhong Xiu Hua knew no boundary on when to stop talking, she felt uncomfortable listening to that pr\*ck babble on.

"I'm going to the washroom for a bit!" Sun Xin Yu could no longer tolerate Zhong Xiu Hua's crap. So, she pushed the chair back and walked out of the room.

"Zhang Yang ---" The moment when Sun Xin Yu left the room, Zhong Xiu Hua's face changed instantly. That prideful and cold expression was revealed all over his face. His eyes were filled with disdain. So, that was his true colour beneath that hippy mask! His impression about Zhang Yang was that Zhang Yang was just merely 'New Money'. He would not have what it takes to match himself with the born-to-be 'Prince' Zhong Xiu Hua!

He coldly glared at Zhang Yang and said, "You're digging your own grave, do you know that? When little Yu is tired of toying you around, you'll be a worthless piece of sh\*t! I'll tear down your Silky Soft Holdings bit by bit. Then, I'll take everything you have in the 'God's Miracle' from you!"

"Aihh... other than using your father's name or your grandpa's influence, can you actually do something that is worth my time?" Zhang Yang did not even bat an eyelid.

"Humph! In life, there is always a difference between every individual! There are the noble ones, and there are the cheap ones! Everything is written in the genes!" Zhong Xiu Hua spoke proudly.

"Cut the crap! Was your ancestor born with a golden diaper on him?" Zhang Yang conveniently threw a chicken bone over before Zhong Xiu Hua's plate and said, "100 years ago, your grandpa's grandpa might be one of those coal miners! Is that written in your genes as well? If that's true, why don't you hustle up and go mining now? Why are you still here wasting time?"

Zhong Xiu Hua's face instantly turned red!

Well, before his family miraculously became influential and powerful, his ancestor was indeed a miner back in the ancient times. Everything changed when his great grandpa married an officer's daughter. He suddenly rose to a position of great importance in the society. When he retired, he had become an important person with a ministerial position in society. After that, it was his grandpa and his father's turn to shine even better. They became even more influential in the society than their ancestor. If nothing goes wrong, Zhong Xiu Hua's father would be climbing up to the top of the power ladder. If that ever happens, the Zhong Family would be at the peak of their life's achievement, a height they had never reached before!

Because of that, Zhong Xiu Hua could not stand people speaking on his past the most. The pride and arrogant expression on his face vanished without a trace after hearing what Zhang Yang had to say. Then, he ground his teeth together, as if he wanted to swallow Zhang Yang alive!

"You're digging your own grave!" Zhong Xiu Hua's eyes were blazing with murderous intent!

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "You've tried to provoke me three times. So, do you think everyone is some sort of toy or a puppet for you to meddle with? You know, when a man is really angry, he can spill the blood of his enemy 5 feet across the floor. So, you better watch out when you step out of your house!"

"You ---" Zhong Xiu Hua was infuriated to the point that he lost his voice. This fellow actually threatened him!? Does he not know about his status? Zhong Xiu Hua would be like a crown prince in the ancient times. How dare Zhang Yang threatens him like that?

"Oh? Are you mad now?" Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "If you can become mad just because you're teased with a few words, should I be exploding in anger? You've got to be kidding me!"



You've tried to spy on me by placing people around me. Then you tried to frame me for murder! I should be planting nukes in your yard and blow you to kingdom come!"

"Zhang Yang!" Zhong Xiu Hua slammed the table with both of his hands. Then he pushed himself a little forward towards Zhang Yang and said, "The day that Sun Xin Yu abandons you is the day you die!"

"Then you should just go to hell before me!" Zhang Yang roared out like a spartan. He suddenly swung out his fist and gave a solid uppercut straight up at Zhong Xiu Hua's chin! Zhong Xiu Hua did not expect that to happen at all. He did not even react at all as he was punched so hard that the punch threw him off balance. He spat out a few teeth and some blood from his mouth as he fell! His fall caused his body to knock the chair over and he fell straight to the ground.

Everything happened so fast that even the bodyguard standing behind Zhong Xiu Hua could not react! Well, Zhang Yang's reflexes were extremely good. Or else, he would not have become number one in the entire server of 'God's Miracle'!

However, that bodyguard still managed to shove himself between Zhang Yang and Zhong Xiu Hua to protect his master on the next moment. At the same time, the two bodyguards who heard something that was happening in the room charged into the room as well. The three bodyguards were charging at Zhang Yang with the intention of killing him!

Well, Zhang Yang did not falter at all. Although these three bodyguards looked like they were well trained and all, however, they were just some muscles hired from the Security Firms. They were not as good as the bodyguards who stayed by the sides of Sun Xin Yu's old man. Those bodyguards were definitely iron-blood military soldiers trained in the Zhongnanhai!

After all, even though Zhong Xiu Hua had a very special and

precious identity, he would only be a second-rate fellow carrying a second-rate title walking around. So it would not be possible that the Zhongnanhai would actually send bodyguards to guard by Zhong Xiu Hua's side. Furthermore, his father was a man who does great things. So he would definitely pay attention to small details such as these!

Bam!

The door was kicked open. Sun Xin Yu walked into the room filled with murderous intent. The moment she entered, she glared at the three huge bodyguards coldly.

If it was one against three, Zhang Yang would stand a lower chance of winning the fight. However, with Sun Xin Yu joining his side, he was very confident that the two of them could take out the three bodyguards.

"Zhang Yang!" Zhong Xiu Hua crawled back up on his feet with blood all over his face. The rage was ablaze in both of his eyes. He was so angry that his face became crooked, "You... are... digging... your... own grave!" He attempted to speak the sentence word by word.

Sun Xin Yu humphed coldly and said, "If you dare to touch even one hair of him, I'll crush every single bone in you and rip your bones out one by one until you are the spineless, boneless coward that you are!"

Even though she spoke calmly, but Zhong Xiu Hua could feel the intense murderous aura hidden in her tone. Based on his understanding on Sun Xin Yu, he knew that she would never have talk crap about anything! She would only say it when she was capable of doing it! If she mentioned that she would crush every single bones in Zhong Xiu Hua, she meant it with all her heart! There would be no bone in him if things continue to escalate.

No one would be capable of provoking a crazy woman! Especially a crazy woman who has the same level of influence and

background as him!

Zhong Xiu Hua quickly calmed himself down. Then, he pointed at his mouth and said, "Are you saying that I was punched over nothing?"

"Yes, you're punched over nothing! So what?" Sun Xin Yu said indifferently.

Zhong Xiu Hua almost popped a vein after hearing what she said. Who is he to get punched in the face? However, he was a little terrified while he was confronting the mad woman. He remembered very clearly that something gruesome happened back then when they were still very young. A huge boy once attempted to bully Sun Xin Yu. However, he ended up with a fractured skull, and one foot in the grave!

That was one of the main reasons why Sun Xin Yu left Beijing long ago. The witch of Sun, the crazy b\*tch Sun Xin Yu! Those were the nicknames she was called by the rich kids back in the days. Those rich kids would still be terrified the moment when they talk about her!

"Are you done talking to him?" Sun Xin Yu turned her eyes over on Zhang Yang. Then, she spoke gently to Zhang Yang. Zhong Xiu Hua felt extremely jealous because of that.

"We're done. Let's go home!" Zhang Yang tidied up his clothes a little before walking out of the room with Sun Xin Yu.

Zhong Xiu Hua was overwhelmed by the mixed feelings on his chest at the moment. However, after hesitating for quite some time, he did not order the three bodyguards to make their moves on Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. He was not worried if his bodyguards would lose. He was worried that Sun Xin Yu would do something that would cause him to tremble in fear. After all, Sun Xin Yu was an existence that he could not handle. If she really gets mad at him, she might even use a gun on him!

His thoughts rested the moment he thought of how crazy Sun Xin Yu could get. He could not help to feel a chill up his spine. However, that punch would not go unanswered! He touched his swollen face as he was staring at the view of Zhang Yang's back as Zhang Yang was leaving with murderous intent. Well, he decided to start on Silky Soft Holdings, then. Furthermore, it was about time that he summons all his troops in the 'God's Miracle' and lays siege on Lone Desert Smoke.

...

After walking out of the restaurant, Sun Xin Yu looked at Zhang Yang. Then, she asked with care, "Did you get hurt?"

"No. There were only that few of them. I could have taken them all out with only one hand!" Zhang Yang exaggerated with the intent of comforting Sun Xin Yu. The two of them went to the car. Then, Zhang Yang smiled, "I never thought that you'd be so fierce and fearsome back there! That Zhong Xiu Hua could not even talk or even fart!"

"You can't underestimate him. He's just being considerate because I was there! Furthermore, you're too reckless to have landed a punch on him! Far too reckless!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "He got used to being high up all the while. So, he thought he could just bully anyone he sees. If I only strike back at him at the wrong moment, he would only act even cockier! Now, he wanted to take you away from me, and he wanted to destroy Silky Soft Holdings. He even wanted to take everything that I have in the 'God's Miracle' away from me! So, should I hold back on this kind of opponent?"

Sun Xin Yu remained silent for a moment, then she said, "As long as no one dies, I will allow you to do anything you want."

Zhang Yang instantly got touched. It would take a lot more love than anyone could imagine for her to say such words. Zhang Yang felt the heat building up his chest. It was joy. It was excitement out

of affection. He turned around and hugged Sun Xin Yu. Then he began to passionately touch and kiss Sun Xin Yu's body parts.

"Are you crazy? This is a parking lot. Someone might see us!"

"There's no one here at this hour! Also, we've not tried it in a car before!"

"Hmm ---"

TL Notes:

1. New Money - a term that is usually derogatory, to describe those whose wealth has been acquired within their own generation, rather than by familial inheritance.

2. Zhongnanhai - A complex of buildings in Beijing, China, adjacent to Tiananmen Square, which serves as the central headquarters for the Communist Party of China and the government of the People's Republic of China

# Chapter 765: The Second World League Championship

---

Zhong Xiu Hua's retaliation came fast. Quite a number of related departments came over to Zhang Yang's company to look for trouble. Because of that, the morale of the staffs was seriously affected. Well, these so-called related departments did bring some of Zhang Yang's designers back to the bureau for further investigation. Some anonymous sources claimed that the designers were abusing their positions to take advantage of the models. Various media were also involved in attempting to 'expose' the scandals. That had really affected the Silky Soft Holdings in a negative manner.

Fortunately, the Silky Soft Holdings had recovered back its former glory. Currently, the advertisements propelled by Lone Desert Smoke had drilled its way into the market of Europe, America, Japan-Korea and other foreign countries. With merely a small setback in the market of Zhou Shu, the sales of Silky Soft Holdings was still going extremely well.

Other than that, an 'Anti Lone Desert Smoke Alliance' had been formed in the game. They claimed that they would slaughter the Lone Desert Smoke until the guild gets disbanded. The core members of the alliance were naturally the players from the Eternal Flame. Other than them, they were joined by The Myth, The Dominators, Axe Gang and other guilds who had a beef with Lone Desert Smoke.

With Liu Wei dead, Death Arbiter took over as the guildmaster for The Myth. However, Death Arbiter was not as rich as Liu Wei. Therefore, many top Tier players that came for the money decided to leave The Myth. Because of that, The Myth had become a second-rate guild.

By the end of it, Death Arbiter decided to side with Zhong Xiu

Hua. With his outstanding capabilities, he managed to get himself into the Class A Battle Team of Eternal Flame. If nothing goes wrong, Zhang Yang would be encountering him in the new season's Class S Professional League Championship.

The Anti Lone Desert Smoke Alliance had declared war several times over. Their main targets were Zhang Yang's three Territories. They did not care at all. They slaughtered every single player from other guilds as well, as long as they came out of any of the Territories.

Zhang Yang's highest input of his income in 'God's Miracle' came from the Teleportation Circles of the Territories. Zhong Xiu Hua was attempting to disrupt most of Zhang Yang's income. However, his action had wrought unforeseen circumstances on him. He had underestimated the wrath of the players in the game. Well, it was true that players were not able to fight the Anti Lone Desert Smoke when they were low in numbers. However, how many players were there in the entire China Region then?

2,000,000,000!

Other than those players who were Level 50 and below, the rest of the players, especially those who had reached beyond Level 100 in China Region would need to access the Teleportation Circle of the three Territories. Because they could only use the Teleportation Circles in Sauron's Castle and Morning Town, they could only travel to those two places before venturing to other places.

Well, they did not mind much after they are killed once or twice. However, it became personal after the players are killed over 4 to 5 times. That had really ignited the fury of the players. So, they joined forces and struck back at the Anti Lone Desert Smoke Alliance and kicked their \*sses bad! The players won because they had numbers. Millions of them would swarm up the Anti Lone Desert Smoke at the same time! On the other hand, the Anti Lone Desert Smoke only had hundreds of thousands of players. So, how

would they be able to hold their ground against the wrath of so many players?

Well, Zhang Yang did not even pay attention to those small issues. The second World League Championship was just around the corner. He needed to travel over to Hawaii together with Sun Xin Yu and the others to join the competition. So, he was busy preparing, instead of wasting his time on the Anti Lone Desert Smoke coalition.

By the end of January, Zhou Shu was still being bombarded by severe winter. However, Hawaii was warm most of the time. The scenery would be mesmerizing all the time. The place was full of foreign beauties in bikinis. Zhang Yang could not help to praise the place. When Fatty Han knew the 'truth', he felt an itch deep down in his heart. So, he also brought his wife-to-be along and traveled over to Hawaii with his own money. He claimed that he wanted to support Zhang Yang personally. However, the intention of a drunkard lies not on the wine, but on other purposes. Men would know.

Other than Lone Desert Smoke, the other parties from China Region which managed to get into the championship were naturally, Crimson Rage. Initially, Crimson rage and Imperial Sky had the same score in the previous competition. Crimson Rage managed to edge out in the end. So, they managed to enter the finals. Meanwhile, the contestants from other Regions were basically the same, back in the first World League Championship. Well, the only change was that the party of the Japan-Korea Region had been switched over with a new batch of players.

Zhang Yang did not pay much attention to it. With Lone Desert Smoke's current achievement, they should be able to sweep the ground clean and claim victory over anyone.

As usual, after the brief opening ceremony, the team leader from each party stood up to draw a number. They drew numbers to see who their opponents would be.



Zhang Yang and his party members were not concerned at all about which opponents they would have to encounter. Instead, they were looking at the final rewards of the competition. After all, that was the only thing they cared about the most, in the first place.

The reward for this season's championship was a little different from the previous season: The champion's party would acquire +3 levels, +3 Skill points and a total of 5,000,000 American Dollars. The runner-up party would acquire +2 levels, +2 Skill points and a total of 3,000,000 American Dollars. The party who wins the third place would acquire +1 levels, +1 Skill points and a total of 1,000,000 American Dollars.

Other than that, parties with 4-8 players would acquire one free Skill Point. Meanwhile parties with 9-16 players would acquire a +1 level reward.

In other words, the players could get free rewards just by joining the competition! That should be an encouragement given by the developers for those who managed to make it into the World League Championship.

Finally, one MVP player would be selected from the finals. That MVP would get a chance to draw lots for one extra reward. The rewards among the lots would include equipment, Skill Book, Magic Scrolls, Skill Point Crystals and many other valuable items!

After looking through the rewards, Zhang Yang and his gang tapped their chests to express their resolution to win. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er commanded Zhang Yang not intervene during the finals. She wanted to win the MVP title for herself!

From that night onwards, the opening match blew up.

Unlike the first World League Championship, Daffodil Daydream had acquired her Class A Soul Breaker Inheritance. By having it so, she finally removed the fact that she was the only one without an Inheritance on the party. Among the 7 of them, 3 of them had Class

S Inheritance, two of them had Class A Inheritance, and last but not least, two of them with Class B Inheritance. Therefore, Zhang Yang's party had an absolute advantage over the other parties in the championship.

However, because the championship forbids players to activate Skills that have a cooldown longer than half an hour, the power level of Felice, Phoenix pet and Red Dragon pet were nerfed by a notch. Furthermore, none of them could activate their Inheritance Transformation as well. Even though the additional damage of players with Class S Inheritance was just 10% more than the additional damage of players with Class A Inheritance, the players with Class S Inheritance would only be like having an additional Holy Tier equipment on them. Practically speaking, the difference might only be 5% or even 3% to 4%.

The important thing was that the difference between the HP amounts of the players was not that obvious. Everyone seemed to be using their equipment to boost their HP. So, there would not be a player with tens of millions of HP while the others only have about a million.

As the Champion of the first World League Championship, the Silky Soft Battle Team was the 'can opener' for the competition. Their first opponent was the Japan-Korea's Undying Souls. By the end of it, they managed to defeat the Undying Souls with the score of 5:0. It was an easy win. Zhang Yang and his party had exhibited their absolute power over the Undying Souls!

On the second day during the quarterfinals, Zhang Yang and his gang went up against the Saint Louise Battle Team from South America Region. They had once again triumphed over their opponents with the score of 5:0! Furthermore, Zhang Yang did not even take part in the match this time! The spectators were cheering and praising that the Silk Soft Battle Team was a little overly powerful! They were still so capable and powerful even though they put the most powerful player on their party on the

bench!

During the semifinals, Zhang Yang and his gang went up against the Steely Dang Battle Team from the India Region!

5:2! 6:3!

The Silky Soft Battle Team claimed another victory with a score of 2:0. Well, Hourglass Figure was equipped with a Class S Inheritance, after all. Meanwhile, there were another few players with Class A Inheritances on her battle team. So, they were able to perform very well in the one on one matches on the first round. They were able to win two matches in the first round. In the second round, they got the upper hand in their line-up. So, they managed to win 3 matches and prolonged the match to a team battle. However, they failed to defeat the Silky Soft Battle Team by the end as well.

In the finals, the Lone Desert Smoke went up against 'Philosopher Stone Battle Team' that had been 'reorganized'.

Well, this 'Philosopher Stone Battle Team' was actually a new team that the Justice League put up together. Now, they were using some new players on the team. The team included Heart of Destruction who had a Class S Inheritance.

That's right! The Dark Palace was only formed last year by March. Therefore, they could only survive in the Class B League Championship. They would need to participate in the qualification contest in order to see if they could make it into the Class A League Championship. However, the rules and restrictions of the World League Championship had a flaw that many would use to their own advantage. Players were free to change their team members before the match. Therefore, two teams decided to reform their teams as one. They arranged their roster accordingly so that they could assemble a new team filled with top Tier players. The better team would be taking part in the Class S League Championship while the weaker team would take part in the Class B League

Championship.

The two guilds did not merge together. They were just forming an alliance to join the World League Championship. After all, the system did not restrict nor set a limitation that the members of a party had to be from the same guild.

Both of the guilds involved were top Tier guilds from the North America Region. After forming up a strong battle team, they had over 6 players with Class A Inheritances, other than one player with a Class S Inheritance!

Actually, there were only 6 players with Class S Inheritance in the entire world. Furthermore, the Lone Desert Smoke had 3 on their side! Meanwhile, having 6 players with Class A Inheritance on their side made them much more powerful than Lone Desert Smoke in a sense --- Zhang Yang only knew about it later on. It seemed that this battle team did not only get powerful players to their side from Dark Palace, they had also acquired powerful players from some top Tier guilds from the North America Region. Their intention was very obvious, though. They wanted to join the forces of all guild in their own Region in order to claim victory over the World League Championship as one team!

Meanwhile, they had accumulated enough strength to do it. In the semifinals, they managed to eliminate Crimson Rage Battle Team with ease by scoring a final score of 2:1. They scored 5:1 in the first round and 5:2 in the second round. By doing so, the lady army of the Crimson Rage had once again lost before they could get into the finals.

On January 22, 7 p.m, the finals for the second World League Championship was about to begin. The third in place and the fourth in place competed against each other for the consolation prizes. The lady army of the Crimson Rage Battle Team had given them their best. However, they were no match for the Steely Dang Battle Team. So, they had to accept the fact that they had lost and endure the pain of being ranked as number four in the second

World League Championship.

At 9 p.m, the final battle between the Silky Soft Battle Team and the Philosopher Stone Battle Team.

With the anchor of the night cried out the signal, the first round of the match had finally begun. The first match was Hundred Shots vs Captain America!

"Noob tank, will uncle Hundred Shots win?" Wei Yan Er blinked her large eyes and said. She hoped that the first round would end with a score of 5:0. If that could happen, Zhang Yang would not need to join the battle. Then, she would still stand a chance to win the MVP title to herself.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "By the aspect of skills and power level, I would say Hundred Shots is at a disadvantage there. Take a look. He only has a Class B Inheritance. He would fall back when going up against a player with a Class A Inheritance. However, Hundred Shots is Level 170 now. His Red Dragon has just been improved to Holy Tier pet! Hehe, I would say that it's going to be tough for the opponent to battle a Red Dragon in the arena!"

"Then, it is possible that uncle Hundred Shots can win?" Wei Yan Er was filled with joy.

"Well, he should at least have a 70% chance!" Zhang Yang nodded and said.

As the preparation period has ended, the match between Hundred Shots and Captain America had finally begun!

While standing in the middle of the arena, everyone was forbidden from sitting on their mounts. However, Hundred Shots was a Hunter. So he had the natural ability to let his pet tag along his side. The Red Dragon could be used as a pet and also as a mount. The appearance of this red 'gem' had really got a lot of attention in the arena. Many people were staring at the dragon with envious intent. Some of them simply admired it wordlessly.

[Red Dragon] (Holy Tier Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 170

HP: 1,277,730

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,086 – 200,086 (Based on Physical Attack, however, causes Chaos Damage. Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Judging from the aspect of DPS normal attack, the Red Dragon was much more powerful than Zhang Yang! However, because the Red Dragon did not have any offensive Skills that could deal immense damage to the target, it could only deal a total DPS of 850,000!

Captain America was currently in deep sh\*t now!

# Chapter 766: Retaining the title as the Champions

---

As the captain of the Philosopher Stone Battle Team, Captain America was very eager to win the first match in an attempt to raise the morale of his newly formed battle team. Furthermore, he would be able to solidify his position as the captain of the battle team!

Because their Battle Team was sponsored by the Philosopher Stone Holdings, he still had a certain level of authority when it came to the setting up of the battle team. However, if his performance was not as good as Heart of Destruction, then he might get replaced by Heart of Destruction at some point!

After all, a captain with a Class S Inheritance would be more capable of encouraging the party members or team members!

However, he had a great problem to solve right before him if he ever wants to win. The Red Dragon pet!

Captain America was screaming and cursing deep in his heart. How could he be so unlucky to have encountered a Holy Tier pet! What the f\*ck! Fortunately for him, his main target was not the Red Dragon Pet. He only needed to make sure the player is dead in order to win. If he is able to kill the player, it would no longer matter if the pet was Holy Tier or even Celestial Tier!

The moment the battle began, Captain America charged towards Hundred Shots with large steps. His objective was clear as crystal. If he could just stick himself by the side of Hundred Shots throughout the battle, he would be able to unleash his full power on Hundred Shots. Well, all he needed to do was to kill Hundred Shots before the Red Dragon kills him!

However, ever since Hundred Shots got his Red Dragon pet, he had been training with Fatty Han to acquire a special tactic that

only the both of them could use. He would rely on his pet to deal damage to his opponent while he kites his opponent around! Furthermore, it had been quite a long time since he first got his Red Dragon pet. He was extremely familiar with the tactic by now!

{Concussive Shots}!

Hundred Shots immediately used a Skill to reduce Captain America's movement speed. Meanwhile, his Red Dragon pet took a few steps towards Captain America and spat out a stream of Dragon Breath at him. The flames reached out to 15 meters further into the surroundings. At the same time, Hundreds Shot began to run away from Captain America as swiftly as he could.

Meanwhile, Captain America was standing at a distance that was just enough to use {Charge} on the Red Dragon pet. After giving it some thought, Captain America immediately activated his {Charge} and clashed into the Red Dragon. He managed to stun the Red Dragon, so now he could pursue Hundred Shots uninterrupted. Without wasting any of the time he bought for himself, Captain America activated his {Heroic Leap} and leaped straight over to Hundred Shots. Hundred Shots was stomped and stunned for 3 seconds!

Raising up his axe, Captain America began to attack Hundred Shots as intensely as he could.

1 second later, the Red Dragon pet had recovered from the Stun Effect. It immediately turned towards Captain America and spat its Dragon Breath at him without holding back at all.

Hundred Shots did not falter. He activated his Accessory to acquire the Invincibility effect and canceled the Stun Effect on him. Then, he continued to run away. Meanwhile, Captain America followed him closely from behind. He did not want to give Hundred Shots any chance of getting away. Under the bombardment of the Red Dragon, his Rage bar was full. The moment the Invincibility effect on Hundred Shots faded, he would



be able to afflict Hundred Shots with his {Thunder Strike}.

{Breaking Shot}!

Hundred Shots sent Captain America into a state of confusion. As long as he does not cause any damage to Captain America, Captain America would have to stay still for 4 seconds! It was a great opportunity for Hundred Shots to gain some distance between the two of them.

Captain America quickly activated his Accessory as well. He also entered a state of Invincibility. However, his reason of doing so was totally different from Hundred Shots'. He wanted to get as close to Hundred Shots as possible!

At the same time, the Red Dragon had stopped its assaults on Captain America. It stopped to prevent itself from dealing ineffective attacks on the opponent while he was still invincible. It would be a waste if the Red Dragon attacks Captain America before the Invincibility Effect fades.

One of them was pursing, while the other was escaping!

10 seconds later, the Invincibility effect on Hundred Shots had vanished. However, he leaped into the air and jumped away from Captain America all of a sudden. At the same instant, Captain America's {Charge} was still under cooldown. So he could only run like hell with his feet in attempt to push Hundred Shots into a corner.

Another 2 seconds later, the invincibility effect on Captain America had vanished as well. Not only he had to endure the Dragon Breath of the Red Dragon, he would need to take on the {Leap Shot} that Hundred Shots shoot at him from time to time. So the rate of reduction on his HP bar was extremely fast.

Captain America quickly took out his potions and gulped it down. Then he proceeded on to push Hundred Shots to a corner.

It was the most popular tactic that a hunter would use in hunting

down a prey. As long as he could force the target to a dead corner, Captain America could activate his {Charge} to counter Hundred Shots's {Leap Shot}. At the same time, he could reserve his {Warrior's Will} to rid of any status restriction effect on him just in case. As long as he could perform a series of explosive attacks on Hundred Shots, he should be able to kill Hundred Shots in no time.

However, Hundred Shots was no ordinary Hunter as well. The main reason was because he had a Legendary pet with him! The damage dealt by the Red Dragon was just too damn high! Even though Captain America had over 650,000 HP, he would only be able to endure 4 attacks from the Red Dragon without dying after that. He would not be able to hold on longer than a few seconds even after he used potions or any Recovery Skills!

His only chance was to instantly kill Hundred Shots. If he couldn't do that, he would have to accept the fate that the Red Dragon was going to f\*ck him up for good!

However, anything would be too late by now. His Charge would need 30 seconds to cool down. That amount of time was enough for him to pay with his life!

1:0 Silky Soft Battle Team won the first match of the finals!

The second match would have Daffodil Daydream versus Wonder Woman! It was a battle between two Spellcasters!

Both of them were Pyromancers. So, the both of them began to deal as much damage as they could to each other. However, they were also using ranged attacks, Frost defensive and Frost offensive Skills on each other. They were also be comparing their skills and control of their Status Restriction Skills in the battle! So it was really very difficult to tell whether which one of them had the advantage over the other. However, Daffodil Daydream managed to rely on the advantage she had on her equipment and defeated her opponent by the end of the battle!

2:0 Silky Soft Battle Team continued to show the advantage they

had over their opponent battle team.

The third match would have Sun Xin Yu versus Holy Zealots.

This Holy Zealots was a Guardian who had a Class A Inheritance. Theoretically speaking, his Class should be oppressive over Sun Xin Yu's Class, Thief. However, Sun Xin Yu had reached the pinnacle in the art of assassination. Her {Eagle Eye} had made her even more powerful than ever! She only activated her {Ambush} twice before taking out her opponent with ease!

3:0 Silky Soft Battle Team was unstoppable!

However, the fourth match was Lost Dream versus Heart of Destruction who was one of the top Tier players!

Even though the first {Ambush} that Lost Dream activated managed to reduce a quarter of Heart of Destruction's HP bar, but Heart of Destruction did not give Lost Dream a second chance to do it again! He unleashed the full potential of his Class S Inheritance and ended Lost Dream's life shortly after that!

3:1 Philosopher Stone Battle Team managed to win back a match for themselves. Poor Lost Dream was the first to taste defeat among Zhang Yang's gang. He knelt on the ground to reflect on the mistakes he did during the battle.

Truth to be told, the two of them had almost the same capability in the aspect of skills and controls. However, when a player with Class B Inheritance battles another player with a Class S Inheritance, the difference would become very obvious. The additional damage that a player with a Class S Inheritance had would be much greater. For instant, Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} could provide Zhang Yang an additional 300% Melee Attack. Meanwhile the {Dark Vengeance} could only provide 250% additional attack. So when it came down to a Class B Inheritance, Lost Dream only received 200% additional attack on his Inheritance Skills.

These Skills had over 1 minute of cooldown. It would not affect much if the players were dealing damage to their target over a long period of time. However, the difference between the Attack power of the Skills would become very obvious when players needed to nuke a target over a brief period of time!

So Lost Dream did not lose because he did some sort of mistake.

The fifth match was Han Ying Xue versus Saint's Descendent. With her super healing capabilities, she managed to torture the Hunter to death!

4:1 Silky Soft Battle Team had done it again!

On the sixth match, it was finally Wei Yan Er's turn. Her opponent was Duke Marlogia, a Holy Knight.

Well, {Destructive Smash} naturally weakens the effect of Healing Efficiency. Furthermore, the little brat was insane. She could deal a tremendous amount of damage to her opponent over a brief period of time. Plus, she also had her Gold Tier Servant aiding her in battle. She acted like a tornado and took out her opponent like it was nothing.

5:1, The first round of the match was firmly won by the Silky Soft Battle Team. Zhang Yang did not even get the chance to show off his skills in the arena yet!

The two sides handed in the line-up list to the organizer. The second round of the match would begin after a 10-minute break.

However, although the Philosopher Stone Battle Team had done a lot of changes to their line up, they were not able to change the fact that the Silky Soft Battle Team had the uttermost advantage over them. The Philosopher Stone Battle Team managed to score 2:4 where they were still losing. On the 7th match, no one even think that the Philosopher Stone Battle Team would stand any chance at all at prolonging the match to the 8th match, the Team Battle. The reason was simple. Their opponent for the 7th match

was Zhang Yang!

It was a total oppression on the Philosopher Stone Battle Team. The battle ended within 10 seconds. Silky Soft Battle Team was able to win the second round of the match by scoring 5:2. With a final score of 2:0. Silky Soft Battle Team had become the Champion of the World League Championship once again!

Naturally, the money was wired into Zhang Yang's account first. As for the reward of +level and +Skill Points, they would be automatically received by the players when they sign into the game after the competition. After a long debate and voting, the MVP in the finals was --- Han Ying Xue!

The committees stated their reasons well. Han Ying Xue was a Healer. However, she managed to win two crucial matches. Furthermore, she had shown everyone her extraordinary skills in healing. 55% of the committee and the audiences supported Han Ying Xue as the new MVP. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu got 42% support from the others. As for Zhang Yang, it was unfortunate that he was totally ignored by everyone. Well, he only get to battle for one match after all.

After declaring who was the new MVP, Wei Yan Er was deeply hurt. She squatted down and began to draw circles with her finger in resentment. She cursed the committees for being blinded by Han Ying Xue's huge pair of titties.

Han Ying Xue went up to stage to receive the special reward for winning the MVP title. The digital screen began to flash on. After a brief moment the screen stopped on an item --- [Book of Revelation: Chapter 6]!

Zhang Yang screamed in joy. He waited Han Ying Xue to come back before he gave Han Ying Xue and passionate kiss as her reward for bringing back such a reward for him. Sun Xin Yu was so envious that she was cracking her knuckles while humphing on.

Although the competition was over, Zhang Yang and his gang did

not go back to their country immediately. Instead, they decided to stay back to have a few days rest in Hawaii. Since no one was in the mansion now, there was no reason for them to rush back home. As for Hundred Shots, he also brought his family over after the competition. Then he introduced his wife and two children to the gang. Well, he had a son and a daughter.

Until the third day of the new year, everyone had finally packed up their things and ended their vacation in Hawaii. Then, they went back to Zhou Shu together.

To make sure that they really had a good vacation, none of them logged into the game during their vacation. Therefore, when Zhang Yang logged back into the game, he immediately received system notification. A golden light flashed across his entire body and he became Level 177! Furthermore, he received 3 additional Skill Points.

Zhang Yang added all 3 additional Skill Points onto his {Force Strike}. Currently, his {Force Strike} was Level 5. So, he could have a 50% rate of activating an additional attack.

It would only be 3 levels before Zhang Yang reaches Level 180. By then, he should be the first player who equips the first Ascended Tier equipment in the entire game. That would be awesome, don't you think? However, he would need to cross over the threshold of Level 179 before that happens. Well, Level 179 was like a curse to Zhang Yang. He was really worried that everything would be reset back to square one again after he reaches that level.

Zhang Yang tapped his cheeks for a little bit and cheered back up. Then, he entered a whole new map called the Marlin's Land of Salt.

This was a map that he never step foot onto before in his previous life. The entire land was white and sandy. There was no sign of any green. The ground was made of layers of crystals that looked like ice blocks. Zhang Yang had to walk carefully on them.

Or else, he would fall his face to the ground.

However, there were also some plants in the surroundings. The plants in the area were frosty white. They looked extremely bizarre. They blended into the land of salt very well. It was really hard for one to see them clearly. Well, Zhang Yang was not worried at all. He could just let his Herb Foraging Familiar out into the wild to do its job, collecting the herbs. As long as Zhang Yang is willing to pay the summoning fee, he would be able to collect herbs from this map.

Zhang Yang was flying through the sky while observing the situation down on the ground of the map. He could not find any signs of life at all. He did not see anything moving down there!

Zhang Yang descended closer to the ground and glided on the back of his Flying Mount. Just when everything was peaceful, suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud rumbling sound echoing across his ears. A gigantic, sharp leg broke through the surface of the salt crystals and struck straight towards Zhang Yang's chest like a spear!

In a flash, Zhang Yang's body reacted to the danger before him. He raised his shield up immediately to block the attack! A loud bang was heard. That gigantic sharp leg was deflected back.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The salt crystals in the surroundings were beginning to crack and creak. A gigantic monster drilled itself straight out of the surface of the ground. It was a gigantic scorpion! This frosty white scorpion was just gigantic! There were no other words to describe it! Its long and gigantic scorpion tail was so white that it looked transparent! The tip of the tail was so sharp that anyone who sees it would feel an intense chill up their spines!

Something crawled out of the cracks on the salt crystals. Zhang Yang took a closer look at the little things that were crawling out of the cracks. There were countless baby scorpions gushing out

from the cracks all around! They were so abundant that they looked like trails of liquid flowing out, covering the ground in the surroundings!

People would usually say that someone has stirred the hornet's nest. Well, Zhang Yang had definitely stirred the Scorpion's nest!



# Chapter 767: Marlin's Land of Salt

---

[Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 190

HP: 9,500,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,871 – 126,871

Skills:

[Pincer]: Uses its gigantic pincers to clamp target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Tail Sting]: Uses its sharp, venomous tail to attack the target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The target will suffer 60,000 Nature Damage for the next 6 seconds.

Note: Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion is the dominators of the land around here. Because their food source is extremely limited, they will usually hibernate beneath the surface of the ground and wait for the right moment to ambush their preys.

Other than that Elite Tier giant scorpion, the other smaller scorpions were just Normal Tier. However, each of those little tiny scorpions could actually deal damage, ranging from 46,523 to 66,523 damage! They were capable of penetrating Zhang Yang's Defence with that kind of Attack power. So, Zhang Yang had no intention of letting the little ones get near him!

However, if he could take care of the entire 'nest' of scorpions that erupted from beneath the ground, he would be able to earn tremendous amount of Experience Points. So should he do it?

Zhang Yang commanded Phoenix pet to make their first move. The Phoenix pet began to spit flames, torching up the little scorpions and the giant scorpion in the surroundings. Damage values of approximately '180,000' consecutively popped right on

top of the closely packed little scorpions and the big one. After all, the little ones only had 250,000 HP on each of them. So, they were all burnt to the point that they were all screeching in misery.

Meanwhile, Felice was not standing idly by the side. She was also showing off her strength alongside the Phoenix pet as well. Upon transforming into her Dragonhawk form, she was spreading Fire Damage across the monsters in an attempt to aid the Phoenix pet. After the Phoenix pet's attacks, the little ones were only left with 70,000 HP. Coming into contact with Felice's explosively deadly attacks, the little ones were wiped out clean.

After the two waves of attacks that killed tens of scorpions in the surroundings, the female giant scorpion was infuriated. It reached out with its gigantic pincers and got a hold of the Phoenix pet. Then, it pulled the blazing bird down with its might strength and slammed the phoenix pet onto the ground heavily! Bam! The salt rocks were smashed into pieces. White, powdery salt pebbles were flying everywhere due to the incredible impact of the slam. Zhang Yang could feel that pain when the pebbles struck his face.

Zhang Yang quickly hopped off the back of Phoenix pet. Then, he whirled his scythe around and accumulated enough rage points to unleash hell on the monsters. He stomped both of his legs steadily on the ground. A visible shockwave immediately spread out from his body in all directions. All salt rocks that was within the area of 3-meter radius were reduced to dust. Meanwhile, the little scorpions that got too near to Zhang Yang were afflicted with a damage of '-58,841!'. Every single one of them was also afflicted by movement speed reduction effect.

The Phoenix pet spat out another stream of flame across the scorpions and caused another wave of immense damage to the little crawlers again. Zhang Yang gave no quarter to them at all. He activated his {Blast Wave} closely after the Phoenix's attack and wiped them out.

However, there were still more than 200 little crawlers

remaining. They were gushing towards Zhang Yang like a fierce tidal wave. Meanwhile, the gigantic mother scorpion was continuously spamming its {Pincer} and {Tail Sting} on Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet. However, even though the Attack power of the mother scorpion was much higher than the Attack power of each little scorpion, the number of the baby scorpions was too damn many! The threat that they posed to Zhang Yang when they came at him at the same time would be much worse than the threat that the single mother could pose to him!

{Shield Wall}!

Zhang Yang activated his life-saving Skills immediately. Well, he could actually use this Skill once every 2 and a half minutes. So, there was no reason for him to hold back on using that Skill. He hopped back onto the Phoenix pet and shared the perk of activating his {Shield Wall} with Phoenix pet. He carried forward his plan to annihilate the scorpion's nest. He swung his scythe in the battlefield valiantly. Meanwhile, Phoenix pet and Felice were aiding him in his cause, killing the scorpions one after another, cleansing the surroundings with their insane waves of attacks.

The Phoenix's single attack could averagely deal 180,000 damage to the little ones. It only took a brief moment for the Phoenix to empty out the HP bars of the little scorpions! Furthermore, its flaming tongue could reach out to 15 meters in range. Because of that, the Phoenix could cover quite a lot of ground with its attacks. So, that was the power of a Legendary Tier pet when it came to dealing AoE attacks!

When the 10-second {Shield Wall} vanished, the little ones were completely wiped out. The only monster that remained was the gigantic mother scorpion. She was so infuriated that she began to charge at Zhang Yang with all her might. Her attacks were so intense that the salt rocks in the entire area were smashed into bits and the pebbles of the salt rocks were flying all over the place. The surroundings seemed to have been assaulted by a tornado

thunderstorm!

Well, a general without an army would basically be useless. Under the bombardment of Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet, the gigantic scorpion had to admit defeat eventually. She collapsed onto the ground heavily and stay dead. The impact of her collapsed had swept up the dust and pebbles of the salt rocks in the surroundings.

The Elite Tier monster did not drop anything too valuable. However, she did drop a bunch of [Scorpion Tails] and [Scorpion Pincers]. These items could only be sold to the NPCs in the shops for 1 to 2 silver pieces each. So, Zhang Yang did not want to waste his time picking them up. He continued to move forward.

Zhang Yang would encounter another gigantic Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion every time he proceeds forward for approximately 1,000 meters. However, not every Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion had baby scorpions. Some of them were just alone waiting for Zhang Yang to slay them. There was no telling which of the Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpions was a male or a female. There was no telling if these Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpions had the ability of giving birth to new baby scorpions as well. However, Zhang Yang was really happy whenever he encounters a Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion with many baby scorpions around. Well, it was because he could earn a tremendous amount of Experience Points by merely slaying the baby scorpions.

If this goes on without any unforeseen circumstances for another 3 days, Zhang Yang believed that he could reach Level 178 by then.

Unfortunately, dreams would always be great while reality is cruel as f\*ck!

After moving on for about 20 minutes, Frost Wolves began to reveal themselves across the salt land one after another. Their bodies were totally white to the point that they looked

transparent. The only visible part on their bodies were their pair of red eyes which seemed to be filled with the thirst for blood.

Zhang Yang came here for one simple reason, to earn Experience Points. So he did not go on to slaying the Frost Wolves. He turned back and headed east-west. Well, he was initially heading towards the direction of North-South. Well, he wanted to poke every single scorpion nest that he could find on the map!

Half a day had passed, Zhang Yang's Experience Bar had increased by a few blocks. Unfortunately, there were no longer any scorpion nests for him to poke. There was no telling when the scorpion nests would respawn.

So after knowing that, he was no longer picky. He would just slay anything that came in his way. He ventured across the white and endless land without an actual aim of where he wanted to go. After he started to lose track of time, Zhang Yang found himself arriving before a derelict palace.

This wreckage of a palace seemed to be abandoned long time ago. There was no one, no humans, no Spectres in the vicinity. The palace was basically empty. Other than a few dried corpses and remaining bones, there was nothing else. Obviously, the residents of the palace had left the palace on their own will. There was no bloodshed or whatsoever in the palace at all.

Zhang Yang had not found anything shiny in the vicinity of the palace. Well, it was obvious that there were no quests to be triggered here. Upon scanning the area for a little bit, he carried on with his grinding. A few hours had passed, Zhang Yang continued on slaying monsters without any rest. However, when he looked forward, he saw a bunch of greens far before him. As he got closer to the spot, he realized that he was approaching a forest!

The scenery of spotting a forest in the middle of a salt rock land was just magnificent! The feeling was like spotting a greenland in the middle of a desert! Zhang Yang was a little excited over what he

found. So, he quickly patted his pet and flew straight towards the forest. However, before he could descend down to the ground, he was greeted with a large number of arrows from the direction of the forest.

Although Zhang Yang attempted to block the arrows by raising his shield up, he was still shot by the arrows. Well, with the arrows stuck firmly on him, he looked like a hedgehog. Not only was his {Block} ineffective against the arrow attacks, he had also lost tens of thousands of his HP. Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang would never be bothered by that at all. After all, he already had over a million HP at the current stage of the game.

"Hey!" a voice was heard from the forest, "Why didn't you signal us earlier? I could have accidentally shoot you dead!"

After a brief moment, a young man, a human, walked right out of the forest and waved at Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Alright! I've disabled the defence mechanism of the place! You can come in now!"

[Joseph] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 185

HP: 237,730

Zhang Yang attempted to land again, As expected! This time, he was able to land without being greeted with a large number of arrows. He hopped off the back of phoenix pet and said, "So, you don't like guests, I assume?"

"We don't like those uninvited guests!" Joseph smiled. Then, he continued to speak, "For instance, did you see the Frost Wolves, Salt Tigers and the Curly Monsters while you were on your way here? Those beasts would have destroyed our home if we ever let them in! So, we decided to set up a defensive mechanism by the outskirts of the region. Well, to stop them from invading our home of course!"

Joseph looked at the Phoenix pet. He was mesmerized by the appearance of the phoenix. Then he said, "Outsider, is this mount for sale? I can give you ... two bottles of water!"

Two bottles of water to buy a Legendary pet? Zhang Yang felt the need to beat some sense into this idiot! However, seeing how the entire area was covered with salt rocks without any sign of river or water, maybe a drop of water would even be much more valuable than a ton of diamonds!

"Of course not! It's not up for sale!" Zhang Yang shook his head and kept Phoenix pet back in his inventory. The forest was quite thick, actually. It would not be appropriate for the big blazing bird to glide into the forest. Meanwhile, it would also be unwise to fly across the sky. Zhang Yang would never know what hit him if there were more traps or defensive mechanisms around the forest.

Joseph was very disappointed. The disappointment was written all over his face. However, he was quite an optimistic person. He became cheerful again after a brief moment. Then he said, "Outsider, what's your name? Where do you hail from?"

"Zhan Yu, from White Jade Castle!"

"White Jade what? Castle?" Joseph began muttering to himself. He was confused to hear what Zhang Yang just told him. Obviously, he had not heard of the place before. He scratched his head and said, "The Chief is out of the village, trying to understand the situation outside. He would be very pleased to see you! Zhan Yu, please follow me!"

‘Ding! Joseph has given you a quest: Referral! Will you accept?’

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and followed Joseph into the forest. Meanwhile, the young man noticed the existence of Felice. He was mesmerized by the appearance of Felice as well. He expressed that he was willing to give 10 bottles of water as a gift of proposing to Felice. By the end of it, Zhang Yang gave him a solid slap on his face and he fell facedown.

The village that Joseph came from was not far. Well, the forest was not really huge, to begin with. Joseph, Zhang Yang, and Felice had arrived at a small village after a brief while of walking. The village was filled with women and children. There was no sign of any men in the village. According to Joseph, the men had gone out to hunt. Meanwhile, he was still one month away from becoming a real man. So he was only posted to guard the outpost by the outskirts of the forest.

The buildings and facilities in the village were built with woods and sticks. It almost felt like the place was a primitive tribe's village. Well, if it wasn't because of the outside world being in total chaos, this place would be a very good place for a vacation.

The three of them arrived before a small wooden cottage. After Joseph knocked the door a few times over, he opened the door and invited Zhang Yang to enter as well.

There was an old man inside the cottage. The old man was carrying the name 'Chief Hushma'. He was holding a walking stick. He appeared to be very old and clumsy.

After Joseph had introduced Zhang Yang to the Chief, Hushma began to speak, "Outsider, how did you manage to come in here? According to my knowledge, the beasts out there are ferocious!"

"My respected Chief, he has a big bird! A very very very big big bird!" Joseph immediately spoke in excitement, trying to explain to the Chief.

"Huh?" Hushma widened his eyes and said, "So outsider, does that mean you can fly in the sky?"

"Yes, I can!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"That's great!" Hushma knocked his walking stick against the ground as he spoke in excitement. Then he said, "Outsider, we are in dire need of water. Water is the one thing that we need the most now! However, our water supplies are extremely limited! Well,



there isn't much rain here. Furthermore, the nearby lakes have been turned into salt! So, we can't use the water anymore. We can only rely on morning dew to preserve our lives here. Although we know that there is a lake that has not been contaminated located by the west side of our village, there are countless deadly monsters roaming in between our village and the lake. So all we can do is to stare at the lake from afar!"

He looked at Zhang Yang with his eyes filled of hope, "Please bring us some clean water! We shall pay you a handsome reward... erm... erk ---" After seeing how the village was doing, Zhang Yang could deduce that clean water was the most valuable thing they could offer. There was simply nothing of the same value that could replace the clean water. So, the Chief immediately started faltering.

The Chief gave it some thought and said, "I can give you the one sword that has been passed down for generations, the 'Kingcross's Sword,' as the reward!"

# Chapter 768: Searching for Water

---

"But chief!" Joseph reacted almost immediately. "The Kingcross's Sword is a holy sword handed down to us by our forefathers. How can we simply gift it to an outsider?"

"Desperate times call for desperate measures! This draught is getting worse with each passing day, do you wish to see our villagers die of thirst?" Hushma spoke with such anger that his whiskers shook. He then calmed himself down and said in a softer tone, "And besides, the holy sword is incomplete. Holding on to only a piece of it is of no use to us!"

"A wise decision, chief!" Joseph instantly buttered up to Hushma instead.

Zhang Yang who watched the conversation taking place in front of him was speechless. If this was an anime, he would have streaks of black lines going down his head.

Hushma then turned and faced Zhang Yang. "So, how about it, stranger? If you bring us enough water to survive this draught, I'll give you the Kingcross Holy Sword that our village has kept for generations!"

"Ding! Chief Hushma has a quest for you: Searching for Water. Will you accept it?"

To be honest, even if the quest did not give him any sort of reward, Zhang Yang would have still taken it nonetheless. After all, having an active quest will make hunting mobs a lot easier. But most of all, it is a sure way of encountering a BOSS monster instead of having to run around, waiting for random encounters.

ACCEPT!

"Ding! You have obtained: Flask x 100."

[Searching for Water] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Village Chief Hushma has requested that you search for freshwater to help the village survive the dreadful draught! However, this task will not be easy, and you will be facing a lot of dangers on your journey. Please be careful! According to Hushma, there is a freshwater lake located at the peak of Spirit Stone Mountain, to the west of the village.

Progress: Freshwater accuired 0/100

Quest Reward: Kingcross' Sword Piece

[Kingcross' Sword Fragment] (Special Item)

Item Description: Combine seven Kingcross' Sword Pieces with Heavy Smithing to complete the Kingcross' Sword.

The quest did not introduce or explain what the Kingcross' Sword is capable of, and it was obviously not another assembled equipment since it has already been stated that it was a "special item".

Well, whatever. Let's first get this quest over with!

Zhang Yang stepped out of the wooden hut and summoned his pet Phoenix, and under the envious and awe-struck gazes of Joseph and Hushma, he mounted and took off through the skies at blinding speeds.

Riding on the back of his pet Phoenix, Zhang Yang flew west. Although it was stated that Spirit Stone Mountain was not far away from the village, the fact that he took almost two hours of continuous flight before finally having the mountain in his sights proved otherwise! However, this was to be expected. If the water source was close to the village, the villagers would not have needed his help and could have acquired water easily themselves.

The mountain itself was not huge, but had a lake some ten metres wide at the top of it. The water was crystal clear, and occasionally, its surface rippled, caused by billowing mountain winds.

Zhang Yang dismounted from his phoenix and walked up to the lake. But before he can retrieve the flasks from his inventory, a horde of black bulls with green symbols on their backs appeared out of nowhere and charged at him! The bulls moved to surround him while they and stamped and clomped their hooves on the ground, kicking up grass and dirt. The horde closed in on him in a menacing manner, with black flames flaring from their snouts whenever they snorted!

[Wild Bull of Death] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 185

HP: 9,250,000

Defense: 11570

Melee Damage: 81,566-121,566

Skills:

[Wild Charge]: Rushes towards an enemy target at great speed and stuns the target for 3 seconds as well as dealing 50,000 physical damage. Effective Distance: 3 – 10 meters.

[Flames of Death]: Spits the black flames of death which reduces the enemy target's HP by 10%, but not more than 100,000 each attack. Effective range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 30 seconds. If the enemy target is out of range, Flames of Death has no cooldown.

Note: Although not the strongest beasts of Marlin's Land of Salt, these Wild Bulls of Death come in great numbers together, enough to frighten off any other monster that approaches them! Be advised, do not ever taunt or challenge a group of these bulls, unless you are looking for death!

"MOO!" One of the bulls signaled to attack, and some ten or so other bulls aimed their horns at Zhang Yang and charged.

So many of them!

Zhang Yang could not fly off at this point, because he would have

to deal with their Flames of Death if he did! With this many of them attacking him at once, the damage he will have to take will be in the millions! And even with his shield wall up, that's still not enough!

Having decided to take up this quest to retrieve water for the village, Zhang Yang realized that he would have to deal with these bulls either way, and thus there was no point in running. He has to fight them!

Having decided on that, he activated his phoenix's skills!

The Phoenix screeed, and its whole body grew in size. Its purple and red feathers glistened with a captivating glow, making it appear strong and majestic!

At level 177, his pet phoenix had a base health of 1,278,060 points. But with the boosts from his {Vitality Aura} and Phoenix's Transformation it now has a max health of over 36,000,000! This number is already on par with Han Ying Xue after he transforms! And that's also because Han Ying Xue has an S class inheritance! This demonstrates just how important having good items is!

BAM! BAM! BAM!

The bulls used their {Wild Charge} and attacked Zhang Yang, taking a huge chunk off his health bar and stunning him for 3 seconds! But despite being stunned, Zhang Yang did not debuff himself with {Warriors Will} just yet. He wanted to wait for the whole mob to step into his melee range first, instead of getting repetitively stunned again and again.

{Flames of Death}!

The bulls then unleashed their fiery attack unto Zhang Yang, each one attack taking off 100,000 points from his health! Health reduction attacks like these are similar to Forbidden Scrolls, they are not subject to armor or damage reductions, and even ignores invincibility!

As soon as the last of the bulls finished its charge and entered melee range, Zhang Yang finally activated the {Warriors Will} and dispelled the stun, and with a quick Sweep from his Scythe, the weapon collected blood off the first bull it struck, and he quickly activated {Horizontal Sweep} to cleave at the mob! Due to the expanded size of the Phoenix Transformation, the Wild Bulls of Death could easily attack Zhang Yang, but were also easily in the range of his attack.

-389,923!

-402,344!

-873,322!

...

Rows and rows of numbers kept popping up, informing him of the damage being dealt. Each attack alone dealt up to 380,000 points of damage, but when there is a critical strike, the damage output jumps up to 900,000! And even though {Horizontal Sweeps} does not have any armor piercing properties, in a group of mobs like this, the damage potential is still very huge!

Swiping once every ten seconds, as long as uninterrupted, was currently his best AOE damage ability. Especially due to its low cooldown!

With this kind of damage, even the bulls and their 9,000,000 plus health points could not last for long. Angry MOOs echoed through the air, and they charged again at the Phoenix.

Zhang Yang dared not dismount from his pet. He was relying on the health buffs it gave to survive. And so, he limited his attacks to only {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep}. {Thunder Strike} required that he dismount to use, and that was too risky for him.

As it is, his single target attack damage may be very high, but it is still not as much as the cumulative damage from one {Horizontal Strike}! After all, the {Horizontal Strike} was originally a strong

single target attack skill itself.

9 seconds later, Zhang Yang used {Charge Up Strike}.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

-1150928!

-1352928!

-1286720!

...

This time, the {Horizontal Sweep} was much more devastating. After being boosted by {Charge Up Strike}, not only were his attacks all critical, the damage had also been increased by 50%!

If any other player were to see Zhang Yang's attack damage right now, they would definitely wrap their hands around their faces and scream in disbelief! More than 1,000,000 damage per hit from an AOE skill! Not even a player with a 99% completed Inheritance Transformation could pull that off!

But in all actuality, not all AOE skills are boosted by the player's Inheritance Transformations. In Zhang Yang's God of War Transformation, for example, {God of War's Crushing Strike} could be considered as a pure and as his best AOE skill, but the damage potential that it has is only as much as 10 times of his strength, and without the buffs from {Strength Aura}, it could only deal as much as 19,000 damage per target, half of what {Horizontal Sweep} can do!

But considering the fact that {God of War's Crushing Blow} has an AOE of up to 50 meters, and cannot be canceled or evaded, it could potentially deal more damage in total than {Horizontal Sweep} if there were a lot more mobs in the area!

Due to the significant increase in size of the Phoenix, the bulls that were surrounding him became more well-spaced apart. The flames coming from the Phoenix's attacks are in a cone, it is also

dealing additional damage, but only in the direction that it is facing. Thus, only a sixth of the bulls are affected by the phoenix's flame attacks.

But after activating the {Phoenix Transformation}, its damage had also increased by many folds. Each simple attack it does is already at 300,000 damage, already at the same level of {Horizontal Sweeps}! Coupled with Felice's flame, the health bars of the entire horde of Wild Bulls of Death keep dropping so fast, and very soon, they started dying to the damage.

That was somewhat to be expected. Zhang Yang had already activated the {Phoenix Transformation}. If Zhang Yang could still not demolish this mob, that would have been weird!

POW!

Finally, the last remaining bull fell, the battle is finally over! It was a shame that Zhang Yang was not a Skin Flayer, or the leather of these bulls would have brought him a small fortune!

What an utter waste!

Zhang Yang shook his head. He then retrieved the flasks from his inventory and started to fill them with water from the lake.

With each flask filled, the progress bar of his quest slowly rose. And as soon as he finished filling all the 100 flasks, he had completed the quest.

The Phoenix transformation could still last for a while more, and Zhang Yang did not want that to go to waste. He started roaming the area and cleared the remaining mobs before returning to the village and reporting to Village Chief Hushma.

Seeing Zhang Yang bringing out flasks and more flasks filled with freshwater made the whole village exclaim in excitement, they all now idolized Zhang Yang as their hero. Their hunting expedition had also just returned, and thus, a bonfire was lit up in the village with a Trunk Boar being roasted on it. The fragrant aroma of



roasted meat flowed through the whole forest.

Zhang Yang took out the Kingcross' Sword Piece that he had just received from completing the quest. It is only a small blade fragment of the actual sword, and until he finds and combines them all, this item had no use whatsoever to him. Since it was not a weapon or a quest item, it was absolute junk to him right now!

Well. Whatever. Just put it aside for now.

Zhang Yang sat next to Hushma and was enjoying a nice piece of roasted meat. "Living out here is not easy, why haven't you all thought about moving away?"

"That's easier said than done!" Hushma shook his head as he replied. "For one, the village has been here for many generations, not many of them are willing to move. Secondly, the salt plain is filled with various dangers! Twenty years ago, we tried moving the village once. But just one third into our migration, and we have already lost one-quarter of the villagers, and all of those who died were men! If we had continued moving that time, we would have all succumbed to the wilderness. And so, we came back!"

# Chapter 769: Exterminating the Z'orlak Orcs

---

Zhang Yang did not stay long in the village, there were already no more quests left for him here. But he did ask Hushma more about the Kingcross' Sword before he left. He wanted to know about the sword's history, as well as the whereabouts of the other pieces.

However, Hushma was not able to answer his questions about the sword as it has been handed down in the village for generations, its lore already lost to time. But he did, however, imparted a very interesting piece of information to him: This land was not always this filled with salt crystals! It was once a lushful and green land, filled with life!

But for reasons no longer known to men, the land became dried up with salt. Most of the people who once lived here have sought to move away from the salt and towards places with freshwater, deep inside the forests. However, that decision has made them a prisoner of sorts, for when wild beasts started to adapt to the new environment as well, the human's area of activity became severely limited, restraining their growth as a race.

The ruins which Zhang Yang saw on the salted plains on his way here, were proof of Hushma's tale. It is such a shame, that they were unable to restore themselves to the glory they once had.

Hushma also revealed that the village's history can be traced all the way back in history as being descendants of royalty! When their ancestors left the palace generations ago, they each had a piece of the Kingcross' Sword with them. But they all scattered all across the land after the great migration, and with that, the sword fragments as well.

Following the clues given by the village chief, Zhang Yang headed in the Northwest direction. And after several hours of traveling, he finally arrived at the ruins of a stone palace. The corrosion caused

by the salt here was terrible, and there were not much of the ruins left as well. Most of the stone walls have been terribly corroded by the wind, leaving scars on them, telling of their ever-losing battle with time.

However, there were still people here! Unlike Hushma's tribe who ventured deep into the forest generations ago, these people stayed on simply because there was a small freshwater lake in the middle of the ruins, untainted by the salt.

Before Zhang Yang could even dismount, he saw a long line of darkness on the horizon. The line gradually grew bigger and closer, and he could finally see that they were a large number of orcs riders on frost wolves. The orcs bared their sharp fangs and waved their battle axes, while they howled battle cries and charged at the ruined city.

"ENEMY INCOMING!" Scouts rang through the ancient city as hundreds of defenders with various kinds of weapons and armor appeared on the what's left of the city walls. But this was to be a losing battle for them, as the only ranged attack they could muster was from a few bowmen, they lacked the firepower of magic canons, and in terms of numbers, the orcs outnumber them 3 to 1!

Zhang Yang easily picked his side: The humans in the old palace had a green-friendly status on their names, while the orcs were red, signifying that they were the obvious enemy.

WHOOSH WHOOSH WHOOSH!

As soon as the orcs came into range, the defenders on the walls started firing arrows from their high ground. But against the naturally thick and hardened skin of the orcs, there was a very narrow limit to just how much damage they could do, and the orc invaders easily withstood their attacks.

Zhang Yang swept in between the two colliding forces on the battlefield, the brilliance of his Phoenix mount catching the attention of both the invaders and the defenders alike. Seeing that

he was also human, the defenders on the walls all looked expectantly at him. This man came riding on a Phoenix, he must be strong! From the orcs, however, came a chain of battle cries, as they momentarily stopped in their tracks before switching to attack Zhang Yang instead.

These orcs were merely normal monsters and number less than a thousand, thus they were of no threat to Zhang Yang. With the Scythe in his hand, coupled with his Phoenix's Flamethrower as well as Felice's flame, he made short work of the whole mob and gained a decent number of EXP in the process.

When the orcs have been thinned down to half their initial numbers, the defenders in the ruins charged out as well, but before they could even make it to the front lines, the battle has already ended! That was just how strong Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Phoenix were!

The human soldiers cheered and ushered their new hero into the city with the warmest and most sincere welcome they could give.

That night, the hosts lit a bonfire in the palace square and roasted good meat, and they also brought out their finest wine. Many young men and women danced to music around the fire, celebrating the glorious battle they witnessed during the day, and their new lease on life.

Zhang Yang sat right next to the castle lord, Lord Marvinus, during the banquet, signifying his standing with the city.

"Warrior, we are in your debt! Those wretched orcs have been constantly trying to seize control of this palace for the freshwater it holds inside. If it wasn't for your help today, I fear that we may have already perished to their brutality! Bwahahaha, we will definitely repay you for your act of kindness!" Marvinus said as he laughed heartily.

Zhang Yang merely smiled and retrieved the Kingcross' Sword piece he carried in his backpack. "My lord, it is very simple if you

wish to return my favor: Just give me an item of similar value to this!"

"Hmmm?" Marvinus eyes lit up when he saw the sword piece. "The Kingcross' Sword!"

"That's right!"

Marvinus looked very serious as he went into deep thought. A short while later, he replied, "The Kingcross' Sword is an heirloom that has been handed down to us from our ancestors for many generations! However, it does nothing more than simply gather dust in the treasury. Since we can neither eat it nor use it... Very well then! Warrior, if you can exterminate the hoard of Z'orlak Orcs that have been plaguing us for good, I will reward you with the Kingcross' Sword!"

"DING! Marvinus has issued you a quest: Exterminate the Z'orlak Orcs. Will you accept it?"

Zhang Yang immediately accepted the quest. And despite Lord Marvinus asking him to stay on for the celebration, he still summoned his pet Phoenix and took off.

As he was flying, he opened the quest menu to check the quest info and was slightly surprised that the quest was at rank B difficulty!

If a rank C difficulty quest would already give him a whole mob of elites to deal with, doesn't that mean that a B rank would have a BOSS?

The phoenix flew across the sky, casting a beautiful red glow upon the night. After about half an hour of flying, he arrived at a secluded valley where the Z'orlak orc tribe dwelled. The entrance into the valley had only simple fortifications that consisted of a couple of rows of spiked wooden boards as barricades which protects the pathway leading inwards, and was guarded by eight orc grunts guarding at the front.

Zhang Yang made the Phoenix swoop down and head directly into the valley. Even though he was still flying high above the guards, the game works out such that as long as a player enters a monsters aggro range, he will still draw aggro from the monsters even though he may have approached them from behind. So, when Zhang Yang was at 20 meters above, the eight orcs all looked up and drew their weapons in rage.

The measly eight orcs were no trouble at all to Zhang Yang as he simply just whipped out the Scythe and cut through them like a hot knife through butter, converting them into EXP for himself. He then made sure to pick up the [Ashen Cloth] pieces that were dropped. These were materials dropped by monsters with levels above 180 and can be collected and made into high-grade cloth for equipment making, as well as [Ashen Bandages], a first aid healing item that heals 200,000 HP in 10 seconds.

Ever since Felice has acquired the Tree of Life transformation, Zhang Yang had no need for health potions or bandages, but it is never a bad thing to be prepared. After all, 200 of these bandages only take up one item slot in his inventory space.

Continuing onward, Zhang Yang noticed that this was more of an orc barracks than the orcish outposts he came across previously, and that the buildings were all made from salt! But considering the geography of the area, it was not exactly a surprise: There were almost no trees to build with.

The quest objective was simply for him to slay the Z'arlok Orcs leader, Tartarsia. But since he's already here, might as well grind some more EXP points! Zhang Yang immediately went to work.

And as he slowly cleared the mobs and made his way towards the deeper parts of the valley, he reached an enormous salt crystal building at the end of the barracks. Eight orc monsters spawned from the building, but this time, they were not the ordinary ones he faced before... They were all elites! It seems that Zhang Yang was getting closer to fighting the BOSS!

[Tartarsia's Guards] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 186

HP: 9,250,000

Defense: 11570

Melee Damage: 81566-121566

Skills:

[Blood Thirst]: Increase damage dealt by 20%, also increases damage received by 10%. Lasts 1 minute.

[Tornado Cleave]: Deal 150% physical damage to all enemy targets in melee range.

The elite monsters on this map are really something. On other maps with mob levels between 150-180, the elite monsters there are unable to deal any damage to Zhang Yang at all. But here, they can easily deal almost 10,000 damage with their auto attacks! This damage is much more dangerous to Zhang Yang, even with his strength as it is now!

Thankfully, Zhang Yang was not here alone. With support healing from Felice, his {Thunder Strike} to reduce their speed, along with the Phoenix's fire-based attacks, he easily defeated the 8 elite orc guards!

Having a smooth clear so far, Zhang Yang took the stairs made of salt crystals and headed up to the second floor, to face the target for his quest-Tartarsia.

This is one bad\*ss looking boss. Tartarsia stood tall at 2 meters in height, was not clad in anything else except for the pelt wrapped around his hip, with muscular arms that are thicker than Zhang Yang's thighs! His eye blood red, with two fangs protruding out of his lower lips, and a necklace made of children's skulls hanging around his neck. The details and aesthetics of this boss were simply amazing!

[Tartarsia, Leader of the Z'alok Orcs] (Holy, Humanoid)

Level: 185

HP: 925,000,000

Defense: 18470

Melee Damage: 139465-209465

Skills:

{Club Bash}: Forcefully bashes the target's head with a club, dealing 100% physical melee attack damage, has 10% chance to stun target for 3 seconds.

{Viper Pit}: Sets a trap on the ground. When an enemy step on it, the poisonous snakes concealed within the trap will appear and deal 100,000 natural damage to the victim.

Note: Before Tartarsia became the leader of the Z'arlok Clan, he was an outstanding hunter, notorious for his ferocity and hunger for battle.

WHAT A WEAK BOSS!

Zhang Yang sighed. But since there were no ascended BOSSes yet on the map, he will have to make do with just a Holy BOSS.

The BOSS' HP was rather high, and will need a quite a bit of time killing off. After applying the defense and parry debuff on him, Zhang Yang's normal attacks could already hit him for 30,000 to 40,000! And even the BOSS' skills, {Club Bash} and {Viper Pit} could not even deal more than 100,000 damage to him at once. Meaning to say, even Felice could easily beat this guy!

So what are we waiting for? Let's get this over with!

Zhang Yang issued a command to Felice, and the girl transformed into the Tree of Life, becoming a huge tree with two legs. With her current equipment and stats, in her normal mode, her healing skill damage can definitely wipe out 99.999999% of other players.



# Chapter 770: The Spectre Cavern

---

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass into the territory of the great Z'alok Clan!" Upon seeing Zhang Yang trespassing into their territory, Tartarsia let out a deafening roar. Then, he conveniently picked up a long and thick quarterstaff and swung it straight towards Zhang Yang with a full swing!

The body mass of the orc was so sturdy and strong! Every step he took struck the ground so hard that the buildings in the surroundings were trembling. There were also cracks appearing all over the crystal salt surface. The cracks were spreading out like a spider web.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

A savage battle had just begun! The boss was unbelievably strong and intimidating. The boss whirled his weapon across a massive range. There was no telling what sort of material was used to make the quarterstaff. It was as tough as a Holy Tier Scythe. Sparks flew out of the weapon repeatedly while the boss was swinging it around like nobody's business.

"Die! All of you! Just die!" The boss was getting more ferocious than ever. Every single hit he did was critical. The entire building was trembling so violently to the point that the ground was cracking like nobody's business. Those 'spider webs' were covering the entire ground and expanding up to the wall, and then to the ceiling of the building! Holy moly!

"You pitiful weak humans! Your strength will never match the mighty orcs!" Tartarsia let out a rumbling roar and swing another hit towards Zhang Yang! Bam! The hit landed solidly on the surface of Zhang Yang's shield. It was a full-blown hit. The impact was so powerful that the ground beneath Zhang Yang's feet crumbled! Well, the entire floor was about to collapsed down to the floor below!

Zhang Yang was the first to fall to the floor below. However, the boss was not able to avoid himself from sharing the same fate. The entire floor of that level was so badly damaged that countless cracks and holes were all across the floor. If you look down, you could even see everything on the level below them with perfect clarity! With Zhang Yang falling down to the floor beneath him, the entire floor collapsed as well! However, that was not the end, the collapse of the upper floor had caused a chain reaction to the entire building. The entire building began to collapse! The salt dusts were flying all over the place! The entire scene was spectacular!

Crash! Crash!

Zhang Yang and the boss crawled out of the salty rubbles almost at the same time. Felice and the Phoenix pet followed closely right after that. Now that the entire building had collapsed, the surroundings had become an outdoor environment. Zhang Yang could now mount himself onto his Phoenix pet! Mounting onto his pet mount, Zhang Yang's Maximum HP had been insanely boosted up!

However, that was not important. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang did not have to be occupied with giving commands to the Phoenix pet so that the gigantic blazing bird would not go right into the traps. He would only need to focus on himself now. Meanwhile, Felice had a super intelligent AI controlling her actions. Her reactions were basically much faster than Zhang Yang's. There was no need to worry about her at all.

"Stinky orc! Just wash your neck nicely, and wait for me to chop it off!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

Tartarsia was glaring at Zhang Yang like a raging idiot. Well, they had launched wars on the human castles to claim their castles to themselves because they were lacking water sources. So, he was infuriated the moment he heard that human telling him to wash his neck! That would be a waste that he would not accept!

Even the human who had water sources were not daring enough to waste water like that. It would be a blissful moment if they could have one bottle of pure water. So, what kind of nonsense was washing one's body with precious water? That would be foolish!

"Speaking to a fool like you could really bring my intelligence down to a filthy level!" The boss humph in disdain repeatedly. "Just die already!"

What the hell?! Did the NPC just look down upon Zhang Yang?!

Zhang Yang had no idea whether to laugh or to cry at the same time. However, he was not there to show off to the boss. Whirling his scythe around, Zhang Yang repeatedly sliced at the boss, reducing his HP bar. Furthermore, the Phoenix pet was not staying idle either. It was also dealing a terrifying amount of damage to the boss.

90%... 80%... 70%...

After all, the boss was still a Holy Tier boss. Even though Zhang Yang was relying on his defensive methods and Felice's healing capability to stay undefeated in the battle, he still took approximately 40 minutes to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 20% left! It was 'Killing Cleave' stage now!

Unfortunately, Holy Tier bosses had become second-grade bosses since the appearance of the Ascended Tier bosses. Tartarsia did not only lose his HP Recovery Skill but had also lost the Berserk Effect. Other than crapping more frequently, his pattern of attacks and Skills did not become more frequent. His death was imminent!

If this was a Level 150-180 map, even if Zhang Yang was battling against a Level 170 Holy Tier boss, he would not have the capability to solo the boss. That was because those bosses would have {Spectre's Constitution} or {Elemental Constitution} which could recover more HP of the boss than the amount of damage Zhang Yang and Phoenix pet could deal. Even if Felice could heal the both of them up, it would be an endless battle if both sides would not

die.

However, now that Zhang Yang was here, the level of the Holy Tier boss would not matter much here. Zhang Yang could still take the boss all by himself. It seemed that the Tier of the boss was the only factor that could define the strength of a boss on this map.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{Killing Cleave}!

‘-1,948,170!’

Because the additional basic attack was much higher, pairing his {Charge Up Strike} with his {Killing Cleave} had allowed him to deal much more damage than he could by pairing up {Charge Up Attack} with his {God of War Devastation}!

The boss was in so much pain that he kept roaring in rage. However, that would not change his doomed fate. Another 7 minutes had passed. The strange-looking orc had finally collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead. The impact of the orc’s fall trembled across the ground and the necklace made of baby skulls shattered into pieces.

As Tartarsia was no longer the top Tier boss on the map, although there was still Holy Tier equipment among the loots he dropped, the additional attributes on the equipment were not as good as those on the equipment that had been dropped by the other Holy Tier bosses from other maps.

[Berserker's Charge Necklace] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +4,201

Strength: +1,030

Agility: + 1,030

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,400 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When your attack is being blocked or avoided, your next attack will definitely be a Critical Hit. Upon activating the effect, the effect will not be triggered again until 20 seconds later.

Required Level: 180

This necklace did not have both offense and defense attributes. It was more on offense. Other than that, it also did not have the Special that reduced the Required Level by 20 levels. Well, it can't be helped though. The value of this necklace would surely be very low. However, the necklace was still not bad, though. Looking at its offensive attribute, the necklace could still provide a decent boost for the user to battle against Tankers. Well, it would be common for one's attack to be blocked or avoided. So the special attribute of this necklace would allow the user of it to deal critical damage to their targets from time to time!

Unfortunately, the effect would have a 20-second cooldown every time it was triggered. Meanwhile, the fully improved {Block} would only have a 6-second cooldown.

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts about it and believed that his Defence was already high enough as it currently is. So he had no need to wear a full set of defensive type equipment. Furthermore, the necklace did not add any attribute points on the Defence attribute. The only defensive attribute of the necklace was its ability to absorb damage. Well, his {Amoss's Nose Hoop} only provided him with 485 Damage Absorption. So it would not actually affect him much if he switches this necklace in. The only obvious improvement would be his Attack power.

If he does not find any better necklace than this when he reaches Level 180, then he would just take this necklace and use it.

Zhang Yang put the necklace into his inventory for the moment. As for the other loot that the boss dropped, there was one Holy Tier leather armor. He did not even give it a glance. He just shoved the equipment into his inventory. Well, if the boss was not a top

Tier boss, then there would not be any chance to get Skill Point Crystal or Skill Book out of the loots.

Upon riding on Phoenix pet, Zhang Yang went back to the castle to turn the quest in. When the soldiers of the castle hung the head of Tartarsia on the gate of the castle, everyone in the castle was cheering loud with joy. They would not have to worry about any orc problems in the future.

Zhang Yang acquired the second piece of 'Kingcross's Sword,' as expected. Upon getting information about the whereabouts of the third piece of the 'Kingcross's Sword', he continued to move forward.

Although there were a total of 7 pieces 'Kingcross's Sword', every piece of the item would leave a hint and a trace for the players to follow so that they would be able to find the next one. Furthermore, the quests for obtaining each piece were not that difficult to complete. They were just a little troublesome and pointless. They would send players running across the land like idiots.

Upon acquiring the fifth piece of the 'Kingcross's Sword', Zhang Yang was notified that the Lone Desert Smoke had enough Level 170 players in the guild. They could now unlock the new dungeon 'Spectre's Cavern'.

The Spectre's Cavern had a very important value in it.

The value lies not in the 'First Clear' of the dungeon, but the equipment that the dungeon would drop for the players. The Tier of the equipment would be allow their wielders to jump ahead of everyone else in the game!

According to the Official's information, the highest Tier of the equipment dropped from the dungeon would be Holy Tier. Even if the dungeon is a Level 300 dungeon, that would not change as well. The system of the game would never cause the values of the equipment to drop.

The highest Tier for the equipment in the game would be the Celestial Tier. However, it was nearly impossible for everyone to acquire a Celestial Tier equipment. After all, the number of Celestial Tier equipment was already stated clearly to everyone. There were only 9 Demon Lords and 7 Spectre Kings in the game as of now. Because the duration of the bosses spawning was limited, even if someone manages to take the bosses down, the number of the Celestial Tier equipment would be limited to the number of the bosses as well.

Therefore, top Tier players would only aim to obtain Ascended Tier equipment as of now. The best equipment that a high level dungeon could offer was just Holy Tier equipment.

Spectre's Cavern was the first dungeon in the game to drop Holy Tier equipment!

Well, the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon would drop Holy Tier equipment while the Hard Mode of the dungeon would drop Ethereal Tier equipment. Last but not least, the Normal Mode of the dungeon would only drop Mythical Tier equipment. That would be expected in the dungeons that have yet to be unlocked. Therefore, the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern had some very special value to it. After all, Zhang Yang still had over 6 pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment on him. He would need to upgrade sooner or later.

Well, for a Level 170 player, the player would need to reach at least Level 180 in order to be eligible to equip a Level 200 Ascended Tier equipment. Currently, the best ones would only be able to collect a full set of Holy Tier equipment when they reach beyond Level 170. The temptation was extreme for the player. After all, who would pass on the opportunity to get equipment with the highest Tier at the current stage of the game?

Currently, the Lone Desert Smoke had cleared the Normal and Hard Mode of the dungeons. There was a total of 52 members who had reached Level 170 and beyond. They could now move on to

challenging the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon.

However, the bosses in the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon were all Holy Tier bosses. The bosses were basically so powerful that they had absolute advantages over the players. Furthermore, it would not be possible for players to use numbers in order to bring down the bosses in a dungeon. Well, dungeons limited the number of players that could enter at the same time. That had brought the difficulty up to another level!

Ten days had passed, there was no news about anyone clearing the first boss. It seemed that the difficulty of the dungeon was far more difficult than anyone had anticipated.

The first boss of the dungeon had a super high Attack power and the boss had a complex pattern of attacks as well. Meanwhile, most players only had Ethereal Tier equipment on them. It would be extremely difficult for them to even stand their ground against the boss. Well, some of them had attempted to battle the boss with their Transformations. However, the number of players with Class A and Class S Inheritance was extremely limited in the game after all. So, the players were not able to survive the boss's attack the moment the boss went into Berserk mode.

Well, it would not be easy at all for the players to claim the Holy Tier equipment.

Zhang Yang had not collected all 7 pieces of the fragment at that moment. Before he could do that, he had been 'summoned' by the Expedition Force of his guild. Well, they insisted that they wanted to take down the first boss of the Hardcore Mode, no matter what.

Even though Zhang Yang intended to train his guild to be more independent, he knew he had to step in this time around because losing might just reduce their morale. So Zhang Yang had to delay his quest in order to satisfy the desire to win of his guild members. He decided to gather the best there is in his guild and take out the first boss of the dungeon! As for the remaining 8 bosses, he would



not be taking part in slaying them. Well, he was not interested in one Skill Point after all.

Another main reason was because the first boss of the Hardcore Mode seemed to have stopped the progress of every other guild in the entire server. Well, truth to be told, Zhang Yang believed that the boss can be taken down with a few methods. He could have just thrown out some [Forbidden Scrolls] or activate his Single-unit Status Restriction Skill on the boss. The boss would be easily taken down by then. After all, this was just the first boss of the dungeon. If the players could not take out the first one, how would they be able to take out the remaining 8 bosses in the dungeon, then?

Would it mean that they would need to burn 8 more [Forbidden Scrolls] in order to do that?

Speaking of which, using 9 [Forbidden Scrolls] to get each of the 50 players with one Skill Point would not sound wise and worth.

Well, everyone's eyes were fixed on how to get the equipment. They would not care about the 'First Clear' of the dungeon for the moment.

That's right. Everyone's progress was not swift at all. Many of them were gathering equipment from the Hard Mode of the dungeon to upgrade themselves. After all, they would need to prepare themselves well enough before they could go up against more powerful bosses.

# Chapter 771: Skeletal Guardian, Antarkt

---

After distributing the potions to all of his party members, the party of 50 players gathered by the entrance of the dungeon.

The dungeon was merrier than expected. Players who had reached beyond Level 170 were present then to try out. Even when they did not have enough Level 170 players in their guild, they still came to the dungeon to form a new random party. Well, they planned to grind and farm in the dungeon's Hard Mode for equipment first. After all, the Hard Mode of the dungeon would still give players Ethereal Tier equipment. Currently, only a very small portion of top Tier players were able to have Holy Tier equipment on them. Ethereal Tier equipment was still rare, not to mention very precious and powerful to most of the players at the current stage of the game.

However, the dungeon had also implemented the same 'system' as the Death Swarm dungeon. The equipment of this dungeon were all 'bound upon pickup'. However, that would also mean that the players would not drop the equipment upon their death by the hands of other players. That had improved the desire of the players to clear the dungeon for the equipment. Well, they would not lose the equipment they pick up from the Spectre's Cavern.

Although the Hard Mode was quite hard as well, the players would be able to do well if they could just get themselves familiarized with the monsters and bosses in the dungeon. As long as they could do that, they could even clear the Hard Mode, even though they only had a full set of Mythical Tier equipment. Well, there was no minimum requirement to how much DPS the players need to deal with the bosses after all. Therefore, the entrance of the dungeon was filled with players from across the server. Many parties were recruiting Tankers and Healers at the moment.

--- Well, Tankers and Healers were rare when their number was compared to the number of DPS players. Among the 13 Classes in

the game, Tankers and Healers had their own two categories. Their total numbers combined only took up 30% of the entire populations in the server. Meanwhile, because the two Classes did not have high DPS, normally players would not feel the fun of they could not deal much damage on their targets. Therefore, the number of Tankers and Healers might be lower than anticipated.

A party of 50 players would normally need 5 Tankers and 10 Healers. That ratio was coincidentally 30% of the entire party as well. However, because the number of Tankers and Healers in the entire server was very limited, the parties would always be short on Tankers and Healers.

Therefore, most of the parties were shouting out to recruit Healers and Tankers by the entrance of the dungeon. Meanwhile, the DPS players were posting out their HP amount and their DPS in order to attract others to join them.

Wei Yan Er laughed out loud and said, "Noob tank, if you go out and shout now, many will surely come and join you!"

"Alright then. So you'll have to tank the boss for the party. I'll switch to another party now. It'll be much easier for me to clear the Hard Mode!" Zhang Yang gave a flick of his finger on the forehead of the little brat. The little brat was so angry that her eyes were moving around like a marble moving around in high speed. She was also muttering endlessly on her own.

Zhang Yang had also met some friends there. The Crimson Rage and the Imperial Sky were there as well.

Well, battling an Open World boss was no longer as worthwhile as clearing a dungeon these days. So, the other top Tier guilds came here to give it a try as well. Because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, everyone could only battle one Holy Tier boss on the Open World Map. On the other hand, in this dungeon, they could battle 9 Holy Tier bosses straightaway without the need to search around. Of course, it would be more

worthwhile to challenge a dungeon.

Naturally, the equipment that the bosses in the dungeon dropped would not have both offensive and defensive attributes. Those equipment would not have the Special Effect of reducing 20 Levels for the Level Requirement. They would be similar to the [Berserker's Charge Necklace] that Zhang Yang had acquired earlier on. The aforementioned equipment had an "only one-sided attribute", that is, either offensive or defensive.

In a nutshell: The best equipment would be the equipment that was obtained from killing Open World Bosses.

Because the entrance to the dungeon was just by The Plagued Land, players from all eight Regions had to travel all the way there in order to enter the dungeon. While they were recruiting party members, it would be hard for them to avoid conflicts. There were some small-scale battles happening across the area. And sometimes, there would be chaotic battles as well. Well, the situation was quite chaotic, to begin with.

Zhang Yang and his gang had a conflict with the players from Africa Region and America Region while they were gathering up. However, things did not go the way they thought it would. The moment when the enemy's AoE attacks spread, players from the other 7 Regions were pulled into the battle as well. Instantly, the entire area became a war zone. Everything became so chaotic that Zhang Yang and his gang took the opportunity to enter the dungeon. They went in in time to avoid from being trapped in the middle of a war they did not intend to start at all. Or else some of Zhang Yang's weaker members of his party would have been killed in the process.

Well, there was no benefit to gain from battling against other players here. It would just be pointless. As for conquering main cities or territories, there would still be some values in those battles. Everything that was happening in front of the dungeon's entrance was just pure chaos! It was actually unnecessary.

Upon entering the dungeon, whoever had Aura Skills would just activate their own Aura Skills. Meanwhile, the others quickly take some snacks. After all, consuming on a [Chicken Burger] could boost 400 attribute points.

The environment of the dungeon was spooky as f\*ck. They were currently standing in the middle an entrance to an underground mausoleum. The long and endless path that lay before them looked extremely eerie. For every 4 to 5 meters, there would be one torch hanging on both sides of the wall. Well, there was also a row of skeleton patrols right in front of them. They were marching slowly towards Zhang Yang and the others. There were a total of 6 skeleton patrols.

[Skeletal Patroller] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 100,000,000

Defence: 11,030

Melee Attack: 76,321 – 116,321

Skills:

[Flare Star]: Causes a total of 500,000 Fire Damage to all enemy targets within the range of 10-meter radius.

[Force Strike]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target, providing 10% rate to trigger an additional attack.

[Resonance]: Increased damage by 100% once for every extra Skeleton Patroller in the surroundings.

"First group, follow Zhan Yu! Second group, follow Endless Starlight. Third group, follow Ten Dusk! Fourth group..." Mountain Mover assigned the party into groups as he would always do. He assigned the party members into different groups with different roles according to the Skills of the monsters. "Everyone, stay close to the Tankers in your own groups. Make

sure you all share the damage of the {Flare Star}. Other than that, Zhan Yu will take the first and the second monsters from the left. Endless Starlight will lure the third ..."

After a brief moment, the party of 50 players was split up into 5 different groups. 5 Tankers went up to engage the monsters. They were using their Skills such as {Spear of Obliteration} and {Shield Toss} to get the aggro of the monsters they were assigned to deal with. They quickly split the monsters up to avoid the monsters from stacking up their Attack power with their {Resonance}. If these monsters had the opportunity to stack up their Attack power to the point that Zhang Yang and the gang could no longer handle, then they would be wiped out by these 6 monsters in one instant!

"... These Elite Tier monsters are basically bosses! What the f\*ck!?" Fatty Han was complaining in his funny high pitch voice again.

"That's right! They're even as tough as the bosses! But they only drop what a monster would drop after they die! The system is bullying us! Pui!" Endless Starlight became to pair up with Fatty Han in spatting bad words as usual.

"Well, think about it. This dungeon has 9 Holy Tier bosses. You should just know when to be satisfied!" Lost Dream said, "As long as you reach the level required to enter the dungeon, you can enter and clear the dungeon. If the monsters and bosses are too easy to kill, then Holy Tier equipment will fill the streets. By then, they will become so common that they won't cost much as well. Then it will become pointless to even have the Holy Tier equipment!"

"Enough talk! Clear out the monsters first!" Mountain Mover spoke in a serious tone. He was currently the commander of the party. So before the party was dissembled, he would be the boss of everyone.

The 5 Tankers had taken over the aggro of the monsters they were assigned to tank. Everyone immediately turned their

attention towards the monsters that Zhang Yang tanked against. Well, Zhang Yang could keep the monsters' aggro very firmly. Also, he was tanking two Elite Tier monsters at the same time. So, he would feel more pressure than the other Tankers. Therefore, taking out the monsters that Zhang Yang was handling would be their first choice.

Zhang Yang threw his {Surrogacy} onto Starry Fire because that man currently had the weakest equipment on him. Because of that, Starry Fire suddenly performed exceptionally well. His Defence power had exceeded even the Defence of Endless Starlight because he currently shared the same amount of Defence Zhang Yang has. Everyone could not help but feel that the Skill was a little overpowered.

Of course, those who made it here would be worthy enough to be handpicked by Zhang Yang and his powerful friends. So, their equipment would not be too weak as well.

Zhang Yang was sighing out loud while he was chopping the monsters up. He was currently Level 178. It would not take long before he could finally equip the [Agos, The Destroyer's Blade]. If he could just equip that Ascended Tier weapon now, his Attack power would increase by a notch or two!

Using the correct approach, no one had to die. Under the powerful bombardment of the party, they managed to take out the first Skeleton Patrol, followed by the second, then the third.... In just about 4 to 5 minutes, they managed to take out all 6 monsters.

The monsters found in this tunnel could be categorized into two different types. One would be fixed on the walls on two sides. Well, they basically cannot move at all. There would be one on each side. So they were easy to be dealt with. The other type would be the ones they encountered earlier on. They would be the type that patrol around and move around frequently. There would always be 6 of them seen together. Usually, they would move and act together. They would be harder for Zhang Yang and the party to

deal with.

The monsters were not hard to kill, though, as long as the Tankers do their job well and avoid letting the monsters run into each other. Without [Resonance] buffing the monsters up, there would be nothing to worry about.

After killing and proceeding forward for nearly an hour, the party had finally arrived before the first boss of the dungeon.

It was a gigantic white-bone skeleton. It seemed to be at least 30 meters tall. The skeleton was wearing some dark shiny armor, looking strange and bizarre. It was holding a gigantic axe with its two skeletal hands. Just like the usual Spectres, there were greenish flames igniting deep within the socket eyes of the skeleton skull. Well, even though the boss looked strange and bizarre, it was still intimidating to even look at.

[Skeletal Guardian, Antarkt] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,153 – 200,153

Skills:

[Summoned Skeleton]: Summons a Skeleton Patroller to join the battle. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Destructive Smash]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage, causing the target to suffer a reduction of 10% Healing Efficiency as well. Last for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 8 seconds.

[Crippling Pain]: Radiates out 8 rays into the surroundings. Upon hitting the targets, causes 200,000 Fire Damage to the targets, causing the targets to suffer a reduction of 10% Movement Speed. Last for 8 seconds. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

[Frostbite]: Hail upon an area with ice rocks, causing 100,000



Frost Damage to all targets in every second. Last for 10 seconds. Can only be used after using {Crippling Pain}. Cooldown: 30 seconds

[Dominator Aura]: Deal one attack on all targets within the range of 50-meter radius in each passing second, causing an amount of damage equal to 2% HP of the targets.

[Spectre's Fury]: When the battle exceeds 10 minutes, Antarkt will use {Spectre's Fury} once in every second. Causes 1,000,000 Chaos Damage to all enemy targets in the dungeon.

Obviously, this was battle depending on the DPS of the players. Because in 10 minutes, the boss would activate its {Spectre's Fury} and kill all players who did not activate their Inheritance Transformations. Well, Tankers might still survive the attack, though. However, the cooldown of the boss's {Spectre Fury} was merely 1 second! How do you expect any players to survive that!? Even players that activated their Inheritance Transformation would not survive that sort of attacks --- that amount of DPS was the DPS of a Celestial Tier boss!

In other words, the players must take out the boss before 10 minutes is up. Even if they are not able to take out the boss, they must not leave too much HP left on the boss's HP bar. Well, players with powerful Inheritance Transformation could still hold on for a little while more to take out the boss after the boss's {Spectre Fury} is activated.

However, after they took a closer look at the boss's other Skills, everyone knew that they would have to move around the battle stage quite often. Well, the combination of the {Crippling Pain} and the {Frostbite} would definitely send them running around in the surroundings in order to stay alive. At the same time, the Skeleton Patrolers would be tanked by the Tankers. Meanwhile, some of the players would need to be responsible for receiving {Flare Star} in their faces. So, should they focus on killing any monster that is spawned, or should they focus on the boss and take

it out first?

If they decided to focus on taking out the monster spawned before the second one was spawned, then the HP bar of the boss would not be the only amount of HP the players need to empty out. They would need to take into account the HP bar of the monsters spawned as well. Killing each of the Skeleton Patroller spawned would give the boss an extra 100,000,000 HP! What the f\*ck!

Meanwhile, the firepower of the party was the key to their survival. If that were to happen, they might be wiped out by the boss in an instant!

# Chapter 772: Taking down the first boss!

---

Therefore, after everyone had a brief discussion, they decided not to kill the monsters. They've made their own calculations. Under the circumstance that they do not activate their Inheritance Transformations, the party would barely kill the boss under 10 minutes with their current firepower. It would be a difficult battle. If they wanted to assign some of their men to deal with the Skeleton Patrollers once they are spawned, they would end up being wiped out by the boss's {Spectre's Fury} and the monsters eventually.

Truth be told, Mountain Mover had brought a party in, attempting to kill the boss before this. They failed because they did not have the firepower to kill the boss within 10 minutes. Even though they had insanely powerful DPS players such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er, they were still a little short on firepower to bring the boss down to its knees within 10 minutes. It seemed that the shortage of firepower could not be overcome, even after Zhang Yang and the others join in.

However, based on some calculations, it would be possible to take out the boss within 10 minutes without having to activate any Inheritance Transformations. That would require every single one of the members of the party to deal damage at 100% capacity! However, because the boss would use its {Frostbite} and {Crippling Pain} constantly, the party would need to move around in order to stay alive in the boss battle. They would not be able to stay and deal damage to the boss at their 100%.

The tactic used would involve Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight and Ten Dusk handling the monsters. Each of them would be handling two monsters at a time. The remaining 3 monsters would be handled by the remaining two Tankers. Additionally, Zhang Yang would throw his {Surrogacy} on the weakest DPS player among the party and let the player tank against the last monster --- as for the

10th monster, when the monster is spawned on the 10th minute of the boss battle, it would not matter if the party has anyone to tank the monster or not. They would be wiped out by the boss's {Spectre's Fury} by then.

Each Tanker would be followed by 7 other players. Well, they would stand together and share the damage they receive from {Flare Star}. They would also share the pain they receive from the {Crippling Pain} and {Frostbite} as well!

Therefore the Tankers would decide the fate of the party in such regard. Well, if a Tanker takes a wrong step, the Tanker would be leading the players following them into sustaining additional damage. Well, that would also mean that the group would almost definitely be killed as well. When any one of the groups die, well, there was no need to tell what the monster would do after that. Furthermore, with a group less in the party, the party would not have enough firepower to kill the boss in time. By then, the party would have to accept their fate and be wiped out!

Truth to be told, they would still be short in firepower to take out the boss within the timeframe.

If the boss would just spawn one Skeleton Patroller, the party could just slay the monster and focus on taking down the boss after that. Well, they would be able to deal over 1,700,000,000 damage in 10 minutes of that is the case. They would not have to be so busy and tired then.

Unfortunately, with their current Tier of equipment, they had to make do like so. Well, it was obvious that Zhang Yang and the party was not powerful enough to crush the boss with pure brute force --- which guild would be so powerful to do that, huh?

So how about Inheritance Transformation then? The boss's {Dominator Aura} would cause a disastrous amount of damage to all players who activated their Inheritance Transformations of course. Players would gain tens of millions of HP by activating

their Inheritance Transformations. Just imagine how much HP would they lost then. The boss's {Dominator Aura} could deal a damage of the same amount as the players' 2% HP in each passing second. If a player had over 10,000,000 HP, the player would be suffering 200,000 HP in each passing second! Even if Han Ying Xue had activated her Inheritance Transformation, she would not be able to keep up with that pace of damage.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang would have over 58,000,000 HP after he activated his Inheritance Transformation. Because of that..... he would lose 1,160,000 HP in every passing second! Even if all Healers on the party were focused to heal him up, they would not prevail as well.

However, they could still activate their Inheritance Transformation though. Well, they could only activate their Transformation at the final stage of the boss battle. They should be able to last for 1 minute before they would lose all their HP and die.

In other words, the players could still have the advantage of having their Inheritance Transformations. However, the time duration of their Inheritance Transformation would be narrowed down by extreme measures. Because of that, this boss battle had become balanced for the boss and for the players as well. Well, this situation would be fair to the normal players, however, it would not be fair for players who have Inheritance Transformations.

Zhang Yang charged into the battlefield to lure the monster. By doing so, he gave the signal for the party to follow him into the battle.

Crack! Crack! Crack! The boss was trembling its chin and jaws. The lower teeth of the boss had knocked into the upper teeth of the boss. "He he he ---" The boss began to make some strange laughter. Then it took up its axe and sliced it straight towards Zhang Yang.

Upon casting 5 layers of {Cripple Defence} onto the boss, everyone quickly took their Power Potion and get started with

their insane attacks on the boss. Although it was money-consuming to take Power Potions, however, players would need to rely on any sorts of potions that could aid them in expediting a dungeon. Furthermore, they would need to repair their equipment with their own pockets. Well, most importantly, they would need to dedicate their time for the expeditions.

The party had been divided into 6 teams, six individual formations with one Tanker (one of them was a fake Tanker) as the leader of the team, constantly moving around the boss in circles.

30 seconds later.

"{Crippling Pain}!" The boss roared out in a very low voice. Instantly, eight dark rays that looked like eight dark screens were shot out from the boss. Then these dark rays began to move slowly towards the surroundings. Well, if players could react in time, they would definitely be able to avoid touching the rays.

"{Frostbite}!"

Right after the eight rays had passed by, the boss let out another roar. This time, it waved its left hand and the sky began to hail. Each attack from the hail could deal a total damage of 100,000 Frost Damage! If anyone was hit by the {Crippling Pain} and get afflicted with a reduction of their movement speed, they would have been killed by this hail.

Each team had a Tanker up front like an arrow head. They were trying to dodge and attack. Those who were Physical type players would not be affected much by it. Well, their Skills could be instantly activated. So walking and running would not affect them too much --- of course, that was under the circumstance that the players were all top Tier players. Normal players would have forgotten every other thing the moment they started moving and running.

However, things seemed to turn disastrous for the Magic type players. They would need time to chant their spells! They could

not just stop on one spot in order for them to chant their spells. That would definitely affect the party's DPS.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and the gang had noticed this. So other than the Healers which were essential in every party, they did not recruit too many Spellcasters for their party before they came into the dungeon. The party was basically made up of Thieves, Hunters and Berserkers. Well, most of them were actually Hunters. That did not actually affect them at all.

60 seconds!

"My servant! Come out and fight for me!" Antarkt let out a raging roar and used its axe to cut the ground. Instantly, something broke itself out of the surface of the ground. A Skeleton Patroller crawled right out from the crack and roared at Zhang Yang with its mouth opened.

Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Horizontal Sweep}, hitting both the boss and the monster at the same time. By doing so, he succeeded in securing the aggro of both units.

The party did not mind the monsters at all. They were just minding their business with the boss, aiming their attacks at the boss only.

2 minutes later, the second Skeleton Patroller was spawned by the boss as well.

Endless Starlight quickly took over and kited the monster 10 meters away from the first Skeleton Patroller. Well, that should prevent them from resonating with their {Resonance}.

3 minutes into the battle, the third one was spawned. Ten Dusk stepped in and kited the monster away. As time passed by, the fourth, the fifth, the sixth ... when all 6 Tankers were occupied with the Skeleton Patrollers that were spawned, a very interesting formation was formed on the battlefield. Zhang Yang was tanking against the boss and one monster in the middle of the area.

Meanwhile, the other 5 monsters were approximately 14 to 15 meters away from the boss and Zhang Yang. They were in position, surrounding the boss in a circular arc formation. Each of them was like 70 degrees away from each other. And they were about 15 meters away from each other at the same time.

Well, if everyone was to move around all together, the entire circular arc shape formation would move! It would be interesting at the least, to look at!

When the seventh monster was spawned, Zhang Yang stepped in to kite it over to him. The eighth one was lured over by Endless Starlight while the ninth one got lured by Ten Dusk. However, when the battle was entering the tenth minute, the boss still had over 18% HP remaining. The boss began to unleash its {Spectre's Fury}, showing no mercy to every player in the surroundings. It only took two to three seconds before the boss wiped out the entire party out!

Everyone quickly ran back to their dead bodies. Then, they picked a safe spot and camped there. They took snacks to recover their HP while discussing the changes and tactics they might need to use on the boss.

"Actually, Battle Companions can also come out and share the damage for us. We don't have to move along altogether."

"That's true. We should receive enough healing as it is. We can also pick out 4 Spellcasters and let them be on their own. They won't have to move with us. That should increase our damage output on the boss for a bit."

"Healers can also try to deal some damage to the boss whenever they are free!"

As there were many of them, many ideas were heard as well. So, they slowly amended their battle tactics, based on the ideas and suggestions they heard from the others.



Not long after that, the second battle had begun!

This time, they managed to reduce the boss's HP to 14%!

That was an improvement. If they could use their Inheritance Transformation without having to worry about anything, they could have killed the boss with ease! However, because of the boss's {Dominator Aura}, everyone would only last in the battlefield for 1 minute.

Even though the Attack power of a player after activating Inheritance Transformation would be extremely powerful, but now, they would need to have a lot of HP as well. Well, truth be told, the additional Attack power players could get from Inheritance Transformations were beginning to look weaker, as the players' equipment were getting better through time. Even though Zhang Yang had a Class S Inheritance Transformation, he only acquired a boost of 2.5 times on his DPS upon activating his Transformation.

Then, the others should get an even lesser boost on their Attack power upon activating their Inheritance Transformation.

Within a timeframe of 1 minute, the party could deal additional 10% damage to the boss if they activate their Inheritance Transformations at the same time. Unless they could reduce the boss's HP to 10% within 10 minutes, they would still fail on killing the boss. Their use of Inheritance Transformations would have gone to waste, by then.

Everyone was trying their best to adapt to the boss's attack pattern and behavior. Then they amended their battle tactics accordingly, every time they failed. One time, two times, ten times... when they failed for the thirteenth time, the party had finally pushed the boss's HP bar down to 11%!

"No wonder no other guild could take out this f\*cking boss.... What an annoying f\*ck!" Fatty Han sighed again and again.

"Stop whining! We can take the boss down on our next attempt!" Everyone was filled with hope and confidence. 11%. If they could bring the HP bar of the boss down to 10% on their next attempt, they could just activate their Inheritance Transformations on the ninth minute of the battle and take out the boss once and for all!

Let the battle begin!

Everything went smoothly. Upon entering the eighth minute of the boss battle, the HP of the boss had been reduced to 28%.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Zhang Yang threw out his boss-killer Skill without hesitation. Well, if this Skill is not resisted by the boss, they would take out another 10% HP of the boss for free! It would be similar to a situation where the entire party activates their Inheritance Transformations!

Phew! A dark skull began to form right on top of the boss's head!

The Skill was not resisted! Praise the lord!

Everyone was cheering madly as they attack the boss as fast as they could. Time was of the essence!

Initially, they did not take into account this Skill because they did not want to be disappointed when the boss keeps resisting the Skill. Well, the rate of activating the Skill's special effect was just too low to even consider using it in the first place. It would be unwise to consider using the Skill as part of the plan in killing a boss. However, no one would have thought that Zhang Yang would be so lucky today! The first attempt was already a success! Holy cow!

Under the bombardment of 10 players, it only took up 4 to 5 seconds before all 10 special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} were triggered. The boss's HP bar had been reduced down to 18% below!

Entering the 'Killing Cleave' stage of the battle!

The firepower of the party suddenly increased by a notch. They were all bombarding the boss with the best attacks they had with them, holding nothing back at all! 1 minute later, the HP bar of the boss was reduced to 9%!

Truth be told, if half of the party members could activate their Inheritance Transformations at the same time now, they would have a 100% confidence of taking out the boss! However, humans are always greedy. If they believe that they could take out the boss without activating their Inheritance Transformations, then they would die hard trying to do it so that they could reserve their strength to take on the second boss! Well, that's an 'IF' though.

Well, wealth would only come to you when you're willing to take some risks. Everyone was on the same page at the moment. Even though they knew that if half of them activate their Inheritance Transformations at the same time, they would definitely be able to take out the boss. However, they also had hope that they would be able to kill the second boss of this dungeon!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

"Argh ---" Antarkt let out a deafening roar that shook the entire heaven. Then the heavy body of the boss began to collapse. The heavy impact of the fall was so powerful that the entire ground shook for almost a minute! Meanwhile, the 10 Skeleton Patrollers vanished upon the boss's death. There were only loots left on the ground!

"We've done it!" Everyone was cheering in joy. It had been quite awhile since they've met such a boss. Many had perished more than 10 times in an attempt to bring down the boss. Now that they managed to take out the boss, their passion in the dungeon run overwhelmed their minds and souls at the moment.

# Chapter 773: Aluonu the Gargoyle

---

After restoring themselves, Zhang Yang began to distribute the loot among the party.

The boss had dropped two Holy Tier equipment and three Ethereal Tier equipment. They were all Level 170 equipment. Of course, equipment acquired from dungeons would not have the Special that could reduce Required Level by 20 levels. Also, they would not have both offensive and defensive attributes. It would be very obvious if one equipment is a defensive type or an offensive type.

However, the advantage of acquiring equipment in a dungeon would be, if you can take down the boss, then you can surely wear the equipment you obtained. Unlike Open World bosses, you will not have to wait for quite some time before you can wear the equipment you acquired. Well, sometimes, you might need to wait for a very long time before you can equip the equipment you obtained from Open World bosses!

Naturally, the three Ethereal Tier equipment were auctioned among the members of the Lone Desert Smoke by trading in their guild points. Although those were just some Ethereal Tier equipment, they would still be quite powerful at the current stage of the game. Well, it would stay that way at least until the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern was completely cleared. After all, Holy Tier equipment was still extremely rare in the game.

Then, it was time to look at the main event of the day. It was time to auction out the two Holy Tier equipment!

[Gaunlets of Impenetrable Dignity] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +7,935

Strength: +1,957

Agility: +826

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 15,870 points.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 170

Although it was an equipment for the Guardians, Zhang Yang already had a Level 180 Holy Tier [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets]. Furthermore, that [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets] he had on him got both offensive and defensive attributes. It was definitely much more powerful than these gauntlets he found here. So he did not show any interest at all in joining the auction.

Even though Endless Starlight's Gauntlets were Ethereal Tier, he was also part of the gang now, so it would be natural for him to have the desire to improve his equipment to the max. Well, he had the desire to get some defensive type equipment with higher Intelligence attributes. Therefore, Ten Dusk and the other Guardians in the current party had to 'battle' against each other by auctioning to see who could claim the equipment to themselves.

Although everyone had the difference between being part of the main guild or sub guild, the guild points were usable by everyone in such regard. Even though Ten Dusk had only joined the guild not long ago, however, he was able to perform outstandingly by using his skills and controls in the game. His reflexes were very impressive as well. So he managed to earn quite an amount of guild points in so little time. He actually earned so much guild points that the other two Tankers lost. So Ten Dusk became the one who claimed the gauntlets by the end of the auction.

Well, since they've decided to take on the second boss as well, Zhang Yang had used [Identifying Scrolls] to identify the equipment. By doing so, everyone could equip their equipment immediately right after they acquire them. Although the

equipment had no gemstones in them yet, well, that won't affect the attributes of the equipment too much at the moment.

The second piece of Holy Tier equipment was a pair of Cloth Armor boots. It was claimed by a Spellcaster from the sub-guild of Lone Desert Smoke though. Well, that was because Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had already acquired higher Tier boots for themselves earlier on. Naturally, they did not take part in claiming the boots.

After distributing everything out, everyone continued to push on. Upon exiting the mausoleum, they went into a set of stone stairs which led them to the second floor of the place.

This floor looked like a gigantic square. Only the walls had torches on them. So, the brightness of the floor was quite 'limited'. Meanwhile, the middle region of the floor was completely dark. However, under the illumination of the flames on the torches, Zhang Yang and the gang could still vaguely see countless stone statues standing right in the middle regions. They were very packed together.

All of these stone statues had rather scary and wretched faces. There were two wings protruding from right below the neck part of their back. The two wings were wrapping their entire bodies, leaving only their heads and their bird-claw-liked feet in the open -  
-- Gargoyles!

[Snoozing Gargoyle] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 100,000,000

Defence: 11,030

Melee Attack: 75,903 – 115,903

Skills:

[Gargoyle's Shriek]: Weakens the defense of the target, causing

the target to receive additional 10% damage when the target is being hit. Last for 12 seconds.

[Gargoyle's Smash]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters. There is a 20% rate to stun the target.

[Harden State]: Reduces 80% damage received when being hit. However, cannot move at all.

Upon seeing the countless closely packed Gargoyles, everyone began to feel a headache now. If they are not careful enough, they might just wake all the Gargoyles up and get wiped out entirely. Well, they might have to activate all their Inheritance Transformations in order to stay alive by then.

Zhang Yang threw his {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Gargoyles which was the nearest to him. The moment when his attack landed on the Gargoyle, a damage value that was nerfed many times over popped right on top of the Gargoyle. Because of that, the Gargoyle began to open its eyes. Two ignited green ghastly flames were radiating within the eye sockets of the Gargoyle.

"Screech ---" the Gargoyle let out a screeching cry. The pebbles and dust that were resting on top of its body began to shudder and fell to the ground. The Gargoyle then fluttered its wings and flew towards Zhang Yang like a bat. At the same time, the other four Gargoyles were beginning to tremble as dust and pebbles were falling from them too. There came another 4 Gargoyles, following just behind the first Gargoyle that was charging towards Zhang Yang.

Endless Starlight and the remaining Tankers immediately went up to engage the Gargoyles. Each of them took over the aggro of one Gargoyle. These monsters' {Gargoyle's Shriek} could be endlessly stacked together. Well, allowing five {Gargoyle's Shriek} to stack together would be a grave mistake. So, they should be

separated away from each other as soon as possible.

--- Although the party reached that point of the dungeon in Hardcore Mode for the first time, however, they have done this more than a couple of times when they were clearing the Hard Mode and the Normal Mode of this dungeon. Well, the Skills of the monsters were the same. The only difference was the difficulty in killing the monsters, in other words, their toughness had been upgraded. Therefore, everyone knew how to react and what to do with the monsters.

The Gargoyles would use their {Gargoyle's Shriek} once every 10 seconds. Well, that still proved to be quite threatening, actually. However, the negative effect of the Skill could be canceled with {Warrior's Will} and {Sacred Protection}. Meanwhile, the firepower of the party was insanely high. Basically, they could take out one Gargoyle every 30 seconds, leaving no chance for the Gargoyles to stack up their {Gargoyle's Shriek} too many times over.

The boss was located just right in the middle of the square. The players would need to clear out the monsters in the surroundings. Or else if the boss was triggered to join into battle, the remaining monsters that were not cleared would wake up together with the boss and join the battle. They would also launch their most ferocious attacks at the players together with the boss!

It took approximately 2 hours for the party to clear out the monsters in the surroundings. After that, the boss was the only stone statue that was standing right in the middle of the entire floor.

The stone statue of the boss was huge. It was approximately 30-meters tall. Unlike the other Gargoyles which had grey skin all over their entire body, this one was completely black, pitch black, to be exact!

[Aluonu the Gargoyle] (Holy, Spectre)



Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,153 – 200,153

Skills:

[Gargoyle's Shriek]: Weakens the defense of the target, causing the target to receive additional 20% damage when the target is being hit. Last for 10 minutes. Can be stacked. Cooldown: 10 seconds. Cannot be canceled.

[Gargoyle's Smash]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Gargoyle's Bombs]: Place 50 bombs randomly on the ground. The bombs will explode after 3 seconds, causing 500,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 5-meter radius of the explosion. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

[Gargoyle's Dimension]: When players went beyond 50 meters away from Alunu, the targets will receive a destructive hit, ignoring the remaining HP of the targets. The targets will die on the spot.

[Spectre's Fury]: If the battle lasts longer than 10 minutes, Alunu will enter a state of Berserk and causes 10,000,000 Chaos Damage to all targets in the dungeon.

So this would still be a battle of time! God damn it!

However, because there were no monsters with outrageously powerful Skill attacks interrupting the party, the party only had to focus their attacks on the boss. Well, the {Gargoyle's Bombs} would be a little more troublesome to handle. Because of the {Gargoyle's Dimension}, Zhang Yang, and the party could not too far from the boss. Because of that insanely outrageous Skill, Zhang Yang and

the party could only move around within the range of 50-meter radius from the boss. Well, the area space was quite limited for 50 players and one gigantic boss though. However, everyone's equipment was quite powerful and high Tier as well. Furthermore, Zhang Yang also boosted everyone with 40% additional Vitality as well. So each of the members of the party would have at least 500,000 HP. Even if they accidentally stepped on the bomb, they won't die on the spot. However, if they ever get caught in the middle of the explosion twice in a roll... then...

Because the boss's {Gargoyle's Shriek} could not be canceled off once it has been cast on the players. Theoretically speaking, the {Gargoyle's Shriek} could stack up to a total of 1200% additional damage received on the players within the period of 10 minutes.

If that becomes true, the boss could deal a basic damage ranging from 1,960,000 to 2,800,000 damage. One hit could take out a Tanker without having an Inheritance Transformation! That would be outrageous!

Back then when they were clearing the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode of the dungeon, the players had tried it out. If the description of the Skill stated that the effect could not be canceled out, then it would be real that the effect could not be canceled out once being cast upon the players. It would still be pointless even if the players activated their Invincible Skills or effects. The only way to deal with this Skill is to let Tankers switch among each other. In other words, when a Tanker had been stacked with too many layers of the {Gargoyle's Shriek}'s effects, that Tanker should stop creating aggro and back off for the moment to let another Tanker to take over his or her place. After the next Tanker managed to get to the first on the aggro list of the boss, the Tanker that retreated could deal damage to the boss (Or get smacked to the death by the boss).

Because the bosses in the Normal and Hard Mode did not have the Skill {Spectre's Fury}, the boss battles could be prolonged to 20

to 30 minutes. The DPS players could even afford to lower down their damage output for the moment. The party could even torture the boss to its death by witching Tankers to take against the boss.

However, the Hardcore Mode had given the boss battle a timeframe by introducing the boss's {Spectre's Fury}. When the players take more time than the timeframe, the boss would immediately go into its Berserk mode and wipe out the entire party.

Because of that, the Tankers would have to perform better than they normally do, better than the others were. Even if there are two, three or even four Tankers around, every Tanker would need to focus on creating high aggro values on the boss, maintaining the aggro of the boss at a very high level. By doing so, any of the Tankers would be able to take over the boss when their main Tanker dies or retreats. That would prevent the DPS players from snatching the aggro value of the boss instead.

Just look at Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream. These players could really deal insanely high damage. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight, Ten Dusks, and the other Tankers were expressing themselves, saying that it was just too much for them to achieve that.

"Don't worry, they all have their own Skills to clear out the aggro values build up on them!" Zhang Yang tried to comfort the Tankers.

"But {Vanish} will require 5 minutes!" Endless Starlight was showing his weak side.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then I'll activate my Inheritance Transformation and tank the boss until the very end of the battle!"

"Oh, yea! Boss! You're the best!" Endless Starlight immediately cheered in joy.

Because Sun Xin Yu and the other gang could deal insanely high damage. So Endless Starlight, Ten Dusks, and the other Tankers had no confidence to get enough aggro on the boss. Well, it was natural to think that Zhang Yang was the only one who could deal insanely high damage and tank at the same time --- only the insane one could match the insane ones!

"Alright, time to activate our Inheritance Transformation now. After this battle, we shall take a rest!" Zhang Yang said.

The party had spent too much time dealing with the first boss. Meanwhile, even though playing in 'God's Miracle' won't affect the body of the players, but repeating the same thing over and over again is some sort of a mental torture. So sooner or later, the players would not be able to take it mentally. Furthermore, Zhang Yang did not intend to focus on clearing the dungeon in the first place. His main aim for coming here was to boost the morale of his guild. His main target was to achieve Level 180 as soon as possible so that he could be the first to kill an Ascended Tier boss!

Well, Ascended Tier bosses in the Open World map tend to drop Level 200 – 210 Ascended Tier equipment. Speaking of which, players would be able to equip the equipment when they reach Level 180 – 190. That would be much better than farming for Holy Tier equipment in the dungeons by a thousand times! From Zhang Yang's perspective, those equipment acquired from the dungeons were suitable for middle-tier members of the guild to obtain. Meanwhile, the core players and the main gang players of his should just fix their focus on hunting down the Open World bosses.

# Chapter 774: Remedial Measures

---

At the order of Zhang Yang, everyone activated their Inheritance Transformations, one after another. Everyone turned into a menace of destruction, one after another, and charged at the boss!

After getting hit by everyone, the boss was triggered. The boss let out a screeching roar, unfurled its wings and flew towards Zhang Yang. It looked like a dark cloud floating by. The two wings looked as sharp as blades. They seemed like they could just slice through Zhang Yang's armor and dice Zhang Yang up into countless bloody pieces!

{Gargoyle's Shriek}! 1 layer, 2 layer, 3 layer... 1 minute later, Zhang Yang had 6 layers of {Gargoyle's Shriek} piled up on him, causing him to receive additional 120% damage from the boss. The boss would deal damage ranging approximately from 300,000 to 440,000 damage with each hit!

If other parties were battling the boss, they would need to switch their Tankers with another Tanker when their current Tanker is overwhelmed by 6 layers of {Gargoyle's Shriek}. Although instant-death is still not possible, the pace of the Tanker losing HP would be extremely difficult for the Healers to follow up. However, the situation would turn out differently for Zhang Yang. Now, he had over 100,000 Defence. His Passive Damage Immunity was up to 40%. Furthermore, he could use his {Block} once every 5 seconds. He basically only received 45,000 damage in every passing second.

Well, Han Ying Xue aside, who has activated her {Milkmaid Deity Transformation}, even an Ethereal Tier Healer would hardly be able to heal Zhang Yang up!

With the worst-case scenario coming true, the boss could deal about 2,800,000 damage with each hit. That being said, the boss could deal 1,680,000 damage to Zhang Yang on average. Furthermore, Zhang Yang could use his {Block} to reduce the

damage he receives, reducing the damage dealt to him down to only 500,000 damage! So even if that really happens, 10 Healers on the party would be able to heal Zhang Yang back up!

--- for most Healers, as long as their Tankers are not instantly killed by the boss, they would be able to heal their Tankers back up.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang could boost his HP up to a terrifying amount of 56,000,000 HP, upon activating his God of War Transformation. Other than God's Left Hand, who was also a Tanker with a Class S Inheritance, no one in the entire server could match up to Zhang Yang's current attributes! In other words, the greatest threat for the party in the boss battle with the second boss would be --- the fall of their Tanker. However, Zhang Yang and the party could just ignore this threat, because their Tanker Zhang Yang could take it all!

The remaining party members only had to avoid getting caught in the explosions of the bombs. Other than that, they only had to deal as much damage as they could, as if their lives were all depending on that! Well, their lives indeed depended on that!

Truth be told, after everyone has activated their Inheritance Transformations, the firepower of the party had increased by a notch or two. Unlike the situation when they were dealing with the first boss, they were no longer restricted from unleashing their potentials as players who had Inheritance Transformations with them. Well, after getting kicked in the nutsack, it was time for everyone to have a candy. After all, players with Inheritance Transformations should not be kept in the cages! It would become pointless for the players to go through so much trouble just to get an Inheritance with Transformation Skill, after all!

6 minutes later, the boss let out a miserable roar, and with a shudder of both wings, collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead for good.

Unfortunately, the boss only dropped two Holy Tier equipment which were both Leather Armor. Zhang Yang distributed the loots and announced that their expedition was over for this round. After all, Zhang Yang's priority would be to get himself up to Level 180 so that he could become eligible to challenge Ascended Tier bosses. Previously, securing the 'First Clears' of new dungeons was to acquire additional Skill Points and make a name out of themselves. Back in the days, building the reputation of a guild was extremely important. Meanwhile, now that the Ascended Tier bosses could drop Skill Point Crystals, getting the 'First Clear' of a dungeon was no longer the only source of additional Skill Points.

Speaking of the reputation of the Guild, the current Lone Desert Smoke had become the top in the world. They could maintain their reputation by sending the Silky Soft Battle Team out once in every day. They no longer need to push themselves into the dungeons to compete for the 'First Clear' of the dungeons anymore for months!

Of course, just because Zhang Yang did not want to join the expedition for dungeons doesn't mean he wanted all his guild members to withdraw from attempting to get the 'First Clear' for the dungeons as well. Well, if they could acquire the 'First Clear' of the Spectre's Cavern, 50 players on the party would be able to get one Skill Point for each of themselves! That would definitely improve the power level of the entire guild!

Upon travelling all the way back to Marlin's Land of Salt, Zhang Yang continued with the search for the remaining two missing pieces of the 'Kingcross's Sword'. After wandering around, killing monsters like an idiot for quite some time, he finally gathered the two remaining pieces of the sword. Meanwhile, he managed to level up to Level 180 as well! He could finally equip his Ascended Tier weapon!

[Agos, The Destroyer's Blade] (Ascended, Two Handed Axe)

Attack: 40,017 – 56,017

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 12,636

+640 Strength (Level 7 Strength Gemstone, enhanced)

+689 Strength (Level 7 Strength Gemstone, enhanced)

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 50%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 15%

Equip: When your weapon hits the target, there will be a certain chance of dealing a destructive hit on the target, causing 8 times your initial damage.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Equipping this axe and switching up the [Berserker's Charge Necklace] had boosted Zhang Yang's Basic Attack up to a range of 265,065 to 318,185 damage. That amount of Attack power is actually enough to oppress a Holy Tier boss without any problems! As for the scythe, it was given to the little brat. Although the weapon looked like a scythe, it was classified as a Hammer. The little brat was currently using a Holy Tier hammer. Well, she could not unleash the potential of the hammer she had, after all. The scythe would serve her better.

Of course, Wei Yan Er was more keen on acquiring the Ascended Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had just equipped. She shamelessly told Zhang Yang that if he gives her the weapon when she hits Level 180, she would let Zhang Yang kiss her. By the end of it, Han Ying Xue was infuriated after she heard what the little brat had to 'offer'. She did not show any mercy in beating her up like a little b\*tch. Even Zhang Yang was dragged into the mud. He was also beaten up by that witch, even though he did not do anything wrong. As usual.

Upon gathering all the seven fragments of the 'Kingcross's



Sword', Zhang Yang traveled back to the main city to look for the master Blacksmith to reforge the sword.

"Huh? Huh! HUH---" The dwarf blacksmith looked at the broken fragments over half a day before his face turned joyous. After quite some time, he finally spoke, "I've seen the design of this sword somewhere in an ancient book before! I can't remember which ancient book, though. Wait here!"

The dwarf walked into his room. After quite some time, he finally walked out of his room with a book in his hands. "Yes! That's it! This is a legendary sword that has been passed down for many many years! Its called the 'Kingcross Sword'! The sword was forged by a man named 'Kingcross', a human!"

This dwarf suddenly frowned a little. Deep down his heart, he believed that all of those sorts of weapon or equipment should be forged by dwarfs and only dwarfs.

"Master, do you think you can get this sword fixed, then?" Zhang Yang asked.

"Of course!" The dwarf revealed a proud expression on his face as he spoke. "Although I have not reached the Tier to forge a Legendary Tier sword, I can still put the pieces of the sword back in its original state! That should be easy peasy, lemon squeezy!"

"Then let's begin, shall we, master?"

"2,000 gold pieces!" Speaking of business, this dwarven blacksmith immediately thought that he was above everyone. He revealed the expression that a sordid merchant would make while bargaining.

What the f\*ck! What an \*sshole!

Zhang Yang kept his anger from erupting as he took out the 2,000 gold pieces out. Well, it took him quite a while and went through quite some trouble to collect the broken pieces of the sword. He would not feel satisfied until he could see the final effects that the

sword would offer!

After paying that greedy dwarf, the dwarf finally took the pieces and put them on his forging bench. After smacking those pieces for over a few times with his forging hammer, the fragments had been merged into a complete sword! However, the dwarf revealed an awkward expression on his face though. Then he said, "Er... well... I can't believe there was a Magic Circle in the sword. I think I've broke it! Er, no! Not broken because of me! It's already broken in the first place! That's right! It was already broken since the beginning!"

The dwarf quickly spoke as if he was worried that Zhang Yang would ask for a refund. So he continued on, "However, I can recommend someone who can fix the Magic Circle for you!"

‘Ding! Banderash has given you a quest: Remedial Measures. Do you accept?’

Well, Zhang Yang could only choose to accept it.

[Remedial Measures] (Difficulty Rank-D)

Description: When Banderash was forging the Kingcross's Sword, he ‘discovered’ that the magic circle in the sword itself had been destroyed. As a responsible Blacksmith, Banderash recommended that you travel over to Memphis Town, located on the map of Marlin's Land of Salt and look for Sia the Wizard. She should be able to solve your problem.

Completion: Find Sia The Wizard 0/1

As expected earlier on, collecting these fragments of the sword would lead to triggering another quest. Although the quest was only a Rank-D quest, well, it was only a quest that required players to run some errands. The continuation of the quest would definitely have a handsome reward waiting for the players who could complete it. After all, gathering those fragments was not an easy task at all. The system would not give any pointless quests to

the players.

Zhang Yang teleported back to the Sauron's castle. Then, he began to rush his way to his destination like a madman. After spending tens of hours, he finally entered Marlin's Land of Salt. After that, he went on to the Memphis Town on his Flying Mount.

Zhang Yang spent another 3 to 4 hours to reach that human town. He landed and summoned Whitey out. Then, he rode to the entrance of the town. After that, he went to ask an NPC about the whereabouts of this Sia.

"Sia? The insane wizard Sia?" The moment when the NPC heard about the name 'Sia', he immediately turned pale and ran away as if he had just heard something scary.

Zhang Yang attempted to ask another 4 to 5 people along the road. However, all of them did the same thing. They ran away in terror. Zhang Yang did not know whether to laugh or to cry at the same time.

"Hey, big brother! If I tell you the whereabouts of the crazy w\*tch, will you give me a silver coin?" a little girl who looked to be around 11 or 12 years old suddenly appeared in front of Zhang Yang. Her eyes were moving around very rapidly. She was looking at Zhang Yang with hope.

Zhang Yang took out a gold piece and passed it to the little girl. Then he said, "I'll give you a gold piece then!"

"Big brother, you a very nice person!" The little girl did not hesitate to praise Zhang Yang, "That crazy witch is living in a house on a small mountain, just by the west side of the town. There's a garden right in front of her house, though. The flowers in the garden will bite people! That's super scary!"

"Thank you!" Upon acquiring the information he wanted to hear, Zhang Yang quickly hopped onto Whitey and went towards the destination. After walking out of the town, he switched to his

Phoenix and flew straight towards the direction of his destination -- normally, towns would restrict players from flying in the town area. Breaking the rules would end up with the player getting hunted by NPCs.

The movement speed of the Pheonix pet was extremely fast. After a few flaps of its wings, it brought Zhang Yang to the small mountain that the little girl had mentioned. As expected, right by the side of the small mountain, there was a two-storey house, with a large garden right outside of the house. There was a variety of strange and bizarre plants all over the garden, as well.

Well, it could be considered a miracle for someone to grow plants in the middle of a salty land!

Zhang Yang flew straight towards the house. However, before he could land by the side of the house, a few plants suddenly turned their bloomed flowers towards him. Then, the flowers began to spit fire at Zhang Yang! They were like flamethrowers!

If Phoenix pet and Zhang Yang were not mounted together, the Phoenix pet could have ignored the fire attacks because it had fire immunity. However, things turned out differently when Zhang Yang was mounted on it. The attributes of the Phoenix pet would be based on Zhang Yang's attributes. So, the both of them started to roast together.

The fire shots landed on Zhang Yang. Each of the shots could deal approximately 40,000 Fire Damage to him. That amount of damage was much higher than the amount of damage that other regular monsters could deal to him!

Zhang Yang was not willing to remain idle and let the himself get burned up. So, he immediately commanded the Phoenix pet to descend a little further. Then he pulled out his axe and chopped the plants up.

While he was at it, these flower plants actually uprooted themselves and started sprinting away on their roots! Zhang Yang

frowned deeply at the bizarre scene.

# Chapter 775: Replicating the Magic Circle

---

Just as the situation began to get out of hand, a creaking sound was heard. The door of the house was pushed open. An old lady who seemed to be in her 70s or 80s came out of the house. She was wearing a black wizard robe as she hobbled out of the house with a stick.

Instantly, all the plants fled to the side of the old lady as if they just saw their own mother. Then, they shrieked at Zhang Yang with strange and bizarre screeching sounds.

"How dare you trespass into my territory like a wild animal and startle my babies!?" The old lady raised up her stick and pointed the tip of her stick right at Zhang Yang. It seemed that she was holding a staff instead of a stick! She looked very intimidating!

[Sia The Wizard] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 200

HP: 218,680

Note: Sia is not a legitimate wizard. However, her research on Alchemist and Magic Circles is quite in-depth.

Although Zhang Yang could just slay all the monsters with one full swing of his axe, he was actually here for the quest, not to kill anything! Zhang Yang quickly raised both of his hands up and smiled, "My respected wizard, I'm an Adventurer hailing from the White Jade Castle. I'm here to request for your aid in restoring a Magic Circle."

"No can do! No no!" Sia seemed to have a very bad temper. She shook her head quickly and said, "You've scared the sh\*t out of my babies! What makes you think that I would help you to restore your Magic Circle, then?"

"I can compensate you!" Zhang Yang smiled.

Sia widened her eyes a bit and humph. Then she suddenly said, "At least 400 gold pieces!"

"No problem!" Zhang Yang smiled and walked up to the house.

Sia comforted the plants that were scared sh\*tless for a bit first. Then, the plants began to 'plant' themselves back to the garden and stayed there quietly as plants should.

Zhang Yang took out the 'Kingcross's Sword' and passed it to Sia, "My respected wizard, the Magic Circle in this sword seems to be broken while it was being reforged. Do you have any idea how to fix it?"

Sia took the sword over and gave a closer look at it. Suddenly, she laughed coldly and said, "This is the deed of that greedy dwarf Banderash! Although he's a master of smithing swords, he'll still be like a three-year-old infant in the art of Magic Circles!"

After paying the old lady 400 gold pieces, Zhang Yang thought to himself that this old lady was just as greedy as that greedy dwarf.

"Huh? The design of this Magic Circle is very ancient!" Sia flipped the sword round and round and she was amazed by what she saw. After quite some time, she spoke again, "This Magic Sword should have existed over thousands of years, or maybe tens of thousands of years ago! I'm sure that I don't have the ingredients for restoring this! However, I've come across such Magic Circles before back in the west side of the Marougue Palace's relics! If you can replicate the Magic Circles and come back to me, I'll be confident that I can restore the Magic Circle in this sword for you!"

'Ding! Sia The Wizard has given you a quest: Replicating the Magic Circle. Do you accept?'

Accept.

'Ding! You've acquired an item: Magic Circle Replicator.'

Zhang Yang immediately departed for Marougue Palace. About 20 minutes later, he hovered over the ancient empty ruins of a

palace.

The remainder of this palace seemed to be quite vast. Also, Zhang Yang could see that the palace was once a glorious place. It must have a great history behind it. However, the entire place is now so broken because the place was corroded by the endless flood of salt. The palace had lost its grandeur and status. The only thing left were scars and broken walls.

Having no idea where the Magic Circle was located, Zhang Yang could only search one room at a time. However, since this was a quest, of course, the Magic Circle would not be found so easily. Monsters began to surface.

Bam!

[Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 190

HP: 9,500,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,871 – 126,871

Skills;

[Venom Spout]: Spits venom at the target and causes 100,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 30 meters.

[Pincering Bite]: Bites the target with its huge sharp claws and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: Although the size of the Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches were initially extremely huge, they were not as huge as they were back in the days. Ever since the palace had been turned into a land of salt, these Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach had regained their initial sizes.

Zhang Yang charged into battle on Phoenix pet while Felice was supporting them by their side. Upon reaching Level 180, the attributes of both Felice and Phoenix had received a certain



amount of improvement. Their Attack power had become even more astonishing! It only took a brief moment before the giant cockroach collapsed onto the ground and died. Upon its death, the monster actually dropped a piece of Mythical Tier boots among the loots!

After picking up all the loots on the ground, Zhang Yang continued on with his search, wanting to get over with it as soon as possible. While he was on his journey to locate the Magic Circle Relics, he could not avoid encountering some of those Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches again. Well, of course, he took care of them with ease. Meanwhile, Felice only had to heal Zhang Yang with her 'Tree of Life' power. Zhang Yang did not even need to sit down and take snacks to recover his HP anymore.

After searching around like an idiot for over an hour, Zhang Yang suddenly discovered that there were countless runes crafted on the wall of a little cottage he had just stepped into. Those runes were glowing weakly.

Well, that's it!

However, the ground suddenly cracked, and something broke right through the surface of the ground. A crimson red Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach crawled right out of the ground and stood right in front of Zhang Yang. Well, this monster seemed to be twice or maybe triple the size of the Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches that he had encountered before this!

[Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach Queen] (Ethereal, Beast)

Level: 195

HP: 195,000,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,932 – 126,932

Skills:

[Venom Spout]: Spits venom at the target and causes 100,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 30 meters.

[Pincering Bite]: Bites the target with its huge sharp claws and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Lay Eggs]: Lays 5 eggs. If these Cockroach Eggs are not destroyed within 10 seconds, each egg will hatch one Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach.

Note: The queen is the leader, the head of the Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches! She's the most powerful Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach there is this earth. Well, she's the breeder of her own species, after all.

This cockroach queen began to fire dark corrosive venoms at Zhang Yang the moment it appeared. With a sudden turn of her butt, she began to lay eggs on the ground. 5 cockroach eggs were laid right in front of Zhang Yang!

What the f\*ck! The boss has already used her ultimate Skill the moment she came out! What kind of ferocity is this!?

[Cockroach Egg] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 0

HP: 200,000

Defence: 0

Note: 10 seconds later, a Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach will hatch out of it.

Although the eggs were laid from the same butt, they were quite far apart from each other. Well, because of that, Zhang Yang could not destroy the eggs with his AoE attacks at the same time. Who would want to battle against a few more monsters in the middle of a boss fight, right? Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all. He quickly went over to destroy the eggs first.

With his current basic attack that exceeded 260,000 damage, the

eggs were destroyed by Zhang Yang with ease. Furthermore, Felice and Phoenix pet were aiding him in destroying the eggs as well. So, they managed to destroy the eggs with ease. All 5 eggs had been smashed into 5 puddles of yellow liquid.

"Screech! Screech screech!" The cockroach queen was naturally provoked. So, she began to chase after Zhang Yang with her ferocious attacks.

Before that, Zhang Yang was occupied with destroying the eggs. So he did not have time to entertain the cockroach queen. However, now that his hands were free at the moment, Zhang Yang felt no fear of engaging the boss. The three of them focused all their attacks on the boss without showing any mercy. In less than 7 minutes, the boss was slaughtered up by the three of them like she was worthless! Of course, if Felice did not have the capability to heal like she always did, Zhang Yang would need to activate some Skills, such as his {Shadow of the Void} in order to empty out the aggro on him. Then he would need to let Phoenix pet or Felice take his place for a brief moment until he is ready to get back into the battle.

Well, he no longer needed to worry about all of that. He only needed to fully focus his attacks on the boss until he wins. The boss was merely an Ethereal tier boss. The boss would not have enough firepower to deal so much damage that exceeds Felice's healing capability.

Upon her own demise, the boss dropped one Ethereal Tier equipment and three Mythical Tier equipment. Zhang Yang did not even look at the equipment before he shoved them all into his inventory. Instead, he quickly took out the Magic Circle Replicator and aimed it at the Magic Circle on the wall. A stream of magical light flashed across the room and the Magic Circle miraculously disappeared! Wait what? That did not look like a replication process at all! Why the hell did they call the thing a Replicator, then?

Well, since that the quest was listed as completed, Zhang Yang did not put much thought on it. He hopped onto Phoenix pet and travelled back to handover the quest over to Sia.

"As expected! It's true that this is a Magic Circle that has been lost over the centuries!" Sia took over the Replicator and did her research on the Magic Circle on the item. "Eh, barbarian! I need a little more time to get myself familiar with the Magic Circle and its secrets. You can stop standing there and make yourself useful as well. Go gather some Magical Ingredients for me, will you? These ancient sorts of Magic Circles were not constructed with the Magical Ingredients we use these days. The ingredients I have will not do it!"

‘Ding! Sia The Wizard has given you a quest: Find the Magical Ingredients. Do you accept?’

Accept.

[Find the Magical Ingredients] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: Sia The Wizard wants you to provide her the ingredients that she wrote on the list she just gave you. She should be able to restore the Kingcross's Sword after she gets familiar with the secrets of the Magic Circles on the sword. However, even though you're not a researcher of Magic Circles, you could tell that the list is too long. It seems that someone is trying to take advantage of you.

Completion: Complete gathering the required items on the list that The Wizard has given you 0/1

Zhang Yang brought up the list to have a closer look at it. There were actually more than 50 types of ingredients on the list! Meanwhile, each of the ingredients required 200 counts. Well, this b\*tch is more greedy than he had imagined her to be!

However, the more you give, the better the reward will be by the end of the quest. Zhang Yang has never doubted the basic principle

of the game. So he immediately started gathering the ingredients on the list.

Most of the ingredients could be bought from shops and auction houses. He could just acquire them by visiting the shops and the auction house. According to his calculations, if he really gets everything from the Auction house, all the ingredients would cost him about 1,000 gold coins. Meanwhile, if he wants to gather all the ingredients by himself in the maps, it would cost him at least 1 month in order for him to get everything gathered.

Well, most of the ingredients were not really that expensive, in the first place. However, players would need to travel deep into the map to get them if they ever want to save some money. Well, it would not be worth it at all if a player spends time gathering normal ingredients such as Iron Bars and Silver. Furthermore, items such as bird feathers, deer's horns and snake scales were all inferior items. It was not easy to gather a certain number of them, however, it would be easy to spend a little money to get them all in bulk.

Zhang Yang left a comment in his own guild chat. He informed the low tier players to deposit all of the items that he required into the guild's warehouse.

Well, basically everyone in the guild treated Zhang Yang as their idol. When Zhang Yang put out his request, they immediately went out to gather the ingredients stated in Zhang Yang's list. Well, since they could also level up a bit by slaying monsters, it would be the same for them as long as they could slay some monsters.

The entire guild was truly united. It only took about 7 days for Zhang Yang to collect all the ingredients that he needed. The efficiency of the guild was extremely high!

When Zhang Yang went back to Sia The Wizard with the ingredients, that old witchy wizard instantly dropped her jaw, because she was overwhelmed with surprise. Then she quickly

kept everything, as if she was worried that Zhang Yang would regret giving the ingredients to her.

"I've just deciphered the secrets of the Magic Circle on your sword. With these ingredients, I can now restore the Magic Circle in your sword for you now!" Sia said.

"Then let's get started!"

After casting some weird sh\*t on the sword, Sia passed the Kingcross's Sword back to Zhang Yang. Then she quickly said, "Barbarian, it's all done! So, take your sword and leave at once! Your presence spreads fear to all my babies every time you show yourself!"

# Chapter 776: The War Chariot System

---

[Kingcross's Sword] (Special)

Use: Immunizes you, your party members, all pets and all Battle Companions on your party from the effect of the {Soul Penetrate}. Lasts for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Required Level: 180

Bound upon pick up.

That was some strange special effect though. Did he just went through so much trouble just to get that weird \*ss effect?

What a tragic day! Meanwhile, the quest ended there. Sia The Wizard did not even look at him at all. After that, Zhang Yang went all the way back to see Banderash. Since he did not react to the Kingcross's Sword at all, it seemed that the quest was over.

But, what the heck is this?! What kind of f\*cking reward was that then? Zhang Yang frowned intensely at that. Immunizes everyone from the effect of {Soul Penetrate}? What good can it bring for him or the party? What the f\*ck is a {Soul Penetrate}, even?!

When the gang found out that Zhang Yang got so busy over nothing for the last couple of days, they laughed at him. They had never thought possible that Zhang Yang could be fooled by an NPC into running around like an idiot.

Even though that was the case, Zhang Yang did not throw the Kingcross's Sword away. He would not believe that the item he worked so hard for would be a useless piece of metallic junk. Furthermore, the bank was still quite empty at the moment. So, he decided to keep the sword there for the moment.

Meanwhile, Ascended Tier bosses were incredibly hard to find. Well, there must be at least one Ascended Tier boss hidden somewhere across the entire Land of Salt. However, Zhang Yang just couldn't find it at the moment. After all, the map was

extremely vast. Without the aid of a quest guidance indicator, even if he has 1 year to explore, he would still not be able to find the hidden bosses across the map.

Helplessly, Zhang Yang finally decided to leave that map and turn his attention towards getting to Syruya. Syruya was also a Level 180 – 210 map just like Marlin's Land of Salt. It was also a desert with numerous monsters roaming across the entire land. Because the number of players there was a lot lesser than the other maps, Zhang Yang would be able to get Experience Points at a faster pace.

However, he went over to the map, not for the Experience Points, but to find the hidden Ascended Tier bosses while the number of players on the map was still low. Speaking of acquiring Experience Points, Zhang Yang could have gotten the same result staying in Marlin's Land of Salt. He would have no reason to travel over a far distance to Syruya, then.

Just like the Celestial Tier bosses, the number of Ascended Tier bosses was so sparse to the point that it was pathetic. There may only be one Ascended Tier boss in the entire map. Although Zhang Yang had meted out most of his effort on clearing the quest on the map, none of the quests he completed had led him to an Ascended Tier boss.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang was never able to battle an Ascended Tier boss, for many reasons. Well, there was no reason for him to dwell on his past. However, now that he has become the number player in the entire server, it had him wondering why he had not been able to encounter any Ascended Tier bosses just yet! At last, Zhang Yang lost his patience. So, he posted a question to the officials, demanding an answer regarding the matter.

If it was just a bunch of normal players asking the same question, the official would not have just ignored the question. However, with Zhang Yang's current reputation, the moment his ID was confirmed to be really him, his post instantly received countless



players' comments and replies. It only took a brief while before the post became a 'Skyscraper'. The official did take note of the post, of course. Finally, they had given Zhang Yang the answer to his question.

From Ascended Tier bosses onward, that includes the Celestial bosses as well, the bosses would only reveal themselves in the game through 'events'. For example, The Lord of the Seven Spectre King Angus was spawned during an 'event' in the game. Of course, some of the top Tier bosses would randomly appear across the maps without any prior indication, just like the Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich. He had been sitting on top of his Malevolent Tower in the Plagued Land all the while until he was discovered. Anyone could just go and challenge Mardevich as long as they are willing to do it.

Of course, bosses that had a fixed territory would be much more difficult to be defeated, compared to the bosses that were spawned in 'events'. In Zhang Yang's previous life, no one had ever attempted to push Mardevich before. Well, mostly because no one had ever managed to set foot on the boss stage. Players would already be wiped out by the endless monster armies surrounding the entrance of the Malevolent Tower.

The officials had also revealed that when a certain number of players reach Level 180, the system would spawn the very first 'event' Ascended Tier boss. Meanwhile, if the boss is slain, a new type of item would be introduced into the game, making the game even more interesting in many ways.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and instantly slapped his thighs. Could it be the Tank System?

Tank System, also known as the War Chariot System would be introduced into the game in order to balance the game between players without Inheritance Transformation and players with Inheritance Transformation. For instance, Zhang Yang would have 56,000,000 HP upon activating his God of War Inheritance

Transformation. Provided that everyone has the same Tier equipment on them, how many players without Inheritance Transformations would be required to match Zhang Yang, then? 100? 500? 1,000?

A Tank could be seen as a mount that could take more players at the same time and stack their HP amount altogether! When the Tank receives an attack, the damage received would be equally distributed among all players on board of the Tank.

Based on that alone, the Maximum HP of the players would become much higher. Meanwhile, the players on the Tank could freely launch their attacks on their enemies. Their firepower would still be determined based on how many players are on board. Well, because of that, the players without Inheritance Transformations would become powerful enough to go up against players without Inheritance Transformations.

Well, of course, Tanks were not that perfect either. First of all, Tanks were very heavy and slow. They would only be suitable for defensive battles. Well, players should think twice, or maybe even thrice before using a Tank to pursue their enemies. After all, the Tank System was not introduced for the players without Inheritance Transformations to torture and slaughter players with Inheritance Transformations. They just serve to prevent players without Inheritance Transformations from being too fragile when they are battling against those with Inheritance Transformations.

Similarly, that would also solve the problem of the players who were waiting for their Inheritance Transformation's cooldown. They would no longer be too vulnerable when they are waiting for the cooldown period to be over.

The only rule for getting on board of a Tank was that the players must not activate their Inheritance Transformations!

Players such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er would be automatically thrown off from a Tank if they ever activate their

Inheritance Transformations while they are on board a Tank. Even if they forcefully get back on board, the system would not count them as one of the 'passengers' on board of the Tank.

Well, the Tanks had a few categories, though. They would be categorized based on the number of passengers that they could carry. There were 4 categories. The forth category could only take 5 passengers. The second category could only take 10 passengers. The third category could only take 20 passengers. Meanwhile, the first category could only take 50 passengers. According to rumors, there was also a super large sized Tank that could carry 100 passengers. However, Zhang Yang did not encounter that in his previous life before. Other than that, Tanks could be modified or enhanced after players manage to acquire them. Players could install different sorts of equipment and materials with Magic Resistance on their very own Tanks. That would increase the Defence and Magic Defence of their Tanks.

--- When struck, Tanks would reduce damage received with the Defence and Magic Defence that players have installed on them. Therefore, if the two sides are equally matched in a battle, the Defence and Magic Defence of their Tanks would decide which side would win by the end of the battle.

Although the movement speed of the Tanks were as slow as the movement speed of players' walking speed, the Tanks would become useful in large-scale battles. The situation would be seeing Tanks charging into battle to oppress players without Tanks and Inheritance Transformations!

The best thing about having a Tank was that unlike activating an Inheritance Transformation, summoning a Tank would not have any cooldown period. As long as the Tanks are not destroyed, players could just use the Tanks anytime. Tanks would have two HP bars. One would be the HP bar for the passengers. The other HP bar would be for the Tank itself.

The HP bar for the passengers would be easier to explain. If there

are 10 players, and each of the players had 100,000 HP, the total amount of HP on the HP bar would be 1,000,000 HP. As long as the Tank have received more than 1,000,000 damage, the 10 players on the same Tank would be dead together.

Meanwhile, the HP bar for the Tank would not have a fixed amount of value. It was in the form of percentage ratio. At the beginning of the battle, the initial amount of HP for the Tank itself would be 100%. Once the Tank receives some attacks, the amount of HP for the Tank would reduce based on the amount of HP for the passengers. For instance, if the Tank receives 100,000 damage, the HP bar for the Tank would be reduced to 90%. Meanwhile, the amount of HP for the Tank would not be healed just because the HP bar for the passengers are healed back up.

When the HP bar of the Tank is depleted, the Tank would be destroyed. However, if the HP bar for the players is not depleted when the Tank was destroyed, the players would not die. However, they would all be kicked off the Tank.

So, why would there be such a setting, then?

Just think about it. Without that kind of setting, when the HP bar for the passengers on the Tank is depleted to 1%, the players could just get out of the Tank and a new batch of 10 players with full HP bars could jump in and unleash hell on their enemies. If that's the case, wouldn't the previous battle become pointless for their enemies? It would not even be fair, to begin with!

Even the players with Inheritance Transformations would not be that durable and powerful!

With that setting of the Tank System, even if the players on the Tank have full HP bars, the Tank would still be easily destroyed if the HP bar of the Tank is only at 1%. Once the Tank is destroyed, the owner of the Tank could take the Tank back to the main city for repairs.

Other than that, the HP bar for the Tank would be recovered

back to 100% the moment the Tank is disengaged from battle mode.

Of course, there would be some limitations and restrictions of the Tanks since the Tanks were so powerful. Tanks were not available for players to use in a dungeon and the arena.

Players would have to reach a minimum level of 180 before they can use a Tank. Zhang Yang had only reached Level 179 in his previous life. So he did not have the luxury to sit in a Tank. Clear Water did not buy any of the Tanks as well --- Even the 5-passenger scale Tank would be extremely expensive. Well, it would definitely be a waste if people only buy it for display purposes.

A Tank!

Zhang Yang could feel his blood boiling underneath his veins. He quickly urged all top Tier players in his guild to grind like hell so that they could reach Level 180. Well, it was not just for acquiring the loots that would be dropped by Ascended Tier bosses. It would be much more important to kill the bosses!

According to the official's hint, the Tank System would be introduced with the purpose of taking on the Ascended Tier bosses!

It was really something to look forward to. It would be awesome to ride a Tank around the server like a boss!

Since there was no way to slay any Ascended Tier boss at the moment, Zhang Yang could only put his focus back on the dungeon. Currently, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to take out the first 3 bosses in the Spectre Cavern. However, because of the absence of the core players such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and the others, the progress of the Lone Desert Smoke was just as fast as the progress of the other guilds. Currently, none of the guilds were able to defeat the fourth boss in the dungeon. They had been stuck at that roadblock for quite some time already.

The main reason was because, an extremely high Attack power

would be required to take down the boss. Furthermore, the players would need to handle a large number of unforeseen circumstances as they battle the boss. Well, they would need to dodge the AoE attacks of the boss while clearing out the monsters in the surroundings of the boss. They must not leave out any of the monsters in the surroundings, or they would be doomed. Currently, the guilds that had the utmost hope of clearing out the fourth boss would be the Land of Savage and the Hell Family. They were the only ones who could survive until the boss only has 20% HP left before they are wiped out.

However, having 20% remaining in the HP bar of the boss was still far away from taking out the boss. It would require a party to gather all the basic equipment from the first, second and third bosses before they could become powerful enough to take on the fourth boss. Of course, if the Tankers and the Healers on the party are all powerful enough, they could just bring in more DPS players instead of more Tankers and Healers. By doing so, the party should be able to cover up for the shortage in their firepower.

Zhang Yang let Sun Xin Yu and the others grind for the moment. Well, his intention was to let the others reach Level 180 as soon as possible. Meanwhile, he joined the expedition party of his guild to push their progress in the dungeon. By doing so, he could also gather more high Tier equipment for his party members. Well, he could also increase the power level of his guild. He could prepare his guild to go up against the Ascended Tier boss that yet to appear.

Oh the other hand, the Eternal Flame managed to get elevated to the Rank-S Professional League Championship. Scholar Musou and Longrich managed to show off their top Tier skills in front of the public. Eternal Flame managed to become a new rising star, rising from the ashes. The reputation of Eternal Flame had been elevated up to an entirely new height.

Although Zhong Xiu Hua was currently level 142, he had joined the party in the Championship. However, he did not get the chance

to get down to the arena most of the time. Only when the score was 4:0, 4:1 and his party is on the verge of winning the match, would that prick reveal his face by the arena.

A battle team would only have 10 players at most. However, theoretically speaking, there would be 7 rounds of 1V1 matches and 1 round of 5V5 match. If at least three of the party members could win every round --- upon winning the first 3 1V1 matches and forfeiting the upcoming 4 1V1 matches, the party could win the Team Battle and win the championship round with a score of 5:4.

However, normally, a party would make sure that they put 7 players that could perform well in the matches. As for the remaining 3 members of the party, well, they were basically not important at all. They could basically be 'for sale'.

That's right. Because the contestants of the Rank-S and Rank-A Professional League Championships get money and sponsors from the game company in every season of the championship. Meanwhile, putting the three members of the party 'on sale' would get the system to pay them more. They could also earn some extra money from their 'bosses'.

Because some rich players who wanted to be famous did not care about that small amount of money, they would allow their names be used for such a devious act. Well, they wanted to become famous, after all!

# Chapter 777: Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks

---

After getting familiarized with the Professional League Championship over the past 2 years, the officials made some amendments to the rules and regulations of the championship.

First of all, the number of parties participating in the Class S Championship League had been expanded up to 32 parties. Meanwhile, the number of parties participating in the Class A Championship League had been expanded by up to 64 parties. Other than that, the duration of the championship in each Class had been shortened to 3 months. Because of that, the championships have become even more intense and exciting. Once every 3 months, there would be one test to determine if every player could retain their positions in their Class for the championship or not. Their performance would determine if they could be elevated to a higher championship Class, stay on the same championship Class, or be demoted down to a lower championship Class. Everyone in the server was quite stressed. They would go all out in each match they participated.

As for the World League Championships that would be held by the end of every year, how would they decide which party would be eligible for the championship. then?

Well, things could get complicated in that regard. There would be 4 seasons of Professional League Championships throughout each year, and the points that the first three teams acquire would differ in every season of the championship. The Champion would acquire 3 points, the Runner-up would acquire 2 points while the Third-in-place would get 1 point. After the four seasons of the championships, the organizer would sum up the total points that each team earned throughout the 4 seasons. The first two teams with the highest scores would be selected to participate in the



World Leagues Championship. If there are two teams with the same score, they would need to extend the matches.

In other words, everything was designed to make the championship more exciting and intense.

Although Zhang Yang had joined the expedition party as well, he would not be able to cover the shortage in the firepower of his team all by himself. The bosses of the Spectre's Cavern were still alive and well.

If the dungeon was only a 5-player scale dungeon, Zhang Yang might be able to take down the dungeon with only Han Ying Xue supporting him! The firepower of Zhang Yang, Phoenix pet and Felice combined, would be able to match the firepower of three top Tier players combined. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue has become one of the most powerful Healer in the entire server. As long as there are no Level Gap Restriction effects, the four of them would be able to sweep any 5-player scale dungeon in the entire server!

However, once the number of players increases, the intimidating threat that players with Inheritance Transformations could pose would begin to lose its charm. Players who activated their Inheritance Transformations would only gain two times of their initial Attack power. The significant increment on their HP amount would only increase their survival in a battle.

It seemed that the power level of the players with Inheritance Transformations had been nerfed at some point. They could only unleash their full potential while battling against Open World bosses now. Well, Open World bosses would just spam unbelievably powerful AoE attacks from time to time. Only those who have extremely high amounts of HP would be able to survive the waves of insanely high damage!

Before the fourth boss of the dungeon could be brought down, Zhang Yang's Battle Team had to encounter Eternal Flame's Battle Team in the championship.

Because of the layout of the championship, the two Battle Teams would be facing each other for the first time. The two sides had been holding grudges against each another from the start. So everyone on both sides were burning with murderous intent!

Currently, the power level of Eternal Flame had become rather powerful! Because of Liu Wei's death, The Myth basically became the sub-guild of Eternal Flame. Top Tier players such as Death Arbiter had also joined the Eternal Flame. Because of that, the Eternal Flame has become more powerful than they ever did.

Currently, Eternal Flame had 2 players with Class A Inheritance, 5 players with Class A Inheritance and 3 players with Class C Inheritance. Well, they definitely had the strength to stand proud in the entire China Region now.

Looking at the list of the Battle Team Points, the Eternal Flame had not lose a match just yet. They were able to earn the same score as Silky Soft Battle Team, Crimson Rage Battle Team and Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team. After adding in the small points, the Crimson Rage Battle Team remained number one, the Eternal Flame Battle Team was in the second place. Meanwhile, Silky Soft Battle Team had become number four!

Well, the situation arose because Zhang Yang and the other core players of the guild did not participate in the championship. So, they had to lose some of the 1V1 matches during the championship. Therefore, it was natural that they would score lesser small points compared to the other Battle Teams. According to Zhang Yang's perspective, as long as they could win all matches by the end of the championship, they would be able to become the Champions by the end of it. Well, there was no need to look at the small points at all!

However, their upcoming opponent would be the Eternal Flame. So, Zhang Yang and the rest of his gang were all there, this time around.

"Zhang Yang, do you have the balls to face me 1 on 1 in the arena?" Dragon Marquis a.k.a Zhong Xiu Hua attempted to taunt Zhang Yang.

"Noob tank, don't fall into his trap! He's definitely going to eat you up!" Wei Yan Er said as if she knew what was on the mind of Zhong Xiu Hua.

Well, that was quite obvious actually. Zhang Yang was the number one player in the entire China Region. He was basically the symbol of invincibility of the China Region! Their intention was obvious for using a Level 142 pawn to battle Zhang Yang. Their strategy was to have Silky Soft Battle Team waste their best horse on Eternal Flame's worst horse so they could match their better horses against the lesser horses of Silky Soft Battle Team. By doing so, they could ensure Scholar Musou and Long Rich's victories in their matches.

However, Zhang Yang frowned after hearing what the little brat had to say, "What did you mean by 'eat', huh?"

However, Zhang Yang would never pass on the opportunity to beat the crap out of Zhong Xiu Hua. So he arranged himself as the first to go down to the arena without any hesitation. Well, Sun Xin Yu and the others would definitely be able to defeat any opponents that come at them now!

Furthermore, Hundred Shots had become much more powerful ever since he had his Red Dragon. He could even win the matches in the World League Championships with a smile on his face. There was no doubt that he would be able to win in merely a Professional League Championship.

--- Well, because players were not allowed to activate their Inheritance Transformations, the difference between the power levels of different Inheritance Classes had become lesser. The HP amount of the players did not change a bit. The only difference was their Attack power. Class S Inheritance could boost the players

with 50% additional Attack. Class A Inheritance could boost the players with 45% additional Attack power while Class B Inheritance could boost the players with 40% additional Attack power. Considering the fact that the equipment of the players at the current stage of the game could at least boost the players' Attack power by at least 100%, these difference of 5% to 10% could not actually matter that much. In truth, that amount of difference would in fact only boost the players' Attack power by 2,5% to 4%.

After a brief moment of preparation, the match had begun. The Eternal Flame really sent Zhong Xiu Hua out as the first player to fight in the arena!

Zhang Yang had no reason to be courteous now. Well, he did not have to kill Zhong Xiu Hua immediately as well. So the moment they went down to the arena and the round was announced to have begun, Zhang Yang charged up to Zhong Xiu Hua and began with his onslaught on the prick. He did not hesitate at all while he raised his fist and shield and swung at Zhong Xiu Hua with full strength. The continuous bombardment of attacks on Zhong Xiu Hua's face was so frequent and fast. Zhong Xiu Hua's face had instantly turned swollen and out of shape! Blood was spilled and broken teeth was flying all over the place. By the end of it, the rich boy could not take it anymore. He finally screamed like a little b\*tch and opted to forfeit himself from the match. That was when the humiliation on Zhong Xiu Hua ended, finally.

Everyone was surprised to see that the torture on Zhong Xiu Hua went on for 5 minutes! So, they could guess that those two must have some sort of grudges against each other. They began to acquire information about it. Well, rumors had their ways of spreading fire. Many version of stories were soon heard across the entire server.

After that, Sun Xin Yu and the others got down to the arena for their matches. As expected, they won every single round of the match!

For the past 2 years, players all around the world had been wishing to see someone or some party who could bring a challenge to the Lone Desert Smoke. They were hoping to see Zhang Yang and his gang defeated and dragged down from their 'Throne'. After all, things would be much more interesting if all flowers were to bloom together. With many unexpected things comes competition. With competitions come suspense. Only then, could gamblers place their bets in excitement!

Before the match, the Eternal Flame had kept their undefeated record throughout the Class S League Championship. They were known to be a rising star that rose all of a sudden. They had given others the illusion that they had what it took to challenge the absolute power of the Silky Soft Battle Team! Furthermore, the Eternal Flame had also been shouting out loud with their slogans, saying that they would defeat Lone Desert Smoke and become the best in the entire China Region. So, everyone was deceived into believing that they would be able to do it!

However, they had not thought that the Eternal Flame would just be a piece of sh\*t when confronted with the absolute power of the Silky Soft Battle Team. Zhang Yang and his gang won with the score of 0:5. Everyone's passion in supporting the Eternal Flame had been instantly extinguished.

Well, Silky Soft Battle Team was indeed worthy to be recognized as the Champion of the World League Championship for the past two years! They were already known to be the symbol of invincibility in the entire world. So before some unexpected rising star could appear, Lone Desert Smoke would remain the champion with absolute power in the game!

Upon defeating Eternal Flame with ease, Zhang Yang and his gang had to battle another three Battle Teams, Crimson Rage Battle Team, Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team and Bai Wei Battle Team. Well, Zhang Yang had no idea what Crimson Rage Battle Team promised Han Ying Xue and the ladies. They actually

held back and let the Crimson Rage Battle Team win a little. By the end of the three matches, Crimson Rage Battle Team had become the first in place while Silky Soft Battle Team became the runner-up on the list. Meanwhile, Eternal Flame and the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team got the third and the fourth in place.

Well, it would not make any difference if a battle team gets first or second places. Both battle Teams would be able to participate in the World League Championships by the end of it. Therefore, Zhang Yang closed his eyes on that matter and moved on. There was no need to be bothered by such trivial matters. However, a few days later, Zhang Yang noticed that there was a large quantity of limited edition bags and perfumes.....

The Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern remained tough. No party had been able to take out the fourth boss just yet. Meanwhile, everyone understood one thing out of the countless failed attempts at taking down the fourth boss. Tactics would not be able to cover up the lack of Firepower in a battle. Therefore, many top Tier guilds began to focus on grinding for the moment. They would just repeatedly clear the dungeon to gather more equipment by slaying the first boss, second boss and the third boss whenever the dungeon is reset. Upon acquiring more and more equipment, they would just improve the power level of their expedition party before challenging the fourth boss again in the future.

Well, most of the top Tier players were not far from attaining Level 180 at the moment. After grinding, they were able to reach Level 180 and beyond in just a short period of time.

‘Ding! Ambitious Schemer Brocks is attempting to launch a war that will turn the entire world upside down! Warriors, stop him before he can even move his finger on that!’

Just when Zhang Yang was grinding in the Open World Map, he suddenly received a notification from the system. So naturally, he accepted the quest.

## [Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks] (Difficulty: Rank-S)

Description: 10,000 years, the ancestors of Brocks found a terrifying monster in the void dimension. However, to fulfill their ambition, the ancestors of Brocks did not hesitate at all to summon the monsters over to our world! This type of monster absorbs water to survive. Then, the creature will excrete a substantial amount of salt as its by-product! After 10,000 years of multiplying, the species of the monsters had become so numerous that anyone would get shocked to find out their numbers. They even covered the entire Marlin's Land of Salt! Now, Marlin's Land of Salt no longer has enough water to feed these monsters. Meanwhile, Brocks's ambition is still expanding boundlessly!

Warriors, you must get together now. There might still be a little hope at saving this land! Defeat Brocks and send these monsters back to the void dimension, where they belong! Protect our motherland! Quickly! Go to the Bavarian's Castle in the Marlin's Land of Salt! Brocks is in that castle!

Completion: Acquire Brocks's Staff 0/1

Number of players: 20

Quest Reward: Experience Points +100,000,000, Skill Points +2

So... could this be the 'event' boss that the officials mentioned before? Now, everyone could finally understand why Marlin's Land of Salt would end up like this! So that was the reason that made the entire land end up being covered in salt crystals!

"Little Yang, have you accepted the quest?"

"Noob tank, when are we leaving then?"

All of a sudden, everyone began to speak at the same time. Everyone was excited over what was about to happen. Obviously, this quest would be offered to the players once they hit the level cap of Level 180.

A Tank! A freaking Tank!

Everyone was cheering and laughing. From the hint that the officials fed to the players, Brocks would definitely be an Ascended Tier boss. That being said, they would be acquiring Ascended Tier equipment once they kill the boss! Meanwhile, the quest became quite a hot topic among the players. The officials would not make the info public if the boss is not hard to take on. This boss might also be a World boss as well! So the boss would definitely drop more than 3 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment, if that is the case!

Remember Angus? That boss had dropped over 13 pieces of legendary equipment!

Although Brocks might not drop legendary equipment, however, it would be more than just satisfying if the boss could drop 13 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment! After all, players would not be able to equip the legendary equipment, even if they really get it from the boss currently. It would be more practical to get the Ascended Tier equipment that they could equip on the spot upon acquiring them.

Every single player who had reached level 180 soon gathered around. However, among the players who reached Level 180 and beyond, only Galileo the pretty face, Ten Dusk the cold face, and Female Raid Covent the loli pursuer were able to hit Level 180. Even though everyone had Inheritance Transformations to spare, if Brocks turns out to be a World boss, they would not be able to even survive the boss with their current numbers. There wouldn't be much hope at slaying the boss if that is the case!

The system had been using 'announcements' to urge the players to come and battle bosses. Well, first of all, they wanted to encourage the players to battle against each other. Secondly, that would also mean that the boss would not be easy to take on. So everyone would have to get together in order to defeat the boss!



# Chapter 778: The Function of the Kingcross's Sword

---

Zhang Yang and the others were gathered at Marlin's Land of Salt. After that, they departed for the Bavarian's Castle together. After rushing along for more than 2 hours, they finally arrived at their destination.

Even though this was the lair of Brocks, there was no way that that maniac could have single-handedly 'saltified' the entire land. The walls have been corroded so badly that they looked ancient. There was no telling how long this castle had been there.

Zhang Yang and the gang were not the first to reach the castle, though. There were already many players battling against some jellyfish-like monsters. These monsters had translucent skins. However, they did not have any eyes, nor ears, nor hands and legs! They did not even have a single bone in their body. They were basically wiggling their way through everything!

[Decayed Beast] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 190

HP: 9,500,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,871 – 126,871

Skills:

[Water Drain]: Sucks the target dry and causes the target to lose 100,000 HP.

[Salt Prison]: Excretes crystallized salt and imprisons the target. The target cannot move. Lasts for 3 seconds.

Note: Monsters coming from the void. They were summoned by their ancestor Brocks. They live in water. Their secret crystallized

salt that can imprison anything! In the vast universe, many planets have been killed off by them!

The moment Zhang Yang and the gang approached the castle, they were forced to land by the system. Even though they were not forcefully dismounted from their mounts, the system obviously did not allow players to fly straight into the castle. Players would need to approach the castle on foot.

So, that was why everyone was clogged up by the monsters in the surroundings instead of flying straight through the castle door. It seemed that everyone was forced to even take off their underpants!

"Let's move in!" Zhang Yang said.

There was a possibility that Brocks could be a World Boss. If that turns out to be true, players would need to join forces together in order to defeat the boss. The players could think about battling each other only after they have taken down the boss. Because of that one possibility, everyone was playing nice all along. They did not attack the other players nor were they being attacked by the other players. Each party went on forward in their own directions. The castle was just huge. They would not have to worry about having to fight over monsters.

Not long after Zhang Yang and his gang joined the battle, other parties from other top Tier guilds were arriving as well. That included Crimson Rage, Hell Family, Land of Savages, Dark Palace and many more. Of course, there were also other parties that had been formed temporarily as well. Because some of them came from guilds that were not powerful, and some of them didn't even have a guild, so they temporarily formed a party to join the battle.

There was already quite a number of Level 180 players at the current stage of the game. Zhang Yang took a glance across the battlefield and estimated that there were at least tens of thousands of players who have reached Level 180. It was a normal phenomenon, though. Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 184

while Han Ying Xue and the others had reached Level 182. Basically, the majority of the players from all eight Regions were insanely grinding.

The Decayed Beasts were roaming all over the places. However, Elite Tier monsters could only perform as well as an Elite Tier monster. Now, the players have reached Level 180 and beyond. Furthermore, the players that were present on the map were basically the core players of the top Tier guilds all around the world. So the players were able to lay waste to all the monsters with their absolute advantage in the aspect of Power Level.

However, the number of the monsters was just abundant. Whenever monsters were killed, the others would fill in their shoes and be killed again by players. It was as if the monsters were spawning endlessly! After slaying the monsters for over 2 to 3 hours, the Decayed Beasts finally stopped spawning. The players swept up the remaining monsters one by one until the entire army of the monsters was wiped out clean.

"You imbeciles! How dare you intrude into my land and behave so atrociously!" Suddenly, a rageful roar echoed throughout the surroundings. The silhouette of a man stood on the top of a tall building in the surroundings. The shadow leaped itself from the top of the building down to the ground and landed like a superhero. It was a middle-aged man wearing a Spellcaster's robe. He had a crimson red staff in his hand. His face was filled with pride and arrogance.

"Haha! Don't even think about getting out of here alive! You were as good as dead when you decided to step foot onto my territory!" The middle-aged man laughed like a madman. He raised his staff and swung it across the air. Countless dark orbs of lights shot straight towards the players in the vicinity.

Whoever who got touched by the dark lights were afflicted with a damage value. Each of the players received at least 300,000 damage. Spellcasters and Priests who had low amounts of HP lost

half of their HP bar after that one single hit.

[Ambitious Schemer Brocks] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level: 200

HP: 100,000,000,000

Defence: 32,470

Magic Attack: 152,165 – 252,165

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Instant activation. Range: 1,000 meters. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Soul Penetrate]: Scourges the soul of the targets, causing 500,000 Chaos Damage to all targets within the range of 1,000 meters.

[Shadow Arrow Barrage]: Causes 300,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 1,000 meters.

[Soul Bomb]: When players leave the boss by more than 1,000 meters, they will immediately blow up and die on the spot. Range: 1,000 meters.

[Life Support]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: The Brocks Family has been reproducing a large quantity of Decayed Beasts over countless years. There is no way to stop their ambition of conquering the entire world!

After the boss revealed himself to the players, the players also noticed that they could fly again. Since the boss had revealed itself, wide in the open, there was no reason for the players to hold back at all. Before that, the system had restricted the players from flying because they wanted to prevent the players from triggering the appearance of the boss too soon. The system intended to gather more players in one spot before triggering the appearance of the

boss.

"{Soul Penetrate}?!\" Zhang Yang let out a shocking scream. Didn't the Kingcross Sword that he stored back in the bank had the ability to nullify this Skill?

"Haha! We've hit the jackpot!" Everyone knew that Zhang Yang had acquired that useless piece of sword back in the day. No one ever thought that the sword would become so useful, all of a sudden!

"I'm going back to get the Kingcross's Sword. Just stay put until I get back!" Zhang Yang immediately teleported back to Sauron's Castle with his Teleportation Scroll. Then, he teleported back to the main city to get the sword out from the bank. After all that was done, he teleported back to the gang by using his [Lover's Charm].

The entire process only took 5 minutes. It appeared that the item was extremely practical and convenient. It did not degrade or lose its uses even after the players level up.

The other parties had engaged in battle with the boss. Even though it was just 5 minutes into the battle, everyone had noticed the boss's two major AoE Skills and their cooldown period: The {Soul Penetration} had a 5-second cooldown while the {Shadow Arrow Barrage} had a 6-second cooldown. In other words, the boss could deal approximately 150,000 DPS to a bunch of players!

Even Holy Knights who excel in healing a single target would not be capable of healing enough amount of HP to catch up with that amount of damage --- unless the players had activated their Inheritance Transformation! However, even if player with Class B Inheritance had activated their Inheritance Transformation, they could only boost their healing capability two times higher. They could still be capable of healing one single target at a time. However, they would be helpless if they were required to heal multiple targets at the same time.

Under the bombardment of the boss, many players who had

activated their Inheritance Transformation were beginning to lose their footings. They began to fall from the sky, one after another.

--- thanks to the existence of {Soul Penetration}, the players would automatically die if they ever get more than 1,000 meters further away from the boss after getting near to the boss. Therefore, they could only move forward. They could not afford to retreat after getting into range with the boss. The moment they retreat too much, they would die on the spot!

The surrounding of the castle did not have invisible air walls around and players could resurrect themselves indefinitely by running back to their dead bodies. However, those who die would no longer be able to use their Inheritance Transformation for the next 72 hours. Without the power boost, these players would not last long at all under the bombardment of the boss's attacks!

It did not take long for the boss to slay most of the players in the vicinity. Meanwhile, the HP bar of the boss remained full for the most part, because of the boss's {Life Support}.

So, how should anyone proceed in order to defeat this boss then?

Without being able to use Inheritance Transformation, it would be pointless if players were able to resurrect with a full amount of HP and fly back to the boss. They would need at least 10 seconds to get back to the boss! By doing so, they would be receiving another 1,500,000 damage before they could even touch the boss again after they manage to resurrect. Without the boost from their Inheritance Transformation, they would be dead when they get near to the boss. They would not be able to deal a single point of damage on the boss!

Even if the boss could only be taken down with a large number of players, the boss had to be vulnerable, to begin with! Under such circumstances, nothing would work on the boss at all! Any efforts would go to waste if the players do not find a way to overcome the problem!

So, this is how powerful an Ascended Tier boss can be! So, this is what despair feels like, in the face of an overwhelmingly powerful boss!

When they were battling against Angus, the players still had an Ascended Tier boss to act as both shield and spear on their side. But now, they had no one aiding them in this boss battle? So what should they do?

Zhang Yang did not launch his attacks at the boss immediately. He intended to let the others use up their Inheritance Transformations first before he charges at the boss! As mentioned earlier, a player would definitely not be able to get near the boss without getting themselves killed. So, if Zhang Yang just waits patiently until the others use up their Inheritance Transformations, there would be no one who could try to snatch the boss from him.

Under the ferocious slaughtering of the boss, about 90% of the players were killed once. Meanwhile, most of them were killed while Transformed. There was no escape in the sky, and there was no escape on the ground either. So, most of the players were tortured to death by the boss alive! There was no way of running at all!

Well, only parties from Dark Palace, Hell Family, Land of Savages and other top Tier guilds did not make any moves towards the boss. They were maintaining a distance of 2 to 3 kilometers between themselves and the boss. They were sitting back, trying to come up with a strategy to take down the boss. Unfortunately, without the Kingcross's Sword's special effect, they would never be able to find a viable way of killing the boss even if they break their heads trying to think. Well, this Boss was too overwhelmingly powerful for any player to handle at the current stage of the game.

This quest for acquiring the Kingcross's Sword was not unique after all. That being said, every party could get the sword if they

accept the quest. However, there were no hints nor signs of the quest from the system at all. How could anyone have known about the existence of the sword and its divine function of countering the boss' strongest AoE Skill?!

One hour, two hours, three hours... after a number of parties got themselves killed a couple of times, they finally announced that they would like to give up on killing the boss. Many parties had left the battlefield, one after another. From their point of views, they believed that it was impossible to slay Brocks at the current stage of the game. They believed that they needed to gather more players with at least a full set of Holy Tier Armor before they could bring Brocks down to his knees.

Without numbers, a World Boss will never be defeated. Finally, top Tier guild including the Hell Family and Land of Savages were beginning to pull their troops back. Based on the remaining number of players on the battlefield, there was no hope for any of them to slay the boss anymore. So, they decided not to waste time on the matter. If that is the case, why don't they spend their precious time on clearing the Spectre's Hidden Cavern. They could quickly collect a full set of Holy Tier equipment for each of their members by doing that repeatedly.

While watching the other parties retreating one after another, Zhang Yang began to laugh out loud. Then he said, "It's our turn to put up a good show!"

"Hehe!" Everyone from Zhang Yang's party smiled and laughed.

Zhang Yang activated the special effect of Kingcross's Sword. At the same time, he activated his Inheritance Transformation as well. Phoenix pet and Felice did not stand idly by either. They also activated their own Transformation Skill before charging towards the boss.

The rest of Zhang Yang's party had also activated their Inheritance Transformations. The ones with Class A Inheritance



had the ability to fly in the air while the rest just rode on their Mounts, charging towards the boss as swiftly as they could.

Because the players around the boss were all slain, Brocks was no longer in his Battle Mode. Now, he had a full bar of HP. Upon noticing Zhang Yang and his gang approaching him at high speed, Brocks began to let loose his {Shadow Arrows} at them before Zhang Yang and the gang could set foot into the range of 1,000 meters from the boss. 1 second right after he activated his {Shadow Arrow}, Brocks activated his {Soul Penetrate,} spreading countless dark orbs of radiating lights towards his enemies.

# Chapter 779: The Revival of a Salted Fish

---

Immune!

The dark lights landed solidly on everyone who was approaching the boss. However, the word 'Immune' popped right on top of everyone's head! If there were any other players left in the surroundings to witness this, they would be able to see that the boss's {Soul Penetrate} could do nothing to anyone around him! None of them would suffer any damage or lose any HP!

{Soul Penetrate}!

The moment everyone set foot within the range of 1,000 meters from the boss, everyone was afflicted with the negative effect of the {Soul Penetrate}. From that moment on, if anyone ever gets out of the range of 1,000 meters from the boss, that player would be killed instantly!

{Shadow Arrow Barrage}!

Throughout the 10-second gap when Zhang Yang and his gang were approaching the boss, that timeframe had become the boss's time for his individual performance on stage! He repeatedly struck out with countless of dark arrows into all directions. The arrows were scattering into the surroundings, hitting anything within the ranged attack of the boss.

However, that 10-second gap was just as long as breathing in some air and breathing out again. Zhang Yang was the first one to arrive before the boss. He raised his battle axe up and gave the boss a solid slash.

'-742,033!'

A damage value popped right up on top of the boss. Everyone was shocked to see that amount of damage value! It was terrifying! Zhang Yang's normal attack was about to reach a million, soon! Holy sh\*t!

With that Attack power, Zhang Yang could already oppress a Holy Tier boss like a boss himself! After all, the power level of the boss was not exhibited through the single attacks, but through their terrifying AoE attacks and their long \*ss HP bars.

Han Ying Xue and the others were a little slower than Zhang Yang. Everyone settled down in their own positions. The Healers were healing the party's HP bars back to full while the DPS players were dealing intense damage to the boss. Everyone was doing their own parts in the battle, trying to bring the boss's HP bar down.

Brocks had over 100,000,000,000 HP, and the ability to recover 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. In other words, the boss had the ability to heal 3,330,000 HP with every passing second. Meanwhile, if the party wants to empty out the HP bar of the boss entirely in two hours, they would have to deal a party DPS of  $1,390,000 + 3,330,000 = 4,710,000$  damage!

With the party's current firepower, it would be quite difficult for them to deal so much damage. Zhang Yang decided to put his faith on the third time of his {Glare of the Death God}. The party would need to have at least one successful attempt of activating the {Glare of the Death God} in order to make up with their insufficient firepower at slaying the boss.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang and the party had the special effect of the Kingcross's Sword to support them. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and Female Raid Covent's super healing capabilities were extremely strong. So, the HP bars of all Zhang Yang's party members were maintained at a safe level.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resisted!

Zhang Yang sighed. Although he still had 2 more attempts, it would still be too impractical and risky to put his faith on a Skill that triggers by such a slim chance! After giving it some thoughts, Zhang Yang contacted Snow Seeker through her private chat.

Then he said, "Guildmaster Snow, I come bearing a gift!"

"Oh? What kind of gift?" Snow Seeker said in a calm manner. Well, she would never believe that Zhang Yang would really give her something worthwhile, anyway.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Come back and fight Brocks with us. I have absolute confidence in slaying the boss. However, there are only 12 of us here. The quest can be completed by 20 players. So if we kill the boss now, the other 8 spots will go to waste. Since you're always there for me and my men, I can give the 8 spots to you. You will get Skill Point as the reward for completing the quest!"

"Just Skill Points?"

"Of course, guildmaster Snow. You mustn't be too greedy!"

"Humph! Guildmaster Zhan Yu, you're not this nice usually. What makes you come and beg? You're short on men? So you want us to help you out?"

"You're kidding, right? Do you think that's possible?"

"The boss' loot! We want half!"

"... Bye bye!"

"One-third of the loots then!"

"BYE BYE!"

"A quarter of the loots then!"

"Alright! However, you can only have a quarter of all the equipment dropped by the boss. Items are not included!" Zhang Yang also knew that the two Skill Points were far too little for Snow Seeker to accept the offer. If Zhang Yang really sweeps all the loots to himself in front of Crimson Rage, the ladies would definitely feel cheated and infuriated at the same time. They might even decide to never work together with him ever again!

"Deal! However, if you get at least 4 pieces of Ascended Tier

equipment, you must promise to give us at least one of them!"

"No problem!"

After adding eight of the Crimson Rage members to his party, Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] and summoned Snow Seeker and 7 others from Crimson Rage over to his location. Zhang Yang had informed them to activate their Inheritance Transformation before they are summoned over. Well, the lady army was greeted by the boss's crazy bombarding attacks the moment they arrived. However, Zhang Yang activated the special effect of the Kingcross's Sword once again at the correct timing, and everyone was immune to the effect of the boss's {Soul Penetrate}.

"So this is it... how did you managed to get such a secret weapon?" Snow Seeker's eyes were glittering while she looked at Zhang Yang. Having a weapon that can nullify the boss's {Soul Penetrate} was like nullifying the boss's strongest AoE Skill. The boss's {Shadow Arrow Barrage} could only deal a DPS 50,000 damage. The three Healers in Zhang Yang's party wouldn't even break a sweat.

Well, Brocks was impossible for the players to take him head-on at the current stage of the game. It was not because the boss's single attacks were too oppressively powerful, it was actually because the boss could combine his {Shadow Arrow Barrage} and {Soul Penetrate} and utilize them perfectly together to form a deadly combo. That was how the boss was able to wipe out all of his enemies within the vicinity of his attacks. However, once the players are able to counter that deadly combination, the boss would become a 'fallen god'. When that happens, the players would only have to focus on dealing as much as damage as they could to the boss.

95%, 90%, 85% ... the HP bar of the boss was reducing steadily at a very slow pace.

Even though the other guilds had retreated away from the battle to slay Brocks, a few players had stayed behind in the vicinity to observe the situation. If there are ever any unexpected developments on the situation, these players would be able to report the situation back to their guilds. By then, they would be able to come up with some countermeasures.

These players had been wandering around the surroundings, slaying quite a number of monsters. They were a little bit shocked to see that there were some players still attempting to fight the boss.

At first, they were not bothered by it at all. They deeply believed that it was impossible for anyone to defeat the boss. However, they started to realize that something was odd. The HP bar of the boss was reducing at an average pace. However, the players didn't seem like they would fall anytime soon!

They were instantly shocked by what they saw with their own eyes. So they quickly reported the news back to their 'headquarters'. However, that map was extremely vast! Players would need about 3 to 4 hours to travel back to this spot even if they were on the Marlin's Land of Salt. They would require more time if they were to travel from Territories around to this spot.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and the others only needed two hours to slay the boss!

--- Actually, if players could not take down the boss in two hours, they would have to give up by then. Even if they had Healers who were capable of maintaining their HP bars at the safe level, they would still need to have enough firepower in order to get the job done. If they do not have enough firepower, the boss's HP would rise back to full eventually.

Zhang Yang wanted to wait for the players to leave first before he begins touching the boss. Well, he had his reasons. If someone suddenly activated their Inheritance Transformation and charges

in at the crucial final moment to land a hit, those players would stand a chance to steal all the loot the boss.

When the number of players in the vicinity are high, there would be no telling how chaotic the 'snatching' would get.

Now that the players were gone, Zhang Yang and his party could peacefully fight the boss. Even if someone charges in to interrupt at the final moment of the boss battle, they would be very small in numbers. There should not be any high Tier players in the surrounding of the boss currently --- well, which high Tier players would waste their time standing idly by the side, observing the situation of a boss battle?

However, they were afraid that the situation might suddenly change without any signs of warning. So, the gang was focusing their full firepower on the boss. They just wanted the boss battle to end as soon as possible. The loot would only be theirs if they manage to sweep the loot into their own pockets.

Poor Brocks was a World boss, after all. However, after his {Soul Penetrate} had lost its threatening factor, the boss was a tiger without its teeth. Although the tiger would still have claws that are sharp as f\*ck, the tiger would still lose most of its power. That really made Brocks vulnerable. The players could defeat him under those circumstances!

70%, 50%, 30%!

Zhang Yang attempted to throw another {Glare of the Death God} on the boss. However, he suffered the same fate as it was for the first time. However, the eight ladies had joined in to aid them. So, their firepower had reached the 'minimum standard' required to defeat the boss. Judging from the firepower of the entire party, they should be able to take out the boss within 100 to 110 minutes!

20%!

The boss was infuriated. He was activating his {Soul Penetrate} at

a more frequent rate. However, that Skill could not even cause an itch in the players. So, Brocks could only stand there and let the players slaughter him up with their 'Killing Cleave' Skills. His HP bar had gone down to 10% in a very swift manner!

At the same time, the cooldown of Brocks's {Shadow Arrow Barrage} had been shortened from 6 seconds down to 3 seconds. So, the DPS of the boss was increased from 50,000 damage to 100,000 damage! However, because the 3 Healers managed to heal everyone up to the safe level before the HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 10%, everyone was far from danger. Meanwhile, their Inheritance Transformations had boosted their initial HP amounts by a lot. Therefore, they could still stay alive for quite a while even if the boss bombards them with his powerful attacks.

Furthermore, Han Ying Xue still had not used her {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}. Well, that godly Skill could potentially heal everyone on the party back to their full health states!

8%, 5%, 2%, 1%!

"Argh ---" Brocks let out a miserable scream and slammed his face on the ground from midair. Then, he dropped tons of equipment and many other items upon his death. Brocks was really generous. He was worthy of being called one of the World bosses!

'Ding! Congratulations for being the First Party in the server to slay an Ascended Tier Boss, your glorious deeds shall be remembered forever in the Historical List of the world. As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your party name will be published on the Historical List, allowing the world to praise you!'

Once the boss was dead, Zhang Yang immediately received a system notification. Although he had previously slain the king of the Emerald City, the system did not recognize that kill because Zhang Yang basically stole that kill. Therefore, the 'First Clear' for killing an Ascended Tier Boss had only appeared for the first time



here after they slew Brocks.

Zhang Yang would definitely not giving the advertising opportunity to the Crimson Rage. So, he quickly filled the empty column with his advertising phrase and let the server do its work. The notifications began to ring out across the entire server. Well, the notifications did cause quite a bit of havoc among the players all around the world. They could only sigh in regret as they halted. Since the boss had been taken care of, they had no reason to go back to the spot anymore.

"Loot time!" Wei Yan Er cheered. She immediately bounced over to the loots and picked them all up. Therefore, Zhang Yang switched the setting so that only the 'Captain' would be able to distribute the loots. Then, he passed the authority over to Wei Yan Er. Therefore, the little brat was the only one who could distribute the loot to the others.

The boss was being extremely generous this time. He dropped 10 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment and 5 pieces of Holy Tier equipment. Other than that, there were also 7 Skill Books, 4 pieces Skill Point Crystallizes, 7 pieces of Top Tier Aura Stones...

What a great bunch of loots the boss bestowed them!

"Let's distribute the loots first!" Zhang Yang quickly said. Well, Zhang Yang wanted to 'shoo' away the lady army. He wanted to prevent the ladies from noticing the value of their spoils. After all, they might have other ideas after knowing. Other than Snow Seeker, the other ladies from Crimson Rage were basically hoodlums. They would just use any means necessary to obtain what they want!

Zhang Yang acted very generously and said, "Guildmaster Snow, there are 10 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment here. So based on the promise I made for you, you can only take two of them. But I'm a generous person. Just take three then! Come, take them and go!"

Snow Seeker rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang. Then she

quickly picked up the equipment that Zhang Yang tossed over to her. After that, she said, "Though the Ascended Tier equipment are precious, there are items that are much better than enhancing our attributes!"

Well, speaking of which, Snow Seeker was content with what she got by the end of the deal. They knew that they were just here to run some errands for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could have invited other people instead of them, after all. So they had actually earned an easy fortune for themselves. It was really fortunate for them to obtain 3 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment and two Skill Points as the reward for completing the quest.

# Chapter 780: A Variable Tank

---

Snow Seeker went through the 10 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment over and over again without being able to make up her mind at all. After struggling hard for over half a day, she finally decided to take the three Ascended Tier equipment that she handpicked. After that, Snow Seeker led the lady army and left for White Jade Castle. They wanted to stand by at the main city until Zhang Yang and their gang get back, before they hand in the quest together.

Among the 7 Ascended Tier equipment, there were two Heavy Armor, three Leather Armor, and two Cloth Armor. Snow Seeker took one ring, one necklace, and one accessory. Well, her decision was reasonable. Defensive equipment were much easier to come by. However, necklaces, rings, and accessories were very rare in the game. It would be much more difficult to farm for them.

However, the additional attributes of the three pieces of Ascended Tier equipment that Snow Seeker took were lower. It was hard to tell if Snow Seeker had made the right choice.

After distributing the three Leather Armor and the two Cloth Armor, it was time for the final two Heavy Armor. One was a pair of pants while the other was a helmet.

[Xenopus-Scaled Helmet] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +39,207

Strength: +7,009

Agility: +2,916

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 78,410 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,070 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Ten Dusk immediately expressed that he was just tagging along. He did not believe that he deserved any of the loot. He had no intention of claiming any of the loot at all. Well, everyone praised him for that. Well, in fact, he and Female Raid Covert did not really contribute much in the boss battle. So, if they were to be included in the distribution of the equipment, even if the gang would not disagree, they might not be that happy about it.

On the other hand, Endless Starlight's face was much thicker than a concrete wall. Of course, part of the main reason was because he had been part of the gang for quite some time now. As a secondary Tanker on the party, he would need to power up himself a little bit from time to time!

However, equipment for Knights would have much higher stats in terms of Intelligence Attributes. Although that helmet was also suitable for a Knight, it was obvious that he was not the most suitable person for that helmet. Well, he was in fact the most unqualified person among the gang for the moment. Therefore, the equipment could only go to either Zhang Yang or Wei Yan Er. However, Zhang Yang decided to take the greaves instead. So, he passed it on to the little brat.

The helmet that he currently wore was a Level 170 Holy Tier equipment. However, the greaves that he had on him was just a Level 150 Ethereal Tier equipment. It was obvious that he could get more power if he switches his greaves away.

[Dark Abyss Greaves] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +40,239

Strength: +6,882

Agility: +3,002

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 80,470 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,070 damage when hit.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Endless Starlight had no lots nor luck with this piece of equipment. He could only drool at it. Meanwhile, even though Ten Dusk was admiring the equipment as well, he kept himself well under control.

After they were done distributing the equipment, it was time for them to look at the items.

The four Skill Point Crystals were distributed according to their turns. Zhang Yang acquired one of the Skill Point Crystals. With the other Skill Point that he acquired from the system when he reached Level 180, he added the two Skill Points to his {Force Strike}. Currently, his {Force Strike} had reached Level 7. After adding the other two Skill Points that he acquired from the quest reward, his {Force Strike} would become Level 9. So, one more level there. One more level before his {Force Strike} could become a Skill that would always trigger an additional attack that would always be a Critical Hit!

As for the 7 pieces of Top-Tier Aura Stone, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream took 5 of them and added the stones onto their {Companion Aura} and {Recovery Aura}. By doing so, they managed to level up their Aura Skills up to Level 10. The remaining two were given to Fatty Han. Since he only had his {Companion

Aura}, it would not matter at all if his Aura Skill is not maxed out.

The Skill Books were distributed based on the numbers they rolled. Zhang Yang was a little unlucky today. He did not even get a Skill Book by the end of it. However, Wei Yan Er gave him a pleasant surprise right after that --- [Book of Revelation: Chapter 7]!

He currently had the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 1-6] with him. With this newly acquired Chapter 7 and Chapter 8 that Sun Xin Yu was holding, Zhang Yang had finally collected the first 8 chapters of the [Book of Revelation]!

Before Zhang Yang could even make a sound, Sun Xin Yu took out the Chapter 8 and passed it to Zhang Yang immediately. After combining them, Zhang Yang only had one more chapter before he could finally combine the chapters into one complete book. So, where is this Chapter 9 now?

The combination of the first eight chapters of the [Book of Revelation] could provide 40% additional Attack to the entire party. Also, players on the same party as the holder could immediately get resurrected with 80% HP remaining. Furthermore, the cooldown of the resurrection had been shortened to 3 hours only! Other than that, the Skill's enhancement effect had been improved to enhance two Skills.

After picking up the quest item 'Brocks's Staff', all loot had now been picked up except for one.

[Goblin War Chariot Enhanced 2.0] (Tank)

Use: Summons or dismantles a tank that can fit 10 persons.  
Casting time: 10 seconds.

Required Level: 180

Bound upon pick up.

"Tank? What the heck is this?" Everyone was surprised to see such a thing among the loot.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Let's decide who takes it. Then the person will be able to put out its description on the system."

Everyone began to roll. By the end of it, Wei Yan Er rolled out 99 points and won the bet. So, she managed to secure the ownership of the tank. When she picked up the tank model that was the size of her palm, the system immediately refreshed and a system notification appeared.

'System Notification: The first Tank has been spawned. The Tank System has been officially unlocked! Please visit our official websites for more information about the Tank System!'

Everyone was very interested in the new Tank System. So, many of them logged off the game to take a look at the new system's information on the Official Website.

According to Zhang Yang's understanding, there are four different models of Tank with four different passenger capacities. The 1.0 model Tank can carry 5 persons. Then the 2.0 model Tank can carry 10 persons. Meanwhile, the 3.0 model Tank can carry 20 persons. Last but not least, the 4.0 model Tank can carry up to a total of 50 persons. Each model of the tanks can be purchased from any army facility in any of the main cities in the server. However, the price would be...

The 1.0 model was the cheapest among all models. Each one was priced at 200,000 gold pieces. The 2.0 model was a little more expensive than the 1.0 model. Players would require to spend 500,000 gold pieces in order to get one. Meanwhile, the 3.0 model would cost 1,000,000 gold pieces and the 4.0 model would cost 5,000,000 gold pieces! Because 1 gold piece is currently equal to 1 dollar in real life, the price of each Tank was as expensive as a sports car in real life!

Obviously, other than the rich players, normal players would not even think about having one of these tanks! Furthermore, it would

be pointless if someone buys a Tank for him or herself. The Tanks would require a sufficient number of 'passengers' in order to function at its full functionality and potential.

Everyone logged back into the game. Then Zhang Yang and the gang went back to the main city to hand in the quest 'Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks'. All 20 of them had acquired the 2 additional Skill Points and everyone was quite happy about it, of course.

Zhang Yang picked 20 of the most loyal and trustable members from his guild. Then, he transferred 5,000,000 gold pieces to each of them from his own pocket. Well, his intention was to let them purchase a Tank Model 4.0 for themselves. 20 Tanks could fit 1,000 players, after all. That would make them into the most powerful source of firepower of the guild.

By doing so, Zhang Yang had just spent over 1,000,000,000 gold pieces in one single go. However, he could still run the Territories because Lone Desert Smoke had his back. Therefore, it was a wise move to try improving the firepower of Lone Desert Smoke in some sense. When his guild becomes much stronger, Zhang Yang would be able to hold his grip firmly over the Territories that he has right now. Well, if any other guild is capable of purchasing 20 Tanks and declaring Territory Conquests over one of his territories with the Tanks...

One single Model 4.0 Tank could fit 50 players. From the perspective of HP, one Tank could have more HP amount than a player who has activated a Class S Inheritance Transformation. However, the movement speed of a Tank was extremely slow. Tanks could be used for pushing a boss in the Open World, or some large-scaled war, or party battles such as Territory Conquests.

The Tanks could only stack the HP Amount of the players but not their Attacks. Just imagine this. There are 20 players in a 3.0 Model Tank. Each of them could only deal a basic attack of 10,000 damage. So when the Tank that is filled with 20 players encounters



a boss with a Defence of 11,000 points, the Tank could only deal 20 separate forms of damage to the boss in each round of its attack. The Attack power of the players would not be able to stack up to a total of 200,000 damage to deal an effective amount of 190,000 damage.

On the other hand, a player with a Class B Inheritance who has 10,000 basic damage could increase his or her Attack up, ranging from 20,000 to 30,000 when he or she activates Inheritance Transformation. Unlike the Tank, the player could deal a damage value that penetrates the boss' Defence. The player could potentially be a thousand times stronger than the other 10 players combined.

In other words, Tanks could only boost the survival capability of the players. It had nothing to do with increasing Attack or Defence of the players. It would just deal as much damage to the target as it is supposed to. Well, a Tank could carry players altogether and sum up the amount of HP every player has, allowing the 10 to 20 players to all share the sum of their HP under one bar. Therefore, no one on the Tank would die if the total amount of HP on the Tank is not depleted. From a certain point of view, Tanks could still increase the Attack of the players --- the Attack power of the players would only be increased if they are able to stay alive.

Although 20 Tanks did not seem to be that much, the cost of purchasing 20 of them had reached up to a total of 1,000,000,000 gold pieces. Not every guild could afford to spend such an amount of money in one shot. Well, when they go to slay a World Boss in the future, Lone Desert Smoke would have the equivalent of 20 additional players with Class S Inheritance Transformation --- at least in terms of HP!

It would not really matter how many players rode the Tank. The Tank would be the focal point for their enemies to attack. Well, the concept would be similar to a player on a mount. The only difference was that the Defence of the merged mount and the

player would be determined based on the Defence of the player, which was also the owner of the mount. Meanwhile, the Defence of the Tanks would be based on their own Defence values.

Newly acquired Tanks would not have any Defence nor Magic Defence attributes. However, the players could purchase Chariot Fenders from the military facilities in the main cities to fortify their Tanks. There were two kinds of Chariot Fenders, one being Magic Defence, while the other being purely Defence. They would be graded into four different categories of grades, knowingly as A, B, C, and D.

Each D-grade Chariot Fender could provide 2,000 Defence Armor or any sort of 2,000 Magic Defence. Each of the C-grade Chariot Fender could provide 2,600 Defence Armor or any sort of 2,600 Magic Defence. Each B-grade Chariot Fender could provide 3,300 Defence Armor or any sort of 3,300 Magic Defence. Last but not least, the Each A-grade Chariot Fender could provide 4,000 Defence Armor or any sort of 4,000 Magic Defence.

However, players could not just purchase A-grade Chariot Fenders with money and install them on their Tanks. The owner of the Tank must reach the same level or grade first before they could acquire A-grade Chariot Fenders and use them effectively on their Tanks. Or else, the Chariot Fenders would just be like decoratives to the Tanks. D-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 180 before they become functional. C-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 210 before they become functional. B-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 240 before they become functional. Last but not the least, A-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 270 before they become functional.

It could not matter what type of Model the Tank is, one Tank could only bear as much as 10 Chariot Fenders at the same time. Magic Defence type or Defence type, Fire Resistance or Shadow Resistance, the types of Defence and Resistance could be mixed

freely, according to the players' free will. There were no limitations.

However, there would be certain limitations to it because there were over 5 different types of Magic Resistance. If players dabble too much with all 5 different types of Magic Resistance without focusing on any one of them, the effects would be watered down.

Among the 20 Model 4.0 Tanks that Zhang Yang purchased, 15 of them had been fortified with Grade-D Chariot Fenders. Each of them had over 20,000 Defence, which was much higher than Zhang Yang's current Defence value! The other 5 remaining Tanks were fortified with 10 pieces of Frost Resistance Chariot Fenders, 10 pieces of Fire Resistance Chariot Fenders or any other of the five types of Magic Resistance Chariot Fenders. They have been fortified accordingly to multiple situations.

Tanks do not have much durability to begin with. However, the Chariot Fenders do have durability. After losing their durability completely, these Chariot Fenders would lose their functionality. So, blacksmiths were required to be present nearby the Tanks in order to get the Chariot Fenders fixed. These Chariot Fenders were basically similar to players' equipment in terms of durability. In fact, these Chariot Fenders could be seen as the Tanks' equipment. They only add either Defence or Magic Resistance to the Tanks. However, the Vitality, Strength, and the other Attributes of the Tanks would be based on the players' stats.

# Chapter 781: Tank's Prowess

---

The moment the Tank System was implemented into the game, many guilds began to purchase the Tanks. The implementation of the new system had sparked the guild to spend fortunes to secure as many Tanks as they could. Even though not all guilds were as rich as Zhang Yang's Lone Desert Smoke, they just had to buy at least one or two Tanks to stay in the game! After all, one Model 4.0 Tank would have much more HP than a player that has activated his or her Class S Inheritance Transformation! Of course, the guilds would need such a powerful asset on their sides.

Furthermore, the Tanks initially existed in the form of small models that could be held in one's hand. They were similar to the 'leash' of a pet. So, the guilds could just keep the number of Tanks they possessed hidden deep up their sleeves to create an element of surprise for their enemies. They would only reveal how many Tanks they had during very crucial moments in battle.

Even the Model 1.0 Tanks cost 100,000 gold pieces each. The system had earned so much in just a couple of days. However, everyone was still buying in a frenzy, even though they were aware of it. Well, it cannot be helped, though. If your enemy has a Tank and you don't, you're basically f\*cked in a head-on battle. After all, a Tank would basically be as tough as a player who has activated his or her Inheritance Transformation.

The first thing that Wei Yan Er did after she logged back into the game was to drag Zhang Yang's \*ss over to the military quartermaster of the main city. There, she commanded Zhang Yang to purchase 10 pieces of D-grade Defensive Chariot Fenders so that she could fortify her Tank.

She tried to sound reasonable and said, "This Tank is going to help everyone, not just me! Of course, you can't expect me to pay for everything!"

Even though the Tanks were bound to whoever who picks them up, the Chariot Fenders were not. They could be traded freely among players. However, it would not actually benefit the players much. After all, only NPCs sell them in the main cities. So, the fact that the items were not 'bound upon pick up' only allows players to purchase the Chariot Fenders on behalf of the others.

Other than that, once the Chariot Fenders are installed on the Tanks, they would no longer be removed from the Tanks for others to use. They could only be replaced by new Chariot Fenders. Those Chariot Fenders on the Tanks would be automatically destroyed when they are replaced by new Chariot Fenders. Meanwhile, each D-grade Chariot Fender cost up to 2,000 gold pieces. That was because the game developers wanted to restrict players from switching the types of their Chariot Fenders without consequences.

For instance, players would have to use Defence-type Chariot Fenders to battle against Physical-type bosses. On the other hand, the players would have to use Magic-Defence-type Chariot Fenders to battle against Magic-type bosses. If they needed to switch the types of Chariot Fenders whenever they were going to battle different types of bosses, their finance would definitely run dry in the blink of an eye. Because of that, it would be wiser to purchase 6 Tanks and install different types of Chariot Fenders on each of them!

After installing the Chariot Fenders on her Tank, the little brat immediately felt an itch to try out her new 'toy'. She quickly summoned everyone over to Sauron's Castle, saying that she wanted to try out the functionality of the Tank she newly acquired.

Everyone in the gang was curious as well. So, it did not take long before all of them arrived at the entrance of the Sauron's Castle. After everyone arrived, Wei Yan Er took out the little tank model and started chanting. A stream of light flashed across the model. In

just an instant, a heavily armored Tank appeared right before the little brat's eyes. The Tank had an open roof. So, players could just hop off the Tank anytime they wanted to. Of course, the main intention was to make it much more convenient for the players to attack from within the Tank.

Everyone got up the Tank. Each of them had an automated request sent on their behalf, asking to board to Wei Yan Er. They could only get on the Tank when Wei Yan Er approved their requests. Or else, they would be forbidden from getting up the Tank.

"Oi! Little Yan Er! Why don't you let me in?" Other than Fatty Han and Endless Starlight, everyone was on board already. Fatty Han filled his cheeks with tears and look at the little brat.

"Kekeke!" Wei Yan Er laughed like a little b\*tch and said, "Wretched fatty, little Starlight. You two have never once behaved appropriately. So, the captain of this Tank forbids your entry!"

Even though that was the case at first, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight managed to sweet talk their way onto the Tank. They kept praising the little brat pretty and nice in order to get a pass to get on board.

"Charge! Let's kill ourselves some monsters!" Wei Yan Er was standing on the vehicle's front while raising her scythe up high and cried out loud. She looked like a powerful general giving orders for the Tank to move out --- the Tank is controlled by the owner. The control mechanism over the Tanks is basically similar to the control mechanism over the Mounts.

The Tank was crushing the ground as it was moving forward. The movement of the Tank was clumsy, sluggish, and noisy. It attracted quite some attention from the players in their surroundings. Many revealed a sense of admiration and envy on their faces when they saw Zhang Yang and the gang riding on a Tank.

However, the movement speed of the Tank was extremely slow. It could only move a little faster than the normal movement speed of a player when they are on foot. Because of that, everyone began to feel bored after a short burst of excitement. They were now behaving just like white-collared workers taking their daily commute.

Wei Yan Er smiled awkwardly and she quickly kept the Tank into her inventory. Then, everyone summoned their Flying Mounts and made their way to Sylrokia. They decided to camp at that site to slay monsters and complete some quests for the moment.

Thanks to the influence of the Kingcross's Sword, everyone tried to complete the quests on the map. Everyone became skeptical on whether there would be some other similar quest items such as this sword. Furthermore, Ascended Tier bosses would not just sit tightly at a corner, waiting for players to find them and kill them. They would only be spawned by the system at certain time. So, before the bosses were spawned, no one would have any idea on what kind of insane Skills the bosses would have.

Upon arriving at a small valley, Zhang Yang and the gang noticed that the valley was full of wolves. They were basically Level 190-195 Normal Tier monsters. Although their numbers were abundant, they were not closely packed together. So, it would be impossible for Zhang Yang and the gang to kill them all in one shot.

Well, their main purpose was to try out the new Tank, after all. So Wei Yan Er quickly summoned the Tank and let everyone get onboard. After that, they charged out valiantly and marched towards the wolf's den with high spirit.

"Oooooo---" a wild wolf howled and charged towards the Tank. It reached out with its sharp claws and landed a solid strike on the Chariot Fender by the side of the Tank. The impact rang out and everyone received a damage value that popped right on top of them. The damage values on them ranged randomly from 2,000 damage to 5,000 damage.

Among them all, Zhang Yang was the one who had the most Defence. However, he received the most damage out of the gang. Therefore, Zhang Yang was the one who received the 5,000 damage. The others received less damage.

Well, the main reason was due to the fact that the Defence and Damage Immunity of everyone was based on the Defence of the Tank. The basic attack of the wild wolf was approximately 56,000 points. After applying the 20,000 Defence of the Tank's Defence, the wolf could only deal 36,000 damage to the Tank. As there were 10 of them on the Tank, the damage received by the tank was divided equally among the 10 of them in terms of percentages.

However, that would not mean that every one of them would receive 3,600 damage. Because the system wanted to apply the idea of 'sharing the same fate' to every single player on the same tank. Therefore, the deduction of HP would be based on percentage ratio. The system would make sure the HP bar for each of the players on the Tank would drop down to 99%, 90%, 70%.

Because Zhang Yang's HP was the highest among his gang, he received the most damage compared to the others based on the percentage ratio. Meanwhile, the players' Defence would not be accounted for when they are on the Tank. Or else, they would have their own Defence and the Tank's Defence stacked on together, making them so powerful that they might not even receive a single damage from the monsters!

--- All high Tier equipment had the special effect of absorbing damage. For instance, even though Sun Xin Yu and the others did not have shields on them, each of them also had over approximately 10,000 damage absorption. If they could really stack their own Defence and the Tank's Defence altogether, then any damage that is under 12,000 damage would not be able to cause a single damage point on them!

So obviously, that would not be the actual scenario!



Tanks would only enhance the survival ability of the players. They can't make players invincible!

After that, the gang began to launch their attacks on the wolf. After bombarding the wolf with their insanely powerful attacks, the monster died.

However, because the movement speed of the Tank was extremely slow, the gang believed that it was not a good idea to stay on the Tank if they wanted to grind. Of course, the gang could split up a little and lure the monsters to the Tank first before wiping them all out at once.

It did not take long before everyone lost their patience with the super slow movement speed of the Tank. One by one, they hopped off the Tank and began to walk on their own pairs of feet.

Well, the movement speed was not the only disadvantage that the Tank had. Players would not be able to use quite a number of their powerful Skills. Skills such as {Ambush}, {Vanish}, {Fake Death}, {Thunder Strike} and many more would not be available while they are on a Tank. Other than that, there would only be one Tank on the aggro list of the monsters when they engage into battles. Players were like the weapons installed on the Tank. So, the monsters would not ignore the single unit on their aggro list, even if one of the Hunter onboard activates his or her {Fake Death}.

Wei Yan Er was the only one who got excited over the Tank. So after noticing everyone's dull reaction, she kept the Tank back into her Inventory and pouted in a huff.

Because of the new Tank System, many Nation Wars, Party Wars and Territory Conquests happened all over the server. The sides that had more Tanks obviously had the advantage over the sides that had lesser Tanks. Because of that, many guilds all over the server had been forced to invest more money on acquiring as many Tanks as they could.

Therefore, the number of Tanks and the number of players with Inheritance Transformations had become factors that determine a guild's power level!

And because of that, many average guilds that had not been performing well suddenly became powerful just because they had a guildmaster that's rich as f\*ck. However, because Tanks could only be used when players had reached Level 180, many guilds could only keep the Tanks in their warehouse for the moment even they were able to buy a large quantity of Tanks.

Another month had passed in a blink of an eye. The fame had entered another phase that Level 180 was the mainstream level in the game. Many players had attained Level 180 and beyond at that point of the game. Because of that, large-scale war between Regions had now become very common in the game. Well, there were many guilds who were not willing to stay in the shadow of others. So, they wanted to prove themselves by triggering wars.

Meanwhile, the Eternal Flame had become a powerful guild. Furthermore, Zhong Xiu Hua was a rich f\*cker who never runs out of money. So when his guild had gathered a certain number of Level 180 players, he decided to launch a Territory Conquest on Sauron's Castle.

During that siege, the Eternal Flame had sent 13 Model 4.0 Tanks into the battle --- it was not because Zhong Xiu Hua only purchased that amount of Tanks. It was because he could only gather 500+ Level 180 players which was only enough to fill up 13 Model 4.0 Tanks.

Greeted with the ferocious siege from the Eternal Flame, Zhang Yang did not falter at all. He had nothing to worry about, after all. So, he sent 15 Model 4.0 Tanks into the battle (limited by the same factor – he could only gather that many Level 180 players). So, the two guilds had clashed in a fierce battle.

Having 28 Model 4.0 Tanks in the battlefield was basically like

having 28 players with Class S Inheritance Transformations. However, there was also a power level difference, even though every single one of them were players with Class S Inheritances. Well, the same went to the Tanks. Although the Chariot Fenders on the Tanks were all D-grade, and it sounded like there was no difference at all, the 'HP' and 'Attack Power' of the Tanks would still vary based on the players on them!

Just imagine this. If one Tank is filled with players wearing Ethereal Tier equipment and the other Tank is filled with players wearing Holy Tier equipment, which Tank would be more powerful, then? It is obvious, isn't it? So, when the number of players increases up to the scale of 50, the difference between the power levels among the players would become extremely obvious.

The Eternal Flame had an average of 25,000,000 HP on each of their Tanks. However, the Lone Desert Smoke had an average of 30,000,000 HP on each of their Tanks! Furthermore, the 'Attack Power' on both sides was vastly different!

Everything was obvious. The Lone Desert Smoke had taken down the first 6 bosses in the Spectre's Cavern. Although not every party of the Lone Desert Smoke managed to achieve such an achievement, the others were also managed to progress by over 2/10, or 3/10 of the dungeon. Their achievements were considered not that bad at all.

On the other hand, even though the main party of the Eternal Flame managed to progress over 4/10 of the dungeon, the 'power level' of their core players still had a long way to improve before they could catch up with the 'power level' of the Lone Desert Smoke's core players. Other than that, the number of players on their Dungeon Expedition Force. Their progress in clearing dungeons was slow as well. Only 3 parties of their Dungeon Expedition Force managed to clear the first boss of the dungeon.

More importantly, the level and Tier of their equipment were far weaker than the level and Tier of Lone Desert Smoke's equipment!

Therefore, the Eternal Flame totally lost the battle!

## Chapter 782: Sandra The Rover

---

One of the main reason Eternal Flame lost was because Zhong Xiu Hua acted rashly. If he was willing to spend such a large sum of money, he could have bought 1,000 Model 4.0 Tanks and wait patiently for his guild to have 50,000 Level 180 players first. By then, he could have launched a full-scale attack on Souron Castle with 1,000 Model 4.0 Tanks at the same time. 1,000 Model 4.0 Tanks would be equally tough as 1,000 players who had activated Class S Inheritance Transformation. Even though the Tanks could only move at an extremely slow speed, but Territories and the Territory Hall would not move. So, it would be possible for them to take over the Territory Hall if they are well prepared in the first place.

Of course, a guild would have to spend over 50,000,000,000 to acquire 1,000 units of Model 4.0 Tanks. Well, there shouldn't be anyone in the entire world who would actually invest that much of an amount in virtual assets! After all, Tanks would be bound to the person who buys them. They can't be transferred or traded to other players. So it would be quite risky as well.

However, if 1,000 Tanks could really take down a Territory, the 50,000,000,000 spent would be worth it! After all, a Territory could generate an amount of 50,000,000,000 gold pieces back to cover the cost after 2 months!

Of course, Tanks were not invincible. For instance, let's take a closer look at the Model 4.0 Tanks. Each of the Model 4.0 Tank could fit 50 players. So, the sum of HP the Tank should be 40,000,000 HP --- each of the player would need a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment to contribute, at an average of 800,000 HP. However, how long would it take for high Tier players to empty out a total of 40,000,000 HP, then?

There was no way for the players to heal the Tanks. That could prove to be a fatal weakness of the Tanks. Of course, if players on

board the Tanks were powerful enough, they might still stand a chance at taking out their enemies before the HP bar of the Tanks deplete. Upon getting out of Battle Mode, the HP bar of the Tanks would recover back to 100% over a period of time.

However, it would be impossible for one to get out of Battle Mode when one is standing in the middle of a large-scale battle with tens of thousands of players in the vicinity. Tanks could only provide players a longer survival period on the battlefield. There was no way that they could replace the status of players with Inheritance Transformation! After all, Inheritance Transformations could only be used once in every 3 days. Of course, they would be the real deal!

"Noob tank, cousin sis! Time to wake your \*sses up! The new Ascended Tier boss will be spawning soon nearby the Bama Volcano! Wake up now! No more sleeping!" Wei Yan Er slammed on the door and screamed.

"God damn it!"

Zhang Yang paused his intense exercise instantly. Now, he had to wake up early in the morning to 'help' Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu do some intense 'exercise' every day. So it was one of his new daily habits now. While he was drilling hard on the matter, he was shocked by the sudden interference from Wei Yan Er to the point that he almost lost both his 'hardness' and his 'hardiness'!

"Leave her be!" Han Ying Xue's eyes had drifted so far away from reality that she could not get hold of them anymore. She was currently clinging on Zhang Yang with her four limbs like an octopus, gasping in a sexy voice, as if she was going to melt.

After another intense session, Zhang Yang cuddled the two ladies down to the living room. Well, he did look happier and refreshed after the release. Today was Daffodil Daydream's turn to cook. So, she made everyone a sumptuous breakfast.

Wei Yan Er was biting on her fork while she was moving up and

down on both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Then she said, "Cousin sis, why do you and sister Sun always lost in a fight with noob tank? I've always hear you two going 'argh argh argh' and 'eek eek eek' every time you two fight noob tank! I pity you two!"

Zhang Yang could not help to laugh it out loud. This little brat was still so pure even after staying with them for so long. Such a pure girl is hard to come by these days. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream blushed at the same instance after hearing what she said. The little brat had no idea on what was going on, but the three other ladies were very clear about it. Of course, the ladies, especially the two of them would feel awkward. They had just been exposed by this little brat without her own knowledge!

"Yan Er, you can't talk about it in front of the gang and the others, you know? Especially the others!" Han Ying Xue immediately attempted to brainwash the little brat. Well, if little brat ever feels the itch to tell the gang especially Fatty Han and Endless Starlight, how much more awkward would the situation get then?

"Oh--- okay!" Wei Yan Er did not seem to fully understand. Indeed, she did understand some things that husbands and wives would do. However, she had no idea at all when it came to the process of making a baby!

Well, one of the main reasons was because her mother passed away when she was very young. On the other hand, it was natural that her father would not talk about the birds and bees to the little brat. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue had done a splendid job in protecting the little brat from being corrupted. However, the main reason among the main reasons was because this little brat had a weird and strange personality in the first place. She just loved to pull pranks on people and buys expensive purses and perfumes. Another main reason that kept her from getting involved in a relationship was because of the runaway on her chest!

"Oh right! The new Ascended Tier boss is about to appear in the game!" Wei Yan Er immediately went back on track. She swept her food into her big mouth and kept her mouth full. Meanwhile, she could still talk loudly and clearly. That was really something to be admired.

"Oh. Did you find any other information about the boss from the official website?" Zhang Yang asked out of convenience. At the same time, he was frowning. Because Han Ying Xue that witch, was teasing him by placing her soft and fair leg in between his thighs.

"Yea, of course there's more! The boss is called Sandras The Rover. It's a Stone Giant. After spawning, the boss will roam around the Bama Volcano! Wow, the boss has a 10% rate of dropping a Holy Tier pet mount! Did you hear me? It's a freaking Holy Tier pet mount!" Wei Yan Er was so joyful that she began to dance around.

Zhang Yang could not help but smile, then he said, "Don't get too excited just yet. You can get excited after you manage to get it!"

"However, we don't have any secret items like the Kingcross Sword, right? So, we'll have to compete with the other guilds in this, right?" Daffodil Daydream was beginning to worry.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "With the Tank System up and running, players would be more capable of challenging a boss. However, even though the system had stated that the boss would be roaming around the Bama Volcano, the boss would still be very difficult to find. The Bama Volcano map is very huge!"

"En!" The four ladies nodded at the same time to express their agreement on it. The Bama Volcano was located at the west of the Sylrokia map. Zhang Yang and the ladies had grinded on the map before. So they were quite familiar with the map now. The Bama Volcano area was very vast indeed. It would take approximately 2 to 3 hours for the players to cover the entire area on their Flying



Mounts. Furthermore, the forest across the land was thick as f\*ck! Even if millions of players searched for the boss at the same time, it would still take up some time. While the players were searching for the boss, the boss might have been taken out when they finally manage to find it.

"Then, what are we waiting for? Let's hustle up and search for the boss! Let's log into the game!" Wei Yan Er was an impatient little b\*tch, after all. So, she already began pulling Han Ying Xue to go back upstairs.

"What's the rush? Finish your food first!" Zhang Yang laughed. Then, he swept his eyes across the flat chest of the little brat and said, "They'll only grow if you eat enough!"

"Stinky noob tank! I'm unfriending you! Pui!" Wei Yan Er tightened her teeth.

Everyone logged into the game after getting ready for the day. Zhang Yang immediately assembled all the Level 180 players in his guild and made a headcount. However, the number fell short of his expectations. There were only 883 players in total that had achieved Level 180 and beyond. He could not even fill up 18 Tanks, because of that. Of course, no one would actually sit on the Tanks while traveling across the map. So, Zhang Yang assigned his guild members to their respective Tanks. He assigned 50 players to each Tank, with one player as the captain of the party. Even a Tank would need a leader to lead.

Starting from the Ascended Tier bosses, no guild could take a boss all on their own. Every time there is a new boss spawning, the system would notify the players in the entire server. The system would also reveal the specific location of the Quest-type bosses like Brocks. Meanwhile, the system would only reveal the whereabouts of the bosses that are not related to any quest in the game. For instance, Sandra The Rovers who just spawned not long ago.

Of course, the system would also spawn new bosses out of the

blue to provide players the element of surprise. By doing so, they could keep the pace of the game fresh and exciting. Players would be competing against each to see who takes down the bosses first, because of that. At some point, fierce battles could lead the players plunging themselves deeper into the game. On the other hand, death follows whenever there is a fierce battle. So, the system would be able to earn tons of money by charging the players for repairing their broken equipment after battles. Truth be told, that was one of the main methods the game company uses to suck money out of the players! Everyone would have to repair their equipment at some point.

When Zhang Yang and the gang arrived at the Bama Volcano, the area was reamed by tons of players. Most of them were searching for the whereabouts of the boss. However, some of them were there to take advantage on the others by launching their attacks on the weaker ones. By doing so, they could obtain some equipment from the players they manage to slay.

"So, where do we start first?"

Bama Volcano was 3 times as large as Shang Hai capital in real life. Even if Lone Desert Smoke mobilizes almost 1,000 members to search for the boss, they would only be able to cause a small ripple across the surface of the map.

Without having much of an option to pick, Zhang Yang and his guild members decided to split out in order to cover more ground. After all, moving around would be much better than just sitting tightly in one spot, waiting for something to happen.

The shadows of tons of players were entering the map. They looked like streams of a river that gushed throughout the map. As they were splitting up, making their way across the map, they looked like many river branches splitting out into the thick forest of the map. Further out, the shadows of players began to disappear into the forest without a trace. From that point of view, that should be enough to describe how large the map is!

Everyone was busy looking for the boss, currently. The entire forest area was covered with gigantic trees that were as tall as hundreds of meters. Because of that, there was no way for the players to locate the boss by looking down from the sky. So, they could only stay on foot. Therefore, it was a slow, arduous process.

However, there was also an advantage here. For the party who manages to find the boss, they would be able to take down the boss as long as they had the capability of doing so. They would not have to worry that other parties would suddenly interrupt the boss battle --- if they would really meet some other party while battling the boss, they must be having the worst luck of their lives, then.

Zhang Yang divided his main force into 19 different forces. Each of the forces had a Tank. Each Tank would be assigned to one direction. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang's main party took a different direction to proceed as well. Well, they did have their very own Inheritance Transformations and a Tank. So, their Attack Power would surely be much more powerful than the other 18 parties.

"Boss--- Where are you, boss --- come here, boss--- I'll give you a snack if you come out now!" Wei Yan Er was cheering and laughing all the way as she was riding on her pet mount, searching through the forest.

"You have such fair and soft meat, little brat. You better watch out! You might become the boss's first choice as a snack!" Zhang Yang attempted to tease the little brat.

"You piece of savage human!" Just when little brat was about to hit Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang suddenly made a gesture to signal her to calm the f\*ck down.

"There's movement ahead of us!" Zhang Yang sent a message to the party chat without making a sound. He tried to warn the others to lighten their footsteps. Therefore, everyone was proceeding forward as lightly as they could.

After walking for over tens of steps, everyone noticed that there

was a gigantic Stone Giant roaring right before them. The Stone Giant was whirling its two arms towards the ground repeatedly, like two giant windmills spinning at a high speed, smashing the ground violently with its mighty strength. The air was stirred so violently by the movement of its arms that the surroundings were like being blown by a typhoon. That Stone Giant was 50 meters in height. Its entire body was covered by mosses. The impact caused by each of the smashes on the ground were quaking the surroundings as well.

It was the freaking boss! Zhang Yang and his gang had finally found the boss!

[Sandras The Rover] (Ascended, Elemental)

Level: 205

HP: 102,000,000,000/103,000,000,000

Defence: 32470

Melee Attack: 294,899 – 394,899

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Stomp the ground in the surroundings and causes 350,000 Physical Damage to all targets. Targets will fall to the ground.

[Hammer Strike]: Use its solid rock fists to slam the targets, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damages all enemy targets within range.

[Elemental Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: Sandras is a wise and farsighted Stone Giant. He loves to travel around the world. He cannot decide on whether he should eat the stone in six bites or eight bites. To him, the different number of bites can define the tastiness of his meal profoundly.

Seeing that the boss did not have a full HP bar, he could assume that the boss was in the middle of a battle. Actually, it was also visually obvious, because there were countless Fire Balls, Frost Arrows and other arrows bombarding the boss. The visual effect of the magic impacts were stunning to gaze upon.

## Chapter 783: A Wind-Up Work!

---

So who could they be then? Which party was currently battling the boss then?

Well, it would not matter much. Since Zhang Yang and his gang had arrived, they would definitely be sticking their feet into the battle. The existence of World Class bosses was to encourage players to compete against each other in order to snatch the boss kill for themselves. There was no such thing as a 'first come first serve' basis. Everything will be based on one's capability of snatching!

Zhang Yang and his gang were staying low by the bushes as they were observing the boss battle. There were a total of 16 Model 4.0 Tanks lining up by the legs of the boss. They were launching their most ferocious attacks on the boss. Other than the 16 Tanks, there were also more than 10 players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation acting on their own free will.

"Huh?" Zhang Yang squinted and took a closer look at the players. Those players really seemed very familiar --- Dragon Marquis, Scholar Musou, Longrich, Death Arbiter and the other core players of Eternal Flames!

However, the tactic they were using was a little stupid.

Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed heavily after seeing how Eternal Flame operated in a battle. At the same time, he sent out messages to inform the rest of his troops to come over here.

Truth be told, the Tanks could only be used to overcome the disadvantage of players without Inheritance Transformation who had low amounts of HP. They were merely a new tool introduced for the normal players to use against players with Inheritance Transformations. Because the Tanks had a maximum durability, once the Tanks degrade to a certain level, the Tanks would be destroyed automatically. When that happens, they would have to

be sent back to the Blacksmiths in the main cities for repairs in order to be used again.

Even if the Tanks were all 50-player scale Model 4.0 Tanks and each of the players had over 700,000 HP, each Tank would only have a Maximum HP of 35,000,000 HP. Meanwhile, Sandra was obviously a World Boss. Its {Trample of War} could be activated once every 5 seconds. The Stone Giant could deal a DPS of 70,000 damage. So it would only require 500 seconds in order for the boss to take out a total of 35,000,000 HP!

The players on the Tank could still be healed constantly. However, the HP bar of the Tank would not change based on that. Well, it was pretty obvious that they would need more than just 8 minutes to empty out the HP bar of the boss. So when the Tanks are destroyed, the players would be back to square.

The right way of using the Tanks would be to send the Tanks into battle, batch by batch. When the HP bar of the Tanks on the frontlines are about to deplete, the players should just keep the Tank into the inventory and retreat. They should let the players who possess a Tank to retreat far from the frontlines to get healed up or to get killed instantly. Either way, the Tanks could get out of their Battle Mode so that they could recover their HP bars.

The 16 Tanks could just be arranged into a formation where they could take turns going to the frontline of the battlefield. By doing so, they would only have to maintain their firepower on the boss to keep the boss from exiting its Battle Mode. Or else, if the boss gets to recover its HP bar back to full, the party would be wiped out completely by the boss. That was one efficient way of winning a drawn-out war against a World boss. Or else, they would need to travel all the way back to their main cities to get their destroyed Tanks repaired. Who could afford to wait for so long without dying?

Were they not relying too much on the Tanks then?

No, that should not be the case. Well, because the Tank System had just been introduced into the game. Many players had not get used to the Tanks that had the potential of breaking the balance of the game. They thought that the Tanks functioned similarly to their pet mounts. As long as the players on top of them did not die, the Tanks or the pet mounts beneath the players would not be destroyed or die as well!

The Graveyard was located extremely far from where they were right now. Therefore, they could only opt for the weak resurrection every time they die in order to stay in the boss battle. Upon resurrection, they could just hop onto their mounts and get back to the boss as soon as they are able to. Or else, they would require at least 2 to 3 hours to come all the way back if they wanted to run back to their dead bodies on foot.

Zhang Yang grinned with a sense of evilness on his face. Then he said, "Get ready, guys. When they're about to be wiped out, we'll charge in and take them out!"

"Alright! Alright!" Wei Yan Er took up her scythe and revealed a sinister smile on her pretty little face. She seemed to be pumped up, alright. Her craving for battle was written crystal clear on her face.

Things escalated just like how Zhang Yang predicted. About 8 minutes later, the 16 Tanks were beginning to fall apart, piece by piece. The players onboard were beginning to fall off the diminishing structure and roll over the ground like idiots. Well, without the Tanks, the damage that the players were about to sustain would be on a whole new level!

When the player received damage while onboard of the Tanks, it wouldn't matter how many players there were onboard the Tanks. They would all be considered as a single unit. Therefore, all 50 players on the Model 4.0 Tank would only receive a total of 350,000 damage as a single unit, each time they take the AoE attack of the boss. Therefore, the Healers would not suffer too much



stress while healing the players on the Tanks.

However, whenever a Tank breaks into pieces, each of the 50 players would receive 350,000 damage. Not all Healers would have powerful enough equipment to heal enough amount of HP to catch up with the DPS of 70,000 damage of the boss! Furthermore, Eternal Flame only assigned 3 Healers on each Tank. The Healers would still be capable of healing a total of 350,000 HP over 5 seconds. However, it would not be possible for any of their Healers to heal 50 players with 350,000 HP within 5 seconds.

Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was not dead yet. He could actually levitate in the middle of the sky by his own ability. It seemed that he managed to acquire a Class A Inheritance for himself.

"Noob tank, shouldn't we go in now?" Wei Yan Er was more than ready to slaughter her preys.

"A little while more. Let them deplete a little more of the boss's HP. We also need to wait for the others to arrive before we can launch a full-scale attack on them."

"Hehe, I never thought that you can be so cunning sometimes!"

"It's called resourcefulness! How can you say that I'm cunning?! Say something else, please!"

"Nope! Not going to change my opinion on you!"

"Well, about your next next year's salary from the Little Merchandize Shop..."

"Wow, noob tank! I suddenly realized that you're heroic and brilliant! You're like an unbeatable general from the east!" By hitting the right spot, Wei Yan Er straight away tried to compromise with Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang nodded in contentment. Then he continued to observe the battle between the Eternal Flame and the boss.

The Eternal Flame could only deal a DPS of approximately

1,500,000 damage to the boss. Under the influence of the boss's {Elemental Constitution}, their firepower was no match for the boss's HP Recovery Rate. They could only stare at the boss's HP bar that went back up after trying so hard to bring the HP bar down a tiny bit. Slaying the boss in two hours had become impossible, even if a miracle happens to them now!

How about the players who were running back to their dead bodies?

It was unfortunate that their Tanks had been destroyed. Without proper repairs, they would not be able to use their Tanks at the moment. Even if they come back to the boss, they would only become food for powder in the boss battle. They would get themselves killed again after receiving two or three hits from the boss. How about taking a trip back to the main cities to get their Tanks repaired? That would be a joke!

The number of players remaining in the boss battle was 15. However, only two of them were Healers. It became impossible for the two Healers to heal  $70,000 \times 15$  which equals to a total of 1,050,000 HP in every second. Because of shortage in their Healing Capability, the remaining players of the Eternal Flame could only activate their Inheritance Transformation to boost their HP bars in order for them to stay in the fight!

However, the amount of damage they were sustaining was far greater than the amount of HP their Healers could heal them over the time. So, they would definitely be dead, eventually if that goes on! Furthermore, the difference between the damage they received and the amount of HP they could heal was large. Not every one of them had over 10,000,000 HP as well. So, they only seemed to be able to last for about 10 minutes before they are wiped out completely!

10 minutes, huh?

Zhang Yang was setting his mind on the location of the

Graveyard. He was f\*cking sure that 10 minutes was not enough for anyone to run all the way back here. So, it would not be possible for them to run back to their dead bodies in time to rejoin the boss battle.

Therefore, the players would need to be assigned into different batches when they are going up against a World boss. In such a way, they could form into a ladder-shaped formation and take turns battling the boss. If they still had the Tanks with them, they could assign 10 Healers on each Tank. By doing so, they could definitely heal back the HP bars of Scholar Musou and the others.

Of course, Zhang Yang would not waste his brain cells to think about all that. Why show compassion to the enemies who wanted to destroy him? Instead, he said, "Everyone, look closely now. When their HP bars drop to about 20%, we shall charge out and lay waste on them! We might get lucky and pick up some good stuff after we finish them off!"

"Hehehe!" Everyone laughed out loud. Wei Yan Er muttered to herself, "And you said you're not cunning... evil..."

"Okay! Activate your Inheritance Transformations and charge!"

Under the insane bombardment of the boss's attacks, Eternal Flame was about to get wiped out, even though they had tried their best. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his gang's appearance had rung the 'bell of doom' for Zhong Xiu Hua and his fellow members of his Eternal Flame.

"Zhang Yang?!" Zhong Xiu Hua's face went pale. He stared at Zhang Yang with rage.

"How are you doing? Does your chin still hurt?" Zhang Yang asked out of convenience. However, his axe was being swung straight at Death Arbiter without mercy. The normal attack was followed closely by a {Killing Cleave}! At that moment, Death Arbiter only had 17% HP remaining, before the axe struck straight into his skull and killed him instantly!

"Looting a burning house!? Is this what Lone Desert Smoke do best?" Longrich spoke coldly as he was attempting to get away from Wei Yan Er's scary-\*ss scythe.

"You're wrong! This is merely a relentlessly beating on the dogs in the water! We have no reason to show mercy to bad people even if they're down! Hahaha!" Fatty Han replied him. Right after that, Fatty Han began shooting his arrows one after another towards his enemy. That fatty was actually dealing quite a number of damage to his foes. Although his PvP skills were not really top Tier, to begin with, his personal DPS was quite stunning. Even though he could not be classified as a Top Tier DPS player, the amount of damage he could deal was not embarrassing.

After all, there was only one way to deal damage. Whoever hits harder will triumph over those who hit softer! Practice makes perfect! Nothing more! Unlike PvP matches, players do not have to make precise decisions, according to the situation of the battlefield. Well, in PvP matches, the decisions and reactions of the player would define whether he or she was a good player or not.

"Don't go too far, you mother f\*ckers!" Zhong Xiu Hua calmed himself down immediately after he shouted. Then he said, "Let's make a deal, okay? We can join forces to deal with the boss first. Then we shall split the loots in half. Or else, we'll just announce the coordinate of the boss! You're not going to be taking the boss all to yourselves!"

"You who carry the surname Zhong, are you giving us an impression that you're weak? You're Master Zhong and you're begging us? Ha." Zhang Yang laughed vaguely and looked at Zhong Xiu Hua with disdain. If Zhong Xiu Hua is the prince in real life, then Zhang Yang would be the King, the emperor of the game! No one would be able to match his strength and power!

"YOU --- You shameless f\*ck! Argh! Die!" Zhong Xiu Hua was overwhelmed by his own rage. Well, he had been humiliated once before. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had knocked a few teeth out of

him, previously. His father had yet to rise to power. So he could not afford to do anything too reckless that might affect his father's career. If it wasn't for that, he might have gone all out on destroying Zhang Yang.

"Stop quacking like a duck and start fighting, you miserable f\*ck!" Zhang Yang humphed coldly and went on slaughtering the members of the Eternal Flame with the boss's 'help'. It did not take long before they wiped out the remaining members of the Eternal Flame.

"Please take note, everybody! The location where the boss is spawned is XXXXX, YYYYY! I'm Dragon Marquis, the guildmaster of the Eternal Flame. I can assure you, my words hold true!" Zhong Xiu Hua immediately chose weak resurrection the moment he died. Then he quickly shouted the coordinates of the boss into the public channel. Every single player in the China Region who was searching near the Bama Volcano could see what he said.

"Pui! If he knows where the boss is, he would have gone there to slay the boss! So, why would he share the wealth with others? This must be a hoax!"

"He's the guildmaster of Eternal Flames! Maybe he's telling the truth?"

"He could be spreading false information to lead us far away from the actual boss, so that he secures all of the Ascended Tier equipment all to himself?!"

"That's right! Even if he really knows where the boss is, he would have told everyone the fake coordinates! He could prevent other guilds from competing with his guild in taking down the boss!"

"Screw that f\*cking c\*nt then! What sort of f\*cktard is that? Shameless piece of sh\*t!"

"That's right! Despicable f\*ck!"

The public channel began to get bombarded with debates and

comments. Every single one of them was skeptical about what Zhong Xiu Hua just said. Zhong Xiu Hua was so pissed that he almost popped all his veins! However, there were also a small number of players who chose to believe his words. So they began to move towards the coordinates that Zhong Xiu Hua had shouted out in the public channel.

## Chapter 784: Armadillomon's Leash

---

After wiping out every single one of the members of Eternal Flame, Zhang Yang immediately drew the boss over to him. Then, he quickly led the boss away from where it was initially spawned. He led the boss deeper into the forest.

Hundred Shots was providing the new coordinates of the boss to the 18 parties of Lone Desert Smoke. He wanted the others to reroute so that they would not end up at the wrong place later on.

Zhang Yang's movement speed was unbelievable fast while he was under the boost of his God of War Transformation. After all, the movement speed of a Class S Inheritance Transformation is much faster than the movement speed of Inheritance Transformation of the other Classes below it. If he did not have to wait for Lost Dream, Endless Starlight and the others who only had a Class B Inheritance Transformation, he could have lead the boss to other spots that were at least 10 kilometers away from its initial spawning spot in a short amount of time.

While they were moving the monsters, the others did not just follow. They were launching their attacks at the boss. It did not take long for them to lure the boss far away from the initial spot. Meanwhile, the surroundings that got destroyed due to the fierce battle between the players and the boss would recover over a short period of time after being destroyed again and again. Therefore, when the other players arrived, the surroundings of the battle had already recovered back to their initial states. There would not be any signs of battle left in the vicinity by the time they get there --- the members of Eternal Flame had chosen weak resurrection, so they were resurrected back at the Graveyard. Their dead bodies had vanished from the initial boss battle spot.

Zhang Yang was acting extra cautious. He only stopped after flying at a high speed for 10 minutes. Well, he managed to lead the boss very far away from the initial spot.

Zhang Yang and the gang no longer move forward. They turned around and fought the boss. Every single one of them was throwing their attacks at the boss like madmen on steroids! A while later, their Tanks arrived one after another. So, Zhang Yang quickly implemented the ladder-shape tactic into the boss battle. They divided the 18 Tanks into 6 batches. Each batch would take their turn at the frontline to tank against the boss. They would retreat whenever the HP bar of the Tanks are about to deplete. Each batch of the forces could stand their ground against the boss for up to 8 minutes. Under those circumstances, the 6 batches of Tanks would be able to tank against the boss for 48 minutes. After that, those who were not on any of the Tanks would have to start dying and keep running back to their corpses.

In other words, even if Zhang Yang and the gang could not take out the boss in 2 hours, the Tanks could still tie the boss down at one spot while the others slowly slay it. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his gang would be able to just hop onto any of the Tanks to slowly deplete the HP bar of the boss even if their Inheritance Transformations are over.

Of course, they could only have that kind of luxury under the circumstance that no other parties or guilds interrupt them.

At the same time, Zhong Xiu Hua was leading his men in search of Zhang Yang's whereabouts. He swore that he would repay Zhang Yang for what Lone Desert Smoke did back there. Unfortunately, the forest was too huge. Only hundreds of them were searching through the forest after all. So, it would not be possible for them to locate Zhang Yang and his gang within a short period of time.

Other than that, many players did not find the boss at the coordinates that Zhong Xiu Hua mentioned in the public chat. They thought that the Eternal Flame was really using lies to mislead the others. So whenever they saw some members of the Eternal Flame roaming off their main forces, the players would



just slaughter them up without saying anything. Because of that, Zhong Xiu Hua was having the headache of his life in the game.

Back to where Zhang Yang and the gang was battling the boss. Although each batch only had 3 Tanks to support Zhang Yang and his gang in attacking the boss, the Model 4.0 Tank could fit up to 50 players. Furthermore, the Defence of the Tanks was a little bit unique. Only DPS players and Healers were on board the Tanks. There were no Tankers on any of the Tanks. Each Tank was assigned to have 10 Healers and 50 DPS players. Therefore, the entire force had over 120 DPS units on their side.

Everyone had reached Level 180 and beyond. So, there was no Level Gap Suppression whatsoever. Even if these DPS players could only deal 20,000 damage over each passing second, all 120 players would be able to deal a total of 2,400,000 damage to the boss. Adding in the DPS of approximately 3,000,000 damage that Zhang Yang and the gang could deal, the entire force of Lone Desert Smoke could deal approximately 2,000,000 effective damage to the boss over each passing second.

In that case, the Lone Desert Smoke should be able to take out the boss in 85 minutes!

Everyone was going all out on the boss. They had maximized their damage output to ensure they were performing at their best. After all, anything could happen as long as the boss is still standing. If they are ambushed by the other parties or forces when the HP bar of the boss is at 10%, then they would suffer a great loss!

"These Tanks are really useful in battles such as this one!" Everyone was surprised.

Without the Tanks supporting them, players who do not have Inheritance Transformation would not be able to survive for more than 10 seconds, if each of them are not healed by one personal Healer! However, these players managed to survive up to 8 minutes after they had the Tanks!

As long as the players were able to stay alive, they would be able to deal damage to the boss.

"Without the Tanks, we would need at least 10 more players who can activate their Inheritance Transformation. Their equipment must be top Tier as well! Then only it's possible for us to kill the boss within 2 hours!"

"How good would it be if we can get a few more Tanks!"

{Glare of the Death God}!

Shoof! A dark skull began to form on top of the boss's head. It was not resisted!

Everyone was cheering in joy. A series of 100,000,000 damage values popped right on top of the boss's head. In merely 3 seconds, Sandra had lost over 1,000,000,000 HP while it was roaring in pain. Well, Zhang Yang's DPS had been boosted up to 700,000 damage while he was in his God of War Transformation form. Furthermore, he also had the special ability to get additional aggro values. It was enough to fix the aggro of 1,000,000 DPS on him. Therefore, the 3 Tanks had not taken a single damage from the boss up to this point.

Truth to be told, when the first batch of the Tanks were retreating from battle while the next batch were coming in, they were considered to be not engaging the boss. There, they lost a small amount of time. Therefore, it would not be possible for them to get the aggro of the boss.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was lucky as f\*ck today. One hour later, he made another attempt to cast his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss. It was not resisted as well! It was another successful attempt! Holy sh\*t! When the first one ended, Sandra was only left with 20% HP. Because of that, the boss's HP bar was reduced to 10% left right after that. 8 minutes later, the mighty Ascended Tier boss had collapsed to the ground and died. Upon the heavy fall, it dropped quite a number of loot across the ground.

Of course, it would feel safer to keep all the loots to one's own pockets. So, Zhang Yang acted f\*cking swiftly and picked up all the equipment. Because the items and equipment were not 'bound upon pickup', Zhang Yang put everything into his inventory first. Then only did he put up the items and equipment up in the guild auction. Whoever who had enough points would be able to exchange the items and equipment with their available points.

Because most of his guild members had spent their guild points on the Holy Tier equipment that Lone Desert Smoke managed to retrieve from the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon, Zhang Yang and the gang had more guild points to spend. So, the group of 10 managed to secure 8 out of 11 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment. Because of that, many of the guild members were crying out loudly. They now regretted not saving up the guild points for the auction of Ascended Tier equipment.

[Heavy Rock Ring] (Ascended, Ring)

Vitality: +9,802

Strength: +1,752

Agility: +1,752

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 19,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,535 damage when hit.

Use: Summons a Stone Giant to fight for you. Lasts for 30 seconds. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

The lucky part about it was that the boss had also dropped a Holy Tier Pet Mount. The officials stated that the boss only had 10% chance of dropping the Pet Mount. So, it seemed that they had just hit the jackpot! Zhang Yang's luck was oddly lucky today! His

previous two attempts of {Glare of the Death God} were successful as well! Damn!

[Armadillomon's Leash] (Holy Tier Ground Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unsummons an Armadillomon.

Required Level: 30

Bound upon pickup.

"Argh! Why can't it be a Flying Mount!?" Wei Yan Er was extremely disappointed by what she found. Although the mount was also a Holy Tier, having a Flying Mount would also grant the person with higher agility and convenience. Unlike ground pet mounts, Flying Mounts could just fly over any valley or obstacle.

"A Holy Tier Mount! Although it's not a Flying Mount, its Attack power would surely be very powerful! Just take a closer look, everyone. The auction for this leash will start at 2,000 guild points. So be aware. Don't shout if you don't have enough guild points on you. That's because you'll lose your guild points based on the number you shout!"

Well, 2,000 guild points could only be earned back by completing the Hardcore Mode of a dungeon for over 5 times. Furthermore, they would not be able to get any equipment while they were at it! However, things such as taking equipment into own pockets were pretty common in the game. Zhang Yang and his gang had been doing that all this while, because most of the equipment they had were dropped by Open World bosses. They did not have to get the equipment by spending guild points. That had really saved quite a number of points for Zhang Yang and his gang.

Finally, this Holy Tier pet mount was claimed by Sun Xin Yu. It was like adding wings to a tiger. Sun Xin Yu's Attack power had once again rose tremendously.

After distributing the loots among themselves, the party was dissembled for the moment. However, the f\*cking system did not

announce anything about Sandra's defeat. Countless players were still searching through the forest, without knowing that the boss had been defeated already.

However, there were also some clever players in the area. When they realized that the core players of Lone Desert Smoke were leaving the area, they knew that the boss Sandra must have been taken out already. Although they couldn't do much about it, it would be so much better to leave than to stay and do something pointless. So, the other players were beginning to leave the vicinity one after another.

A short moment later, Zhang Yang just only realized that he had not gone back to the God of War to learn his new Inheritance Skill for attaining Level 180.

Firstly, it was because leveling up required much more time than before. Meanwhile, the God of War Inheritance would only bestow the player a new Skill once every 20 levels. Therefore, Zhang Yang could only learn one new Inheritance Skill every half a year. So, sometimes the thought might have slipped his mind for a little while.

So he quickly traveled back to the cave to meet Ares. After talking to Ares, Zhang Yang learned a new Skill --- God of War Restoration.

[God of War Restoration]: Deals 200% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. At the same time, turns all the damage received into HP. The amount of HP recovered will be the same as the amount of damage received. Cooldown: 1 minute. Consumes: 50 Rage Points. Required: Melee Attack.

This Skill would provides Zhang Yang with another 200% additional damage which was similar to Zhang Yang {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash}. However, this Skill would be outshone by Skills such as {God of War Devastation} and {God of War Battle Axe} because those Skills provided Zhang Yang with

300% additional damage. This Skill can recover HP based on the amount of damage received over 6 seconds. It could be a very useful Skill for Zhang Yang, after all.

Theoretically speaking, that would provide Zhang Yang similar ability of 10% Damage Immunity. However, if the Skill is timed and used accordingly, the effect could be amplified up to the equivalent of 15% to 20% Damage Immunity!

The equipment given by the two Ascended Tier bosses had really got Zhang Yang and his gang boosted up big time. The power level of the entire party had increased tremendously. 3 days later, the Inheritance Transformation of everyone was cooled down. Under the command of Zhang Yang, the gang turned their attention towards the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre Cavern. They pushed through the dungeon to the score of 8/9 in one shot. They only needed to take down one more boss before they could take down the 'First Clear' of the dungeon.

Currently, everyone's will was united. They were busting their \*sses, trying to get familiar with the final boss's behavior and attack patterns. They wanted to make good use of the next three days where their Inheritance Transformations were under cooldown again. They wanted to take down the final boss in one go.

The tactic of countering the final boss was extremely complicated. There were a few stages in the tactic. Every stage of it required players to run around in different patterns and formations. At the same time, players would need to handle the substantial number of summoned monsters. Well, everyone was putting so much effort that they even forgot to rest and eat. They only could not make up for the shortage in firepower.

After all, the bosses in the game were designed by someone. As long as the players could find and implement the correct tactic to use on the boss, it would only be a matter of time before the players could slay the boss.

Within a year, Lone Desert Smoke was able to take down the 'First Clear' title of the dungeon. When the system announced it, every other Top Tier guilds were very shocked. Well, most of them only managed to reach 6/9 throughout the entire dungeon. The difference in their progress and the Lone Desert Smoke's progress on the dungeon was huge!

Zhang Yang used the additional Skill Points onto his {Force Strike} and enhanced it to the max. It was now Level 10, giving Zhang Yang a 100% rate of dealing one additional attack. Furthermore, the additional attack would definitely be a Critical Hit!

# Chapter 785: Planning

---

Slam!

Zhong Xiu Hua smashed his fist heavily against the surface of the table. The table top trembled. He was infuriated to the point that veins were visibly popping out on his head. Then he said, "Lone Desert Smoke! It's Lone Desert Smoke again! You're all calling yourselves the top Tier players in the game! You claimed that nothing can beat you! So how come no one here can actually beat that f\*cking Zhang Yang?! Huh?! F\*CK!"

Scholar Musou and the rest remained in silence for the moment. Before they encountered Zhang Yang, they were really cocky and arrogant. They really believed that they could take down the entire game with their bare hands. However, only the ones who battled Zhang Yang before now would know how terrifying Zhang Yang could be when he gets serious in a battle.

Zhong Xiu Hua looked at his own shop. There were barely any customers. Then, he looked at Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. When he realized that Zhang Yang's shop was always filled with customers, he got even angrier. He had spent more than a few fortunes just to purchase the Land Lease of the shop. He believed that the investment experts from his mother's company could make the shop even more popular than Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

However, the truth was apparent. His shop only got tons of customers during the 3-day Special Sale period. However, after the Special Sale had ended, his shop immediately became cold and quiet. Even though the equipment and items in his shop were a few gold pieces cheaper than the price of equipment and items in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop, people would still prefer to walk a few steps more to the Little Merchandize Shop.

The reason was actually known to Zhong Xiu Hua. That was



because the Little Merchandize Shop had all sorts of potions on sales. Many players had gotten used to making purchases at the Little Merchandize Shop. So, when they saw something particular that captures their eyes, they would just buy the equipment or the items by convenience.

So, it was Zhang Yang once again! Everything he did was ruining Zhong Xiu Hua's plans!

Zhong Xiu Hua was born with silver spoon, after all. He had never gone through any hardships before in his entire life. However, he was starting to taste humiliations and losses ever since he met Zhang Yang. Even if he doesn't care much about failing or getting humiliated, when all his losses are added up together and got shoved in his face, he could no longer hold down the rage that was blazing hot, deep in his heart.

"Master Zhong, the Lone Desert Smoke is a powerful force in the entire game. It would be unwise to go head-on with them!" Scholar Musou said.

"Huh?" Zhong Xiu Hua had been trained to keep his emotions in check since he was young. So, it only took a brief moment for him to calm himself down.

"However, there's a saying. The most fortified castle can be corroded from within!" Scholar Musou turned his eyes towards Zhong Xiu Hua and said, "The Lone Desert Smoke could stand proudly among the China Region community because they have quite a number of top Tier players to back them up. They also have quite a large number of middle Tier players which are quite skilful and powerful. Therefore, we can divide this plan into three steps and use an adequate remedy for the disease!"

"Keep going."

"Firstly, the Lone Desert Smoke is so united because of Zhang Yang's prestige and his alone! However, there's a saying. Good news does not travel far but bad news travels the furthest! So, we

can create rumors saying that Zhang Yang is abusing his power as the guildmaster to force female players into having sex with him overnight. When the rumors are ripe, we only have to make a few so-called 'victim' guilds come out and seek justice! Well, such sort of news can always attract tons of attention from the busybody people. They will not care if the rumors are true or not. They will just look at the others who get to toy with women with hate! There's also another saying in Chinese. When three people pretend to be a tiger and the rumor have enough evidence, the rumors will become truths!"

"Haha!" Zhong Xiu Hua finally felt a little joy. Then he laughed out loud and said, "Musou you old dog! That tactic is pure evil! However, one must use evil tactics on intoxicating people like Zhang Yang! Indeed, we should use dirty tricks on him! Well, rumours aren't enough to take him down, though. We will need some 'powerful' evidence ... hmmm.... What's that called... oh! Right! 'Nothing better shows the truth than a picture'! We need to take a few photos of him on bed with a woman! Then, we can just put the photos up together with the rumours! Furthermore, the woman better be someone significant, someone famous!"

"Oh, right! I heard that Luo Yu Rou is going to promote her new movie at Zhou Shu. Master Zhong, if we can put them onto the same bed, then Zhang Yang will be framed and many men will be pointing their blame fingers on him!"

"Luo Yu Rou? That bombshell superstar? What the f\*ck! That woman is just too seductive to even look at. Every time when I watch her movies, my cock would definitely get so hard that I raise a tent in between my own thighs! F\*ck her! She always loves to show that little bit of her private parts without showing the important parts that we all want to see! Pui!" Death Arbiter would always talk vulgarly. Well, he had always been a hoodlum in the first place. He got lucky. That was how he got into the game and became renowned as a skilful player. Although he was well-

trained, he failed to remove the vulgarity buried deep in his personality.

Speaking of the woman, these perverted men were beginning to show their interest. All of them were saying that Luo Yu Rou was a seductive b\*tch. Well, even though Luo Yu Rou excelled in the art of sexiness, she had never actually stood naked in front of anyone before. Every time they stared at the screen, countless men could not help fantasizing getting into the screen and tearing her clothes off her so that they could feast their dirty eyes on her fair and sexy naked body!

The feeling was similar to the situation where men were watching porn with mosaic boxes covering up the vital parts of the porn stars! Although they could have imagined the covered parts with their own imaginations, they would not get the satisfaction that they want.

Zhong Xiu Hua gave a cough and stopped the menacing talk about sex and porn, then he said, "Since that this Luo Yu Rou is so famous, then she shall be our 'main course' for our plan! I will install some hidden cameras in the hotel she's staying. Then I will kidnap Zhang Yang and send him over. Let them both have some aphrodisiac and let the fire spread on its own! I believe they will start scorching each other up after the aphrodisiacs kicks in! Hehehe!"

"Haha! Only you, Master Zhong! Only you're capable of spending so much money to get this done!" Everyone began to butter the rich brat.

"I can't believe Zhang Yang is going to get a taste on that bombshell's body because of this! Pui!" Death Arbiter licked his lips for a bit and said, "God damn it! A fine cabbage is going to get twiddled by a f\*cking pig!"

Others were revealing a sense of jealousy on their own faces. After all, that Luo Yu Rou was the most famous goddess among the

otakus. That pair of boobies had caused countless men to fap to their deaths!

Zhong Xiu Hua felt nothing for that woman. Well, with his current status, he could just toy any kind of woman according to his liking. So, he did not even care about what would happen to the pair. Furthermore, he had never believed the appearance of women on the big screens. 7 beautiful women out of 10 would look even worse than the appearance of a female pig after they remove their makeup.

When he was younger, he underwent an experience that would scar him for life. He had spent a fortune to have a one-night-stand with a female superstar before. However, when that superstar took off her makeup, Zhong Xiu Hua was shocked to the point that he tried to flee. From that moment on, he deeply understood the term 'disguise'. What the f\*ck!? That superstar looked totally different after she took off her makeup layer on her face!

Ever since then, he had never believed in the appearance of any of the superstars on screen. Even if he wanted to toy with women, he would pick those fresh and real girls from universities. Straight out of the oven, they say.

"After sleeping with the most popular goddess of otakus, Zhang Yang would definitely be hated by countless men all around the world! When the rumours come crashing down on him as well, everyone will only believe that Zhang Yang is a sick horny son of the f\*cking b\*tch! By then, his reputation will be ruined!" Scholar Musou tried to summarize the plan.

"If that succeeds, the name 'Zhan Yu' will be tainted and his prestige will be dragged into the mud forever! When his name is no longer prestigious among Lone Desert Smoke, Lone Desert Smoke will no longer be united! We shall take the opportunity to dig their good players over to our side, especially their core players! I believe that the seduction of money and their disappointment towards Zhan Yu would definitely push 60% of them to leaving Lone Desert

Smoke!"

"And finally, we can send the Anti-Lone-Desert-Smoke force over to launch a full scale attack on the Lone Desert Smoke! We shall attack every single member of that guild. Under that kind of pressure, the people in his guild would definitely feel unsafe. Meanwhile, Zhan Yu would be occupied with the rumours about him f\*cking women all around. He would not have the time to calm his guild members while he's at it. By then, the Lone Desert Smoke will no longer be able to stay united!"

Zhong Xiu Hua revealed a cold smile on his face. Then he said, "When the Lone Desert Smoke is breaking apart, we shall immediately launch Territory Conquests over the three Territories that Zhang Yang currently possesses. After acquiring all three territories, we shall buy 100 Model 4.0 Tanks. By then, let's see who is daring enough to launch a Territory Conquest over our new territories! Hahaha!"

"Master Zhong, the Territories are great gold mines, you know?"

"That's right! If we take 1 gold piece as the fee for every use of the Teleportation Circle service, just imagine how much we can earn even if each player only use the Teleportation of our Territories once a day! Currently, the population of the players in China Region is approximately 200,000,000! So that's a total of 200,000,000 pieces of gold a day! How cool is that?!"

"200,000,000?!" Longrich widened his eyes so wide that his eyes were about to pop out. Even though they knew that Territories could really generate quite a sum of money for the ones who own the Territories, they had never actually done a close up calculation on the sum of money that Territories could earn for their owners. Instantly, everyone was shocked to hear that amount of daily salary! One day 20,000,000 gold pieces. Then does that mean the owner of one Territory could earn up to a total of 70,000,000,000 gold pieces a year! Calculating on, 10 years would generate over 700,000,000,000 gold pieces! And how about 100 years... they

continued to calculate...

Even if one could only earn that 20,000,000 gold pieces, that amount should be enough to keep that bombshell Luo Yu Rou as mistress and spend like hell on her! Didn't that b\*tch want to keep her clothes on? Then, after keeping her as a mistress, she shall not be allowed to wear anything on her! Look at her and toy with her until she lose her five senses! That were the ideas that went through the dirty mind of Death Arbiter. He licked his lips again while he could obviously felt a tent being set up right between his two thighs.

"Rest assured, everyone. As long as we can take down the Territories, everyone gets a share. All of you here are seniors in the guild. So, every one of you will get a share of the profit!" Before they even start their plan, Zhong Xiu Hua had begun dividing the profits among themselves.

Of course, throwing out the sum of 20,000,000 gold pieces was an act of encouraging his guild members to work for him. Because of that, everyone was pumped to give their 100% to get the plan done.

Zhong Xiu Hua narrowed his eyes a little as he was visualizing the possible outcome of the plan. The moment when Lone Desert gets dismantled, Zhang Yang would lose his Territories. Then, he would lose all his precious things one after another. By then, he would only be an insignificant player that could only play the game well. Zhong Xiu Hua still believed that Zhang Yang would be lower than a piece of sh\*t if 'God's Miracle' did not exist in the first place. He still believed that Zhang Yang was not worthy of becoming his opponent!

Based on Sun Xin Yu's pride and prejudice, she would never stay by the side of a loser. Meanwhile, the Sun Family would never agree to allow their precious daughter in the house to be married to a hoodlum that suddenly got rich overnight. Well, political families such as Sun Family would not look at how rich the person is. They would look at how influential the man could be in the field

of politics and economies.

It seemed possible! The plan seemed simple but possible!

Zhong Xiu Hua nodded and said, "From now onwards, get closer to the core members of the Lone Desert Smoke. Get their trust and befriend them if you can. Once the plan starts, we shall start convincing them to leave Lone Desert Smoke and come join our guild!"

"Yes, master Zhong!"

Scholar Musou and the others nodded.

...

"Noob tank! Noob tank! Look! I'm really awesome right? Look at this! I've managed to draw the tickets to the gala premier of Luo Yu Rou's latest movie 'Suspect in the Castle'! Not only can we watch the movie for free, we can also get the signature of Luo Yu Rou from her personally! Of course, she will sign on her posters for us!" Before she even walked up to Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er had been waving her hands shouting in excitement.

Zhang Yang sighed. Well, now he could not go home straight away after work. He would have to fetch this little brat first before that.

"Fine, fine... you can drop that show off attitude and get in the car now!" Although the little brat was a little unbelievably strange sometimes, her popularity was really something that one could admire. Zhang Yang did not want to be called 'brother-in-law' all over the place by her admirers.

Oh great... there they come... the army of Wei Yan Er's admirers had followed her. They were smiling and acting politely towards Zhang Yang. Well, they really wished that Zhang Yang would let them board the car so that they could continue to pursue the little brat.

That's strange... don't people still love big boobies? How could

this little brat suddenly become so popular among men, then!? It seemed that there are a lot more people with weird tastes hiding in plain sight!



## Chapter 786: Kidnap!

---

Wei Yan Er did not even give a damn about the army of admirers flowing right behind her. She went up to the passenger seat at the front, shut the door and said, "Drive now! Quickly! Cousin sis has ordered for delivery from the Long Xuan Lou Hotel! Let's get back and prepare! I don't want them to eat before we arrive!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Do you know all those boys that followed you out of the university gate?"

"Not at all!" The little brat shook her head like a little monkey, "But they're all very nice! They always treat me nicely and they always bring me out for meals!"

Zhang Yang frowned. This little brat was either really slow on picking things up in such regards or she's just pure stupid...

He started his sports car and drove away from the university. Then, they headed back to Zhang Yang's house.

"Noob tank! Look! Quickly, look!" the little brat shoved a poster over to Zhang Yang. There was a sexy beautiful woman wearing only a bathing towel around her body on the poster. The curves of the woman were totally exposed.

Even though the woman on the poster gave off such a sexy aura, the vital spots of her parts were all tightly covered. Because of that, her poster gave people, especially men, a feeling that they were not looking at a 'tangible' woman.

"What are you looking at?" Zhang Yang could not help laugh. His eyes had to be fixed on the road in order for him to drive safely. So, he only managed to take a quick glance at the poster before fixing his eyes back on the road.

"Well, she's the goddess of sexiness! She's my idol!" Wei Yan Er smiled.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "You admire that pair of

boobs she has, not her. Her boobies are like 10 times larger than yours! So little brat, you should face the reality and accept the fact that your boobs are going to stay this small!"

"Noob tank! You're the worst!" Wei Yan Er pouted and humphed. However, she suddenly turned her eyes back at Zhang Yang and said, "Or you can massage my boobies for me, noob tank!"

"Erk ---" Zhang Yang almost took a wrong turn and sent the car into the drain, almost. He coughed repeatedly and said, "Don't say some crazy stuff while I'm driving, little brat! Somebody might get hurt!"

"Huh? You can't?" Wei Yan Er had no idea what she had just said, "Why can't you help me? You're so full of yourself!"

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "Little brat, who told you to massage your boobs?"

"My classmates! Their boobies are so huge. So I asked them for secret tips on how to get that big. In the end, only two of them whispered to me that their boyfriends have been massaging their boobies for them! Well, I don't have a boyfriend, so I can only ask for your help!" Wei Yan Er just said it out loud without thinking.

Zhang Yang frowned even harder. He was sure that this little brat would surely be corrupted sooner or later if she continued to befriend those kinds of friends.

"From now on, don't even think about massaging boobies! Never mention it again!" Zhang Yang quickly warned the little brat. If Han Ying Xue ever finds out that this little brat talked about it, she would get the wrong idea and think that Zhang Yang might have acted like an animal and done something horrible to the little brat.

"Oh!" Wei Yan Er looked partially understood the situation. However, she immediately looked at the poster again and said, "Noob tank, Luo Yu Rou will come to Zhou Shu in three days. Let's go and have a look!"

"Alright, fine..." Zhang Yang replied out of convenience. Based on the little brat's personality, she would never put a topic to rest if she could not get the answer she sought for. She would just tangle around the topic and your neck until you agree with her.

After reaching home, the dining table was filled with all sorts of dishes that could instantly trigger the hunger of anyone who sees them! Not just the appearance of the dishes, the aromatic smell of the food filled the entire house! Upon feasting on the dishes, everyone cleaned up and logged back into the game. Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 187. His next target would be reaching Level 200!

Upon reaching Level 200, Zhang Yang would become eligible to enter Anthylor The Holy City. By settling down in the city, he would be able to use the neutral auction house, bank or the shops in that city to trade with other players from the other 7 Regions. That would mean that he would be able to expand his business area into a large market populated with 2,000,000,000 players worldwide! The first thing that Zhang Yang aimed to get was a land lease in Anthylor The Holy City and start a new shop similar to his current Little Merchandize Shop over there. With his current Alchemist skill, he could definitely turn the new shop into a second Little Merchandize Shop. The only difference was that he would have even more customers by then.

However, even though he was only 13 levels away from Level 200, he would require approximately 4 months of intense grinding if he does not receive any level rewards from quests. So, it would still be a little too early for him to think too much about setting up his new shop over there. Instead, he should just focus on finding ways of locating the Chapter 9 of the [Book of Revelation] and combining the freaking chapters into one complete book.

After all, Zhang Yang was only one chapter short before he could finally get the complete [Book of Revelation]. However, Zhang Yang had yet to locate the last chapter even after he went back to

the Level 150-180 maps to slay Holy Tier bosses all over again. Zhang Yang made an assumption after that. It would be possible that the Chapter 9 of the [Book of Revelation] had been picked up by someone in the server. So he planned to keep an eye out for the lost chapter in any upcoming Territory Conquest or World boss battle.

During that period of time, another two Ascended Tier bosses had been spawned. However, the Lone Desert Smoke was tragically not able to get anything out of the two bosses. Well, it made sense that not everything good would only happen to them. After all, there were numerous Top Tier guilds all over the server. In a worst-case scenario, any one of the guilds could just join forces with other 3 or 4 guilds to match the power level of Lone Desert Smoke.

Furthermore, the most difficult part about slaying the bosses was locating them first. Or else, players could do nothing, even if they had 'one-hit-K.O' type of Skills.

Over the following days, more and more players were able to reach Level 180. The 20 Model 4.0 Tanks in Lone Desert Smoke were able to function at their full capacity. Some rich members of the guild even bought their very own Model 1.0 Tanks with their own money. Upon forming a 5-player party, they went out with the Tanks for a stroll of fun. At the same time, these players were able to increase the power level of the entire guild as well.

However, Zhang Yang felt that something was off. It was too peaceful!

In the past, hostile guilds such as Eternal Flame and The Dominators would randomly launch attacks and Territory Conquests over the Lone Desert Smoke. Although those were just small-scale attacks, it would cause quite a lot trouble and take up some time for Zhang Yang to deal with. Those guilds seemed to be saying that they were not afraid of the great Lone Desert Smoke.

However, these guilds seemed to have stopped all their attacks on the Lone Desert Smoke. Zhang Yang could not help but think that they had suddenly changed. They were too docile that Zhang Yang felt terrified about it. Even when their members ran into the members of Lone Desert Smoke, nothing happened at all. Instead of bringing more friends back to retaliate like they always did back in the days, some of them even started waving hands at Lone Desert Smoke with a smile! That was bizarre! Could this be the calm before the real storm?

So, what kind of evil plan is he brewing behind there somewhere?

Although Zhang Yang could feel a chill across his spines, he did not put too much thought into it. He just informed everyone in his guild to be extra careful when they're out there, minding their own business. He also made some backup plans in case those enemy guilds decide to launch their attacks suddenly.

Three days later, the people in Zhang Yang's house were dragged by Wei Yan Er over to the cinema to watch Luo Yu Rou's new movie, 'Suspect in the Castle'. Other than Sun Xin Yu who was having a night shift at the police station, everyone in the house headed over to the cinema. Well, this goddess to the otakus really is worthy of the title 'the sexiest beauty'. Her performances in the movie was outstanding, especially for men to feast their eyes upon. There were also a few hot sex scenes in the movie that was hot enough for the men to pop their eyes out and lose their blood out of their noses.

"Okay! Time to go home!" The moment when the movie ended, Zhang Yang wanted to bring the 3 ladies back to his house as soon as he could. However, his plan was ruined because the little brat said that she had not obtained the signature of Luo Yu Rou. She was not willing to leave until she got what she wanted. So they ended up lining up in a super long \*ss queue.

When they made it back to the house, it was more than 2 hours

later. Zhang Yang was on the verge of blowing up in rage.

On the next morning, Zhang Yang went for his daily exercise routine. While he was jogging by the street, he realized that something was off --- there was a delivery truck following him from the start.

Meanwhile, the men in the delivery truck also noticed that Zhang Yang had realized something was off. The driver suddenly pressed on the pedal to accelerate! Then the truck stopped right beside Zhang Yang. After one of the doors were opened, a muzzle of a gun suddenly appeared pointing at him.

Zhang Yang was so shocked that he immediately performed a tumble. He was attempting to avoid getting shot by the gun. After rolling across the ground, he got up and leaped over the fence of the park. He acted very swiftly and he managed to get out of range in time. Then, he heard a soft sound coming from behind him. The next thing he realized was that there was a broken needle on the ground where he was standing before he had reacted!

They were not here to take him out, they were here to ... take him! A kidnap!

Although Zhang Yang had loosened himself a little bit, his reflexes were still intense. Well, he was not in a favorable situation at all! So he lifted his legs and started running like hell. Just when he was about to leap over the high fence before him, another two muzzles appeared from the same door. Even though Zhang Yang was extremely agile and all, he could not best the speed of a 'bullet'. Out of the next two shots, one landed right on his buttcheek!

Zhang Yang took a few more steps before he started to feel that he was losing his strength. Everything went black all of a sudden and he fell straight to the ground.

Two macho men came right out of the truck immediately. They quickly went over and lifted Zhang Yang into the truck. After

loading him up onto the truck in a hurry, the truck drove away immediately. The entire process only took 4 to 5 seconds. The other people in the surroundings were not able to react to what that just happened there. In a brief moment, the delivery truck left the vicinity without a trace.

"What the f\*ck! Is that guy even a human? That dart could have taken out an elephant in an instant! He actually ran for a few steps before he collapsed!"

"Who cares! The mission is completed! We just have to send him to the promised location!"

"Well, this is a pleasant business! All we have to do is to throw this man at a hotel without having to do anything else! This 10,000,000 dollars is such easy money!"

"Cut the crap! Complete the mission first, celebrate later!"

"Yes, boss!"

...

Luo Yu Rou was walking seductively out of the elevator. Those pair of peachy round buttocks of hers were so seductive that the lift attendant could not help to fixate his eyes on them. He felt the urge to charge at her and stick his hard-rock d\*ck straight into her and f\*ck her brains out!

"If I have money, I'll keep her as my mistress! I'll f\*ck her every day to the point that she vomits!" The lift attendant was licking his lips like the perfect pervert.

Even though Luo Yu Rou did not turn her head over, she could still feel the dangerous eyes that were staring at her. She put a vague smile on her face. Well, seducing men from all over the world was her biggest hobby and wish. However, no men had ever touched her before, even though she had been in the movie industry for many years.

"I want all stinky men to feel hungry for me but can't get what

they want!" Luo Yu Rou said quietly in her own heart. Her mother was a mistress to a man with power. When she was in her first year of high school, her mother was pulled into the field of her school by the wife of that man. She was stripped naked and humiliated in front of the students and teachers! She even got a slap on her face!

Meanwhile, Luo Yu Rou became a laughing stock of everyone in school. The male students in the school tried to tackle her and touched her. However, when she tried to reject, she was accused of being cocky. Ever since then, Luo Yu Rou had become a judgemental person who sees all men as filthy pigs. Since everyone believed that she was a fox, she decided to become a real fox and seduce the men into submission. That resulted in many tragedies such as female students jumping off rooftops.

Knowing that she had the potential in her, she chose to become an actor. Then, she became a superstar by doing great in the art of seduction. She was called the queen of sexiness in the country. Every time she saw men were staring at her with perverted eyes, she would smile coldly and feel the sensation of retaliating. Well, the men could only look at her. They could not touch her! That should count as a way of getting revenge on men, at least.

Upon reaching her room, she poured a cup of water and gulped it down. Then she went to bathe. After that, she walked into the bedroom with a tired body --- she had been in an event for the entire day. Even an Ironman triathlete would feel tired after that. Furthermore, she was just a pretty little lady. She only cared about getting a good night's sleep for the night.

However, there was something odd about tonight. She felt very hot all of a sudden. She touched her forehead for a bit. No, she did not have a fever. Why was her crotch so sweaty, then?!

Men! Why did she think of those filthy men then? Luo Yu Rou could feel her consciousness fading away. She quickly opened up the door to the bedroom. The next thing she saw was a man that she had never met before, lying on the bed!



# Chapter 787: Ill-Fate

---

Zhang Yang had a strange dream.

In the dream, he was having a fierce ‘battle’ with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. He did it to them in all sorts of positions! That included many positions that they had never tried before! Well, he was very content with the session. His eyes were blurry. He saw that the woman beside her was not Sun Xin Yu nor Han Ying Xue. As his vision cleared, he saw that the woman was Yu Li! The next moment, he saw the woman as the witch who always seduced him, Chen Xue Yao! By the end of it, he saw the woman as a woman that he did not know at all!

Well, that woman wasn’t a total stranger to him as well. Zhang Yang had just watched her movies a few days back. Well, it was probably because her stunning body curves were mesmerizing to the point that it was stuck deep somewhere in his brain. Well, he actually dreamed of having sex with her!

The situation was like a dream and not a dream at the same time. Zhang Yang let the animal within him out as he made love to the woman on the bed. He went on with the woman until he had no juice left in him to give out anymore! After he was exhausted, he slept like nobody’s business.

A night passed, rays of sunlight slipped through the space between the curtains and shone upon Zhang Yang and his bare naked \*ss. Zhang Yang struggled to open up his eyes. The unfamiliar surroundings gave his heart a shock. Everything that happened to him earlier on had slipped back into his mind --- he was attacked with tranquilizing darts while he was jogging. After that, he passed out and woke up here.

Meanwhile, he immediately noticed that he was not alone on the bed. There was a naked woman lying right below him! What’s even better was that he could feel his little JJ stuck solidly inside

something! The moment he tried to move, the sudden movement of his thick 'rod' woke the woman up immediately.

The woman's hair covered her entire face in a messy condition. As she moved her hair a bit to the side, her pretty little face was revealed right before Zhang Yang's eyes. Her eyes were watery, and she had a perfectly shaped nose. Her face was so fair that it looked a white jade and her lips were pink like cherry blossoms. Her appearance was just mesmerizing that his soul was almost blown away.

It was... Luo Yu Rou!

Zhang Yang immediately remembered whose pretty face this was!

At the same time, Luo Yu Rou was waking up from her dreamy and yet blurry sleep. After seeing her naked body pressed on by another naked man, her watery eyes changed from the state of shock to the state of anger. She opened up her lips, and she was about to scream the hell out of her voice.

Zhang Yang could not afford to let her scream, of course. If this thing is left to escalate, even if he could jump into the Huanghe River, he could never wash himself clean!

'Shameless fan sneaked into the room of superstar goddess Luo Yu Rou and committed a crime where even gods will tremble in anger!'

If that title ever gets out into public, even if Zhang Yang would get arrested and brought back to the police station to be treated like a sexual predator, and the massive number of her fans would be lining up to cut off his 'rod' over and over again!

He quickly pushed his waist forward, opened wide and put his mouth over hers just to shut her up. He even licked the little, soft tongue of the woman! Although it was not the right time, Zhang Yang was a little over-energetic at the moment. His 'rod' could not

help to expand further and got hardened even further. The 'little Zhang Yang' that had not left the 'secret tunnel' immediately expanded and stretched it out!

Luo Yu Rou was so shocked to feel her 'tunnel' being filled up by a solid rod. Terror began to spread across her face as she attempted to escape. Well, might as well be hanged as a wolf instead of a lamb. Zhang Yang could not let her escape of course. Immediately, Zhang Yang turned around and pressed her down onto the bed. He covered Luo Yu Rou's mouth with his hand. On the other hand, the girl was scratching Zhang Yang's back like an angry cat.

Zhang Yang pressed his voice as low as he could and said, "Stop moving around like that and listen to me!"

Luo Yu Rou was so infuriated that she was about to lose her mind. This stinky man! How dare he conquer her body and ask her to follow his instructions? She found an opening and opened up her mouth. Then she bit Zhang Yang's finger hard and a coppery liquid began to drip into her mouth.

"Tsk!" Zhang Yang grinned. Then he immediately put his hand by the chin of the girl and pressed hard to shut her up. Two of his fingers were covered in blood.

This girl was really ferocious. Currently, her eyes looked like the eyes of a killer. If Zhang Yang had let her grab hold of a knife, she would have undoubtedly stabbed him to death!

"I've been set up too!" Zhang Yang had roughly made sense of the entire incident by now, "I was having a morning jog yesterday morning when I was abducted. When I woke up, I found myself here with you! So please, calm yourself first! Think about what happened last night! Did something odd happened to you last night?"

Luo Yu Rou suddenly stopped struggling for a moment. She recalled about the unexplainable strong sexual urge that got hold of her entirely after she took a shower. Well, it was her first time

experiencing that sort of blazing urge over sexual need. And everything started... after she took that cup of water from that bottle on the table!

Did someone drug her through the water?

If she was not bright enough, she would still not believe Zhang Yang's words. However, she was not the type of woman who only has large boobies without brains. So, she found some valid points in Zhang Yang's words. She was willing to accept that Zhang Yang was not so naïve that he would lie to her over such a thing. Furthermore, she was not totally out when everything happened throughout the night. She could still recall fragments of memories that she made the first move to have sex with Zhang Yang. She was riding on Zhang Yang like a lady knight, 'sweeping' over the length and breadth of Zhang Yang's 'rod'. Zhang Yang had not even moved an inch of his body while she was at it.

If Zhang Yang was not tranquilized by the dart, he would definitely... well, any men would definitely move the tiniest bit, under those circumstances!

No matter what the situation turned out to be, she was indeed a victim of the incident. Furthermore, the thick 'rod' of this man was still firmly inside her 'tunnel'. Although Zhang Yang did not pull or push, the hot thick 'rod' was filling the space of her 'tunnel' so tightly that she was about to lose her mind a bit. Well, because of that, she could not help but recall last night's events. Her entire body lost its strength at the thought of it.

Subjectively speaking, she hates all men on earth. She even hated women! However, objectively speaking, she is a very sensitive woman. So she would have her own needs in such regards as well. Because she hated all the men in the world, she had never thought about marriage, at all. Meanwhile, she had been using her very own synthetic 'rod' to settle her own desires.

However, the massaging 'rod' could only satisfy her in the aspect

of size. However, it would not match the full function of the real 'rod'!

So, she stopped her struggle. Instead of screaming like a little b\*tch, she calmly looked at Zhang Yang to express that she had already calmed her tits.

Zhang Yang slowly moved his hands away. However, he was prepared to subdue her if she ever wanted to try anything funny.

"Take that filthy thing of yours out of my body first!" Luo Yu Rou said in a miserable tone. She was currently overwhelmed by shame and disgust.

"Erk!" Zhang Yang blushed and quickly sat up with his knees down. Meanwhile, the 'secret tunnel' of the girl didn't seem to want to let go of the hard-rock rod. When the rod was pulled out in an instant, a 'pop' sound was heard! The two of them were so embarrassed that they lowered their heads for a while.

Luo Yu Rou quickly pulled the blanket around her. Zhang Yang wanted to do the same. However, both blankets had been pulled away by the girl. She did not leave one for Zhang Yang either. Well, Zhang Yang had no shame at all in exposing himself. Firstly, he is a man. Secondly, the both of them had done something that they weren't even aware of. Therefore, he just sat there like nobody's business.

"Can't you just cover your filthy part for a little?" Luo Yu Rou tightened her teeth. She had now suffered a great deal. Although she really wanted to kill Zhang Yang at first, she also knew that this must not be escalated after she had calmed herself down. Or else, that would be the end of her movie industry career.

However, everything was so suspicious. Who would throw Zhang Yang over to her room and drug her with aphrodisiac? So what's the agenda of the man who's behind all this?

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely as if he did not care about it at all.

However, he suddenly had a thought. Countless men over the entire country had been dreaming of seeing Luo Yu Rou sacrificing her body for the purpose of 'Art'. They were waiting for the woman to reveal her perfectly curved, naked body in front of public. If her fans knew that their goddess is now sitting naked in front of Zhang Yang after spending a night with him, countless fans would definitely get jealous to the point that they would want to die!

The atmosphere was awkward. The two of them sat apart while facing each other without saying a single word.

However, it did not take long before Zhang Yang figured something out. So he said, "It would not matter much even if we know who put me here. But that person must want us both to be here so that we could... eh... I think that whatever happened yesterday night has already been recorded by someone!"

Luo Yu Rou instantly went rigid. Her face turned pale in an instant. Yes, she loved to show her sexiness in front of the public. However, that doesn't mean that she's a simple woman who would have sex with any man! Truth be told, Zhang Yang was in fact the first man who shoved his rod into her secret tunnel! The moment she imagined what the photos and news would say about that, she felt the urge of killing herself already!

So, could this be Zhong Xiu Hua then?

That f\*cking cunning man had tried to get another girl to seduce him before. However, the first plan was ruined, all thanks to Chen Xue Yao. However, it seemed that Zhong Xiu Hua did not give up at all. Instead, he tranquilized Zhang Yang straight away and took him right over to the hotel. Then, he drugged Luo Yu Rou with aphrodisiac and created an ill fate between Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou.

Zhang Yang's face was quite pale, himself. However, when he looked at the pale face of Luo Yu Rou, he knew that he could not

change the fact that the two of them had a one night stand. So he could not help but sigh heavily. Then he said, "If this thing escalates to the point that there's no turning back, I'll arrange a trip for you to get out of this country. Let the incident be washed away by time. As for money, you don't have to worry!"

Tears began to roll down from Luo Yu Rou's watery eyes. What did this man think she was? Did he just categorize her as one of those female superstars who sleeps with men? The more she thought about it, the more she grieved in remorse. She instantly pushed forward and attacked Zhang Yang. She pinched and bit Zhang Yang as hard as she could. She spoke with anger, "I'm not a prostitute! What made you think that you can see me as one!"

Zhang Yang did not see her as an important person in his life. Well, there was not much of a difference between a prostitute and a female superstar. The name was just a label that defines their 'price,' after all. One might look very pricey while the other might look so very cheap. One might collect high fees for the service while the other might just collect a small amount of money to get men satisfied.

Zhang Yang's eyes betrayed his thoughts to Luo Yu Rou. Luo Yu Rou was so angry and hopeless at the same time. Her body was trembling so violently that Zhang Yang could feel her emotions right now. "Get out! You! Get out now!"

Seeing her rage blazing across her eyes and her voice, Zhang Yang could not help to put himself down a little. Then he apologized, "I'm sorry... I should not have said that... I sincerely apologize to you, Ms. Luo..."

After that, Luo Yu Rou only pulled herself back and sat down. Then she asked, "So what should we do?" That was her first time she had ever shown her weak side to someone.

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. If there are really some hidden cameras installed in the room --- which is more than likely, then

the person behind all this must have gotten what they wanted. So everything would be pointless no matter what they do next. Sh\*t's about to hit the fan. So, they could only react to the situation whenever something arises.

"Maybe they just want to blackmail us for money!" Luo Yu Rou comforted herself a little.

If this was done by someone else, it would be possible that they were just doing it for money. However, Zhang Yang was 80% sure that this incident was planned out by Zhong Xiu Hua. So, the schemer did not do it for money. They just wanted to make sure that Zhang Yang loses his name and prestige! Speaking of which, Luo Yu Rou was just an innocent victim that got caught in the crossfire between him and Zhong Xiu Hua!

When his thoughts stopped there, he could not help to feel sorry for what just happened to Luo Yu Rou. Then he said, "I'm afraid that you're going to be disappointed now..." Zhong Xiu Hua was obviously not recording all this to blackmail Zhang Yang. He would just release the pictures and photos out into public without having second thoughts. After all, his true agenda was to make Sun Xin Yu leave Zhang Yang!

Thinking of which, he quickly took up the phone by his side and called back home. He had disappeared for a full day. Those ladies in the house must be panicking right now!

When the phone was picked up, Zhang Yang roughly explained the entire situation to Sun Xin Yu. He held nothing back. Well, paper cannot smother fire after all. Meanwhile, he was indeed the victim of this incident!

He did not even need to say who might be behind all that. Sun Xin Yu was 99% sure that she knew it was all Zhong Xiu Hua's doing. She immediately had the urge to put a bullet through that Zhong Xiu Hua's head.



## Chapter 788: Beginning of a storm

---

Zhang Yang had disappeared for over one full day. Sun Xin Yu and the ladies were beginning to panic. Truth be told, Han Ying Xue began to worry because she noticed that Zhang Yang had not return from his regular routine jog since morning. So, she called Sun Xin Yu in the afternoon and told her about it. By the end of it, she decided to let the professionals deal with it.

Sun Xin Yu immediately ordered a few of her colleagues to check on the regular route of Zhang Yang's jog. They managed to acquire a rough idea on what happened at the park. After that, she immediately used her connections in the network and began a search throughout the entirety of Zhou Shu city. Even though Zhou Shu was not a big city, it would still take a while for them to look through the entire city. Just as they were about to run out of hope, Zhang Yang called in, all of a sudden.

Well, Sun Xin Yu had suspected Zhong Xiu Hua to be behind all this. However, that f\*cker knew how to cover his tracks. He managed to clear any suspicion of his role in this. Before knowing what had actually happened to Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu could not go all out on Zhong Xiu Hua. All she could do was giving a few threats to Zhong Xiu Hua before leaving him alone.

However, she had never thought it possible that Zhong Xiu Hua would arrange an 'affair' to happen!

With Sun Xin Yu's intelligence, she immediately suspected that things were as simple as they looked. Zhong Xiu Hua would not be so naïve to believe that such a matter would be enough to separate her and Zhang Yang. It would all fall on the attitude of the woman that Zhang Yang touched. If Zhang Yang had raped the woman, then the story would turn out to be different.

Luckily, Zhang Yang informed Sun Xin Yu that he was unconscious all the while. So he denied raping Luo Yu Rou. After

the two of them discussed for a while on the phone, the two of them could not come up with a tangible solution. So, they could only sit around and wait for things to happen before they react accordingly.

Upon hanging up the phone, Zhang Yang got to his feet and put his clothes back on. Some things were not convenient to be discussed on the phone. He knew that he needed to get back to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue as soon as possible. He needed to communicate properly with both of the ladies. Because when the 'Sex Scandal' is exposed, Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou would not be the only two victims that would get hurt by it. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would also be dragged into the mud.

"You f\*cked me and you plan to just walk away like that?" Luo Yu Rou had been stunned the entire morning. However, when she noticed that Zhang Yang was leaving, she could not help but feel angry. Well, she did not even know the owner of the d\*ck that literally f\*cked her up, after all!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought. Then he said, "Follow me! I believe that our news will be exposed to the entire world by noon today. So you'll just get swarmed by the gossip reporters!"

Luo Yu Rou gave some thought to Zhang Yang's words. Well, it made sense, though. So she decided to follow Zhang Yang and leave the 'crime scene' before it was too late. She put a hat over her head on the way out. So she need not have to worry about being recognized by anyone.

Although she had a car, it was obviously inconvenient for her to drive her own car out of the place. There would definitely be quite a number of entertainment reporters standing by the outside area of the building. If they ever see Luo Yu Rou driving out of the vicinity with another man on her car, they would definitely tail them and follow them anywhere they would go. Their main purpose was to dig out some explosive and juicy news after all!

After hailing a cab, the two of them began to make their way back to Zhang Yang's house. After traveling over some distance, they switched to another cab. When the two of them arrived at Zhang Yang's house, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the ladies were already waiting for them at the entrance of the house.

When Luo Yu Rou saw the four beautiful ladies, she could not help but despise Zhang Yang. She thought that Zhang Yang was a perverted lustful f\*cker who would keep up to four mistresses in his house! She hated men who would keep a mistress in secret. So her evaluation on Zhang Yang had dropped by a thousand feet beneath the surface of the ground. If she wasn't in a bewildered situation right now, she would have never chosen to stay with a man like this!

"Wow! It's Luo Yu Rou! It's the freaking Luo Yu Rou!" The little brat was really a heartless little b\*tch. The moment she saw that Zhang Yang coming back in one piece, she no longer worried. She immediately stared at Luo Yu Rou. If the little brat was not a beautiful lady herself, she would have been mistaken by the others as a pervert.

Upon entering the house, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were told to stay outside of the room for the moment. Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Luo Yu Rou shut themselves in a room and started their discussion on the incident. They were discussing on how to handle the aftermath of the incident.

The two ladies were thinking alike as Zhang Yang did. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had no good impressions towards the people in the entertainment circle. They meant to keep Luo Yu Rou hidden for a period of time through their words. Although Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou were both victims in this incident, however, some things could not be explained with mere words. If they attempt to explain those 'some things', they might ended up adding oil onto fire. Instead, they should just keep everything cold and quiet. After a period of time, everything would be washed away by

the end of it.

Before the clock struck 12p.m, a new post appeared right on the official website of the 'God's Miracle'. This anonymous person had revealed that Zhang Yang, the number one player in 'God's Miracle' had an affair with a famous local female superstar by the title name 'Luo Yu Rou the Sexy Goddess'! The post also claimed that they had pictures and video footages as proof! The anonymous person also posted a few links to the pictures and video footages. Well, one of them was a complete footage of the entire incident in the room!

Although the post was removed because it violated the law by having explicit sexual content, the footage was downloaded by countless people on the internet. The footage was spreading across the internet like an untamed wildfire. Countless people all over the world were requesting for links to watch how Zhang Yang engaged in 'PvP battle' with Luo Yu Rou.

After all, both Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou were famous stars in their respective fields of specialty. Of course, the scandal would cause such a big tidal wave across the surface of a calm water. Later on, some large websites decided to post the footages to earn money. However, they had processed the footage and put some mosaic boxes on the important parts of the video.

However, there wasn't actually much difference between the raw and the censored version of the footage. Well, there was a big problem with the angle of the shot that was taken. The entire video only showed Luo Yu Rou's back while she was sitting right on top of Zhang Yang. Although the back of Luo Yu Rou was fair and seductive, she did not really show too much of her body as well in the footage. Her 'performance' in the footage was just similar to the sex scenes in her previous movies. Nothing more.

When Zhang Yang and the grown-up ladies saw the footage, they felt relieved immediately. The camera had never actually get a clear shot of Zhang Yang throughout the entire incident. However,

Luo Yu Rou was very persistent on screwing Zhang Yang for the entire night. The strong desire of her wanting Zhang Yang caused Zhang Yang to feel a chill straight up his spine. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were very jealous to see what happened throughout the entire footage.

--- they felt heartbroken, because they had never forced Zhang Yang so roughly before! Well, that might be due to the reason of Zhang Yang not being Luo Yu Rou's own man. So, she had no consideration for Zhang Yang's body condition. If she ever 'breaks' Zhang Yang, what would Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu do, then?

After seeing her own crazy performance, Luo Yu Rou blushed. However, she felt relieved and said, "That's not bad, not that bad at all. We can just say that this is a new scene from a new movie!"

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue shook their heads at the same time. Zhang Yang sighed heavily and said, "You're really brainless with big boobs! Who would actually believe that a sex scene is so long? It's an entire night!"

Luo Yu Rou was angry and shameful at the same time. Because of this stinky man, she had become so miserable right now. And now he dared to scold her! However, looking at the footage, Luo Yu Rou seemed to be the one who was dominating Zhang Yang for the entire night. Strictly speaking, she was the violent one and Zhang Yang was the victim of the incident!

Since the incident had happened, Luo Yu Rou decided to optimistically accept the fact. Well, she would not want to see herself being pressed upon by any man and letting the man do whatever he pleased to her. That's because she really hated men. However, even though the footage only showed her back, the high quality audio of the video had recorded her every single moan loud and clear. Her seductive and yet lustful voice had herself unconvinced that she would actually moan like that.

However, being numbed by the sexual drive doesn't mean that

she had lost her memory about the entire incident. The memory about yesterday's night began to play in loops in that pretty little head of hers. Everything began to get clearer and cleared every time she got reminded of that night. She could clearly remember the moment Zhang Yang's rod beginning to enter her body. That hot impact was irreplaceable by any masturbating rod in the entire world!

Mentally speaking, she really hated men in the entire world. However, her body had no illness nor other problems. Instead, her body was naturally born to be sensitive. So her 'need' would be a little more intense than others.

Luo Yu Rou took a peek at Zhang Yang and suddenly, she realized that she actually did not hate the man anymore. Instead, she suddenly felt an urge to surrender herself to the man! The thought of it gave herself a chill up her spine. She shook her head and forced herself to remove that thought from her mind. She kept reminding herself that she would not surrender herself to any man in the entire world!

Meanwhile, a new wave arose when the previous one has barely subsided. Many anonymous people began to tell, or should we say the word 'expose', that Zhang Yang was using his title as the guildmaster of Lone Desert Smoke to force girls to sleep with him. Sometimes he would even force girls to have an orgy sex with him! These people were claiming either to be the victims or the husbands, boyfriends of the victims. They even posted the seductive pictures of their so-called girlfriends and wives on the forum to stir things up.

Well, some of the people recognized that among those photos, some of the girls in the photos were in fact porn stars. However, the majority of the people were infuriated by the rumors they heard. So they did not care about it at all and kept scolding Zhang Yang, saying that he was a scumbag. They even voiced out that the scumbag Zhang Yang should be dragged out into the open and shot

in the head over a hundred times.

"Actually, they're all just jealous!" Fatty Han had long heard about the rumors. He tapped Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "Little Yang, so how many d\*cks do you actually keep under your pants? It's been only 3 years since 'God's Miracle' was launched. So according to my calculations, you should have slept with more than 4,000 women by now. So, you've slept with 4 women a day, on average. Without breaks either! I admire your stamina, man!"

Actually, those who are sane would not actually believe those crappy rumors. However, just like what Fatty Han just said, those whining f\*ckers were just jealous of Zhang Yang. That was the only valid reason for them to create such a false ruse to make Zhang Yang look bad. Well, the current situation was like some people hearing about a dirty officer keeping hundreds of mistresses in secret. Although they were scolding the officer violently, they were actually admiring the officer from the bottom of their hearts.

Well, that was the true mentality buried deep within those thick skulls of theirs. They would just blame the rich for keeping mistresses while they held high hopes in winning a lottery. They were hoping to get rich as well so that they would be able to live like those rich people that they always loathed.

Why act like a lamb when you are a real wolf?

"F\*ck you, get lost!" Zhang Yang gave Fatty Han a punch.

"Hehe, I know that the rumors about you having the others are not true at all. However, you really did f\*cked that Luo Yu Rou!" Fatty Han revealed a perverted expression on his wretched face. He elbowed Zhang Yang and said, "So how was it? Tastes good, eh? That woman is famous for being sexy and seductive. I used to watch all her movies and photo albums like watching porn! I've even battled her over a hundred times in my dream, if you know what I mean! But I can't think about the wife of a brother, so I'll just switch another goddess to f\*ck in my dream!"

"If you have that much energy, then you should just go back to your wife and feed her with your excessive energy!"

"Honestly, how do you plan to handle the superstar then? She has over millions of fans you know... if those fans ever find out that you have a house full of pretty girls, they'll definitely dedicate their entire lives just to plucking your d\*ck out!"

Zhang Yang stared at Fatty Han and said, "As long as you can keep your big f\*cking mouth shut, no one would know that she's here in my house!"

"Zhang Yang---" Luo Yu Rou suddenly knocked the door. She sounded like she was about to ask Zhang Yang about something important.

Fatty Han knew what to do. So after he laughed evilly for a bit, he left the house.

"What's wrong?"

"Erm... do you have pills? You know... the kind to control birth?" Luo Yu Rou said. She suddenly remembered her 'joyful incident' that happened yesterday. Both of them did take any precautions before they begun. So if she really gets pregnant, then she'll be miserable for the rest of her life.

Well, she had no plan at all about having a child in her life. The main reason was because she believed that she would not fall in love with any man in the entire world. Without love, it would not be wise to create a new life in her life.

Zhang Yang began to feel a headache about the current situation. Well, of course he did not have such medicines kept in his house. The main reason was simple. He really hoped that Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would both be pregnant with his children. By then, these two ladies might no longer quarrel with each other. The house would become peaceful at last. However, things did not go his way. It's been almost 2 years since then, the belly of the two



ladies were still flat as f\*ck. Zhang Yang could not help but suspect that he had lost his ability of spreading offsprings after he was resurrected!

## Chapter 789: Proof of Innocence

---

Although Zhang Yang really wished that Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would be pregnant with his child, he would not want a stranger to be the mother of his child. So he nodded immediately and said, "I don't have any in the house. I'll buy it immediately."

Coincidentally, he was about to send Fatty Han back home. So the two of them arrived at the pharmacy to buy the birth control pills. However, the female attendant at the counter of the pharmacy was shocked to see them. Her eyes betrayed her thoughts to Zhang Yang and Fatty Han. She was looking at them with genuine shocked and pity --- how could a gay get pregnant as well? How outrageous can the world be, now!?

Because some anonymous group was trying to spread the fire that was burning Zhang Yang, the 'Zhang Yang Incident' was becoming more serious than ever. At the same time, the Lone Desert Smoke was pushed to the chopping board. The guild that used to be known as an honorable guild had now become an infamous guild of 'lust'. Although no one had left the guild yet, the morale of the guild had dropped like hell.

Well, people said that the rumors would end at the mouth of the wise. However, there weren't really many wise people in the world after all. Furthermore, there was a group of people dedicated to spreading false rumors about Zhang Yang. So they managed to provoke a bunch of blind and idiotic people who could get jealous easily to hate Zhang Yang. They claimed to be acting on behalf of their so-called 'justice' to bring the pervert, Zhang Yang, down. They were giving it all in demeaning the good name of the Lone Desert Smoke.

Under the blame of the 'Internet Army', any form of action or effort to save oneself would be pointless. Even if anyone would step up to say a few words for the Lone Desert Smoke, they would only end up being accused of lying for Zhang Yang. Some of them

were even accused of being hired or appointed by Zhang Yang to step up and say some good words for the Lone Desert Smoke. Whoever came up, or whatever they said, they would end up being cursed upon.

"Actually, we can just leave the f\*cking place!" Sun Xin Yu was leaning on Zhang Yang's body. Although she had a powerful background to support her, she would still feel helpless against the 'Internet Army' that was coming at them like a tsunami tidal wave.

"Leave? As in getting out of the country? Migrate?" Zhang Yang spoke out of convenience.

"No, leave the game!" Han Ying Xue continued to say. "If you can't put the fire in the game down, we can still play some smaller-scale game. After all, money is just a figure to us."

Zhang Yang stayed silent for a moment, In the beginning, he joined into the 'God's Miracle' because he wanted to earn some money so that he could have a good life. However, the real reason he joined 'God's Miracle' was to make a name for himself and defeat Liu Wei. Now that Liu Wei is dead as f\*ck, the Liu Family had been crippled for good. It seemed that he does not have any reason left to stay in the game.

Well, a game would always be a game. People could use them as a means of passing their time. It would be impractical to make gaming into a lifetime profession.

However, if he quits the game without putting up a fight, he would become a laughing stock for the people all around the world. People would just think that he was running away from Zhong Xiu Hua like a rat in the sewer. Now that Zhong Xiu Hua was manipulating everything to go against him, he could not stomach the thought of running away, knowing that son of the b\*tch Zhong Xiu Hua has won. Zhang Yang could not accept the fact that he has lost to a f\*cking rich spoilt brat!

Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile on his face. Then he said, "I'm

going to put up a good fight! Are you willing to accompany me, my loves?"

Han Ying Xue's face turned red again and said, "Haven't had enough just now?"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely and said, "You insanely perverted woman! Don't think of me as being as perverted as you are! I'm talking about a real fight! Not sex!"

"Then, what are you planning to do, then?" Sun Xin Yu seemed relieved upon hearing those fierce words. Well, what Sun Xin Yu liked the most about Zhang Yang was his persistence and fervour.

Zhang Yang cracked his knuckles and said, "We'll do a large-scale investigation. We've got quite a number of people claiming that they're the 'victims' of this incident, right? We'll gather everything up and wring it from them! Since Zhong Xiu Hua loves to play, I'll play with him till the end!"

"But it's going to cost a lot to do a large-scale investigation!"

"Money is not a factor to concern about! I'm now so poor that I only have money left!"

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue looked at each other and smiled together. Then, they nodded to express their agreements on Zhang Yang's thoughts. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang did not lose everything to this incident. Instead, he got even closer to both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue than he had ever been.

"How about that female superstar? What do you plan to do with her?" Han Ying Xue had finally brought up the topic that he must face sooner or later.

Zhang Yang frowned. Well, few days after the incident, Zhang Yang realized that Luo Yu Rou was not as shallow and stupid as he thought she would behave. She had her own principles. However, her weakness was very obvious. She favored fame and glamour a little too much. She had been dreaming about getting her prestige

back and continue on being her 'Queen of Sexiness' to seduce all the men in the entire world.

However, her dream would almost be impossible, now. Well, quite a number of websites had opened up polls for the people all around the world to vote. Up to 88% of the majority voted Luo Yu Rou to return as a porn star!

Although Luo Yu Rou had always performed outstandingly in the field of 'sexiness', she had never actually had any scandals before in her entire career life. Even though she was known to have quite a connection in the film industry, her name was clean and good at the least. She was known to be one of those superstars that had never committed any affairs nor inappropriate behaviors. She was well known as a pure and untainted superstar.

However, because she was dragged right into the sticky mud of the 'Zhang Yang Incident', her image was deeply affected in a bad way. Many people had been pointing fingers at her, saying that she was a pure b\*tch. So stop acting all pure and innocent. They even blamed her for acting highly just because she did not want to reveal her nipples to the public.

Over the following days, Luo Yu Rou had lost a lot of weight. Her waist was so thin that any men could just grab hold of it with one hand. However, her boobs did not shrink at all. Instead, her boobies had gained some size. She looked even sexier now! If she ever gets the chance to return to the big screen, her appearance would definitely cause 90% of the male population that watch her movies to lose their blood out through their noses!

Well, her title 'Queen of Sexiness' was not a joke. She was called by that title because all of her movie fans called her that.

"Speaking of her..." Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Let's put these rumors all to rest first before we think about how to deal with her."

After that, the hot topic 'Zhang Yang Incident' was stirred

towards a different direction. Zhang Yang held a press conference to strongly express his statement. He denied to all accusations on him and he also expressed that he was going to take actions by bringing the law upon those who tried to frame him. He wanted to severely punish those who attempted to defame his good name.

After the local authorities had confirmed everything, Zhang Yang launched a police report. Meanwhile, the case had also received the approval from the judge to carry out a full-on investigation on the matter. The bureau would be extending their investigations over to the 4,000 over people who claimed that they were the Zhang Yang Incident's victims. The police had notified the families of the victims in hopes of them stepping up with the evidence of Zhang Yang's 'crime' with courage. The police were hoping that they would at least provide the time and the locations of where and when the incidents happened.

The person on the chopping board began to fight back. Zhang Yang's action had brought a new breath of life across the 'Zhang Yang Incident' again. Because Zhang Yang was acting so strong headedly this time, many people had calmed their idiotic heads down to think properly. How could a man f\*ck over 4,000 women in three years? It would be outrageously unreal! Could it be, that Zhang Yang was really framed?

It did not take long before the identities of the so-called 'victims' were revealed to the public. The funny part about it was that many of the 'victims' were actually local artists and porn stars who had posted their photo album on the internet before! Everything on the internet was solid proof to that statement, after all.

Meanwhile, the identities of the other women were beginning to be revealed as well. Well, they were actually hotel attendants, government officers and many more. Truth be told, when Zhang Yang began to take action, many of those women quickly reported to the police that they had never even met Zhang Yang before in their entire lives. They even claimed that their photos had been

stolen for bad intentions. They claimed that their lives were affected because of this incident.

As the information began to flood in, the truth began to reveal itself to the public. The rumors began to get overshadowed by the truth --- someone was trying to hurt Zhang Yang from the shadows.

Meanwhile, the police had received help from some hacker activists in apprehending some of the so-called victim's husbands and boyfriends. When these idiots were asked to explain themselves for creating false messages to the public, they only replied that they did it because they were hired by anonymous people.

The tide of the incident began to turn. The 4,000 over so-called victims had been proven to be nothing but frauds. At first, people were still suspecting that the police were trying to protect Zhang Yang. However, as time passed and more evidence started surfacing, more and more people began to realize that the rumors served as a medium of framing Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang seemed to have settled his part of the incident. However, Luo Yu Rou's 'Hotel One Night Stand' incident was becoming even more significant among the people. Because the face of the man she rode on was not revealed, everyone was kept guessing. They had totally excluded Zhang Yang from the possibility because of what he did recently. Everyone already believed that he was truly being framed.

For that, Zhang Yang did not know whether he should cry or laugh. If anyone ever finds out that the main female actor of the movie is staying at his house, another storm would definitely hit Zhang Yang in the face again!

In the game, the Lone Desert Smoke had been through quite some ordeals together with Zhang Yang. However, they had been suffering great losses as well. Quite a number of players were

affected to the point that they decided to leave Lone Desert Smoke by the end of it. When the guild had been elevated up to a Level 6 Guild, not only had Lone Desert Smoke failed to increase the number of their members in the guild, the number had also decreased from 50,000 to 40,000 only!

Fortunately, the twenty players that Zhang Yang picked to possess a Tank stayed in the guild. They proved their loyalty by not abandoning Zhang Yang and the guild. Zhang Yang felt very comforted, knowing that he had not trusted the wrong person yet.

However, after the violent disturbance in the force of Lone Desert Smoke, the power level of the guild was affected significantly. Although they remained as the strongest guild in the entire China Region, they were no longer as invincible as they were in the past. Instead, the Eternal Flame had taken advantage of the opportunity to grow stronger. That guild managed to grow into one of the four most significant guilds in the entire China Region such as Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, and Imperial Sky.

Because of that, Zhang Yang was ignited to fight. He made up his mind to go all out on the Eternal Flame. If it's a fight they wanted, Zhang Yang would fulfill their 'requests' and give them a decent fight! Zhang Yang was finally determined to eliminate Zhong Xiu Hua out of the 'God's Miracle'!

Although the pigs that create the rumors were being prosecuted with the charges of defaming a person's good name, those pigs had only paid some money in the process of it. None of them were daring enough to drag Zhong Xiu Hua, the real culprit into the mud. Furthermore, it would also make perfect sense that Zhong Xiu Hua would not make the arrangements himself. So, it would also be impossible for the investigators to link the crime back to him.

Zhang Yang requested that Sun Xin Yu get Zhong Xiu Hua out of his 'lair' so that they could have another chance to have a 'tea



session' again. However, that fellow revealed a pale face the moment he was invited through a video call. He immediately hung up the video call when Sun Xin Yu mentioned the meet-up. Well, he had recently mended his teeth. He would not risk losing them again, will he? That should let Zhang Yang work off his feelings towards that son of the b\*tch for a little.

Upon logging back into the game, Zhang Yang hustled up and started grinding. Well, he had been so occupied that he did not even have time to think about grinding. So he was only Level 188 currently. Meanwhile, top Tier players like One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker, Scholar Musou and the others had reached Level 186. They were just 2 levels behind Zhang Yang.

Just when Zhang Yang was ready to grind like a madman, an unexpected twist of events had happened to him.

"It didn't come this month!" Luo Yu Rou had no idea if she was terrified or joyful at the moment. When she said that, her voice was trembling.

Zhang Yang was not a sensitive man. So he replied her like a silly boy, "What didn't come?"

Luo Yu Rou sighed heavily. Well, speaking to an insensitive idiot like Zhang Yang would really be tiring. Then she said, "I, am, pregnant! It's, your, child!" She was explaining it while doing some hand signs at the same time.

"Come on! I'm not an idiot! Wait... what did you say?!" Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment.

"You've impregnated me and you want to run away like a little f\*ck as if nothing happened that night?" Luo Yu Rou was infuriated.

# Chapter 790: The Race to Level 200

---

Zhang Yang brain melted. He had no idea what he was feeling then. At then, when the words came out of Luo Yu Rou's mouth, he felt it all. Everything. Happy. Shocked. Euphoric. Bliss. Conflict. All of it. He had no idea what to do next.

He gagged with his mouth dropping to the floor and said one sentence. "Are...you...sure?"

"Why would I lie about bad news? This is something bad for me, more than it is to you!" said Luo Yu Rou angrily, like a cat having its tail stepped on.

"R-Relax! I'm sorry! Please don't get so agitated! I don't want my baby to have some kind of deformation!" said Zhang Yang as he tried to calm the woman down by gently stroking her hair. He had not planned this. He had not wanted a random stranger to have his baby. However, when the thought of a possible future generation is growing in her womb, Zhang Yang felt the utmost happiness of being a parent. He could not help it. The "fatherly instinct" in him grew so strong that he kissed her forehead and went to his knees. He pulled Luo Yu Rou shirt up and cupped his ear against her womb, trying to hear the sound of the baby.

"What are you doing? I'm only been pregnant for just a month!" Luo Yu Rou pinched Zhang Yang's cheek. She too, felt extreme conflicted. She did not want to have a random stranger's baby. However, when the pregnancy test came back and showed two blue lines on the indicator, she felt a sort of happiness before the dread come in. Despite the horror of discovering she was pregnant, she did not want to have the babe aborted.

Zhang Yang rose to his legs and smiled like how Wei Yan Er smiled. He felt more alive then he had ever felt before in his life. He felt as if Luo Yu Rou had breathed in new life into him. At first, he had thought hard about the rules of causality, the butterfly

effect. That death must exist! He felt happy. Not only whoever who had sent him back in time had spared him or anyone close to him, the person had also granted Zhang Yang a new life as well!

He had been deeply entwined with both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue for more than two years, yet no matter how many loads that he had pumped into them, no life was born. As expected of hips that were meant to bear children, Luo Yu Rou's massive voluptuous life-giving hips were so efficient that one load was enough to give him a child!

As such, Zhang Yang hugged the woman for the good news she had given him. He then slid his hand down her back and traced downward more to her soft and supple meat buns.

Luo Yu Rou blushes wildly like a blooming rose. Despite being stoic all the time, her fair cheeks burned red like the setting sun. Her body started to soften up from his graceful caresses. However, she pulled herself together before getting lost in the forest of pleasure. "What are you doing?"

Zhang Yang retracted his hands and looked her deep into her eyes. "You're the mother of my babe. What do you think I am doing?"

Zhang Yang's eyes burned with passion. The woman in front of him was the idol of the entire country, the envy of all women. Just for that, he was already "ready to go" with her. Plus, she was carrying his bloodline! That alone was enough to set his mind straight. He must make her his woman!

"Hmph!" Luo Yu Rou turned her head away. "If you can't keep it in your pants, I'd suggest going for the two vixens! Don't get over your head just because you had made me pregnant." Said Luo Yu Rou as she felt the stiff flag pole trying to thrust into her womb. Her already sensitive body jerked violently and involuntarily at the touch of him.

"What are you talking about? Vixens? They are my wives. And so

are you!" said Zhang Yang softly and seriously.

"Pfft." Luo Yu Rou scoffed. "Are you still living in the Tang Dynasty? Are you serious about marrying several wives?" she continued. She was trying purposely to annoy Zhang Yang, to try to provoke the man.

Zhang Yang shrugged casually and said, "Well. If you don't want to be my wife, you could try to fit in as my lover?" Zhang Yang laughed jokingly and slid his palm from the front and gently made his way beneath her undergarment. He could almost feel the tip of the prickly forest on his fingertips.

Luo Yu Rou was clearly aroused but she was still strong enough to push him away after several seconds of momentary bliss.

"Oh. F\*ck off you. I said it once and I will say it again. Don't get overly conceited just because your blood is in my womb. Remember, I can always have you prosecuted for rape!" said Luo Yu Rou through her ragged breath. Her undergarment was pulled and teased, causing the strings of her fabric to gently rub against the bell of her sacred temple. Although she tried to restrain it, she could not stop the love nectar from flowing out of her body.

"Is...that...so?" said Zhang Yang slowly, syllable by syllable as he teased the woman. Without further a due, he pulled down Luo Yu Rou skirts and kisses the lower part of her womb lovingly. Despite all her protest, the woman had not stopped Zhang Yang nor did she try to pull her skirt back up. He got up to his feet and whispered into her ear. "Help me get inside you."

Finally annoyed, Luo Yu Rou grabbed his golden sack and squeezed them hard, yet not too hard. Just enough to send the man jumping to his feet. "You horny little wolf. Do you know that it was all because of you that I had to quit my job?! How are you going to reimburse me for all my hard work!? My entire life is being flushed down the drain!"

It had been a month since the incident and Luo Yu Rou had

understood the grudge between Zhang Yang and Zhong Xiu Hua. She knew that Zhang Yang was not technically at fault then, yet she bore some hatred for him since she was an innocent woman who got caught in the exchange. Although the leaked video had some angle problems and managed to hide most of her private parts, the rest of the world had already guessed and knew about her being in bed with a man.

Despite being the sexiest woman alive in China, that sort of news will only be the ultimate downfall to her career. No diehard fan of hers will accept the reality of her being with a man. If she does want to get back onto the screen, she would have to resort to B rated movies, which was something she will never accept.

"What sort of reimbursement do you want?" said Zhang Yang. He then cupped his hands on her twin peaks, the same peaks that countless of men would want to "motorboat" with. Suffice to say that Zhang Yang was playing with the two things that all men in China would want to touch!

Luo Yu Rou paused a while and moaned unwillingly when Zhang Yang continued to "knock" on her doors.

"I want to start a movie studio. From scratch!" said Luo Yu Rou confidently after she had realized Zhang Yang is capable of such feat.

Zhang Yang stopped and crossed his arms. With one eyebrow raised, he said, "Fine by me. But, I want you to be a good wife and be a good mother to our children. I don't like the idea of my wife being eyed upon all day long. There's also the thing about you being touched here and there during filming."

Luo Yu Rou widened her eyes with surprise. She scoffed again and said, "My, my. Aren't you being a little too hasty with that? Is it jealousy I'm detecting from you? Anyhow, the path of my company's growth will be towards 'God's Miracle'. No men can touch me. Besides, dominating all men's heart had always been my

goal. That will never change."

"I like to see you succeed. I really do. But I can't help but find a major flaw in your plan. How could you dominate all men when you can't even dominate me?"

"Didn't I dominate you already?"

"You did. But, you've left out a tiny portion."

"Aurgh...Fine."

The girl was the best classified as what the Japanese would call a strong tsundere. Despite being cold and mean, she would always give into what Zhang Yang asked. The two kissed each other and made their way to Zhang Yang's room to continue the lovey-dovey session there.

...

The incident of Luo Yu Rou being pregnant was not well accepted by Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. When women get on their nerve, spending money to buy stuff that pleases them would be one of the best methods of releasing their pent-up rage. As a result, Sun Xin Yu had proposed to Han Ying Xue that they have a "good time" in France. They even brought along Daffodil Daydream and Wei Yan Er along! When one was not enough, they had spent so much that two of Zhang Yang platinum credit cards were sent to the limit! Just one of them was enough to purchase several high-end Jimmy Choo's summer collections! Just how much anger did the two women bear?!

Sigh. Then again, the life in Luo Yu Rou's womb was blossoming. There was no reason for Zhang Yang nor anyone else to abort the baby. In the end, with heavy heart, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had accepted Luo Yu Rou as the fourth "participant" to their family. After spending what seems to be an entire nation's wealth, the two women came back from France and locked themselves in Zhang Yang room, forcing him to empty his golden balls into them

until they were pregnant as well.

With 'God's Miracle' as the studio itself, shooting a film will be as easy as walking in the park. All Luo Yu Rou had to do would be to write a good script, design the scene, pick and select the characters' appearances and the game developers will take care of the rest. Naturally, shooting in the game itself will require some form of fee. However, the overall expenses will be at least 90% cheaper than shooting in reality.

In fact, setting up and registering a filming company was extremely easy. Plus, with Sun Xin Yu's help, Zhang Yang only required less than 10 days to find the appropriate staff and crew to start. It all depended on Luo Yu Rou herself to craft out a good script, and to hire the actors and directors. When all the crew members are gathered and ready to film, she would need to then pay the game developers to set up the scenery and the character creation for the actors.

So far into the relationship, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Luo Yu Rou were doing just fine, or so they seem. To fight a war with the enemy, one must first make sure there would never be a civil war in their own nation. After making sure that the girls would not make a random fuss about random stuff, Zhang Yang then logged back into the game to continue his grinding session.

"We have been slacking on boss raids for more than a month! Even though we have the strongest equipment in the game, we might still lose to other guilds in terms of Levels!" said Hundred Shots as he expressed his worries about the guild progression. Due to Zhang Yang's, Han Ying Xue's, and Sun Xin Yu's irregular logins, many of the new Ascended tier bosses that had spawned during their absence had been claimed by other guilds.

"Well then. We should double our efforts." Said Zhang Yang nonchalantly.

Everyone knew about the case that happened to Zhang Yang.

Their anger and rage were all genuine and understandable. As words of rumors continue to spread like wildfire, the urge to permanently extinguish the so-called Eternal Flame became stronger.

The last man standing will surely prevail. Right then, Lone Desert Smoke had been through a tough ordeal. Hence, even though the rumors had brought Lone Desert Smoke down to its knees, it was not all a bad thing. As such, all the ill-willed players had left the guild, what that was left in the guild were the strong, down to earth, and the most loyal members!

Most of the Ascended tier bosses that spawned were the result of the game's story progression; it will be hard to find a random Ascended tier boss that spawns with no reason at all. Hence, for now, Zhang Yang was able to pay attention to rebuilding the guild and expanding it bigger to restore the former glory of Lone Desert Smoke. Even though the incident of Zhang Yang sleeping around had delivered a great impact to Lone Desert Smoke, a similar positive impact had occurred to Lone Desert Smoke after the case was clarified to the entire world. As such, Lone Desert Smoke's popularity was restored. However, it will be hard for Zhang Yang to strengthen the guild then, since 99% professional players would already be in a guild. If Zhang Yang wants to recruit strong players, he would need to lower his requirements to the lower level players.

Although it might be demeaning, it was about time for Lone Desert Smoke to get rid of the useless old dogs and to recruit greenhorns over. At then, Lone Desert Smoke had over 20,000 empty slots. With Hundred Shots taking care and filtering each new recruits, there will not be cases where he would discard the number 1 requirement, that is the morality of the player, just to fill in the numerous empty slots.

That sort of recruitment will inevitably take up some time. It was expected that the guild might take up to half a year to restore itself



to its former invincible state. As such, many of the diehard loyal members of Lone Desert Smoke had understood the real enemy. Before the incident, they would not involve themselves in the vengeance between Zhang Yang and Zhong Xiu Hua, however, when the collateral damage had included them in the line of fire, the hatred towards Zhong Xiu Hua found a reason.

Roughly 10 days later after Zhang Yang resumed his regular login activities, he managed to reach Level 190. Since Level 190 bore no special meaning to it, the system had not made any announcements nor rewards. Things would be different from Level 200 onwards. The official site had released information about players being awarded for their tireless effort. Up to 10 players who reach Level 200 first will receive a random powerful skill. On the other hand, the first three players that reach Level 200 will also receive additional Luck attribute state. Best of all, the first player that reaches Level 200 will have his or her name etched on the Hall of Fame!

Skills that were rewarded from the system will naturally be strong. In other words, all players that had the chance to reach Level 200 first had pumped all their effort into grinding alone.

In MMORPG culture, there were two ways to be the highest-level player. One, put in 110% effort to be the best and grind all day, all night, 24/7, 365 days a year. Two, if you cannot handle the stress of making sure you're the fastest, all you have to do is to prevent others from catching up to you! With that in mind, endless PvP session in the open-world field had erupted. Although players that were killed in the PvP session were no longer suffering from Level degradation, they would lose all their experience points that had been earned during said level. Imagine having 99% experience points and losing it all due to a single PvP battle. That would plunge the player down in the list, making him waste 10 days of his effort. At then, it would be impossible for said player to chase after the rest.

Guilds like Eternal Flame that had been known to act like uneducated gangsters, had sortied several groups of Assassins to find and bring down players on the Level Ranking Board. All to allow Scholar Musou, Longrich to reach Level 200 first.

When one does it, so will the others. Naturally, other guilds had done the same as Eternal Flame and had caused a massive region to regional war. The entire world was thrown into an ugly, selfish, and gory battle amongst each other. All for the sake of reaching Level 200 first.

In the end, those players that were earnestly trying to win the race had no safe place to grind. In the end, they had found their safe haven in the normal mode of the Spectre's Hidden Cavern. The normal mode of any dungeons allowed players to raid the dungeon repeatedly without any limits. Players could then rely on killing monsters and bosses in the dungeon to gain level.

At then, Zhang Yang was still the number 1 player on the Level Ranking Board. Despite that, it was not a safe spot for him since many other players of other region were only 1 or 2 levels behind him.

# Chapter 791: Battle of the Best

---

Zhang Yang was not the kind of man that would take a beating without giving one back.

In fact, he was on the lucky side since he had managed to score a real superstar and have her to carry his potential son in her belly! Still, the entire experience of it was like coming out of the fire and scoring a damsel. The problem was the fact that someone had set him ablaze. That was the real beef he had with Zhong Xiu Hua. There's a saying in the Chinese culture. You're not a real man if you don't right those who wrong you.

Zhang Yang did not care about what Sun Xin Yu warned him about. He did not care about her family background or where she stood in the political world. All he knows that Zhong Xiu Hua had struck first, and he will strike back. The hammer of justice shall be swift. He hired many private investigators to find any possible information regarding Zhong Xiu Hua that he could use it to Zhang Yang's advantage.

Zhong Xiu Hua's father will soon take over the top ranks of the nation. If he does, Zhang Yang might not be able to do anything to topple him then. However, the target of his vengeance was only Zhong Xiu Hua. It's not like he was an untouchable prince or something. There is something called a network. With the power of cyberspace and relationship with people, Zhang Yang could do anything to topple him down! The best and most efficient way to bring someone down is to dig out his past, especially the "dirty" ones and release them into the internet. Once the government officials know about it, the game will then begin.

All the things he planned were all step by step. It will, in the end, take up a long time to accomplish. At most, the things he did was to buy information. There will always be a limit to how much he can do on his own.

Back to the gaming world. There were many daunting Assassin players around that had dared to assault them. In non-party conditions, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, and even Sun Xin Yu would not dare to step outside to grind on their own. If they are unlucky to stumble upon a patient hunter, they will then strike when you're most vulnerable. Although Thief class do not have the greatest DPS, and were unable to solo kill monsters on their own, heal, nor farm dungeons on their own, they were still considered to be the deadliest players in the open-world. A true killer. The Wilderness King!

A good Thief will always hide in the shadows and wait like a viper until the right time to land the killing blow.

Perhaps, the only class that would have no fear of Thieves would be Guardians like Zhang Yang. In normal circumstances, besides from fighting a boss, a Guardian would always have their HP maintained at 80% or higher. Zhang Yang had Felice by his side. If he senses danger, he could have Felice to heal him while Zhang Yang takes care of the assassins. But, if he does encounter a whole gang of Assassins, he could simply escape with an array of Invincibility and Invisibility skills. He could also simply outrun them by flying away with the Phoenix! It was as simple as that.

However, even for Zhang Yang, it would be best for him and the other guild members to grind their levels in dungeons. Although grinding in dungeons would be the safest zone, the grinding speed will never rival that of the open-world. Hence, whenever Zhang Yang comes online, the entire gang will join him in the grinding spree. All except Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream. Those two were natural-born Assassins. It would be a sin of a lifetime if they were to be caught by other Assassins.

Zhang Yang came online and brought the party to the Mountains of Kael Gus. The map was a Level 180 – Level 210 map. Among all the same Level map, that was the further map from the further conquered Territory around. Technically, the number of players in

the map should be the lowest count. With fewer players around to disrupt the monster kill, it would be the best for them to start their grinding spree.

For normal players, going out into the open-world to grind will take time and money. Supplies will run out, equipment will require fixing, recovery items will run dry. All and all, they would have to travel all the way back to a Territory or main city to recuperate. The journey itself took up most of their time. Hence, the importance of a Territory. Like a train station, they would simply use the Teleportation Circle to travel back to the main city easily.

For Zhang Yang's party, as long as the healers in the party could last, they would not have much problem grinding. All they had to bring along with them were MP pots and snacks. With an endless supply of MP, they could support the entire party to continue their grinding spree.

As for equipment durability, Hundred Shot got it covered. He had already managed to acquire blueprints for a repairing robot which allowed players to pay a higher cost to have their equipment fixed at anywhere, anytime. Despite the heightened price of fixing, it was recompensed back in the time of traveling back and forth.

Zhang Yang planned to grind at the map for some time. While he planned it that way, the entire party had steeled their decision to not go back to the main city until everyone reaches Level 200. They will give it all they had to make sure that everyone owns the top 10 spots!

Truth be told, Zhang Yang's party was not the only one that had set up shop in a map. Many other guilds might not have something like a repairing robot, but they had methods to allow their members to camp at a map for a long duration. Some were practicing good sportsmanship where they saw Zhang Yang had already occupied the map and leaves them alone without even trying to negotiate. Some were malicious enough to kill all the

players in the field to dominate the map.

All in all, the most important thing then was to stay online for as long as possible. That, and making sure that no one can jump on you while you are grinding. Once you're killed, that's sayonara to continue the race.

For the next two months, everyone had faced much trouble to main a sane state of mind. The constant fear of being ambushed while grinding at their fastest speed for long duration was incredibly taxing to one's mind. No one could let down their guard since most professional players were racing with all they had to win the Level 200 race. Who knows, someone might overtake you at any time at all!

As such, everyone will pause for a second to check the Level Ranking Board once in a while to confirm their own rankings. If they rise in rank, it was good news for them and a sort of encouragement for them to continue the race. If they find their rank has dropped, it was also a form of encouragement to push them further.

The race continued on like the world cup football fever. When the server engines running tirelessly to spawn monsters for players to grind, there were a few bunch of players that did not care about it. Those were players that were too under leveled or greenhorns that had just joined the game. It was not Level 200, but Level 300 that they had set their targets for.

As such, the entire game's Level Ranking Board was as follows.

1. Zhan Yu, Level 193
2. Frost Night, Level 192
3. Heart of Destruction, Level 192
4. Hourglass Figure, Level 192
5. God's Left Hand, Level 192

6. Drizzler, Level 191
7. Snow Seeker, Level 191
8. Longrich, Level 190
9. Little Snow, Level 190
10. Daffodil Daydream, Level 190
11. Lost Dream, Level 190
12. Captain America, Level 190
13. Seductive Wild Pussy, Level 190
14. Scholar Musou, Level 190
15. Dusk Phoenix, Level 190

Although Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were also Level 190, they had lesser % in their experience points gauge. Hence, they were pushed off the ranking list. Never underestimate the difference between 1% and 99%. Most players in their Level 190 range would need to take close to 9 days in real life to reach 98%!

As such, not even Zhang Yang was able to lower his guard even for a minute. There were four Level 192 players that were following him closely. Even if it's a small chance that they will overtake him, Zhang Yang had accepted it as an absolute certainty that they will overtake him! After all, it had been only recently since Zhang Yang had reached Level 193. There could be a possibility that those four were at Level 192 with 99% experience points.

He would not mind it if Sun Yu Xin overtakes him, but not others. Never.

As such, it had shown the greatest impact Zhong Xiu Hua had done to him. His personal matters had affected his in-game performance so badly that he was pressurized then. If none of the rumors or Lou Yu Rou had befallen upon him, he would have been four Levels ahead the current players!

The grinding fiesta continues on for 30 days...

At then, most of the parties that spent a whole month grinding in the wild had run out of supplies to continue their fiesta. Zhang Yang's party was different. With the marvelous tool of the [Party Summon Order] and the [Lover's Charm], Zhang Yang's trip to resupply the entire party was as easy as a click.

A fully efficient party would need to return to the main city to restock their supplies once every 3 to 4 days. Compile those numbers and they would have to return to town at least 25 to 30 times. The traveling time alone was more than enough for Zhang Yang to gain 50% of his experience bar gauge.

Hence, with such efficiency at hand, Zhang Yang had managed to stay in the first place while Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue, had managed to gain ranks. Even Hundred Shots was able to reach the 15th rank!

At then, when they were able to engage onto the next monster. Both Zhang Yang's and Sun Xin Yu's eyes twitched. Both of them turned around and cried out loud in the party channel.

"There's a Thief!"

Zhang Yang shouted louder and said, "Don't engage yet. Feign ignorance while I think of a plan."

"Hehe. Looks like someone is being jealous of us!" said Lost Dream.

"Hmph! Such a pitiful guild. How could they use this sort of malicious play when they themselves could not keep up the efforts!" said Wei Yan Er as she made her way towards Zhang Yang.

"Tell me, noobie tank. Where are they, so that I can cleave their skull and smash their brains if they had any!"

Zhang Yang smirked. "It's just a sixth sense thing. I know they are here with us, but I can't tell where. Don't worry though. I have a plan. Their goal was to kill us, isn't it? Then, let's give them a



chance or they will pussy out!"

With Zhang Yang executing the plan to bait them out, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had slowed down their healings and joined in the DPS output. At then, only a few of the party member will take damage. If they were about to die, Zhang Yang had three life-saving skills that he could use instantly to protect anyone.

Just then, seven objects came out of thin air and struck Daffodil Daydream who was busy activating [Hell's Scorch] amongst the bunch of monsters. [Hell's Scorch] was her newly acquired skill which released flames in all directions and dealt AoE damage. Although the damage was extremely powerful, it placed the caster in a dangerous situation since they would need to stand close in the middle of the monster swarm. Also, while the monster will take damage, the caster will also receive fire damage by the skill. It's was exactly like the Seven Fatal Wounds Palm. (1)

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang immediately pulled all the monsters away from Daffodil Daydream to remove the monsters' threat, to provide a breathing room for Daffodil Daydream to dodge all the players' attack. If he had not, she will inevitably take damage from both sides. At that moment, she had less than 32% HP left!

{Charge}!

"Took you guys long enough to reveal yourself!" Zhang Yang slid across the battlefield and stunned one of the players around. Instantaneously, he swung his axe and triggered {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-672,322!’

‘-1,372,448!’

‘-698,072!’

...

All seven targets received more than 600,000 damage with the axe swing and were instantly killed at the spot without fail. At then, Zhang Yang's DPS was so strong, he could instantly kill any non-tank player that had not activated their Transformation skill and had equipment tiers lower or equal to Holy tier. He was wielding an Ascended tier axe, paired along with his own Book of Revelations damage boost aura, and Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} as well! It would be weird that if he could not instantly kill a Thief!

After all seven players fell, 10 more shadows jumped out and attack from behind Han Ying Xue. There was more than one wave, and the second wave of attackers had more players with them!

"Haha! I had never expected that you would use such a lame technique to divide and conquer!" Zhang Yang merely thrust his palm out and cast {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue.

"Hah! Eat my axe!" Wei Yan Er charged towards one of the attackers and struck. She had been killing only monsters for more than 3 months of in-game time. As such, Wei Yan Er had been itching to kill players for a change! When the opportunity came to her doorstep, the little girl could never been happy!

Although Wei Yan Er took the initiative, the rest of the party members had landed their AoE skill, killing the fragile Thieves in a flash.

Translator Note:

Seven Fatal Wounds Palm: Also known as the Seven Impairments Palm Technique. It is a punching skill which requires one to wound themselves to inflict severe damage to the opponent.

# Chapter 792: The Gates of Hell

---

"Let's move. It's time for a change of pace," said Zhang Yang after all the assassin were killed.

"Huh? Why? Aren't we doing just fine here?" said Wei Yan Er, a little disgruntled.

"Could you just...urgh...never mind. The players that had just attacked us were obviously rather noob. Even though we can't see their profile information, they obviously belonged to some random unheard-of guild. The person who sent them to us had no intention to kill us. They wanted to inflict psychological stress on us. In fact, it would. Right now, we will always be on the alert and that will be a little distracting."

"Ahh. I see now. Quite sneaky, aren't they."

If anyone would have to kill Zhang Yang's party, they might have to engage their entire guild to do so. Unless they could bring in One Sword Stroke to fight toe to toe with Zhang Yang, there was no way they could kill him, much less when he is in his party! It would be impossible to do so, much less calling One Sword Stroke. Every professional player was extremely busy with leveling, and they would not have time to even take a bath! At most, they could hire some random players not to kill, but to stall them.

Although it will be extremely hard, if Zhang Yang were killed incidentally, that would be bad for him.

Now that everyone in the party had understood the severity of the scenario, Zhang Yang took the lead and change to a different place to grind. Everyone followed Zhang Yang on their flying mounts and made their way to a new place in no time at all. The entire mountain range was so vast that if the same group of assassins wanted to find them, it would be a matter of days.

After vigorous grinding, Zhang Yang made it to Level 199. It was

just one more Level, several more days to reach the Level 200 threshold! Following closely behind him were his party members at Level 198. All and all, no one was able to chase after Zhang Yang. Not even Sun Xin Yu, with the 50% bonus experience points Unique item. However, out of the top 10 players in the Level Ranking Board, Zhang Yang's party had only claimed 5 spots. The top three were Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and another outsider. Eventually, Zhang Yang realized that it would be impossible for the entire party to claim all the top 10 positions on the ranking board. It's like a tiny hangnail in the corner of your finger that you just could not ignore!

"Guys. It's our last spur. Besides eating and answering nature's call, no one is allowed to log out! We're aiming for the top 10 players in the world!"

"HELL YEAH!"

"But what about some me time?"

"What me time?"

"Me time. As in, me sandwiched between my babe's hoohah."

"Save it for later."

Everyone laughed and agreed to do what Zhang Yang ordered. They would not want to stop at just top 10, instead, everyone wanted to try their best and aim for the top three! Zhang Yang and his party was not the only one. In fact, all professional players from all over the world were aiming for the same position and would die trying. Everyone had been training for more than 2 months now, just a little more and they would win. Why give up now!?

As such, the current Level Ranking Board had significant changes at any time of any day. The player ranked fourth will be third during the day, and then drop to the fifth during the night. Even though Lone Desert Smoke had suffered a strong blow to the head

during the scandal involving Zhang Yang and 4,000 women, the core members of Lone Desert Smoke were not greatly affected by it. In fact, everyone was giving all they had just to fight for the best! Have a look at the Level Ranking Board and everyone would agree that Lone Desert Smoke was in fact, doing extremely well. In the top 10 list, 5 of Lone Desert Smoke members were in it! Imagine the strength of the guild when players of the world, of 8 regions, of multiple main cities and millions of guilds, yet Lone Desert Smoke managed to squeeze in 5 of their members into the top 10 list.

As the pressure increased, eventually, the fight between players had escalated to a chaotic condition. Countless of War Chariots roamed around the high leveled maps to search and destroy high-leveled players.

As such, Zhang Yang had chosen to ignore the attackers and resorted to grinding in dungeons instead. It was not that Zhang Yang and his party could not kill the buggers. It would take up too much of their time! Besides, even though the monsters in the dungeon could not provide much experience points compared to the open-world, it was, at the very least, safe and secure.

50%...80%...90%...

All that's left for Zhang Yang was just that bit more to reach Level 200.

"Noobie tank! How much left till Level 200?"

"Around 5%. I think I can reach Level 200 in three more days." Zhang Yang smiled like an idiot. They had been camping in the same dungeon for more than 10 days and was a little nauseating, killing the same old Spectre monsters over and over again!

"Urgh...When this is all over, I'll take a week off and just enjoy my life!" said Wei Yan Er with dried, bloodshot eyes. Even though she loved fighting monsters, it had been quite repulsive for even her. It was the same sensation as eating tofu alone for 3 months' straight.

Instinctively, Zhang Yang rubbed his back pocket where his wallet used to be and realized that he was in the game. He jerked at Wei Yan Er's sudden outburst and said, "Hey. Mind you. My cards are my cards! I wouldn't mind Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu slashing all they want. But you..."

"Nyehehehe." Wei Yan Er stick her tongue out and said, "Oh right! I almost forgot. Sister Yu Rou is really pregnant now, isn't she?"

"Huh? Pregnant?" Everyone was immediately triggered by the word "pregnant". Zhang Yang sighed heavily and went ahead to pull her eyelids out as hard as he could.

"How many times must I tell you! You just drop that kind of bombshell out in public!" cried Zhang Yang.

"Owieeeee!" Wei Yan Er freed herself and ran behind Han Ying Xue.

The news of Lou Yu Rou's pregnancy was only known to those who lived in the mansion with Zhang Yang. Not even Fatty Han knew about it.

"Wah! Little Yang! Did you really knocked up a superstar!?" said Fatty Han with admiration. His eyes were practically sparkling. "Awesome! You have my respect!"

Everyone knew the scandal of Zhang Yang was fake, but they had no idea that Zhang Yang was actually sleeping with a superstar! As such, everyone could not resist but started to bombarded Zhang Yang with millions of questions.

F\*ck it.

Zhang Yang merely continued slaying monsters and ignored the rest of the party. "Please focus on one thing at a time. We are still racing for the top 10 level ranks!"

Lou Yu Rou had been pregnant for more than 2 months now. Although her womb had not grown too huge to be visible, the little

girl would always find the chance to chat with Lou Yu Rou. She was, after all, her idol. Sometimes, when Lou Yu Rou is taking a nap at the lounge, Wei Yan Er would sneak up to her and gently cup her ears to her tummy and even talked to the little babe growing healthily inside her womb. She would talk to the baby as if the babe could really listen to her complaints about Zhang Yang. Yes. Mostly about Zhang Yang. Sometimes, Zhang Yang might believe that the little girl could be a good auntie to his children. Just sometimes. He only hoped that her dumbness would not be too contagious.

Leveling from Level 199 to Level 200 was extremely tough. At then, most of the top 10 position in the Level Ranking Board were Level 199 players, with Zhang Yang holding strong on the first place. At the second place, was Sun Xin Yu with 78% experience points, and Hourglass Figure was at the third place with 78% experience points as well. Both of them were only 17% short of Zhang Yang. Right then, Zhang Yang was confident that if everyone goes smoothly, the champion would be him!

Most of the players in the top 10 position knew that the only difference for them was the experience points gauge percentage. Anyone can overtake anyone at anytime. While players of Levels 198 or 197 were still trying to sabotage each other's training session, the Level 199 players were investing all their time and effort to reach the top.

96%...97%...98%...99%...

Zhang Yang sighed and stopped for a rest as he finished the dungeon run. "Looks like after one more round, I'd be Level 200!"

The first to reach Level 200 will not only obtain the system reward, but also meet the Level Requirement to finally equipping Celestial tier equipment. Zhang Yang had never thought of achieving such a feat in his past life, yet right then, he was only one step away from the glorious achievement. At most, after 30 minutes or so, he would be the first players in the entire game to

reach Level 200 and also the first player to put on the first Celestial tier equipment!

Everyone was excited for him. Imagine being in the same party and guild with the first player to reach the pinnacle.

"Haha! In just a few more minutes, those guys behind will be crying for their mommas!" said Fatty Han as they were almost done with the dungeon. Fatty Han had only reached Level 199 just recently, and had no hopes of being in the top 10.

"I hope that the server would suddenly breaks down at that moment..." said Endless Starlight.

"Hey! Don't jinx it!"

Zhang Yang smirked. "Three more..."

Zhang Yang felt a sudden rush in his veins. Like a sudden burst of energy that runners feel when they see the finishing line. With one last swing, Zhang Yang killed the last monster and reached Level 200.

'Ding! Congratulation! You have reached Level 200. Obtained 5 Attribute Points and 1 Skill Point!'

'Ding! Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to reach Level 200! As a result of his relentless vigor, he has acquired the skill "Gates of Hell" and 3 Luck attribute points! His name shall be carved into the Hall of Fame!'

[Gate of Hell]: Summons a Gate that leads to Hell itself. During the gate's activation time, any target that you had kill will be sacrificed to the Demon Lord. The souls that were sacrificed will summons one Elite tier Demon of the same strength and Level to assist you in battle. The effect will only apply within 100 meters around the Gate of Hell. Souls cannot be sacrificed if the target dies too far away from the Gate. Summoned Demons will only last for as long as 2 hours and will be sent back to wench it came. Summoned Demons can only be alive around 500 meters from the



Gate. The Gate of Hell can be attacked and destroyed only through selective targeting. Will not be affected by splash damage of AoE skill. Gate of Hell will only active for 10 minutes before the door closes. Cooldown: 72 hours.

Typically, skills with a long cooldown will have high potential. As such, the skill {Gate of Hell} shared the same cooldown as the Transformation skill!

Zhang Yang had the Book of Revelations which could freely used to strengthen two skills. Right then, he had {Block} and {Shield Wall} strengthened, but since the skill could be level up, he had used one of the slots on the Gate of Hell.

[Gate of Hell (Enhanced)]: Summons a Gate that leads to Hell itself. During the gate's activation time, any target that you had kill will be sacrificed to the Demon Lord. The souls that were sacrificed will summons one Elite tier Demon of the same strength and Level to assist you in battle. The effect will only apply within 200 meters around the Gate of Hell. Souls cannot be sacrificed if the target dies too far away from the Gate. Summoned Demons will only last for as long as 4 hours and will be sent back to wench it came. Summoned Demons can only be alive around 1,000 meters from the Gate. The Gate of Hell can be attacked and destroyed only through selective targeting. Will not be affected by splash damage of AoE skill. Gate of Hell will only active for 20 minutes before the door closes. Cooldown: 72 hours.

Despite having the same cooldown time after being strengthened, the skill had gained doubled duration and effective distance. Worthy trade deal? Hell yes!

Such a powerful skill. The skill that was granted only to the first player that reached Level 200! Fufufu. Zhang Yang laughed by himself. At then, he felt a sudden greed to claim all the remaining 9 Skill Point either from First Clear Achievements or other means. At that point in time, his powers were so strong, how could he not become the man that dominates the entire server?!

As such, when that day comes, the entire server might treat him as a boss to kill!

Even though Sun Xin Yu had only a few experience points lesser than Zhang Yang, she was able to be the second player to reach Level 200 only after 7 to 8 days later. As a reward, she had obtained the skill [Frost Spike] and 2 Luck Attribute Points.

[Frost Spike]: Encases you in a barrier of icy spikes. All targets that attack you will have a 50% chance of being frozen in ice for 3 seconds. During the Frozen state, the targets will be rendered stationary and cannot engage in any actions. After breaking free from the Frozen state, the targets will suffer from Frost Bite and will have 50% reduce movement speed for the next 10 seconds. Frost Spike had 20 counts. Each successful trigger will consume one count. The barrier will last for 10 minutes or until all trigger counts are used. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

The skill might not be as powerful as {Gate of Hell} but it had a short cooldown and long active time. It was the perfect PvP arena counter skill! It will be exceptionally good during 1v1 fights! 20 counts...not even Zhang Yang could handle that much...who else could?

Naturally, Invincibility and Mobility Potion can help to reduce the trigger count for a bit! That was only a few, not all! It would be impossible for anyone to completely waste all 20 trigger counts in the active duration of the potion.

Sun Xin Yu was extremely lucky to have that PvP counter skill, for she is the ultimate Assassin. A natural born killer!

# Chapter 793: Entering the Holy City

---

After getting the first two ranks, Lone Desert Smoke had expanded the rest of their miracle powers. The third person to reached Level 200 was a player named Heart of Destruction. His skill reward was called {Rocky Shield} and a Luck Attribute point. The third place was the last ranking that will receive Luck attribute rewards. There on out, the only reward for the fourth until the tenth ranking will only receive skill points.

Even though the system did not display the skill {Rocky Shield}, everyone could have easily guessed the skill was most likely a defensive skill. If not, then the system or the skill designer would be trolling.

The fourth person to reached Level 200 was Hourglass Figure, followed by God's Left Hand as the fifth. Clearly, players with S class Inheritance had the upper advantage. The sixth was Wei Yan Er and her skill reward was called {Melodies of War}.

The skill was unique in nature as it had a separate U.I. Unlike most channeling skills, this is the true skill that requires channeling. One must be able to finish chanting the spell verse in order to unleash the skill. Furthermore, if there is a mistake in the lyrics, the skill will not activate. One must start again from the beginning. Additionally, the player must not pause in between the lyrics for more than 3 seconds, or else the skill will be prompted as a failure. Matching with its incredible difficulty to conjure, the destructive power of the skill was potent.

[Melodies of War]: Chants the lyrics of Death itself. Upon a successful conjuring, the skill cannot be blocked and will directly damage all targets within 100 meters for 300,000 damage. The damage dealt will increase with the Level of the player. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

Again, unlike other channeling skills, this skill does not have a

casting animation. It all depended on the player's singing speed. The poor little tone-deaf girl spent 30 minutes just to finish reciting the lyrics during her first conjuring. After more failures, she had forced herself and managed to memorize all of the lyrics. Once she had gotten used to the lyrics, her casting speed had increased to only 30 seconds. The skill only had a 30-second cooldown. It would not make sense for the developers to create a skill that has casting time longer than its cooldown. Furthermore, the skill could be cast while the caster is using other skills. Only the lyrics count.

Following closely after Wei Yan Er was Han Ying Xue. She was the seventh player to reach Level 200 and obtained the skill {Lunar's Imprisonment}.

[Lunar's Imprisonment]: Summons the moon and calls down its light. Entraps all targets that are exposed to the light. Unable to move for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

The skill was an extremely powerful mass crowd control skill. The light beams that are called down would have a large radius of 30 meters in diameter. It was enough to trap everyone within the vicinity that is attacking her.

After Han Ying Xue was Dusk Phoenix as the eighth place, followed by Captain America as the ninth. The last position was claimed by Daffodil Daydream, and she got the skill {True Counter}.

[True Counter (Passive)]: When your HP reaches 20% or below, every attack that lands on you will grant you a 5 second invulnerability. Increases your damage by 50% for 5 seconds. Effect will trigger once every 60 seconds.

When the system notifies all the players of Daffodil Daydream's achievement, the race ended promptly. While most of the players were greatly disappointed, many were glad that the fierce competition had finally ended. They could finally grind their levels

in peace without facing sudden ambushes from random players.

Even though Hundred Shots and the rest of the party member that had not managed to reach Level 200 and were rather sad, they were still happy that most of the top 10 ranks were filled by their own family. As such, when the race was over, everyone returned to the city and made their way elsewhere to grind to Level 200 in peace. Despite their fatigue, they had chosen to continue their grinding till Level 200, for their Celestial tier equipment were waiting for them!

Once Zhang Yang returned to the city, the first thing he did was to equip his God Killer War Greaves. Although it was only one of an incomplete Celestial tier set, it had boosted Zhang Yang stats by a notch.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 200

HP: 2,661,730 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 19,530

Damage Absorption: 20,421

Strength: 30,702

Critical Strike Rate: 22%

Lucky Strike Rate: 3.2%

Melee Attack: 345,212 – 401,372

2 million basic HP and 100 million HP during his God of War Transformation state would clearly make Zhang Yang a boss type entity!

As expected of the Celestial tier equips, just one pair greaves would grant him such a boost. Imagine if Zhang Yang obtained a shield instead, his HP and Defense would have skyrocketed to the moon! No players could reach that height!

At then, even though players that reached Level 200 could enter the Holy City, there were fierce battles amongst players to grab the limited slots for their shop lots. Hence, after having grinding for such a long time, Zhang Yang wanted everyone to take a break from the game to have some R&R. As such, Zhang Yang announced to the party to rest for 1 week and come back after that.

Zhang Yang brought everyone in the mansion for an around the world trip. After everyone had their fun, Zhang Yang brought Lou Yu Rou to the hospital for her checkup. Sadly, due to her massive popularity, she was easily recognized. It was all because of the havoc of the paparazzi and the mass media that had caused her name to be mentioned on every possible media channel in China. Hence, those that had no idea of her existence then were enlightened about it. Despite wearing centimeters thick of makeup on her, it had proved to be a complete failure when someone shouted her name the moment Luo Yu Rou had entered the hospital.

As such, when her name was known and her face was captured on film, the reason why Luo Yu Rou had come to the hospital was concluded extremely fast. The news about the female superstar had been pregnant for more than 4 months had spread faster any known news throughout entire China. If Zhang Yang pays attention, he could hear the sound of hearts breaking that belonged to millions of poor men.

As such, while most men were weeping tragically, some were intrigued at the right question. Who was the father of the baby in her belly? Ever since the scandal involving Luo Yu Rou and the mysterious man, she had been off the grid for more than 4 months. Hence, when such a bombshell was dropped out of the blue, the mass media was rattled again.

At first, Zhang Yang had no idea how famous the sexy superstar was until he returned home and turned on the TV. His stunned reaction had made Luo Yu Rou roll her eyes. "Stupid fool. Now do

you know how much have you taken advantage of me?"

For Luo Yu Rou, love was not something that she had paid attention to. For her, the dream of achieving fame through the acting world far exceed everything she needs. It's a want that she would die to own. Hence, her unrelenting spirit to achieve her goals had Zhang Yang be on her good side. For example, to set up the studio, it required a large sum of cash, of which, Luo Yu Rou had not directly asked from Zhang Yang. Instead, she would play her role as his wife and let him decide how much would he "sponsor". Deep down, she would never want to be his wife or his lover. Her relationship with Zhang Yang was purely monetary and materialistic. While she would allow Zhang Yang to lay in bed with her, she would never allow herself to develop any feelings for the man.

Zhang Yang had done his homework through various private investigator reports on her upbringing. Hence, he knew all about there is to know of Luo Yu Rou. In a way, he knew how to get things done around her.

Seven days of relaxing vacation later, everyone returned to the game and placed their focus on the Holy City of Anthylor.

This Holy City does not have any Level Requirement to enter. However, if one wishes to bind their Teleportation Scroll to the city, they would have to be Level 200. Although the Holy City does not have Teleportation Point to other major cities, it was considered as a hub since there were Black Smith, Alchemist, Bank, Auction House, and other various NPC interactable shop. Despite the fact that news about Auction Houses, or Banks do not share the same channel as the other cities, players will soon be reaching past the Level 200 threshold and swarm the Holy City. Eventually, the city will become the ninth major city for all regions. Zhang Yang predicted that soon, all Auction and other business in the original major cities will die down since all players will start to treat Anthylor as the main gathering spot. The Holy

City of Anthylor will become the central convergence for all players from all around the world.

At the same time, while Anthylor will gain popularity, Territory will lose theirs. The days where Zhang Yang could earn as much as 100 million gold coins a day would end soon enough. There will not be a way for Zhang Yang to earn such a number again since there were no more Territories for players to conquer. As mentioned in the official site, any map beyond Level 200 will not have Territories!

Still, that would require 50% of the entire world to reach Level 200. That would take up to several years! In Zhang Yang previous life, 'God's Miracle' had been online for more than 5 years. At then, he was only Level 179! It would take 9 years for all players to reach Level 200 and above! Still, that has not factored in the various patches in the future where the developers will reduce the experience points required for players to gain Levels.

However, those would be events that would take a few years to occur. At then, 'God's Miracle' had only been online for 3 and a half years. It would be 1 and a half years before the game reaches the 5 years point. Zhang Yang could still earn from the Teleportation fees for more than 2 to 3 years.

Since Territory will lose its customers, the importance of having a "shop lot" in the Holy City would be mortal.

Zhang Yang and party were not the first players to enter the Holy City. Since they had taken a week off the game, players that had reached Level 200 had totaled up to 45. Most of them had entered the Holy City and had started the quest line to get the Land Lease of the City itself!

In Zhang Yang previous life, the upper limit of the average player's Level was Level 204. Based on that, with Zhang Yang's "guidance", he had hastened the progress of the game by more than a year. At that point, of the eight Shopping District in the Holy



City, only two had ownership. One belonged to the North Americans, and the other to Europe.

Zhang Yang only knew that the Land Lease of the North America Shopping District was obtained from the map called the Dark Ghastly Canyon. That was the rough idea of it, but the exact location was unknown. Still, it was better than having no clue to start searching. If Zhang Yang manages a Land Lease in the Holy City, he would bet that others will find one as well. It would not be the same as his previous life where only two out of the eight Shopping Districts has an owner.

After everyone bound their Teleportation Scroll to the Teleportation point of Anthylor Holy City, Zhang Yang brought everyone to the aforementioned canyon.

The Dark Ghastly Canyon was situated deep in the map of Kanjar. It was a Level 210 – Level 240 map with strong but normal monsters. It was also the same map where the Forgotten King, Smaug had ran off to. Long ago, Zhang Yang had wanted to pay a visit to the old king to ask for his assistance in slaying the Celestial tier boss. However, since he was only level 170 then, he was forced to turn back.

At then, everyone had already reached Level 200. With the need to fear of the Level Suppression system interfering with their damage input and output, the team faced off the Level 220 monsters will ease. While others might think that it was impossible to even come close to the monsters, Zhang Yang's party could, due to the fact that everyone had Celestial tier equipment on them!

Endless Starlight was exceptionally strong. Although he may not have a set equipment, he did own two Celestial tier equipment! Before anyone could get the second set equipment, having two regular Celestial tier equipment was profoundly better than having only one Celestial tier set equipment!

After several hours of flying, the party arrived at the depths of the Dark Ghastly Canyon. There, monsters that roamed around were Minotaurs. They had 3-meter tall bodies, the heads of bulls and the bodies of humanoid men. Many of the Minotaurs around the map had their horns broken. Clearly, someone had been chopping them off. That, or the Minotaurs were brute species who loved to fight each other just for sports.

# Chapter 794: The Qualifications

---

Luckily, all of the Minotaurs were friendlies.

When Zhang Yang and everyone else landed on the ground, one of the Minotaurs, called [Raydosa the Warmonger] walked up to them and stabbed a huge stone pillar that he carried on his back into the ground. He flexed his muscles to the group and yelled. "What are you little itsy-bitsy things doing around here?"

Zhang Yang saluted the beast and smiled. "O strong one. We wish to enter the Canyon. Could you allow us to pass in peace?"

"Did my ears heard you wrong? You bunch of scrawny little insects wish to enter the Canyon? Woe be me then! The Canyon does not welcome the weak. Run along and go back to your mummies." Raydosa crossed his arms, showing no intention to allow the group to pass. "Wait a minute. I see that you have quite the experience in war. You don't have to tell me. I can smell the lingering blood on your blades. I'll grant you entrance to the Canyon, only if you can defeat me!"

'Ding! Raydosa has a quest for you: Qualifications to Enter the Canyon. Will you accept it?'

Everyone nodded and accepted the quest.

[Qualifications to Enter the Canyon] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Raydose the Warmonger wants to challenge you to a fight. You must prove your strength and defeat the Minotaur in order to gain the right to enter the canyon. Be advised. Only one player may challenge Raydosa at a time. Any attacks, or healing performed on the challenging player will be considered as foul play. Note that Minotaurs hates foul play.

Progress: Defeat Raydosa the Warmonger 0/1

"Alright. Who wants to have a go first?"

"Oh! Me! Me! Me!" cried the little girl as she jumped to Raydosa without waiting. "Hey! Big guy! I'll fight you!"

Raydosa squatted down and prodded Wei Yan Er's face with his massive finger and said, "You?! A girl?!"

"I'M NOT A GIRL! I'M A WOMAN!"

"Very well. You may be a little girl, but I will no show mercy. Come at me!"

The battle started and Raydosa's name tag turned red. All his properties and stats were revealed.

[Raydosa the Warmonger] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 215

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 20,900

Melee Attack: 87,665 – 147,665

Skills:

[War Veteran]: Immune to all Status Effect.

[Smash]: Deals 100% Melee Physical attack on a target.

[Thunder Strike]: Stomps the ground and unleashes a powerful wave of thunder that spreads out to 3 meters around. Deals 50,000 physical damage and reduces 50% movement speed of target within the effective range. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Berserker]: Can only be triggered during special conditions. The likes of which you will never be able to witness.

Note: Raydosa is a warrior of the Dark Ghastly Canyon. Due to his love for brawling, he had hurt his own Minotaurs brethren and was punished to being a Guardian at the entrance of the Canyon.

"That's some strong attack power..."

Despite the fact that the monster had strong attack power, it was

nothing compared to their own. In fact, they could easily defeat him. Wei Yan Er muttered disgruntledly, fearing that she might not defeat him. However, she remained unfazed. With quick reflexes, she summoned the Gold tier Servant and rode on her Crimson Fire Crow. With Zhang Yang's aura effect stacking on the HP boost provided by the battle mount, Wei Yan Er had over 2,300,000 HP by then. It was far from what the monster had, but it was nothing for Wei Yan Er. On the other hand, many would want to have their kind of HP. Imagine Zhang Yang having 100 million HP, he would be unstoppable!

Additionally, she had also summoned her Battle Companion to assist her. The quest description did specifically mention that help from other players was forbidden. It did not mention anything about having servants, battle companion, or even battle mounts. Though, it was not clear on whether or not she could use the War Chariot. A War Chariot's strongest feature was to increase the maximum HP and provide an effect to distribute incoming damage equally to all riders. If everyone in the party hopped onto the War Chariot, she would have the cumulative HP of over 10,000,000. However, the system would not have the player to cheat in such a way. Even though it was not tested, the little girl did not want to rely on others. Instead, with her array of assistants, she fought Raydosa on her own.

Needless to say, 100 million HP is a large number. Although his attack was strong, it was not as strong as a professional player, although such a long HP bar would even the playing ground. In a way, the boss could defeat the player before the player could. Hence, for 99% of all players in the world, Raydosa was an obstacle that most of them could never surpass.

The battle proceeds as per the norm. Being affected by the aggro system, Raydosa's had his target locked on Wei Yan Er. However, in between the two Warmongers, Wei Yan Er had her servant stand there to block Raydosa from attacks directly targeted at her.

As such, the servant was able to attack Raydosa without the fear of being destroyed. After Wei Yan Er had unleashed all her skills, she then jumped to Raydosa to have a proper exchange of blows. Despite having to take some damage in return, Wei Yan Er's damage was so destructive that it completely complimented the HP lost. On the other hand, while the battle companion or the servant had taken over the aggro, Wei Yan Er had stopped to chant the skill {Melodies of War}. Although the skill's greatest power was multi-targeting, it was still an AoE skill. It had allowed Wei Yan Er to find a corner and chant safely whilst her battle companion takes some damage for her.

After several days of training, Wei Yan Er was able to shorten the reciting duration down to only 37 seconds. Sadly, she was still considered a failure since the skill cooldown was only 30 seconds! Nevertheless, it was a worthy trade-off. The Servant did its job well, allowing Wei Yan Er to trade a small bit of damage by unleashing her skill. 10 minutes later, the battle had ended with Wei Yan Er as the winner. Raydosa was not killed. Since it was a brawl requested by the NPC, it will be impossible to kill him even if you had deal more than enough damage. The system will always leave 1 HP on the NPC.

"Not bad, little girl! You might be tiny but you sure did pack a punch! This old bull respects that!" Raydosa may be a Warmonger, but he was a man true to honor and dignity. Since he had lost the fight, the Minotaur had allowed Wei Yan Er to walk past the gates after giving her a thumbs up the size of her head.

Han Ying Xue was the next player to step into the ring. She had it easier than Wei Yan Er. All she had to do was to summon out the big pervert and have him tank the boss. She would then ride on her battle mount and heal Messick whilst casting DoT skills on the Minotaur. Although the process of defeating him was slow and boring, she did defeat him in just 10 minutes.

After losing to two females in a row, Raydosa sulked badly and

pointed his thick fingers towards Fatty Han. "You're next!"

In the end, he made a bad call. Despite being a sluggish fighter, Fatty Han still the Legendary Beast as his pet! After reaching Level 200, the Phoenix had gained a power boost and had reached the ranks of an Ascended tier beast. Just by activating the Phoenix's Transformation skill, Fatty Han had defeated Raydosa in less than 8 minutes.

The next person to go into the ring was Lost Dream. Having lost three matches in a row, the beast had gained a powerful urge of revenge and laid everything he had on Lost Dream. Assassins were best at stealth killing. Hence, when facing a mano-e-mano style fight, he failed badly at fighting Raydosa. Coupled with the passive skill of being immune to all kinds of Status Effect, Lost Deam had no chance at all to stun and stab him! He also had the lowest Defense in the party! In just a few exchanges, Lost Dream was killed. When NPCs are defeated, they would not die, but a player would. Even though Lost Dream did not lose any experience points, he did suffered from 10% durability damage on all of his equipment.

Lost Dream was the first person to lost to Raydosa. Greatly saddened by that fact, after he was revived by Han Ying Xue, he went quiet and sulk at a corner. Truth be told, if Lost Dream had used his Transformation skill, he could have easily defeated Raydosa without difficulties. However, the man had made the right choice by reserving the Transformation skill on simply just an Elite tier NPC. Luckily, even though you lose the match, you could still challenge Raydosa again!

The 1v1 battle continued on smoothly. Hundred Shots was able to completely defeat the Minotaur by activating the Red Dragon Transformation skill. Fantasy Sweetheart was able to defeat Raydosa by following the same technique used by Han Ying Xue. Endless Starlight had no trouble at defeating Raydosa for he owned two Celestial tier equipment. Even though he could not ditch out

much damage as a tank, he was able to defeat the boss after 20 minutes of exchange. Sun Xin Yu was the Queen. With her S class Shadow Dancer Inheritance, she was able to equip two one-handed weapons and gained the battle prowess of a Bandit despite being an Assassin. She defeated Raydosa after several moves. She had to use her accessory, skills with a long cooldown, whilst her battle companion dealt additional damage. It had only taken her 6 minutes to defeat Raydosa! When the boss was defeated, she had over 140,000 HP left!

The next person who lost the fight was Daffodil Daydream. Spellcasters are like Hunters who required a certain range to allow them to cast their spells uninterrupted. Raydosa's constitution had made her restless and was unable to create any breathing space for her to attack. Even though her passive skill, {True Counter} was strong, a 1-minute cooldown was just too long in between activations.

The last player to have a go was Zhang Yang. Without a doubt, with Phoenix, Felice, and his own crazy 750,000 DPS, he had defeated Raydosa in less than 3 minutes. At then, Felice had not broken her third seal yet she was already at the level of an Ascended tier. He was, by far, the player that had ended the fight with the least effort.

After several trials of re-challenges, Zhang Yang had discovered a loophole for Daffodil Daydream and Lost Dream to win the fight. Assistance during a fight was forbidden but if skills were cast on players before the fight begins does not violate the rules! It was discovered when players were able to receive the aura effect of other players during the fight. Hence, Han Ying Xue had cast {Rise Anew}, while Zhang Yang cast {Surrogacy} to increase the survivability of both players. As such, after the discovery of the loophole, both Daffodil Daydream and Lost Dream were able to defeat the boss easily on the second attempt. Everyone cheered while Raydosa sulked disgruntledly as he granted permission for



everyone in the party to enter the Dark Ghastly Canyon.

The Canyon was shaped just like any other canyon. There were two great mountains with a deep river flowing in between. Due to the great height of the two mountains, sunlight was totally blotted out and a dark shadow loomed over the canyon, hence the name. However, despite the frigid name, the place was not as dark as it sounds. Flora and fauna flourished, with many Minotaurs happily living in the dark place. Clearly, the Minotaurs were not as savage as Raydosa had implied. When Zhang Yang's party entered the canyon, there was a proper community living there, with buildings and proper structures. There were only about 1,000 and more Minotaurs there. All NPCs that resided there were all friendlies with many yellow question marks on their heads. With such many counts of quest available for them to take, Zhang Yang had no idea which one will be the quest that leads to the Land Lease. Hence, after debating for a while, Zhang Yang had tasked everyone to find the NPC with the highest possibility of having the quest. They nodded and split apart, traveling to all corners of the small canyon.

# Chapter 795: Marcus the Old Gambler

---

There were tons of NPCs that had quests for players to accept. Sadly, most of them were scraps. They were either lame quests that involved killing monsters, running errands, completing a series of item hunting, all the while rewards were next to worthless. None of them were even remotely related to that of the Land Lease. Most of all, due to the fact that there were literally tons of quest available, no one would have any clue to which one would actually lead to the quests that gives the Land Lease.

After spending some time searching about, the little girl finally called out to Zhang Yang with some good news. "Noobie tank! You better thank me later. I think I've found a good quest!" said Wei Yan Er as she posted the quest description on the party channel.

[Hunting the Silvery Scale Eel King] (Difficulty Level: A)

Description: The old gambler has placed a bet with you to hunt the Silvery Scale Eel King. If you have the guts, go to the Waving Sand Island in the west of the Death Mist Sea.

Progress: Head of the Silvery Scale Eel King 0/1

Reward: Marcus's Golden Tooth

Zhang Yang cringed a little when he saw the quest reward. No wonder he was called the old gambler. He would even put out his own golden tooth as a stake for the bet. It's not like he could use the tooth for anything besides selling it!

However, an A-level difficulty quest was the eye catcher. Perhaps, the boss that they were asked to slay was at least a Holy tier boss.

Since the quest was not sharable, and the reward was extremely useless to them, everyone else had gone straight to the boss location instead of finding the NPC. Once they left the valley, everyone summoned out their battle mounts and followed Zhang

Yang towards the Death Mist Sea.

The place they were heading to, was towards the Northern region of the canyon, behind the huge mountain where the land and the sea meets. Although the entire sea was huge, they had no need to spread out deep to search for the boss. Dark, shadowy mist crawls all around the surface of the water. The creepiness of the sea was the source of its name. Without further delay, Zhang Yang and the party arrived at their destination and found the beach. Zhang Yang informed everyone that the boss will most likely be under the waters. Hence, they would have to enter the waters to search. Sadly, only Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang had underwater mounts. The search for the boss was tasked to them.

Han Ying Xue, famed for only two things, her magnificent badahonkadongs and her broken sense of directions. The poor woman would get lost even when on land. Give her a three-dimensional space to travel and she would be lost faster than Zhang Yang killing a normal tier monster. However, as broken as her direction may seem, she was the embodiment of Luck itself. While she was finding her way back to land, she had incidentally stumbled upon a small crack amongst the coral reef and found the Silvery Scale Eel King, sleeping soundly in the dark crack.

While no one was around, Zhang Yang gave Han Ying Xue a deep kiss underwater and rose to the shore to get everyone ready for the boss fight. Some of the members wondered why the two of them had taken so long to resurface but dropped the topic immediately. They took a [Underwater Breathing Potion] and started to swim downward towards the location of the boss.

[Silvery Scale Eel King] (Holy, Beast)

Level: 220

HP: 2,200,000,000

Defense: 21,710

Melee Attack: 186,631 – 246,631

Skills:

[Electric Shock]: Sends out electric current throughout its body and deals 200,000 Natural damage to all targets within 40 meters.

[Iron Fangs]: Bites down a target and deal 100% Melee Physical attack.

Note: A dominant beast in the ocean. No other underwater being could even get close to it, fearing that they would be fried.

"Pfft. Nothing but an easy Holy tier boss. Let's go, ladies and gentleman!"

Even though not everyone could mount on their battle mount in the waters, the boss was just a Holy tier boss with over 2 billion HP. It's a target that the party found easy to defeat, especially since it has no special skills or effects going on around. Hence, in less than 20 minutes, the boss was decapitated. The remains of its mangled body floated upwards to the surface.

Everyone received over 200 million HP each. Although the numbers alone were huge, it was only able to make a tiny blip in their experience bar. Ever since they had reached Level 200, the experience points required to gain another Level had increased exponentially.

As expected, Holy tier bosses were nothing more than fillers in the Level 180 – Level 210 maps. The items they dropped would either be common or at most, rare. Equipment from the boss drops would not have the "perfect" stats nor Level Requirement reduction Special. Even in the Level 210 – Level 240 maps, the result would be the same. Hence, no one paid much attention to the equipment after Wei Yan Er had looted them all.

"WOAH! Have a look at this! This equipment has a 30 Level reduction!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Huh?" Everyone, including Zhang Yang, stopped.

[Silvery Scale Cape] (Holy, Cape)

Vitality: +5134

Strength: +1235

Dexterity: +535

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 10,260.

Equip: Absorbs 1,051 damage on attack.

Use: Increases 20,000 Defense for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 220

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Even though the cape was not strong, its strength was more plainly towards defensive stance. The best was as said by Wei Yan Er, it did have the 30 Levels reduction special.

"Could the system be displaying the wrong number?"

"Is it bugged?"

"Wouldn't be as simple as a bug."

"Perhaps the developers forgot to delete the last line of coding. That happens when you're lazy in retyping the codes. Eventually, you'll resort to just CTRL C and CTRL V every line. Trust me. I know this."

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to the party members squabbling. He was busy thinking, why would a cape dropped by a Holy tier boss have such an effect embedded in it. Only the final boss of the map would have such an effect. The Eel King was so easy to be defeated that it could not be the map's strongest boss. It would not make sense even if the entire party had achieved the strength of that level.

"My guess is the escalation of Level. After Level 200, the

experience points needed to gain a level will be harder than ever. Hence, as a compensation to the fresh blood, the developers had decided to drop items with such an effect. Think about it. Level 220 would take us a whole year of grinding!" said Zhang Yang. That would be the most logical answer if the system was behaving as it should.

Then again, it was still a good treat for all players. The item was considered to be in the trash tier. After the given special effect, the item would be treated like a common item instead of trash. If the cape had stats that leaned either to full attack or full defense, it would be treated differently despite its tier. All in all, it was better to loot one item instead of going home empty-handed. After all, Holy tier bosses spawned like Truffles.

Since the cape had defensive stats and a little Dexterity, the cape was then "thrown" to Zhang Yang. It was all good for him since it was almost time for him to discard the older Ethereal tier cape that he had. Sadly, the Ethereal tier cape was extremely strong. It had stats that suited both attacking and defending. Hence, after changing into the new cape, Zhang Yang had gained a boost in HP and damage absorption but lost a little attacking power.

Even though the boss had dropped a surprising equipment, the quantity was just too sparse. There was only one Holy tier equipment and two Ethereal tier equipment, both with the same 30 Level reduction special effect. When you receive a 100 dollar bill, you would not want to care about the next 5 dollar prize. The Ethereal tier equipment were also "thrown" to Zhang Yang for him to sell in the Little Merchandize Shop.

Zhang Yang took the head of the Eel King and told everyone to go back to the canyon to complete the quest. Unlike the others, Zhang Yang had an interest in the quest and had decided to find the NPC to submit the quest.

"Oh my lord! What is that!?" cried the greenish little goblin after Zhang Yang had tossed the severed head of the Eel King to his feet.

"You actually killed the Silvery Scale Eel King?! Unbelievable!"

[Harcus, the Old Gambler] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 230

HP: 302,670

Note: Once a wealthy goblin during his prime. After getting addicted to the world of gambling, the sharp-minded goblin had misplaced his wisdom in the underground world and lost all his fortune. Luckily, he had a means of income by collecting rental from a property in the Holy City of Anthylor.

Hah! Zhang Yang smirked. The old goblin had a property and it was in the Holy City itself! There was a chance that a Land Lease is in his possession!

"Old Gambler. Gotta to pay up!" said Wei Yan Er happily.

Being an old goblin, Harcus had all the bad traits of a typical goblin. However, the goblin placed his pride as a gambler and had punched his face hard in order to break the golden tooth from his gums. Winching in pain and regret, the old goblin wiped the bloody tooth and gave to Wei Yan Er.

Despite her love for shiny golden things, Wei Yan Er chose not to pick the tooth from his old wrinkled hands.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Old goblin, would you want to have another bet with me? To get that golden tooth back?"

Harcus twitched a little and Zhang Yang said the word "bet". Almost instantly, he turned to Zhang Yang and cried. "Laddie, you're 100 years too early to be gambling with me! So, what are we betting about?"

Zhang Yang stumped for a while since he had no idea what to do next. The old goblin rubbed his unkempt beard and said, "I have an idea. If you can get me the Claws of the Hybrid Beast King, I will give you this pair of boots. It's a masterpiece crafted by the great

Dwarven Clobber, Brian Wildhammer!"

‘Ding! Harcus the Old Gambler has a quest for you: Claw of the Hybrid Beast King. Will you accept it?’

Even though Zhang Yang had not completed the quest for the Eel King, he had managed to acquire the quest prompt. A similar event occurred to Wei Yan Er as well. Perhaps, it was one of the ways of unlocking consecutive quests.

The funny thing is, when the old goblin had lost his golden tooth, the next item he could cough out was his worn-out boots.

[Claw of the Hybrid Beast King] (Difficulty Level: A)

Description: The old gambler has wager another bet with you. All you have to do to win the bet is to hunt for it in the Crumbling Rock Canyon.

Progress: Claw of the Hybrid Beast King 0/1

Quest Reward: Old Gambler Harcus’s Old Boots.

After the two took the quest, Zhang Yang summoned everyone and headed towards the Crumbling Rock Canyon. Before the Eel King, none of them would even want to fight a Holy tier boss. However, after the Eel King’s surprise equipment drop, they had tagged along, hoping to score something as valuable.

The Crumbling Rock Canyon was just an extension of the same mountain range that extended from the North East of the Dark Ghastly Canyon. Hence, the party had only taken close to 3 hours to get there. Unlike the dark, shadowy canyon, the Crumbling Rock Canyon was brighter, yet everywhere the light touched seemed to be old and, as the name implied, crumbling. There were rocks that were so brittle that they could be seen crumbling on their own. There were weird man-made pillars all around the canyon that were breaking down. As such, the towering pillars could fall down anytime which would only endanger everyone. Zhang Yang led everyone to land and walked their way towards the



depths of the Canyon.

Just as they entered the mysterious place, they heard a loud growl. A large beast came out behind the crumbling rocks. It had a huge head of a monkey, the neck of a swan, the body of a tiger, the tail of a scorpion, and legs that could not be recognized. It was an entire being that was out of this world!

[Ancient Hybrid Beast] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 215

HP: 107,500,000

Defense: 13,190

Melee Attack: 87,665 – 147, 665

Skills:

[Pounce]: Leaps forward and tackles a target. Stuns a target for 3 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

[Drag]: Target with the highest aggro value cannot leave its attacking range. When the targets leave, the beast will drag the target back to its attacking range using the powers of the Ancient Beings.

[Parasitic Laying]: Injects an egg into the target. 10 seconds later, a Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will spawn out of the target and absorbs 10% of the target's HP. (Cannot exceed 200,000). Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will assist the Ancient Hybrid Beast in battle.

[Passing On]: Before death, the Ancient Hybrid Beast will transfer all powers that it owns to a nearby Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast. Transfer of power will last for 10 seconds and cannot be interrupted. Kill the Ancient Hybrid Beast to stop the transfer of the Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will be grown immediately into a fully grown Ancient Hybrid Beast. Condition: Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast must be present around the Ancient Hybrid Beast.

Note: The Ancient Hybrid Beast is a powerful Hybrid created

from the ancient times when Gods roamed the earth. It has potent godly powers.

# Chapter 796: The Ancient Hybrid Beast King

---

When the beast first showed its presence in the field, the first thing it did was to pounce on Zhang Yang. The powerful blow knocked Zhang Yang off his feet and sat stunned on the ground for 3 seconds.

Without wasting any time, the Ancient Hybrid turned sideways and stabbed Zhang Yang with his scorpion tail. A large white shell egg as large as a football was implanted in his chest cavity.

Without a doubt, everyone had first witnessed the activation animation for the skill [Parasitic Laying].

Zhang Yang had first assumed that such a skill would not be used until the boss is about to die. Little did he knew that the very first skill it was going to use would be [Parasitic Laying].

"Haha! Noobie tank! You're about to be a mother!" Wei Yan Er laughed till she dropped on the floor.

Zhang Yang got back up immediately after dispelling the stun effect with {Warrior's Will}. Everyone else had not yet attacked since it was up to Zhang Yang to deal the first few hits in order to generate enough aggro. Only after Zhang Yang had madly attacked the boss, the party followed in and laid down their skills. At then, such a monster with only 20,000,000 HP would take the entire party 10 seconds to kill.

Just as the party had only started to call down the rain, the egg implanted inside Zhang Yang had hatched. A disgusting looking beast, the size of a German Shepard crawled out from Zhang Yang's butt. It dropped down on the floor, covered in blood, and Zhang Yang lost 200,000 HP instantly.

[Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 210

HP: 277,030

Defense: 8,440

Melee Attack: 52,324 – 72,324

"Ooooh, dayum son. You got your butthole spread open by a monster!" cried Fatty Han as he laughed.

"Our poor guild master. May it be remembered that it was this day when he had his butthole spread wide open," said Endless Starlight as he followed Fatty Han to teased Zhang Yang.

"F\*cking hurts man!" said Zhang Yang as he rubbed his bottom.

Just as Fatty Han was laughing out loud, the scorpion tail whistled through the air and stabbed Fatty Han in his chest, implanting an egg.

"OH MY GOD! I'M NEXT! HOLY CRAP!" Fatty Han shrieked in horror as he clutched his butthole tight.

"Kill it! Kill it quick!" cried Fatty Han. Everyone did not need to wait for him to say to do what he wanted. They understood that the monster's {Parasitic Laying} was randomly targeting players. Although being reverse sodomized by a monster would not cause any harm, the sensation of it will never be pleasant! The girls, especially Han Ying Xue had retreated to the rear, hoping that the monster would not target them.

After 10 seconds, Fatty Han cried painfully. "It's coming! I'm coming! It's coming! WOOOOAHHHHHHHHHHH!"

With a loud splash, Fatty Han had crapped out another Juvenile Hybrid beast and lost 200,000 HP.

The monster's egg-laying skill had a cooldown time of only 10 seconds. When a new Juvenile monster had hatched out, the "mother" monster will find the next target and attack. After 40 seconds, there were 5 monsters in the field, 4 of which were the Juvenile monsters. The main "mother" had only over 10% HP left.

Since the monster was about to die, Zhang Yang had predicted

that it will start using its {Passing On} skill. However, since the Juvenile monsters had only 200,000 HP, Zhang Yang's {Horizontal Sweep} and Wei Yan Er's {Tornado Cleave} killed them all easily. By then, the "mother" monster had no Juvenile targets to use {Passing On} and had died after 50 seconds.

"Phew...What a disgusting monster!"

"I concur." Said Sun Xin Yu after being quiet for god knows how long.

Sadly, the Ancient Hybrid Beast was all over the Canyon. As the party proceeded to venture deeper into the canyon, everyone in the party had a chance of being "incubated" by the monster. The guys started doing whatever they could to protect the girls!

There's a saying, if you can't stop something, why resist it? After being poked many times, everyone soon felt numb to the monster's "laying" and convert their rage into killing them all as fast as they could.

Amongst the party members, perhaps, only Wei Yan Er and Fatty Han were the only two who were screaming all the way. No sooner after laying more than a hundred "babies", the party had finally arrived at the boss. It was a huge, 10 meter-tall, gigantic Ancient Hybrid Beast King.

[Ancient Hybrid Beast King] (Holy, Beast)

Level: 225

HP: 2,250,000,000

Defense: 21,710

Melee Attack: 176,701 – 256,710

Skills:

[Parasitic Laying]: Injects an egg into the target. 10 seconds later, a Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will spawn out of the target and absorb 10% of the target's HP. (Cannot exceed 200,000). Juvenile

Ancient Hybrid Beast will assist the Ancient Hybrid Beast in battle.

[Strengthen]: Increases all Ancient Hybrid Beasts' attack by 100%. Lasts for 10 minutes. Stackable.

[Thunder Strike]: Stomps the ground and deals 200,000 physical damage to all targets within 30 meters. Reduces 50% movement speed of all targets. Lasts for 5 seconds.

"If the boss lays an egg every 10 seconds, we would not be able to defeat the boss with just the 10 of us," said Hundred Shots after analyzing the boss' skill.

Unlike the normal monsters they had fought in the canyon, the boss' spawns Elite tier monsters with over 100,000,000 HP. That was not something that they could kill in 10 seconds. Furthermore, the monsters will receive the 100% attack boost by the boss. Once their numbers get high enough, Zhang Yang would not even hold for long.

Without any planning, Zhang Yang decided to try once. "Let's give it a try."

Everyone nodded and followed Zhang Yang into the battle. Lo and behold, the boss' {Parasitic Laying} only had a 10-second cooldown. Worse of all, the monsters that were spawned also had the skill {Parasitic Laying} as well. The number of monsters in the field would grow exponentially by the second.

"Daffy, Sweetheart, Witch, Starry, all of you! Get back! Now!" Zhang Yang had immediately concluded that the party was not in any shape to continue the fight and had everyone withdraw from the battle.

After the first four players went out of the battlefield, Zhang Yang proceeded to the next group. "Icy, Dream, Hundred, Fatty, little brat! All of you use your aggro canceling skills. Get out of the battlefield and get out of the battle."

Everyone nodded and moved away from the boss. Sun Xin Yu and

Lost Dream used {Vanish} to run away, while the remaining three used {Fake Death} to remove all their aggro on them. When everyone was no longer in the aggro list, leaving Zhang Yang as the only one holding all the aggro, he used {Shadow of the Void} and ran away. Once the boss had lost all its targets, it returned to its original position and rested. All the HP that the party had hacked away was restored immediately in 3 seconds. The summoned offspring disappeared immediately soon after, and the battlefield returned to its original silence.

Everyone regrouped together and discussed. Together, they DPS power was extremely strong, yet they could not even defeat a single Holy tier boss. They were not Level 150 anymore, they should be able to kill it without a problem. Such a difficulty would have made the boss an Ascended tier or a Celestial tier!

"Oh man...fighting that...hybrid thing...is like fighting a Celestial boss!" cried Endless Starlight with anger.

"How are we going beat a boss when it can spawn an Elite tier monster that could spawn their own monsters!? It's an endless cycle!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He too felt that the boss' difficulty was set a little too high for their level. "Starry. You take the boss, and I'll handle the smaller ones. Everyone should focus on the boss while I'll handle the rest. If we all use our Transformation skills, we could kill the boss' 2 billion HP in just 9 minutes."

"Erhm...Are you sure to use Transformation to deal with a Holy tier boss? What if there's an Ascended tier boss waiting for us in the next quest?" said Hundred Shot.

"I think so. Besides, if there's really an Ascended tier boss coming out, other players will get hold of the wind and will come to fight it. We might not be able to get the loot. Then again, I don't think there would be an Ascended tier boss. Even if there is one, we still have our War Chariots!"

When Zhang Yang had explained it that way, everyone nodded in satisfaction and proceeded to use their Transformations in the fight against the Hybrid Beast King.

In the second attempt, Endless Starlight had taken over Zhang Yang's role and tanked the boss himself to demonstrate his prowess as a player with more Celestial tier equipment! At that moment, although he was not as tanky as Zhang Yang, he was still able to hold on strongly, allowing the DPSers to deal damage. Naturally, he was able to tank at that moment, because of his Celestial tier equipment. When the others obtain more Celestial armor, Endless Starlight would return to being the secondary tank.

10 seconds later, the first Elite tier Ancient Hybrid Beast had spawned out of Endless Starlight. Zhang Yang was the first to jump at it and dragged it away from the party. Since he had no intention of killing the monsters, he had paid full attention on the boss whilst dealing some additional damage to the monster to hold on to their aggro.

20 seconds later, the second Elite tier Ancient Hybrid Beast was spawned out of Fatty Han. 30 seconds later, the third...No sooner, a minute had past and there were six Elite tier monsters in the field.

"AUUURAH!" The boss growled, releasing a visible red aura that had seeped into the monsters, increasing their size and granting them a 100% attack boost buff.

At that moment, Zhang Yang was in his Transformed state. With over 100,000 Defense value, the monsters around could not deal any damage to Zhang Yang. On the other hand, the smaller monsters that were spawned from the Elite tier monsters were instantly killed by a single use of {Thunder Strike}, and {Horizontal Sweep}. He would always be at 100% HP as long as Han Ying Xue remembers to cast {Regeneration} on him.

Unfortunately, the boss had spammed his skill {Strengthen},



granting stackable attack boost on both the Elite and normal Ancient Hybrid Beast. From 87,665 – 147,665, it was boosted to 175,330 – 295,330.

Zhang Yang had activated {God of War Shield} to grant himself a total of 40% damage reduction passive. The monsters were only able to deal 24,184 – 97,984 damage to him, which was considered to be an acceptable value since Zhang Yang had over 108,750,000 HP. Worst of all, the skill {Strengthen} was used every minute. Eventually, there will be a point in the fight where Zhang Yang would not be able to tank anymore. Everyone knew that and had placed all their efforts in attacking, not even bothered to dodge attacks, for they had placed their trust in Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart's healing.

Zhang Yang, his Phoenix, and Felice were going all out to fight the boss. Zhang Yang had the Phoenix and Felice ignore all the monsters, while he too only occasionally attacked the monsters with his God of War skills every time he had 3 EP charged.

2...4...6 minutes past and there were 36 Elite tier monsters in the field. Worst of all, the first monster that was hatched had over 613,655 – 1,033,655 attack power. Such a number would have long exceeded the likes of a Celestial tier boss! How could one explain when a Holy tier boss could be that strong!?

The only thing that everyone felt lucky about was the fact that the spawned Hybrids could not attack flying targets. Hence, Zhang Yang had easily used {Thunder Strike} to kite the monsters around and kill them slowly. He had given up on attacking the boss. He controlled the Phoenix and Felice to stick to the boss while Zhang Yang alone decided to kite the monsters around the boss in circles.

It was an unreliable kiting technique, since the monsters will occasionally "break" the formation. Zhang Yang could not fly too high, since the big boss will hurl out its scorpion tail and drag Zhang Yang back to its range.

# Chapter 797: Greling Crypt

---

Even when {Thunder Strike} had been strengthened, the number of monsters that had gradually gained numbers by the minute made the skill's 3 meters effective range rather weak. There will always be monsters that "escape" the effective range and manage to attack Zhang Yang.

If {Thunder Strike} wasn't enough...

{Blast Wave}! {Brutal Smash}! {Heroic Leap}!

Zhang Yang unleashed more and more skills to compensate for the insufficiency of {Thunder Strike}. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart even managed to lend a hand by using {Lunar's Imprisonment} and other controlling skills to slow down the monsters' pursuit.

At one point, the entire party was attacking at the same time!

Once the monsters that were chasing after Zhang Yang were killed, the threat on Zhang Yang was reduced greatly.

7 minutes...8 minutes...9 minutes...

Despite having eliminated a large number of monsters, there were still 54 more monsters chasing after Zhang Yang. The number of monsters that had exceeded the coverage of {Thunder Strike} had grown to be such a problem that Zhang Yang had no choice but to take a few direct hits. If wasn't for his Transformed state, Zhang Yang would have already been gobbled up. Even so, his HP was still dropping like an open faucet! Eventually, he had less than 20,000,000 HP left.

When things got out of control, Zhang Yang had resorted to using {God of War Radiance} to fully restore all his HP. However, in less than 30 seconds, the number of monsters, coupled with the attack boost of the boss had his entire 100 million HP drained down to 0.

Zhang Yang felt the need to go all out and used his accessory Invulnerability, giving time for Han Ying Xue to cast her {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}. After that, Zhang Yang had slowly regained 10% HP at a time and could now last slightly longer.

"Hold on for a little longer! The boss has 4% HP left!"

"F\*cking hell! It's easier said than done! Fight the boss! Don't stop to talk!" cried Zhang Yang. In the past, or rather, before this boss fight, the number of monsters that he could tank was 20! That was his limit! Yet, he had managed to pull that number up to 50 at once! It was more than double!

At then, he felt extremely lucky to have so many of his skills strengthened. If {Thunder Strike} was not upgraded and still had a 5-second cooldown instead of 8, the monsters would have killed him already! Even so, it had taken all of Zhang Yang's neurons firing in overdrive to dodge and kite!

"Just a little more!" cried Fatty Han.

"I'm about to die you bastard!" cried Zhang Yang. The Invulnerability that the accessory granted him lasted only for 10 seconds. Even though Zhang Yang's HP was slowly being restored by {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}, once the Invulnerability wears off, all the "Celestial" tier monsters will rip him to shreds!

"Just a tiny bit more!"

"How long!?"

"NOW! AND.....WE...ARE...DONE!"

THUD!

A loud crashing sound was heard and the enormous body of the boss fell to the earth. Upon the death of the boss, all the "summoned" monsters disappeared into thin air, leaving Zhang Yang panting for breath with his shield still held up high and his sword prepared to stab, like a warrior's statue in ancient Rome.

"Woah...That's a cool pose there, noobie tank!" cried Wei Yan Er as she clapped slowly.

"Cool!? COOL!? YOUR SISTER'S \*SS THAT'S COOL!" Zhang Yang yelled at the top of his lungs. It was the first time that he had tanked so many monsters at a time. If he were to continue on for just a few more seconds, his shield's durability would have dropped down to zero, rendering him unable to equip the shield until it is fixed. (1)

"Hey! When did I wrong you?!" cried Han Ying Xue as she pinched Zhang Yang cheek.

Wei Yan Er proceeded to go through her usual routine. Since the boss was so difficult to kill and had even forced them to use their Transformation skills, the loot would better be good. Sadly, the Ancient Hybrid Beast King was the same as the Silvery Scale Eel King. There was only 1 Holy tier equipment and two Ethereal tier equipment. All of them had the same 30 Levels reduction special. However! Seeing that the battle had been an incredible fight, the items dropped did not match the boss' difficulty! Not by a long shot!

In the end, Zhang Yang had to shrug it off. The harder the quest, the better chance he would have at getting the Land Lease from the old gambler. It's a way for the developers to weed out the weak ones. By putting in effort, striving through hardships, only may you have a chance to obtain good items. Zhang Yang laughed all of the sudden and asked everyone to pack up to return to the NPC.

"Gods have mercy! That's the real Claw of the Ancient Hybrid Beast King!" Marcus cried. "That's...That's...IMPOSSIBLE! How could a weak little girl like you defeat such a legendary beast!"

The little girl smiled instead of getting mad at the goblin for calling her a little girl. "Hehe! Well? Gimme dem boots!"

Marcus cringed painfully at the thought of losing the bet, but a bet was a bet and he removed the boots and tossed them towards

Wei Yan Er. The boots dropped to the floor near Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er and emitted a smell so pungent that both of them had to pinch their noses.

Zhang Yang had not received any system notifications about completing the quest. It looked like the old gambler's quest can only be accepted by one player only. Since the quest item was in the little girl's hands, she was the only player who could complete the quest.

Harcus stood restlessly since he was standing on the hard rocky grounds barefooted. The goblin even had a gap in his teeth! With rage steaming, the goblin jumped with anger and cried, "One more! One more bet!"

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and said, "Old goblin, you have nothing else to offer, besides your pants. If you still want to continue this gamble, you better offer us something that we want!"

"Hehe! Hold your horses there, human!" The old goblins ruffled the back of his trousers and pulled out a long piece of scroll and said, "Here is my offer! The Land Lease of my property in the Holy City of Anthylor!"

"I accept!" said Zhang Yang instantly. He had been waiting for the lease since the beginning of the quest. "What shall we bet on?"

"Hehe! My bet for you is the broken sword of the of the Hell Ghost King! Bring it back here and I'll give you the Land Lease! If you can't, I'll have my tooth and boots back, please."

'Ding! Harcus the Old Gambler has a quest for you: Hell Ghost King. Will you accept it?'

"A gentleman's agreement!" said Zhang Yang as he reached out his hand to shake the goblin's.

[Hell Ghost King] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: The old goblin bets that you will fail to defeat the Hell Ghost King! Prove him wrong and win the bet by going to the

North of the Gerling Crypt in the North!

Progress: Broken Sword of the Hell Ghost King 0/1

S Difficulty!

When A Level Difficulty had provided such a difficult Holy tier boss, an S class would have Zhang Yang kill an Ascended tier boss! Fortunately, the system had not been a busybody and publicly announced the availability of the Land Lease. Zhang Yang would have the time of his life to hunt the boss! The boss would not spawn out without proper activation. The developers had released the announcement about that. Any Ascended boss would only spawn by completing a series of quest or by fulfilling certain conditions. If Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had not gotten this far in this particular questline, the Hell Ghost King would not have spawned.

Zhang Yang gathered the rest of the party together and left the Dark Ghastly Canyon, heading towards the North of the Gerling Crypt.

"We are but without the Transformation skill. How are we supposed to defeat the boss?"

"Plus, the Crypt will be an indoor environment. There's no way for us to rely on the War Chariot!"

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue smugly and said, "All is well, my friends. A crypt would be like a dungeon. In a sense, there will be several floors for us to clear before we could reach the end of it. I figured that we might take more than 3 days to clear all the floors. Then again, this boss is only known to us. Even if we wait for a few days, there won't be anyone coming to disturb us. Not unless someone here decides to tell the females from a certain guild..." said Zhang Yang as he glared at Fatty Han.

Everyone left the canyon and after two hours of nonchalant flying, they had arrived at a misty and eerie garden. The garden

was devoid of light, yet the place was not too dark. At the center of the lifeless garden was an entrance to an underground pathway. It was rather visible from afar, since the entire structure of the entrance was shaped like a round tent, a Yurt to be exact. Once Zhang Yang entered the entrance, the minimap rolled over and revealed a complicated network of underground pathways.

"This must be it."

The two Phoenix spread out its wings and illuminated the area 10 meters from where they stood with its blinding firelight.

Just when they had walked further into the crypt, a metallic scratching sound could be heard echoing from the depths of the pathway. The sound got louder and Zhang Yang could see the monster. It was a regular skeletal monster that once was a human warrior. All the flesh had rotted away, leaving nothing but dust on its skeletal structure. It was still wearing some old armor from a time before it was alive and a long rusty sword that it dragged along the floor.

When the skeletal monster got closer to the party, its eye sockets flared up with bright emerald green flames. It growled and charged towards the party, dragging its long sword with it.

[Revived Warrior] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 220

HP: 110,000,000

Defense: 13,730

Melee Attack: 92,970 – 152,970

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% melee physical attack to a target. Has a 20% chance to trigger an additional attack.

[Poison Mist]: Deals 30,00 Natural damage every 3 seconds to all targets that steps into the Poison Mist.

Note: The Crypt was created as a place where brave warriors choose to rest in peace. However, the Hell Ghost King had chosen to revive them, giving them a new purpose to their bodies. Due to their glorious past, the only thing that kept the Revived Warriors moving was pure fighting instinct.

Zhang Yang took charge and attacked the skeletal soldier. The rest of the party followed and blasted the Revived Warrior, turning it into a pile of dust.

Everyone proceeded further. Out of habit, Wei Yan Er had moved to the body and discovered there was loot to be picked.

[Glove of the Flame Master] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +3423

Intelligence: +1128

Spirit: +499

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,250.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 5.6%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 220

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Flame Master Set Effect (1/3): {Gloves of the Flame Master}, {Pants of the Flame Master}, {Flame Master's Tall Boots}

Three Set Effect: Increases all Fire Attribute Spell damage by 50%

Everyone exchanged a weird look as they were all stumped. How could a lower level monster have such a drop that had a 30 Level reduction effect? If a monster could have such a nice drop, what would that be for the boss?

"Hmph...It's actually a powerful item if we can find all three equipment," said Zhang Yang as he kept the glove in his inventory.



Daffodil Daydream pondered for a while and said, "The set effect is good, but the equipment stats itself are low. Even though it could provide 50% extra fire damage, the overall DPS will be lower than wearing three Holy tier equipment. And then there's the low Vitality and Intelligence stat. It's not too good actually."

Zhang Yang smiled. "That's a good girl. I'm impressed that you could figure it out. Yes. It's not too good, but I'm sure that many Level 190 players would die to have these equipment if they could not get their hands on any Holy tier."

Translator Note:

(1) Sister: Apparently, it is a Chinese dialogue manner. When they scold someone, they tend to add close relative of the targeted person. Unlike the usual English insults like, "Your mama is an idiot", China's Chinese scolding goes the same way. It's a way to divert back the things you had said back to yourself. Example: A calls B a donkey and B retorts back.

A: "You're a donkey!"

B: "Please...You're mom's a donkey."

# Chapter 798: Spectre Ghost King Hargino

---

The party proceed further and encountered many more Revived Warriors along the way. Naturally, they were all swiftly dealt with. Despite the first monster dropping a set equipment, they had not managed to farm many others later on. After the party cleared the entire floor, they only managed to find two of the same gloves, and one pair of boots. One more, and they would have a complete set.

Although it was not stated in the official site, the party could have easily figured out there were more than 7 floors in this crypt. If each of the monsters in the crypt could drop the set equipment, the party would farm a few sets of equipment by the time they reach the bottommost floor.

As predicted by Zhang Yang, clearing just one floor had taken much of their time. Although the monsters were not spawned closely to each other, there were still a great deal of time due to the vast space on the floor. In fact, they had taken close to half a day to clear a floor. As such, they had spent most of the night and were about to wake up for breakfast.

Zhang Yang did his usual routine and after "feeding" the entire family, he went to his office and worked. Sitting quietly on the fax machine was a stack of papers printed and waiting to be organized. They were the investigation results compiled by the private investigator. It was at Zhang Yang's bidding and they were all about one man. Zhong Xiu Hua.

Sun Xin Yu did not have much information on Zhong Xiu Hua hence, despite being a long distance relative to Zhong Xiu Hua, she was practically useless to Zhang Yang when it comes to enacting his act of revenge. On the other hand, Zhang Yang had Liu Xin Min. She had been tangled up with Zhong Xiu Hua for many years and had information that no one knew about. However so, Zhong Xiu Hua was a very detailed man. Anything that he does, he does it cleanly and leaves no traces. Unlike Liu Wei, Zhong Xiu Hua did

things without loose ends.

Those who wrong Zhong Xiu Hua will end up disappearing from this world like the clouds in the sky. For him to terminate someone, he would find and kill the target and dispose of the body without a trace. If anyone would want to prosecute him, they would need to first find the body. Like the laws in America, you will remain innocent until proven guilty. Problem is, that was the loophole that Zhong Xiu Hua used. He had never personally committed the crimes.

Besides the criminal behavior of Zhong Xiu Hua, the reports also expressed his sexual comportment. The man was incredibly lustful and would not say no to any beautiful women. However, the man would not easily indulge in any female, no matter how beautiful they were. From his perspective, all women were merely tools to release men's sexual tension. After he has used them, he would discard the first and bring in the second.

Zhang Yang continued to examine the name list of those that Zhong Xiu Hua had "discarded" and "disposed of". At one point, Zhang Yang thought that the man could be an evil dictator from a random country. Such a number of people had been wronged by him, he could actually be on par with the infamous Osama Bin Laden. However, despite the long stretch of names, they were all suspected victims without proof. In fact, none of them had any sort of connection that led directly to Zhong Xiu Hua.

Zhang Yang is a simple man and if no one wronged him, he would not have wronged anyone, but the report would have changed even that rather pacifistic mindset to that of a vigilante's sense of chaotic justice. Right then, all his thoughts on Zhong Xiu Hua led to one end, that is the termination of Zhong Xiu Hua. If Zhang Yang crosses his arms and leaves things to be on their own, everyone close to him; relatives, friends, guildmates, colleagues, even his neighbors might be a target of assassination and disposal!

Perhaps, the only person in the world that might escape the fate

of being erased from the world would be Sun Xin Yu and her relatives. Zhong Xiu Hua had aimed to have her hand in marriage, even if by force. He had high views of her family, instead of her. His ultimate goal was to get into her family tree and create a powerful force that could rule over even China.

Zhang Yang sat down on his million-dollar executive chair and sighed. He rubbed his forehead with such intensity and finally, he laid down his final decision. The first to attack will win!

Zhang Yang placed the documents away and steel his decision. His blood was boiling as the murderous intention in him grew. Zhang Yang was naturally hot-blooded young man. When confronted with an enemy like Zhong Xiu Hua, instead of flight, he would fight until either one of them falls!

Zhang Yang gripped the stack of paper in his hands so hard that his thumbs tore through and impaled the thick sheet. There was nothing for him to be scared of when it came to Zhong Xiu Hua! There was no way for him to use the law against Zhang Yang, for Sun Xin Yu ruled that domain. What that was left for Zhong Xiu Hua or Zhang Yang was outside the law, which indirectly means that whoever who has the fatter wallet will win the war.

Zhong Xiu Hua's mother was rich, hence, so was he. He was so rich to a point that he could simply purchase anything in the game. In fact, that was the basis of his guild. Everything was about money. He was able to buy so many War Chariots, all because of the money he had. That and the many things that he did, including kidnapping Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou. That incident had led to their "faithful" encounter and the birth of a new life. If things had turned out worse than that, someone might already be "erased" from the world.

However! If one were to compare how fat was his wallet is, Zhang Yang could easily take his out.

Aside from the profit sharing from Silky Soft Holdings, Zhang

Yang had earned more than 50,000,000,000 from the game itself! A large percentage of his earnings came from the Teleportation fees of his Territories, while the rest was a mixture of the Little Merchandize Shop, the guild Mining Cave, various sponsors, and the Battle Team championships' cash reward.

In his previous life, One Sword Stroke had earned more than 400,000,000 annually from sponsorships alone. However, in this lifetime, Zhang Yang was performing far greater than the One Sword Stroke in his past life. With many smaller companies seeking to form contracts with Lone Desert Smoke, the total annual income had burst through the roof, totaling to almost 600,000,000 a year! That's 50% more than what One Sword Stroke could ever earn!

Zhang Yang did not need to fork out his entire savings to build his arsenals. From the money he earned from advertisements alone, he could easily arm himself to defeat Zhong Xiu Hua in his own game! Even if Zhong Xiu Hua were to seek help from his mother, how much could they fork out? 800 million? 1 billion? That number was nothing but spare change for him. Business is all about investments and profits. The man had invested most of his fortune in Eternal Flame, all hoping to earn back double or triple the amount. The problem was, Zhong Xiu Hua's method had given him nothing but more heartaches.

With money, you could make the world go round. With money, you could even hire the devil to be your butler. Zhang Yang had plans, various plans of toppling the arrogant son of a b\*tch and the b\*tch herself if he has to. Zhang Yang picked up his pen and pulled out a blank piece of paper. With maddening speed, the man was like a possessed man, as the pen in his hand danced around the paper, scribbling plans after plans! After he was done with the writing, Zhang Yang picked up the phone and made call after call. With money flowing out from his accounts as he laid down the orders to all the people he had called, Zhang Yang felt the goddess

of victory gradually smiling at him. After making many more calls for more than an hour, Zhang Yang slammed the phone back to the receiver and finally sigh.

"It's done now...Zhong Xiu Hua. You'll soon regret the day you had decided to invite me to your tea party."

...

After delaying his gaming session for the entire afternoon, Zhang Yang found himself left behind. In his absence, the party had already decided to push forward with Endless Starlight as the main tank. Everyone was fine, since all their equipment were strong enough to tank the monsters' attacks during OT.

"Little Yang!?! What took you so long?! It's been an hour since you decided to crawl back into the game! Tell your old brother the truth, did you pluck the forbidden fruit of a chick?" said, Fatty Han, as he smiled perversely.

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had not missed what Fatty Han had said and threw a death glare at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed innocently and said to the girls, "Do you really think that my gun has any more ammo after the morning battle!?"

As such, the two ladies blushed and returned to their battle position. Ever since the day Zhang Yang had accidentally drank the wine laced with the Elephant Aphrodisiac, they had purposely made Zhang Yang "go all out" with them. It was for two reasons, one was to get themselves "knocked up" with his child. Two, to make sure Zhang Yang has no more energy to do it with any of the secretaries in his office.

With Zhang Yang taking the helm, the pushing speed was increased dramatically. As such, it was a matter of time before they had cleared the way to the fourth floor. With an abundance of Flame Master set equipment and experience points, the team was

satisfied with their progress and forgave Zhang Yang for his tardiness. They even managed to collect 5 sets of the Flame Master set equipment.

However, there was still a little dissatisfaction simmering amongst them all. The only monster in the crypt was the Revived Warrior. It was getting a little old, especially after the third day. Luckily, they had cleared all the way down to the last floor.

As expected of a boss' battle field, the place was large and empty. After walking around, exploring each corner of the floor, they found nothing but dust and broken bones everywhere. The team then walked further down the large dirty crypt and reached the end, only to find the boss was waiting for them there.

The boss was a large man. He had a long cape flowing down his back. However, that was the only thing the party could make out. It was so dark that the only thing they could see was the boss' pair of emerald-green eyes glowing in the dark as they flared violently. The boss was languishing casually on a stone throne, with a long sword resting on the side of the chair. He was crossing his arms as if he was actually waiting for them to come to him.

[Spectre Ghost King Hargino] (Ascended, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 11,500,000,000

Defense: 34,900

Melee Attack: 329,115 – 429,115

Skills:

[Ghost Parade]: Summons 10 Spirits out of the abyss to assist Hargino.

[Deathly Pain]: Sends a deadly wave 1,000 meters around Hargino every 3 seconds. Deals 300,000 Shadow Damage to all targets.

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% melee physical attack to target. 50%

chance to deal a 100% Critical strike additional attack.

[Inseparable Shadow]: When players are 1,000 meters away from Hargino, the debuff will be automatically inflicted on the player. Players that receive the debuff cannot leave 1,000 meters away from Hargino. Kills any players that exceed a 1,000 meters range from Hargino.

[Seal of the Ghost King]: Grant a buff on Hargino whenever he kills a player. When surviving players get 100 meters close to Hargino, receive 10% HP as damage per second. Effect lasts for 2 hours.

[Spectre's Constitution]: Restore 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any skill effects.

Note: The master of all Spectres in the Gerling Crypt. Possesses ungodly power.

With the array of skills like the party had never seen before, they were all stumped. Summoned soldiers? AoE aura skill? Recovery skill!? Not to mention the inability to leave the battle! Furthermore, everyone will have to wait for 2 hours before they can start the fight again!

"D\*mn! We don't have enough firepower to fight this guy," said Fatty Han. Everyone kept quiet as they had the same thoughts. Under normal circumstances, their DPS would go from 2,000,000 to 4,500,000 after Transformation. Setting aside the various troublesome skills, the boss will restore 115,000,000 HP every 30 seconds which would be 3,830,000 HP every second. Since the party's effective DPS after that would only be 670,000, they will take as long as 5 hours to kill the boss!

5 hours!?

The active duration of their Transformation skill was only 2 hours, and after that, the party's DPS will drop down to 2,000,000 only. It would not be enough to cover the damage that the boss



could restore! If the boss decides to sit down and have a cup tea, the party would not even be able to defeat the boss, let alone with him waving his sword around like a madman!

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and nonchalantly said, "Oh well. Let's fight!"

Fatty Han came to him and smacked his head. Annoyed, Fatty Han grumbled, "Are you daft? I can't believe there would be a day when I'm the one calling you a stupid head!"

"Do you have a plan, guild master?" Daffodil Daydream approached.

"Yes. In fact, I do. Right now, we can defeat the monster all by ourselves. But, if the boss did not have the skill {Ghost Parade}, we might have had to call other guilds for help! That boss' skill is the only hope we have at killing the boss!"

Sun Xin Yu widened her eyes and said, "The Gates of Hell!"

The skill {Gates of Hell} was the skill that was given to Zhang Yang by the system when he was the first player to reach Level 200. Its power was to summon out a demon possessing the same level as the target that Zhang Yang has killed. The skill had a 72-hour cooldown duration which he had never used before.

"That's right! If we have an army of elite tier demons helping us fight the boss, we might be able to compensate for the lack of DPS!"

"The main point is the rate of the boss calling his backup. What if the number of summons are not enough?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "We won't know unless we try. Let's not use our Transformation skill and try to fight the boss now. This is only a test run. We are fighting the boss to see how he acts."

"Okay!"

Everyone followed Zhang Yang into the fight and with only the

intention of staying alive as long as possible.

"Insolent fools! The living shan't be disturbed! You shall join them instead!" the boss stood up from his stone throne and picked up the long sword by his side.

# Chapter 799: The Prowess of the Gates of Hell

---

With only 10 players, all refusing to use their Transformation skill, the chance of the victory was 0%. In less than a few minutes, Hargino had chopped, sliced, and diced everyone, fine julienne style.

The battle ended with an utter defeat. However, out of the ashes of their defeat, they did manage to retrieve important notes. The skill {Ghost Parade} would be used once every 30 seconds. The monsters that were summoned were all Elite tiers with only 10,000,000 HP. {Force Strike} will be used every 10 seconds. Although the boss will have a 50% chance of dealing a 100% Critical Strike, that sort of damage was "tank-able" by Zhang Yang in his Transformed state.

Compared to the rest of the skill, the worst skill of all was {Ghost Parade}. The boss itself was strong, to begin with. It's AoE skill was painful, not to mention the penalty for dying was to wait for 2 hours before they could restart the battle. That, and the constant fighting with the summoned monsters will be a problem. However, there was a silver lining to it. Without the monsters being summoned out, Zhang Yang and the party would have a 0% chance of winning the fight! Paired with Zhang Yang's {Gates of Hell}, all they had to do was to kill the monsters as soon as they appeared, and they will have a chance to defeat the boss. It would be slim but it was still better than 0%.

The enhanced {Gates of Hell} would last for 20 minutes and will not be affected by the splash damage of the boss' AoE skill. Hence, the gate will not be affected by the boss' {Deathly Pain}. Despite that, as long as the gate is not targeted by the boss, having 1 million HP is more than enough to last until its effects wears off.

Since the boss summoned 10 ghosts every 30 seconds, the total

number of "convertible" monsters in 20 minutes will reach as high as 400!

400 Elite tier monsters would be the same as having 400 well-equipped players! Furthermore, the monsters each had 100 million HP! At most, they could last for as long as 1000 seconds while tanking the boss' {Deathly Pain} skill. If one summoned Demon deals 50,000 DPS, all 400 summoned Demons could deal 20,000,000,000! That was more than enough to kill the boss!

Hence, Zhang Yang had to make sure everyone could kill the summoned ghosts once they are out in the open. Zhang Yang himself would have to make sure to keep the aggro of the boss and the ghosts on him to allow the party to deal damage.

"Too bad. All we can do now is wait for 2 hours until {Seal of the Ghost King} wears out!"

"That's not too bad. We can talk c\*ck, sing songs, chitty chat, or anything you want. We have been fighting the same old monster for so long, we deserve a little rest and recreation."

"Little Yang, remember the chick I recommended to you that day? Well, last night. I—"

"OKEY DOKEY! TIME TO FIGHT!"

...

Two hours was neither too long nor too short for the party to chat and rest. Before they knew it, the effect on them was gone and everyone got ready for the boss fight. Zhang Yang took the lead and activated his Transformation skill. The rest of the party followed and waited until Zhang Yang landed the first blow.

Zhang Yang shot at the boss and threw out a few strikes before summoning the {Gates of Hell} when he was within 100 meters away from the boss.

"Hahaha! Do you not know death!? Do you wish to taste the pain of dying again!?" cried Hargino as he resumed his fighting stance

and cleaved Zhang Yang.

The battle started with a flash and everyone fulfilled their roles flawlessly.

30 seconds into the fight and Hargino stabbed the ground with his long sword.

"Rise, my slaves! Serve your lord and kill the enemies!"

10 abyssal holes appeared around him and out came 10 Skeletal Soldiers that were all clad in black heavy armor.

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight jumped to the front and kited all the monsters together, allowing the party to focus on their AoE attacks.

When all the monsters were left with 10% HP or less, everyone stopped attacking and resumed their attacks on the boss. Zhang Yang would have to be the player to strike the killing blow or else the {Gates of Hell} will not register the kills. Ally kills would not work on the {Gates of Hell}.

{Thunder Strike}!

‘-331,253!’

With the power of the God of War Transformation and Wei Yan Er’s {Strength Aura}, Zhang Yang’s {Thunder Strike} had reached a damage that exceeded any amount that he had seen. 330,000 damage was strong enough to hack away at their reduced HP!

{God of War Crushing Strike}!

‘-391,090!’

After two consecutive strikes back to back, all the summoned soldiers were killed instantly. Before their bodies "disappeared", a long trail of black light was pulled out of their body and was absorbed into the {Gates of Hell}. One by one, in an orderly manner, a demon, with the height of four men, walked out of the gate. Unlike any demons that the party had fought before, the

summoned demons were extremely lean and mean. Their horns on their forehead were longer and fiercer looking. Even their tails were longer and thicker than the usual thin looking whip!

[Summoned Armageddon's Harbinger] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 220

HP: 110,000,000

Defense: 13,730

Melee Attack: 92,970 – 152,970

Skills:

[Force of an Army]: Deals 100% melee physical damage to a target. 20% chance to increase attack by 10% on oneself. Lasts for 6 seconds. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

10 Demons appeared out of the gate and joined the fight against the boss. Every Demon summoned had roughly the same look but wielded different weapons. All of them were basically swords but came in different shapes and sizes. That matters not, for their attack power were the same.

60 seconds into the fight, the second batch of summoned monsters appeared into the field. Similarly, the party kited them and allowed Zhang Yang to land the killing blow.

The boss was digging his own grave. If he does not use the skill, Zhang Yang would not have gained such a powerful army to use against him!

If the boss had brains like players do, he will surely be targeting the gates first! However, being a program, he had to follow his protocol and obey the system aggro function!

4 minutes into the fight...

The number of Demon joining Zhang Yang side to defeat the boss had increased so exponentially that they had completely surrounded the boss. Since the size of the Demons was rather

huge, only 50 of them were able to attack the boss at the same time. The rest of the Demons were struggling to move forward and had to wait until the front ones died before they could move closer to the boss.

Luckily, the entire team was practically in the air, allowing them to attack from another level. Hundred Shots and the other ranged attackers had no problems attacking the boss from where they stood. In fact, compared to Zhang Yang, they were dealing much higher damage.

Due to the limited space to attack, the summoned Demons could not push their total DPS to 20,000,000,000. At most, they were only able to deal around 6 to 7 billion damage per second. Then again, that was more than he could ever ask for!

"Insolent fool!"

"You all shall crawl beneath me!"

"The Spectres shall rule the world!"

"Darkness shall rise!"

...

There were all too many different lines but they conveyed roughly the same meaning, and that was to "ask" the players to surrender.

20 minutes into the battle and the summoned {Gates of Hell} had reached its end. The gates seeped back into the earth, but the summoned Elite Demons were still able to attack for as long as 4 hours if they are not killed.

This goes without saying, but the {Gates of Hell}'s prowess could only be so strong if Zhang Yang uses it against such a boss that would keep on spawning monsters. If the skill was used against players, all they had to do was to get 200 meters away from the {Gates of Hell,} and they would be fine. That said, the {Gates of Hell} only had 1,000,000 HP. For any average player out there, they

would only need roughly 10 seconds or so to destroy it!

After the gate disappeared from the field, the summoned Demons started dwindling in number. They were all killed by the boss' AoE attacks and {Deathly Pain}. Friendly Healing skills did not work on them. No sooner later, all the demons were killed and the boss was left with 2,700,000,000 HP left.

Technically, they would still need around 70 minutes to kill the boss. Zhang Yang and everyone else still had around 80 minutes for their Transformation skills to end. As long as no one dies in the battle, they would kill the boss easily.

One hour into the fight...

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Ah...such a shame. An anti-boss skill will always be useful when its uncalled for, and be useless when it the situation calls for it! It was like the skill was purposely trying to sabotage Zhang Yang!

20%...10%...5%...

Just then, the remaining HP of Harguino would require at least 14 more minutes for the party to kill. Despite being only 5%, having the need of 14 minutes to take that amount off is more than enough to state the prowess of the boss! The time left on everyone's Transformation timer was 20 minutes or so. It's already safe to say that they would win the fight.

4%...3%...2%...1%...

The boss now had over 100 million HP, while the total time elapsed was 113 minutes. Everyone has less than 7 minutes left on their timers.

5 million...2 million...200,000...0.

"Hmph. Such...a...wonderful...fight..." The boss cracked a smile before he fell back against his throne, lifeless. His long sword



slipped out of his hands and clanged on the floor.

"We did it!"

Everyone sighed and dropped to their knees, as the fight was both intense and nerve wrecking.

With 5 minutes left on their Transformation, Wei Yan Er was the only one who seemed to be energetic. She flew around in her Transformed state and zoomed to the boss.

"It's time for the prizes!" she shouted while picking up the equipment.

"Phew...this was a problematic boss. We were really short-handed back there," said Hundred Shots.

"That's true. If the boss did not have the {Ghost Parade} skill, AND our big boss not having the {Gates of Hell}, we would have been toasted!" said Endless Starlight.

"That's unlikely to ever happen again...How many bosses out there will have minions like that?" said Daffodil Daydream, as she was the most reasonable person.

Zhang Yang nodded. "I agree with Hundred Shots. We are actually lacking some players. I think I shall have Ten Dusk and Galileo to form a strong party. We will then combine two of our parties and form a stronger party!"

Unlike the other bosses of the quest, this Ascended tier boss had dropped 10 Ascended tier equipment and 5 Holy tier equipment. There was also a large pile of items, all of which Wei Yan Er was happily playing with.

The party then proceed with the item distribution and Zhang Yang was rather lucky this time. He was able to roll for two Ascended tier equipment which was a Shield and a Ring.

[Barren Shield] (Ascended, Shield)

Defense: +27,940

Vitality: +75,147

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 150,280.

Equip: Absorbs 10,303 damage on attack.

Equip: 30% chance to restore 1% HP after a successful {Block}.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 30 Levels.

[Revival Ring] (Ascended, Ring)

Vitality: +11272

Strength: +1983

Dexterity: +1983

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 22,540

Equip: Increases damage dealt and Healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorb 1,717 damage on attack.

Use: Obtain boon {Revival}. All damage dealt to you will restore your health. Lasts for 6 seconds. Cooldown: 1 Hour.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 30 Levels.

# Chapter 800: Snow Queen Inheritance

---

Upon switching up the two Ascended Tier equipment, Zhang Yang's Attack power did not really increase much. However, because the Shield is a piece of equipment that could boost a player's HP the most, Zhang Yang's HP amount increased tremendously. Now, he only needed his {Vitality Aura} to boost his HP up to 3,778,420. After all, before a player can attain Level 200, the player must be mounted on his or her mount in order to obtain that much HP.

Meanwhile, his Defence had also reached up to 33,700. If he just activates his God of War Inheritance Transformation, his Defence would be boosted up to approximately 170,000 points. Furthermore, he also had 20% passive Damage Immunity and 28,454 Damage Absorption. If one wants to hurt Zhang Yang with a Physical attack, that person would need to deal at least 200,000 damage in a single hit just to break his Defence!

As for the items, he distributed the 4 Skill Point Crystals out, one after another. Zhang Yang had no need for any Skill Points at the moment. So he decided to let the others have at them.

Well, the Skill Books were not suitable for him at all. Therefore, he could only stare at Han Ying Xue and the others as they were rolling to see who gets the Skill Book. However, he would still be the one earning the most in this round.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 9]!

It crossed his mind though. Zhang Yang was thinking of launching a war on the other Regions just to see if he could locate the last missing chapter of the [Book of Revelation]. Well, by doing so, he would be able to lure the person holding the chapter out from hiding. All he needed to do would be to activate his God of War Transformation and fly around the battlefield. He could definitely take out the person, pick up the item and quickly escape

from the chaotic battlefield.

What he never expected was that the last missing chapter of the book would be sitting quietly in the hands of the boss, waiting for him to collect it.

With the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 9], Zhang Yang could finally combine the broken chapters to get the complete [Book of Revelation].

[Book of Revelation] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: Increases 50% Damage of all party members of the holder, standing within the range of 100-meter radius from the holder. If the holder of the book is killed, he or she can choose to revive immediately on the same spot he or she dies with 100% HP and 100% MP. This effect can only be triggered once every hour. If the resurrected player gets killed again within the cooldown period of the book's effect, the item will be dropped. This item can only be taken along in the inventory, and cannot be destroyed.

Special Effect 1: Enhances {Block}.

Special Effect 2: Enhances {Gates of Hell}.

Special Effect 3: {Select one Skill to be enhanced}

Use: Upon unleashing the light of the Revelation, all enemy units in the surroundings will receive 2,000,000 Chaos Damage (The amount of damage will differ based on your level.) Cooldown: 72 hours.

"This is f\*cking great! Damn!" Everyone was cheering in shock. However, although the [Book of Revelation] could cause up to 2,000,000 AoE damage to enemies in the surroundings, the cooldown was just too damn long. Furthermore, 2,000,000 damage would not be effective for the top Tier players. So the effect was actually not that great either.

However, the item could enhance up to 3 Skills. That made the [Book of Revelation] a very powerful tool for any player to have.

The enhanced effect for {Block} and {Gates of Hell} had been witnessed by many. The enhancement effect was similar to the effect of having two Superior Skill Books!

Other than that, the party had also acquired one broken piece of Inheritance.

The Inheritance was called 'Class A Snow Queen Inheritance'.

Well, because everyone had already acquired their own Inheritance, the broken piece of Inheritance could only be passed over into Zhang Yang's inventory. They were definitely not willing to sell it, of course. So they could just give it to someone who is loyal to the guild later on and help that player acquire it. By doing so, they would be able to increase the number of players with Class A Inheritances from 2 to 3!

Upon picking up 'Hajnold's Hilt', the gang immediately left and make haste for the Dark Ghastly Canyon. They were hoping to hand in the quest to the man with the gambler fever and get the reward of the quest --- land lease!

"What the actual f\*ck! NO! My eyes must be blurred! This is not real!" Marcus continued to rub his eyes. Then he stared at the sword's hilt again. Well, by the end of it, he handed over the land lease with a blackened face.

Well, the new shop would be needing the potions that only Zhang Yang could make to sustain the business. Therefore, to avoid more trouble, Wei Yan Er naturally threw the land lease over to Zhang Yang without a single moment of hesitation. Or else, Zhang Yang would need to pass the potions over to the little brat before the little brat could deposit the goods into the warehouse of the new shop. That little brat would never be patient enough to do that!

After all, everyone could get a 5% dividend out of the earnings from the new shop. As for the remaining earnings, the earnings would be kept aside so that they could pay the salaries of the new members of the guild. The bosses in the current stage of the game

were becoming more and more powerful these days. They needed make sure that they had enough members to form a new party, a second party to support the first party.

Upon teleporting back to the Holy City, Zhang Yang took the land lease and went back to collect the property. It did not take long before his registration was recognized by the system. Just like how he started up with the Little Merchandized Shop, he began to 'renovate' the new shop. Then, he hired a loli type NPC as his shop attendant.

Back when he was setting up his Little Merchandize Shop, he did not have much money to spend on the shop. However, now that he had become f\*cking rich, he straight away improved the shop to the maximum level and named the shop as 'Little Merchandize Shop (Branch)'

He then put all the Ethereal Tier equipment into the warehouse of the new shop. After that, he quickly shouted out the news about the opening of his new shop in the public channel. Holy City is a unique place. That would be the only place where all eight Regions shared one public channel. Everyone could trade even though they were far away from each other.

Because the Ethereal Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had to offer were all Level 220 with Special Effects that reduced 30 levels from the requirement, a large number of Level 200 players were interested to see what's in the shop. Although they might not be suitable to use the equipment themselves, they could still purchase the equipment for their friends.

After all, the Hardcore of the Spectre Cavern was just too damn hard to clear. Furthermore, the Holy Tier equipment that is dropped by the bosses in that dungeon were all 'bound upon pickup'. Therefore, many Level 190 players would only look at Ethereal Tier equipment for the moment. Meanwhile, the Ethereal Equipment that Zhang Yang had to offer were all Level 220. Although these equipment would still be a little weaker than those

Level 170 Holy Tier equipment, they were not that weak. The players could still accept the difference.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's voice recording had attracted a substantial amount of customers to his new shop.

He also put up some rare potions on the shelves. That was because he just opened the new shop and he needed to advertise about his shop. He even put up some Transmuted potions on the shelves as well. Initially, the players came for the Ethereal Tier equipment. However, when they noticed the variety of potions, they instantly showed their interest at buying the potions as well. Well, Transmuted Potions were hard to come these days, after all. It did not take long before the shelves in the shops were emptied out. Those who missed the chance to buy the potions were inquiring about the arrival of new stocks. Well, it seemed that Zhang Yang managed to make his new shop extremely popular upon opening.

However, Zhang Yang could predict that his new shop would not have more customers than the old Little Merchandize Shop for over one year. However, when the number of Level 200 players increases in the later stage of the game, there would be more players coming to his new shop. At some point, the sales of the new shop would surpass the sales of the old shop. It would just be a matter of time.

When the entire population of the players reaches Level 200 and beyond, the Little Merchandize Shop in the main city would become cold and quiet.

Zhang Yang decided to give everyone a few days off. He also wanted to form a second fixed party, another party of 10 that would be powerful enough to act on their own.

However, he only had 4 members in his mind: Galileo, Ten Dusk, Female Raid Covent and Chen Xue Yao.

It made perfect sense for the first three names to be selected. As

for Chen Xue Yao, her level was still a little too low to be selected. Although Zhang Yang would bring her along to grind from time to time, she was only currently Level 142. She would be as good as dead if she follows Zhang Yang to battle against Level 230 monsters and above.

However, Chen Xue Yao was quite a talented player, herself. Judging by observing her performance, Zhang Yang believed that she could already take part in Class B League Championship. If she ever puts more effort into training herself better, she would be able to catch up to the standard of Daffodil Daydream soon!

Of course, part of it was because Zhang Yang was biased. Both of them were basically 'boyfriend and girlfriend'. Well, they were quite clingy to each other while at work. Although they had not been overwhelmed by the feeling to f\*ck, the both of them were having a dubious relationship. Well, they might just f\*ck each other sooner or later.

Zhang Yang gave Chen Xue Yao the Class A Snow Queen Inheritance. Well, she was initially a Cyromancer, after all. So Zhang Yang gave it to her based on his professional opinion. Other than that, he decided to give it to her because good ones do not simply let his own fertile water to flow into others' fields.

When Chen Xue Yao was collecting her Inheritance Fragments, Zhang Yang was the only one who was helping her. Well, Zhang Yang alone was more than enough to handle the bosses of the Inheritance Quests now. After all, Zhang Yang had become so powerful now that he could single-handedly kill one Ethereal boss without even trying.

After Chen Xue Yao acquired her Class A Inheritance, she could be considered as a top Tier player in the game now. The only thing that kept her from being so was because her level was just too low. Well, because of that, she could not wear any of the high-level equipment.



So, Zhang Yang brought her along to Kanjar to grind.

Currently, Chen Xue Yao was only Level 143. Upon arriving at Kanjar, her existence on the map was activated something similar to a {Mass Taunt}! A large number of monsters within the range of 2,000-meter radius from where the two of them stood were attracted by the aggro. The monsters were charging madly towards the two of them.

The feeling was great. Zhang Yang was thinking of bringing low-level players into high-level maps to grind in the future. No more troublesome luring!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and activated his {Surrogacy} on Chen Xue Yao, giving her the same Defence as he had on him. Although Zhang Yang would try his best to get the aggro of the monsters to fix on him, he might still lose out one or two of the monsters from his grip. By giving Chen Xue Yao a high Defence, even if monsters manage to hit her, she would not be killed in an instant.

With Zhang Yang's Attack power, all Normal Tier monsters were basically killed in one single hit by Zhang Yang. The amount of Experience Points that both of them got was shockingly tremendous!

Furthermore, it was really the best thing they could have hope for that every time they were done with one wave of monsters, they would only have to walk a few steps forwards before the next wave of monsters swarms up on them. The monsters were swarming up on Zhang Yang and Chen Xue Yao as if they were here just to get slaughtered by Zhang Yang. Therefore, Zhang Yang only needed to kill, kill, kill! Then, the both of them would only need to collect whatever amount of Experience Points that come at them.

In the beginning, he only intended to babysit Chen Xue Yao so that she could level up faster. However, the outcome of bringing

her for grinding was unexpectedly great. His Experience Bar was progressing at a f\*cking fast pace as well. If it wasn't because for the fact that much more Experience Points were needed for Level 200 player to level up, Zhang Yang could have leveled up once in every four days!

That was really motivating!

So, how come no one had ever tried to grind like this before?

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and revealed a smile on his face. Well, because he was the only one who had {Surrogacy}. So he was able to keep Chen Xue Yao alive. Or else, under the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, one gentle touch from any high level monsters would have killed her instantly. By then, it would not be possible for him to guide Chen Xue Yao in grinding.

After all, even Zhang Yang's Experience Bar was progressing extremely fast, Chen Xue Yao's Experience Bar was increasing at an even faster rate! She was able to earn additional Experience Points by killing monsters that were much higher level than her. She managed to level up once every day. People would definitely find it extremely hard to believe that, even if someone told the others about it!

Zhang Yang could not help to sigh. If only he had someone in his previous life to guide him like this, it would have made his life so much easier, then!

He gave everyone 7 days off. After that 7 days, she would be in the game for over 21 days. Meanwhile, throughout the 21 days, even though Chen Xue Yao could no longer level up once a day, she had already reached Level 157. If there was any competition that compares the speed of levelling up, she would have broken any record regarding that!

# Chapter 801: New Party Members

---

Over the next few days, Zhang Yang had assigned another 2 new members to the second party that he was working on.

Scorched Cloud, Human, Male, Level 197, Pyromancer, Possesses Class B Hysterical Monkey Inheritance.

Mini Piglet, Elf, Female, Level 195, Holy Knight, Possesses Class B Sand Inheritance.

Actually, the second party that Zhang Yang was working on already had a Holy Knight on it. Furthermore, the party seemed to be too weak with only a few of them there. So Zhang Yang decided to shuffle the members of the first party and the second party. He moved Endless Starlight, Hundred Shots and Fantasy Sweetheart to the second party. Then he moved Mini Piglet and Chen Xue Yao over to the first party.

By doing so, he managed to make sure that each of the parties has one Priest and one Holy Knight. Because of that, each party would have no problem at all at both single-unit healing and multiple-unit healing, allowing each party to adapt to a situation of a battle. In regard of Tankers, Ten Dusk was the only Tanker in the second party. So, he would need another Tanker with better equipment such as Endless Starlight to cover his \*ss.

Meanwhile, Endless Starlight was quite an outstanding Tanker alone. He could already be independent. He no longer needed to stay under the shadow of Zhang Yang!

Now, the first party had 9 members while the second party had 7 members. Their numbers would definitely be sufficient for the two parties to go up against a Holy Tier boss. However, when going up against an Ascended boss, 10 players might not be enough to take the boss head-on. The two parties would need to work closely together in order to defeat an Ascended Tier boss.

Therefore, the remaining 4 empty slots of the two parties must be filled up as soon as possible. However, it was really extremely difficult to find those who are good in both attitude and strength which could satisfy Zhang Yang. Although there were quite a number of them for Zhang Yang to pick from his guild, Zhang Yang could still feel that there were something missing in them that prevented him from picking any of them. Well, he best take his own sweet time at determining whether a person is worth hiring before jumping to conclusions.

Meanwhile, he assigned Chen Xue Yao to the first party, planning to expose her to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang did not expect too much out of it. These three ladies and Luo Yu Rou could have formed a complete team to start a mahjong match on a square table. That would be more than enough for him.

As for Yu Li, she would only serve as the mistress to Zhang Yang's affair. Well, Zhang Yang could satisfy his idea that 'the grass is always greener on the other side of the fence'.

There was only one last thing Zhang Yang knew from his past life about the future of 'God's Miracle' --- The Demon's Descent.

The background theme of 'God's Miracle' had always been about Spectres and Demons threatening to destroy the entire world. Since the officials had already introduced the 'Spectre Invasion' patch to the game before, it would not take too long before the officials would release the 'Demon's Descent' patch. However, the 'Demon's Descent' patch never got the chance to be released in Zhang Yang's previous life before Zhang Yang was reincarnated back to 5 years before he died. Therefore, he basically did not have much prior knowledge about the patch.

However, he only needed a rough idea about it. That would be sufficient for him to get himself ready for the upcoming events.

Unlike the Spectre's Invasion, because the Spectre were 'born and brought' up in this world, they only needed to taint the sky

and the land before they could begin with their invasion on the world. Meanwhile, the demons did not belong to this world in the first place. They would need to send a small part of their strike force over to our world first to open the portal that connected the demon world and the human world. By then, the demon army would only be able to enter this world to launch their invasions on the humans.

Therefore, the Demon's Descent patch would set the story in a way where the demons would succeed at creating portals that allow them to come forth to this world with their massive demon army. Meanwhile, the players would need to fend the demons off and destroy the portals to cut off the advancement of the demon army. After that, the main objective of the players would be destroying the demons that managed to descend on the land of humans.

However, the Demon's Descent patch would not be triggered by the players' levels. It would be in the form of a quest. Players would need to search it out in order to trigger the quest.

Rumors had it that the players who manage to trigger that quest would get a tremendous amount of rewards. Zhang Yang only knew that the players would be teleported to a dungeon-type region. The region would have several Ascended Tier bosses for the players to slay. So, the players would not have to fight over the bosses.

Zhang Yang did not work on triggering the main story quest immediately. After all, his level had not reached the required level yet. According to the little information he retrieved, the bosses at the highest levels would be Level 240. It would be a little too stressful for the players to challenge the bosses with their current levels. Well, they were just reaching Level 200 and beyond that, after all. The level gap suppression function would be much for the players to handle. So, there was no need for any of the players to rush.

Zhang Yang's current main focus was to guide Chen Xue Yao in grinding. After all, he would also be earning Experience Points at a very fast pace as well. So the situation would be like killing two birds with one stone.

On the other side, the shooting of Luo Yu Rou's new movie was currently at full swing. They were borrowing the facilities of 'God's Miracle' to shoot their movie. Meanwhile, she had also changed her initial name to Daybreak Phoenix. Well, that name implied that she was rising from the ashes.

Her main objective was to seduce all men in the entire world. Of course, she would still be walking on the path of sexiness in the new movie. She was nicknamed as the goddess of the otakus for a reason. Her understanding towards the term 'sexiness' was extremely deep. Every smile she threw, every hand she waved, and the way she always twisted her waist was just enchantingly sexy. Even her winks were seductive!

Although 'God's Miracle' could provide every player a chance to be handsome and pretty, 'sexy' is an intangible trait, a charm that cannot be replaced merely by a pretty face. It could be foreseen that when the movie premieres in cinemas across the entire nation, this Daybreak Phoenix would become the new Goddess of Sexiness.

Meanwhile, the belly of Luo Yu Rou had finally begun to bulge up. She also started to wear loose clothing for pregnant women. Because of her pregnancy, she had suffered quite a number of ordeals. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was the one to get the blame, after all. So, she would flip her eyes backward at him from time to time. She even bit Zhang Yang out of the blue from time to time.

Wei Yan Er was very reverent toward educating a new life. She would kneel by the side of the pregnant Luo Yu Rou and start communicating with the little new life. However, the personality of the little brat had always been unreliable and strange. She treated the unborn baby like a pet! Then, she also attempted to teach the baby her mischievous and naughty theories. Zhang Yang

and the others could not help to laugh out loud. Well, she is definitely going to corrupt the little baby!

The pace of Chen Xue Yao's levelling up was shockingly fast, and everyone was shocked to know about it. In just a month, she managed to level up from Level 157 to Level 191. Well, only Zhang Yang would be able to create such a miracle.

However, after she reached Level 190, Chen Xue Yao's grinding pace was beginning to slow down a little. Well, she would need to take a step at a time, now. There was no way for her to grind like crazy anymore.

At the same time, Zhang Yang had reached Level 203. He was only one level before Level 204, which was the level that he had before he died in his previous life. However, he had attained Level 203 more than 1 year earlier than he had in his previous life.

The Professional League Championship had also reached the end of its fourth season. In the first three seasons, Silky Soft Battle Team had earned over 8 points to be number one. Meanwhile, the Crimson Rage Battle Team managed to score 5 points, making them the runner-up of the competition. Meanwhile, the Eternal Flame Battle Team had scored over 5 points as well, however, they were placed as third in place because Crimson Rage Battle Team managed to score some additional points from other aspects of the competition. Well, the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team only managed to score 2 points, placing them as fourth in place.

Because only two battle teams would be able to take part in the battle. Even if Silky Soft Battle Team is squeezed out of the top three in the competition, they would still be able to acquire one of the openings to join the battles. However, it still remained unknown as to which battle team would be able to secure the second opening to the battles. Theoretically speaking, the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team still stood a chance at entering and securing the opening. However, their chance was almost zero.

At the early stages of the competition, Zhang Yang and the others almost removed themselves from all matches. Currently, they were 7th in place. So there was no hope for them to acquire any of the top three positions. Therefore, whoever who performs better would be able to secure the second opening to entering the upcoming competition. Therefore, Crimson Rage Battle Team and Eternal Flame Battle Team would need to compete against each other to get the spot.

Currently, the Eternal Flame Battle Team was in the first place. They had one additional win over the Crimson Rage Battle Team which was second in place. However, the Eternal Flame could not avoid clashing with the Silky Soft Battle Team on the final three rounds of the competition. They would have to battle the Crimson Rage Battle Team head on for one time.

Although the Silky Soft Battle Team had secured one of the two openings to the upcoming competition, Zhang Yang would never go soft on the Eternal Flame. With their current power level, the Silky Soft Battle Team would have a 90% chance of winning the battle. So, it would all come down to the performance of Crimson Rage Battle Team and Eternal Flame. Whoever who does better would take the second opening.

Zhang Yang decided to trigger the main story quest 'Demon's Descent' after the finals of the Professional League Championship. That was because there was more than 80% to 90% chance that the ones winning the finals of the championship would get the reward of +levels. Furthermore, with one month of grinding, Zhang Yang would stand high chance of reaching Level 210 by the end of it.

By then, there would not be any Level GapSuppressions anymore when he would encounter any Level 240 bosses. Bosses that get spawned nowadays had HP Recovery Skills on them. If players are to be affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, they would suffer greatly while battling the bosses. Just imagine this. After all the effort has been spent to reduce the HP bar of the



boss, the boss would just recover their HP back up just because the players were restricted by the Level Gap Suppression of the game. How would it be possible for the players to defeat any boss under that circumstance, then? F\*ck that!

During the Professional League Championship battle, Zhang Yang and the others did not hold back at all when they were going up against the Eternal Flame. They were able to defeat the Eternal Flame by 5:0. Because of that, the accumulated points of Eternal Flame was now the same as the points that the Crimson Rage Battle Team had. Therefore, the two battle teams would need to compete against each other by next week.

Zhang Yang naturally hoped that the Crimson Rage could win. However, things did not go according to his prediction. Well, 5 out of 10 members of Crimson Rage Battle Team were absent. Because of that, the Eternal Flame won the battle with ease. After the match, Zhang Yang found out that the 5 members of Crimson Rage Battle Team were absent due to food poisoning! He found out about it through Snow Seeker.

Although there was no way to prove it, Zhang Yang knew that it was most probably because Zhong Xiu Hua did something behind everyone's back.

Well, that fellow was infamous for winning by any means necessary.

Although the championship still had one round remaining, the opponents of Crimson Rage Battle Team and Eternal Flame Battle Team were not powerful at all. So, the outcome of the battles had been confirmed since the beginning. This time, the Eternal Flame Battle Team would be the one who going to the next level together with the Silky Soft Battle Team.

Although Zhang Yang was extremely uncomfortable with the outcome of the competition, he had no choice but to accept it. However, the World League Championship would be filled with

top Tier players from all over the world. At their current power level, the Eternal Flame would not even last one round.

The World League Championship would be held in Rio de Janeiro, a renowned city in Brazil. The championships would be held on the 22nd of January. Everyone had half a month to get themselves ready.

Zhang Yang had included Chen Xue Yao, Scorching Cloud and Mini Piglets in the Battle Team as well. He did that not because he hoped to keep an element of surprise for the opponents. He did it because the three of them would be able to acquire the +level reward if they are able to secure the champion seat for the World League Championship. If that works, the three of them would be able to instantly improve themselves.

As expected, during the final round of the Professional League Championship, Eternal Flames succeeded in acquiring the Champion seat for the fourth season of the championship. They won by scoring a total of 8 points. So, they would be joining the Silky Soft Battle Team in the World League Championships in Rio.

On 17th January, Zhang Yang and his gang of 10 had bought their plane tickets to Brazil. Then, they departed for the country to join the World League Championship.

Rio was once the main capital of Brazil. At that time of the year, the temperature of the place was just pleasant. The beaches were filled with sexy scenes. The statue of 'Christ the Redeemer' seemed to be welcoming them with 'open hands'. All of the sceneries combined could really give a person traveling from foreign land a feel of the exotic atmosphere of Rio.

"Little Yang, it seems like its our time to strike back on them!" Fatty Han came along with his own money. His face was filled with murderous intent when he saw the members of Eternal Flame walking into the hotel.

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang nodded.

An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. Well, Zhong Xiu Hua would have the absolute power to protect himself in his own country. However, the situation became totally different, the moment he set foot on the soil of another country. So what could happen next, then?

# Chapter 802: Tesseract

---

Something as famous as the football team of Brazil would be the local gangsters of Brazil. They were so bold that they were daring enough to raid the police station! They even dared to break their gang members out of prison! Even the Italian Mafia would have to stare with their eyes wide open.

Meanwhile, tragic incidents tend to happen to those who do not really understand the place, especially the tourist from other countries.

The 10 members of the Eternal Flame were gathering up to have some fun before the competition. That was when they stumbled across the lair of local gangsters. Well, it wasn't their intention to walk right into the lair of gangsters in the first place though. After a small conflict, Zhong Xiu Hua and his goons were all taken. They let Longrich go, just because they wanted him to come back with some ransoms. However, even though all of them were saved by the end of it, Zhong Xiu Hua and the other 8 were poked in their \*sses for two long days while they were held by the gangsters. That left a permanent scar in each of their memories, for sure.

When Zhong Xiu Hua and the others were escorted back to the hotel, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han looked at each other with a smile. They seemed to understand each other through their eyes.

Well, these two had been adding fuel to the flame right behind everyone's back. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had secretly offered 1,000,000 American Dollars to the local gangsters for them to f\*ck Zhong Xiu Hua up. Well, a million dollars for kidnapping a few foreigners sounded like a deal too great to be true. That amount of money would be more than enough to send the local gangsters to raiding the police station. To them, as long as they are not kidnapping anyone related to their own country's government, they would even be daring enough to kidnap the Queen of England!

Meanwhile, Zhong Xiu Hua and his goons were poked in their asses for more than just a couple of times. Those who poked their asses were also carrying Sexual Transmitted Disease and AIDS. The worst part about it, was that they had poked them without condoms! Although Zhong Xiu Hua and his goons swore to keep their mouths shut about this incident, they would still have to go to the hospital for medical attention after they get back to their own country.

When that happens, Zhang Yang would only need to expose Zhong Xiu Hua's Medical Record to the public, if he wants to destroy Zhong Xiu Hua's reputation and name.

Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was not the only one who knew how to frame people. Fatty Han was once involved with the gangsters before he joined 'God's Miracle'. So if he suddenly decides to play rough, he would be able to outperform Zhong Xiu Hua in a more professional manner.

Zhong Xiu Hua could only swallow his grudge quietly himself this time. Although he is a prince back in China, he had no power to influence the affairs that happen in Brazil. Furthermore, this incident was really embarrassing. He would really want to handle it as quietly as he could. If this thing ever gets out to public, not only would he become the laughing stock of the entire nation, he would also drag his father down to the mud of shame with him.

That night, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were drinking to themselves in the hotel room. Both of them were laughing out loud whenever they spoke about Zhong Xiu Hua's miserable experience. Well, by the looks of it, it seemed like they coincidentally went straight into the lair of the gangsters and got themselves f\*cked. Zhong Xiu Hua would not be able to link Zhang Yang to the incident.

However, that incident happened because Zhang Yang was very much involved indeed. Zhang Yang could not help to smile vaguely whenever he thought of it.

Well, that little ‘hiccup’ did not affect the progress of the competition at all. The finals of the championship were held as scheduled, on 22nd January. The opening ceremony was held on schedule as well. As the champion of the last season’s championship, the Silky Soft Battle Team was the first team to perform on stage. Their first opponent would be the Pepsi Cola Battle Team from the Australia Region.

Upon handing in the line-up list for the match, Zhang Yang traded the [Book of Revelation] over to the little brat who was the first to walk into the arena.

That item could add a boost of 50% damage of the person who holds it. Although she was forbidden from using the special function to resurrect in the arena, an increase in her Attack power was good enough for her to slaughter up her opponent. Other than that, the three ‘enhanced Skills’ needed 24 hours to cooldown. The little brat would not be able to enjoy those perks as well.

Wei Yan Er’s damage output was extremely powerful in the first place. She became even more threatening after she got boosted by the [Book of Revelation]. It did not take long before she slaughtered her opponent up and claimed victory over the first match.

Upon leaving the arena, Wei Yan Er traded the [Book of Revelation] to Sun Xin Yu who was going to walk into the arena for the second match. After Sun Xin Yu won the match, she passed the [Book of Revelation] to Han Ying Xue... because the item was not bound upon pickup, they could take turns at using the item.

5:0 Silky Soft Battle Team was able to secure the first win of the championship with their absolute strength. Meanwhile, the official was forced to implement one more new rule --- all items on the contestants would be bound to themselves once they enter the arena’s preparation room. They would not be able to trade items to other players when they’re inside.

Meanwhile, the Eternal Flames that carried the eternal butt-poke memories were soaking in depression together. They were wiped out cleanly by their opponents. Because of that, they had created a new record, the worst result of China Region in the championship since the past 3 times.

However, Zhang Yang and his gang had put their eyes on the rewards of the champion position itself.

This time, the rewards were extremely attractive. Other than the 5,000,000 American Dollars, every single one of the champion battle team would be able to receive a +3 level reward. They would also be given a chance to draw an item. The best equipment Tier in the lucky draw would be an Ascended Tier equipment, while the lousiest would be a Holy Tier equipment. No matter what, the rewards were handsome and well worth it.

Other than that, the MVP of the finals would get one extra chance to draw another item.

Zhang Yang and his gang managed to progress from the quarterfinals into the semifinals, and from the semifinals into the finals!

The Silky Soft Battle Team was progressing towards the final like a hot knife cutting through butter. Even the powerful battle teams such as Hell Family, Land of Savages and Dark Palace only managed to last until the team battle before they get eliminated by the Silky Soft Battle Team. Every match with the Silky Soft ended with them scoring 2:0 as the final score. It was obvious that the Lone Desert Smoke could still dominate in regards of top Tier power level!

By the end of it, the Silky Soft won the championship as the Champion once again. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang managed to get the MVP title, at last. In other words, he would have two chances at the lucky draw.

Chen Xue Yao, Scorching Cloud, and Mini Piglet also got the

chance to take part in the lucky draw. However, Scorching Cloud was completely out of luck. With a 50% chance of acquiring an Ascended Tier equipment, he only managed to get a Holy Tier equipment. Meanwhile, Chen Xue Yao and Mini Piglet had both acquired an Ascended Tier equipment for themselves out of the lucky draw.

Well, Scorching Cloud was not the only one who was out of luck. It seemed that the name 'Silky Soft' was a little low on luck, recently. Lost Dream and Hundred Shots only got a Holy Tier equipment. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies managed to get an Ascended Tier equipment. Everyone could not help to feel superstitious for the moment.

As the captain of the Battle Team, Zhang Yang was the last one to put step up for the lucky draw. He kept praying in his heart that he would get lucky. Then, he pressed the round button on the stage and let fate decide.

The big screen behind him immediately began to flash. Then the indicator stopped on one of the boxes onscreen. After that, the screen zoomed into the box that the indicator had stopped on.

[Thor's Helmet] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +43,128

Agility: +3,208

{Level 7 Socket 1}

{Level 7 Socket 2}

{Level 7 Socket 3}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 86,250 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,312 damage when being hit.



Required Level: 220

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Well, it seemed that the gods finally felt pity on the Silky Soft Battle Team. Zhang Yang did not share the same fate as Lost Dream and the other men. He finally broke the curse and acquired one piece of Ascended Tier equipment.

As Zhang Yang was the MVP of the final, he got the chance to make another draw.

Upon pressing the round button again, the big screen behind him immediately began to flash once again. Then the indicator stopped on one of the boxes on screen again. After that, the screen zoomed in on the box that the indicator had stopped on. Everything seemed to be repeat itself, however, the indicator stopped on a different box this time.

The item that appeared on the big screen was labelled with the name [Tesseract]. However, the details of the item were not shown on the big screen. It seemed that the only way of knowing what the item can do would be by signing into the game and studying the item up close.

The championship was over. Zhang Yang and his gang decided to take a few days off to enjoy the beach. After that, they went back to China.

This trip to Brazil was a perfect one. Not only they were able to win as a Champions, they also 'hurt' Zhong Xiu Hua big time. Meanwhile, that was just the beginning of everything. Now, all Zhang Yang needed to do was to expose the fact that some spoilt rich brat had been contracted with some sort of sexually transmitted disease. That should be enough to destroy his good name for good. That should force that f\*cker to take the high road and commit some crimes that he could not walk away from. By then, Zhang Yang would be able to watch from the sidelines while benefitting from Zhong Xiu Hua's fall. He would be able to finally

take that f\*cker out of the picture for good.

After logging back into the game, Zhang Yang's body flashed three times. He instantly got elevated from Level 204 to Level 207, Meanwhile, the rewards that he acquired from the lucky draw were currently lying quietly in his inventory, waiting for him.

He quickly equipped the [Thor's Helmet]. His other attributes immediately got boosted up massively. Under the support of his {Vitality Aura}, his HP had reached 4,200,000. Meanwhile, his Attack had increased up to, ranging between 414,679 and 474,359. When Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} is present, Zhang Yang's insanely high Attack would increase by 10% again!

After that, he took out the [Tesseract] to begin studying it.

[Tesseract] (Special Item)

Use: Combines two equipment of the same type into one better equipment. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Required Level: 200

Bound upon pickup.

Oh? So this item can combine two equipment to form a new one which is more powerful than the two?

Zhang Yang quickly checked on the rules and regulations of the combine function of the cube.

Number one, there is a certain risk in combining the equipment. The success rate of combining is not always 100%. Meanwhile, the rate of success would depend on the matching rate of the two equipment. For example, if one combines a pair of shoes with a pair of gloves, even if the fail rate of combining them would not be 100%, it would still be 99%!

Other than that, the Type of the equipment was extremely important as well. For instance Cloth Armor should be paired with another cloth Armor. Leather Armor should be paired with

another Leather Armor. Well, different types of armor seemed to be highly incompatible.

Meanwhile, combining two equipment with different Tiers would result in a high chance of failure as well.

Once you failed, you'll lose both equipments.

Upon a successful attempt, the players would have 20% rate of improving the Tier of the equipment and a 80% rate to enhance the attributes of the equipment. However, the sad case about this [Tesseract] was that the players would not be able to improve Holy Tier, Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment. That being said, players would not be able to get Ascended Tier equipment by combining two Holy Tier equipment. The best that this [Tesseract] could do was to enhance the Holy Tier, Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment.

If the two equipment had different levels and the combining process is a success, there would be only two outcomes: Number one, if the equipment gets an improvement on its Tier, then the level of the newly formed equipment would follow the level of the equipment with the lower level. Number two, if the equipment did not get a Tier upgrade, then the level of the new equipment would be based on the level of the equipment which was higher.

Zhang Yang was very eager to try it out. He took out two Ethereal Tier gauntlets. Both of them were Level 180 Heavy Metal gauntlets. When he put the two equipment into the [Tesseract], the system immediately notified him with a message.

‘Ding! You’re about to combine [Obscured Lunar Gloves] and [Dark Putrefying Gloves]. The success rate is 70%. Do you wish to continue?’

Continue.

Instantly, the [Tesseract] began to radiate in a flash of colorful blinding light. The flash of light was shining into the surroundings

like neon lights, for 10 seconds.

‘Ding! You’ve succeeded at combining [Obscured Lunar Gloves] and [Dark Putrefying Gloves]! You’ve acquired [Obscured Lunar Dark Putrefying Gloves]!’

[Obscured Lunar Dark Putrefying Gloves (Enhancement +1)]  
(Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +320

Vitality: +4,400

Strength: +1,500

Agility: +650

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,800 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 8%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,132 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 180

Zhang Yang made a comparison and got what he wanted to know. If a successful fusion of two equipment did not improve the Tier of the combined equipment, then the new equipment would acquire a 10% increase in all of its attributes.

Other than that, if one of the equipment was an Attack-type while the other was a Defence-type, the combined new equipment would combine the two types together as well. The only thing that remained unknown was, if the two equipment of Attack-type and Defence-type were combined successfully, how would the attributes turn out to be, then?

The [Tesseract] had a one hour cooldown. So Zhang Yang could only do another experiment one hour after his current attempt.

## Chapter 803: Baa'ljilr the Imposter

---

One hour in the game is equal to 20 minutes in real life. Zhang Yang had spent over 10 days studying the [Tesseract]. After combining junk over 500 to 600 times, he finally got a rough idea on how the thing worked.

The lower the quality of the equipment used for the combination, the higher the chance that the Tier of the new equipment combined would improve. For instance, by combining two Black-Steel Tier equipment, the players would get approximately a 70% chance to improve the Tier of the new equipment to Green-Copper Tier. Meanwhile, combining two Green-Copper Tier equipment would grant players approximately 60% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Gray-Silver Tier. As for the others, combining two Gray-Silver Tier equipment would grant players approximately 50% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Yellow-Gold Tier. Combining two Yellow-Gold Tier equipment would grant players approximately 40% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Violet-Platinum Tier. Combining two Violet-Platinum Tier equipment would grant players approximately 30% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Mythical Tier. Combining two Mythical Tier equipment would grant players approximately 20% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Ethereal Tier. Last but not least, combining two Ethereal Tier equipment would grant players approximately a 10% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Holy Tier.

Zhang Yang tightened his teeth and used two of the Holy Tier equipment that he had acquired from clearing Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern as the materials for the combination process. By the end of it, he was surprised by the outcome. He actually only managed to get one equipment with both offensive and defensive stats. Although the equipment had the Special that reduces

Required Level by 20 levels, it was still an unfavorable outcome for him.

Well, the Holy Tier equipment that comes out from the dungeon would be bound upon pickup. Furthermore, only players who reach the Required Level of the dungeon could enter the dungeon. Also, being eligible to enter the dungeon would also mean that the equipment acquired from the bosses could be equipped immediately on the spot. So, whether or not the equipment had the Special that reduces the Required Level by 20 to 30 levels, it would not really matter that much anymore.

Other than that, the combined equipment would stay 'bound upon pickup'. So, there was no way that Zhang Yang could sell the equipment to anyone! What's worse was that if he gets an equipment that was 'bound upon pickup' by combining one equipment that has 'bound upon pickup' function with another equipment that does not have 'bound upon pickup' function, his inventory would soon be full of 'rubbish'.

However, this [Tesseract] had proved its usefulness. At least the combined equipment would still have the Special that reduces Required Level by 20 levels. After all, only equipment that was dropped by super bosses in every map would have such a Special on each of them. Because of that, the equipment allowed players to equip them earlier on so that their power level could improve on the spot.

Even though the [Tesseract] could not improve the Tier of the equipment that goes beyond Holy Tier, it could still be used to enhance that powerful equipment. Well, now that all of them could not even collect a full set of Ascended Tier equipment, how would they be able to spare some Ascended Tier equipment to enhance the equipped ones?

Therefore, they could only consider enhancing their high Tier equipment when they finally collect a full set of their equipment.

Although he had spent most of his time figuring out the function of the [Tesseract], Zhang Yang only took tens of seconds to combine the equipment once every hour. That did not delay his grinding at all. Later on, Zhang Yang assembled Chen Xue Yao, Mini Piglet, and Scorching Cloud to aid them at grinding. He wanted to boost their levels to Level 200 as soon as possible. By doing so, the three of them would be able to join the main story quest 'Demon's Descent' as well.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was also running around the entire map, hoping that he could discover the method of unsealing Felice's third seal. By doing so, he would be able to improve Felice's Tier up to Ascended Tier! Unfortunately, he had not been able to locate any locations that would trigger Felice to feel something even after he had gone through almost every corner of all Level 240 maps.

Well, there was a possibility that the location to unseal Felice's third seal would be located in maps beyond Level 240.

In real life, the private investigator that Zhang Yang hired came back to him with something he had been wanting to have --- Zhong Xiu Hua's Medical Record and the photos that showed him leaving the hospital.

Zhang Yang immediately contacted one of his members from overseas and told him to post all the information on the net. The post had attracted quite a lot of attention. After all, the title of the post was something like 'An infamous spoilt rich brat involved in prostitution and got Aids-ed!'. Well, they had photos on the net to prove it as well.

Well, speaking of which, Zhong Xiu Hua had been quite passive in the past. If the post did not appear, the people in China Region might not even get to know that the person who was about to become the president would have such a son hidden somewhere. Of course, that could be because Zhong Xiu Hua's father was either protecting his son or himself. Usually, no one would know the sons

and daughters of the person who was going to run the country.

However, thanks to the appearance of this post, a large number of people began to investigate the identity of Zhong Xiu Hua. After all, the post had quite a lot of clues about his identity, which made people wonder. Once the curiosity of the people was triggered, they would not stop until they finally found out about the truth. By the end of it, the identity of Zhong Xiu Hua was no longer being concealed.

Instantly, an uproar had been set upon the public opinion. Everyone was beginning to discuss the topic that appeared earlier on.

That... was truly a disgrace to the country!

Zhang Yang could no longer imagine Zhong Xiu Hua's current facial expression. Well, he must have looked like a burned pig right now. He might be throwing things and breaking stuff all day long after the news was spread across the world. Truth to be told, it was not really a hopeless situation for Zhong Xiu Hua even he had been infected with sexually transmitted disease and AIDs. Though he might need to spend some real time to get treatment, However, that would have given him a hell of a time to be mentally tortured!

It would be unwise to go up against an educated hoodlum!

Zhang Yang humphed lightly. Well, if he could take Zhong Xiu Hua off the chessboard, it would be a big accomplishment that would even be considered as committing a good deed for the public. That should be enough for the gods to bless him with a fat baby son in the future.

Thinking of which, he immediately smiled. The only thing that kept him unhappy was because Luo Yu Rou was not willing to do an MRI scan to identify the gender of the baby. Zhang Yang could not understand it at all. Either it's a boy or a girl, the result had been confirmed the moment she was pregnant. So, why the secrecy then> Because of her, Zhang Yang could not calm his anxious heart



or the urge to know whether it would be a boy or a girl.

Another month had passed. Zhang Yang had finally succeeded in aiding Chen Cue Yao and the other two new members at reaching Level 200! Well, he paid a price for babysitting them as well. He was currently Level 207 only. Sun Xin Yu and the others were about to catch up to his current level. However, he did not really mind it that much even if they had surpassed him at the moment. Well, one of the reasons was because there were no rewards for the first player to reach Level 210 or Level 220.

Furthermore, he was finally done with babysitting the new members to grind. So he would be able to grind like crazy for the upcoming days and secure back his Number One seat in leveling up.

Because he only had some vague memories of it, so he went over to the Hannua Town alone. Well, in Zhang Yang's previous life, the quest that triggers the 'Demon's Descent' was found on that map. However, Zhang Yang had no idea at all on how to trigger the quest or which specific spot to trigger the quest.

Hannua Town was a heaven for the dwarfs and the goblins. It was really difficult to imagine the two vertically-challenged races staying together in harmony.

Zhang Yang began to clear out the quests available in the town. However, he was only requested to slay a few monsters or to gather some mining ores from the mining sites. There was no difficulty or whatsoever for him. Well, of course. He had also earned quite a substantial amount of Experience Points. Furthermore, the quests that he completed did not have any follow-ups at all. For the next few days, Zhang Yang had spoken to almost all NPCs with an exclamation mark on top of their heads. So he was about to run out of quests to do on that map!

"Hey, human. Help me deliver this batch of goods to Baa'ljilr. He is located by the west side of the town. I shall reward you with one

gold piece if you complete my request." A goblin raised his head and looked at Zhang Yang. At that moment, Zhang Yang had completed seven delivery quests consecutively.

If he had known how to trigger the 'Demon's Descent', he would not have to clear out so many quests on the same map. Zhang Yang would have slashed the goblin to his death by then. This god damn goblin had really used him well to deliver stuff to others. He had already sent Zhang Yang back and forth multiple times. Now, the goblin was requesting that Zhang Yang get over to the far end of another map which was 7 maps from here! Zhang Yang flew for over two full days before he had finally completed the delivery quest. And now, he was about to be used by the goblin again.

All he could do was to endure it.

Zhang Yang took the goods over and placed them in his inventory. Then, he left town on the back of Whitey. Upon exiting the town, he switched the Phoenix pet out and flew towards the west. It did not take long before he saw a small valley by the mountain side. That was the location where he was requested to drop the goods.

There was a lake at the middle of the valley. However, the lake was dark. The water seemed so dark that the lake was filled with black ink! Yuck! The water also had a kind of fishy smell! Yuck yuck! By the side of the lake, there was a wooden house. There was a simple dock with a small boat floating on the water right in front of the door of the house. A human, an old man was sitting on his rocking chair. He was fishing by the dirty lake with his fishing rod, calm and relaxed.

[Baa'ljilr the Imposter] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 230

HP: 303,150

Note: According to someone in Hannua Town, they have seen

that Baa'ljilr turning into a dragon. Therefore, even the goblins that treasured treasures over their own lives were not daring enough to deal with Baa'ljilr personally. They were terrified that Baa'ljilr would swallow them alive!

Zhang Yang hopped down from his mount and walked towards Baa'ljilr. Then he said, "Old man, you've got a delivery!"

Baa'ljilr turned his head around and looked at Zhang Yang for a brief moment, then he said, "Just leave it on the doorstep and off you go!"

Zhang Yang followed the instruction and walked up to the doorstep. Just as he was about to take the item out form his inventory, he suddenly heard a long roar that shook the surroundings.

Followed by the sound of a huge wave of water whipping from the lake, a dark blue western dragon suddenly leaped out from the lake. In an instant, fishy-smelling water sprinkles that were splashed out from the lake began to rain down from the sky as if it was raining.

That western dragon was not too huge. It was only approximately 30 meters long and 10 meters tall. The size of the dragon was about the size of the dragon that the Dragon Knights ride back at White Jade Castle. Judging from the size of a dragon type, a dragon that is 30 meters long is still not yet a fully grown dragon. It could only be considered as a dragon youngling.

[Black Dragon Andomark] (Elite, Dragon)

Level 235

HP: 117,500,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,394 – 158,394 (Based on Melee Attack, however, causes Chaos Damage)

## Skills:

[Dragon Wing Strike]: Uses its wings and tail to sweep the surroundings. Other than the conical area right in front of the dragon, all enemy targets within the range of 30-meter radius will receive 120,000 Physical Damage.

[Dragon's Dominion]: Affects all enemy targets within the range of 30-meter radius with Chaos Effect with its Dragon's domineering aura. Targets will run around aimlessly. Lasts for 8 seconds.

[Dragon Claw Strike]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: Andomark was once a gigantic and powerful dragon. However, ever since it was heavily wounded, it had never recovered to full power.

The moment when the black dragon appeared, it immediately charged towards Zhang Yang, after letting out an intimidating roar. With its gigantic wings flapping at full speed, the air was swept around as if Zhang Yang was standing in the middle of a tornado!

"Aiya, it seems that this old man has fished up something unimaginably scary!" Baa'ljilr was still teasing while he was sitting his \*ss on a chair. He seemed to be enjoying the show from the side lines. His eyes were filled with ferociousness while he was looking at what was going on.

Zhang Yang did not get infuriated. Instead, he felt joyful. It seemed that he had finally found the quest that could trigger the 'Demon's Descent'!

"Little Phoenix, Felice, come out now!" Zhang Yang cried out loud and summoned Felice and Phoenix pet out into the open.

A legendary beast versus another legendary beast! Zhang Yang did not falter at all! There was no reason for him to get scared!

The Phoenix pet and the gigantic dragon seemed to be mortal enemies. The moment when Phoenix pet was summoned out, it began to open up its mouth and whip its enemy with its flaming tongue on the dragon. At the same time, Felice had transformed into her Dragonhawk form. She levitated into the sky and started bombarding the dragon with her {Fire Missiles}.

Speaking of Attack power, Andomark could only be as powerful as an Ethereal Tier. However, the Phoenix pet had become as powerful as the Ascended Tier! They were on completely different levels!

‘-128,034!’

‘-347,161!’

One could deal approximately 120,000 damage while the other one could deal up to approximately 340,000 damage. The difference was too obvious! However, Andomark was still an Elite Tier monster, after all. It had over 100 million HP on it. On the other hand, the Phoenix pet only had over 4,400,000 HP even after it got support from the {Vitality Aura}. So in terms of HP amount, the difference between the two of them was quite obvious as well.

Although the Attack power of the Black Dragon was far weaker than the Phoenix pet, it had the advantage of having a super high amount of HP. If the two huge birds ever face off each other head-on, Phoenix pet would lose by the end of the battle.

However, the Phoenix pet was merely an additional damage output for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was actually much more powerful than the Phoenix poet himself! With every slash landing on the black dragon, Zhang Yang looked like the ancient God of War. Every swing of his axe left a cold and sharp mark in the air as if they broke through the dimension itself. He managed to cause a tremendous amount of damage to Andomark.

# Chapter 804: Death Source Stone

---

Following the improvement on the Tier of the weapon, it just kept looking better and better. With every solid hit on the target, the hit would look like it had broken the dimension itself. The dimension was cut open and block holes were seen floating in the middle of the air. The visual effect of the scene was just gorgeous.

‘-3,407,176!’

Zhang Yang could deal approximately 3,400,000 damage with each normal attack.

Huh? He did not even use his Skills yet. So how did he deal so much damage with his normal attacks then?

Upon taking a closer look at his battle logs, he finally noticed that his normal attack had triggered the special effect of the axe! That allowed him to deal 8 times of his initial damage!

The special effect of the axe was not easy to trigger at all. Since Zhang Yang picked up the axe, the Special Effect had only been triggered over 10 times. The rate of triggering was extremely low to the point that people would just ignore the description of the special effect. However, that was because the special effect was a little too oppressive once it triggers. If the rate is quite frequent, it would become too oppressive that the game would become unbalanced. How could you expect the monsters and the players to survive against the person with the axe, then?!

Judging from an extreme perspective, Zhang Yang’s normal attacks could trigger the special effect that could cause 8 times his initial damage. The special effect would also cause 10 times the initial damage that his {Rising Dragon Strike} could deal! The special effect of the axe could also cause 3 times of the initial damage that Zhang Yang’s Critical Hit and {Lucky Strike} could deal!

Although there was no telling if the weapon's special effect and the {Rising Dragon Strike} could stack or not, however, the Critical Hit and the {Lucky Strike} would definitely let Zhang Yang deal a damage that would be 6 times higher than he initially could. That two could stack, after all. Even though Zhang Yang could deal a damage that would be 18 times higher than the initial damage he could deal, based on the stacking of his {Dragon Rising Strike} with the special effect of the axe, he would be capable of causing 108 times of the initial damage that he could deal with his normal attack! That would be equal to causing an additional 10800% Melee Attack with his Skill attack!

With Zhang Yang's current basic Attack of 400,000, he would be able to deal 40,000,000 damage with each attack! If he just activates his God of War Transformation and the discussed circumstances work, then he could become capable of dealing more than a hundred million damage!

Obviously, the system could not allow that to happen!

Therefore, no matter if it is the 8 times damage of the weapon or the 10 times damage of the {Rising Dragon Strike}, the rate of triggering them was extremely low. So, it would be impossible for the two to be triggered at the same time. It would be even more impossible for Critical Hit and the {Lucky Strike} to be triggered at the same time as well.

Andomark was inflicted with massive damage. So it instantly roared out into the sky in rage. A shapeless wave of dragon's aura was beginning to expand into the surroundings. That was the monster's {Dragon's Dominion}! Zhang Yang, Phoenix pet and Felice were running around in random directions like flies without heads! They were afflicted by the Terror Effect!

However, it was just a futile attempt made by the gigantic dragon. After all, the monster had only 1,000,000,000 HP. That was not even nearly enough to go up against Zhang Yang alone. Now, the gigantic dragon had to face the wrath of three! The three

of them combined their firepower and focused their attacks on the poor giant lizard with wings. It only took them approximately 3 minutes to slay the Black Dragon. Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, Andomark did not even drop a single thing upon its demise.

The dead body of the Black Dragon was as huge as a small mountain lying by the side of the lake. Although it was already dead, people would still feel intimidated just by looking at it.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Baa'ljilr stood up from his chair while clapping his hands. He walked up to Zhang Yang with a smile. Then he said, "That's some strength in you! Young man, you have the potential to become a great warrior!"

"Old man, is this how you treat your guests?"

"Haha! Young man! I've no idea what you're talking about! Why can't I understand what you're saying?"

Zhang Yang had no interest in arguing with the old man about the ambush of that Black Dragon. His main objective was to trigger the main story quest on the old man. He smiled and said, "Alright, since that the goods are delivered here safely, it's about time I leave."

"Wait!" The tactic of 'retreat for the sake of advancing' took effect. Baa'ljilr quickly stopped Zhang Yang from leaving, "Young man, that was just a small test. I hope you won't be too offended!"

If that happened in the real world, the sudden ambush of the Black Dragon would have killed 99% of the players who come here! Obviously, this NPC was not a friendly person at all. So, he could be related to the main story quest 'Demons's Descent'.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Old man, so why did you arrange such a test for me, then?"

"Young man, you can't really believe that the world is at peace, right? Even though the world looks peaceful at the moment,



darkness is spreading slowly. The spectres are lurking in the shadows and the demons are waiting for the perfect time to reveal themselves as we speak! They might just launch a large-scale invasion over the entire world! Are you willing to live in a world filled with the imminent danger of death? Are you willing to sit on your \*ss waiting for impending doom to hit you in the face?" Baa'ljilr was speaking in an earnest tone.

Zhang Yang pouted and said, "So, what's the deal then?"

"Those who are aware should take the initiative to eliminate the dangers before the dangers could spread to the others! Young man, this is a great opportunity to become a warrior to be remembered over a thousand years! As long as you can succeed, every poet, every man on earth will sing your name and shout out your deeds. Your name will be carved on history itself!"

Baa'ljilr tried to convince Zhang Yang with all his own imaginative words.

Zhang Yang held the urge to slam his feet on the face of Baa'ljilr. Then he said, "So, how do we get rid of the dangers that you speak of?"

"Hehe, I have a good idea! Unfortunately, I'm too old and I'm not powerful enough to carry out my own plan. But you! You're different, my young warrior! You've defeated a Black Dragon and passed my test! You have the potential to become the hero that everyone deserves! Now, let us act on it! Allow me to make you into a fine and renowned hero!"

"Old man, just get to the point already. What's the first step then?"

"Hehe... you've got to be a little more patient, young man. Steel is not forged in a single day. A hero is not born in a single day! Allow me to explain my plan to you. I'm planning to make a sacred enchantment to shield our world. The enchantment will be spread across the entire sky. By then, the demons and the spectres will

automatically die as long as they are standing within the effective area of the sacred enchantment. By then, the spectres will no longer be able to be born ever again. while the demons will not dare to invade our world!"

Baa'ljilr grinned and said, "However, we will require too many rare and unique materials in order to make the gigantic sacred enchantment! Young man, if you want to be a hero, you must first gather all materials and come back to me. When the Sacred Enchantment is created, you will become the hero of this world!"

"Alright, tell me about all materials that you need!"

"Calm your man tits! This cannot be completed in a day or two. Firstly, you'll need to bring me some [Death Source Stones]!"

‘Ding! Baa'ljilr the Imposter has given you a quest: Death Source Stone. Do you accept?’

Accept.

[Death Source Stone] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants to build a gigantic sacred enchantment to fend off demons and spectres. Meanwhile, creating a sacred enchantment will require a large number of previous and valuable materials. The first material required is the Death Source Stone. You can acquire them by slaying Death Shadow Canine Zoan by the Death Shadow Mine. Of course, if you're an outstanding miner, you can also choose to mine for the Death Source Stone yourself!

Completion: Mine for the Death Source Stone 0/200

The difficulty of the quest was only Rank-C. That being said, the monsters must be only Elite Tier. There might not even be an Ethereal Tier boss around the area.

Zhang Yang did not contact Sun Xin Yu and the others. He decided to complete the quest on his own. After flying through the sky for about 2 hours, he had finally arrived at the Death Shadow

Mine.

There were a few monsters with dog's heads. Their bodies looked just like the dwarfs. They were pushing carts in and out of the mine at the moment. So these must be the Death Shadow Canine Zoan the description of the quest mentioned earlier on. These monsters slung a mining hoe over their shoulders. They had gold teeth all over their mouths as well. Just like the dwarfs who are born to be Blacksmiths, these dog head monsters are born to be natural miners. Whenever there is a mine, there would basically be Death Shadow Canine Zoan around.

[Death Shadow Canine Zoan] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 225

HP: 112,500,000

Magic Attack: 62,920 – 82,920

Skill:

[Fire Ball]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target. Casting: 2 seconds.

Faced with a bunch of Elite Tier Magic type monsters, Zhang Yang would really have a hard time if he engages into battle with these monsters without the support of Felice's {Tree of Life}. Well, with Felice by his side, things were much simpler. Although Felice's power level was currently stuck at Holy Tier, however, these monsters only had the power level of an Ethereal Tier monster. So, she would not have any problem maintaining Zhang Yang's HP during the battle.

Zhang Yang patted his mount and descended down to the ground. He managed to lure the monsters in the surroundings of the mine entrance with one go --- well, naturally, Zhang Yang would not put himself at risk of being swarmed up by luring more than 6 Magic type monsters at the same time. Instead, he let Phoenix pet be the Tanker in this battle.

Because the Phoenix pet was immune to Fire Damage, even if there are 60 of these monsters or 600 of these monsters, the Phoenix pet would still be able to stand there and tank against the monster horde!

Zhang Yang only maintained luring one monster at a time. He would activate his {Thunder Strike} and {Horizontal Sweep} from time to time to deal some damage to the other 5 monsters as well. Because the Phoenix pet had the damage output of an Ascended Tier and its flames were AoE attacks, the aggro of the other 5 monsters were firmly fixed on the Phoenix pet.

The battle was so simple and easy for Zhang Yang. It only took him 3 minutes to slay the first Death Shadow Canine Zoan. Meanwhile, the other five monsters only had approximately 70% HP left on each of them. Well, they were being bombarded with Phoenix's attacks and Zhang Yang's AoE Skill attacks at the same time. In another 7 minutes, Zhang Yang and Phoenix pet had taken care of the remaining monsters.

Well, the Phoenix pet could really perform like a god when it comes to battling these Fire type Elite Tier monsters. Zhang Yang commanded Phoenix pet to charge into the mining cave. They would shoot the moment they see monsters. Once they manage to lure the monsters, they would run or retreat to a safe position before killing them. Well, this time, they lured over 100 Death Shadow Canine Zoans before camping at a corner and slaughtering the monsters up.

Theoretically speaking, Magic type monsters behave differently compared to Melee type monsters. Once their numbers become abundant, players would no longer be able to deal damage to the monsters. These 100 monsters could definitely attack their target at the same time. They could deal an average of 14,000,000 damage at a time! Even with Zhang Yang's insanely high Defence, he would still receive approximately 8,000,000 damage if all 100 monsters attack him once at the same time! That amount of damage would

have been more than enough to instantly kill Zhang Yang!

However, encountering the Phoenix pet was a tragic experience for all the Death Shadow Canine Zoan. All Magic Attacks that landed on the Phoenix pet were 'Immune'. Because of the aggro system, the monsters could not abandon Phoenix pet and switch their target over to Zhang Yang. So, they were only able to throw countless ineffective {Fire Balls} at the Phoenix pet.

About 20 minutes later, 100 Elite Tier monsters were all dead on the ground. Zhang Yang had earned over 10,000,000,000 Experience Points from slaying them all. His Experience Bar had obviously increased by a large chunk!

Awesome!

Zhang Yang bent down and picked up all the loot. The money and the equipment could come later. The most important thing would be the quest item.

However, it was quite depressing because out of the 100 Elite Tier monsters, only 32 of them dropped a piece of [Death Source Stone]. It seemed that the drop rate of this quest item was a little too low. Well, judging from the current pace of his progress, he would need to repeat the same process over 6 times to accumulate a total of 200 pieces of [Death Source Stone]!

However, when he cleared out all monsters in the mine, he only managed to collect a total of 107 pieces of [Death Source Stone]. So Zhang Yang had to wait for another 15 hours before the monsters in the mine are respawned. Only then, he could repeat the process until he completes the quest.

If Zhang Yang chose to be a miner in the start, he could have used the free time to mine around. According to the quest description, Miners could acquire the [Death Source Stones] by mining in the Death Shadow Mine. By doing so, he would be able to collect more [Death Source Stones] to complete the quest. Therefore, he could not do anything now. He could only grind at another spot around

the area until the Death Shadow Canine Zoan are respawned before he comes back to the mine to finish what he had started.

# Chapter 805: Poseidon's Pearl

---

15 hours later, Zhang Yang returned to the Death Shadow Mine once again. The Death Shadow Canine Zoans had been respawned. Zhang Yang went back into the mine to finish up what he had started. Once again, the Phoenix pet was able to show off its might. It only took up about an hour before they cleared out the monsters in the mine again. By doing that, Zhang Yang had finally acquired 200 pieces of Death Source Stone.

Upon getting back to Baa'ljlir, that old man took the bag full of [Death Source Stones] and had a look at them. Then he revealed a contented expression on his face and said, "Young man, you're truly remarkable. You've not let me down a single bit! The hope of acquiring the title of 'Hero who saves the world' is real now!"

Zhang Yang almost popped a vein or two. This old man was obviously a cheater! F\*ck!

'Ding! You've completed a quest: Death Source Stone. You've received a reward: 50,000,000 Experience Points.'

"However, now is not the time to feel proud just yet. Now is not the time to feel relieved yet!" Baa'ljlir's face suddenly turned serious as he spoke, "Now, we need the second item. That's called the 'Poseidon's Pearl!'. However, the 'Poseidon's Pearl is currently in the possession of Alreanno, the King of the Gunhar Kingdom. It will not be easy at all to get the item!"

Zhang Yang did not say a word. He knew better than anyone that there would not be a quest that cannot be completed. There must be some hidden agenda or drama mode behind it.

As expected, Baa'ljlir continued to speak, "However, Alreanno's a lustful bastard that loves to f\*ck around. Recently, he's obsessed with a widow. He will just visit her and stay over at her place once every few days. To avoid being blamed by his fellow ministers and chancellors, he will only bring a few guards along with him. That's

an opportunity that we can't just pass on! Young man, go to the widow's house and wait there. You can wait for Alreanno to arrive and snatch the 'Poseidon's Pearl' from him!"

'Ding! Baa'ljilr the imposter has given you a quest: Poseidon's Pearl! Do you accept?'

Accept.

[Poseidon's Pearl] (Difficulty: Rank-S)

Description: Baa'ljilr needs you to locate the Poseidon's Pearl and bring it him so that he can continue to create the Sacred Enchantment. The Poseidon's Pearl is the possession of Alreanno. You can go to the house of Lydia The Widow and for the arrival of Alreanno. Then, you can snatch the Poseidon's Pearl from him.

Number of players: 1

Completion: Acquire the Poseidon's Pearl 0/1

A quest with a Rank-S difficulty? Could there be an Ascended Tier boss that he needs to face by the end of the quest? Well, he's all alone in this quest at the moment. How would it be possible for him to take on an Ascended Tier boss all by himself then? The quest limited it so that only one person could complete the quest! What the f\*ck?!

However, the game would not give players a quest that cannot be completed. So Zhang Yang was very sure that there would be an opportunity that would change the situation. So, he decided to go along with it for the moment to observe.

Zhang Yang left the valley on Phoenix pet and flew towards the Gunhar Kingdom. That kingdom was just on the same map. Although Alreanno had the 'King of Gunhar Kingdom' title, Gunhar Kingdom was just a small city, so to speak. The firm and strong castle walls had half of the city protected. However, the other half of the city was just built by a cliff. The geographical spot of the city seemed to be very vulnerable.



Zhang Yang did not ride into the city by force. He landed before he entered the city. Then he switched Whitey out and rode all the way to the entrance of the city. Upon paying 10 gold pieces as the entrance fee, he finally entered the lonely city which was hanging by a cliff.

The army force of this city was extremely powerful. The place was crawling with soldiers that wore shiny armors. Every single one of them was Elite Tier as well. Zhang Yang was not idiotic enough to cause trouble so that he could get himself killed. If he ever tried to do something stupid, he would not be capable of f\*cking up so many Elite Tier monsters at the same time. Instead, he would be the one who gets f\*cked up by them! After all, not all soldiers in the city were Fire type users.

Zhang Yang asked around and realized that Lydia the widow was quite famous among the locals. She appeared pretty and sexy as well. In other words, she's seductive, all the time. She's been known to be the King's favorite 'social butterfly'. However, her attitude seemed to have suddenly changed since a month ago. There was no longer any news about her having affairs with other men in the city. The people in the city could not help but feel curious as to why.

Well, that was obvious, actually. Who would still so daring enough for lining up to stick their d\*cks into the King's favorite woman?!

Lydia was currently living in a three-story building with a little sprinkle of the Europe Style. There were two peasants guarding at the entrance to the building. Well, because the streets were filled with soldiers patrolling around, it would be a very bad idea to charge into the building like an idiot. If anything were to happen, the King would never set foot in that building ever again.

Well, it would not be impossible for a person to sneak into the building. The best way to do it was to use stealth approach like how Thieves did. As for players of other Classes, they would be

needing a little help --- Invisible Potion, Effects and Void-type of effects that could provide players a 10-second invisibility period.

Zhang Yang would be an exception. He activated his {Shadow of the Void} and walked right into the building like a king. He went straight to the third floor of the building and lay quietly below a bed. With the bed sheets covering the sides of the bed, even if someone squats down, they would not be able to see Zhang Yang at all.

Zhang Yang came in while he was in the void, where time stopped. After that, he waited for over an hour. It was about midnight before he heard something. He heard a man and a woman talking to each other. Well, they were basically teasing each other in a sensual manner. It did not take long before they opened the door and head into the room. After that, Zhang Yang heard a sound again. It was the sound of them getting onto the bed. After a short while, the bed began to shake in a regular rhythm.

Zhang Yang could not help to frown intensely. Could the game be virtually projecting a sexual scene as well for the players to see?

However, thing happened too suddenly and ended too suddenly as well. Before Zhang Yang could react, the bed stopped shaking. Right after the bed stopped shaking, he could only hear them snoring.

Zhang Yang quickly crawled out from the bottom of the bed. All he could see was a man and a woman cuddling each other on the bed. The man was only wearing a pair of short pants while the woman was wearing a complete set of pajamas. Her exposed skin was so snow white and she had a pretty face that could mesmerize any man who lay their eyes on her face. No wonder the king was so obsessed with her.

[Alreanno] (Normal. Humanoid)

Level: 235

HP: 303,390

Note: He's the King of the Gunhar Kingdom. He's a lustful man.

There was an aquamarine pearl hanging right around the king's left wrist. The pearl was flashing constantly to remind the players that it was a quest item.

However, the quest seemed too easy to be true. This did not look like a Rank-S quest at all!

Zhang Yang could not help to feel uneasy about the current situation. However, his hands were already set into motion to retrieve the pearl. After Zhang Yang took the pearl of the wrist, suddenly, Alreanno opened his eyes wide and stared at Zhang Yang like his life was depending on it! That glare! It was horrifying! He was awakened by Zhang Yang's presence! The king quickly shouted with his dense and loud voice, "Guards! Guards!"

A visible ripple impact was seen passing through Zhang Yang. Instantly, he was afflicted with a negative effect.

[Traitor of the Kingdom]: You cannot mount onto any pet mounts, battle mounts for the moment (Inheritance Transformations will not be allowed to fly in the sky as well). You cannot use any teleportation items or your teleportation Skills. The soldiers of the Gunhar Kingdom are pursuing you. Lasts for 24 hours. As the King of Gunhar Kingdom has enforced martial law, you will not get any help from anyone. Anyone will not be allowed to leave or enter the Kingdom. If you're killed during this period of time, the 'Poseidon's Pearl' will be lost automatically.

... so this should be the reason why the quest was ranked as a Rank-S quest now! What kind of insane setting is this!?

"Protect the king!" the guards by the entrance charged into the room. Four soldiers fully equipped with a complete armor set raised their weapon up and launched their attacks at Zhang Yang.

[Palace Elite Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,335 – 158,335

Skill:

[Punt]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target, pushing the target backward.

Zhang Yang quickly summoned Felice. However, summoning a pet would require 2 seconds, which was longer than the time the enemies needed to land their attacks on Zhang Yang. After some pondering, Zhang Yang activated his Accessory to grant him 'Invincibility' before he began to summon his Phoenix pet.

Although the negative effect 'Traitor of the Kingdom' had disabled Zhang Yang's ability to mount onto his pet, Zhang Yang still had {Beast Taming} for him to summon his pet out to use as a companion in battle.

With Felice's ability to heal and Phoenix pet's insanely powerful attacks to aid him in battle, Zhang Yang could easily receive the attacks of the four Elite Tier soldiers without any worries. After all, Zhang Yang had a super high offense and super high defense at the same time. The only thing that got Zhang Yang annoyed was the {Punt} that the soldiers used on him. The attacks would send Zhang Yang flying back a little, knocking him into the walls for a bit.

About 7 to 8 minutes later, Zhang Yang had finally taken care of the four Elite Tier monsters. He quickly seized the opportunity and ran like hell. If he ever delays his escape, he would be swarmed up by countless NPCs and die.

After charging down to the ground floor, Zhang Yang disappeared into the streets. He had already found a quiet spot to hide himself for the moment.

"Intruder detected!"

Right before he could sit his hot \*ss down, another 6 Elite Tier soldiers suddenly appeared and launched their attacks at Zhang Yang without mercy.

Kill kill kill!

Zhang Yang quickly struck back at them and took out the 6 Elite Tier monsters. However, that consumed quite a lot of his time. When he was done, he could already hear the harsh footsteps coming from afar. The sounds of those metal boots stomping on the surface of hard pebbled roads were sharp and harsh.

Zhang Yang quickly moved his \*ss and blended himself into the streets again.

However, he would be discovered no matter where he tried to hide. The patrols were so sharp that they could identify Zhang Yang in a matter of seconds! Then, a fierce battle would be triggered between Zhang Yang and the soldiers that found him. Each encounter had exactly 6 Elite tier soldiers. Each encounter would take approximately 15 minutes. If he could not take out the 6 guards within 15 minutes, there would be a second wave of soldiers, 12 of them to be precise, arriving to aid the first wave of the soldiers in taking Zhang Yang out.

Even though Zhang Yang had never been caught up by a platoon of 12 soldiers before, he could predict that if he does not take out the second wave of 12 within a set period of time, there would be a third wave with more soldiers coming to get him. Therefore, he could never afford to be captured by the second wave soldiers. Or else, he would have to face endless waves of soldiers until his HP bar gives out.

The first two hours of hide-and-seek was simple for him. However, the first wave of the soldiers had increased to 8 soldiers. That was when the situation became more challenging than he could anticipate! Fortunately, Phoenix pet was still performing at

its best. Even though there were two extra soldiers in the battle, the Phoenix pet could spread its attack on all target within range as long as Zhang Yang make sure the monsters were all gathered within the attack range of the Phoenix pet. Therefore, the battle was not prolonged much at all.

The DPS of the Phoenix pet was approximately 170,000 damage. Clearing out a HP bar of approximately 100,000,000 HP would only take about 11 minutes. Well, the attacks of the Phoenix pet were AoE in nature, after all. So it would not matter if the number of monsters are abundant or not --- only under the circumstance that the monsters are standing close enough to each other.

Therefore, Zhang Yang needed not to worry about the Attack power of his side. The only thing that he needed to worry about was the number of monsters. If the number of monsters become so abundant that the situation might get out of hand, then the monsters would only need to use {Punt} on him until he no longer can keep the monsters in one spot for the Phoenix pet to do its work.

By the fifth hour, the number of Elite Tier monster each wave had increased to 10. Furthermore, they would also bring along 20 Normal Tier Soldiers. Although these Normal Tier monsters could not really cause much damage to Zhang Yang, they were also equipped with {Punt}. These Normal Tier monsters really had Zhang Yang staggering around without having much chance to stand on his feet. Therefore, the monsters in the surrounding were beginning to scatter around, causing quite a hassle for the Phoenix pet to focus attacks on them.

Fortunately, Normal Tier monsters only had about 300,000 HP on them. Zhang Yang could have wiped them all out with his {Horizontal Sweep}. Although that might give him a little problem, it would not be a fatal one at least.

Phew!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought before he decided to use the ‘Demon’s Portal’ on the eighth hour. Then, he would use his God of War Transformation on the tenth hour. So let’s see who turns out to be better, then!

## Chapter 806: RE:Gates of Hell's

---

Come the sixth hour, and the number of soldiers in each wave had been increased up to 12 Elite Tier soldiers and 40 Normal Tier soldiers!

If Zhang Yang only has to deal with so many monsters at the same time, he could not be worried at all. The problems lie in the fact that each of these monsters could use {Punt} on him! With more than 50 monsters chaining their {Punt} consecutively on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang would not even get the chance to fall. He would be hit consecutively to the point that he would stay in the air for all eternity!

Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang still had help from Phoenix pet and Felice. The pet and the battle companion were told to focus on wiping out the Normal Tier monsters first, before turning their attention towards wiping out the Elite Tier monsters.

Although the Elite Tier monsters were still a little too abundant, Zhang Yang could still take it. Furthermore, Felice could also constantly heal Zhang Yang, so Zhang Yang would not face any life-threatening situation for the moment. However, the number of Elite Tier monsters had been increased up to 12 in each wave. Zhang Yang spent substantially more time in the air now. Therefore, the monsters would scatter into the surroundings a little, because Zhang Yang was not there to keep them in line. Because of that, Phoenix pet was affected as well. They actually took almost 15 minutes to clear out the entire wave of monsters this time.

Moreover, the next wave of soldiers had arrived as well. The second wave of reinforcement had 24 Elite Tier monsters and 80 Normal Tier monsters! What the f\*ck!?

Zhang Yang did not dare to go head-on with so many monsters. So, he quickly put Felice back into the Battle Companion Slot and



unsummoned Phoenix pet. Without any hesitation, he activated his {Shadow of the Void} and went into another dimension before the reinforcements could reach him. The moment he was in the other dimension, he ran like hell. After 20 seconds of insane running, Zhang Yang managed to run over quite some distance before he was forced to jump out of the void. Currently, he had ran over to another street.

Phew! Zhang Yang tried to catch his breath. Then he quickly looked for another place to hide. He knew he needed to be ready for the next wave of monsters.

A brief moment later, a new wave of soldiers had been spawned near Zhang Yang. Well, Zhang Yang had already summoned out Felice and Phoenix pet earlier on while waiting for the soldiers to be spawned. So, they quickly wiped out the 40 Normal Tier monsters first. His luck was good this time. The three of them only took 12 minutes to wipe out the entire wave of monsters. So Zhang Yang had a bit more time to run away.

The duration required to clear out the entire wave of soldiers would depend on luck as well. Sometimes, the monsters would use their {Punt} at the same time, and sometimes they would use their {Punt} consecutively to form a chain attack. Because of that, the duration of clearing out the soldiers would differ, based on the situation. If the chain attack was a long one, they would require much more time to kill all the monsters. When that happens, they might spend more than 15 minutes to clear the monsters out. When that does happen, the reinforcements would arrive and Zhang Yang would have to deal with more tons of sh\*t.

Fortunate for him, Zhang Yang had a very useful Skill in such situations, his {Shadow of the Void} for him to escape with ease. However, in none of the battles, the monsters had chained their attacks together so perfectly that two of them were still alive after Zhang Yang spends 15 minutes trying to wipe them out. Even though Zhang Yang had activated his {Shadow of the Void} to

escape, when he reappears after 20 seconds, the two monsters were leading an entire army of soldiers to pursue him from the back!

Only he knew by then that he could escape, however, he must make sure that the first wave of every encounter must be wiped out first in order to escape safely. That was the system's setting. Or else, he would have to be pursued by the remaining monsters and the reinforcement monsters altogether. If he ever delays the battles any longer, he would be as good as dead when the next wave of monsters arrive to join into the battle.

After killing the two soldiers in the massive army, Zhang Yang did not have enough time to even keep Phoenix pet into the inventory. He could only activate his {Rearm} to clear out all the cooldowns of his Skills before he could use his {Shadow of the Void} to escape again!

However, even though he could not ride on the back of his pet mount, it did not mean that the Phoenix pet could not fly in the sky. All the big bird needed to do was to flap its two gigantic wings and send itself into the air. Then the Phoenix pet would no longer need to worry about being hurt by the soldiers. After Zhang Yang came out from the {Shadow of the Void}, the Phoenix pet descended lower to engage back into battle with the monsters. As summoning and unsummoning Felice did not require chanting time at all, Zhang Yang had kept Felice back into her slot long before he acted on this.

So Zhang Yang had been hitting and running for the entire time. He would need to repeatedly do the same thing until he wipes out the first wave of the monsters. Well, he had {Shadow of the Void}. So he had one less thing to worry about. Even if he is swarmed up by the monsters, he would still be able to get away easily. It was fortunate that the system did not design the soldiers to have the ability of a 'radar' to detect their target.

The next two hours were tormenting and long for Zhang Yang. However, he had managed to survive the ordeal. He laughed out

loud because he knew, it was about time! It was his turn to strike back at the monsters that were pursuing him!

When the new wave of the monsters were spawned, the number had been increased up to 14 Elite Tier monsters and 50 Normal Tier Monsters!

{Gate of Hell} activated!

Zhang Yang summoned a 'Gate of Hell' and took out the Normal Soldiers in an instant.

Because the Phoenix pet was completely under Zhang Yang's command, the Phoenix pet would just stop attacking at the final moment right before the monsters were about to die. Then, Zhang Yang would strike out the final blow to all the monsters afterward. It only took about 20 seconds before all 50 Normal Tier monsters collapsed onto the ground. Then, one after another, the souls of the monsters were flying into the 'Gate of Hell'. The next thing was the dark radiating gate of hell that was beginning to open its door. Then, countless demons with two large twisted horns right on their foreheads walked right out of the gate!

The situation suddenly changed! Zhang Yang suddenly had over 50 Elite Tier 'brothers' to beat up the remaining 14 Elite Tier soldiers in the vicinity!

Beat them up!

The demonic monsters that came out from that gate were not weaker than the Elite Tier monsters. At the same time, the demons had the advantage in their number over the monsters. It only took a while for the demons to take care of the remaining soldiers.

However, the demons would not listen to Zhang Yang's commands at all, even though they would not attack him. Meanwhile, the demons would pick their targets based on their aggro system. Well, 8 out of 14 Elite Soldiers died in the hands of the demons, so Zhang Yang only managed to gain extra 6 demons

by the end of the battle.

Because Zhang Yang only took approximately 3 minutes to clear out this wave's monsters, he would need to wait more than 10 minutes before the reinforcements could arrive. So Zhang Yang decided to take the initiative to strike. He went around the streets to lure any guards or soldiers that he could find over to the 'Gate of Hell' before slaying them.

--- The 'Gate of Hell' could only last for 20 minutes. So, Zhang Yang must slay as many monsters as he could within that period of that in order to turn the souls of the slain monsters into demons. After all, he still had 4 hours to go before he can complete the quest.

About 10 minutes later, the reinforcement had finally arrived. Meanwhile, the number of the soldiers were shockingly high this round. There were a total of 28 Elite Tier soldiers and 100 Normal Tier soldiers charging towards Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang did not sit around, waiting for them to come. He charged towards the monsters and launched the first attack on them. He activated his invincible Skills and took out the 100 Normal Tier monsters in one go! Because the Attack power of the Elite Tier monsters were much higher than the Normal Tier monsters, the demons had fixed their aggro on the Elite Tier monsters naturally. Meanwhile, 98 out of 100 Normal Tier soldiers died by the hands of Zhang Yang. Instantly, Zhang Yang gained a total of 98 Elite Tier demons!

So how would the 28 Elite Tier soldiers be able to hold their ground against that many Elite Tier demons then? They were instantly wiped out clean, of course. Meanwhile, the tragic part about the incident was that Zhang Yang only managed to kill two of them with his bare hands. He only managed to earn 2 extra demons because his other demons had swarmed over the remaining soldiers like a tidal wave.

After a brief moment of rest, another new wave of soldiers was spawned. This time, the number of monsters had been increased up to 14 Elite Tier soldiers and 50 Normal Tier soldiers.

As usual, Zhang Yang took the liberty to slay the monsters first before his other 'goons' could make a move. By doing so, he managed to add another 47 demons under his ranks. Meanwhile, the 'Gate of Hell' had collapsed before the remaining 14 Elite Tier soldiers could be killed --- 20 minutes had passed!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang. The demons that came out of the 'Gate of Hell' would not vanish even after the gate is destroyed after the effective duration. As long as they were not killed, they would be able to stay and slaughter their prey for 4 hours before they are banished back to their underworld. Of course, these demons would not be able to roam any more than 1,000 meters from the spot where the 'Gate of Hell' was summoned.

Well, that range was already vast enough for Zhang Yang to run around without having any worries in his mind. Zhang Yang did not have to leave the range to hide. He could just find a spot and camp there until the quest ends. He could just kill whatever number of soldiers that come at him.

Ninth hour, tenth hour!

The new wave had over 16 Elite Tier soldiers and 100 Normal Tier soldiers. Zhang Yang could not help to feel an itch for thinking aloud. If only he could have the 'Gate of Hell' by his side, he could have summoned another 100 to 200 demons to join under his ranks!

Although the number of soldiers had substantially increased, they were never going to be able to survive the onslaught of Zhang Yang's 200+ demons! Well, all of the demons he had were Elite Tier, after all. They could easily crush the soldiers!

That was how war looked like. If the number of both sides were equal, then the two sides would basically suffer equally if they

went against each other head-on. However, if one of the two sides had the advantage in numbers, then that side would be able to reduce their losses. Meanwhile, if the difference in the number of two sides is too great, the side with more soldiers would be able to crush their opposing side with even lesser losses.

Just imagine this. Under the circumstance where every man has the same strength, 100 strong men could instantly end 1 strong man. There was nothing to explain here. It was pure math. That 1 man would not even be able to deal any damage to anyone before he is taken out.

Therefore, even though there was no way of healing the demons, but the demons still had the absolute advantage in number over their opponents. So they were able to take out their enemies without taking much damage. They could also take out their enemies and get out of their battle mode to recover their HP.

Initially, Zhang Yang had intended to use his God of War Transformation to stay alive. However, after noticing that he had over 200 demons working for him, he knew that he could crush his enemies with ease. Well, the 200+ demons would be enough to crush anything in the vicinity!

It was a total slaughter. Zhang Yang went through the remaining 2 hours with ease. After that, the negative effect on him vanished.

Meanwhile, the first batch of demons he summoned were kicked back to the initial spot where they were summoned. The number of demons was getting smaller and smaller by the second. However, that did not matter anymore. Well, Zhang Yang had completed his quest.

Time to go!

Zhang Yang hopped onto the back of Phoenix pet and left the city, leaving the 100+ demons behind to cause chaos over the soldiers in the city. Unfortunately, soldiers and monsters that were slain by the demons would not give Zhang Yang any Experience

Points. After all, these demons were ‘borrowed’ from the underworld. Their real master was the Hell Lord of the Abyss! So, the benefits would all go to him, of course!

As he hustled back without any interruptions, Zhang Yang arrived back at Baa'ljilr's location after flying for a while.

"You stinky old man! You almost got me killed!" Zhang Yang threw the "Poseidon's Pearl" over to Baa'ljilr as he was scolding the old man in rage.

"Ah ha!" Baa'ljilr actually laughed out loud. Then he quickly kept the 'Poseidon's Pearl' into his sleeve and said, "My young warrior, please calm down! There's no need to be angry! How about this? I'll give you my family heirloom as a compensation!"

‘Ding! You’ve received an item: Snake King’s Chest Plate!’

[Snake King’s Chest Plate] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +45,088

Strength: +7,933

Agility: +3,353

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 90,170 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,434 Damage when being hit.

Required Level: 230

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Now, that’s something worthy of Zhang Yang’s effort and time! Finally, a piece of Ascended Tier equipment as a reward! However, this is one of the main story quests. It had the feature that needed

it to be unlocked by players through searching the correct NPCs. So if the quest is completed by someone in the server, the other players would not be able to do the same quest anymore. In other words, the reward of this quest would only belong to the first and only player who completes it first.

Although an Ascended Tier equipment was given as a reward, only one person in the entire server would be able to get this special piece of equipment. So, it would not cause the value of Ascended Tier equipment to degrade.

Zhang Yang quickly put on the newly received equipment and smiled at Baa'ljilr, "This reward is plenty much. So, I won't say much about it now."

Baa'ljilr forced a smile on his face as well. Then he said, "Young warrior, these materials are still not sufficient for my plan to work. We have to search for the next item now!"



# Chapter 807: The Spectre's Heart

---

"So, what's next?"

Baa'ljilr did not answer Zhang Yang immediately. He gave Zhang Yang a quick glance before he slowly said, "The Spectre's Heart of 'Evil Necromancer Cheryl'!"

He was obviously worried that Zhang Yang might ask for the reason as to why creating a sacred enchantment would require an evil and tainted Spectre's Heart. However, as a player, one should just dedicate oneself to completing a quest that NPC provides in order to get the rewards for completing it. That's the natural order in the game. So Zhang Yang had no reason to ask much of it!

Therefore, Baa'ljilr's worry was for nothing. Zhang Yang nodded and said, "So where's Cheryl?"

Baa'ljilr was relieved as he let out a heavy breath. Then he said, "Cheryl is located at the far side of the Wens'g Kingdom. She's known to live in The Dark Castle somewhere in that Kingdom. Take her out and bring her Spectre's Heart back to me!"

'Ding! Baa'ljilr the Imposter had given you a quest: The Spectre's Heart. Do you accept?'

Accept.

[The Spectre's Heart] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants you to acquire The Spectre's Heart in order to progress with setting up his Sacred Enchantment. You can find the Evil Necromancer Cheryl in The Dark Castle located by the southeast side of the Wens'g Kingdom. Young man, you better bring along a bunch of friends for this. Cheryl is not an easy foe to take on.

Completion: Acquire The Spectre's Heart 0/1

The Wens'g Kingdom is a Level 210-240 map. It's located quite far

away from Kanjar. Zhang Yang had to use a Teleportation Scroll to get back to the Holy City. Then he summoned Phoenix pet out and headed straight towards his destination.

The difficulty of the quest was Rank-A. It seemed that Cheryl would probably be a Holy Tier boss. Furthermore, Zhang Yang still had his {God of War Transformation} ready at hand. So, it would be possible for him to take out the boss all by himself. Also, he could still use his [Party Summon Order] if things do not go the way he expects it to be. He could still summon Sun Xin Yu and the rest of his gang over to support him in battle.

Along the way to his destination, after flying across the sky for over 7 to 8 hours, Zhang Yang finally entered the Wens'g Kingdom. He spent another 2 hours venturing further towards the southeast of the map. Finally, he could see 'The Dark Castle' right on top of his small map. At the same time, Zhang Yang could see a magnificent ancient castle in front, not far from him. The appearance of the castle seemed anciently vicissitude. Zhang Yang could not help to feel a sense of misfortune and dread creeping through his spine.

Well, there were also dark clouds shrouded over the castle. The gloomy and creepy sense of the atmosphere had completely destroyed the magnificence of the castle. The appearance of the castle was currently ghastly.

Zhang Yang flew straight into the castle. Because the interior of the castle was an indoor environment, he could only leap down from the back of his mount and venture deeper into the castle on foot.

"Living human! It's your doom for trespassing into this land!" an insidious voice was heard across the hall. Two beams were shot right at Zhang Yang without any warning. The beams turned into two dark skulls and flew towards Zhang Yang at high speed.

‘-88327!’

‘-92712!’

Two damage values popped right on top of Zhang Yang’s head almost at the same time. Right after that, Zhang Yang noticed that two monsters wearing dark wizard robes suddenly appeared right in front of him. Their hands were the only body parts that were exposed. They were so dry and skinny that they looked like the claws of a chicken.

[Shadow Wizard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Magic Attack: 66,112 – 86,112

Skill:

[Shadow Bomb]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Chanting: 2 seconds.

Note: Shadow Wizards are the loyal servants to Evil Necromancer Cheryl. Their strength is so powerful that even the expedition forces of the Wens'g Kingdom could not do anything to cleanse The Dark Castle from the corruption of the Evil Necromancer Cheryl. So far, none of the expedition forces have managed to return alive.

F\*cking Magic type monsters!

As a Guardian warrior, Zhang Yang had hated these Magic Type monsters the most. They always rendered his Defense useless. Zhang Yang let out a clear roar and charged forward at high speed. Upon reaching the effective range of his {Charge}, he immediately activated it and dashed forward like a piercing arrow towards one of the wizard monsters.

Upon stunning the monster he clashed into, Zhang Yang swung his axe and acquired enough Rage Points. Immediately, he turned

towards another wizard monster beside him and activated his {Crash Magic}. The chanting of the monster was interrupted immediately.

Truth be told, even though the Attack power of the monsters were not weak, Felice could easily heal up Zhang Yang, maintaining his HP bar at its maximum level. However, Zhang Yang had gotten used to playing safe. He would use the methods that could minimize his damage received in order to win the battle. So he could not help himself but try limiting the damage output of the monsters.

With his current Attack power, it would not take long before he could slay the two monsters. So after a brief moment, he managed to empty out the HP bars of the two monsters. By doing so, the two monsters instantly turned into a pile of bones, clattering down to the ground.

The entire castle was filled with similar types of monsters. Zhang Yang could not afford to lure too many of these monsters at the same time. After all, the damage that these monsters could deal to him was a little too painful for him to take them all on. Once the number of monsters become too many for him to handle, he would be in deep sh\*t.

With no intention of wasting so much time on the monsters, Zhang Yang activated his {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void} in order to go deeper into the castle without having the need to fight the monsters. However, he still had to battle some of them though. So he slew quite a number of monsters as well as he was making his way deeper into the castle. 4 hours later, he had finally arrived at the deepest area of the castle.

There was a gigantic pool in the area. 12 spectral maids were standing respectfully on the edge of the pool. They were holding jade plates on top of their hands. Right on top of each plate, there was delicious food such as fresh fruit and fine wine. Meanwhile, right in the middle of the pool, a beautiful lady with a long hair

was enjoying a swim. From time to time, she would swim to the side of the pool. A maid would get near so that she could pass the food to the lady in the pool.

Well, it seemed that the lady knew how to enjoy her life!

Zhang Yang thought to himself that he could really learn from this lady. He could let Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue serve him like how these maids were serving the lady as well. However, if he ever voices out his current opinion, Sun Xin Yu and Han Yin g Xue would not be the ones serving him by the side of the pool. He would become the one who would serve the two ladies while they are enjoying life in the pool! Furthermore, he would also need to serve that little brat who loved to join in for any occasion!

That kept Zhang Yang thinking. Should he build a pool at his company? Well, watching 6 beautiful secretaries wearing bikinis, while competing against each other to see who would appear prettier would definitely be an enjoyable sight for any man!

Zhang Yang was having some lustful thoughts while he was observing the attributes of these monsters.

[Evil Necromancer Cheryl] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 240

HP: 2,400,000,000

Defence: 23,330

Magic Attack: 118,744 – 158,744

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow Barrage]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 40-meter radius. Casting: 2 seconds.

[Darkness Restoration]: Recovers 10% HP of all her maids.

[Spectre's Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: She's the master of The Dark Castle, the most poisonous cancer to the Wens'g Kingdom! She will consume a large amount of human blood just to maintain her young and beautiful appearance. There is no telling that how many people had died by her hands.

[Loyal Maids] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 108,455 – 148,455

Skills:

[Uppercut]: Pushes the targets away and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Shared Life]: Damage received will be shared among all other Maids.

[Sacrifice]: Sacrifices own HP to recover 50% of Cheryl's HP. Meanwhile, the monster will immediately die.

Note: They are Cheryl's loyal maids. They will sacrifice everything for their master. That includes their own lives!

If the 12 Loyal Maids were left aside, they could heal a total of 14,400,000,000 HP for Cheryl. So obviously, leaving those maids by the side was not a wise option! He must take out all the maids first before he could focus on taking out the boss!

Because the maids had {Shared Life}, Zhang Yang must deal approximately 1,400,000,000 damage in one shot in order for him to get rid of all the maids in one go. Meanwhile, he would have to sustain the attacks of the 12 monsters and the boss.

Although the monsters could only deal Melee Damage, their Attacks were actually quite high. These monsters could actually deal an average damage of 40,000 with each hit. In other words, if the 12 monsters attack him at the same time, they could deal a total

of 500,000 damage under the circumstance that each monster only hit him once with a normal attack! That amount of damage would exceed Felice's maximum healing capacity. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would have to sustain the damage dealt by the boss at the same time. He would definitely not be able to handle the battle.

The only thing that remained uncertain was the cooldown period for the boss's {Darkness Restoration}. If the boss could use the Skill frequently, then he should consider killing the boss first instead of focusing on the monsters.

Zhang Yang kept Phoenix pet into the inventory. He decided not to use any Transformations to fight the battle before him. He wanted to at least know about the cooldowns for the boss's Skills before doing anything rash.

So, time to rock!

Zhang Yang immediately charged forward in huge pace and dashed towards one of the maids.

"You arrogant mother\*cker! How dare you trespass into Master Cheryl's resting ground! You shall pay for your crime with your blood!" The maid screamed in a screeching tone and raised her two fists up towards Zhang Yang.

The aggro of these monsters were chained together. The moment when the maid detected Zhang Yang and engaged in battle with him, the other 11 maids and the boss also sensed Zhang Yang's presence and joined the battle. They also roared in rage and charged towards Zhang Yang. Because the boss was a Magic type monster, she only stood up in the middle of the pool. She took out a staff out of nowhere and started to attack Zhang Yang with her spells. A dark flashed across the sight of Zhang Yang, followed by countless skulls flying right out from the tip of her staff.

If Fatty Han was there to see what that had happened, he would definitely have smiled wretchedly and said that the boss was rather hardcore. He would say that the boss had been using the staff as

her 'rod' to please herself... she had been sticking the staff into her... ehm! Or else! Where would she keep that staff then? How could she keep such a thick staff from everyone's plain sight. then?

{Block}!

Zhang Yang activated his {Thunder Strike} to slow his enemies' movement speed. Then, he began to kite them around!

This would be a battle for him to test out the cooldown period for the boss's Skills. Zhang Yang did not stop to see whether he was dealing high damage to the monsters or not. He only intended to drag it long enough for the boss to use her Skills. Of course, he would need to deal a certain amount of damage to the boss in order to get the boss into using her {Darkness Restoration}!

After battling for 30 seconds, Cheryl used her very first {Darkness Restoration}. She was spamming her {Shadow Arrow Barrage} throughout the remaining time, shooting Shadow Arrows into the surroundings. The arrows were so frequently fired that they were like raining down into the surroundings.

Zhang Yang had acquired his first conclusion after observing for a while now: The {Darkness Restoration} would be affected by his {Destructive Smash}. However, the boss could still heal the 12 maids. Meanwhile, his {Destructive Smash} would theoretically affect only two targets at a time. Therefore, it would not affect the boss significantly.

60 seconds later, the boss had activated her {Darkness Restoration} for the second time. 90 seconds later, she activated her {Darkness Restoration} for the third time.

Before Zhang Yang could wait for the boss to activate her healing Skill for the fourth time, Zhang Yang quickly kept Felice back into her slot. Then, he quickly used his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle --- his HP bar was about to get emptied out! If he stays, he would be as good as dead!



With his calculation based on the battle, Zhang Yang could confirm that the boss would activate her {Darkness Restoration} once in every 30 seconds. In other words, the boss could heal over a total of 138,000,000 HP for the 12 monsters. The boss could heal an amount of 4,600,000 HP in each second.

Meanwhile, when Zhang Yang activates his {God of War Transformation}, his {Horizontal Sweep} could deal approximately 440,000 damage to each monsters in each passing second. Meanwhile, he could deal a DPS of 45,000 damage to each monster with his {Thunder Strike}. Then, he could deal a DPS of 18,000 damage to each monster with his {Blast Wave}. He could deal a DPS of 13,000 damage with his {God of War Crushing Strike} as well. On the other hand, the Phoenix pet could deal a DPS of 340,000 damage upon activating its Transformation Skill. All these were AoE Skills that could spread damage to all targets within the effective range of the Skill attacks. Therefore, Zhang Yang could actually deal  $(44 + 4.5 + 1.8 + 1.3 + 34) * 12 = 10,270,000$  DPS. That amount of damage had exceeded the amount of HP that the boss could recover in each second.

Theoretically speaking, it would only take approximately 4 minutes to slay these monsters!

# Chapter 808: Enhancing the equipment

---

After getting a rough calculation, Zhang Yang no longer had any fear left in him. He immediately activated his God of War Transformation without any hesitation. Instantly, he acquired quite a boost to all of his attributes!

HP: 139,560,000!

Basic Attack: 1,036,166 – 1,176,166!

Zhang Yang did not charge into battle immediately. Instead, he was waiting for his God of War Energy Bar to accumulate 11 EP before he heads out. He used his {Charge Up Strike} in conjunction with his {God of War Devastation}, causing approximately 9,000,000 damage to the 12 monsters at the same time in less than 6 minutes. It was definitely worth the wait!

When Zhang Yang had accumulated over 11 EP, he also activated the Phoenix pet's Transformation Skill. At the same time, Felice had also transformed into her 'Tree of Life Form'. The monsters were easy targets to kill. However, the boss had her {Spectre Constitution} to back her up. She could recover over 800,000 HP once every passing second. Obviously, this was going to be a drawn-out boss battle. So, Zhang Yang would need Felice's healing support.

Time to settle this!

Zhang Yang flapped his radiating wings and slid over to the side of a maid monster. Then, he swung his axe towards the monster to begin.

‘-1,087,622!’

Damage values that went beyond a million popped right on top of the monster. Zhang Yang's Rage Bar was instantly filled up to its maximum cap.

"Kill this filthy intruder!"

"Those who offend our master will be executed!"

"Use his blood to wash away his sins!"

All of the maid monsters began to charge towards Zhang Yang with their fists raised. It seemed that they were all combat ready!

‘-o!’

‘-o!’

‘-o!’

Under the support of his God of War Transformation, Zhang Yang’s Defence had gone up to a total of 174,900! That was a terrifying amount of Defence that even a boss would have to fear! Even without his 20% Passive Damage Immunity and his 31,673 Damage Absorption, the monsters would still fail to penetrate Zhang Yang’s high Defence!

So, it seemed that the Ultimate Skill of the game, the ‘Inheritance Transformation’ was not just for show. After all, all ‘Inheritance Transformations’ had a 72-hour cooldown period.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-9,889,065!’

‘-10,283,321!’

‘-9,572,344!’

...

12 damage values that went approximately over 10 million was seen popping out on top of the 12 monsters. With Zhang Yang’s God of War Transformation boosting him up, his {God of War Devastation} was able to deal unbelievably high damage to the monsters!

"Argh ---" the monsters were roaring out in rage at the same time. Under the slashing of Zhang Yang’s axe, each of the maids were cut

opened, leaving them off with large deep wounds. However, there was no blood coming out from their wounds, not even one single drop of it. The phenomena was quite bizarre, to be honest.

"Human, you must pay with your pitiful life!" Cheryl roared out in rage as she waved her staff around. Countless dark skulls were beginning to float into the air, flying rapidly at Zhang Yang, Phoenix pet and Felice, causing a tremendous amount of damage to the three of them.

"You ugly old b\*tch! You're the one who should die and perish!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then, he activated his {Horizontal Sweep} and dealt approximately 2,000,000 damage to each of the 12 maids once again. Among the 12 monsters, three of them were afflicted with a Critical Hit which boosted the damage up to over 4,000,000!

Zhang Yang was attacking the monsters while he moved around accordingly. By doing so, he succeeded in kiting the 12 Loyal Maids over to the boss. Although he could only deal some damage to the boss with his AoE attacks, however, a mosquito's leg is still a leg. There was no reason for him to waste any opportunity to deal even a little damage to the boss.

"Long live the Spectres!" The boss suddenly roared out and raised her staff up high. Immediately, 12 dark radiance were shot right out of the tip of her staff and fused into the bodies of the 12 maids. Well, 11 of them managed to recover over 10% HP, while the other one maid only managed to recover 2.5% HP because she was afflicted with the effect of Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash}.

{Thunder Strike}! {Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang prioritized on using all his AoE attacks whenever he could. Since the boss could recover her HP with her {Spectre Constitution}, Zhang Yang focused all his single target attacks on the one monster with the least HP amount remaining. Every time he could slay one Loyal Maid, the boss would have one less target

to heal. In other words, Zhang Yang had earned back the chance to deal 11,500,000 damage!

Slash! Slice and dice!

Zhang Yang went all out on his enemies. In less than 4 minutes, he had taken out all 12 Loyal Maids. After that, he only had one boss left to handle.

"Living soul, you should just die ten thousand times over!" Cheryl began to curse in rage. She repeatedly shot out her {Shadow Arrow Barrage} into the surrounding to kill Zhang Yang.

She only had that one Skill to use. From a certain perspective, that was the special ability of a Super World Boss! Unfortunately, her HP amount was too underwhelming for her to be considered as a World Boss. Furthermore, the Attack power of a Holy Tier boss in the current stage of the game seemed so much weaker now. Or else, even a large-scale party would not know how to beat this boss!

However, AoE Skills would only be able to perform at their best potential when there are more targets in the surroundings. After all, the AoE attack could only deal that much damage to one single target at a time. The Attack power of the AoE Skills would not increase, just because there are lesser players in the vicinity. The boss's single target attacks could only deal approximately 180,000 damage to Zhang Yang. In other words, the boss's DPS would only be 90,000 damage. Felice did not even have to transform in order to heal Zhang Yang.

Meanwhile, Felice had to heal three targets, which included herself, of course. Therefore, she must activate her {Tree of Life Transformation} first before she would be capable enough to heal two persons and one powerful, legendary pet.

Zhang Yang's DPS had exceeded a million because he was under the support of his God of War Transformation. With Phoenix pet supporting him from the sidelines, he could now deal up to a DPS of 1,440,000 damage in each passing second! Taking in account the

boss's HP Recovery where she could heal over 800,000 HP, Zhang Yang could still deal over 640,000 effective damage to the boss. So, he would only need 63 minutes to empty out the HP bar of the boss.

Because the monsters were all dead and the boss would only use one Skill to attack, Zhang Yang's victory was inevitable. So, Zhang Yang kept dealing damage to the boss throughout the entire battle while Felice heals him from time to time. And then... the boss died by the end of it.

Splash!

That Spectral lady collapsed by the side of the pool. A small portion of her naked body, well, her vital parts of her body were censored by some mosaic boxes. Among the loot, well, if Wei Yan Er, that little brat is here to see all that, she would definitely waste her time on asking questions, like where did all those loot come from.

The boss had dropped two Holy Tier equipment and 5 Ethereal Tier equipment. Zhang Yang swept all of the Ethereal Tier equipment into his inventory. Then, he turned his attention towards the two pieces of Holy Tier equipment. One of them was a hat made of cloth. So, he shoved it into his inventory, straight away. Meanwhile, the other one was a necklace that glimmered in the light.

[Glimmering Necklace] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +5,601

Strength: +1,338

Agility: +583

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 11,200 points.

Equip: Absorbs 1,132 Damage when being hit.

Equip: Recovers 5,000 HP at a certain rate when being hit.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Well, Zhang Yang was currently wearing the Level 180 Holy Tier [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. That piece could only provide him offensive power. There was no boost to his defense power, at all. According to the rules for combining equipment with the [Tesseract], if combining the [Glimmering Necklace] and the [Berserker's Charge Necklace] would turn out to be a success, only could the Holy Tier equipment be enhanced. The Tier of the new 'product' would not be improved to Ascended Tier. The level of the new 'product' would be based on the level of the [Glimmering Necklace].

Zhang Yang put the two mentioned equipment into the [Tesseract] and he immediately received a system notification:

'Ding! You're about to combine/fuse the [Glimmering Necklace] with the [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. The success rate will be 90%. Do you wish to continue?'

90% rate of success!? It seemed that the success rate of enhancing equipment was much higher than the rate of improving the Tier of equipment.

Zhang Yang did not continue with the process. Well, he was just Level 207, at the moment. The equipment could only be equipped when he becomes Level 210. So, he could just keep the equipment for the moment.

After picking up the quest item, Zhang Yang went back to see Baa'ljilr so that he could hand in the quest.

"Hey, young warrior. You're indeed impressive! You actually took such a short time to slay Cheryl the Evil Necromancer!" Baa'ljilr laughed out loud. Then he took 'The Spectre's Heart' and kept it safe.

After that, the upcoming quests that Baa'ljilr offered seemed to

be insignificant. Although he did ask Zhang Yang to gather all sorts of items, the difficulty of the quests were Rank-B, at best. Zhang Yang only felt tired of running errands for the old man. Who would have thought that setting up a Sacred Enchantment would be so troublesome and tiring! Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 210, but the quest chain had yet to reach its end.

Meanwhile, a small number of other players had arrived at the valley as well. They were looking for Baa'ljilr for his quests. Among those players, some were Top Tier players from other Regions, while some were just some random players that were not known to Zhang Yang. Well, none of them were aware that the final quest that Baa'ljilr offered would trigger the main story quest 'Demon's Descent'. So, some of them thought that the NPC was just fooling them around. Meanwhile, others were staying behind in an attempt to complete the quests. Well, they stayed because they noticed that Zhang Yang was there to complete quests as well.

Main Story Quests such as this would only be unlocked by certain NPCs, regardless of whichever link of the quest is completed. Other players would still be able to continue on with the quests. Of course, quests that are completed would not be available to the other players anymore.

Everyone could accept the same quest. However, only one player, or one party, could complete the quest and claim the prizes all to themselves.

The quest that Zhang Yang sought for would require players to enter a location similar to a dungeon. There would be quite a number of Ascended Tier bosses for the players to slay. However, after so many days of completing the endless quests given by Baa'ljilr, Zhang Yang was beginning to feel frustrated and speechless. The main story quest was not even triggered yet!

However, upon reaching Level 210, he could finally fuse the [Glimmering Necklace] and the [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. A blinding light flashed across the [Tesseract]. When the light



dimmed and stopped radiating, the two equipment he put into the [Tesseract] were gone. Instead, a new necklace came out of the cubic box. It was glowing with a soothing light.

‘Ding! You’ve succeeded in fusing the [Glimmering Necklace] and the [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. You’ve acquired [Glimmering Berserker's Necklace (Upgrade +1)]!’

Zhang Yang was speechless with the rules of naming the newly fused equipment. However, the name was not important. The important thing was the new set of attributes of the equipment!

[Glimmering Berserker's Necklace (Upgrade +1)] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +6,000

Strength: +1,500

Agility: +650

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 12,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,132 Damage when being hit.

Equip: Recovers 10,000 HP at a certain rate when being hit.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

The enhanced equipment could still be enhanced even further. However, the success rate for enhancing the equipment again would drop tremendously. +2 enhancement would still have 80% rate of success. +3 enhancement would still have 70%. However, it would probably be less than a 1% success rate to enhance the equipment up to +10!

Well, that actually made sense, though. If players could enhance their equipment with a high success rate, they could just enhance their Holy Tier equipment until the equipment are as powerful as the Ascended Tier equipment, or even maybe as powerful as a

## Celestial Tier equipment!

However, this piece of Holy Tier equipment had become much more powerful than Zhang Yang could ever anticipate! Not only the three basic attributes of the equipment were slightly increased, the special effect of the equipment had also been enhanced. Under the circumstance that a player has enough equipment to spare, the player could really consider combining large quantities of equipment in order to get powerful ones. After all, the success rate for fusing the two equipment was rather high. Well, at least the rate was still very high for enhancing the equipment to +1.

Although everyone had basically acquired Ascended Tier equipment, Zhang Yang and his gang still had a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment on them. Furthermore, the Hardcore Mode for the Spectre's Cavern would spawn a new batch of Holy Tier equipment once in every 30 days. That should provide Zhang Yang and his gang sufficient amount of equipment to enhance every one of their equipment at least once!

However, the situation would be different for Ascended Tier equipment. They could not even get enough Ascended Tier equipment to wear for themselves. So how would they even think about fusing them?!

Zhang Yang enhanced the [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets] and the result was a success. He managed to acquire a [Crimson Goblin Gauntlets (Upgrade +1)].

[Refined Crimson Iron Gauntlet (Upgrade +1)] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +12,000

Strength: +2,700

Agility: +1,200

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 24,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorb 2,102 Damage when being hit.

Required Level: 220

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Because Zhang Yang still had one extra Holy Tier Gauntlet to spare, he decided to combine the equipment with the spare. With 80% rate of success, he decided to go with it. Zhang Yang tightened his teeth and put the two equipment into the [Tesseract] once more. Upon seeing a flash of light radiating out from the [Tesseract], the two equipment had been combined into one!

It was a successful bet!

[Refined Crimson Iron Gauntlet (Upgrade +2)] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +13,000

Strength: +3,000

Agility: +1,300

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 26,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 2,102 Damage when being hit.

Required Level: 220

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

# Chapter 809: The Search for the Wind

## Essence Pearl

---

Upon enhancing the equipment, the percentage of the additional damage and the amount of Damage Absorption would not change even by a bit. However, the Vitality, Strength and the other attributes would increase by 10% every time the equipment is enhanced. That would make the equipment quite powerful.

Theoretically speaking, the attributes and other additional effects that a +8 Holy Tier equipment had could have exceeded the attributes of an Ascended Tier equipment! Of course, the success rate of enhancing the equipment up to +8 would be extremely low. One failure in the fusion of two equipment would result in the destruction of both equipment. There will not be a second attempt. That being said, the rate of success would theoretically be  $0.9 * 0.8 * 0.7 \dots * 0.2 = 0.3\%$ . It would not be that easy, of course.

However, the [Tesseract] would still be a useful item, no matter what.

Well, would he be the only one in the entire server to have possessed such a great item then? The game had Socket Gemstones, Weapon Runes and many other enhancement systems. Those were some great ‘money generators’ for the game company. So, how would they able to pass on this piece of cubic [Tesseract] and not make it into another of their new ‘money generators’ then?

After all, the [Tesseract] had a 1-hour cooldown. Furthermore, the item could not fuse and improve the Tier of equipment that were higher Tier than Holy Tier. The [Tesseract] could only enhance those high Tier equipment. However, because of that, when the Holy Tier equipment begins to depreciate in the hands of high Tier players, they could take those Holy Tier equipment as ingredients to fuse or combine. As long as they get a large quantity

of Holy Tier equipment, they would stand a chance to achieve a +5 enhancement on their equipment!

Meanwhile, a +5 Upgrade Holy Tier equipment would be almost as powerful as a basic Ascended Tier equipment without any enhancement!

Zhang Yang could choose to shout out to the public, telling everyone about the existence of the [Tesseract] and its functions. By then, there should be tons of players coming up to him asking for his services in enhancing their equipment. Super rich Top Tier players like Hourglass Figure and Dusk Phoenix would definitely be willing to pay over a million dollars for each enhancement. They would not even care about money anymore, since they were so rich!

However, would the system really allow that kind of opportunity to make more money just slip by? Zhang Yang would not believe they would, even a thousand years after his death.

Well, the system would definitely introduce a large-scale equipment fusion system in the game. The question would be, when? However, that would not concern Zhang Yang much because all he needed to do now was to focus on getting as many Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment as he could possibly find in the entire server. That would matter most, because he could enhance his future equipment to obtain even more powerful equipment! When others manage to get +8 Upgrade Holy Tier equipment, Zhang Yang could have easily beat the other players by having a +1 Upgrade Ascended Tier equipment!

Upon going back to see Baa'ljilr once again, Zhang Yang received another quest that required him to gather more materials for the NPC's plan.

[The Search for the Wind Essence Pearl] (Difficulty: Subject to change)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants you to find the Wind Essence Pearl so

that he can carry on with setting up his Sacred Enchantment. According to legend, the Wind Essence Pearl belonged to the god of wind, Anes. When Anes fell, the Wind Essence Pearl was dropped into a cave. Because the Wind Essence Pearl can take the form of a tornado, that cave was named the 'Gale Cavern' for that reason. You can find the Gale Cavern in the Mount Polo 400 kilometers from where you stand right now. However, it will not be easy to pass through the Gale Cavern and acquire the Wind Essence Pearl! Warrior, you need luck in this quest. That's right! Luck!

Completion: Acquire the Wind Essence Pearl 0/1

A quest without a specific difficulty, huh? This must be a quest that would put the players' reaction to test. Even though everyone had the same Class, same equipment Tier, same Skills, some could pass a test with flying colours while some would fail in misery without even know how to react to the situation.

Zhang Yang immediately departed. He rode the Phoenix pet and flew over 400 kilometers into the Mount Polo. It did not take long before Zhang Yang located the entrance to the Gale Cavern.

It seemed that Zhang Yang was not the only one who was completing this quest at the moment. When he arrived at the entrance to the cavern, there were already more than 10 players standing right in front of the entrance. Well, just like the Chinese say, the name of a person is like the shadow of a tree. The more famous you are, the more influential you are. Even though Zhang Yang did not reveal his character information to the public, the gigantic blazing bird underneath his butt had betrayed his name out to the people who saw it. Those players were so worried the moment they recognized that he was Zhang Yang. They did not really know him well after all. Who knows if he suddenly loses himself and kills everyone he sees! He might even want to kill everyone so that he could take the quest all to himself! Instantly, the players began to charge into the cavern with the intention of hiding from Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not help to smile bitterly. Well, is he really that scary to others in the game?

However, these people could really become his 'pathfinders'. They could explore and let Zhang Yang know what lay beyond the entrance of that cavern.

"Argh ---" not long after did the player charged into the cavern, Zhang Yang suddenly heard a bunch of miserable screams coming out from the entrance of the cavern. Instantly, the players were being shredded into pieces across the ground! They were running into a blender and getting themselves blended into pieces by white visible air current! Countless pieces of blood and bones were scattered into the surroundings of the cavern, like it was raining blood and bones! Eww!

Well, it was not like people had not seen such scenes that involved bloody killing and gore. However, seeing people getting shredded into pieces like that was an extremely rare sight in the game. Some of the shredded blood and bones of the dead players splattered on the other players who were still alive. Instantly, those players started feeling uncomfortable. Some of them were even beginning to feel like vomiting.

"Argh!" "Argh!"

The miserable screaming were heard one after another. Many more were shredded as they attempted to go forward. Any players would actually see that there were countless holes across the ground of the cavern. The holes were packed so closely together as if they looked like the design of a honeycomb! Countless white air currents were seen shooting out from the holes killing whoever who touched them.

The remaining players who were still alive quickly took a few steps back, one after another. However, the passage they came from was not necessarily safe even though they managed to get through alive. Countless miserable screams continued on. Another

4 players were shredded into pieces!

Initially, there were more than 10 players who went straight into the cavern. However, only two of them made it back out! Furthermore, everything happened very swiftly. The entire incident was only about 10 seconds! Well, if they went deeper into the cavern earlier on, no one would have made it out alive!

It did not take long before Zhang Yang acquired a conclusion after observing them for a bit. So these air currents that come out of the hole on the ground would definitely ignore everyone's HP bar --- they would just kill the players instantly upon touch and shred the players into pieces! So whoever who touches it will definitely not survive. Even if the players could survive the shredding process, how would the players proceed when they are already shredded into pieces? Crawl forward in the form of meat chunks? Eww as f\*ck!

Zhang Yang had already activated the recording function of the game and recorded everything that happened a moment ago. Then he immediately took out the footage and began to study it.

Meanwhile, the difficulty of passing through the cavern was too much for the players to handle for the moment. Some even came up with the assumption that there must be some special hidden reward buried deep in the other end of the cavern. So those who were not afraid to die took off their equipment and charge straight into the cavern. Well, since they would be dead the moment they touch the air current, it would not make any difference as to whether they were wearing any equipment or not. Well, they took their equipment off because they would not have to bear the cost of having to repair their equipment after they die.

Currently, everyone was waiting for someone to come up with a solution. There must be some pattern in order for the players to get through safely. Therefore, none of them intended to battle other players --- these players were coming from different Regions. If they were currently standing at a different location or different



map, they would have pulled out their weapons and slaughtered each other up!

Zhang Yang did not rush. He took his own sweet time to analyze the pattern of the deadly air currents and how to get through them without touching any one of them.

The air current seemed to be the powerful effects of the Wind Essence Pearl. As for why the air currents were all in white in color... well, if they were invisible, players would have nothing to look at, wouldn't they?

When there was no player entering the cavern, everything would stay peaceful. However, the moment when a player steps foot into the cavern, every single hole on the ground would constantly shoot out white air current like the blades of a blender! Anyone who got touched by the air currents would be shredded into pieces. It would not matter even if you have a million points of HP on you. It would just be an instant kill.

Therefore, the difficulty of the quest would subject to change. Upon mastering the pattern of the air currents, players would be able to pass through safely even if they do not have any equipment on them. However, if the players decide to charge in without any plan like idiots, they would be shredded into pieces and die, even if they are wearing a full set of Celestial Tier equipment.

The number of players by the entrance of the cavern was getting more and more by the minutes. The players had tried out all sorts of methods in an attempt to get through the cavern's traps. Some of them sent their Battle Companions in while the others tried to send their pets in as well. Some even attempted to bodily hurl their Servants into the cavern to see if they could go through without triggering the air currents. However, everything would trigger the traps and be shredded to bits the moment they went into the cavern.

{Stealth} Ineffective! Use of Potions to get invisible, attempt

failed! Activating Invincibility effect, shredded to pieces like nobody's business!

Countless methods had been used in an attempt to get through the cavern. Everyone was playing by the rules, knowing that getting into the cavern was the only way to complete the quest.

However, these countless air current seemed to show no patterns of attack at all. Some of the holes did not react at all until they 'sense' the presence of players around them. When that happens, they would just shoot the air current out and shred everyone that is in the cavern.

Zhang Yang recorded every method ever attempted by the other players so that he could take a closer look at determining the patterns of the air current. Well, he must also memorize over 100 possible changes of the pattern before he charges out and gets through in a single attempt. Any hesitation would end up with him taking the wrong step and putting him right on top of the traps. By then, he would be shredded like how the other players had been.

Zhang Yang continued to focus on familiarizing himself with the possible patterns of the air current even though they looked irregular and complicated as f\*ck. He was meditating like an old monk without moving a single muscle of his body. However, his eyes were moving around intensely as if he was able to see every single detail that was happening in the cavern when the players were challenging to get into the cavern.

Quite a period of time had passed, some players had totally given up on getting themselves killed pointlessly. They decided to leave the cavern so that they could grind someplace else. Meanwhile, some of them were still willing to believe that there must be some very handsome rewards waiting for them by the end of the cavern. They were not willing to give up just yet.

Well, up till this point, no one could figure out the patterns of the trap in the cavern just yet. Or maybe some of them had it figured

out. However, it would take quite a while before they could get familiarized with the pattern of the trap in order to get through the trap safely.

Another hour had gone by without notice. Zhang Yang stood up to his feet and decided to make his move. However, he summoned Han Ying Xue over to his spot with his [Lover's Charm] first. Then he traded the [Book of Revelation] to her for safe-keeping. Well, just in case if he ever fails and dies in the attempt to get through the trap, he might risk being killed by others after he gets resurrected on the spot where he dies. By then, he would definitely drop the [Book of Revelation] and risk losing it forever!

So, safety comes first. It would be much better to let Han Ying Xue take care of the book for the moment. Well, she could just escape into the sky if anyone tries to attack her. After all, she was riding on her Flying Mount at the moment. If she really gets herself into deep trouble, she could just activate her Inheritance Transformation. However, normal players would never dare to attack any high Tier players first --- unless the temptation is too great to be ignored!

Zhang Yang took in a very deep breath. Then he suddenly stomped the ground and charged towards the entrance of the cavern at top speed.

"Is that Zhan Yu?"

"That's right! He came here on a Phoenix pet. Well, there's another player, a fat wretched Hunter, who also has a Phoenix pet. Other than these two, I don't think there's anyone else who has a Phoenix pet in the entire server!"

"Pui! The traps installed in this cavern are too much! Their attacks even ignored our HP. Anyone who gets touched by those deadly air currents will be instantly killed! Let's not talk about Zhan Yu, even a powerful boss would have to kneel and die if the boss ever steps into the cavern!"

"Well, that's really unfortunate! If I've known about it earlier, I would have hit him once before he ran into the cavern. Who knows! He might drop some Celestial Tier equipment after he gets himself killed by the traps in the cavern!"

...

Even though Zhang Yang overheard the discussion among the players right outside the cavern, he did not waste his time on reacting to their words. He was currently focused on calculating the holes on the ground that would shoot out deadly air currents. Left! Left! Left! Left! Right! Right! Left! Left! Left! Zhang Yang was running in a zig-zag route. However, he suddenly ran in a straight line after a while of running across the cavern in zig-zag route. It seemed as if he was running in an irregular pattern.

However, if there were clever players in the vicinity to see how Zhang Yang ran, they would have noticed that Zhang Yang had mastered the pattern of the route. That was why he was able to charge forward without getting himself killed! Or else, the air current coming out from the holes would have killed him instantly.

The cavern was extremely long, it did not take long before the people by the entrance could no longer see Zhang Yang's shadow in the cavern.

"Huh? How could he pass the traps by simply running forward like a crazy person!?"

"I don't think he just simply ran forward. If he did, he would have been killed!"

"Look at him! There's no pattern at all! It's just random steps! It must be luck! He must be lucky! Didn't you see the description of the quest? You need luck!"

"That's right! It's definitely luck!"

"However, the cave is so deep and long. His luck will run out

sooner or later. I'm afraid that he's dead by now as we speak!"

"Yeap! He must be dead now!"

# Chapter 810: The Four Essence Pearls

---

Zhang Yang was charging forward against the direction of the wind current. He was sweating so profusely that his sweat was dripping down across his face as if he had just come out of water. For every single second, his mind was set to calculate and predict. Well, any slightest mistake he makes will doom him to pieces. Using his brain power over a period of time was exhausting as f\*ck. Zhang Yang felt dizzy, as if he was about to pass out.

He was on the verge of losing his focus now!

Just when his face became pale as snow, he saw that his front view became clear and sunny. There was a stone room with the size of 40 to 50 meter-square with a boulder in the middle of the stone room. There was a snowy white large bead placed right on top of the boulder. It was about the size of a fist.

That must be the Wind Essence Pearl!

Zhang Yang burst into joy and quickly took 7 large steps. He charged right into the stone room before he even realized it. Meanwhile, there were no trap holes on the ground inside the stone room. He should be safe for now!

It was just tiring! F\*cking tiring!

It was only a few minutes, and Zhang Yang had felt like going through centuries of time! He felt his head swelling as if he was having a hangover. He sat down on his \*ss and took in a deep breath.

After resting for quite some time, he finally found the strength to stand back up on his feet. Then he walked up to the bolder and picked up the Wind Essence Pearl. After shoving it into his inventory in a swift manner, Zhang Yang quickly informed Han Ying Xue saying that the quest had been completed. He wanted her to teleport him out of the god damn place with her [Lover's

Charm].

When Han Ying Xue arrived at the Holy City, Zhang Yang gave some thoughts on it. Would he be able to save more time by running out of the cave and all the way back to Baa'ljlir or would it be faster for him to use his teleportation and get back to Baa'ljlir then? Well, it was actually obvious that he could save more time by running all the way out of the cavern and back to Baa'ljlir. However, the moment when he remembered how torturous it was for him to focus so much within a period of time, he could not help to feel the intense chill up his spine. He decisively used his Teleportation Scroll and got back to Holy City.

Meanwhile, a few more players that did not fear death charged into the cavern. However, they managed to make it quite deep into the cavern based on their understanding. They believed that by jumping left and right in an attempt to dodge, they would be able to get through the traps alive!

They were so excited about it. They were beginning to praise themselves for being clever. However, many of them immediately noticed that they made it not because they had mastered the patterns of the traps. It was merely because the traps were no longer deadly. The air currents no longer shredded people!

Therefore, everyone quickly charged into the cavern. However, when they reached the stone house in the cavern, there was no sign of the Wind Essence Pearl.

"Could it be Zhan Yu who took the pearl then?"

"Well, I'm pretty sure it's him! The Wind Essence Pearl functioned just like how its name suggests. Since the insanely deadly air currents no longer threaten us and the traps no longer hurt us, I believe that the pearl has been claimed by Zhan Yu!"

"What the f\*ck! How did that fellow do it then?!"

...

Zhang Yang did not know that after he took the pearl, the traps in the cavern had lost their functions. Well, he went through all the trouble traveling for over tens of hours. It would be best that he never finds out about this.

"Wind Essence Pearl! You've got the pearl! Yeah! That's great! We're one step closer to my objective now!" Baa'ljilr slammed the table with excitement and joy. He revealed his excitement on his face while handling the Wind Essence Pearl like a precious lover. His eyes looked wretched to the point that Zhang Yang could feel an intense shiver across his entire body.

"Cough! Cough!" Baa'ljilr cleared his throat and said, "However, now is not the time to be proud though! Not yet! Although we have the Wind Essence Pearl, we still need to get our hands on the Fire Essence Pearl, Ice Essence Pearl, Shadow Essence Pearl and Light Essence Pearl. These pearls once belonged to the Fire God, the Ice God, the Shadow God and the Light God! Following their falls, these pearls had been dropped into a mysterious realm called the Ambross! Only the Wind Essence Pearl can open the portal to that realm though!"

Baa'ljilr looked at the Wind Essence Pearl like he was about to leave his lover before passing it over to Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Young man, take this Wind Essence Pearl. It can be used to open Ambross the Gate of Time. Well, that should bring you into Ambross for sure. By then, you should be able to gather the 'Essence Pearls of Four' in that realm!"

'Ding! Baa'ljilr the Imposter has given you a quest: Essence Pearl of Four. Do you accept?'

The mysterious realm Ambross must be a secret dungeon in the game. Meanwhile, the four Pearls should be kept safe by four different types of Ascended Tier bosses! So Zhang Yang had finally progressed to a new stage now!

Accept!



‘Ding! You’ve acquired an item: Wind Essence Pearl.’

[Essence Pearls of Four] (Difficulty: Rank-S)

Description: Baa'ljlir wants you to locate the Fire Essence Pearl, Ice Essence Pearl, Shadow Essence Pearl and Light Essence Pearl for him so that he can continue on with the construction of the Sacred Enchantment. You can use the Wind Essence Pearl to open up Ambross the Gate of Time. However, please take note that each of the four Essence Pearls are in the possessions of four powerful monsters. You must bring a group of friends In order to retrieve the Pearls. Other than that, the Wind Essence Pearl will only stay in your possession for the next 90 days. The Pearl will return to the hands of Baa'ljlir when the time is up.

Completion: Acquire Fire Essence Pearl 0/1, Ice Essence Pearl 0/1, Shadow Essence Pearl 0/1, Light Essence Pearl 0/1

Number of players: 20

Quest Reward: Demonic Seal

[Demonic Seal] (Ascended, Accessory)

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: When being hit, there is a rate of activating the Demon's Strength. Causes the user to acquire the immunity to any damage and status restriction effect. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Use: Controls a demon and lets it serve you. The duration differs based on the difference between your level and the demon's level. However, the duration will not exceed 5 minutes. Cooldown: 24 hours.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

An Ascended Tier Accessory! That's awesome!

Furthermore, there were a total of 4 Ascended Tier bosses in the dimension of Ambross. How many Ascended Tier equipment could

they harvest when they manage to slay all the bosses then?

Because the Wind Essence Pearl was a one-time item, the 'Essence Pearls of Four' could only be completed by one party in the entire server. So there would not be others to snatch the boss from them. However, the system had also set a limit over the players that accepted the quest to prevent any unforeseen circumstance that would disfavor the system. Well, the players must complete the quest within 90 days or the Wind Essence Pearl would return to the hand of Baa'ljilr so that the other parties would stand a chance to complete the quest.

Firstly, it could guarantee the party who completed the quest for getting the reward. After all, the party would have 90 days to challenge the boss. That should consider as one of the rewards provided by the boss. Secondly, even if the first party was not strong enough to complete the quest, the other parties who would find the quest would have an opportunity to attempt completing the quest. Thus, the 90-day limited period of time. The server was vast and the number players were tremendous. Sooner or later, there would be some other party that could complete the quest and trigger the next main story quest.

With a limited period of time to settle this, Zhang Yang decided not to waste any more time. Well, he had no idea how many monsters would he need to stay before engaging the boss. So he quickly gathers his men and gathered all 16 members of his 2 main parties. There were still 4 empty slots on the second main party at the moment. Furthermore, the reward for completing this quest was too nice to be passed on. It would be a waste that nobody could forgive!

Zhang Yang would be selecting 4 members of the guild. These 4 players must be the best among the best among the Lone Desert Smoke. Everyone must at least has an Inheritance Transformation. However, the final four players that Zhang Yang found only had Class C Inheritance. So their power level could not match the rest

of his gang, naturally.

Well, that was because they were compared to Zhang Yang and his insane friends! If these 4 players were compared to the other players in the server, the players with Class C Inheritance would be extremely powerful in their own ways. They were basically an existence that Normal players dream of becoming.

Upon getting ready and getting equipped with the required supplies, Zhang Yang gathered everyone in one spot and summoned a portal with the Wind Essence Pearl. Everyone entered the portal, one after another. After that, they found themselves in a mythical place. It was mysterious.

They were standing in the middle of a lower ground. The landscape of the ground was like a basin. There were 4 mountains in the surroundings. One of them was blazingly hot that it looked like there was melted metal flowing from the top of it. Meanwhile, the other mountain looked snowy and frosty. It looked like a gigantic ice mountain, completely formed from ice. The third mountain was shrouded by dark clouds so densely that the tip of the mountain was not visible to them. Last but not least, the fourth mountain was shone upon by the sacred light coming down from the heaven. Well, it looked completely otherworldly.

Without the need to guess, everyone knew clearly that these four mountains would have the Essence Pearls that they had to collect. Each mountain represented the elements of each of the four pearls.

They were allowed to summon out their Flying Mount, however, they were restricted from flying in the air. They could just ride on their Flying Mount and run on the ground. In other words, the system would not allow the players to take the easy way and fly straight to the mountains. They would need to follow the rules and travel all the way to all four mountains on foot. Well, they would need to clear out the monsters along the way, of course.

"Let's go now! I want Ascended Tier equipment!" Wei Yan was an

impatient little b\*tch as she had always been. So she rode on her mount and shouted out loud.

"So which mountain do we go first then?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "We shall go to the Fire mountain first!"

Well, since they were going to take down all four mountains, it would not matter much by which mountain they would go first. So naturally, no one voted against Zhang Yang's opinion.

However, the moment when the party stepped foot into the 'territory' of this mountain, they were afflicted with a negative effect.

[Burning Aura]: Causes 50,000 Fire Damage to all once in every 3 seconds.

Although 50,000 damage was not a high amount, however, with 20 players, a bunch of Battle Companions and a lot of pets in the vicinity, the numbers would really start adding up. Once every 3 seconds, the {Burning Aura} effect could deal a total of 2,050,000 Fire Damage! There were 4 Healers in the party. So, each Healer would need to heal over an amount of 500,000 HP. That amount of stress was quite a pain in the \*ss, though.

Therefore, everyone quickly kept their Battle Companion into their slots. As for Hundred Shots, he just hopped onto his Red Dragon. Well, his Red Dragon pet could still provide a decent amount of damage, still. Meanwhile, the Phoenix pet was immune to Fire Damage. Therefore, Fatty Han could just sit on the Phoenix pet and roam around without the need to worry about being burn to crisp.

Since the area had restricted players from flying, everyone could only walk across the mountain on foot. Well, naturally, the mountain was not a place for the players to relax and look at the scenery around. The moment they entered the area, they saw 8

Elemental monsters wandering around in that area. The moment the monsters detected the presence of the players, they waved their hands around and charged towards the party.

[Fire Element Meister] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,335 – 158,335 (Based on Physical Attack, however, causes Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Flamethrower]: Spits out a stream of blazing flame and causes 130,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters.

[Self-destruct]: Detonates the Blazing core deep in its body, causing 200,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters. Furthermore, the targets will sustain an additional 100% Fire Damage when being hit by Fire type attacks. Chanting time: 5 seconds.

Note: Fire Element Meister are the underlings of Fire Elemental Lord Ganesh. They will react violently at any trespasser who enters their territory.

The maximum number of players for this quest had been set as 20. Meanwhile, a normal party of 20 would have 4 Tankers. The system was obviously asking each of the Tankers to tank against two Elite Tier monsters, at the least. The party would not be able to meet the requirement to progress forward in the dungeon even if one of the Tankers could not do that.

Zhang Yang swung his axe and lured half of the number of those Fire Element Meisters over to him. Then he said, "The rest are all yours! You two decide how many do you want to take!"

"Boss! How can you do that? I can tank 5 of them at the same

time!" Endless Starlight immediately screamed like a little b\*tch. Then he threw a {Shield Toss} and a {Provoke} in an attempt to lure the other 4 Elite Tier monsters over to him.

However, even though Ten Dusk does not speak much, he still had his pride. So how could he allowed that two to show off in front of the others, then? He also quickly activated his {Charge}, followed by a normal attack to accumulate Rage Points. Then he immediately activated his {Thunder Strike} and {Blast Wave} consecutively in an attempt to get the aggro of the monsters! The three of them began to snatch the aggro of the monsters in their vicinity.

# Chapter 811: Fire Elemental Core

---

For a Tanker, the best achievement would be seeing the aggro of the monsters were firmly fixed on him or herself. Well, that would cause all DPS players to not go to OT.

That would be the glory for the Tankers.

Therefore, Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight and Ten Dusks could not help but begin snatching the monsters' aggro over to themselves. To exhibit their true strength in such regard, the three of them did not use their {Provoke} anymore, other than luring the monsters in the beginning of the battle. They were competing against each other in the aspect of controlling the monsters' aggro.

If their strength and skills did not differ much from each other, their equipment would be the one aspect that would decide who would win in the end. Zhang Yang's Attack power was so powerful that he could oppress any DPS players around him currently. So he should be the top to get the aggro of the monsters. There shouldn't be anyone who could match his capability right now. As long as he is willing to do it, he could easily lure the aggro of all 8 monsters over to him.

However, he needed to hold back a little so that the others would not feel awkward and lose their confidence. So, Zhang Yang only focused on getting the aggro of the 4 monsters fixed on him. He did not even touch the other 4 monsters. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight had two pieces of legendary equipment on him, especially his Celestial Tier equipment. That weapon had bestowed him the ability to create a large amount of aggro over a brief period of time. His capability to create aggro had far exceeded the capability of Ten Dusk in creating aggro for the monsters. Therefore, he managed to get the aggro of three monsters to himself, leaving only one monster for Ten Dusk to deal with.

Of course, the best Tanker in the vicinity currently would be the

Phoenix pet. Not only it was immune to all Fire Damage, it could also deal AoE attacks to the targets in its surroundings. Therefore, the Phoenix pet had an absolute advantage in dealing with a large number of monsters at the same time.

Under the insanely powerful suppression of the party, one of the Fire Element Meisters had been bombarded so critically that it only had 10% HP left. At the same time, a progress bar suddenly appeared right below the head of the monster. It was the monster's {Self-destruct}!

Zhang Yang would never have let a monster do what it wants. Immediately, he activated his {Crash Magic} in an attempt to interrupt the monster's casting. However, the Skill {Self-Destruct} was not considered as one of the Magic type attacks. Zhang Yang failed to interrupt the Skill! He quickly activated his {Brutal Smash} in an attempt to interrupt the monster again! Instantly, the monster was stunned! Finally, its chanting was interrupted successfully!

4 seconds later, the monster attempted to use its {Self-Destruct}. However, it was too late. The monster would require 5 seconds to chant for the spell. Well, it was surrounded and beaten to death within 3 seconds! The monster raised its hands towards the sky, turned into some fiery red light pieces and scattered across the ground.

One after another the monsters were killed. However, one monster managed to activate its {Self-Destruct}, dealing quite a substantial amount of damage to the whole party. Meanwhile, even though the monsters that succeeded in detonating themselves would still provide players Experience Points, there would not be any dead bodies left after the explosion. Therefore, there would not be any trace of any loot left on the ground after the monsters die.

As usual, Wei Yan Er went up to pick up the loots. There were quite a number of useless stuff. However, there was also three fiery



red pill-like stuff as well.

[Fire Elemental Core] (Consumable)

[Use: Causes 200,000 Fire Damage to all living things in the range of 10 meters. Also causes the targets to receive additional 100% Fire Damage when being hit by Fire Attacks. Lasts for 10 seconds. Effects cannot stack. Cooldown: 5 seconds.

Required Level: 200

"Wow! The effect of the bomb seems to be very powerful!"

"These seem more powerful than the bombs that uncle Hundred Shots has to offer!"

"It would be super great if every monster drops these bombs!"

Everyone was expressing their joy and excitement for stumbling across such items. These [Fire Elemental Cores] only had 5 seconds of cooldown. Meanwhile, because these were considered as items, using them would not clash with the players' Skills. Furthermore, 200,000 AoE damage sounded pretty decent as well! Theoretically speaking, as long as the number of [Fire Elemental Cores] is abundant enough, anyone could get an increase in DPS of 40,000 damage. Meanwhile, the higher the number of monsters in the vicinity, the more damage the players could deal!

Because those were 'items' belonged to the monsters for self-destruct purpose, the monsters would only drop the item if they were unsuccessful in activating their {Self-Destruct}. However, that Skill was not easy for the players to handle though. Well, because the firepower of Zhang Yang and the party was powerful enough, everyone did not have to run away from the monsters whenever they activate their {Self-Destruct} and stay the hell out of the effective range of the explosions.

Initially, Zhang Yang intended to use the two Phoenix pets to lure the monsters away and let them unleash their AoE Skills on the monsters. However, everyone seemed to be very eager to collect

the [Fire Elemental Cores] and use them as grenades or bombs. Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to play along and gave up doing that.

--- The purpose of using AoE attacks was to increase the speed of clearing out the monsters. It would not be possible for the players to control the monsters. Therefore, it would become impossible for the party to collect [Fire Elemental Cores] from killing the monsters. By then, everyone would be furious!

The passage across the mountain was not straight at all. Instead, the passage spiraled up to the top of the mountain. So all they needed to do in order to get to the top was to follow the passage. Well, the size of the mountain was not small at all, especially the bottom of the mountain area. One circle around the mountain was more than 20 kilometers. So, anyone could imagine how many freaking monsters the party had to slay before they could reach the top of the mountain!

However, the party would be able to collect more [Fire Elemental Cores] if they could encounter more monsters. Upon getting familiar with the methods used to battle the monsters, the party managed to form a chain of Status Restriction. No monster could successfully activate {Self-Destruct} if they were ever present in the 'radar' of the party. Every single one of them had to obediently drop the [Fire Elemental Cores] for the party to collect!

As they progressed on, the number of [Fire Elemental Cores] in everyone's inventory was getting higher and higher by the minute. Fortunately, the slots available in the inventory of everyone had reached over 300 to 400 slots. They would have to cry miserably if the available slots in their inventory turned out to be similar when the game server was newly opened.

3 days later, the party managed to push up to 10% of the mountain's height. Judging from their current speed in their progress, although the passage seemed to become shorter as they progressed up, it would still require at least 21 days for the party to

reach the top. That would mean 7 days in real-time.

Even if the boss turns out to be easy to kill, it would still take 28 days for the party to take down all four mountains. That was approximately 1 month.

Meanwhile, the Wind Essence Pearl would only stay in Zhang Yang's possession for 90 days. Under the circumstance that the game time and the real time are in the ratio of 3:1, the party would only have barely enough time to complete the quest. Therefore, Zhang Yang would basically could not do anything else for an entire month. He could only stay here until they defeat all 4 bosses in this realm.

However, the Ascended Tier bosses aside, these Elite Tier monsters could really provide the players quite a substantial amount of Experience Points --- well, no one was there to snatch the monsters from them! Furthermore, the [Fire Elemental Cores] were really some good stuff. Just imagine this. These things could actually increase a player's DPS by 400,000 damage. How great was that, right?

The designers of the realm probably did not anticipate that Zhang Yang and his party would turn out to be so insanely powerful. They stopped almost 100% of the Fire Element Meisters from detonating themselves up! They had really outdone themselves in collecting the [Fire Elemental Cores]!

Well, it was really exciting and intense to collect [Fire Elemental Cores]. The party was willing to beg for more Fire Element Meisters to be spawned. They were not tired of slaying the monsters because they could get good 'bombs' from slaying them. When they had finally reached the top of the mountain, each of the members of the party managed to acquire 4 to 5 sets of the item --- that would mean that each of them have managed to acquire approximately 1,000 [Fire Elemental Cores]!

"Finally! We can take a closer look at the boss!"

Upon looking back at the past month, the party had been slaying monsters for the entire month without doing any other thing. They were about to vomit whenever they thought of battling the monsters. If they were asked to do that for another month, they would surely quit immediately!

However, engaging in difficult battles like that had to earn everyone on the party a substantial amount of Experience Points. Zhang Yang's Experience Bar had reached 78% of his Level 211 currently. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, and the other core players had also reached Level 210 by now.

Right at the top of the mountain, there was a gigantic round platform. The platform was not tall. However, the diameter of the round platform was at least 500 meters! A gigantic Elemental Monster was standing right in the middle of the platform. The monster was approximately 30 meters tall. The entire body of the monster was in dark red. Lava was dripping constantly from the monster's body, flooding up the hundred-meter area around it, turning the area into dark red color. Although there was not even the slightest flame visible on top of the lava, well, anyone could use their common sense to know that that lava would definitely be hotter than those red-hot metallic plates after they are heated up!

This Elemental monster looked humanoid. It had legs and hands just like a regular human. However, the face of the monster did not have the five facial features, nor did it have any hair on its head. The body was flowing with the dark red lava, though. The monster was holding a hammer in its red dark right hand. Its size was approximately three times the size of a regular person!

[Fire Elemental Lord Ganesh] (Ascended, Elemental)

Level: 240

HP: 12,010,000,000

Defence: 37,330

Melee Attack: 370,873 - 450,873 (Based on Melee Attack, however, deals Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Burning Ground]: Scorches the entire area into a land of blazing fire in the range of 100 meters, all targets in the effective area will receive 300,000 Fire Damage once every 3 seconds.

[Immolation Smash]: Smashes the target with the hammer, causing 100% Melee Attack of Fire Damage on the target.

[Fire Tornado]: Randomly put 10 Fire Tornadoes. The Fire Tornadoes will be formed successfully after 2 seconds and burn everything that catches up to them, dealing an amount of damage equal to 10% of the target's Maximum HP. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Raging Flame]: Each player's death will provide Ganesh with an additional 100% Damage.

[Elemental Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The HP amount recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: This is Fire Elemental Lord. The Fire Essence Pearl has absorbed all the fire elemental particles and give life to the Fire Elemental Lord. It's the symbol of Fire!

"It seemed like an easy boss!" Upon seeing the Skills of the boss, everyone felt relieved.

Based on its single-unit, the boss was worthy of being an Ascended Tier boss. However, bosses were not called bosses because of their single-unit attacks, but their AoE attacks. Judging from the boss's Skill, the boss only had a {Burning Ground} which the party could not avoid at all. Although the {Fire Tornado} was so powerful that it could reduce 50% HP of the players, players could just dodge the attacks.

Meanwhile, the {Burning Ground} would deal 300,000 damage to the players each time it hit. With everyone's current Tier of the equipment, everyone should be able to absorb 10,000 damage. That

being said, they would be receiving 290,000 damage once in every 3 seconds. Furthermore, the {Burning Aura} could deal 50,000 damage once in every 3 seconds. Well, practically, it could only deal 40,000 damage, though. Therefore, each player would receive over 110,000 damage in each passing second. The 4 healers on the party would definitely be able to heal everyone up nice and steady.

Therefore, the key to survival would be dodging the {Fire Tornadoes} with care. If those attacks hit the players, the healers would be in deep sh\*t.

Upon activating their Inheritance Transformations, everyone could finally maximize their DPS output on the boss. Well, the total DPS of the entire party had actually reached over 6,500,000 damage now! However, 6 of them had not reached Level 210 yet. So they were restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Therefore, their Attack power was heavily affected and nerfed.

However, most of the core DPS players had reached Level 210 and beyond that. They were not restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Therefore, the DPS of the entire party could easily exceed 5,500,000 DPS! Of course, that amount of DPS only included two Phoenix pets, one Red Dragon pet, Felice and Sun Xin Yu's Holy Tier Armadimon.

The Recovery rate of the boss was approximately 4,000,000 per second. Therefore, the effective damage would only be 1,500,000. The party would still require 133 minutes to kill the boss.

Because Inheritance Transformations could only last for 120 minutes. So the 13-minute gap could become the fatal moment that causes them to lose the boss battle. Once everyone had left their Inheritance Transformation State, the DPS of the entire party would be reduced by half. If they could not deal at least 4,000,000 DPS, the boss would only recover more and more HP!

Fortunately, the party had acquired quite a number of [Fire

Elemental Cores]. So each of the players could add a DPS of 40,000 damage to the total DPS of the party. Well, 20 of them would be able to deal up to 800,000 damage in every passing second! That could definitely cover the shortage of damage during the 13-minute gap now!

# Chapter 812: Flame Elemental Lord Ganesh

---

Zhang Yang jumped into the fight, closely trailed by the party.

"Everyone! It's Morphin' time!"

Fatty Han laughed out loud while the rest of the team giggled as they activated their Transformation skills. One by one, all sorts of forms were unleashed. Each time they went through this, Wei Yan Er would never fail to laugh at Endless Starlight the king kong, and Fatty Han the overweight vampire.

It was also the first time Cheng Xue Yao was using her Transformation skill in front of anyone else. As an A class Inheritance, her Transformation was both flashy and beautiful. Unlike the others, Cheng Xue Yao's transformation caused all her equipment to fade away. 80% of her naked body was exposed to the world, and her skin had turned ice blue. The air around her crystalized and dropped on the floor as snowflakes. She looked like a beautiful ice sculpture. The sort of elegance she gave off was extravagant, paired with the icy crown resting on her forehead and metallic brassiere that only covered her breast and private parts.

As expected of the Ice Queen Inheritance, her presence in the field was exactly like the Hindu goddess Shiva.

Everyone, including Zhang Yang had to stop and stare at the beauty of it. Fatty Han would never hold back against women, hence, when Cheng Xue Yao Transformed, he immediately went ahead and tried his luck to sweet talk his way to court Cheng Xue Yao. Endless Starlight had to hide away to conceal his red face. Amongst the men around, Endless Starlight was the only person around who had never seen a woman dressed in such an alluring manner. That was probably the closest thing he could go to seeing a woman naked. As the other men were behaving as expectedly when greeted by the sight of a beautiful lady, Female Raid Covert was behaving oddly. Instead of being infatuated with Cheng Xue



Yao's most alluring appearance, the weird fellow was not flustered. Instead, he had only taken a short glance at Cheng Xue Yao before turning to Wei Yan Er, the flat-chest loli.

"Alright, guys! Get killing now!"

Zhang Yang spread his wings and soared into the sky. When he was close to the boss, he shot down like an eagle. The environment they were in had forbidden true flying. Hence, Zhang Yang was not able to properly gain altitude and could only glide his way at a certain height. Despite that, he was still able to move at a breakneck speed.

"Hmph...? Attackers?" Ganesh hummed softly as he turned his head. His lips were sealed tightly, yet he was still able to speak. His calm facial expression suddenly turned sour. He lifted his hammer and smashed it towards the ground where Zhang Yang stood. "Who sent you! Antoine? Dustan? Margalor?"

All three names that he had uttered must be the names of the other bosses. "That's for me to know, and for you to find out. The hard way!"

"So be it! I shall pry the truth from your body! One bone at a time!"

Ganesh roared, and his hammer slammed downward. Zhang Yang lifted his shield, planted his feet solidly into the ground, and took the hit.

PANG!

The hammer struck the shield, yet Zhang Yang stood as still as a mountain during a blizzard. However, the ground beneath him cracked, causing Zhang Yang to slip. Lava started pouring down from the shield. Zhang Yang immediately felt the burning heat in his grip and he quickly jumped away. The Lava was oozing out of the boss' hammer like a water from a wrung sponge.

"Haha! Noobie tank couldn't keep his balance! Looks like it's time

for the Black Ranger to kick his steamy butt!" cried Wei Yan Er as she glided across the room like a black crow.

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and re-established his stance, prepared to strike back. The attack that had exceeded more than a million damage had generated more than enough Rage points that his gauge could hold. With a quick combo, Zhang Yang chained {Charge Up Strike} after {God of War Devastation}.

‘-11,687,895!’

When the boss could deal only a million damage on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had turned around and returned 10 times the damage to his face. Such a powerful smack to the face had made Ganesh grunt in pain.

"Imbecile! Mortals like you will never understand the gravity of your crimes! Only death shall teach your kind!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Oh really?! Well, you're nothing but a burning pile of gas that was spawned from the Fire Essence Pearl! Even if you're the real God of Fire, I'm the inheritor of the God of War! I am stronger than a god. A true God Killer! The only thing you should do is to start kneeling down and grovel beneath my feet!"

Ganesh burst into flames. His breath was literally fires coming out of his nostril. "May Hades have mercy on your soul, for I shall wipe it from the face of this earth!" The boss wielded his hammer and spun around, trying his best to strike Zhang Yang, while sending out countless of lava droplets flying everywhere.

"Haha! What is going on with Little Yang?! He has never talked down a boss like that before!" cried Fatty Han.

"Tch. Tch. Tch." Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue demeaningly and shrugged. "Looks like noobie tank is just being childish!"

Everyone laughed hard when they heard Wei Yan Er, leaving the little girl twitching as she was genuinely confused.

The party went all out with the fight. Every 5 seconds, the party will hurl a ball of Fire Elemental Core that will deal 200,000 damage to the boss. Although the boss is technically made out of fire, unlike the Phoenix, the boss did not have immunity to Fire attacks. It was fortunate for the party, or else both the Phoenix and Daffodil Daydream would be attacking the boss like throwing salt into the sea.

Cheng Xue Yao and Lost Dream had Inheritances with Ice attributes, hence, their attacks were amplified on the boss. Sadly, Cheng Xue Yao was underleveled by more than 30 Levels. With the Level suppression system acting up, her amplified damage was suppressed down to a normal level. At times, if she was unlucky, her damage will be reduced down to 50% and sometimes even 10%.

Lost Dream was already Level 210 by then. Unlike Cheng Xue Yao, he was able to deal full, unaffected damage to the boss. His overall damage, in this match, was on par with both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream, despite being a Thief!

His Inheritance was a B class. In a non-Transformed state, the damage difference between him and an A class Inheritance player would not be large. Note that the damage bonus difference between A class and B class was only 5%. On the other hand, during his Transformed state, the difference will be large, since the damage boost was 300% and 400%, respectively.

The reason why Lost Dream was able to deal more damage during this fight was all due to the Elemental Conflict of Ice and Fire. However, even though he could deal higher damage than the norm, Fire damage would also inflict stronger damage on Lost Dream and Cheng Xue Yao. Hence, amongst everyone else, those two were taking more damage compared to the whole team.

Furthermore, Cheng Xue Yao was suffering from the Level Suppression damage amplification. Hence, to make sure she stays alive, Zhang Yang had proactively used {Surrogacy} on her. Little did Zhang Yang know that both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue

were madly envious of her. It was all because of the skill name! If only the name was "Protect Teammate" instead!

The boss' skill {Burning Ground} was putting a lot of pressure on the team, instead of the boss' attacks himself. All battle companions that dealt little to no damage were unsummoned to lighten the load on the healers. While the others were facing quite a challenging situation, both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han's Phoenixes were doing extremely well, since they had never taken any damage! Flames after flames being burst on them, and they literally felt nothing but comfort due to their natural constitution.

"Fire Tornado!" the boss growled and unleashed his skills.

Molten lava started to appear all around the battlefield, a hundred meters away from him. There were 10, 5 meters wide pools of lava that were slowly circulating on their own. In just a short amount of time, the pool started to give off hot steam that formed a small tornado that gradually grew in size.

Without any word of warning, everyone moved about to get away from the pool of hot lava. The spinning pillar of hot air had grown too large to a point of no return. If anyone were to get close to it, the suction power will suck them in and burn them for 50% HP. If they are burnt twice, it's sayonara for them.

Luckily, the skill {Fire Tornado} had spawned the tornados, only within 100 meters around the boss. Since the entire battlefield was wide and spacious, the team did not need to worry much about moving around. In fact, everyone had taken their sweet time to adjust their positions. The problems started to double up after 1 minute. The boss had cast the second{Fire Tornado}, increasing the number of tornados in the battlefield to 20.

Zhang Yang and everyone else got serious and moved around swiftly until the boss had finally stopped casting the skill, when most of the area around him was surrounded by the deadly tornados.

Zhang Yang predicted that the tornados would not disappear until the boss is killed. Luckily, the entire fighting arena was so huge, that everyone could find a safe spot even after the boss had continually cast more and more of those tornados. If they find themselves unable to attack the boss due to the tornadoes around them, Zhang Yang would then kite the boss somewhere else and continue the fight there.

The fight continued on with loud banging sounds of the [Fire Elemental Core]. One hour in the fight, and the boss was left with only 31% HP. Thanks to the bombs, only was the team able to deal so much damage. That or, they might not have been able to deal so much damage. The boss probably would have over 50% by then.

At the one hour mark, Zhang Yang cast {Glare of the Death God} but it failed to activate. However, it was not much of an issue as long no one dies. If someone dies, the boss will gain a 100% attack boost! If one person dies, the damage dealt by {Burning Ground} would increase to 500,000. That would take more than 4 healers to support the party!

"DIE! SCUM OF THE EARTH! ROT IN HELL!"

"THE GODS SHANT NOT BE SULLIED BY THE LIKES OF YOU!"

"THE SEA OF FLAMES SHALL PURIFY YOUR SOUL! SURRENDER AND BE CLEANSED!"

At one point, everyone was sick of the boss' random screaming and decided to tone down the game volume.

25%...22%...20%...

Eventually, the boss had reached 20%, which was its most vulnerable state. The DPS of the party had increased dramatically and was able to deal more damage than usual. However, it was still a short burst of damage, since skills like {Killing Cleave} do have a cooldown and are not able to deal high enough damage to end the boss right there and then.

‘-20,254,352!’

Zhang Yang’s axe glowed vibrantly for a brief second and the damage that Zhang Yang had dealt during that instance had breached past 20 million damage.

"That’s not {Rising Dragon Strike}, is it?" asked Daffodil Daydream. It was not. If it was, an ethereal dragon will appear and everyone would know it. Zhang Yang quickly reviewed the battle log and found the reason. It was the axe’s special effect to deal 8x normal damage. Furthermore, it was stacked with a Critical strike! The total damage dealt was 16x the normal attack~!

"OOOOOO DAYUM SON!"

"Noobie tank! How are you doing that! I want that axe as well!"

Everyone screamed with excitement. Zhang Yang could only smirk at them. That was the benefit of wielding a two-handed weapon. Although the total damage of a two-handed weapon will lose to a dual wielding configuration, the single instance damage dealt with a two-handed weapon will always be stronger than any one-handed weapon!

15%...10%...5%...

Truth be told, Ganesh was probably the weakest among all four bosses, since the battle was not too complicated, nor did the boss possess strong AoE attack skills. The only dangerous skill the boss had was the {Fire Tornado}. All the players had to do was to avoid them, and they could kill it easily.

After less than 10 minutes, the boss was killed, and rewarded the party with a large pile of loot.

"GG EZ."

"No! It’s GGWP!"

"Nah...The best one for this fight would be, EZ GAME EZ LIFE!"

...

Everyone cheered happily, while Zhang Yang remained unfazed. He was contemplating about the difficulty of the quest. He recalled the extreme difficulty of retrieving the [Wind Essence Pearl,] yet this boss was all too simple. It's like the system was compensating players for the extreme difficulty of the previous quest by giving them an easy boss to defeat. Somehow, Zhang Yang felt that it was unfair, for he had to put out so much effort! All by himself!

Wei Yan Er chirped happily as she hop-skipped her way to the loot. She tidied up the loot and arranged all the shiny, glowing loot in an orderly manner. The boss was kind enough to give 10 Ascended tier equipment and 7 Holy tier equipment. Furthermore, all of them had the special 30 Level Requirement reduction!

Although the Ascended tier weapons were good enough for both attack and defense, the Holy tier equipment were not too good. It was all too "one-sided".

Wei Yan Er first distributed all seven Holy tier equipment. It was plainly obvious that a Level 240 Holy tier equipment would be stronger than the Level 170 Holy tier equipment farmed from the Spectre's Hidden Cavern dungeon. After the lower tier equipment was distributed, Zhang Yang shared the [Tesseract] and combined two of the equipment into one to upgrade them. Since it had an hour cooldown duration, the rest would have to wait for their turn.

The Ascended tier equipment distribution was different. Priority would be given to those from the main party. If anyone required the equipment, they would be put in front of the list. While the others managed to haul weapons, Zhang Yang had only received a cape.

[Cape of the Flame Lord] (Ascended, Cape)

Vitality: +11762

Strength: +2060

Dexterity: +2060

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 23,520.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage from attack.

Use: Grant immunity to all Fire elemental attack. Last for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Note: This cape was weaved with the essence of fire. You can feel the pulsing power of Fire by touching the cloth.



# Chapter 813: The Ice Weaver Set Equipment

---

After all of the equipment was distributed, all was left to give out were random ETC items including [Skill Point Crystal], [Advance Aura Stone], a few [Level 8 Gemstone], and a few skill books.

Zhang Yang did not participate in the roll for the [Skill Point Crystals] and the [Aura Stone] for he already had more than enough.

"Hue..? What's this [Aura Skill Book]?" said Wei Yan Er as she picked up a red leather-bound book.

[Skill Book: Burning Aura]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Burning Aura}.

Class Requirement: NIL

Level Requirement: 200

"It's an aura book. Dimwit!" Zhang Yang pinched Wei Yan Er's cheek and said, "Alright, those with their aura skills maxed out are forbidden from rolling for this. Please allow your juniors to have a chance."

Everyone else rolled for the skill book and it was won over by Lost Dream. Even though he was part of the main party, he had not invested a single skill point in his aura skill, even though it would not stack with Sun Xin Yu's.

[Burning Aura] (Level 1): Unleashes an aura 30 meters around the user to deal 10,500 Fire damage every 10 seconds. (Damage will increase with both Skill Level and Player's Level). Player can only have one Aura skill active.

There were more than enough Aura Stones of all tiers for Lost Dream to use. Plus, the few [Advanced Aura Stone] that were dropped by the boss were all given to Lost Dream to pump his Aura skill up. Lost Dream went back to town and had his skill maxed out

before posting the skill to the party channel.

[Burning Aura] (Level 10): Unleashes an aura 30 meters around the user to deal 105,000 Fire damage every 10 seconds. (Damage will increase with both Skill Level and Player's Level). Player can only have one Aura skill active.

Unlike {Vitality Aura} or {Strength Aura}, Lost Dream's {Burning Aura} was not a party boosting aura effect. It was an offensive aura which could increase his overall DPS by 10,000. Naturally, the intensity of the skill will be enhanced if Lost Dream is in the middle of a swarm of monsters. That being said, he will also be the first target to be eliminated in a GvG war.

"Wuuuhuuu...I want that aura as well!" said Wei Yan Er after knowing its prowess in a fight with multiple targets.

Zhang Yang came over to her and made a pinching hand gesture to scare her. "Rather than standing in the middle and doing nothing, you'd be better off using your stronger {Strength Aura}!"

Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} increases all allies' Strength attribute by 20%. For Physical attack class, that was a boost of 10% DPS or more, even. The more allies she has around her, the stronger the effect would be, in terms of overall DPS. {Burning Aura} was different, rather than surrounding yourself with allies, {Burning Aura}'s effect will only stand out if Lost Dream surrounds himself with enemies. Both auras were strong and their own way and in different circumstances.

After Zhang Yang collected the quest item [Fire Essence Pearl], he led everyone to the next objective. There were no breaks in-between. The entire party rode down the volcanic mountain and headed next to the neighbor snowy mountain. They had only taken less than an hour to reach their destination, for they were lucky enough to not encounter any monsters during the journey.

'Ding! You have received the effect of {Frostbite Aura}!'

Once they left the foothill of the fiery mountain and stepped onto the first pile of snow, the {Burning Aura} on them disappeared and was replaced with another DoT effect.

[Frostbite Aura]: Receive 50,000 Frost damage every 3 seconds.

At that point, the prowess of the two Phoenixes had dropped exponentially. Due to the elemental conflict, they received additional damage. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han hopped onto the mounts to help reduce the load on the healers. After advancing for a bit, they encountered the first of the snowy monsters.

As expected, it was a snowman. Or rather, a huge monkey-like monster with thick white fur that stood on its hind legs like a gorilla. It looked rather cute when it moved around, exposing its belly whilst scratching its head with a massive hand. However, when it picked up a long spear of ice on the ground, its cuteness was immediately shattered.

[Guardian Snowman] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defense: 14,270

Magic Attack: 66,112 – 86,112

Skills:

[Frost Arrow]: Launches a long arrow made of pure ice and deals 200% Magic Frost damage to a target. Slows targets for 50% movement speed. Last for 5 seconds. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The Guardian Snowmen are the creation of the Ice Lord Antoine. They were created to patrol and to secure his domains.

Similar to the previous fire monsters, the Guardian Snowman were all walking in a group of 8. However, since they were all magic type monsters, they would start chanting their spells from a great distance and launch 8 long ice arrows, or rather spears

towards the party.

Luckily, monster count was only 8 at a time. If the number were to increase to 12, one single wave of attack would immediately kill players with lower tier equipment like Cheng Xue Yao.

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, and Ten Dusk took the lead, each taking on a few monsters to their limit. Zhang Yang went ahead and kited four to allow the other two tanks to have a better time at tanking. With his current Defensive ability, each attack will deal around 80,000, 4 of them would be 320,000 damage. Although the DPS of the monster attacking Zhang Yang was around 160,000, it was a number which Han Ying Xue could heal easily.

As per the rules of gaming, magic type monsters or players will naturally have lower defense and HP as to compensate their powerful destructive attack. Unfortunately, the monsters were all Elite tier, hence, both their attack and defense were high enough to create a problem! They were as tanky as a physical attack monster!

Still, Zhang Yang's party was the anomaly among all parties in the world. In a few seconds, the entire group of 8 Guardian Snowman were all reduced to a pile of lifeless snow.

"Aww Yis! There are set equipment!" cried Wei Yan Er as she picked up a long, translucent, one-piece dress.

[Ice Weaver Long Dress] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +64

Vitality +10224

Intelligence: +3360

Spirit: +1490

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 6,720.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%.

Equip: Reduces 10% Frost type damage.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Ice Weaver Set Equipment (1/3): Ice Weaver Long Dress, {Ice Weaver Gloves}, {Ice Weaver Sandals}.

Three Set Effect: Reduces 20% Frost damage.

"Hmm. If each of the set equipment has a 10% Frost attack reduction, the total Frost Reduction gained from equipping all three sets will be 50%." Said Daffodil Daydream.

"Since the boss will undoubtedly use Frost Attacks, we should gather a few more sets to reduce the attack of the boss," said Hundred Shots.

"It's a wise move. Even though they are only Ethereal tier equipment, three of them would not reduce our overall attack by much."

Zhang Yang nodded and "dumped" the dress to Han Ying Xue. All Cloth Armor will be handed to her in the future while Leather Armor will be taken care by Hundred Shots. All Heavy Armor will be in his hands. If the boss does have too high of a damage, they might actually need the set equipment to survive.

The party continued through the thick snow mountain. They managed to haul more of those sets after a few encounters with many groups of Snowmen. Although the drop rate was not too good, they would not have trouble farming more of them, since the snowy mountain was just too huge. There are bound to be more Snowman groups patrolling around. The problem was that the monsters used magic attacks. Zhang Yang nor the other tanks dared to kite too many at a time. At most, Zhang Yang would take 5 while Endless Starlight took 3, and Ten Dusk took 2.

As such, the hiking speed was extremely slow. The party had taken more than 20 days to find their way to the peak of the snowy mountain and find the boss, the Frost Lord, Antoine.

Despite being a boss, it was only a 30 meter tall, larger Snowman. Somehow, due to its nature as a Snowman, its massive building-like size was a little cute. The boss was wielding a long white magic staff instead of the snow spears.

[Antoine, the Frost Lord] (Ascended, Elemental Being)

Level: 240

HP: 12,000,000,000

Defense: 37,330

Magic Attack: 210,392 – 270,392

Skills:

[Cold to the Bone]: Deals 300,000 Frost Damage every 3 seconds to a target. Inflicts 100% bonus damage to targets that is frozen. Reduces 10% movement speed every second. When a target's movement speed reaches 0, the target will be frozen in place, and cannot engage in any action.

[Fire Beacon]: Randomly inflicts 100,000 Fire damage every 3 seconds to a random target. Lasts for 15 seconds. [Fire Beacon] will dispel the effect of [Cold of the Bone] Frozen effect. Targets that are released from Frozen effect by this skill will gain an effect of [Beacon's Radiance], dispelling all targets that are Frozen within 20 meters.

[Frost Arrow]: Deals 200% Magic Frost damage to a target. Gains 100% Critical strike rate whenever used against Frozen targets. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The King of Ice, Snow, and Frost. Birth from the Ice Essence Pearl after absorbing all the essence from the Water Elementals on the mountain.

"Huh. That's surprising. The boss does not have any recovery skill! We can kill it easily!"

"Don't be too happy just yet. Pay attention to the skill {Cold to the Bone}. Damage aside, the slow effect and the Frozen effect will kill us all!"

"True. The only way of dispelling the frozen effect is the {Fire Beacon}. That would put a lot of pressure on the healers and the DPS of the entire party! If the boss does have any recovery skill. We're be popsicles for the Snowman!"

"Don't forget that after Frozen, the boss will deal more damage to us! I don't think players can be healed during a Frozen effect. Unless the boss decides to use {Fire Beacon} we will be ice cubes instead of popsicles!"

"Correct. The main point of this fight is to rely on the player that receives the {Fire Beacon} to rescue the rest of the teammates that are Frozen. Accessories, skills and status removal skills, will not be enough to save our butt!"

Zhang Yang nodded at the party's serious discussion and praised them for the effort. He then formulated a plan and a formation to allow for maximum coverage of the {Fire Beacon}.

Since the boss did not have any recovery skills, there was no need to prioritize on DPS. Instead, this match called for survivability instead. Frozen effect will only allow the boss to kill the party faster and easier. Although it cannot instantly kill a player in a Transformed state, it will still be a massive pain in the butt in terms of attacking. Everyone in the vicinity will be frozen after 10 seconds! In fact, after being freed again, they will only have a 10-second attacking window before they will be frozen again. In terms of defeating the boss, they might not stand a chance if something goes horribly wrong.

# Chapter 814: Frost Lord, Antoine

---

Those who were attacked with the {Fire Beacon} will gain only one chance to use {Beacon's Radiance}. Hence, the formation they had come up with was to stick together to make sure {Beacon's Radiance} could cover everyone.

Instead of using their Transformation skill to charge in recklessly, Zhang Yang had ordered one to have a test run without Transforming. Naturally, Zhang Yang was the first to strike the boss.

"Mortal. You have sullied the Holy land of the gods! Is it death that you seek!?" Antoine roared and shot out a Frost Arrow to deal 350,000 damage to Zhang Yang. Following closely after the first attack was the {Cold to the Bone} skill. Zhang Yang was immediately inflicted with a debuff, causing him to take 300,000 Frost damage every 3 seconds and a 10% movement speed reduction for every second.

"This is bad. That skill is a single target skill!" Zhang Yang frowned and grunted.

Contrary to normal playstyle, if the skill is a multitarget skill, it would be easier to handle, since everyone will be frozen together and it would only take one use of the {Beacon's Radiance} to dispel the Frozen effect on everyone.

However, if {Cold to the Bone} is cast on one player at a time, players will be frozen sequentially. Hence, when one is about to saved, the other will be frozen, causing an "uneven" rate of dispelling. Bear in mind that {Beacon's Radiance} will only dispel the Frozen status and not the movement reduction effect.

As expected, the boss had continued to cast {Cold to the Bone} on the party members, one person at a time. Zhang Yang had concluded two things. One, {Cold to the Bone} did not have any cooldown skills. Two, the boss will randomly cast the skill and stop



at random as well. At times, the boss will cast thrice on three players and stop there. Other times, he would only cast on one player and stop there.

Before all 20 players there were inflicted with {Cold to the Bone}, Zhang Yang was the first to be frozen in place. Since the boss had not used {Fire Beacon}, Zhang Yang had to use {Warrior's Will} to save himself. Once {Cold to the Bone} has successfully "frozen" a player, the player will continue to take the DoT damage while being immobile. After being thawed out, Zhang Yang still continued to receive DoT, but no longer suffered from movement speed reduction. Sadly, the boss will continue to randomly cast the skill on the players.

At that moment, Zhang Yang scrapped the original plan. His plan was to get everyone frozen at the same time and have everyone to dispel the Frozen state with their own status removal skills. All in all, the plan was completely screwed up since the boss' skill was not described properly. It was only after all players have received {Cold to the Bone}, the boss would cast {Fire Beacon} on a random target. When the chosen player receives the skill {Fire Beacon}, the system will grant the player an additional, usable, one-time skill called {Beacon's Radiance}. The skill could be used anytime to dispel the frozen effect from all players within a certain area. When the {Fire Beacon} effect on a player disappears, so does the skill {Beacon's Radiance}. The estimated time of effect would only be 15 seconds.

The frequency of the skill cast was rather strict. It will be used once every 10 seconds. Within that time, the player must use the skill to dispel or the timing for dispelling would be off. Theoretically, the skill must be used once every 10 seconds. As for the usage of the {Beacon's Radiance} to be efficient, it would have to depend on the number of healers being Frozen in that instance. If there are more than two healers Frozen, the chosen player who has the {Beacon's Radiance} may use the skill to thaw the healers

out, or the entire party's healing rate would be affected gravely.

Since it was still during their test phase, Zhang Yang had tried to use the War Chariot to fight the boss. However, although all players in the War Chariot will receive one DoT tick at a time, the Frozen effect was rather f\*cked up. Once any player in the War Chariot is Frozen, the effect would apply to all players on the War Chariot! Basically, all the players on the War Chariot were constantly being Frozen. Although the damage was painful, it was not much of a trouble for the party. Unfortunately, it would only be a complete waste to use the War Chariot for that particular boss fight.

Without Transformations, everyone in the party only had a small margin error. Players like Cheng Xue Yao had only around 1,500,000 HP, and that was already with the help of the {Vitality Aura}. Under the Frozen state, three attacks would be enough to kill her.

Although healers were able to cope with the intense healing requirement, it was only lasting for 10 seconds at a time. When one or two of the healers are Frozen in place, the other healer would not have enough time to heal the other moving players. Hence, just a few minutes into the fight, more than 10 players had kicked the bucket! The boss still had more than 80% HP!

Zhang Yang quickly ordered anyone who was still alive to get out of the battle before they are killed unreasonably. Zhang Yang unsummoned the Phoenix and waited for everyone in the battle to erase their aggro before he left the battlefield with {Shadow of the Void}.

Everyone returned from the nearest graveyard while the survivors had waited for them to further discuss the battle plans. For the next attempt, they would use their Transformations. However, since Transformation skills had 72 hours of cooldown duration, they would have to make their next attempt count. That, or they could attempt to dominate the next mountain, either the

Light Mountain or the Shadow Mountain.

"Let's try using the Ice Weaver set equipment," said Daffodil Daydream after being silent. She continued to elaborate. Since the main point of the battle was to stay alive instead of focusing on attack power, the party could sacrifice a little of their DPS to increase their survivability. At most, the entire party would lose 10% of their total DPS in exchange for a 50% increase in Frost resistance. It was a worthwhile trade-off.

Zhang Yang nodded his head to agree with Daffodil Daydream. Along the way to the mountain top, they had killed many monsters and had collected many sets of Ice Weaver set equipment. Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shot, and Zhang Yang distributed all the equipment to the party. All but Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang had received a set each. It was not that they did not want to take them, they were lacking a few important parts that would make the set whole.

However, since the two top DPS units in the team had S Class Inheritances, their magic nullification rate was at 40%. Not wearing any Frost resistance armor would not make a significant difference to their survivability.

Everyone changed into their new set of equipment and were smiling with great confidence, sure that they will win the second attempt.

"Foolish human! Know that life is precious! Since you have forsaken them for the greed of victory, I shall be the one to teach you a lesson!" Antoine groaned, as the party, led by Zhang Yang approached the boss again, for the second time.

Without delay, the battle started with Antoine blasting Zhang Yang with a Frost Arrow. The cold blue arrow whistled through the air and immediately sublimated in the air when it made contact with Zhang Yang.

Resist!

That was the effect of the Inheritance Transformation Magic Nullification in effect. Magic Nullification is unlike Magic Resistance, where the damage taken will be reduced. Magic Nullification will completely negate all magic damage dealt by a magic attack for that instance. S class Inheritance has 40% Magic Nullification rate. If one is kissed by the Goddess of Luck, having 100% chance to nullify all incoming magic attack was not an impossible dream. Still, it would not be happening anytime soon. As soon as the attack count reaches a certain amount, be it un-nullified or nullified, the pseudo-RNG will kick in to make adjustments.

{Cold to the Bone}!

On the second run, Zhang Yang was not able to nullify the skill, since the magic skill inflicted on him was not counted as an attack, but a debuff. Only when the DoT starts ticking on him, would Zhang Yang have a chance to nullify each tick.

After Zhang Yang was inflicted by {Cold to the Bone}, the party rushed into the fight and started to attack. Without recovery skills to restore his HP, the boss' HP drops much much faster than before.

"Pest! Begone!" The boss roared with fury as he cast {Cold to the Bone} on many players. Since the ticking DoT had to pass through two "obstacles", one being the Frost Resistance set effect, and second being the magic Nullification of each player, part of the damage was absorbed and the other part would depend on the luck of the player.

Even though being Frozen was inevitable, with 50% Frost Resistance and the Magic Nullification helping, the party was able to last longer and better than before. All the healers, including Han Ying Xue, were having a relaxed time healing everyone. It was mostly due to the HP boost provided by the Transformation skill. Even the weakest player there had over 15,000,000 HP! There would not be a case where players will be killed instantly for being

Frozen.

"This is nice. I never knew that having magic resistance armor would ease the battle this much!" cried Endless Starlight.

"Oh shut up! It's not like you're doing much damage anyway! Look! Not even little Yan Er is making noise! It's not your turn yet!" cried Daffodil Daydream as she still bore some hatred for the perverted man.

"Say what now?" cried Wei Yan Er when she heard her name being called out.

"Ehh. Nothing!"

Everyone else laughed at the comical scene.

While he was fighting rhythmically, Zhang Yang had a sudden thought. Perhaps killing the bosses of the quest had something to do with the monsters surrounding the area. For example, defeating the Fire boss was all thanks to the monsters that had dropped the bombs. On the other hand, to defeat the Ice boss, the party had relied on equipment that had been dropped by the monsters! Could it a coincidence, or was it perhaps by design? Still, thanks to the 50% Frost resistance set effect, the team had no need to use their Transformation for the second attempt. All it did was to increase the DPS power and reduce the time taken to kill the boss. As for survivability, having just the Frost resistance armor would do fine.

What an interesting plan, Zhang Yang thought to himself. Perhaps it would be the same for the remaining two mountains!

After taking so much damage from the party despite having cast so many {Cold of the Bone}, the boss started to show signs of being defeated. At then, even though the boss had high HP, the party would, theoretically require another 40 minute more to kill the boss. Before they knew it, Zhang Yang's luck that fight was rather good. Not only was his Transformation magic nullification skill able to nullify many Frost attacks, even the {Glare of the Death

God} was effective on the boss!

Naturally, due to the trouble of being frozen from time to time, the team was not able to maximize their DPS to their full potential. Hence, they had taken 50 minutes to reach 20% HP, and another 10 minutes to kill the boss.

The victory was rather awkward for the party, since they had suffered greatly from the first attempt and won the second attempt without much effort. However, in less than a second, that bad feeling was gone when Wei Yan Er jumped for the pile of loot. Antoine had dropped a total of 9 Ascended tier equipment and 8 Holy tier equipment, as well as countless random items.

After a turn of rolling, Zhang Yang had not obtained any single equipment but managed to haul in a skill book.

[Rock Solid] (Level 1): Upon activation, stand in the same position to gain 10% Defense and 2% Damage Reduction passive for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 1 minute.

To test the skill's growth rate, Zhang Yang had added one skill point on the skill and found that the Defense gain went up to 20% while the passive Damage reduction was increased to 4%. If Zhang Yang maximizes the skill to Level 10, he would gain 100% Defense and 20% Damage reduction. It was a powerful defensive skill, if only it could last longer than 10 seconds. However, if the skill is paired with the {God of War Shield}, Zhang Yang's damage reduction would go up to 60%, which is almost the same as the {Shield Wall} damage reduction effect.

Zhang Yang could not help but try and have the skill enhanced via the Book of Revelation.

[Rock Solid (Enhance)] (Level 2): Upon activation, stand in the same position to gain 30% Defense and 6% Damage Reduction passive for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 1 minute.

A 50% boost!

At that point in time, Zhang Yang had used all three upgrade slot of the Book of Revelation for {Block}, {Shield Wall}, and {Rock Solid}. He had removed the upgrade effect on {Gates of Hell} until further required. Since the Book of Revelation upgrade slot change had a 24 hours cooldown duration, Zhang Yang could charge 3 different skills a day if he wanted!

The boss had also dropped a skill book called {Frost Aura} which was given to Cheng Xue Yao. The aura skill was speedily level up to the maximum, which made Zhang Yang and the other core party member feel a little disgruntled. Back then, increasing their aura skill from Level 1 to Level 10, had taken them more than 3 years to do so!

[Frostbite Aura] (level 10): Deals 80,800 Frost damage every 10 seconds to all targets within 30 meters of the user. Damage will increase, according to the level of the player and skill. Reduces the movement speed of all targets in the effective range by 50%. You can only have one active Aura effect in one instance.

# Chapter 815: Shadow Lord Margalor

---

The downside of the {Frostbite Aura} was its damage being weaker than {Burning Aura}. However, the major advantage of {Frostbite Aura} was the additional movement speed reduction! As a Spellcaster, the skill was more than helpful for Cheng Xue Yao, since the effect will be applied to all targets within the effective range. It was as similar to Zhang Yang's {Thunder Strike}, only that it was permanently active and can never be dispelled.

Naturally, Cheng Xue Yao was so delighted with the skill that she gave Zhang Yang a blow kiss. Zhang Yang tried his best to be oblivious to it but Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were extremely sensitive to that sort of thing. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue immediately rolled their eyes at him.

But then again, perhaps it was called for, since Zhang Yang had slightly "played" with her by pinching her cheeks when she had served him coffee at work. The woman must be trying to get the game straight with him.

Zhang Yang continued his pretense and moved on with the quest after he picked up the [Ice Essence Pearl]. The party left the snowy mountain and went to the Shadow Mountain.

Similar to the last two mountains, the Shadow Mountain had a similar aura effect.

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Shadow Aura!’

[Shadow Aura]: Attack reduced by 10%.

Naturally, having their damage reduced, even if it is only 10%, did not please them at all, when they had to already reduce their attack in exchange for survivability. It was the sort of salt in the wound which everyone truly disliked. Just when they could finally change back to their own original gear to regain their lost damage power, the next map had them reduce their attack again!



While everyone was having a rather unpleasant time, Han Ying Xue was extremely delighted. She was a sloth! Since the aura skill was not the DoT type, she would not need to move around constantly to heal everyone! It was about time for her to slack a little.

Still, even though they had to bear with the damage reduction, the team proceeded on and encountered the monsters that dwelled on that blackened earth.

[Shadow Stalker] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defense: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,335 – 158,335 (Shadow Based Physical Attack)

Skills:

[Shadow Bomb]: Hurls a bomb to a target that explodes after 3 seconds. Deals 120,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within 10 meters of the initial targets.

Note: Loyal goons of the Shadow Lord Magarlör. They have been personally trained by Lord Magarlör himself and would trade their lives for his.

As expected of their name and the environment that the party was in, the monster was completely black, yet somewhat translucent, with several floating black bits the size of tiny ping-pong balls. Their appearance was that of ghouls, a black entity that was covered with a black sheet. Similar to the other mountains, the monsters were in groups of eight.

The entire party of 20 went on ahead and attacked with the three tanks paving the way, and the rest of the team following closely.

Overall, the one thing that made the battle rather annoying was the {Shadow Bomb}. The skill would be cast on random targets.

There were no rules that said the skill cannot be inflicted on the same target. In that case, an unlucky player could end up "eating" all eight bombs and take over 1,000,000 damage! Despite the fact that the party members have managed to haul a few Ascended tier and Holy tier equipment from the two previous boss, they were not able to put them on since they had not yet fulfilled the Level Requirement. Hence, those weaker players were not able to survive, for their HP was at around 1,500,000 HP, at best.

Like Magic Nullification of Inheritance Transformation, taking eight bombs in one instance would be extremely rare. On the other hand, there were the AoE explosions. If anyone receives the bomb and does not react fast enough, they would end up hurting everyone around themselves. Thankfully, everyone in the party had a certain level of prowess. If they were to stand still and allow the bomb to explode in the midst of the party, he or she will be kicked out of the party, permanently!

With haste, all eight of the monsters were dealt with. The monsters had dropped a few ETC items that were of no use to the party and will be sold to NPCs later. However, there was a rather mysterious item and piqued their interest.

[Shadow Orb] (Usable)

Use: The Bane of Light. Use it to unleash the power of Shadow to resist the [Rage of the Light]. Range: 30 meters Cooldown: 200 seconds.

Level Requirement: 200

It was a random item that could be used to counter a certain skill. However, who, when, or what situation calls for it, no one had the slightest clue. Zhang Yang took the item first, since he had the most Inventory Space amongst all of them. Somehow, he had a good feeling that the item will be useful for the upcoming boss fight.

Initially, Zhang Yang did not want to store it. Even though he

had plenty of space in his inventory, he had most of them occupied with random potions! He had argued with Wei Yan Er for a long time and eventually lost to the entire team's persuasion.

The team continued the hike but felt slightly annoyed, it was not just the Shadow Stalkers, but mainly the {Shadow Aura} that reduced the team's overall DPS. A drop of 10% DPS would directly affect their pushing speed by 10%, so to speak. Since the monsters around had the skill {Shadow Bomb}, Zhang Yang himself did not dare to kite too many monsters at a time, fearing that the team members might not be able to cope with the instantaneous reaction required to bring the bombs away from the party.

Along the way, the party found more {Shadow Orbs,} although the drop rate was not too good. 20 days later, they had all reached the peak of the mountain. By then, the party had collected more than enough of the orbs that Zhang Yang had stuffed his inventory full with the {Shadow Orbs}. In the end, Zhang Yang finally dumped piles of {Shadow Orbs} on the ground and made everyone take a few.

200 counts made a stack. Hence, everyone in the party carried roughly four stacks of {Shadow Orbs} on them. There were more than 16,000 counts of {Shadow Orbs}. For such a large haul, the team was still dubious about the use of the item. Zhang Yang made a nonchalant comment about how the previous boss fights had required the help from monsters' drops and persuaded the team to keep the orbs until they fight the final boss.

At the peak of the mountain, there was a huge circular altar with ceramic tiles. The boss was sitting in the middle of the altar, meditating. Its 30-meter height appearance screamed of his status as a boss. Aside from his size, his dark, void, abyssal, black appearance was haunting. His existence was that of a black hole, though he did not possess such suction power.

[Shadow Lord Margalor] (Ascended, Elemental Being)

Level: 240

HP: 12,000,000,000

Defense: 37,330

Melee Attack: 360,873 – 460,873

Skills:

[Lullaby of Death]: Sings a song of the end times, dealing 400,000 Shadow damage to all targets within 100 meters.

[Shadow Claw]: Deals 150% melee physical attack to a target.

[Void Tornado]: Unleashes a large tornado to destroy everything in its path. Within 5 seconds, 5 players would have to get inside the eye to stop the tornado from exploding. Failure to do so will cause the Tornado to explode and deduct 99% HP of all players within 100 meters. Players that get into the eye of the tornado will be immobilized. Requires 20 seconds to stop the power of the tornado.

[Shadow Blessing]: Increases 100% attack power. Stackable. Casting time: 2 seconds.

Note: The rule of the Dark. The King of Shadow. Born from the collection of all the shadows gathered in the Shadow Essence Pearl.

Everyone immediately frowned like madmen when they saw the list of complicated skills. Without a doubt, [Lullaby of Death] would be the boss' strongest AoE skill. In fact, it was not a huge deal for the party to see something like that. All bosses would have a similarly powerful AoE skill for that matter. The problem would be the rate of it being used. Too many in a short time would rank him at a world boss tier!

Zhang Yang did not care about the skill since the party would have to take the damage head-on. {Shadow Claw} will mostly be used on the tank which would not be a problem for Zhang Yang. Transformations would further reduce the damage.

The main problem of the boss would be the {Void Tornado} and

{Shadow Blessing}.

{Void Tornado} would require players to stop attacking the boss and get into the tornado to "dispel" the skill. That, or everyone would have their HP reduced by 99%. Paired with {Lullaby of Death}, everyone would die almost instantly. Although they would have to temporarily sacrifice 5 DPS to get inside the Tornado, it would be much of a problem since there were weaker level players there whose DPS would not make much difference.

In the end, it was all about the {Shadow Blessing}. Stackable skills are always a problem...

"I think it can be interrupted since there's the 2-second casting time. If it can't be interrupted, might as well make it an instant cast," said Hundred Shots.

"If the skill is going to be used repeatedly, we're better off discussing the turns we take to interrupt."

Zhang Yang pondered for a while and said, "We'll have a test run first. Fight the boss without using Transformation skills. If all goes well, I'll give the signal on when to use Transformations. Everyone cool with that?"

"Understood."

Zhang Yang led the party and confronted the boss.

"What art thee doing h're! Thou art not alloweth! Thy shalt slayeth thee all!" cried the boss as he opened his eyes. Without any further warning speech, the boss got up to his feet and smashed Zhang Yang with his fist.

WHAM!

Zhang Yang lifted his shield and blocked the oncoming fist. He then rode the momentum of the boss' attack and twisted in the air for a riposte, dealing a powerful strike that made the boss retract his hand immediately.

The party fanned out and surrounded the boss to attack.

"Thou art not worth of thine strength! Begone!" said Margalor as it raised his hands, ready to squash Zhang Yang.

{Shadow Claw}!

{Rock Solid}!

‘-306,575!’

What that was supposed to be 550,000 damage turned out to only be 300,000 on Zhang Yang. That is how strong Zhang Yang is, as a Guardian! The true defender of all physical attack!

"Interesting!" the boss chuckled smugly. He then clapped his hands together and chanted a long stream of words in just a matter of 3 seconds.

{Lullaby of Death}!

It was a skill that was similar to Wei Yan Er's {Melodies of War}. However, unlike the little girl, the boss raps it so swiftly that he had only taken 3 seconds to chant it all out. A black wave burst out of the boss and blasted everyone. A shadowy, gas-like entity seeped into everyone's body and dealt 300,000 Shadow damage instantly.

Right as everyone was just getting back up to their feet from the blast, another blast came and struck again. At that moment, the boss had displayed its true potential as an Ascended tier boss. Right after one skill is unleashed, another skill was cast again. There was practically no pause in between the attacks, besides the chanting!

Again, similar to {Melodies of War}, {Lullaby of Death} can be cast while other skills are being cast at the same time! It was chaotic beyond words! It was an incredibly difficult for everyone in the team, including Zhang Yang! If he is unable to set his mind straight then, how could the others do the same!? Without the HP boost of Transformation, the healers were having a tough time trying their best to keep up with the healing!

"Urgh! Cheating boss! Report! Report! How is it possible for a boss to sing so fast!? Not even Jay Chow could rap that fast!" cried Wei Yan Er as she felt jealous. By then, Wei Yan Er's chanting speed had been reduced down to 18 seconds. However, how could she compare herself to the boss' inhuman speed of 3 seconds!

"Little Yan Er, you might as well try and learn singing for a change! Perhaps one day, you could even rap as fast as Jay Chow!"

"Big Fatty bro! Why would I want to rap like Jay Chow! That's so un-lady like!"

Zhang Yang figured something out and said, "Little brat. Talking in the game does not use your own mouth, your tongue, your lips, nor voice box. It's all in your head. As long as you can think it, you can do it. It's all in your head!"

# Chapter 816: Switch Targets

---

In game, although the avatars of the players talk using their mouths, it was all but a simulation of reality. In truth, everything is interpreted by reading brain waves. As such, the movement speed of players, the reaction rate, body movements, are all limited by the human mind. It all comes to the ability of the player to step outside the boundaries of cybergaming. In short, the faster you think, the faster you chant.

Wei Yan Er had an epiphany and widened her eyes. She heeded Zhang Yang's advice and tried to outsmart her own "brain". It was hard in the beginning since everyone has gotten used to talking with their own mouths since birth. Hence, unless you're a rapper like Jay Chow or Eminem, you'll be a mere mortal. To gain speed, one must train. It was that simple. Luckily for Wei Yan Er, {Melodies of War} only had 30 seconds of cooldown duration. She could train as much as she wanted to.

That being said, the boss had no intention of allowing the team to have a good time.

"Darkness...heed thine power. Destroy in thy name!" cried the boss as a progress bar appeared on his character. He was preparing to cast {Shadow Blessing}!

"Stop that!"

Since it was just a test run, everyone had not been assigned their turns of interrupting his casts. Hence, everyone in the party had used all their disrupting skills on the boss at once.

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

...



Completely, utterly useless!

"What the actual f\*ck!?" cried Fatty Han.

How could they continue the fight? Just a single cast of {Shadow Blessing}, and the boss shall obtain an attack power that rivals a Celestial boss!

In a blink of an eye, the boss had created a cloak of shadow that hovered around his character. 100% attack increment! Hopeless. That was what everyone, even Zhang Yang, thought of, then. A {Lullaby of Death} after getting the buff deals more than 600,000 damage on everyone. Even though they were merely testing, all the four healers in the party had immediately jumped into turbo mode to heal everyone. Sadly, just 10 seconds later, the boss had once again used {Shadow Blessing}. This time, the cloak of shadow that hovered around him darkened.

200% Attack increment is the same as a 300% basic attack bonus. His normal attacks were now the same, or perhaps even exceeded the damage dealt by Angus' normal attacks! {Lullaby of Death} was now dealing 900,000 per cast, which had lead to Han Ying Xue started to running low on MP while the rest of the healers had already given up on healing.

When the healers slowed down, party members started to drop like flies. Worst of all, amidst their despair, Margalor had used {Shadow Blessing} for the third time!

300% Attack bonus!

At the third use of {Shadow Blessing}, the party needed no verbal commands to start retreating. At that moment, more than half of the party member had died, and the remaining players in the field died immediately after the chained use of {Lullaby of Death}.

By the time the boss used the fourth {Shadow Blessing}, Zhang Yang was the only player left alive.

‘-2,468,392!’

Zhang Yang had taken more than 2 million damage and had died with a single use of {Shadow Claw} from the steroid-pumped boss.

The Book of Revelation revival effect immediately kicked in, and Zhang Yang used {Shadow of the Void} to immediately escape the battlefield after he got back up to his feet.

Han Ying Xue was greatly disgruntled as she thought that Zhang Yang had wanted to continue the fight. At her death, she had quickly revived on the spot with her own [Resurrection Monolith], and was immediately killed by the boss.

"Dummy! Why didn't you tell me that you have given up?!"

"Didn't I tell you that this is a test run?"

"Gah! You always say that. Did you know that most of us had actually believed that you could take on the boss by yourself?"

"What...? Anyhoo. Everyone! Go back to the graveyard and revive there instead. Don't come back up. Gather at the base of the valley!"

Zhang Yang flew down the mountain with haste and told the entire party to choose to revive at the graveyard, even though that would weaken everyone. (Revival at the graveyard will inflict a weakened status). Although everyone was confused at his command, they did listen to him and followed his words.

After everyone had gathered together, Zhang Yang scratched his head and asked, "So, how was the boss fight? Any thoughts?"

After a few seconds of solemnness, Fatty Han was the first to open his mouth. "It's impossible to defeat the boss! Not only that {Shadow Blessing} could not be disrupted, the cooldown of the skill is only 10 seconds! How are we supposed to fight that boss when he would only get stronger and stronger!?"

Although his intonation and speech pattern was unrefined, everything he said was on point. {Shadow Blessing} would allow the boss to have attack powers that could rival that of a Celestial

tier boss, and perhaps even exceed that! Without a miracle like Felice suddenly going berserk, they had no chance of defeating the boss.

"There's no way the developers would make a boss that cannot be defeated. I'm sure there is a way that we have not seen yet." Said Zhang Yang.

"...How?" Daffodil Daydream squeaked. "The boss did not even use {Void Tornado} once! Yet, we were all dropping like flies!"

"Monsters," said Sun Xin Yu softly.

"Monsters? You mean the {Shadow Orbs} that the monsters dropped? That's no use against Margalor!" said Fatty Han angrily.

Lost Dream gasped in epiphany and said, "Guys, are we forgetting about another certain Holy type boss?"

Everyone that had followed Zhang Yang since the beginning of the guild formation was smart enough to understand that Lost Dream meant. "I see what you're getting at. The drops from the Shadow monsters are used to counter the Light boss. That means that the monster drops in the Light mountain could be used to counter the shadow boss!" said Hundred Shots.

"Aye!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "In that case, might as well give it a try then!"

Everyone agreed and rode their mounts towards the Light mountain and momentarily forgot about Margalor.

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Holy Radiance Aura!’

[Holy Radiance Aura]: Takes additional 20% Holy attribute damage.

Compared to the other DoT effect and the damage reduction aura, the party was not too disgruntled when they received the damage amplify aura. Han Ying Xue, for one, was not too happy

with that. Luckily, the {Holy Radiance Aura} was not a DoT effect. At most, Han Ying Xue would need to heal a few more times during a fight.

Like the other mountains around, the monsters in the Light mountain were all Holy based. Those monsters that roamed around the mountain were like gigantic light bulbs. They were shaped like one, and shone brightly like one.

[Holy Propagator] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defense: 14,270

Skills:

[Holy Smite]: Summons the power of Divinity and deals 200% Holy Magic damage to a target. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The followers of the Holy Lord Dustan. Their purpose in life is to spread the teachings of Lord Dustan and to smite all that is evil.

Again, they were all grouped in eights. Due to the presence of the {Holy Radiance Aura}, the Propagator's attacks had dealt extra damage to the party. Even though one of them will only gain a 20% damage amplification, all eight of them would deal the damage of nine monsters! Furthermore, the monsters were attacking with magic. Their attacks ignored defense values and would deal powerful damage, enough to kill a single player if they were to concentrate fire.

Fortunately, there were three tanks then, and everyone had no problem attacking the monsters. After a few quick bashes and smashes, all the monsters were killed and dropped a bunch of ETC item and that one tool that everyone had been waiting for.

[Holy Orb] (Usable)

Use: Unleashes the Holy power within to dispel {Shadow Blessing}. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 200 seconds.

Level Requirement: 200

"Hah! Sister Sun was right! There was something here that we can use to fight the shadow boss!"

"That's actually a surprise. Who would have thought that the monsters of two separate bosses would drop items that could be used to counter the other!"

"There's one problem guys. This has 200 cooldown duration, yet {Shadow Blessing's} cooldown is only 10 seconds..."

"Looks like we need to sit down and arrange a proper sequence for us to take turns dispelling. If my calculations are right, not one of us, NOT A SINGLE ONE of us can make a mistake. If anyone misses the chance, the boss will gain its attack bonus buff!"

"Don't forget. There's still the skill {Void Tornado} that we need to stand inside to dispel! 5 of us needs to stand inside there for 20 seconds. During that time, those who have their Holy Orbs on cooldown should automatically run to the tornado."

"Hmm. Since that we have the {Shadow Orb} right now, we should just try and fight the Holy boss. I'm guessing that the two Shadow and Light bosses will have the same META(1). Shadow and Light are the same thing, just from two opposite ends."

Before they had a chance to examine the {Holy Orb}, everyone had their own minds set on the situation. After they had managed to farm a few more orbs and examine their properties, they voiced out their opinions and started formulating their own plans before Zhang Yang could even guide them.

Zhang Yang smiled with satisfaction, seeing that his party members were now working as team, instead of depending on him alone like old times.

Since the boss fight was expected to be long, a 10-second interval

dispelling rate was tough. Everyone would need to be on their toes and be ready to cast on time. 6 players, one minute...that's a number that required intense concentration and preparation. There was no room for any careless mistakes or they will be the first to be killed.

As mention earlier, since they had many {Shadow Orbs}, they had all decided to try and defeat the Holy boss. They had no need to worry about monsters on the Shadow mountain respawning after they defeat the Holy boss. They were in a special map and they could take their time to kill the boss, for the monsters or the boss would not respawn after being killed.

The party took roughly the same amount of time as they did with other mountains to reach the peak.

The boss was an exceptionally large, perhaps industrialized version of a gigantic light bulb. 30 meters high...how many watts would it take to power up that thing? Unlike normal household light bulbs, this bulb shape..."thing" had a pair of hands that was wielding a long white staff. Unlike the other bosses that had a humanoid shape, the Holy boss had no legs. Instead, it was floating around like a balloon.

[Holy Lord Dustan] (Ascended, Elemental Being)

Level: 240

HP: 12,000,000,000

Defense: 37,330

Magic Attack: 210,392 – 270,392

Skills:

[Radiance's Prayer]: Dedicates oneself to serving the light. Restores 1,000,000 HP and deals 400,000 Holy magic damage to all targets within 100 meters.

[Divine Judgement]: Smites a target with the power of Divinity.

Deals 300% Holy magic attack. Casting: 2 seconds.

[Radiant Chain]: Places a mark on 3 random targets. Marked players must stand at least 40 meters away from each player. Failure will result in an explosion that will deal 400,000 Holy damage every second until the distance between each Marked players exceeds 40 meters. All damage dealt by the explosion will restore Dustan's HP.

[Rage of the Light]: Increases 100% attack power. Stackable. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The Lord of Light. The One that brings salvation to all who repents. The One that smites all that is evil in the world. Born from the Holy Essence Pearl.

#### TL Notes

1. META – Most effective tactic available.

## Chapter 817: Lord of Light, Dustan

---

As expected of the Bane of shadow, the skillset of the Lord of Light was almost, if not stronger than Margalor. Perhaps, the Lord of Light was stronger in a sense that he was a magic attack type, while Margalor was a physical attack type. The skill - {Radiant China} should be the Lord of Light's special skill.

The conditions were simple, as all three chosen players must run 40 meters away from each other in different directions.

"I think the skill {Radiant Chain} will be a little tricky. All of us would have to concentrate on using the {Shadow Orb}, and if anyone out of the three Marked players are supposed to use their {Shadow Orbs}, how are they supposed to coordinate? There has to be a plan for this."

Zhang Yang nodded at Daffodil Daydream's comment and said, "Alright. Here's the plan. All of us should stick together during the boss fight. If any three players are inflicted by {Radiant Chain}, you should move to the clock, those standing close to 12, 4 and 8 should move towards that direction. If there is someone among the chosen three who has to use their [Shadow Orb], stand your ground and let the others run away. The party will take the damage. Might as well do it that way, rather than allowing the boss to get a damage buff."

"Hold up," said Fatty Han as he determined the direction of 12, 4, and 8 before he grunted. "Okay. I got it. I think."

With Transformations, an Ascended tier boss was not a great threat to them. However, they could not allow the boss to gain any damage buffs, or the party will face imminent danger. Their party could, at little chance, survive the boss fight after one buff. Two buffs would raise the chances of failure to 100%. It was not something that anyone, not even Zhang Yang, could hold off. Hence, the team can only fail once as a whole.



"I have to stress that no one in the party is allowed to die. One death would mean one less interruption in each cycle. Although we can fight against two more cycles, the boss fight will eventually be a failure."

"Understood."

"Remember. Failure is not an option. Unless you want to waste another 3 days."

"Hell no!"

They had been grinding on the same quest for 81 days. They had a total of 9 days, which means, they could use Transformations 3 times. Technically, for both the Shadow Lord and the Lord of Light boss fights, they could only afford to fail once!

Based on the party's prowess and the number of [Shadow Orbs] in hand, the party could repeat the boss' fight for 7 to 8 rounds. This was to give players multiple chances to fight the boss. However, there was still a limit to it. If they fail too many times, and all of the [Shadow Orbs] have been exhausted, the quest will be a failure, since there will no more Shadow Stalkers to kill. The previous arrangement was extremely fortunate. Everyone had more than enough [Shadow Orbs] in hand to use in that fight. If Zhang Yang were to distribute the orbs unevenly, perhaps, there would be a situation where the cycle of interruption would run out of juice.

"Ready your Transformations. Off we go!"

Everyone charged towards the boss with all sorts of appearance, both appealing and erotic, while others were disgusting or just plain funny.

"The Light beckons all that is righteous." The lightbulb looking boss struck his staff into the ground and muttered. The boss pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and a powerful beam of light came down from the sky to struck Zhang Yang's character. "Sinners will

be judged! Off you go, to hell!"

After {Divine Judgement}, the boss did not pause and quickly clapped his hands to chant {Radiance Prayer}. His mouth was moving, but the language he spoke was unknown and alien.

3 seconds later, many beams of holy light came striking down from the sky and onto everyone in the field. The boss' basic attack was around 400,000, paired with the debuff aura on everyone, everyone in the party had taken more than 480,000 damage in that instance.

"I'll repeat the cycle again. The first to interrupt would be me. Ice cube is the second. Third would be Snow..." Zhang Yang repeated the entire strategy again to refresh everyone's memories.

After a few rounds of {Radiance Prayer}, the boss had started using the {Rage of the Light}. However, just as the boss opened his mouth to chant, Zhang Yang went ahead and silenced him with {Shadow Orb}. Upon usage, the orb broke into nothing, releasing a large cloud of shadow smoke that enveloped the boss' character.

10 seconds later, the boss tried to chant {Rage of the Light} again, but was stopped by Sun Xin Yu smoothly. Everyone else performed flawlessly and had prevented the boss from using {Rage of the Light}. It was made possible, due to the 2-second casting duration of the skill. Perhaps, anyone could have performed in the same manner.

The interruption cycle was only important during the first cycle. In the first turn, everyone would have their {Shadow Orbs} ready to be used. Since the item had a 200-second cooldown duration, and {Rage of the Light} only had a 10 seconds duration, it was perfectly designed like a puzzle piece for everyone to use their own {Shadow Orbs} at the right time after the first cycle. There would be no need for anyone to calculate. All they would have to do is to pay attention to the countdown timer on the item and prepare for their turn when the timer runs out.

After the first cycle was completed, the boss started using the skill {Radiant Chain}. On the first use, Wei Yan Er, Cheng Xue Yao, and Endless Starlight were the unfortunate trio. All three of them followed the plan and ran in different directions. Amongst the three of them, two had A class Inheritances, and even though flying was prohibited in the arena, they could glide at breakneck speed. Endless Starlight even had a Mythical tier mount that could run at roughly the same speed. Hence, when the 3-second timer rang, everyone had already reached the required distance and had the skill dispelled.

It was fortunate that everyone had reacted swiftly, as everyone in the team had only taken two ticks of the DOT.

The battle proceeded on smoothly and without a problem. The party had not failed to stop the boss from using {Rage of the Light} and had never failed to run away when the boss used his {Radiant Chain}. Despite that, everyone was still worried about the {Radiant Chain} instead of the {Rage of the Light}. The battle continued on for more than 20 minutes.

If the fight was just a matter of 10 minutes, they could have handled the stress and sucked it in for later. However, the fight was dragged for over 20 minutes! At that moment, the boss had over 27% HP. Everyone started to act sluggishly. The mental stress had acted up and was affecting the team.

Zhang Yang had always had to remind the party member when it was their turn to dispel {Rage of the Light} or {Radiant Chain}, allowing the team to slightly make up for their own mental stress. No one was relaxed then. Not even Fatty Han, who could make jokes, even when at death's door. The tension in the air was so tense that if anyone slips and made a mistake, it will only cause a chain reaction that will cause the fight to end prematurely. No one wanted to be the black sheep that causes the entire herd to be gobbled up by lions. Hence, even though they knew it was tough, everyone kept quiet and only responded to Zhang Yang's

commands.

1 hour into the fight...

20%...

{Glare of the Death God}!

A shadow cloud formed on top of the boss' character and grinned. Everyone screamed with joy and instantly launch their attack repeatedly, instantly hacking away 10% of the boss' HP. Since it was already during the boss' vulnerable state, the team's DPS power increased by a notch and had ended the boss fight quickly and swiftly without any signs of failure.

"Eat my axe! Obnoxious boss! Wanna be a saint? Go to church and praise the Lord there!" Wei Yan Er jumped up high in the air and slammed down her {Killing Cleave}. Her 4,000,000 damage had ended the boss with a single strike.

The boss' lightbulb appearance broke down and dispersed into the air.

"Woohoo! It's over! It's time for the loot! @%#\$@%^#\$ OMG! Look at that! There are so many things!" cried Fatty Han, louder than usual.

Everyone had slain many Ascended tier boss for the past few days, yet they had never seen such a huge pile of loot. The amount of item dropped at that moment could total up to the results of four or five Ascended tier boss fights.

Dustan had dropped a total of 11 Ascended tier equipment, 9 Holy tier equipment, and other random items. That round, Zhang Yang was lucky enough to claim one Ascended tier necklace.

[Aimilla's Necklace] (Ascended, Necklace)

Vitality: +11760

Strength: +2060

Dexterity: +2060

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 23,520.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage from attack.

Use: Unleash the Wrath of Aimilla. Inflicts 1,000,000 Chaos damage and stuns a target for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 2 hours.

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Note: Aimilla was a famous and well-known Jewelry Craftswoman. The necklace was her one and only masterpiece that was imbued with her own power.

As such, the only equipment on Zhang Yang that was not an Ascended tier were two more accessories and his gloves. That, and the Celestial tier equipment that he wore. However, after completing all the quests, he could be able to acquire an Ascended tier accessory which is the [Demonic Seal]. After he obtains that, his goal to get all equipment on him to be Ascended tier would be accomplished.

As expected, the boss had dropped another aura skill book that was closely related to the debuff they received. Galileo, the little boy, had managed to roll for it. Still, it would be inappropriate to call him a boy, since he was about to graduate high school and enter the big league.

[Holy Aura] (Level 1): Affects all allies around 40 meters. Inflicts 1% additional damage as Holy damage after an attack.

Amongst the other items there, there was a large amount of [Advance Aura Stones] as well. Hence, when Galileo obtained the aura skill, he too, was able to enjoy maxing out the aura skill in a flash. The additional damage inflicted by then was as high as 10%. It was similar to that of {Strength Aura} that would directly increase the entire team's DPS. However, {Strength Aura} only affected physical attack class while Holy damage affected

everyone, both physical attack and magic attack. It was slightly better.

After distributing all the items, everyone took a break instead of rushing for the final boss. They had chosen to leave the place for a while since there were no requirements for them to finish any boss in any order. It would only take the party one hour to reach Shadow mountain. However, since the party's Transformations were on cooldown. There had no reason to go back to Margalor for the time being. Might as well take the time to do some rest and recreational activities.

...

Zhong Xiu Hua's news about his random activities had been suppressed greatly. In fact, when you type in any keyword concerning him, there would not be an article or blog entry about it. Everything had been deleted. However, the first domino was already pushed and the effect of it would never be stopped. Without posting anything at all, simply by word of mouth, everyone in the country now knew that the main character behind the "funky" piece of news was the powerful political figure's son.

It has been a few days since Zhang Yang heard of Zhong Xiu Hua's activity in the game. Perhaps, he was being punished by his father.

They say that good times create bad future. Zhong Xiu Hua's father was a powerful man in the political world, and not in the bad kind of way. He was rather a famous politician for his deeds and service to the nation. If he knew about the true nature of his son, he could have him punished severely. Disowning his own son would be a far cry, still. At most, Zhong Xiu Hua would be sent to some harsh camp by the countryside to be trained mentally. In better words, change his stuck-up attitude of a spoiled brat.

More than half of the support of Zhong Xiu Hua came from his mother. Who knows? Perhaps his mother shared the same

maverick mannerisms of her son. All in all, Zhong Xiu Hua would never be gone for long. Zhang Yang would expect him to appear sooner or later to stir up problems. Then again, if he does, Zhang Yang was ready for it. He had already set up traps for him. The only thing that he needed to be afraid of was Zhong Xiu Hua truly changing for the better and quitting the game.

Like that would ever happen...

# Chapter 818: Ending the Fight

---

Since the Transformations needed time to cool down, Zhang Yang announced a day off the game.

Luo Yu Rou was pregnant for the seventh month by then and her belly was bulging out rather spectacularly. Her original slim waist had expanded so massively that Luo Yu Rou, the famous superstar who was famous for being extremely sexy, while also having a serious case of celebrity syndrome, grunted every time she laid eyes on Zhang Yang.

Back before the existence of 'God's Miracle', being pregnant would automatically take an actress out of the acting line. However, in 'God's Miracle' all that mattered was her appearance. On the plus side of recording in the game, she had no need to move around! She was literally laying down on the bed while her in-game character would run, jump, and perform many other actions that she could not perform in the real world!

Zhang Yang was unwittingly roped in and soon realized that he was going to star as the villain of her movie! He was now an actor!

Even though shooting the game requires users to log into the game. However, the user would require a special helmet that connects to a separate client and server. The developers had made a separated server. They were still using the same engine, but unlike 'God's Miracle', no one besides the ones developers have authorized could enter.

Those with clearance may come in during worktime and "go" to work. Appearance adjustments have never been any easier, since all the staff could manually control everything simply by adjusting the sliders on the menu! The users can also change their entire character! That meant that, they could even become a monster, if required by the director. Most of the settings, backdrops, environments were adjustable as well. Since the gaming company



was only meant to provide a means for shooting, they were not involved in the shooting itself. Hence, through proper arrangements, all controls, including the means of changing the environment, physics of the world, and other unexplainable and meticulous matters were handed over to Lou Yu Rou to control. All they asked was to limit the knowledge of the system to themselves and not leak everything out for the world to know. It was rather natural for them to do so, since other digital companies might get their hands on their engine and clone it. If Luo Yu Rou had no full authority over the engine, she would keep coming back to the company to adjust the settings of the "world". That would happen, since her movie consisted of many kinds of scenes that required constant changes. Still, there were still parts of the movie that the developers had to be in charge of, that is, the character design. While that was handed over to the game developers, the movement of the characters were left to the director. Luo Yu Rou wanted to film an action film. Hence, when it comes to fighting moves, no one else besides Zhang Yang was perfect for it. As such, Zhang Yang became her co-director to assist her in directing fighting scenes.

World class players would definitely perform much more extravagantly, when compared to greenhorns. Hence, after getting "free" help from Zhang Yang, Luo Yu Rou became a little greedier and had Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream to help as well. They were both chosen to be part of the movie!

The little girl could not be more excited. She had always idolized Luo Yu Rou and hoped to be like her one day. Her overwhelming excitement caused her to play around on the virtual set, forcing Zhang Yang to allow her to tweak her character appearance and make her boobs bigger. Naturally, Zhang Yang immediately changed her appearance back to her usual flatboard figure. At one point, he even turned her into a man!

Seeing that the little Wei Yan Er was being energetic, Luo Yu Rou

had created an extra character just to fit Wei Yan Er's personality. According to her, Wei Yan Er's lively character might be one of the main selling points of the movie! Hearing that, Zhang Yang became slightly excited. He could not wait to see how would Wei Yan Er perform in the movie, and how would the masses react to such a character.

During the movie filming, Zhang Yang felt that Luo Yu Rou was an odd woman. While she had her way to get around Zhang Yang and have him tear fat checks for her, she would only spend that money for the movie. It was never for herself to spend. She did pay herself by setting a salary, a rather lavish one at that too, to restore her former lifestyle. Still, she did not need to do it that way. The movie studio company was given to her by Zhang Yang, yet Luo Yu Rou had rejected it like a bad organ. She had even made Zhang Yang the real owner of the company and had herself assigned as the director. That would only allow Zhang Yang to be the real profiteer of the movie! She would earn from it, but not as much as he would be! He was technically sitting down, and being spoonfed by the woman!

What an eccentric woman!

After one day in real life passed, three days had passed in the game as well. Wei Yan Er was being a little insistent on staying by Luo Yu Rou's side to continue her role as the character. However, Zhang Yang told Luo Yu Rou to cut her out from the rest of the movie and dragged the little girl out of the movie set by pinching her nose in real life. The two of them logged out of the movie server and logged back into the gaming server.

Everyone gathered together, threw jokes about Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream being in the movie. After getting ready, everyone charged toward the last boss, Margalor.

"In the Holy boss fight, {Radiant Chain} is a skill where the boss will automatically pick 3 random souls from us all. In this fight, when the boss uses {Void Tornado}, we would have to fill in the

blanks to stop the tornado from wiping us all out." Zhang Yang made everyone gather near the boss and started to lecture.

"There's six of you here who are all under Level 210. I don't need to remind you that you are all here as backups. I cannot have you die that easily. So, if any of you have more than a 30-second cooldown for your {Light Orbs}, do not, I repeat, do not go to the tornado. It's not that I don't trust you. It's just that, I do not want to create any chances for anyone to fail, especially since standing in the tornado will force you to stand there for 20 seconds. There would be an instance where one of you would have more than a 10-second gap in your {Light Orb} cooldown duration. We can't have that."

Zhang Yang continued. "Now, the Wind Essence Pearl is next, and we only have less than 2 days (real time) to do it. Right now, if we use our Transformation skills, we could only use it after 72 hours. Hence, do the math yourself and you'll understand that we cannot afford to lose, not even by a longshot. If we fail now, we could fail the entire quest. Do you understand?"

"Understood!"

"Alright. Buckle up. Let's win this."

Everyone nodded and got to their feet. Everyone knew that if they drag the fight too long, they would start to lose concentration and focus. Without Transformations, the entire battle might be dragged even longer, thus increasing the chances of mistakes happening. If anyone misses their chance to use the {Light Orb} to cancel out the {Shadow Blessing}, they will fail the entire boss fight.

Technically, the Shadow Lord fight was roughly similar to the Lord of Light. One asked you to dodge the {Radiant Chain}, while the other asked you to get into the {Void Tornado}. Complete opposites, yet one and the same.

Zhang Yang activated his Transformation and zoomed towards

the boss, leading the attack with a loud battlecry.

"Insolent fools! How wasteful of you to throw away your second lives for naught!" Margalor got up from his throne and got into his fighting stance. "Since you have no regard for the importance of life, hell welcomes the likes of you!"

"What a lame-\*ss speech. Could the game designers be more creative?"

"Fatty bro. If you're complaining that much, how about you send a mail to them and ask them to hire you instead?"

"Please. I'd rather spend my time in bed and have my girlfriend, ahem blowing the bagpipes, if you know what I mean..."

"Erhm, I don't mean to be rude but, bagpipes are big. I think yours might just be a small, kid-sized harmonica?"

Everyone laughed at the joke while Fatty Han grew mad with rage. Just as he was about to strip his pants to prove that his bagpipe was not a harmonica, Zhang Yang swooped back in his Transformed state and slapped Fatty Han's back.

"I was only 5 inches away from starting the boss fight and you're about to strip your pants? Are you f\*cking with me?"

The atmosphere immediately became serious and tense. Zhang Yang had no need to explain the rules again and moved forward. Before the boss used {Shadow Blessing,} everyone could spare some time for some light jokes. It was only a matter of time before the atmosphere turned tense.

"Darkness. Shadow. Heed thine power. I, Margalor, shall dominate the land in thy name!" the boss clapped his hands and started to chant a spell.

Zhang Yang was the first to jump forward and used the [Light Orb] on the boss to stop the chanting of {Shadow Blessing}.

"I'm done. Next one!"

10 seconds later, Sun Xin Yu used her [Light Orb].

"I'm done. Next."

20 seconds...30 seconds...40 seconds...

Eventually, after 200 seconds later, the first cycle of interruption was completed without a hitch. By then, the boss had finally used its ultimate skill, the {Void Tornado}.

Appearing without a gust of wind, a large, 3-meter wide black tornado appeared. The dark gust formed quickly, darkening everything within the area, yet there were still some sparkles inside it, making it look like the stars in the universe were being sucked into a black hole.

At that moment, Cheng Xue Yao and the rest of the new members of the party had jumped into the party without waiting for Zhang Yang's command. When they stood next to the tornado, their entire characters were immediately sucked inside like a vacuum cleaner, disappearing without a trace.

20 seconds later, the tornado slowed down hastily and "spat" out all 5 players. The black colored gust died down instantly, leaving no trace of it ever being there.

"Very nice! Good job!"

Even though it was actually a simple job, Zhang Yang had praised them for their feat. He learned that adults, were the same as kids, would like being praised by their bosses! As the leader of the party, and the guild master of the guild, it would be wise to "take care" of the emotions of his underlings. Like a certain someone had said before, "Take care of your employees and they will take care of your business."

Zhang Yang was not a leader of a nation. He was merely a guild master. However, being the one man who was recognized by the entire world as the number 1 player, he was idolized by all. His words of praise could mean the world to his followers. Hence,

besides Cheng Xue Yao alone, the rest of the 4 that had joined her in jumping into the tornado got all hyped up and happy.

"I'll see you really soon. My precious!" said Zhang Yang to himself as he accidentally got distracted by Cheng Xue Yao's belly.

"Enough! You have sullied the ground of the gods! Death shall be the end of you!" cried the boss.

"...is this all that the developers could come up with? Even I could come up with better speeches than that! Man! This is so annoying!" Fatty Han grunted impatiently.

"Those who defy the word of the gods shall die!"

"Die?! I'll pull your tongue out and boil it over my pumpkin soup for dinner!"

Unlike many bosses, the party was rather vigorous and extra pumped up when facing this "talkative" boss. They were, as if, no longer able to endure its repetitive speech patterns and wanted to end the fight as soon as possible.

Since the boss did not have any recovery skills, everyone's super-powered attack had the boss' HP dropping down to 20% in less than 40 minutes. By then, the casting speed of {Lullaby of Death} had decreased from 3 seconds to only 2 seconds. The party's healing rate was not doing well enough to cope with the sudden burst of damage.

However, it was only momentarily. When Han Ying Xue and the other healers were startled by the sudden increase in damage, they too had burst out and had pushed themselves to spam as fast as they could, making sure that everyone always had {Regeneration} on them and were actively casting healing spells one after another. Each time the boss loses 10% HP after the vulnerable state, the casting and usage rate of the powerful AoE skills were strengthened, forcing the party to take hits like never before.

45 minutes into the battle...the boss was left with 10% HP.

At then, {Lullaby of Death} casting time was reduced even further to only 1.5 seconds. Compared to his vulnerable state, it was an increase of 100% damage!

The healers of the team were finally faced with a deficit of healing. One by one, the healers had used their ultimate skills to cope with the loss of HP to keep the team alive. One second, you'll have 80% HP, the next second, you'll have 30%, one second later, you'll have 75%. The rise and drop of the party's HP in total was going up and down faster than a roller coaster.

"Don't spare any of your skills now! Unleash your full potential!" cried Zhang Yang.

Players with HP recovery skill had used them non-stop when available, allowing them to cope with the healers. Everyone but Zhang Yang was facing trouble. The man had a HP bar longer than anyone there. Even though he was the boss' punching bag, taking more damage than the others, he was the only one who had not used his own recovery skill, the {God of War Radiance}.

8%...5%...2%....

The entire party was about to fall. Han Ying Xue then used {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} to save everyone at the very last minute.

1%...0%!

"Grah...Darkness beckons me..."

# Chapter 819: Unlimited Life Works

---

After defeating the boss, everyone sat down on the floor and relaxed. It was a long trip indeed. The chained quest line had them chasing after bosses for more than a month! However, since they were tasked to kill Ascended tier bosses and were rewarded with Ascended tier equipment, could they be rewarded with Celestial tier equipment after the quest is over? It was a thought that everyone shared.

Zhang Yang smiled. He was thinking the same thing, but he knew that the game would not simply hand out Celestial tier equipment that easily. That being said, there was a high chance that there would be a Celestial tier boss for them to fight, later on.

The boss had dropped a total of 10 Ascended tier equipment and nine Holy tier equipment. Although having Holy tier drops when everyone was expecting Ascended tier drops was quite a letdown, the party could rely on Zhang Yang's [Tesseract] to have them upgraded a little. Having +1 Holy tier equipment is definitely better than having none. Besides, if one were to equip a +1 Holy tier set, it would be the same as having an extra Holy tier set piece. (10% upgrade. 10x +1 equipment = 11 equipment).

Zhang Yang had obtained one Ascended tier glove part in the roll and managed to have his entire body equipped with Holy tier. That, and the two random accessories which were Holy tier.

[Black Despair Gauntlet] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +1280

Vitality: +23524

Strength: +4120

Dexterity: +1750

{Level 8 Socket}



Equip: Increases maximum HP by 47,040.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,556 damage from attacks.

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

After the equipment, the next itinerary was a large amount of [Skill Point Crystals], skill books, and others, including a Forbidden Scroll.

As expected, the boss had dropped an aura skill book which was won over by Ten Dusk.

[Shadow Aura] (Level 1): Decreases damage dealt OR healing rate of all hostile targets within 40 meters. You can only have one active aura effect in one instance.

After maxing out the aura skill to Level 10, the damage dealt and healing rate reduction was increased to 10%. Despite the menial numbers, it could cause a substantial amount of problems for a large group of monsters or players alike. Although the skill was not extremely beneficial to the party, it was a bonus to have, for those who did not own any aura skills. 1% or 10%, it was better than having no help at all!

The Forbidden Scroll found was a healing type.

[Forbidden Scroll: Unlimited Life Works] (Usable)

Use: Restores 10% HP per second of all allies within 10 kilometers. Lasts for 30 seconds (Healing amount cannot exceed 300,000HP)

Level Requirement: 200

Despite the powerful healing, it could only last for 30 seconds. It would be almost useless in a world boss fight, since average boss fights would take up to an hour. 30 seconds of burst healing would not do much benefit in a boss fight. On the other hand, it would be a game changer if the scroll suddenly pops up during a group PvP

fight.

The one item that was dropped unexpectedly was a piece of an Inheritance Fragment. An A class Shadow Meister Inheritance. Sadly, everyone in the party already had their own Inheritances. All the C class Inheritance players had slapped themselves in the face for not being patient enough to hunt for A class Inheritances. However, if they had waited, they would not have been invited by Zhang Yang to join the party! Little did they know that the main objective of Zhang Yang recruiting them was to increase the party limit to 20 players. That, and the possibility of the quest awarding players with an accessory! It's an Ascended tier equipment! A extremely rare equipment that not even Level 300 players could farm for!

Zhang Yang kept the Inheritance Fragment and would wait for potential players to earn it rightfully. There will only be 6 S class Inheritance in the world. Even though A class was one tier below that, it was still an incredibly rare Inheritance.

"Why is there only one Inheritance Fragment? Could it be, that this shadow boss was the strongest amongst all?" asked Endless Starlight.

"I don't think that's the reason. I think its about which boss is the last to be slain. If we had chosen the fire boss to be the last, that boss would be the one dropping the Inheritance Fragment," said Zhang Yang, although he was not too sure.

"Alright. All done here? Let's get out of this wretched place. I don't know about you guys, but I'm quite sick of this place already." Said Zhang Yang.

Everyone nodded and got down the mountain to talk to Baa'ljilr.

"Brilliant! Wind, Ice, Fire, Light, and Shadow! Truly brilliant. Bloody well done! All elements have been gathered! Wonderful! The Holy Formation shall be finished, soon enough!" cried Baa'ljilr happily.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Four Elemental Pearls. Obtained 200,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Demonic Seal!’

Although Zhang Yang thought that the [Demonic Seal] was powerful, it could only buff Zhang Yang in his offensive power and not provide an anti-status effect. Hence, Zhang Yang had traded it for [Helena’s Charm] instead. For now, he wore the [Medal of Bravery] and [Demonic Seal].

Even though the [Medal of Bravery] was a Mythical Level 130 accessory which was supposed to provide a 10-second window of Invulnerability, Zhang Yang was already Level 210, thus, the effect was reduced to less than 2 seconds. It was only useful as a means to remove a status effect applied on him.

It was still better than nothing. Accessories were extremely hard to come by in the game. Right then, 90% of Level 200 players were still equipping Level 60 accessories due to the rarity. For the same reason, everyone would want to get their hands on an accessory when they see one. The next grade was Celestial, and a Celestial tier bosses were not easy to defeat, much less farm for a Celestial tier accessory!

After everyone had obtained the quest reward, Baa'ljilr suddenly smiled. It was not a normal smile. It was the smile of a crooked man. The same smile that the bastard Liu Wei tended to hang on his face. Baa'ljilr, with great appreciation in his eyes, paired with the crooked smile, said, "Only one month! One month! Hmmm... hahahahaha! Do you fools know that you did for me? Ahhh. Where are my manners? I must thank you for your deeds!"

Crack...crack...Pssshh!

The old man suddenly turned himself inside-out. It was as if his internals were growing, but his skin was merely an exterior wrap. The skin of the old human man tore off his body, and out came a disgusting, gory exterior of raw flesh. His hands burst out of his

old skin and exposed his claws. He quickly slashed his own face and dropped the mask he was wearing to reveal his true form. He was a red, twin-horned demon!

Fuuh!

A pair of demonic bat-like wings spread out of his back and flapped, allowing the demon to hover a few feet above the ground. His pants flew off, and out came a scorpion like tail that swung about to rid of whatever clothing that remained on him. After a quick swing and slice, Baa'ljlir roared and further expanded his body until he was 3 meters tall!

[Baa'ljlir the Imposter] (Ascended, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 12,500,000,000

Defense: 38,545

Melee Attack: 376,830 – 476,830

Skills: ???

Note: The master of disguise and deception. A loyal follower of the Demon Lord Kenzack.

"Hahaha! Surprise?" Baa'ljlir laughed and looked down at everyone with a demeaning glare. "One month...In one month's time, the Gate of Dimension shall be completed. By then, I shall lead an army the likes of which has never been seen before, to rid this world of life! As my thanks, I shall have you live, only to serve me and the Demon Lord as our slaves! HAHAAHAHA! UNTIL WE MEET AGAIN!"

Baa'ljlir flapped his wings with such force that everyone was blown off their feet. Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang, and other Strength-based class players stood still, unfazed by the strong gust. Baa'ljlir soared to the sky and quickly disappeared into the clouds.

‘Server Announcement: Baa'ljlir the Imposter has successfully

collected all the necessary materials to constructing the Dimension Gate. In 30 days, the Dimension Gate shall be completed and the Demon Army shall descend. Adventures, to stop the Demon Invasion, you must destroy Baa'ljilr the Imposter!

‘Ding! You have received a quest: The Last Spur!’

[The Last Spur] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Baa'ljilr the Imposter will construct the Dimension Gates in no time at all! When he does, a large army of Demonic Soldier will march into the land and destroy all that is living and breathing. Warrior, with the last hope there, go to the Rolling Rock Canyon and find the Demon Camp. You will find Baa'ljilr, and kill him, which will destroy the materials needed to stop the construction of the Dimension Gate.

Progress: The heart of Baa'ljilr the Imposter: 0/1

Quest Reward: Level +2 Skill Points +3

All players who were Level 200 and above had received the quest and it had caused an uproar through the entire game. Everyone, players and non-players alike had started to flood the forums to discuss the matter.

"Noobie tank! Let's go now and kill that old fart!" said Wei Yan Er excitedly. "Level and skill points are waiting for us!"

Everyone else was also fired up along with the little girl. It was understandable. At their current Level, a Level and skill point reward was truly hard to come by.

Zhang Yang cracked a cold laugh and said, "We have just used our Transformation skill. Could we at least wait for 3 days later before we do the killing?"

"Tch tch tch...Noobie tank. How could you forget? We still have our War Chariots!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Huh...well then. Let's go and have a shot. If there's hope, we

will kill that demon. But, my money is on the demon," said Zhang Yang. From his point of view, the quest was probably the start of the Demon Descent patch. No matter how hard they may try, there would be no stopping the demons from flooding through the Dimension Gates. Hence, he had little to no hope of defeating Baa'ljilr.

That and the fact that Baa'ljilr was a Level 250 Ascended tier boss. Only players who have reached Level 220 and above could face him without being burdened by the Level Suppression system. However, everyone there was under Level 220. Zhang Yang, being the highest amongst them all, was only Level 214!

The main problem was that the quest time limit was 30 days. In that timeframe, no one in the entire game could reach Level 220. Hence, it was certain that all players will face the Level Suppression system character degradation while facing Baa'ljilr.

Level Suppression is a f\*cking annoying system. Not only would the player's attack face major reduction, the damage dealt to them would only be increased! If the Ascended tier boss' AoE range is not scary enough, wait till he has the power to deal 2 to 3 times its original damage, due to the Level Suppression system!

That being said, the game developers would never make a quest that can never be solved. Zhang Yang felt that completing the quest would be a hassle. To properly face Baa'ljilr head-on, he would need the entire game's guilds to hand out all their Forbidden Scrolls that could reduce attacks or to weaken the boss in any way possible to compensate for the Level Suppression system. With that, lay another problem. No one would be willing to hand out their Forbidden Scrolls without expecting a reward. Not when using one would guarantee them the right to claim all of the boss' drops in the first place, and be the ones to complete the quest!

It would ultimately be handing over the last parachute!

# Chapter 820: Equipment Upgrade System

---

The Rolling Rock Canyon was in the Pingst Flatland, a Level 240 to Level 270 map. The next tier would be the last, which will be the Level 270 – Level 300 maps.

Zhang Yang and the majority of his party member had only managed to enter the Level 210 – Level 240 map, yet they were all expected to infiltrate into a Level 240 – Level 270 map. It was either the system wanting the quest to be extremely difficult, or that the system had no intention of allowing players to even finish the quest in the first place.

Naturally, in a higher level map where all the monsters are at a much higher level than you, it would be impossible to escape a tough battle. As such, even if Zhang Yang's party is the strongest party in the entire game, they cannot escape the fate of being killed repeatedly. In fact, at one point, the party was taking turns, dying and reviving.

The map was designed in a way that it was not suitable for a large party to train in. That or, they would all be killed before they could even touch the final boss. It would probably take the party close to one month to reach the boss at their current rate. The problem was the fact that a world boss would require a massive number of players to fight it. It was no longer a raid, at then, they had the disadvantage of numbers and the Level Suppression system, at then, it was more like a torture session from the boss instead.

When everyone finally made the hurdle over the field of monsters and made their way to the Rolling Rocks Canyon, everyone stood at the peak of the canyon, staring downward with absolute despair when they saw what lay before them.

In the canyons, all monsters there were Level 250 elite tier demons. Some even had their Levels marked with three question marks! They were obviously much higher than the 30-Level gap, at

around Level 260 or Level 270, even. Due to the annoying Level Suppression system acting up, a single elite tier Level 240 monster would be at the same difficulty as an Ascended tier boss. The wider the Level gap, the further it would be for the monster to be able to detect the players. Zhang Yang's party could not help but attract the attention of 7 to 8 monsters at a time, 10 to 20 even!

The party could make it easy with their Transformation skill but...there's the case of time and the massive area of coverage. That, and the difficulty of the monsters. The canyon's massive size, coupled with more than 10,000 counts of monsters, will absolutely make the entire killing spree long and draggy. Yes, it would be easy for them to handle the monsters via Transformation, but in 30 days, they would only be able to activate their Transformation skill 10 times. That's only a total of 20 hours of active Transformation time. In that 20 hours of super-charged mode, how far could they make it to?

Zhang Yang sighed eventually. He knew that it would be demoralizing for his party to see the leader having a bad time before the killing even starts. He could not help it. The system was playing god with them, as if they were ants trying to kill an elephant. It could be possible if there were a million of them! Finally, after considering all the negative factor, Zhang Yang turned his back away from the canyon and said, "We're done. Let's go home."

Before even waiting for a response, Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and used it. There was not even chance for them to try. It does not need to take Einstein to calculate the probability of their failure. Without a word of protest, everyone followed Zhang Yang and went back to the Holy City.

The devil side of Zhang Yang prevailed as he told everyone in the party to keep quiet about the difficulty of the canyon. He wanted everyone else to experience what they had seen. Let the fools try it themselves and experience the pain firsthand. Even though they



were fools, they should know that a Level 240 – Level 270 map is not something that a normal player could try. However, why would such a quest still attract ambitious players to venture into the abyss? It was due to the reward! Only when they hit a snag, they would obediently nodded their heads and turned back to shore.

In fact, the next 4 to 5 days, all guilds from all corners of the world had given it a try themselves and all of them, not a single one did not fail to turn back after venturing into the canyon.

The Level 200 dungeon, the Elemental Nest, was a 50-man dungeon. There were 6 bosses in total. As the dungeon name implied, the bosses were all elemental types; wind, water, earth, fire, shadow, and light. It was almost the same as the elemental bosses that Zhang Yang's party had just slain back then.

Due to the difficulty of the Hardcore mode of the dungeon, Zhang Yang had initially intended to skip the dungeon. However, since they had obtained many "upgrades" in the past month, they were all technically ready to tackle the dungeon. They had amassed a total of 40 Ascended tier equipment, at 2 counts of equipment per person on average. Even the Holy tier equipment had over 30 counts as well. Coupled with several newly maxed aura skills, the party's strength was upgraded to make Hardcore look like Hard mode!

No matter how difficult the Elemental Nest is, the bosses inside were all merely Holy tiers. Those who equipped Holy tier equipment should not have much problem fighting a similar tier boss. Moreover, some of them even had Level 240 Ascended and Holy tier equipment. Hence, when Zhang Yang and his core party members decided to join the exploration team of the dungeon, they had taken less than 10 days to conquer the dungeon and obtain the First Clear Achievement.

In the midst of their achievement, the bastard Zhong Xiu Hua had appeared from thin air. In the past, he had made a mistake and

someone had managed to capture his in-game ID tag through the forums. Hence, many social justice warriors had decided to publicly tag him as the STD Prince. As such, the guild, Eternal Flame had been branded as the Red Light District. Their fame and popularity had fallen to a point that not even one of their members dared to reveal themselves in public, since all of China was practically laughing at them.

Weirdly enough, even though they were the laughing stock of China, many players were still crying for a spot in the guild! The reason was actually rather simple. Flowers that grow nearer to the sun get the light. Their main motive was to get close to Zhong Xiu Hua in his time of need to get "friendship" points and reap the benefits later.

Zhong Xiu Hua had a ton of problems needed to be solved, hence he was unable to find any spare time to whip out malicious plans and schemes to sabotage Zhang Yang and Lone Desert Smoke. So, Zhang Yang was rather relaxed for a few days. He took the tranquility of peace and grinded his Level to his heart's content and crafted potions.

On other news, Luo Yu Rou's ever-growing womb was sending Zhang Yang over the edge. As days passed on, the anxiety kept on growing until Luo Yu Rou herself had to calm Zhang Yang down when he had a panic attack. At the same time, Luo Yu Rou's self-directed movie "Star Wars" was completed and was ready to be aired worldwide, both in the game and in the cinemas.

As per agreed, for Luo Yu Rou to have accessibility to the 'God's Miracle's Engine to make the movie, Dream Tech would want 1 gold coin per ticket, both physical and digital tickets sold. It was a fair deal, considering the fact that almost both non-players and players would enjoy the movie.

Players would have a more fulfilling immersion of the movie since they could log into their gaming helmets to watch the movie with a true 360-degree view. It was far better than whatever level

of immersion any cinema in the world could offer. As such, with the launching of 'Star Wars', many other movie companies had started to shift their production into 'God's Miracle'. God's Miracle was now the keystone of several major studios.

The most famous player in 'God's Miracle', Zhan Yu name, was tagged as a guest cast in the movie 'Star Wars', and it became one selling point of the movie.

A miracle was born and the movie had managed to give birth to a bunch of diehard fans. It was a major success, since Luo Yu Rou was in the movie herself. Her acting skills, paired with her utterly sexy poses and daring shots made everyone who worked with her be her "slaves".

Instead of her acting ability, Zhang Yang was more profoundly surprised at the flaming popularity of the movie. Even though physical ticket sales were only limited in China, the digital ticket and in-game movie viewers had reached as high as 2,200,000,000. All critics who had readied their pens and paper threw them in disgust. They could not even write anything that was wrong with it!

Luo Yu Rou, or Daybreak Phoenix had instantly become an overnight phenomenon. Her fame and popularity had skyrocketed to the entire world. It was not a surprise. Her sexiness, elegance, style, appearance, was the combination of the purity of an angel and the lustful seduction of the devil!

Obviously, not many knew about her carrying the offspring of Zhang Yang. Everytime she felt a strong kick in her womb, she would transfer all the pain that she endures by biting Zhang Yang during their lovey-dovey session in bed. Although he was in pain every time she did that, Zhang Yang felt that it was a fair trade, besides, as a woman, her bites were nothing but nibbles on his iron-like skin.

When the game patches the new Demon Descent event, the

producers of 'Star Wars', "Yang Yang Movies" has made a total of 11,800,000,000 gold coins profit. In reality, their profits were not as high as the world's highest profit, although, they were still amongst the top 10 highest earning movies.

As the director, scriptwriter, and even an actor of the movie, Luo Yu Rou was highly sought after by many of the other major movie companies in the world. However, since Luo Yu Rou had not created a real in-game character, no one was able to really make contact with her besides emailing Yang Yang Movies.

With the popularity of the first movie, Luo Yu Rou had gotten all hyped up and had voiced out her intention to start preparing for the second movie. She believed with the heat of the first production, her second movie will receive a better profit than her first. She believed that the numbers would go up as long as her movie quality would keep their edge.

Back to the game. Since Baa'ljilr the Imposter could not be defeated, the Demon's Descent will inevitably launch at the given time.

One month later...

'Server Announcement: Baa'ljilr the Imposter has successfully created a fully functioning Teleportation Gate. Impending doom approaches. Warriors! The world shall face the greatest threat we have ever known! The first attack wave of Demon Soldier, led by Demon Lord Kenzack will arrive in the Pingst Flatland. This is but the first step to their large-scale invasion!'

'Server Announcement: To aid Warriors against the incoming Demonic Army, the Great Weapon Smith, Mazza Mazza will open his Weapon Upgrade service to all players. For more information, please head to the Holy City Anthylor and talk to Mazza Mazza.'

Server Announcement: The Demon Army will soon attack all major cities in the world. Warriors, please make haste with your preparation!'

Once the stream of server announcement had ended, Zhang Yang had finally realized that the system was going to start using the Weapon Upgrade system to earn money...

As such, when he had made his way to Anthylor and talked to the greenish goblin, Zhang Yang had found that each upgrade would cost 100 gold coins. Furthermore, all equipment that was upgraded would not gain any tiers!

To put in comparison, Mazza Mazza's equipment upgrade service does not have cooldown. Players can continue to upgrade their equipment provided that they had enough gold coins and equipment. On the other hand, the Tesseract that Zhang Yang owned had an hour long cooldown time in between upgrades. Despite that, there was still a chance to allow lower tier equipment to gain tiers. The system had made the Tesseract having a cooldown system to prevent players from making a large profit from it.

All and all, Zhang Yang felt that the developers were smart enough to introduce the equipment upgrade service at that time. It was a means of earning money, as well as controlling the economy of the game. The system will "discard" older equipment as well, as well as take in the in-game currency back into the game.

Naturally, when the system had first introduced the weapon upgrade mechanism, countless players had flocked over to the NPC to try it out. Since Mazza Mazza was an NPC, he could talk to all players at the same time without a problem. Players could interact with him even though there were countless of other players around, simply by standing close enough to him.

Zhang Yang gave it a try as well and found out at the mechanism of upgrading equipment were the same as the Tesseract. However, there was a minor difference which Zhang Yang felt a little annoyed. The Tesseract had a 10% higher success rate. During the +1 or +2 phases, it would not affect those chances much. However, after the +4, +5 phases, 10% chance was extremely high!

That, and the fact that the Tesseract had an hour long cooldown! Zhang Yang sighed at the fact that he could not make much gold from that! Still, it was just a chance that had slipped by. It was not that he was not earning enough. In fact, he had so much money that he could not find a place to spend them! Besides letting the girls go off to a shopping spree that is...

In the end, it would not matter since the Tesseract was good enough to allow him and his teammates to enjoy it.

Although the system had promoted the equipment upgraded system by encouraging players to get ready for the Demon Descent event, it was just merely tricking players into emptying their gold coin pouch into the pool. Even plenty of low-level players had asked professional players to upgrade their equipment for them.

There were so many players that it would take more than 10 days to restore peace around Mazza Mazza's shop.

By then, the Demon Descent event had started with the first attack from the Demon Army.

# Chapter 821: The Start of the Invasion

---

One giant army of demons, one giant demonic leader, one giant war. It was an inevitable conflict. The first place to be struck by the demon was Kandahar, one of the main cities in the Japan-Korea region.

Many have asked Zhang Yang to initiate an attack strike on the incoming wave but was rejected immediately. A majority of players had no intention of doing so either. Players from other regions will never travel all the way to another region to fight, even if the rewards are good. The main reason was due to the lack of transportation. Players are not allowed to use Teleportation to move there. The only way to travel there was to run. It would be faster if they had flying mounts, but it was still considered as a long and tiresome journey. Then again, even with flying mounts, traveling from the furthest point of origin from a region to the next would take a least 12 hours. By then, the invasion would have been over.

Calculations done by the pros would never go wrong. When the system made the announcement the incoming attack, 8 hours later, the city of Kandahar had been flipped upside down and became the playground of the demons. At the same time, all players from the Japan-Korea region were punished for their defensive failure. All experience points earned will be reduced by 10%. It was a harsh punishment, considering the fact that the regular grinding speed was already long. It was the same as reducing their grinding efficiency.

According to the system event mechanism, the invasion of the demon will stop when the region is left with only one last city. Hence, in the worst case scenario, players will not be left with no roof over their heads, though at the cost of 30% grinding speed.

Technically, after Level 100, gaining a single level would take close to 10 days in real life. Reducing their efficiency would only

increase the time taken up to 1 month!

Hence, the responsibility to defend the city lay with all who is within the region!

The first invasion was to serve as a reminder of how strong was the demons were. The next attack will launch in 3 days' time. Japan-Korea region aside, one city in all other regions will also face off with the invasion army. After the first attack, the demon army will attack one of the cities in all eight region every 30 days.

Such an attack will last for 7 waves. After that, no more attack waves will spawn, giving players a chance to take back their cities from the demons. After all regions' have removed the presence of demons within their own regions, the final boss, the Demon Lord, Celestial tier boss, Kenzack will appear.

The ones who had it worst was the Japan-Korea region. When the announcement was made, players had no time to prioritize the attack. Perhaps if they had enough time to prepare, they might have stood a chance to foil the attack in the first place. Sadly, when the demons invaded, most of the higher leveled players were all in Anthylor. Since there were no Teleportation Circles in the Holy City, players would have to travel to a Territory and teleport back to their base from there. Since Japan-Korea players had not managed to even conquer a single territory by then, all of them had to travel back to their regions via foot! When they had returned, all of the lower level players had perished, allowing the demon army to subdue the city easily.

Now that the Japan-Korea region had made themselves a prime example of what a lack of preparation does to oneself, all other region had started to make their preparations. Those who were still loitering in the Holy City would have to make their way back to a Territory within 2 days in order to return to their city just in time to fight the incoming demon attack. Provided that there were two more days till the incoming attack, all players around the globe had made their way and spared no free time to have fun.



Everyone was either busy grinding or killing random bosses to amass stronger weapons. Even though the minor upgrade could only provide a tiny boost to their overall stat, it was better than having no upgrade at all. The video and news about the demons attacking Japan-Korea region was enough to strike fear to everyone who was slacking off. None dared to let their guard down, for the next world war was about to descend.

Three days later...

‘Server Announcement: The Demon Army has moved their troops to the Andador City. Estimated time of Arrival is: 1 hour!’

‘Server Announcement: The Demon Army had moved their troops to the Crimson Sky City. Estimated time of Arrival is: 1 hour!’

...

A total of 7 long red lines of text popped up in the server announcement channel and alerted all players besides Japan-Korea of the oncoming army.

During then, all players had started to make their way back to their own cities from where they came from. All major city’s teleportation circles kept on transporting players from all corners of the world. Within minutes after the first announcement, all had returned to their base.

Zhang Yang and everyone else had made their way back to Crimson Sky City and made their stand there.

The city had four castle doors, where all four will face oncoming attacks. That was probably the only information about the war that they all had then. There was no clue as to who and what kind of monsters will there be. There was no news coming out of Japan-Korea region after the first demon attack, since they wanted the other region to face the unknown and fall as well. It would be a shame if Japan-Korea were the only ones who fall.

"Little Yang, did you officially become an actor? I saw you in the movie 'Star Wars' and was rather disappointed with your sucky acting skills. What a boner-killer..." said Fatty Han as he leaned against the castle wall and started to chat.

"I hate to say this. But, big boss' acting skills are very ..how do I put it in words...rigid? Fake? Thank god that you only had a cameo as one of those villain's grunts. Man...I cannot imagine big boss being the main villain. The whole movie would suck!" said Endless Starlight as he criticized Zhang Yang.

"But there's one scene that even I would have to give a two-thumbs-up. That scene where you were trying to seduce the main heroine. Holy crap! That's just Oscar winning acting there! The woman. Not you. Don't get me wrong. That woman is the bomb. I mean. Just look at her. She's got it all! The boobs, the waist, that bombardier-class butts! Man, I wish I could just shake her hands...." Said Fatty Han. He did not know that Luo Yu Rou was the actress who played the heroine in the movie. If he knew it, he would have cleaned up his dialogue a little.

"I notice that the movie was made by Yang Yang Movies. Could it be...that guild master was the owner?" A random guildmate who happened to be around them spoke up.

Zhang Yang could not hide the fact and nodded awkwardly. Even though the movie company was created by Luo Yu Rou, she had made Zhang Yang the official owner of the company. The most shocking news was the fact that Zhang Yang had only invested over 100 million and managed to earn back 10 times the initial investment!

However, that was just the net revenue. Out of the 10 billion dollars he earned, 5% was paid to Dream Tech, not to mention the other actors' salaries and random expenses. Even though the ratio of cost and effort to profit earned was not as good as the territory teleportation fees, Zhang Yang could earn more if he just makes a few more movies in the future...he could even be in the Oscars, not

as an actor, of course!

"Hey hey. Gimme something here. For your next movie, I want in as well. Hook me up yea? Do your brother a favor and give me a perverted role! I'll be sure to shine!" said Fatty Han with a certain glint in his eyes.

"Hmph. I'll let you take the role of the "Invincible East"!" (1)

"Hey noobie tank! What about me?! I want to act as well!" said Wei Yan Er while doing the puppy eyes.

"Hmm. Little Yan Er has a natural talent in acting. Your vigorous and active behavior will be suitable for characters that are annoying! I'd say, 9 out of 10! You might be even on par with The Daybreak Phoenix!"

Wei Yan Er snickered happily and said, "In that case, my name shall be the Ferocious Lioness! With my power in hand, I can shake the land and summon the winds at my beck and call!"

FUUUSH!

While everyone was happily chatting, a bright red flash of light shot from nowhere. There was a long red line which was all too similar to that of the aggro range of monsters. The line stretched all the way from one end of the castle to the other end.

‘Ding! The Demon Army has started their first wave of attack!’

‘Ding! The Graveyard of Crimson Sky City has been temporarily locked. Upon death, you can only be revived by Priests and Holy Knights, or by other special methods. Crimson Sky City has been locked and no one can enter nor exit the city.’

From afar, Zhang Yang could see a long stretch of red little devils that were all immolating. Without binoculars, Zhang Yang could have mistook them for floating fireballs that were hovering towards the castle. Since the Little Devils were "little", all of them were only the size of little toddlers that were rampaging around after eating too much sugar. Like the wretched kids which Zhang

Yang found annoying, the little devils had twin horns that were sticking out from their foreheads and long thin tails that swung around like leather whips.

[Little Devil] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 200

HP: 219,680

Defense: 8,080

Magic Attack: 30,338 – 40,338

Skills:

[Fire Missile]: Deals 200% Fire Magic damage to target. Range: 30 meters. Casting: 2 seconds.

Amongst the normal tier demons, one out of 100 of them was slightly larger than the others. They were the elite tiers.

[Red Tail Little Devil] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 200

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 12,650

Magic Attack: 46,438 – 66,438

Skills:

[Fire Missile]: Deals 200% Fire Magic damage to target. Range: 30 meters. Casting: 2 seconds.

Everyone in the party had been through hell and back, enough to know that the normal tier monsters were not weaklings, despite being the first to be dispatched. The only distinctive factor that made them strong was the fact that they were all magic attack types. When they gang up on Zhang Yang, not even God of War could save his \*ss.

Perhaps everyone in the entire city felt the same way as Zhang

Yang did. When they saw the incoming blazing monsters, players started to freak out. Even though at most a few hundreds of the little devils could attack one player at a time, it would be deadly, since each of the little devils could deal over 100,000 damage per attack. Even a hundred of them could deal as high as 10 million damage! No one could survive that single wave of attack without the help of their Transformation skills. That or they could rely on the War Chariot!

"Mountain Mover. Take control of the entire battalion. Leave the main and secondary party to me."

"Much obliged."

Although Mountain Mover was not good in boss fights and dungeon raids, he was exceptionally good at being a battle strategist. He loved to conduct large-scale wars. With his every command, his entire being would scream of power and a commanding aura that could turn every soldier into an elite killing machine. With the incoming wave of devils closing in on the gates of the castle, Mountain Mover sortied out 20 Type-IV War Chariots into the war zone.

Type-IV War Chariots are the best War Chariot available for the guild members, especially when everyone in the guild has been amassing Holy tier equipment from Spectre's Hidden Cavern and Elemental Nest, pushing their HP limit to at least 1 million HP per player. 50 players, cramped in one War Chariot would total their HP up to at least 50 million!

However, not even 50 players' combined HP would exceed Zhang Yang's 200 million HP after his Transformation. That was just how tanky Zhang Yang is.

Lone Desert Smoke was the first guild that charged into the battlefield. Other guild immediately followed behind with their own War Chariot. There were even more players that belonged to random "trash" guild hiding behind the charging War Chariot.

Since Crimson Sky City has four gates in total, players were all divided into four directions. Lone Desert Smoke took the North side, Crimson Rage took the East, Eternal Flame took South, and Imperial Sky took the West gate. All top guilds had not discussed about it, but they had made sure that each gate had at least one strong guild defending it.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Fatty bro, it's time for us to shine!"

"Haha! You don't even need to say it."

The two of them released their Phoenix et and allowed the two Legendary Beast to soar into the sky and charged head first into the sea of little Devils.

"#@%!#\$!%" The little critters spouted some weird language and charged towards the birds. In two seconds, the little devils clapped their hands and cast countless of fiery missile that shot towards the Phoenixes.

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

Those deadly firey missile were deadly for players but were nothing but "food" for the Phoenixes!

Translator Note:

东方不败 Dongfang Bubai, literally "Invincible East", is a fictional character in the wuxia novel The Smiling, Proud Wanderer by Jin Yong.

## Chapter 822: Void Dweller, the Crosser

---

The two Phoenix pets opened their mouth wide at the same instant. They began to spit their blazing flames 15 meters across the area in different directions.

'-353,221!'

'-393,437!'

'-338,840!'

...

Each of the monsters received over 300,000 damage. The damage values popped out right on top of the monsters that were packed together. Under the bombardment of the flames, all the Normal Tier monsters were killed instantly. The Elite Tier monsters remained because they were tougher.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han stood on top of the castle wall. By blocking a part of the Phoenix pets' sight view, they were able to keep the two Phoenixes to the task of sweeping the monsters on the ground. The gigantic birds spat their flames in an attempt to pull as much aggro as they could in hope to reduce as much stress as they could for the other players.

Although Tanks could allow players to have a Shared HP while everyone was on board of them, however, one Model 4 Tank could only stack up to a Maximum HP of 50,000,000 even though Lone Desert Smoke was known to be one of the top-notch guilds. Well, having 100 monsters attack one Tank at the same instant would deal 10,000,000 damage to the Tank in an instant. Under that circumstance, 5 rounds of attacks from the combined attacks of 100 monsters would be enough to blow the Tank to kingdom come!

Therefore, it was utterly necessary to let the Phoenix pets to get the aggro from the first wave of the monsters.

Of course, Tanks were not useless in the first place. The Tank

would be able to provide a decent AoE firepower when 40 players on board could activate their AoE Skills at the same instant! Furthermore, each Tank would be assigned to 10 Healers on board. Even if the Tank was destroyed, the players on board would still be alive at least.

Well, the captain of the Tank would only need to take the broken Tank back to the city for repair. That process would only take a few minutes before the Tank could be brought back into the battle.

--- That was just the way the Lone Desert Smoke would do it. Zhang Yang had no idea how the other guilds would play at it.

Even though the two Phoenixes had lured away the aggro of a lot of monsters, but the number of monsters in the vicinity was just too great for them to handle. Countless monsters had swarmed the Tanks at the moment.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The players on board of the Tanks did not hesitate to use their AoE Skills at the monsters. Countless fire missiles and fireballs were being thrown at the monster horde.

The Normal Tier monsters only had approximately 300,000 HP on each of them. Under the showering of the players' AoE attacks, they were like pitiful beings dying upon a single touch from any of the attacks! On the other hands, the players were utilizing the feature of the Tanks. Taking advantage of the Shared Life feature of the Tanks, the players managed to get enough HP to tank against the monster horde's unified attacks for a couple of rounds.

While the Tanks had gotten the aggro of the monster horde, the remaining players standing by at the rear charged into the battlefield and launched their fiercest attacks at the monster army.

Even if the players were just Level 80, Level 50 or even Level 30, they did not falter when it was time to charge forward. Although they could not really provide much damage power to the monsters,



they were able to block the monsters for a brief moment. Well, that was because the fall of the main city would 'bestow' everyone from the same Region a penalty that no one could afford to receive. Everyone's interest would be at risk. So naturally, everyone would be willing to get together and risk their lives in defending the main city to prevent that from happening. Only the top Tier players had managed to stay alive till the very end so that they could contribute as much as they could during the battle. Well, that was the key to the final victory after all. The unity had cast aside the pride and prejudice of all players on the battlefield. Everyone learned to work together with each another for that moment.

The impact of having Tanks on the battlefield was obvious in a large-scale battle. The monsters could not even lay a finger on the Tanks before they were blown into bits and died by the bombardment of the players' AoE attacks.

Meanwhile, the Tanks had been categorized into several levels, remember? For instance, a Model 1 Tank could only carry 10 players. So, the Tank itself could at most, have a total of 10,000,000 HP. It could be easily destroyed by the monster horde. The 10 players that got thrown out of the Tank upon its destruction would look pathetic and sad.

Well, that should obviously show the theory of 'Every extra penny deserves its value'. The Model 4 Tanks would not be destroyed so easily. They would be much tougher than the other Models.

Under the support of the Tanks, the morale of the players was soaring to the skies. They were harvesting the lives of the monsters without any sense of mercy. They were currently the 'masters' of the battlefield. Although the fact that they could not run back to their dead bodies was a disadvantage that could not be ignored, at least they could just run back into the main city to get their Tanks fixed once the Tanks are destroyed. Well, that was one privilege that one could not enjoy on the attacking side of this

battle.

Therefore, everyone knew that defending would be much easier than attacking. If they could not even defend the castle against the monsters, they shouldn't even think about taking back the lost territories!

Meanwhile, these demonic monsters were merely the first wave of the demon's assault army. They should naturally be the weakest and lowest Tier of the demon realm. The most troublesome part about them would be their ranged attacks. If the monsters united their ranged attacks on one target, they could instantly take out their target without ease! However, the Tanks and two Phoenix pets had succeeded in getting most of their aggro over. Because of that, the death count on the players had been minimized.

Well, the number of players were not lesser than the number of monsters. Their Attack power was not weak as well. Therefore, as the battle dragged on, the Normal Tier monsters were wiped out clean, leaving only the tens of thousands of Elite Tier demonic monsters behind.

These Elite Tier monsters were able to survive for so long because they were harder to deal with. Furthermore, each of them had over 100,000,000 HP! So it would take quite some time to take them out.

However, these Elite Tier monsters were only Level 200 monsters. As long as players are at least Level 170, they would not be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game while taking on those monsters. They would be able to deal 100% damage to the monsters. Furthermore, there were only approximately 10,000 of them left on the battlefield. Mathematically speaking, to instantly kill these monsters, only a few hundreds of players needed to focus their attacks on one monster at the same time. With the number of players in the vicinity, they could wipe out the remaining monsters by repeating what they did for a few dozen times.

If those monsters were smart enough to think, they could have pushed forward by bundling up together before pushing forward towards the city walls. Although they could not change the fact that they were losing, at least they could still increase the casualties on the players' side. Killing one would be good, killing two would be a 'profit'!

Unfortunately for them, monsters would remain monsters. They were slaughtered up by the players big time. The monsters were divided and conquered easily by the players by the end of the battle. The players did not lose much before they wiped out the monster horde entirely.

Because the two Phoenix pets were there to reduce the casualties over the north castle, the players at the north castle managed to wipe out the demonic monsters in the shortest time. The moment they came out from their battle mode, the Priests and the Knights began to act. They tried their very best to save as many dead players from their deaths as possible. By doing so, they could maintain the number of players on the battlefield for the battles yet to come.

There were a total of 200,000,000 players in the China Region itself. However, players would have to reach at least Level 170 before they could become useful in such battles. Well, the number of players who attained at least Level 170 were only approximately 70,000,000. However, it was believed that the more powerful monsters would only be spawned later in the battles. When Level 210 monsters begin to appear, those Level 170 players would become useless in the battle!

Meanwhile, when Level 220 monsters begin to spawn, the Level 180 players would become useless.

As the battle progresses on, the effective battle power would become weaker and weaker. Therefore, the players must reserve their best fighters until the crucial moment. Well, {Resurrection} had a 50minute cooldown after it has been used. Meanwhile, that

Skill could not be used when the user was engaged in his or her Battle Mode. So if they don't do it now, they would have to save more players in the next round.

A few minutes later, the East Gate, West Gate, and South Gate had also brought good news saying that they had wiped out the monster forces. However, 8 minutes later, the second wave of the monster forces had already come.

'Ding! The second wave of the Demonic Army's invasion has begun!'

Upon seeing the system notification, countless Void Dwellers were revealing themselves on the horizon. They were coming strong at the main city like a blue ocean's tide. Just like the normal monsters, these Demon Dwellers were categorized into Normal Tier and Elite Tier. The size of those Elite Tier demons was twice the size of those Normal Tier demons. Well, the Elite Tier demons also had two golded ring around each of their limbs.

[Void Dweller] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 205

HP: 263,850

Defence: 8,080

Melee Attack: 54,447 – 64,447

Skills:

[Tormenting Torture]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the targets.

Meanwhile, the Elite Tier Void Dwellers had a different name. They were called Void Crosser. Not only they had an extremely high amount of HP and Attack, they also had one additional Skill with them.

[Void Dweller, the Crosser] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 205

HP: 102,500,000

Defence: 12,650

Melee Attack: 92,295 – 132,295

Skills:

[Tormenting Torture]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the targets.

[Void Cross]: Tear open the dimension of the void. The demon can appear anywhere within the area of 30-meter radius from where the demon vanished.

Although these Elite Tier Void Dwellers were 5 levels higher than the Normal Tier demons, they could not really deal much of a threat to the players. However, because of that 5-level difference, there were at least 5,000,000 players got affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Well, that had really bombed the players with a significant disadvantage in this battle!

The Void Dwellers had no legs. They were just floating about like helium balloons, half a foot from the ground. However, they could really float fast. They floated towards the castle as if there was no gravity on them at all! Well, because none of them had any mouth on their heads, the only sound they made was the 'shoof' sound made when they were moving at a high pace.

"Kill them all!"

The players by the outside of the castle were burning with murderous intent. They were hyped over the battle that was coming at them. One after another they let out their battle cries. Some of the captains of the Tanks were very excited to the point that they began to move the Tanks forward. So the second wave of invasion had begun!

"What kind of stingy system is this? They didn't even spawn a boss out yet!?" Fatty Han pouted and said.

Zhang Yang could not help to laugh. Then he said, "Well, maybe some bosses have been spawned by the other gates of the castle!"

"No, there's no sign of any boss at any of the gates just yet!" Hundred Shots shook his head and said, "I've asked around. There's no sign of any bosses at the other 3 gates!"

"So our efforts had been wasted! Pui!" Wei Yan Er was infuriated. Then she patted her Crimson Red Crow and charged down into the monster horde.

"If you think that our efforts had been wasted, then why are you still putting so much effort now?" Han Ying Xue was worried that the little brat would get herself into trouble again. So she followed the little brat into battle.

"Hehe! Well, I'm bored! So might as well do something then!"

"Let's charge together then!"

Zhang Yang hopped onto his Phoenix pet as well. Even though these Void Dwellers had higher levels, they were just a bunch of Melee-type monsters. There was no need for those who had a Flying Mount to worry that these monsters would swarm up to them. Players could just put a little distance between them and the monsters. The monsters would not have any chance to touch them, that way.

However, players with lower levels would eventually become food for powder. After all, they could only deal 1 damage to the monsters. However, the monsters could deal a tremendous amount of damage to them because of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Well, it might be possible that the monsters could instantly kill the players!

Under the noisy sound made by the engines of the Tanks, the fierce battle raged on. Countless spells were shot across the sky and landed on the monster horde. The scene was gory and spectacular at the same time.

Well, the Normal Tier Void Dwellers would just be food for powder as well. Players with better equipment could have taken them out in a matter of seconds! However, the Elite Tier Void Dwellers, the Crossers, were a lot more powerful than those Normal Tier Void Dwellers. They were fearless in the face of getting surrounded by players because they could shift around freely. Meanwhile, these monsters were quite special. They were actually the rare monsters that were not affected by the aggro system of the game. They were called the random-aggro type monsters. Well, their objectives were obvious. They were aiming their attacks at the NPCs on the castle wall.

Using their {Void Cross} from time to time, players had nothing on them that could stop these Elite Tier Void Dwellers from pushing forward. It did not take long for the Elite Tier monsters to reach the castle walls of the castle. Then, these monsters began to launch their attacks at the NPCs on the walls.

These NPCs on the walls were not like the players. Their attack range could reach up to 100 meters. In other words, they could perform a long ranged sniping attack. Their Attack power was extremely strong and deadly. However, their weakness were glaring as well. Their Defence was extremely weak and their HP amount was extremely low. The Elite Tier Void Dwellers were able to slaughter them up without taking much of their time.

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Quickly! Get rid of these Elite Tier monsters first! If we are going to encounter some long ranged monsters later on, we'll be doomed!"

Well, because the players took the initiative to launch their attacks on the monsters in the first wave of invasion, they were able to block the monster horde far away from the castle walls. So the NPCs on the walls had not had their chance to show off their usefulness. However, Zhang Yang believed that those NPCs must not be underestimated. Their long range attacks would definitely be very useful in the late battle. So, he cannot afford to let the

NPCs die here now!



## Chapter 823: Queen of Misery Zhura

---

Zhang Yang and his gang quickly turned around and got back to the walls to handle the Void Dwellers that were about to breach the wall. Fortunately, not all of the Void Dwellers were at the walls. Currently, there was only approximately 1,000 of them over by the wall. Although these 1,000 Elite Tier monsters were actually pretty scary and intimidating, the headquarters of the humans was just located over those walls. Therefore, it was impossible that the number of players around the vicinity to dwindle. Furthermore, the NPCs weren't just standing idle allowing the monsters to hit them. They immediately engaged those Elite Tier monsters with the weapons in their hands.

Because these monsters were not affected by the aggro system, Zhang Yang had no way of luring them or to get them to follow him. So he could only focus on dealing as much damage as he could onto those monsters. One less monster would lighten the amount of damage the NPCs would receive.

Fortunately for the players, the NPCs could be healed by Healers. Upon settling with their own kind, the Healers then turned their attention towards the NPCs, largely reducing the death count of the NPCs.

After approximately an hour, all of the Void Dwellers were wiped out clean. Meanwhile, the players had suffered heavy casualties. Although a small number of players were resurrected, the third wave of the demonic army had arrived. Therefore, quite a number of players had to stay dead on the ground.

Meanwhile, the waves of the army continued to come after they managed to survive the previous wave of attacks. The third wave, the fourth wave, the fifth wave! The more waves they managed to survive, the higher the number of casualties the players had to suffer. More importantly, the lesser players the Priests and the Knights could resurrect, it was obvious that the battles were

getting more difficult by the second.

"There's still no sign of the boss yet! What a tragic day!" Endless Starlight sighed.

However, Zhang Yang said, "It's actually a good news that we haven't encountered any boss so far. Or else, I think we'll suffer much higher casualties by now. We might not have survived for so long!"

"I wonder how many rounds left..."

"The official told us that there should be 10 waves!"

"So the level of the monsters will increase by 5 levels each time a new wave comes. So I'm going to assume that the monsters will all be Level 245 during the tenth wave!"

Level 245! There were only 7 members of Zhang Yang's gang, including himself, who had managed to reach beyond Level 215. Only 7 of them would not be affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Meanwhile, looking at the entire Crimson Sky City, there should be less than 30 players who actually had reached Level 215. So how would they be able to hold their ground against the tenth wave, then?

Zhang Yang seemed to finally understand the reason why the Japan-Korea Region could not hold against the demonic monsters even though they had unbelievably strong castle walls to defend the castle. It seemed that the tenth wave would definitely be too much for the players to handle!

Upon seeing the possibilities that lay before them, everyone revealed expressions as if they had been constipating for over a week. Awful. Their expressions were just awful.

The Level Gap Suppression effect of the game sucks! Pui! The effect had increased the Attack power of the monsters by 2 times while they nerfed the Attack power of the players twice as well! Because of that, the Attack power of the players had become 4

times weaker than the Attack power of the monsters! What's so fair about that?! Without the Level Gap Suppression effect in the way, each player could have taken out one monster. Now, 4 players would be required to take out one monster!

"Thing will eventually turn out fine. Let's roll with it first!"

Well, it couldn't be helped, though. Low-level players could still acquire guidance from high-level players. However, the high-level players would not know who to seek guidance from. Well, they tended to grind on their own in order to acquire their current achievements.

'Ding! The third wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!'

Without giving the players even one second to catch their breath, the third wave of the demonic forces had arrived.

This time, the monsters were called 'Queen of Misery'. They were all approximately 10 meters tall. Each of them have 6 arms. Each of their arms was equipped with a shiny long blade. Although they had big boobies and big \*sses, their skins were greyish. There was nothing pretty about them, by the looks of it. Just like the monsters in the two previous waves, these monsters were categorized into Normal Tier and Elite Tier. However, the Elite Tier only had 4 arms equipped with blades. Their other two arms were equipped with a staff instead!

[Queen of Misery] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 210

HP: 276,790

Defence: 8,440

Melee Attack: 52,276 – 62,276

Skills:

[Chaotic Slice]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. There is a rate to trigger 1 to 5 additional attacks.

Meanwhile, the Elite Tier Queens of Misery were powerful in both physical and magic attacks!

[Superior Queen of Misery] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 210

HP: 105,000,000

Defence: 13,190

Melee Attack: 97,606 – 137,606

Magic Attack: 59,663 – 79,663

Skills:

[Chaotic Slice]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. There is a rate to trigger 1 to 3 additional attacks.

[Shadow Arrow Barrage]: Unleashes countless shadow arrows into the surroundings, causing 100% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters.

These Queens of Misery had long legs! They were able to run faster than any regular pet mount! They were moving fluidly as they surrounded the entire castle from all four directions!

"It's a boss!" Wei Yan Er suddenly screamed as she was pointing one of her fingers at something beyond the horizon.

"Little brat has sharp eyes! Haha!" Zhang yang only noticed the existence of the boss after he looked across the battlefield at the direction where the little brat pointed at for a moment.

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er felt contented after being praised.

"As expected of an evil person. Your senses have become so sensitive to everything around you!" Zhang Yang teased her in passing.

"You bastard! Stinky noob tank! Pui!" Wei Yan Er became furious right after she heard Zhang Yang.

"Let's go and snatch the boss now before someone else does!"

Even though Mini Piglet was just a Healer and she was also a girl, but she had quite a wild personality as well. She immediately revealed her desire to spill blood right on her pretty face.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Let's look at the boss' Skills first before deciding whether to take the boss or not!"

[Queen of Misery Zhura] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 210

HP: 2,100,000,000

Defence: 20,900

Melee Attack: 177,324 – 237,324

Skills:

[Tornado Cleave]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the battle area.

[Tormenting Strike]: Consecutively strike 6 times at a target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuse with one Queen of Misery or one Superior Queen of Misery and heals herself by 10% HP. Meanwhile, the fused monster will die instantly.

Note: Zhura is the capable executioner for the Demon Commander Isles. She's been renowned for her brutality and her thirst for blood.

"Demonic Fusion!" Upon seeing that Skill, everyone screamed in terror.

"Hmm!" Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I wonder how long will the cooldown for this Skill be. If it's not long, the boss will be invincible before the monster hordes are wiped out. Furthermore, we don't have anything to gain by killing a Holy Tier boss actually. Let's focus on the monsters first then. No matter how powerful is the boss, the boss would not be as strong as 1,000 monsters combined. 1,000 monsters are easier to handle than the boss!"

Everyone patted their Flying Mounts and made their way down from the walls. Then they began their onslaught on the monster horde.

Because the level of those monsters had increased by 5 more levels, approximately 5,000,000 more players had been affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game, just because they were more than 30 levels lower than the level of the monsters. Furthermore, the total number of players that remained in battle was not as much as the number of players they had while defending the castle from the second wave of the invasion. Therefore, it was natural that the pace of killing out the monsters had reduced quite a bit.

However, the Tanks were still able to show their usefulness on the battlefield terrifically! With the Tanks providing the players a super long \*ss HP bar, the players were able to deal much more damage than they ever could before they had to retreat to heal. Well, the game was not as realistic as reality, after all. Well, as long as the players weren't dead, their damage output would not be affected at all.

So the Tanks were serving good in the aspect of life-saving.

Zhang Yang and the gang were keeping an eye on the boss while they were slaying the monsters around them. Although the boss's Attack power was not as powerful as the Attack power of 1,000 monsters, the boss's {Tornado Cleave} would be quite a deadly threat to everyone in the vicinity. If everyone was standing packed together in one's pot, the boss would be able to deal quite some significant damage that no one could afford to ignore!

Although Zhang Yang and the gang did not really put their minds on the Holy Tier boss, there were still many other players who crave for Holy Tier equipment. Well, they couldn't clear the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern or the Elemental Nest. Therefore, quite a number of parties went up to the boss. They were all from smaller guilds, though.

Even after they noticed the boss's HP recovery Skill, those players were only praying for the boss to be merciful on them with her {Demonic Fusion}. They were hoping that they could overcome the boss's HP Recovery Skill with their numbers. As long as their DPS is powerful enough, they would still stand a chance to defeat the boss.

However, these players were about to be disappointed. The boss was incredibly strong to them. The boss's {Tornado Cleave} did not even have a cooldown! Other than the regular attacks, the boss was also whirling around causing tremendous damage to the players around her.

Well, a damage value of approximately 200,000 damage would just cause an itch to Zhang Yang's skin. There was no need to fear at all. However, not everyone could be equipped with equipment that were so good as Zhang Yang's. A player with merely a complete set of Ethereal Tier equipment could only have 500,000 HP. The boss could easily take them out with only 2 to 3 hits!

Furthermore, the boss's {Demonic Fusion} did not have a cooldown just like her {Tornado Cleave}. Once the boss had 90% HP remaining, she would begin to grab and 'feed' herself with her minions around her. Although the amount of HP recovery was affected by the effect of the {Destructive Smash}, the boss's speed of 'feeding' was not affected at all. Therefore, the boss could maintain her HP at around 85%!

For normal players, a Holy Tier boss was extremely powerful. Upon using {Tornado Cleave}, the boss's surrounding was filled with dead bodies. The players were taken out shortly after they arrived.

Zhang Yang could not help to feel a little shocked. This b\*tchy boss seemed to have what it takes to be deemed as a World boss! She could repeatedly spam her AoE attacks and she had a powerful HP Recovery Skill as well!

"Endless Starlight, you go ahead and kite the boss around. Meanwhile, Mini Piglet, you go with Starlight and keep him healed up. The rest, just keep yourselves away from the boss. We don't have to kill the boss. We just need to make sure the boss won't come in and slaughter the players up. We only need to keep the boss under control!" Zhang Yang commanded.

Endless Starlight and Mini Piglet went up to the boss as instructed by Zhang Yang. Well, if anyone would be so stupid to go and fight the boss, it would serve them right, if they ever get themselves killed. Truth be told, if those sort of players were to survive until the very end, they would just screw things up for the other players and get everyone killed by the end of it. So, it would be better if they could just die in the early stage of the battles.

In the first two waves, the players had the absolute advantage over the monsters. However, the advantage that the players had seemed to have faded. Everyone was in a difficult situation. The number of casualties was increasing in every passing moment.

Mountain Mover was commanding the parties of the Lone Desert Smoke for the moment. At the same time, he was also screaming at the Healers with low levels to stay put, or else they would only die in vain. Since they did not have powerful equipment to even contribute to healing, these low-level players could still wait for the right moment to resurrect players who were lying dead on the battlefield.

Well, the Skill - {Resurrect} would work the same if a Level 10 player or a Level 200 player uses it. The Skill would still resurrect the dead players. Therefore, low-level players would still serve some significant purposes on the battlefield.

However, Mountain Mover was not the commander for all guilds. So his decisions might seemed to be biased over the Lone Desert Smoke. When he noticed that the players from the Lone Desert Smoke were low on HP, he commanded the Healers to get to the frontline and heal the players up. Well, he had forgotten



something very important. Those Healers weren't high level enough to survive the monsters' assaults. So, when the monsters gave a gentle touch to those Healers, they were instantly killed on the spot! Because of that, the chance of reviving was reduced a lot!

Mountain Mover was infuriated by his own mistake he made. He was so angry at himself that his entire body was trembling. However, Zhang Yang calmly told him to calm down first, "Don't worry about it. The time interval between waves will only get shorter and shorter later on. There will not even be time for the Healers to resurrect the fallen ones."

# Chapter 824: Demonic Pearl

---

After Endless Starlight managed to get the boss to follow him, a large number of players from other guild began to lurk in the shadows. They kept sending their men to poke the boss from the side. However, all of them ended up in a tragic death of course. Truth to be told, the boss was using her {Tornado Cleave} so frequently that anyone who got near enough would get themselves killed on the spot. Well, kiting the boss could only do good in preventing the boss from running around, taking the innocent lives of the players.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang did not put any expectations on killing the boss either. He let Endless Starlight be in charge of pulling the boss from the more populated area of the battlefield. After the monsters were cleared out from the battlefield, then only Zhang Yang and the others would focus their attention on the boss.

Countless bloodshed had finally taught the players from the other guilds to be obedient. They had no choice but to give up on dying pointlessly and let Endless Starlight focus on kiting the boss. Well, because even if Endless Starlight manages to kite the boss far away from the battlefield, Zhura's {Demonic Fusion} would still suck a monster from afar to recover her own HP bar. Well, the boss was basically invincible for the moment.

Upon sacrificing over three to four million players, the monsters outside the castle were finally wiped out cleanly. The boss was the only enemy left in the vicinity.

Everyone turned their attention towards the boss now. They immediately charged towards the boss and started their ferocious attacks on the boss.

Although the boss had quite a high amount of HP on her and all players in the vicinity could not attack the boss at the same time due to the limitation of space and rage, only approximately

thousands of players managed to land their attacks on the boss at the same instant. However, even if each of the players could only deal 10,000 damage, one round of attacks from so many players at the same instant would deal about 10,000,000 damage! Therefore, 21 rounds of attacks should be enough for the players to take out the boss once and for all!

However, even though the boss did not have her HP Recovery Skill to use anymore, it did not mean that her Attack power was weakened. With one whirl of her {Tornado Cleave}, countless gleaming of the blades swung across the battlefield, and countless players found themselves dead under the brutality of the boss's attacks. Their dead bodies collapsed to the ground the moment the boss was done whirling her blades in her arms. However, the players at the rear were still making their way to the boss. Well, the main reason was because they could acquire the 'qualification' to pick up the loots that the boss would drop upon her death. Therefore, everyone was excited over it. They no longer got held back by their fear of death.

"Haih... Why would they put so much effort over a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment? Is it really worth it?" Fatty Han said sarcastically.

Zhang yang laughed out loud and said, "Well, we're just a few steps from getting a full set of Ascended Tier equipment now. Of course, we won't even have the interest to look at them Holy Tier equipment. However, for most people in the game, Holy Tier equipment are like Celestial Tier equipment at the current stage of the game! Are you saying you don't want to get a Celestial Tier equipment for real?"

"What? Celestial Tier equipment? Of course, I want to get them! Unfortunately, we have not met another Celestial Tier boss anymore ever since then!" Fatty Han sighed heavily.

"Actually, we're about to meet one, Demon Lord Kenzack! That's a Celestial Tier boss for sure! However, we'll have no idea what

level the boss will be."

"Humph! No matter how strong the boss turns out to be, I'll just slice and dice and slash the boss! The boss will die before me!" Wei yan Er shamelessly told everyone.

"Haha!"

Everyone was laughing at the little brat. Meanwhile, under the bombardment of the players' attacks, the boss finally collapsed with an empty HP bar. The moment when the loots were rolling across the ground, the players around the boss began to snatch about like their lives were depending on what they could get! Nearly 20 pieces of equipment were swept clean off the ground within one split second! Well, it seemed that everyone was extremely quick to pick things up from the ground.

"Boss! Boss! Something nice came out!" Endless Starlight hopped onto his Flying Mount and made his way back to the castle wall. While there was still little time, everyone was taking the opportunity to heal themselves up. The Healer-type players began to run across the battlefield to resurrect as many players as they could.

"Oh, so what's so nice about that thing you said?" Zhang Yang did not show much enthusiasm about Starlight's discovery. Up to the current point, even the Celestial Tier boss were spawned just to get everyone hyped without leaving anything behind. So what good stuff could a Holy Tier boss offer then?

"See!?" Endless Starlight showed the items to everyone. There were three pearl-like beads of the size of a small pill. Well, they were basically translucent. They were radiating with a layer of vague light around them.

"So what are these?" Everyone asked.

"Hehe! You're going to be shocked to see what they are!" Endless Starlight quickly posted the description of the items on the party

channel.

[Lesser Demonic Pearl] (Consumable)

Use: Increase the success rate of the fusion of two equipment by 20%. The effect cannot stack even if you have more than one of this item.

Required Level: 200

Everyone looked at each other as they revealed joyous expressions on their faces.

Well, the most popular and demanded thing in the game currently would be the fusion of two equipment! Unlike rune-weapons, the enhancement effect on an equipment would be much better in the sense of power level. It was already very common for players to have a +2 or +3 equipment.

However, there were only a few number of players who managed to get +4 and +5 equipment. Well, it was mostly because the success rate for enhancing the equipment to +4 was only 17% (The Fusion and Enhancement service that the NPCs provide over enhancing an equipment to +1 is only 80%. Meanwhile, the Tesseract offers 90% success rate for the same service.). The success rate for enhancing the equipment to +5 would drop to 7% only. Only the rich could afford so many equipment to try out their luck. Normally, normal players would stop when they succeeded in enhancing their equipment up to +3 equipment. Well, it was mostly because they could no longer afford to spend more money to risk losing their equipment in case the enhancement fails.

However, by using the [Lesser Demonic Pearl], players could increase the success rate for enhancing an equipment to +4 up to 50%. Compared to the initial success rate of 17%, the players would most likely 300% more to succeed in enhancing their equipment.

Furthermore, the existence of [Lesser Demonic Pearl] had confirmed the existence of higher grade pearls like [Normal

Demonic Pearl] and [Greater Demonic Pearl]. Even if each enhancement could only have additional 10% success rate, as long as the players had enough amount of [Greater Demonic Pearls] in their possessions, well, at least when their equipment is enhanced to +3, they would have 100% success rate for the enhancement process. That would be risk-free!

Currently, the dungeons would drop Holy Tier equipment. So the Top Tier guilds would not mind passing on the opportunity to get the equipment dropped by the boss. However, only World bosses in the Open World Map would drop Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment. The number of equipment of those Tiers was just pathetically rare! Therefore, no one would even dare to try enhancing their equipment up to +1 even if the fail rate was only 20%, so let alone the +4 enhancement which only had 17% success rate. In case the enhancement turns out to be a failure, two pieces of Ascended Tier equipment would be destroyed. The players who attempt that would definitely cry in misery for years!

Well, there's the Celestial Tier equipment as well. Who would be willing to risk the 20% fail rate to fuse or enhance their Celestial Tier equipment then?

"Well, this is indeed some good stuff!" Zhang Yang nodded. After all, his Tesseract would have an additional 10% success rate for both the fusion and enhancement process of equipment. Hence, the existence of these [Demonic Pearls] seemed to be much more valuable than he could imagine!

"Unfortunately, there's only three here!" Wei Yan Er immediately became greedy and started complaining like a little b\*tch.

Endless Starlight smiled bitterly and said, "The boss only dropped three, that's it! I've managed to snatch all of them!"

Everyone laughed. Well, they had slain countless bosses ever since then. Their eyes and reflexes had been 'sharpened'. Normal players would aim for the equipment, middle Tier players would

aim for the Skill Books while top Tier players such as themselves would aim for those strange looking things.

"If my assumption is correct, the Holy Tier bosses would only drop [Lesser Demonic Pearls]. The Ascended Tier bosses would only drop [Middle Demonic Pearls] while the Celestial Tier bosses would drop [Greater Demonic Pearls]." Zhang Yang smiled and took the three pearls from Endless Starlight's hands.

Well, it was obvious that Zhang Yang should be the one to keep the pearls. Since his Tesseract could provide an additional 10% success rate to all fusion and enhancement processes, the others could just ask Zhang Yang to fuse or enhance their equipment for them. Furthermore, asking the NPCs to fuse and enhance their equipment would require them paying a large sum of gold coins. How would Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue be able to accept that, huh?!

"We've killed so many Holy Tier and Ascended Tier bosses... how come we've never seen these sort of items before?" Wei Yan Er immediately began to ask pointless questions again.

"Silly little brat... that's because these pearls only existed after the Equipment Fusion System was introduced into the game." Han Ying Xue smiled at the little brat and rubbed her flat chest. Then Han Ying Xue sighed heavily and said, "Brainless brat without a pair of proper boobies, huh..."

Kaboom!

Wei Yan Er immediately got infuriated to the point that she looked like a barrel of TNT being set off. She instantly jumped around in rage, cursing and screaming! She even made a promise to rub someone's boobies into a pile of meat pie after signing out of the game.

'Ding! The fourth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!'

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Heavy footsteps that trembled across the ground each time they stomped the ground, as loud as the thunder. Instantly, players could see that there were countless small mountains moving towards the castle at a slow pace.

Those who have sharp eyes would have been able to spot that those mountain-looking things was actually an army of giant turtles! However, these turtles were all as tall as a 5-storey building! Countless demons with a bow in their hands were sitting on top of the turtles. These demons were approximately 3 meters tall. Their bodies were entirely crimson red in color.

Other than that, there were other demons that looked similar to those that were sitting on the turtles. They were following behind the army of gigantic turtles while pushing forward towards the castle.

[Abyss Demonic Turtle] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 215

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defence: 30,000

Melee Attack: 97,665 – 137,665

Skills:

[Trample]: Stomps the ground with its gigantic turtle foot and causes 100,000 Physical damage to all targets within the range of 10X10 meters.

[Hammerhead]: Strikes the castle walls with its rock-hard turtle head. No matter how strong the defenses are, nothing can stop the turtle head from penetrating through the defense!

Upon seeing the description for the Skill, the men revealed a perverted smile on their faces. Fatty Han could not help to think that the designer of this Skill must be in the same 'league' as he is.



He felt like as if he had met someone that would understand him well! Unfortunately, that was just him. He would never get the chance to meet the designer of that Skill in person.

However, the demon on the demonic turtle turned out to be very weak though.

[Turtle Surfing Demonic Servant] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 215

HP: 277,030

Ranged Attack: 52,324 – 72,324

Skills:

[Precise Shot]: Shoot upon aiming the target. The attack cannot be dodged nor avoided. Causes 120% Ranged Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

"Wow, this turtle is really rock-hard, man!" Zhang Yang was shocked. 30,000 Defence! Well, that amount of Defence that was nearly as powerful as the Defence of an Ascended Tier boss! Meanwhile, a total of 1,000,000,000 HP was far more than the HP amount of an Elite Tier monster!

"Hehe... didn't you read the description of that Skill? If it's not rock-hard enough, how would it be able to break 'that', huh?" Fatty Han patted Zhang Yang's shoulder and scanned his eyes across the bodies of Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Well, he was trying to imply something to Zhang Yang.

Krunchak! Krunchak!

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue swung out their fist in their full strength at Fatty Han and landed their fists on Fatty Han's sides. That fatty fell onto the ground with his face facing down.

"Fortunately, there weren't much of them here!"

"However, even though the Attack power of these Demonic Turtle is not really powerful, but their HP amounts were a little

high and their Defence is a little too thick, don't you think? They'll be able to break the castle walls if they charge in at this rate!"

"We must stop them from getting nearer to the castle walls then!"

"Let's charge out and kill them all!"

The players in the castle let out their battle cries once more. Then they opened up the castle gate and walked towards the turtle army.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Although the movement of the Demonic Turtles seemed extremely slow, their movement speed in walking forward wasn't slow at all. Well, it was mostly because they were too huge! Their one step was equal to a normal player's a hundred steps! Following the loud and trembling footsteps of the turtle army, thousands of Demonic Turtle were approaching the frontline of the players. With ease, they stepped and broke the defense line that the players formed and arrived at the bottom of the castle wall. Well, the Demonic Turtles were basically stepping on the players while they began to use their heads which were full of sharp thorns to bang the castle wall.

Boom!

Even though the Demonic Turtles seemed to move very slow, however, the speed of their heads stretching in and out was impressively fast! Instantly, the impacts of their head-butts were so powerful that they left holes in the castle walls! That had really shown how powerful their head-butts were!

Meanwhile, the demons riding on top of the Demonic Turtles began to shoot their arrows upon their enemies. Instantly, the sky was clouded by the presence of the arrows that were shot by the demons.

# Chapter 825: The Fifth Wave, Flames of Fire

---

"We can't afford to let those turtles destroy our castle walls! We must kill those Demonic Turtles first!"

Zhang Yang patted the head of the Phoenix pet. The blazing big bird instantly turned into a stream of blazing light and shot towards one of the gigantic turtles.

The Demonic Servants right on top of the turtles immediately opened fire on Zhang Yang.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

‘-132!’

...

Right before the absolute Defence of Zhang Yang, all physical attacks of the Normal Tier monsters would find it almost impossible to penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence alone. With tens of arrows landing on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang, only one-third of the arrows managed to penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence. More pathetically, all of their attacks only dealt about 2,000 damage to Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang laughed for a brief moment. Then, he swung his axe across the air and instantly ended a Demonic Servant's life! He quickly followed with a {Horizontal Sweep}, the Demonic Servants screamed miserably and fell off the back of the Demonic Turtles. Well, that swept the Demonic Servants clean off the table!

However, Zhang Yang's true targets were not the Demonic Servants. He was actually aiming for the Demonic Turtles! As he kept whirling his axe, the Demonic Turtles were afflicted by tremendous damage.

Zhang Yang had enhanced his {Eagle Eye} to Level 10 earlier on.

So, he could just ignore 95% Defence of all his enemies. He did not even need to use his {Cripple Defence,} now. However, with his current additional Damage, his normal attacks could deal up to 500,000 damage now! Even the reflective damage of his {Block} had reached up to 170,000 damage now! Monsters without Defence Penetration attributes would not be able to affect Zhang Yang much on the battlefield now!

{Charge Up Strike}, {God of War Devastation}!

‘-4,724,073!’

{God of War Battle Axe}!

‘-1,498,203!’

{Force Strike}!

‘-529,982!’

‘-1,048,340!’

Without holding back at all, Zhang Yang threw out three of his best Skills which could deal the most damage on the monsters. He managed to deal over 7,000,000 damage on the monsters within 4 seconds! Lost Dream and the others dropped their jaws the moment they saw the amount of damage values that popped up right on top of the monsters.

"Boss! You're getting even better now! Holy sh\*t!" Endless Starlight could not catch his breath as he screamed in shock. In terms of Defence, he could still catch up with Zhang Yang by relying on his equipment. However, he would never be able to catch up with Zhang Yang in terms of offense, even if he spends his entire life boosting his Attack.

While everyone was so shocked that they lost their ability to talk, they landed on the back of a Demonic Turtle and started their attacks on that turtle. Even though there were still a large number of Demonic Servants on the back of the Demonic Turtles, they were just Normal Tier monsters, after all. After a wave of insanely

powerful bombardment, the surroundings became peaceful and quiet. The giant turtle was the only monster left now. It continued to stomp on the players on the ground while hammering the walls with its powerful head swings!

Obviously, the Demonic Turtles were not restricted by the aggro system of the game as well. Or perhaps, the castle walls had been set as the number one priority on the aggro list of the turtles. Therefore, no matter how hard Zhang Yang and his gang tried, the turtles would never switch their targets at all.

Well, that was a bad news!

The HP of the players could be healed with Healing Skills, however, the HP of the castle walls would never be recovered once they are gone. They would only be able to recover after the entire war is over! Although the walls did not have their own offensive power, they could still fend against the assaults of the Demonic Army. When the number of players is reduced to a certain number, the walls would serve their great purpose.

"Give it everything you've got!"

Zhang Yang cried out loud. Other than his Inheritance Transformation and his {Gate of Hell}, Zhang Yang had activated every single Skill that he could spare.

Although the Demonic Turtle had quite a high Defence, to begin with, Zhang Yang and his gang's Attack power combined was even simply overwhelming. Even with 1,000,000,000 HP, the Demonic Turtle could not escape death. Within 4 minutes, the gigantic creature collapsed heavily onto the ground and shattered into a few pieces of broken turtle shell.

Zhang Yang immediately patted Phoenix pet and made his way to the second Demonic Turtle. With a wave of his hand, he threw his {Glare of the Death God} straight on the giant turtle.

Although that Skill had a ridiculously low rate of success on a

boss, the Skill would always work on monsters. Basically, monsters would not have the ability to resist the effects of the Skill. Immediately, a dark skull immediately formed right on top of the gigantic turtle.

Upon throwing a few attacks on the Demonic Turtle, Zhang Yang managed to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. The dark skull opened its mouth wide and swallowed the entire giant turtle!

It was an instant kill!

Even though the HP bar of the turtle did not reduce even by a bit, it was still killed instantly, right before the mighty effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. It was just an Elite Tier monster, after all. Even if it has over 100,000,000,000 HP, the monster would still be engulfed by the goofy dark skull and die instantly.

Other than the Lone Desert Smoke, there were also other top Tier guilds such as Rolling Rocks and Sunset Amber which were operating on their own in the surroundings. Although they were not as powerful as Lone Desert Smoke, they were also one of the China Region's top Tier guilds. Furthermore, the guildmasters of those guilds were each capable individuals, able to analyze a situation and act accordingly. Therefore, they commanded their air forces to focus their assaults on the Demonic Turtles as well.

Because there were countless Demonic Servants standing right on the back of those turtles, shooting arrows right at anyone who got near the turtles, the players could only play it out in two ways: The players could descend onto the back of the Demonic Turtles in order to start their attacks on the hordes. Or, they could just climb up the back of the Demonic Turtles through the gigantic legs of the monsters.

Obviously, with the monsters stomping the ground constantly, it would not be a good idea to go up by climbing. Therefore, the players used their Flying Mounts to get on top of the Turtles. The

moment players began to occupy the space on the back of the turtles, the players began their slaughtering on the Demonic Servants. Meanwhile, on the surface of the ground, the players were doing their very best to fend off the Demonic Turtles' assaults on the walls by relying on the Tanks. They were able to surround the Demonic Turtles, one after another. The battle was getting more intense than ever!

After seeing most of the players switching their priority to taking out the Demonic Turtles, Zhang Yang finally felt a little more relieved. So, he turned his attention towards wiping out the demonic archers on top of the turtles' backs. By sweeping his axe across the back of the turtles, countless Demonic Servants were seen falling off the backs of the turtles!

Well, though the Demonic Servants were just Normal Tier monsters, they could still deal quite a lot of damage to regular players if they ever fire their arrows at a target together. So it would be wise to wipe them out as soon as possible before focusing on the Demonic Turtles. By doing so, the players could also reduce the pressure on the Tanks. After all, the Demonic Servants would shoot at the Tanks as well.

Actually, there were three types of defenses on the battlefield.

The first one would be the players flying in the air on their Flying Mounts wiping off the Demonic Servants. The second one would be the players on the Tanks, fending off the assaults from the Demonic Turtles. The third one would be the players on the ground, getting engaged with the Demonic Servants on the ground. Figuratively speaking, the number of the Demonic Servants on the ground would be the highest. However, they were only able to be a nuisance to the players. Well, that's because they were merely Normal Tier monsters.

"Kill them all! Kill!"

"For Experience Points! For the equipment!"

"For the queen!"

Players were shouting their own slogans while they were engaging the demonic army. Although there wouldn't be any real deaths in real life, however, the scene on the battlefield was gory and bloody. Blood was everywhere! The surroundings looked like a real battlefield!

After 2 long hours of fierce fighting, the demonic army had finally been wiped out completely. However, the players had suffered quite a number of casualties as well. The castle walls were filled with holes all over them, as well! The scene was horrifying to look at! Meanwhile, that was just the northern gate of the castle! They had no idea what the other players over the other three gates did, yet!

"Things just keep getting badder and badder, boss! Reports are coming in, saying that the demonic armies by the other three gates are not wiped out yet!" Hundred Shots shouted in the party chat after receiving the news. He was very worried now.

"We shall aid them, then!"

‘Ding! The fifth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

Before the gang could react, the fifth wave of the invasion began!

"What the f\*ck! Do they even wish to see us alive by the end of all this crap?!" Fatty Han whined in misery.

Everyone gazed into the distance. Countless Hellfires began to march towards the castle from over the horizon. These Hellfire were all green. They were basically made of blazing rocks. The green flames flickered brightly all over their bodies. They were about 5 meters tall. Their appearances were intimidating!

[Hellfire] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 220

HP: 289,930



Defence: 8,800

Melee Attack: 55,141 – 75,141

Skills:

[Burning Aura]: Causes 60,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters once every 3 seconds. Effect of the same type will not stack.

[Molten Hand]: Incinerates the target with a burning hand and causes 100% Melee Attack of Fire Damage to the target.

Other than the Normal Tier monsters, it was natural to also have the Elite Tier monsters support them. Compared to the previous waves of armies, these monsters were marching in a very organized formation. 1,000 Hellfires would be led by 1 Hellfire Demon. Because of that, there were countless formations being shaped up on the battlefield. Their formations looked just like the formations of the Tanks.

[Hellfire Demon] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 220

HP: 110,000,000

Defence: 13,730

Melee Attack: 92,970 – 152,970

Skills:

[Burning Aura]: Causes 120,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters once every 3 seconds. Effects of the same type will not stack.

[Flame of Fury]: Spits a stream of flame, filled with rage and fury, torching up all targets within the conical area in front of it and causes 200,000 Fire Damage to all targets.

These Elite Tier monsters seemed to be about 10 meters tall. Truth be told, they were a rather spectacular sight.

These demons were not light-weight at all. Every single step shook the ground like a heavy metallic ball crashing into the ground. The entire land was trembling as they marched forth!

"Rawgh---" Countless Hellfire Demons let out their roars by opening up their rocky mouths. Afterwards, they began to spit out a long and endless stream of flames. The Hellfire monsters began to make their move. The demonic army started to move forward! Under the leadership of the Hellfire Demons, the Hellfire army charged straight towards the castle wall.

"Tanks in front!" Mountain Mover shouted as loud as he could.

Fortunately, they were battling right outside their main cities. Even if the Tanks are destroyed, the players could just run back into the city to get their Tanks repaired. As long as the main city does not fall, the players could keep doing that in order to keep their Tanks on the battlefield.

The other guilds such as Rolling Rocks and Sunset Amber had already followed the command of Mountain Mover earlier on. They now had full respect for his abilities and would obey his every word, as if he was one of their own. They had already given permission to Mountain Mover to use their Tanks as part of his tactics.

With Tankers blocking the frontline, the players managed to form a defensive line and stop the monsters from charging through.

The impact of the monsters crashing into the defensive line had almost knocked over some of the Tanks! However, they managed to stop the demonic army from breaching their first defensive line! Players on board the tanks unleashed everything they had onto the monsters before them. Upon one full round of their AoE attacks, countless monsters were killed.

A new slaughter party had begun. Blood and death was spilled all over the place. Countless players and monsters were slain in every

passing second. Heads and limbs were sent flying across the battlefield.

In a large-scale battle such as this one, anyone would become insignificant. So, all they could do was to kill endlessly until they get themselves killed. A demon lesser was a great help to everyone.

The gory bloodshed went on for 3 long hours. Finally, the number of the demons was reduced, bit by bit. The players had managed to gain the upper hand in the battle, at last. Players who were still alive had managed to gain a tremendous amount of Experience Points. However, the number of players remaining on the battlefield had been reduced from 50,000,000 to 25,000,000.

They still had half their numbers, but the monsters that had yet to come would only be stronger and stronger in each coming wave. The number of casualties would definitely increase in every coming wave. Based on that logic, everyone would be all dead when the ninth wave hits.

# Chapter 826: Aimore Mage Captian Heaphy

---

‘Ding! The fourth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

This time, countless Aimore Mages were seen, appearing on the horizon.

Aimore Mages were all deemed to be demons of higher Tier. Not only did they have two horns on their heads, they also had the tails of lizards trailing behind them! They even had a pair of wings right on their backs! That should be enough to symbolize them to be one of the higher Tier demons in the realm of hell.

Well, players would pay no mind to the statues of those demons. The one thing they cared about was that these monsters could fly! With so many of them flying around, they could easily form a deadly formation in the air and cause massive destruction to the players on the ground. The Tanks were massive. So, they would be attacked by approximately 100 monsters at the same time. Well, the other monsters would not be able to get themselves close enough to hit the Tanks anymore after each Tank is surrounded by 100 monsters.

However, if the monsters could get into the air, the number of monsters that could hit a Tank at the same time would increase up to 1,000! Meanwhile, once the players lose their Tanks, the number of casualties would become tremendous!

Although the monsters would die faster than any regular player on the battlefield, however, players would need to take on another 4 waves of Demonic Forces that had yet to come. After all, the interval of each wave coming in was decreasing. There was no time for the Healers to heal or resurrect the fallen at all.

[Aimore Mage] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 225

HP: 290,120

Defence: 8,800

Magic Attack: 33,823 – 43,823

Skills:

[Fire Missile]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target. Also causes 10,000 Fire Damage to all friendlies of the targets in the target's surroundings.

The one thing that everyone was happy about this wave, was that there were no signs of any Elite Tier monsters! All the monsters in the vicinity were just Normal Tier monsters! Well, a monster composed of a combination of flying type and magic type is deadly enough, I guess. If there are a bunch of Elite Tier monsters in the vicinity, the players would really need to cry and die.

However, there was a boss in this wave. Judging by the fact that there was a boss in the third wave, players could deduce that a boss would be spawned once every 3 waves.

[Aimore Mage Captian Heaphy]

Level: 225

HP: 2,250,000,000

Defence: 21,710

Magic Attack: 107,608 – 147,608

Skills:

[Fiery Volcano]: Summons a Fiery Volcano within the range of 40 meters. The volcano will erupt randomly. Each eruption will cause 240,000 Fire damage to all targets that are caught in the eruption. Lava will splash out from the targets and causes 50,000 Fire Damage to the players around the targets.

[Flare Star]: Summons meteors from the sky and causes 200,000 damage to all targets within the area of 30 X 30 meters.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuses with an Aimore Mage's soul and recovers 10% HP. The monsters that are fused will die immediately.

Note: Even though Heaphy is the subordinate of the Demon Commander Isles, Heaphy appears to be very proud. He has committed insubordination multiple times over.

"Boss!" Everyone was extremely excited upon the sighting of a boss. Even though they were no longer interested in Holy Tier equipment dropped by Holy Tier bosses, they were still very keen to acquire the [Demonic Pearls]. Those were some really good stuff, after all!

"Calm down, man. This boss also has {Demonic Fusion}. We must start with the little ones first!" Hundred Shots said.

"Let's go! They're just Normal Tier monsters! It should be easy! However, you have to take care of yourselves. After all, these monsters can use Magic attacks and they can fly as well. If too many of them are onto you, you'll still be as good as dead!"

"Roger!"

"Starlight, we're using the same old trick. You're going to kite the boss as well. Mini Piglet, you'll be healing Endless Starlight. The boss is all yours for the moment. Stop the boss from slaughtering innocent players!"

"Roger!"

Zhang Yang was only able to command his party which was relatively small. He would become confused if he has to command a large number of players in the battlefield. Fortunately, he had Mountain Mover to aid him in large-scale commandeering. Zhang Yang did not have to kill his brain to do that.

Undoubtedly, these flying mother\*ckers were really annoying as f\*ck. Although they were all Normal Tier monsters, their Attack power was quite powerful. Normally, Level 200 players with a

complete set of Ethereal equipment would only have approximately 500,000 HP. If 10 of these flying mother\*ckers shoot their attacks on such a player at the same time, they could instantly kill the player!

Meanwhile, Ethereal Tier equipment was currently the most common equipment that everyone wore right now. After all, Holy Tier equipment in the dungeons were too f\*cking difficult to acquire. Meanwhile, the Fusion System provided by the NPCs could only enhance the equipment, not increase their Tier. Therefore, Holy Tier equipment was deemed to be one of those luxury items that only top Tier players from top Tier guilds could enjoy.

Even though there were not many of those Normal Tier mother\*ckers and there are easily taken out, however, they are able to take out the players in a brief period of time as well. Fortunately, the worst enemy on the field was currently taken on by Endless Starlight. Although there were also some idiotic players who went and got themselves killed by the boss, however, all in all, the boss did not kill more than a few players. The flying mother\*ckers were the ones who were slaughtering the players up.

That's why there wasn't any sign of any Elite Tier monsters. Monsters that could fly are really annoying and deadly!

Another 3 hours passed. The players managed to clear out most of those flying mother\*ckers. Everyone began to turn their attention towards the boss.

As Holy Tier equipment was still very appealing to most of the players in the game, many of them could not help but charge towards the boss. However, they were tormented by the boss' {Fiery Volcano} and {Flare Star}.

When the flying mother\*ckers were almost wiped out, Zhang Yang and the gang had also joined the boss fight. Well, they had no intention of getting any of the Holy Tier equipment. However,

they were very eager to get the Demonic Pearls that might be dropped from the boss. Who knows if the boss would drop them upon death. Zhang Yang and the gang were in standby mode for the moment.

The boss was quite ferocious. It was spamming its {Flare Star} as if the Skill did not have any cooldown! The players were bombarded by the deadly meteors that were showering from the sky. Meanwhile, the {Fiery Volcano} was also causing more chaos by throwing out blazing attacks at the players. Not only could the Skill spit fire upon the players, the players would also get splashed by lava. The lava had even formed into a river near the boss! Whoever who touches it would be struck by 50,000 Fire Damage!

Fortunately, the Fiery Volcano was not as big as a real one. It was just as small as a giant boulder. If the volcano turns out to be as large as the real one, then the players should just quit the game and forget about it. Well, the entire Crimson Sky City would have been devoured by the lava coming out from the volcano!

Skills which such an attack range would definitely be fatal to the players. However, top Tier players like Zhang Yang himself could definitely handle the impact without having anything to worry about. Well, with Zhang Yang's current Defence, even if he walks straight into the lava and dips himself in, he would only receive about 4,000 damage. That amount of damage would not even give him an itch!

Meanwhile, the Normal Tier monsters were completely being wiped out. The boss had lost its ability to recover HP. After being f\*cked up hard by the players, the boss had finally collapsed onto the ground with a miserable scream and died. Upon its death, the boss dropped quite a number of loots across the ground.

Zhang Yang was quick! Before anyone could react, he already picked up the four pearls from the ground. Having a closer look at them, the four pearls were indeed the [Lesser Demonic Pearls]!



"Zhan Yu, what are those? Judging from your reaction, those must have been extremely valuable!" Coincidentally, Greensleeves Prince was right beside Zhang Yang when he snatched the pearls from the ground. He had reflexively attempted to follow, but was much slower than Zhang Yang. Therefore, he did not manage to pick up anything. He was very curious about it. He knew that Zhang Yang was no longer interested in Holy Tier equipment, but he did notice that Zhang Yang was very keen to get those pearls. So he asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought. Then, he decided to tell Greensleeves Prince about the pearls. Well, he won't be able to keep the 'secret' for long, anyway. Sooner or later, someone is going to find out about these pearls through other way. Meanwhile, the Sunset Amber was also one of Lone Desert Smoke's Allies. It would make Zhang Yang look bad if he ever tries to keep secrets from his friends.

"I see! I had no idea that such a thing existed in the game!" Greensleeves Prince laughed out loud and said, "Well, the next time another boss appears, we will not be courteous about it! We'll be snatching those from you!"

Zhang Yang smiled. Well, he was not worried at all though. Snatching loots from the ground would require knowledge. Meanwhile, he had Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue in his party. Those two moneygrubbers would definitely have become experts in such a field by now. Didn't you see the little brat smiling with 4 pieces of Holy Tier equipment in her hands now?

Well, the situation would only be similar to a discounted sale in a hypermarket. Women will gain explosive power when it comes to snatching goods. They would be much more 'powerful' than men could ever be in such regards!

Giving no quarter to the players to even heal themselves and resurrect their fallen comrades, the bells of the seventh wave started tolling!

This time, the monsters were known as ‘Evil Eye’.

These monsters appeared like an octopus. They had a gigantic eye right in the middle of their bodies and eight tentacles all around their bodies. That’s it. There were no other features on them. Their gigantic eyes were radiating some eerie light. They were spooky, creepy creatures.

[Evil Eye] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 230

HP: 252,630

Defence: 9,160

Magic Attack: 35,526 – 45,526

Skills:

[Eye of Death]: Fires a beam of deadly laser and causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target.

Unlike the previous wave, although there were no signs of any bosses in this wave, there were tens of thousands of Elite Tier Evil Eyes in the vicinity. The Attack power of Evil Eyes in such numbers would definitely be much higher than the Attack power of a boss! However, because these monsters had no flying ability, they did not pose as much of a threat as the Aimore Mages did.

Well, that made perfect sense as well. The most powerful thing about range-type monsters was that they could focus fire on one target at a time and instantly kill the target. Although they may seem very weak on their own, well, when they come in numbers, the situation would change a little. Players would definitely not be able to afford fighting them in bulk!

The use of the castle walls had finally been revealed. Mountain Mover was currently commanding the players to retreat into the city. There, the players began to use the wall to block the eye sight of the monsters. By doing so, they were able to divide the monster

army! As long as players are not instantly killed, they would be able to recover their HP through healing Skills. Instantly, the death toll of the players became under control.

Zhang Yang and his gang flew out of the castle on their Flying Mounts and began their assaults on the monsters. They threw their attacks on the monsters as intensely as they could. Well, because the monsters could not fly, whenever Zhang Yang and the gang got a little low on HP, all they needed to do was to fly higher a little and get themselves healed up before charging back into the battlefield.

However, the castle walls had received some damage during the fourth wave of the demonic invasion. There were many holes left by the attacks from the Demonic Turtles. Even though players may not be able to go through those holes, the Evil Eyes could slip through any small hole. Well, they were basically octopuses. They began to enter the castle through any holes they could find on the wall. The fiercest battle throughout the entire war was about to begin.

The casualties of the players were high as f\*ck!

However, this wave ended pretty quickly. It only took up 2 hours before the monsters were wiped out. The players had really taken a hit. The number of players remaining on the battlefield had been reduced to only 12,000,000. Well, even though the number was now lower, the power level of the players remaining were all top notch! From that moment onwards, none of the players remaining were below Level 190.

Meanwhile, everyone could see that the monsters in the eighth wave would be Level 235. Therefore, players below Level 205 would be affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. The situation became worse than everyone could ever anticipate!

"We're doing fine at this gate, however, the players by the South Gate have suffered the most losses. Currently, they barely have

6,000,000 players on the battlefield. Even if they could limp through this wave, they would never stand a chance in the ninth wave of the demonic invasion!" Hundred Shot sighed heavily. "Although the situation at the East Gate and the West Gate are a little better, well, they are not really much better actually... According to their statistics, each gate only has approximately 9,000,000 players remaining."

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "Tell them this. After the eight wave of the demonic invasion, we shall abandon all four gates of the city. We shall gather in our Main City!"

# Chapter 827: Tactical Retreat

---

‘Ding! The eighth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

The monsters from the eighth wave was a large number of Cerberuses. They were as huge as male lions! Their entire bodies were black. They were drooling from their slightly open mouths, where their white sharp teeth were revealed. They looked horrifically wretched and scary.

Cerberuses were known to be deadly to Spell-type players. Well, they were equipped with two extremely brutal and annoying Skills: {Mana Incineration}, {Spell Rebound}. Fortunately, these countless Cerberuses were mostly Normal Tier monsters. The Elite Tier Three-Headed Cerberuses were just the minority.

[Cerberus] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 235

HP: 303,390

Defence: 9,160

Melee Attack: 58,071 – 78,071

Skills:

[Mana Incineration]: Reduces 30,000 MP of the target. Causes 60,000 Chaos Damage to the target as well.

[Spell Rebound]: Interrupts the target’s casting, causing the target to not able to use spell attacks.

The differences between the Elite Tier Cerberus and Normal Tier Cerberus were their HP amounts and their Attack powers. Naturally, the Elite Tier monsters would have higher HP and higher Attack power. They had the same Skillset as the Normal Tier Cerberus. Well, they had three heads, afterall. So, it would make sense, even if their Skills would cool down faster.

Truth be told, any monster would not be able to create too much of a threat to the players if they are alone --- of course, that would only apply under the circumstance of the number of players and the number of monsters being about the same. However, if all the different types of monsters from all eight waves appear in the same wave, under the circumstance that the number of all monster types would be reduced by one-eighth of their total numbers, the damage that they could deal on the players would definitely be much higher than the players could ever anticipate.

Well, even though the Cerberuses were the worst enemies of the spell-type players, they also had the same obvious weakness. They would not pose much of a threat to the Melee-type players. Players could just send their Warriors, Thieves and Hunters to the frontline while keeping their spell-type players at the rear.

The Tanks were at the frontlines to tank against the monsters, as usual. Countless Skills were spammed across the battlefield, causing a large wave of impact to the monsters right before the Tanks, causing a tremendous amount of damage to the monsters at the same time. Under the circumstances where no player activates their Inheritance Transformation, the Tanks were the toughest existence with the highest HP on the battlefield. Although their movement speed was extremely slow, however, with hundreds of Tanks lining up in a straight horizontal line that was pushing forward, they would basically become unstoppable!

Meanwhile, even though these monsters were not difficult to kill, their numbers were far more abundant than the number of monsters in the previous waves. It was true that the Cerberuses could not pose much threat to the Melee type players like they could to the Spell type players. However, they had the advantage in their numbers. Players might get overthrown by them if Healers could not heal up the players on the frontline. Just imagine this. Tens of Cerberuses biting one poor player at the same time. That player would die very easily!

Furthermore, the Spell type players would have to stay at the rear to prevent themselves from being torn apart by the sharp teeth of the Cerberuses. Because they were basically staying too far from the frontline --- well, it would be pointless for them to run all the way to the frontline as well. When the Healers are close enough to heal, they would be entering the effective range of the monsters' {Mana Incineration} and {Spell Rebound}. Not only would they not be able to heal, they would take tremendous amount of damage as well!

Not everyone is built from metal. Even if the player only receives 1 Damage each time they are hit, the HP of the player would deplete sooner or later without receiving any healing.

Under the concentrated attacks of the monsters, countless players were dying one after another. Even the Tanks were beginning to get destroyed, one after another. The players on board could not even get their legs to run before the Cerberuses tore them to bits and left them to die. Many players were forced to activate their Inheritance Transformations so that they could simply survive.

Based on everyone's knowledge, Inheritance Transformations should be retained until the final boss Demon Commander Isles arrives. Those who use their Inheritance Transformations now would become useless for the final battle! However, the situation was so dangerous that they had to activate their Inheritance Transformations to prevent themselves from dying. Upon seeing the endless attacks from the Cerberuses coming at them, they had no reason to retain their Inheritance Transformations anymore. Well, it was obvious that they would not have time to save or resurrect anyone on the battlefield currently. It would be a waste to not activate their Inheritance Transformations.

Players began to retreat back to the castle walls. They were relying on the NPC archers to provide them fire support. Some of them even used the NPCs as their human shields to tank against

the attacks of the monsters. Well, since that they would be retreating back to the Main City after this wave, they might as well utilize the NPCs to aid them in battle. Without the players staying behind to support them, the NPCs would definitely be wiped out clean when the ninth wave arrives! They would not be able to block or delay the monsters by the ninth wave at all. Therefore, it would be wise for the players to use the NPCs to their own advantage to increase the survival of the players.

This was the worst battle so far. Countless players were dead. The number of remaining players was reduced from 12,000,000 to only 2,000,000. The losses were too great to be imagined!

The only good news out of the battle was that the players finally managed to wipe out the entire wave of the monsters.

However, even worst news came in later after the battle was over. The total remaining players by the East Gate, West Gate and South Gate that survived the onslaught of the Cerberuses was only 140,000!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "We're retreating back to the Main City now! We'll defend from there!"

"Roger!"

Well, the monsters would be invading from all 4 directions if they were to stay and defend in this castle. Even if Zhang Yang and his gang survive the onslaught of the ninth wave, the players at the other 3 gates would not survive. By then, the humongous demonic army would gush into the Main City immediately!

The system would decide whether a Main City falls or stands based on whether the king or queen of the Main City is still alive. But China Region was special. All eight Main Cities had been united by Queen Serena. Therefore, other than the White Jade Castle, the initial kings of the other 7 Main Cities had been taken over by Barons.



Therefore, it would be pointless even if Zhang Yang and his gang die trying to defend the gate. That would not be the key to claiming victory. The key to claiming victory would be by defending the life of Aimoson, the baron of the castle!

Actually, before Zhang Yang declared to retreat, the other players by the other three gates had made their move to retreat back to the Main City. Looking at the number of players remaining, it would be suicide to place 60,000 players in the castle against the demonic army of the ninth wave.

However, the other 3 gates only had about 140,000 players remaining while the north gate still had over 2,000,000 players remained. The players could not help but be shocked at the difference in the numbers.

Initially, the number of players were approximately the same on all four sites of the gates. Each gate had over 50,000,000 players. The total Attack power of the players on each site should be similar as well. Therefore, the only thing or person that could cause such difference would be the commander in charge!

Undoubtedly, the combined forces would be commanded by Mountain Mover for the remaining waves of the demonic invasion.

Actually, the commanders on the other sites were not up to standard, to be honest. They only managed to keep 140,000 players by the end of the eighth wave. So they had no authority whatsoever to voice out.

‘Ding! The ninth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

Zhang Yang did not immediately get back to the Main City. Instead, he hopped onto his Phoenix pet and took a stroll across the battlefield that they were going to leave behind. Well, he wanted to at least know what they were going to go up against on the ninth wave. That should give them some ideas on how to get themselves ready for the coming wave.

However, he drew in a deep cold breath the moment he laid his eyes across the army that was flying towards the castle. They appeared like a bunch of clouds that covered the entire sky!

--- It was another wave of mother\*ckers that knew how to fly!

[Bat Man] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 240

HP: 316,330

Defence: 9,520

Range Attack: 60,900 – 80,900

Skills:

[Fatal Toss]: Causes 100% Ranged Attack in Physical Damage to the target. The target will have an additional 10% chance to receive Critical Damage upon being hit for the next 5 seconds.

The monsters only had one Skill equipped. That one Skill was enough to cause a hell lot of trouble for all the players.

The only good thing that came out of this was that there was no sign of any Elite Tier monsters. However, it was unfortunate that there was a boss in this wave.

[Bat Man Adeejah] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 240

HP: 2,400,000,000

Defence: 23330

Range Attack: 205,248 – 275,248

Skills:

[Blazing Blasting Toss]: Causes 150% Range Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The target will then explode and cause 200,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters from the explosion.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuses a Bat Man's soul and recover 10% HP. The fused monster will die immediately.

[Ultrasonic]: Emits out a high frequency ultrasonic and causes 240,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 40 meters.

Note: Adeejah is one of the leaders of the Bat Men. He's renowned for his skills in battle.

Before that, the players on each gate would only need to take on one boss. However, now that everyone was gathered at the Main City, the players had to face 4 bosses at the same time! However, Holy Tier bosses would just be as powerful as Holy Tier bosses should be. Well, the players could only kill the bosses after they clear out the monsters, because of the bosses' {Demonic Fusion}. However, the players could just send 4 of their best Tankers and kite the four bosses away from the monsters. Then, the bosses would no longer be able to bother the players while they focus on wiping out the monsters.

Zhang Yang immediately flew back to the Main City. That would be the last Defence of the players. Not only was the city occupied by all of the players, the place was also filled with Elite Tier NPCs as their defensive forces. Well, it was annoying to think about this. The Crimson Sky City was supposed to be one of the eight Main Cities in China Region, and this place would have a massive army of NPCs to defend the city. However, imminent dangers were just by their doorsteps, there was no sign of any massive army! There were only tens of thousands of NPCs in the castle!

"Even if the officials want the players to handle the battles, they should have at least make up a good story about this. They could just say that the army of the castle has marched into the lair of the demons or something!" Endless Starlight began to whine in misery.

"The worst part about it is that the king of this city used to be an Ascended Tier boss. And now? The baron of this city has become

an Elite Tier NPC! Are the officials kidding?"

"You should be happy that the baron has not lost his mind and charged into battle, trying to kill the monsters himself. If the baron does that, we'll definitely lose the battle!"

Everyone was making fun out of their own misery. They began to laugh out loud. Well, they did not pay much hope on surviving the ninth wave anyway. So they did not even pay their minds on defeat the final boss on the tenth wave!

The sky was suddenly darkened. It was like countless dark clouds covering the entire sky above the Crimson Sky City.

Well, those were definitely not dark clouds though. They were all Bat Men! They were descending upon the castle as we speak!

These Bat Man immediately aimed their javelins at the players and threw them at the players. By the end of the javelins, there was a thick metal chain tied to it. With a powerful pull, the javelins immediately returned back to the monsters' hands.

"Stinky monsters! Come down and face me!" Wei Yan Er was a Melee-type player. Even if she had a weapon that could reach 2 meters, she would not be able to touch any of the monsters that were flying 10 meters above her!

After getting hit by a few javelins, she instantly got infuriated. So she grabbed on to one of the javelins that had embedded itself in her body. With a powerful pull, the Bat Man was instantly pulled right out of the sky by the little brat by force! After that, the little brat ended the life of that Bat Man with one single swing from her axe!

Because the number of the monsters were so abundant, no one was daring enough to risk using their Flying Mounts to fly in the sky. 99% of the players in the current stage of the game would be dead if hundreds of monsters attacked them at the same time in the middle of the sky.

Everyone made their way into the buildings around the area by using the terrain of the surroundings to their advantage. Well, they needed to lose themselves from the aggro of the monsters first before they could plan out their next move.

The battle for the new wave has begun, for real!

# Chapter 828: Gate of Hell Activated!

---

Zhang Yang had contacted Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke, and the others. They sent their own powerful Tankers and Healers over to handle the bosses. Zhang Yang did not contact Eternal Flame at all. Instead, he just sent two of his best Tankers, Endless Starlight and Ten Dusk.

Truth to be told, the bosses were not too difficult to handle. The might of these bosses would only become obvious when standing among players. Well, their AoE Skills were extremely powerful. However, once they are kited away from the players, they would not be able to cause much trouble to anyone. Well, their Attack power would be similar or slightly stronger than the Attack power of an Elite Tier monster.

Using the terrain of the surroundings to restrict the aggro range of the monsters, the players managed to force the Bat Men to descend to the ground, one after another. Well, the monsters had to be on the ground before they could launch a limited number of attacks on the players. It seemed that something good would come from having lesser players around as well. Well, if there are 20,000,000 players in the vicinity, there wouldn't be enough buildings to hide so many players.

However, even if that is the case, it would only reduce the number of casualties of the players by a tiny bit. Their players would not be able to slay the monsters without suffering any casualties. After all, even though the monsters were only coming down to the ground from the sky, it did not mean that they are not able to attack!

1,900,000! 1,800,000! 1,700,000!

The number of surviving players was getting lesser by the second. However, players who managed to stay alive up till this point would be considered as one of the best players in the entire

China Region. Their power levels were impressive. As long as each of them could find themselves one Healer to pair up with them, they could definitely take on hundreds of monsters at the same time!

One hour later, the number of surviving players had been steeply reduced to 240,000!

"Should we activate our Inheritance Transformations now?"

"It's futile! With so many monsters surrounding us, it will not help us much, even after we activate our Inheritance Transformations!" Zhang Yang shook his head.

"How about using a Forbidden Scroll?"

Zhang Yang shook his head as well, then he said, "We still have one wave left after this! Furthermore, we only have 2 Forbidden Scrolls that can deal AoE damage. It's still too early to use them now!"

"But we're outnumbered now! We're about to lose!"

"Just a little longer! I'm activating my {Gate of Hell}!" Zhang Yang said. Then, he assigned the enhancement effect of his [Book of Revelation] on his {Gate of Hell}. Well, he would have to wait for 24 hours before he could assign that enhancement effect on his other Skills after that.

He threw his 'Gate of Hell' in one of the buildings and said, "Protect the 'Gate of Hell' from getting destroyed by the monsters!"

"You can count on me!" Fatty Han thumped his chest and voiced out in confidence. "I'll definitely protect the gate like the wives of my brothers!"

Zhang Yang charged out of the building and instantly became the target of the monsters in the sky and on the ground.

{God of War Shield} activated!

'-o!'

‘-o!’

‘-o!’

Countless javelins were thrown at Zhang Yang. However, none of them were able to deal a single damage to Zhang Yang! Upon activating his {God of War Shield}, the monsters would need to deal at least 95,000 damage before they could penetrate his basic Defence. Unfortunately, each of these monsters only could deal a maximum damage of 80,000 to their targets. They would have no definite way of penetrating Zhang Yang’s basic Defence.

However, {Fatal Toss} would afflict players with a negative effect - an additional 10% rate of receiving a Critical Hit. Once the players receive a Critical Hit, even a Minimum Attack of 120,000 damage would be enough to penetrate Zhang Yang’s Defence.

Although the 10% rate seemed to be insignificant, there were hundreds of monsters launching their attacks at Zhang Yang at the moment. Because of that, every single hit with additional 10% Critical Rate would cause quite a tremendous amount of damage to Zhang Yang. Therefore, he has to hustle up and get the job done.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Zhang Yang dealt over a million damage to each of the monsters within the effective area of his Attack range. The remaining Bat Men were instantly killed and their souls were sucked into the ‘Gate of Hell’. Instantly, tens of Elite Demons charged right out of the gate and joined into the battle to aid Zhang Yang!

Let eh slaughtering begin!

In order for the AoE attacks to cover the most area of the battlefield, Zhang Yang did not hop onto the Phoenix pet. Instead, he stayed on the ground, unleashing his {Thunder Strike} and his {Blast Wave}. He was spamming his Skills the moment the cooldowns were over with the intention of killing as many monsters as he could during the effective period of the ‘Gate of



Hell’.

10! 20! 100! 1,000!

The surroundings of the building where Zhang Yang stood beside has become the breeding ground of the demons! Although they were from the same root as the Bat Men, they were currently Zhang Yang’s minions. Therefore, the demons were battling the Bat Men without showing them any quarter! However, the demons were Elite Tier, after all. So when their number reaches a certain level, they would become a deadly force that are not to be reckoned with.

Well, each of these Level 140 summoned demons had over 120,000,000 HP. Their current HP amount was as abundant as the HP amount of Sun Xin Yu after she activates her Inheritance Transformation. Each of their HP amount could be compared to the Maximum HP of each Model 4.0 Tank! Even if they were focus-fired by 100 monsters at the same instant, the demons could tank against the monsters’ focused fire for more than 10 times!

Meanwhile, these 1,000 demons had reached the numbers where they were powerful enough to oppress the monsters in the vicinity!

Instantly, countless Bat Men were charging towards the ‘Gate of Hell’. They were targeting the gate as their priority target, like moths trying to charge into the flames like their lives no longer mattered! It seemed that they were ready to sacrifice millions of monsters just to take down one of Zhang Yang’s demon!

However, summoning the demons did not cost Zhang Yang a single dime. Meanwhile, because the demons could not leave the ‘Gate of Hell’ further than 1,000 meters, letting the moths get drawn to the flame would be a good thing. Actually, Zhang Yang was worried that he might not get a spot to stand within that area, when there are too many demons being summoned into the vicinity! So be it! Let the monsters come and kill one or two of his demons. Well, he could have killed the monsters much faster than

the rate of demons being summoned to the battlefield. The number of his demons would only increase! It was constantly increasing from 2,000 to 5,000! Then from 5,000 to 30,000!

The number of the demons was still rising!

Everyone within the vicinity was stunned to witness what was going on! This Skill looked like a bug to them! With the ability to summon that amount of minions, Zhang Yang could have become capable of defeating a Celestial boss by the looks of it!

Unfortunately, that Skill only worked on the dumb monsters. Players could have just sent their Thieves in stealth mode and get the 'Gate of Hell' destroyed without a problem. However, looking at the tens of thousands of demons summoned from the gate, no one could deny that the Skill was indeed an oppressive existence in the game!

However, Zhang Yang had finally got the chance to verify a question he had long had in mind. He noticed that the gate could only summon 50,000 demons at its maximum. After that, even though when there were many more souls were sucked into the gate, no additional demon was coming out.

Well, do bear in mind that there was currently a total of 50,000 demons in the battlefield right now. They were all slaughtering the monsters for Zhang Yang and the players. Moreover, each of their HP amount was as abundant as the HP amount of a Model 4.0 Tank. They could serve as extremely powerful meat shields even if they could not attack!

Under the protection of the massive army of demons, the players quickly took the opportunity to strike back as hard as they could. They were slaughtering the monsters up hard in order to win the battle. Bit by bit, the players seemed to gain the upper hand over the monsters.

1 hour! 2 hours!

Finally, all of the Bat Men were wiped out! There were only 4 Holy Tier bosses remaining on the battlefield.

Without having any monsters left for them to recover their HPs, the four bosses were like venomous snakes who have just lost their poisonous deadly fangs. Without their deadliest weapons, they were defeated within a short period of time. Upon their death, they dropped an abundant amount of loot across the ground. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang and his other gang members were only able to snatch 7 of those [Lesser Demonic Pearls]. However, Eternal Flame was enraged, because three of the [Demonic Pearls] that Zhang Yang and his gang managed to snatch were the pearls that were dropped by the boss they were hitting.

However, the boss they hit would not necessarily be the boss they slay. Truth to be told, all of the players on the battlefield had contributed in such regard. Anyone on the battlefield would have been entitled to grab the loot! There was no saying that the loot belonged to someone specifically. Furthermore, the players were able to survive so long, because Zhang Yang had activated his {Gate of Hell}. Without the 50,000 demons tanking the monsters' attack, the players would have been wiped out entirely, within minutes! Slaying the bosses would only remain as a pipe dream!

Before the tenth wave of the demonic invasion could start, Zhang Yang quickly gathered Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke and the other guildmasters from large guilds to come up with a tactical plan. So he said, "Everyone, listen up! The last wave of the demons are about to come! So it's not a good time to keep your tricks and secret weapons up in your sleeves anymore! You can just show me everything you've got now!"

Everyone kept silent. Therefore, Zhang Yang took out two Forbidden Scrolls and said, "These are two very powerful AoE Forbidden Scrolls. They're called the 'Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse' and the 'Reaper's Descent'!"

The guildmasters widened their eyes. Although a Forbidden

Scroll was extremely powerful, the chance of coming across one would be extremely low to the point that it's pathetic! It seemed that Zhang Yang was willing to use two precious scrolls just to get through the war!

"Crimson Rage only has one at the moment!" Snow Seeker took out one Forbidden Scroll and passed it to Zhang Yang.

[Forbidden Scroll: Virulent Plague] (Consumable)

Use: Activates a plague across the battlefield. Causes a tremendous amount of damage to all enemy targets within the range of 10 kilometers. The targets will lose 10% HP in each passing second. If the HP of the target does not exceed 150,000 HP, then the target will lose a minimum amount of 150,000 HP. However, if the target has more than 300,000 HP, the target will lose a maximum amount of 300,000 HP. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Required: 200

"We, Imperial Sky will contribute one Forbidden Scroll as well!" One Sword Stroke took out a scroll and passed it to Zhang Yang as well.

"We, Rolling Rocks will contribute one Forbidden Scroll as well!"

"We, Sunset Amber will contribute one Forbidden Scroll as well!"

...

After making some calculations, the guildmasters managed to gather a total of 10 Forbidden Scrolls. Judging by that, everyone was able to see how 'resourceful' each guild was. Although Eternal Flame was deemed to be one of the four most powerful guilds in the entire China Region, they were not able to provide even one Forbidden Scroll. Because of that, Zhong Xiu Hua felt so embarrassed that he could not even show his face in front of the other guildmasters.

"Very good, if the monsters in the tenth wave are only Normal Tier monsters, we, Lone Desert Smoke, will use the first Forbidden

Scroll on the approaching monsters. Then, the rest of you should decide who will be using their Forbidden Scrolls after us. If it's necessary, I'll use a second Forbidden Scroll!"

Although everyone was not willing to use their Forbidden Scrolls, who would be so shameless to let Zhang Yang use a second Forbidden Scroll, then? That would only make them look weak!

Upon rolling to decide the sequence of using the Forbidden Scrolls on the upcoming wave of the war, Zhang Yang said, "If the final wave has an army of Elite Tier monsters, then we shall throw all 10 scrolls out at the same time!"

"That'll be the only way, it seems..."

"Let's hope it won't come to that!"

"We'll let the gods decide!"

Fortunately, the summoned demons could survive up to 4 hours. Although the Gate of Hell had vanished, to 40,000+ demons would still stick around for another 2 hours plus. They would be able to tank the attacks of the monsters in the tenth wave for the players, even if just for a bit.

‘Ding! The tenth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

Players with Flying Mounts began to launch themselves up into the sky. They extended their sights far out at the horizon.

A loud and clear horn sound was heard. A large army of demons marched right up to the horizon. That would be the final wave of the demon army, the Death Emissaries!

[Death Emissary] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 245

HP: 12,250,000,000

Defence: 14,810

Melee Attack: 103,759 – 163,759

## Skills:

[Death Strike]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. There is a 1% chance to cause a fatal wound to the target, causing the target to lose 50% of his HP (Maximum HP lost will not exceed 500,000HP)

Note: Death Emissaries are the special guards of the Demon Commander Isles. They are extremely powerful.

# Chapter 829: Annihilation!

---

The worst part about these monsters was not because they were Elite Tier, or because of their HP amount or their Attack power. It was their level!

Level 245!

Currently, there were only a few, maybe only more than 10 players who have managed to reach Level 215! Other than those players, the remaining players would be affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game while they battle Level 245 monsters! Initially, there were only approximately 240,000 players remaining to fend off the last wave of the monsters. There would be tens of millions of monsters charging at them. Now that they would be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression of the game, it seemed that the players were going to be slaughtered, big time!

Meanwhile, the only good news about the current battle was that there would only be one wave of the monsters left. Previously, they had to engage 9 waves of endless hordes with merely enough time to get ready before the next wave comes. It would take more than just an hour to battle each of the waves! A while later, the system had finally revealed the number of players and the number of monsters to everyone.

238,793 VS 100,000

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The demonic army was surrounding the players from all directions. The broken walls of the city were no longer capable of stopping the advancement of those demons. Each of the demons was approximately 5 meters tall. They were red demons which held heavy swords in their hands. Well, here goes. The final battle has begun!

"Wait! Just wait! Just wait for a little longer!" Zhang Yang

stopped the other guildmasters from opening up their Forbidden Scrolls. Although the effects of the Forbidden Scrolls could reach out to a range of 5-kilometer radius, the monsters were still very far away from the frontline. They would not be able to spread the effect of the Forbidden Scrolls to the demonic army completely.

The monsters were gushing into the main city like an unstoppable tidal wave. They were making their way towards the baron's castle. The approaching footsteps made the players even more nervous by the seconds!

The summoned demons immediately engaged in battle with the demonic army. Although the level of the summoned demons was 5 levels lower than the level of the monsters, however, they were still on the same level as the Level 240 monsters. Therefore, the power level on both sides was almost at the similar level. The only difference between the two sides was that the number of monsters was much more abundant than the summoned demons, though their abundant numbers would pretty much, not be able to overwhelm the summoned demons. The situation of the battle was totally one-sided. Many summoned demons were slain within 5 minutes!

"Now's the time!"

Zhang Yang descended to the ground and nodded at Snow Seeker and the other guildmasters. Then he said, "Let's begin!"

He tore his scroll before the others. [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] activated!

The scroll was initially dropped by the Ascended Tier boss Mathuven. Because Mathuven was only a Level 185 boss, the effect of the Forbidden Scroll was quite limited in terms of 'impact'. In other words, the impact and effects of the scroll were weaker. Although all Forbidden Scroll could reduce 10% HP of all targets every passing second, they would still have a limited boundary. For instance, the [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] could only deal 50,000



damage at least, and 200,000 damage at most.

However, he also had the other Forbidden Scroll 'Reaper's Descent', dropped by the Celestial boss Angus, which is able to deal a minimum damage of 150,000 and a maximum damage of 300,000! After tearing his [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse], Zhang Yang tore his [Forbidden Scroll: Reaper's Descent] as well.

Snow Seekers and the other quickly followed what he did. They also tore their Forbidden Scrolls! It did not take long before all 10 Forbidden Scroll Effects started to take effect at the same time!

Instantly, the sky was shrouded in dark clouds and rumbling thunders. The lightning bolts were flashing violently as the entire area became bizarrely unfamiliar! Moonlight, frosty snows, boiling rocks had messed up the scenery of the entire area! Everything just went to hell all of a sudden!

The Forbidden Scrolls were destructive as f\*ck, indeed. They could cause so much destruction to all targets within the area of 5-kilometer radius, reducing 10% HP of all targets in each second, bypassing their Defence! Furthermore, the effects would last for 30 seconds! No Skill could ever match those effects! However, the weakness of these effects were actually obvious. Their maximum damage and minimum damage were limited. Even with the current strongest Forbidden Scroll, the user could only deal a maximum damage of 300,000 to all targets every second. In 30 seconds, the strongest scroll could deal a total of 9,000,000 maximum damage to each target within its effective range. An Elite Tier monster with 100,000,000 HP would not feel that much!

However, even though one Forbidden Scroll cannot deal much damage to Elite Tier monsters, having 10 Forbidden Scrolls activated at the same time would definitely cause a horrific amount of damage!

Although the Maximum and Minimum damage each Forbidden Scroll differed, 10 scrolls could still deal a total damage of

2,550,000 in each passing second!

That was an extremely horrifying amount of damage for the players to look at. Those scrolls did not just cause that amount of damage to one Elite Tier monster but 10,000 of them! Upon hearing countless screams from the monsters, every single one of the demonic army had lost over 76,500,000 HP over the past 30 seconds!

Each Death Emissary only had a total of 122,500,000 HP after all. They had lost over half of their HP over a short period of time! If the players could spare 5 to 6 more Forbidden Scrolls to give those monsters hell one more time, those monsters would have been completely wiped out!

Unfortunately, the players had run out of Forbidden Scrolls.

Meanwhile, the innocent ones were caught in between the crossfire as well --- Zhang Yang's army of summoned demons!

Although they seemed to be Zhang Yang's underlings, they would only be treated as mercenaries in the game. For the other players, they were just Yellow-named monsters that appeared to be neutral. Even though they would not attack the players automatically, they would be attacked by the players' AoE attacks.

Other than Zhang Yang's two Forbidden Scrolls, the scrolls that the others unleashed had caused a tremendous amount of damage to them. Fortunately, the Forbidden Scrolls would not get the aggro of the monsters to the players who used them. Or else, Snow Seekers and the other guildmasters would have become the targets of the massive army of Elite Tier monsters!

Although the demonic army was heavily wounded, the players would have to finish the job.

"You degrading species! Submit to us and tremble underneath the feet of our master, our king!"

The Death Emissaries were slashing their weapons around while

they were shouting. They were shouting as if they were singing a battle song in an attempt to raise their morale and dignity!

"Kill!"

The players were not willing to show any sign of weakness. They were so into the battle, as if they were willing to throw in their dowries and the expenses for their own coffins! If they could not fend off the final wave of the war, everything that they have done for the past 9 waves would have been for nothing! Although the number of Elite Tier monsters had reached up to 10,000 in the final wave, the monsters were all close to death already. They only had approximately 37% HP remaining, on each of them! That would be equal to only approximately 37,000 full HP bar monsters on the battlefield!

Well, time was crucial, and none of the players had the intention to keep anything else up their own sleeves. So they began to activate their Inheritance Transformations.

The slaughtering continued on!

After activating their Inheritance Transformations, the players had gotten a great boost in their HP and their Attack power. Unfortunately, many players had not reached Level 215 yet. The b\*tchy Level Gap Suppression effect had caused them to deal much lower damage than they theoretically could. Meanwhile, the damage they received from the monsters had increased tremendously.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "Fatty, Hundred Shots, let's activate the Transformation Skills of our pet as well! Let the others reserve their Inheritance Transformations for the moment. We'll be battling the boss soon!"

"Roger!"

Two Phoenixes and one Red Dragon activated their Transformation Skills. The three pets received a tremendous boost

in their sizes. Upon roaring out loud, the three legendary pets picked up Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots before they soared into the sky. After that, they charged into the battlefield to start slaughtering the monsters!

Well, these three legendary pets' normal attacks were basically AoE attacks. Victory would depend on them now.

The three legendary pets had begun to spit their flames towards the monsters as they were still flying in the sky. The range of their attacks had been increased from 15 meters to 30 meters after they activate their Transformation Skills. Even though the pets were dealing Melee Attacks on their targets, they had already spat out their attacks at their targets while they were still in the sky. Even though it seemed safe for them to do so, that had also greatly reduced the attack coverage of the pets!

Zhang Yang was the first to land on the ground. Without showing any mercy at all, Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet had caused 700,000 Fire Damage to all monsters within a conical area of 30-meter. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots landed right after Zhang Yang. Commanding their pets to attack as aggressively as possible, the projectiles crossed paths.

Injuring all of a man's fingers is not as effective as chopping off one. Even though the 10,000 Elite Tier monsters were heavily wounded earlier on, their Attack power was not affected as long as they are not dead. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his two brother-in-arms had commanded their pets to focus their attacks on a smaller part of the monsters as aggressively as they could.

Right behind them was the bunch of summoned demons of 30,000. They were protecting Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots's back to prevent the three of them from getting flanked by the monsters.

The initial HP of each pet had reached over 3,330,000 HP. With {Vitality Aura} and Transformation Skills in effect currently, the

HP for each of them had reached over 90,000,000 HP now! The three of them were not standing next to each other, though. Because of that, they had managed to reduce the stacking of AoE attacks that come at them. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and the other Healers were maintaining the HP bars of the others while staying in the middle of the sky. Although the rate of losing HP was faster than the rate of healing, Zhang Yang and the two brothers-in-arms would still be able to hang on for another 1 to 2 minutes against the monsters. Well, they could just get into the sky to avoid being attacked by the monsters. After getting healed back to their full HP, they could just get back into the battle to get the job done!

In just 40 seconds, Zhang Yang and the gang managed to kill over 200 monsters with the deadly attacks of the pets. However, killing the 200 monsters was like taking out a spoon of water from a pot, the missing part of the water was instantly filled back by the surrounding water.

Zhang Yang threw his {Surrogacy} onto Hundred Shots, sharing the same amount of Defence power he had with Hundred Shots. By doing so, Hundred Shots should be able to hold on for a little longer than he can in the first place.

A while later, Fatty Han flew up to the sky. Well, his HP was no longer in the safe zone. He had to get into the sky to get healed up.

Because Hundred Shots currently had the same amount of Defence as Zhang Yang, he managed to hang on in the battle much longer than Fatty Han could. He managed to hold on for over 3 minutes before he was forced to fly up into the sky. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang managed to hold on for over 8 minutes because he activated his {God of War Radiance} to fully recover his HP bar once.

The three legendary pets were attacking the monsters with insanely powerful Attack power. Averagely, the pets could kill 5 monsters each second. Theoretically speaking, the pets would be able to kill over 36,000 monsters within the entire duration of

their Transformation Skills. Therefore, the players would have to be responsible for wiping out the remaining 64,000 monsters, then.

Fortunately, the players had the support of Zhang Yang's army of summoned demons.

The 30,000 demons were not as many as the number of monsters on the demonic army side, however, because they had received lesser damage because they were not affected by the effective power of two Forbidden Scrolls. In other words, the summoned demons would have an additional 15,000,000 HP. Furthermore, there were quite a number of buildings within the interior area of the main city. The summoned demons were not able to leave further than 1,000 meters from the gate. Although Zhang Yang could not command the summoned demons at will, the demons had formed a formation where they were standing extremely close to each another. By doing so, they should be able to make up for the shortage in numbers.

Because most of the players were affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game, the Attack power of the summoned demons had become one of the main Attack power sources. Meanwhile, the battle must be concluded within 2 hours. Or else, when the summoned demons are forced to go back to hell, the players would have to raise their hands up and surrender.

The battle was worsening in every passing second!

Although the players had the summoned demons to shield them from most of the harm, however, the AoE attacks of the players would hurt the demons as well! By the end of it, the players who indirectly attack the demons too much would earn the aggro of the demons. By then, those players would be hunted by the summoned demons and get killed by them instead!

The casualties of the Death Emissaries were extremely high. However, the players were suffering even more casualties. The

effect of the Level Gap Suppression had made the players vulnerable to getting beaten up by the Ascended Tier boss! Their numbers were reducing steeply by the seconds!

150,000 VS 90,000!

120,000 VS 70,000!

90,000 VS 50,000!

20,000 VS 30,000!

5,000 VS 10,000!

67 VS 102!

Two hours later, only 67 players remained on the battlefield. Meanwhile, the summoned demons had also suffered a high number of casualties! For the demons that survived, it was mainly because they had run out of range and were teleported back to the location of the gate. Fortunately, there were only 102 Death Emissaries remaining on the battlefield. Not to mention, they were barely alive!

However, just as the situation seemed to take a turn for the best --

-

‘Ding! Demon Commander Isles has joined the battle!’

# Chapter 830: Demon Commander Isles

---

Right in the middle of the sky, a gigantic four-winged demonic bat was flapping its four wings as it was making its way down to the battlefield. There was a demon with a gigantic axe riding on the back of the weird and bizarre looking bat. The demon had a pair of horns on its head, a pair of wings on its back and a long powerful tail trailing behind his back.

[The Demon Commander Isles] (Ascended, Demon)

Level: 245

HP: 12,250,000,000

Defence: 37,330

Attack Power: 370,948 – 450,948

Skills:

[Sky Slicer]: Consecutively slashes the target, dealing 100% Basic Melee Attack. The monster will gain 100% additional damage for every passing second after that. Lasts for 10 seconds. Can be interrupted.

[Storm Blades]: Afflict all targets within the range of 300 meters with {Force Strike}, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets. Lasts for 30 seconds

[Demonic Domain]: Putrefies an area of 10X10 meters. All players who stay in the area for more than 3 seconds will be controlled by the boss until the battle ends or when the players are killed. The amount of damage dealt by the controlled players will all turn into Isles's HP.

[Star Fall]: Summons meteors and sends them down on an area of 10 X 10 meters, causing 450,000 Fire Damage to all targets within that area.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuses with any demon's soul and recovers 10%



HP. Meanwhile, the fused demon will die immediately.

[Despairing Point]: Imprisons one player. The player will not be able to move at all. However, the player will not receive any damage as well.

[No Escape]: Players will acquire this Negative Effect the moment they get 300 meters close to Isles. Players with this effect will die instantly regardless of HP remaining the moment the players get more than 300 meters away from the boss.

Note: Isles is the powerful commander of Demon Lord Kenzack. He's renowned for his bravery and his thirst for battle. He has no fear of death!

"Doesn't he has his own wings? Why can't he just fly on his own, then? Why does he want to ride on the back of a poor ugly bat?" Wei Yan Er had always had a different ways of seeing things as they were.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "He's just like someone I know. Well, she has two legs but she just wants to ride on her mount, though!"

"Humph! What a douchebag! I shall chop his head off for being such a douche!" Wei Yan Er began to act for justice.

The moment the Transformation Skills of the Phoenixes were over, Zhang Yang quickly activated his Inheritance Transformation. Two translucent wings appeared on his back. After flapping those radiating wings, he flew straight at Isles and said, "I'll delay the boss while you guys take out the remaining monsters as soon as you can!"

The HP bar of Isle was just too freaking long. One successful fusion with a demon's soul would heal Isles by over 1,200,000,000 HP! That would be insane!

"Roger!"

Currently, there were only 67 players remaining on the

battlefield. It was really pathetic somehow... Meanwhile, the NPC soldiers were wiped out entirely. As for the baron of the city, he was holed up in the deepest part of the city like a coward. In other words, there were only 67 players left to take on the boss now!

The Graveyard had been shifted to another place, momentarily. The Teleportation Circle of the city was currently on lockdown. Meanwhile, the system had forbidden anyone to enter or leave the Crimson Sky City as well. The players would not be able to get any sort of reinforcements, now. Meanwhile, the situation had only turned worst. Right after Isles's roar, the remaining monsters began to crowd around to him. Because of that, everyone had entered the attack range of the boss.

Although the boss would only use his {Sky Slicer} on the main Tank, the other Skills of the boss such as {Storm Blades}, {Demonic Domain} and {Star Fall} could potentially reach 300 meters. That being said, everyone left in the vicinity would need to take the aggressive attacks of the boss head-on!

Players who had not activated their Inheritance Transformations quickly activated theirs without even a single hesitation. Meanwhile, the players who had already activated their Inheritance Transformations and the duration of the transformation had ended, quickly took out their Tanks. After getting on board of the Tanks, they turned themselves into one single unit to tank against the insane attacks of the boss.

Because of the {Demonic Fusion}, everyone focused their attacks on the monsters first.

Well, the remaining 67 players were definitely the elites among the elites in the entire China Region. There was no longer anyone in China Region who would be more powerful than they are. Even though most of them were afflicted by the effect of the Level Gap Suppression, their Attack power was still powerful as f\*ck!

"Nothing shall stand in our way! Nothing!" Isles let out a

thunderous roar as he raised his axe high up. With powerful swing straight down onto Zhang Yang, the boss activated one of his deadly Skills immediately!

{Sky Slicer}!

That was an extremely power Skill that consecutively slashes the target at a very high pace! The first slash would only deal 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage. However, each consecutive slash would gain another additional 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage. By the end of it, the boss would be able to deal a damage 10 times stronger than the damage of his first slash. Isles's average Basic Attack ranged around 410,000 damage. So, if the {Sky Slicer} reaches its tenth strike, that one strike would have dealt over a basic damage of 4,100,000! That would be horrific for any player to take it head on!

Zhang Yang could not afford to let the boss succeed in doing so. Without a single delay, he activated his {Crash Magic}. The boss got interrupted right after he performed his first strike. Therefore, the onslaught of {Sky Slicer} was stopped right after that one hit. That one hit could only be treated as a normal attack from the boss.

"Hahaha! Do you really think that would save you pitiful humans from the inevitable?" Isles laughed madly. Then he took up his axe and began whirling his axe around.

{Storm Blades}!

Instantly, countless axe blades that were formed from light began to flash across the area of 300-meter radius! Each attack had caused an average damage of 410,000 to the players! Well, among the 67 players, only about 10 of them had managed to reach Level 215 at the moment. Due to the effect of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game, the players were forced to receive much more damage than they should be receiving in the first place. On average, some of them even received a minimum damage of 820,000, while some

of them received a maximum damage of 2,100,000!

Worse still, the boss did not just turn one round and stop there. He was continuously spinning with his sharp axe held out for over 30 seconds! Those 30 seconds was enough for the boss to deal a minimum damage of 12,000,000 and a maximum damage of 63,000,000 to each of the players!

So, how were the players holding up then?

The remaining Healers had busted their \*sses in healing everyone up. However, after that one wave of the boss's {Storm Blade}, everyone was hurt so badly that they only had less than 50% HP remaining, even though they were tanking the boss's attacks in their transformed mode! As for those who did not have Inheritance Transformations, they managed to survive the attack by staying on board the Tanks.

Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all. He immediately took out another Forbidden Scroll, tore it off and threw it at the boss.

[Forbidden Scroll: Stuttering Focus] (Consumable)

Use: Causes the target to lose focus. There is a 10% rate that the target will become dejected once every 3 seconds. During the dejected period, the target will not be able to move at all. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effect of this magic can last for 10 hours or until the target dies. Cannot be removed.

Required Level: 200

Well, Zhang Yang did not purposely hide the existence of this scroll from the others. The scroll could only affect one single unit. There was no way that the effect of the scroll could affect a large number of monsters.

A Forbidden Scroll will forever stay a Forbidden Scroll. The effects of those god damn scrolls would not be resisted by the bosses like how the effect of {Glare of the Death God} would be. Therefore, the effects of the scroll took a solid hold of the boss.

Instantly, a white skull formed right on top of the boss. That skull was the indication, saying that the boss had been afflicted by the effect of the scroll!

Theoretically speaking, 'Stuttering Focus' could basically cause the boss to lose his battle power once every 30 seconds. Averagely, the damage that the boss could deal would be reduced by one-third of its initial capability to deal damage. However, that was not how you calculate the amount of damage dealt of the boss. Because, if {Storm Blades} is interrupted during its period of activation, the Skill would be completely stopped.

Therefore, even though the boss's damage seemed to be weakened by one-third of its initial amount, but in truth, the reduction could reach over 40%!

Because of that, the players stood a solid chance now.

However, an increase in the chances of survival for a player does not mean that the player has become invincible. Even if the boss's AoE attacks had been reduced by 50%, the boss's {Storm Blade} could still deal approximately 6,000,000 damage to each player. The boss would use that Skill once every 60 seconds, dealing a DPS of 100,000 damage. Combining his attacks with the attacks of the monsters, the boss and the monsters could still bring a tremendous amount of stress to the Healers!

Zhang Yang threw another Forbidden Scroll out willingly, without thinking of the cost any further. Well, his main purpose was to take out the boss, after all. Upon doing so, he quickly said, "Everyone! Join my party now!"

Up till this point, everyone already knew that Zhang Yang had a very powerful {Vitality Aura}. Meanwhile, the other guilds also had players who had Aura Skills on them. For instance, Snow Seeker and the others also had their own Aura Skills. However, their Aura Skills had their ups and downs. Some of their Aura Skills were not fully enhanced yet.

Well, Aura Skills would only be effective on the user's party members. Here was the crucial moment. Everyone should unleash their full potential in order to claim victory over the war, now! After all, everyone in China Region would receive over a 10% reduction on their Experience Bars if they ever lose the Crimson Sky City! That would be awful for everyone!

Everyone would be sharing the same fate by the end of the war!

Zhang Yang passed the party member recruitment authority to Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang. The intention was to speed up the process of recruiting the players into his party. Not only could he share the Beneficial Effect of his {Vitality Aura} with the other players, Zhang Yang would also be able to unite all Healers and get all players to unleash their full potential.

After recruiting the players into his party, everyone gained quite a number of Beneficial Effects all of a sudden. It was really a surprise that there were so many Aura Skills among the remaining players who just joined into Zhang Yang's party. However, Aura Skills such as {Vitality Aura} and {Life Aura} were needed much more than the others, because these Aura Skills would increase the survivability of the players on the battlefield. They would be perfect for the players under such circumstance.

However, even though Zhang Yang had used over a couple of his Forbidden Scrolls and shared his {Vitality Aura}, the boss and the monsters were still able to cause catastrophic damage to the players. The number of players remaining on the battlefield continued to fall gradually. When the last monster was taken out, only 19 players survived!

Among the surviving players, 5 of them were from Lone Desert Smoke. They were Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream. 2 of them were from Crimson Rage. They were Snow Seeker and Mellow Venom. 2 of them were from the Imperial Sky. They were One Sword Stroke and Absolute Aeonic Dominator. Meanwhile, the other 2 were from the Eternal

Flames. They were Scholar Musou and Longrich.

The other remaining players were from the other top Tier guilds such as Rolling Rocks and Sunset Amber.

All of the remaining players shared two similarities. Firstly, they were all Level 215 and above. Secondly, they had at least a Class A Inheritance Transformation active.

Although the Tanks could really boost the survival chance of the players without Inheritance Transformation, the Tanks still had a limited Maximum HP. After the bombardment of the boss's AoE attacks, the Tanks were eventually destroyed one after another. Without the 'protection of the Tanks' those players had to die. Well, some of them had used their Inheritance Transformations earlier on. So, their Inheritance Transformation ended much earlier than Zhang Yang and the other top Tier players. Meanwhile, these players also had to suffer at the hands of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Even though they managed to get some power up from the Aura Skills, they were still too weak to survive the onslaught of the boss.

The boss still had 97% HP remaining. Meanwhile, there were only 19 players left to battle against the boss!

# Chapter 831: A Close Call

---

Well, it was most probably because Isles did not have {Demonic Build} to recover his HP. The players had not lost all hope yet. Well if the boss could recover 1% HP once in every 30 seconds, they players should just kneel down and give up on the boss battle.

The system must have predicted that only a few would be able to survive until the end of the tenth wave. So, they designed the boss to be less threatening than he should have been.

"Mortals, you have only one way out of this! Die before the great demon! Give up on your pointless struggles and become my slaves! Then, I'll let you live!" Isles let out a series of strange and bizarre laughs. Then, he waved his axe and summoned countless meteors upon the players. They were bombarded so violently that they were jumping around up and down in an attempt to dodge the impacts of the meteors.

"You stinky shameless ugly horse! I'll take you out!" Wei Yan Er turned herself into a shroud of dark mist and floated over to the back of Isles. Then, she began slashing the back of the boss with her axe, as aggressively as she could.

The players were practically about Level 215 and they also Class A Inheritance Transformations. However, because of the difference in the Tiers of their equipment, their power level and their healing capability greatly differed. Even though Lone Desert Smoke was greatly affected by the 'Zhang Yang's Incident' earlier on, and they had not been active for the past one month, however, they were able to take out the 4 Ascended Tier bosses in Ambross. By doing that, they were able to acquire quite a number of powerful equipment to power themselves up. Each of them was almost done in collecting a full set of Ascended Tier equipment by now!

More importantly, each of Zhang Yang's gang had a piece of Celestial Tier equipment on them! One piece of Celestial Tier



equipment could match the power of two pieces of Ascended Tier equipment combined! That was not a joke!

Therefore, in the aspect of dealing damage to the boss, the four DPS players from Lone Desert Smoke were considered the best among all players! In terms of healing, others could only admire the healing capacity of Han Ying Xue with their jaws dropping.

If Isles only had one Skill - {Storm Blade} on him, with the support of {Life Aura}, the 3 Healers with Inheritance Transformations activated should be able to maintain the HP bars of all remaining players! Unfortunately, {Storm Blade} was not the only Skill that Isles had.

{Demonic Domain} and {Star Fall} of the boss were forcing the players to run around like crazy chickens. Well, especially the {Demonic Domain}, the players would become the underlings of the boss if they ever get careless and set foot in the effective area of that Skill! Because of that, the players had to move around, constantly. Because of that, the Healers could not heal the others at their full capacity.

However, the worst part would still be the boss's {Despairing Point}!

Although the boss was chained down by the aggro system of the game, only the boss's normal attacks and {Sky Slicer} would be landing on Zhang Yang's body. However, the boss's {Despairing Point} was specially designed to take care of the Healers! Even though that Skill would not do any harm to the players, 60 seconds of 'imprisonment' was annoying as f\*ck!

The worst part about this Skill was that the Skill could imprison players for over 60 seconds. However, the Skill only had a cooldown of 30 seconds. In simpler words, there would always be two Healers not being able to heal as they should.

Well, that could spell the end of the battle for the players!

The party had no way of preventing their numbers from falling again!

18! 17! 16!

The good news out of it was that the boss had no Skill that would allow him to recover his HP. Under the insanely powerful bombardment of the party, the boss's HP was reducing significantly as well.

Now was the time for everyone to deal as much damage as they could, as if their lives were depending on it. As a matter of fact, their lives were indeed depending on that! Well, fortune favors the bold, after all!

As the most powerful Healer among the entire party, Han Ying Xue had become the primary target of the boss's 'target to imprison'. Because of that, her Healing Efficiency had dropped to third in place. After that, only did the boss switch his target to the other two Healers.

In other words, the boss would only aim the Healer with the highest Healing Efficiency. No matter how good the performance of the first two Healers turn out to be, they would be affected by the boss and become the third in place, making either one of the two Healers be as bad as the performance of the Healer in third place.

Fortunately, the Healers that survived up to this point were not weak at all. Only Han Ying Xue, who had a Class S Inheritance could dominate all other Healers in terms of Healing. The standard of the other two Healers was almost similar. Because of that, the party was able to function like it should be doing so in the first place.

90%, 80%, 70%! On the other hand, the HP bar of the boss continued to drop rapidly.

"How dare you go against the will of the demons!? I shall crush

you all into pieces!" Isles would shout the same phrase whenever he is about to use his Ultimate Skill. As expected, after hearing the boss shouting that phrase, he would begin to whirl his weapon in circle in high speed, slicing the players with all those flashing shadows of his blades!

Currently, Zhang Yang no longer had his Inheritance Transformation activated. Furthermore, the Phoenix pet had died as well. So Zhang Yang only had Felice who had transformed herself into her Dragonhawk Form to aid him in battle. Unfortunately, the current Felice only had a full set of Holy Tier equipment on her. She could only deal a DPS of approximately 250,000 damage. Well, her Attack power was still too weak to be compared to Zhang Yang's.

However, a DPS of approximately 250,000 damage was not considered low either. Felice could still deal over 1,800,000,000 damage to the boss within her 2-hour Transformation period. That would be almost 10% HP of the boss!

14! 11! 10!

Scholar Musou made a grave mistake. He did not manage to get out of the {Demonic Domain}'s effect in time. Instantly, he got controlled by the boss! After that, he began to attack one of the Healers as fiercely as he could!

Initially, the party was already short on Healers to support them. Their HP bars were going up and down around 50%. With Scholar Musou's sudden 'Treachery', the party was hit so hard that they could not recover from the impact immediately. The Healer was instantly killed by Scholar Musou! Well, sh\*t happens. By the time everyone reacted and killed Scholar Musou, there were only 8 players left on the party.

The world had just turned into a f\*cking sh\*tstorm!

Only two Healers remained. One was being 'imprisoned' by the boss at the moment, leaving only one Healer to heal the entire

party! Currently, the party had basically lost their support from the Healers!

However, the players managed to realize that the boss had left a way for the players to survive. When there are only two Healers left on the battlefield, the boss's {Despairing Point} would only affect one of them, giving the other Healer an opportunity to heal the party.

Well... that wouldn't make much difference as well!

If Han Ying Xue could focus on healing the party without getting interrupted by the boss's {Despairing Point}, she could just abandon healing some players and focus on healing only Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and herself. She should be able to make sure the four of them stay alive for quite some time. However, the {Despairing Point} would only be used on the Healer with the highest Healing Efficiency on the battlefield! By then, she would become the one who gets 'imprisoned' by the boss, instead of the other Healer.

Zhang Yang began to feel helpless. So he had no choice, but to order Felice to turn herself into the 'Tree of Life'.

All of Felice's Transformations would share the same Global Shared Cooldown. So once she exits her Dragonhawk Form, she would be abandoning her Transformation. By doing so, he could not be able to turn herself into the strongest form of the 'Tree of Life.'. Well, it was an unfortunate thing though. It would mean something, even if she could heal them a little!

Because the boss's {Despairing Point} only works on the players. Even if Felice joins in to heal, the boss's {Despairing Point} would remain the same.

One hour later, the players were barely hanging on. The other Healer had announced that she was out of MP. Meanwhile, the boss's HP had dropped to 20%!

The most difficult time of the boss battle had begun!

"Puny living things, I have no time to expel you one by one! Just die together!" Isles let out a battle cry that was filled with rage. He began whirl in circles like a tornado. After spinning for two rounds, the effect of the 'Stuttering Focus' kicked in and forcefully stopped the boss from moving for 10 seconds! However, 10 seconds later, he began to spin with his axe again. {Storm Blade}!

The boss's Ultimate Skill no longer... had a cooldown now!

"Felice! Just heal you and me! No one else!" Zhang Yang threw his {Surrogacy} onto Sun Xin Yu. As for Han Ying Xue, she was very much safe, thanks to the boss's {Despairing Point}.

"Roger, big brother!" Felice nodded.

Zhang Yang unleashed everything he had on him! {God of War Battle Axe}. {God of War Shield}, {Rock Solid}, {Shield Wall}! Using all those Skills, he managed to maximize his survival throughout the battle. At the same time, he also activated his {Tribulation} to deflect the boss's attacks back at the boss!

"Argh! I'm about to die! Wu wu wu! Cousin sis! Save me!" Wei yan Er had activated all her life-saving Skills once. However, no one in the vicinity was capable of healing her back up. It did not take long before she was chopped into slices by the boss's {Storm Blade}!

Daffodil Daydream, killed in action!

Snow Seeker, killed in action!

Sun Xin Yu, killed in action!

...

Currently, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were the only two left alive on the battlefield.

However, it would make no difference at all even if Han Ying Xue is killed. Well, she had been suffering the {Despairing Point} all the

time. The only time where she could contribute to the battle is during that one moment when she gets free. She could only throw a {Regeneration} on Zhang Yang before she gets 'imprisoned' again.

However, Zhang Yang's Defence was not weak at all!

Firstly, his Defence upon activating his Inheritance Transformation would reach up to 178,100. With the support from his {God of War Shield} he could again another 20% Passive Damage Immunity and 35,956 Damage Absorption. Each attack from the boss could only deal approximately 110,000 damage.

Furthermore, he also had his {God of War Restoration} bestow him a 10-second invincibility effect. Well, his {Rock Solid} had also provided quite a decent increase to both his Defence and Damage Immunity as well. Not to mention, he also had {Shield Wall} and {Block} that could be utilized in the boss battle. From all of the above, Zhang Yang's chances of survival in the boss battle would be terrifyingly high. He was actually able to stay alive by just relying on Han Ying Xue's {Restoration} and Felice's healing.

Well, Zhang Yang still had {Radiance of the God of War}. He could recover over 200,000,000 HP in one brief instant by activating that Skill!

Even though he would survive without much of a problem at the moment, Felice, on the other hand, was barely staying alive! The little lady was not as tough as Zhang Yang, after all. Each of the attacks from the boss's {Storm Blade} could deal up to approximately 420,000 damage. Without her Transformation form to support her, she only had approximately 1,660,000 HP. That would make the situation much more difficult for her. Her margin of error was minimal. Although Han Ying Xue would still be able to throw her {Restoration} at her, that would not really do much for her. In about three to four minutes, Felice's HP bar had hit the bottom. Zhang Yang had no choice, but to send her back into her slot.

"The boss could only deal about 120,000 damage to me in each second. Even without Witchy Snow's healing, I can still use my {Radiance of God of War}. With an additional 200,000,000 HP to spare, I should be able to battle the boss for another 27 minutes. In other words, I will still have a lot of time to deal damage to the boss!"

Zhang Yang was making the calculations quietly in his heart, "The boss only has 18% HP, 2,200,000,000 HP... My DPS is about 1,100,000 damage... So I'll only need about... hmmm... 33 minutes to empty out the boss's HP bar."

"There's a 6 minute window gap. But as long as I can gulp down my Healing Potions as much as I can and as long as witchy snow can keep healing me with her {Restoration} whenever she can, I can definitely last for 30 minutes! By then, I can just use my second {Radiance of God of War} to recover another 200,000,000 HP!"

"So, I'll surely be able to win this battle!"

Zhang Yang let out an insane roar and activated his {Indiscrimination}. There goes the explosive boost of his damage output!

{Killing Cleave}! {God of War Devastation}! {God of War Axe}! {Frost Strike}! {Destructive Smash} {Force Strike}!

With the support of his {Indiscrimination}, his {Killing Cleave} managed to deal over tens of millions of damage to the boss! Meanwhile, Skills that could deal 3 times his initial damage, such as {God of War Devastation} could now deal over 7,000,000 damage. As for his Skills that dealt double of his initial damage output such as {Horizontal Strike}, they could now reach up to 5,000,000 damage! In merely 10 seconds, Zhang Yang had dealt over 50,000,000 damage to the boss!

Well, that was a solid 5,000,000 DPS! Unfortunately, good things never last long!

10 minutes!

20 minutes!

30 minutes!

As expected, Zhang Yang was able to tank through the 30 minutes with the aid of Han Ying Xue's healing and some Healing Potions. Well, he still had about 70,000 HP left!

{Radiance of the God of War}!

‘+2000000000!’

A terrifying, green numerical value popped right on top of Zhang Yang's head! Then, Zhang Yang was at his full HP again! Meanwhile, the boss only had 1.7% HP left!

Finally! Zhang Yang is about to kill the boss!



# Chapter 832: Sky Slicer

---

With 200,000,000 HP left on him, Zhang Yang began to engage Isles, who still had 200,000,000 HP remaining. However, the Attack power of both sides was not on the same notch after all. It did not take much before Zhang Yang destroyed the boss, entirely!

"Rawgh ---" Isles let out a miserable scream and collapsed to the ground. Numerous loots were dropped across the ground.

‘Ding! The Demonic Commander Isles has been eliminated!’

‘Ding! You’ve acquired 3 additional Skill Points!’

‘Server Announcement: Congratulations to China Region for successfully fending off the Demonic Invasion!’

"Yeah! We’re rich!" Naturally, Han Ying Xue was freed from the ‘prison’ the moment the boss died. In the face of the glittering pile of loots across the ground, Han Ying Xue’s eyes began to glitter as well! Well, here she goes again... she had just entered her money-grubbing mode again.

"Stop dreaming and pick up the loot now!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud and quickly started picking up the loots from group.

The battle was over. All of the Teleportation Circles had resumed their regular functionality. Meanwhile, the dead body of the boss was right in the middle of the main city. It would only take approximately 3 to 5 minutes for the players to reach all the way back to the boss’s dead body. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had no time at all to take a closer look at the loot! So, it would be wise for them to pick all the loot up as quickly as they can.

Of course, when the two of them picked up the loots from the ground, the others had arrived at the scene, one after another. However, they arrived only after Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already swept the entire ground clean! So, those players could only sigh at the boss’s dead body.

--- Main City forbids any form of PvP match!

"Zhang Yang! You're not the only one who contributed in taking down the boss! Share the loots! We're entitled to them as well!" Zhong Xiu Hua suddenly cried like a little b\*tch.

"That's right, we're entitled to the loots as well!"

"Without us, you wouldn't have had any chance against the boss at all!"

The people of Eternal Flame began to whine like a whole bunch of little b\*tches. Well, no one could blame them for behaving that way. The Ascended Tier equipment was currently extremely precious. It was not like anyone could just obtain the Ascended Tier equipment by purchasing it with money. Anyone who has fought Angus before would know better. The power level of the Celestial Tier boss can be freakishly powerful at times! Without a full set of Ascended Tier equipment, none of the players would be able to challenge a Celestial Tier boss!

Furthermore, Isles would not only drop Ascended Tier equipment. He should have dropped other powerful items such as Skill Books and Normal Demonic Pearls as well!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't you think that you're acting like a bunch of clowns now? Your acting sucks! So, stop embarrassing yourselves at once! If you think it's not embarrassing enough, I don't mind teaching you some lessons on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre'!"

"Zhang Yang! You better keep your head down! Lone Desert Smoke can't possibly take on all the players in the entire China Region! This world belongs to everyone! Not just your sh\*tty Lone Desert Smoke!" Zhong Xiu Hua was trying to provoke the rage of the other players towards Zhang Yang. "Without the efforts of the other players, your Lone Desert Smoke would not have even survived the first wave of the invasion! Pui!"

"Boo hoo, cry me a river! Nobody's efforts have gone to waste! Firstly, everyone was fighting for the name and dignity of entire China. Secondly, everyone was fighting to prevent the 10% Experience Points reduction on everyone in China Region! So don't consider yourself a saint or whatever! You're not! You don't even speak for everyone in China Region! Pui!" Zhang Yang began to feel impatient, as he looked at Zhong Xiu Hua with disdain.

"Zhang Yang ---"

"Stop whining here! Shut the f\*ck up! If you want to prove something, let's settle it on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre'. Or else, just get lost! Pui!" Zhang Yang revealed a very impatient expression on his face.

Zhong Xiu Hua was so angry that his face turned pale. However, he didn't have the guts to face Zhang Yang on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre' as well. If he ever gets killed in that arena, he would lose his levels! Now that it has become ridiculously difficult to grind for even one level, Zhong Xiu Hua would not be daring enough to accept that challenge.

"Hahaha!" Every other player in the vicinity was laughing and cheering for Zhang Yang. Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was currently infamous for being 'the prince with sexual-transmitted-disease'. No one in the server did not know that case by now.

After arriving at Holy City together with his gang, Zhang Yang began to distribute the loots among themselves.

Isles was considered the final boss of the entire Demonic Invasion. So, he had dropped quite a number of powerful items and equipment upon his death. Other than the 15 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment, there were also 28 pieces of Holy Tier equipment among the loots! There were also many other Skill Books, Skill Point Crystals, Aura Stones, Level 8 Gemstones and Normal Demonix Pearls!

Other than the Accessory piece on him, Zhang Yang had already

collected a full set of Ascended Tier equipment now. Initially, he no longer had much need in acquiring any equipment that the boss drops. However, after distributing the loot for one round, he realized that there was a two-handed sword left without an owner.

Wei Yan Er and Galileo had already gotten weapons of Ascended Tier from defeating Angus. Meanwhile, the others were not capable of equipping a two-handed weapon. So, Zhang Yang had no choice but to take the two-handed weapon and shove it into his inventory.

Well, it was not a bad thing either. Zhang Yang could use that weapon to enhance his current one. The axe that he was currently wielding was a Level 200 masterpiece!

After distributing the loot, it was time to distribute the remaining items, the Skill Point Crystals. Because Zhang Yang just recently learned {Rock Solid}, he would need more Skill Points in order to upgrade that Skill. So, he took one. Including the +3 Skill Points that he has acquired from killing Isles and this Skill Point that he just acquired, he could level his Skill up to level 8 now. After activating the Skill, he now gained 120% additional Defence and 24% Passive Damage Immunity.

Furthermore, Isles had also dropped two Forbidden Scrolls!

Both of the Forbidden Scrolls were basically AoE types. One was named 'Absolute Zero,' while the other was named 'Doomsday's Natural Disaster'. Both had the same effects that reduced 10% HP from all targets in every second for over 30 seconds. The effect would cover an area of a 5-kilometer radius. The minimum damage the effect could cause to each target would be 150,000 damage per second, while the maximum damage would be 300,000 damage. Players would only be able to use the scrolls upon reaching Level 200.

Well, that two scrolls should be considered as compensations for using the 'Eclipse' and the 'Reaper's Descent' then. However,

Zhang Yang still lost a 'Stuttering Focus'. Well, it was still worth using the 'Stuttering Focus' to exchange for the loots though. Look at Snow Seeker. She had used out one Forbidden Scroll as well. However, she did not get anything in return by the end of the battle.

Speaking of which, the other players actually did get something in return. Because they had won the battle against the demonic forces, they were spared the penalty of 10% Experience Points Reduction. The players from the entire China Region had actually gained something from claiming victory over the Demonic Invasion as well.

As for the Skill Books, Zhang Yang managed to win one powerful Skill for himself from rolling, the 'Sky Slicer'!

[Sky Slicer]: Consecutively slashes the target, dealing 100% Basic Melee Attack. You will gain 100% additional damage for every second onwards. Lasts for 10 seconds. During this period of time, you cannot use other Skills, or else the {Sky Slicer} will be automatically interrupted.

Require: Melee Weapon.

Consume: 100 Rage Points.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.

The Skill was basically the same as the boss' own {Sky Slicer}. The Skill will be easily interrupted if used on a player. It could only serve as a normal attack, in that case. However, if this Skill is used without having any interruptions in-between, the target would be fatally wounded!

The best targets for players who could use this Skill would be the monsters. Well, 90% of the monsters would not have any Status Restriction Skills. Even if some of them did, the user could just waste away the monsters' Status Restriction Skills before using {Sky Slicer}!

Even though 5-minute cooldown was a bit long, the impact and damage that the Skill could bring would make it worthwhile.

Last but not least, the boss had also dropped 7 [Normal Demonic Pearls]. Each of the pearls could increase the success rate of fusing equipment by 40%!

After distributing everything among themselves, Zhang Yang dissolved the party and everyone went off to mind their own business for the moment. Well, the second Demonic Invasion would hit the players again, one month from now. So everyone must make good use of the remaining one month to grind and power themselves up. Reaching Level 215 would be the top priority for everyone in the server now! Truth be told, if most of the players have reached Level 215 during the Demonic Invasion event, there would still be approximately 10,000 to 20,000 players remaining when the final boss Isles reveals himself by the end of the tenth wave. The battle would not be as fierce and intense!

Zhang Yang selected the newly acquired weapon [Frost Destroyer's Blade] in the inventory. He was getting ready to fuse the weapon with his axe, now.

[Frost Destroyer's Blade] (Ascended, Two-Handed)

Attack: 47,620 – 67,620

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 15,163

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Damage by 50%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 15%.

Equip: Upon landing a hit on your target, there is a rate that you can deal 50% Melee Attack of Frost Damage to your target as well.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

After putting the [Frost Destroyer's Blade] and the axe that he was currently using into the Tesseract, Zhang Yang immediately received a system notification.

‘Ding! You’re about to fuse [Frost Destroyer's Blade] and [Agos, The Destroyer’s Blade]. The rate of success for fusing a Sword Type and an Axe Type weapon is lower. There’s an 80% success rate to acquire a Sword Type weapon upon completion. There’s a 60% success rate to acquire an Axe Type weapon upon completion. You can select whether to fuse for a Sword Type weapon or an Axe Type weapon. Do you wish to proceed?’

Hmm... the success rate for fusing two weapons of different Types would be much lower. However, players could choose the Weapon Type desired. That’s actually very convenient!

Zhang Yang inserted one [Normal Demonic Pearl,] and he received another system notification in an instance.

‘You’ve inserted [Normal Demonic Pearl] X 1. The success rate for both fusion types will be 100% and 100%. Do you wish to proceed?’

‘You’ve chosen to fuse for the Axe-Type weapon, proceed!’

‘Fusion in progress!’

...

‘Ding! You’ve succeeded in acquiring a new equipment: Frost Destroyer's Blade (Upgrade +1)!’

[Frost Destroyer's Blade (Upgrade +1)] (Ascended, Two-Handed)

Attack: 53,382 – 73,382

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 16,679

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Damage by 50%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 15%.

Equip: Upon landing a hit on your target, there is a rate that you can deal 50% Melee Attack of Frost Damage to your target as well.

Equip: Upon hitting the target with normal attacks, there is a rate that you can deal a damage 8 times stronger than your initial attack.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Unfortunately, if there were any other Ascended Tier axes to spare, Zhang Yang could have used some [Demonic Pearls] to ensure a 100% successful rate in enhancing his axe up to a +4 upgrade. However, the rate of acquiring another 3 two-handed Ascended Tier axes would be much lower than the rate of acquiring one Celestial Tier axe!

Instead of working on that, it would be wiser for Zhang Yang to focus on getting Celestial Tier equipment! Well, there would be another 6 Demonic Invasions in the upcoming days. Players who manage to recover the main cities would become eligible to challenge the Demon Lord Kenzack, a Celestial Tier boss! If he is lucky, he might even get a chance to acquire a Celestial Tier weapon upon killing Kenzack!

...

After the first Demonic Invasion, other than China Region, the main cities of the other 6 Main Regions were conquered by the Demonic Forces!

Well, it wasn't really a surprise, though. After all, the players had no prior information about the demonic forces and how powerful they were. If Zhang Yang did not use his 'Gate of Hell', the China Region could not have survived the ninth wave of the Demonic Invasion. Even if they could survive the ninth wave, they would be



wiped out entirely by the tenth wave of the invasion forces.

Of course, the players would be able to improve themselves to another level during the coming month. If the levels of the monsters do not change, the number of players affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game would be reduced a lot. So, if they could hold on until the tenth wave, they would have high hopes of winning by the end of the Demonic Invasion!

# Chapter 833: Staying In The Lead

---

Among the eight main Regions in the entire server, China Region was the only one who survived the onslaught of the Demonic forces during the Demonic Invasion event. So, it was natural that the players from China Region were proud and happy at the same time. They managed to convince themselves that their efforts did not go to waste because of that.

However, they managed to survive the last two waves, merely because Zhang Yang had summoned his legion of demons with his 'Gate of Hell'. That would be the irreplaceable factor that led China Region to their victory over the demonic forces! Even though it was true that the Lone Desert Smoke would not have made it to the last wave all by themselves, the other players could not deny Zhang Yang's efforts and contributions on that matter.

That had also sent many of the players sighing in shame. If any other of them could get a hold of the 'Gate of Hell', they could have contributed a lot at fending the Demonic Invasion as well. They could have helped to keep many more players alive until the final boss revealed himself!

Now that the China Region did not receive the penalty of Experience Point Reduction, the players from China Region had basically gained a significant upper hand in term of strength. Well, while the others were set back by the penalty, the players from China Region did not lose anything. They could also focus on grinding to get stronger without any hindrance. The negative effect would stay until the players manage to complete all 7 Demonic Invasion Events before the NPC armies strike back at the demonic forces. Only then, would the players be able to take back their lands and cities, one after another, with the help of the NPC army. Well, each successful retaking of a city would recover 10% of the players' rate of Experience Points.

Like the Monster Attack Event, the NPC army would act once

every month. If the seven Main Cities fall tragically by the end of the event, players would need to wait for 7 months before the speed of them earning Experience Points recover its initial speed.

Of course, it did not mean that players cannot launch Strike Back conquests to take back their main cities during that period of time.

However, players could still heal their HP and MP and resurrect players when they were defending their main cities in between every wave. The players even got some help from the NPCs. If they still couldn't fend off against the Demonic Invasions, it would be insane to even think about striking back at the demonic forces!

Obviously, the only way to reclaim the lost cities and lands would be to borrow aid from the NPCs. Well, the system had stated clearly that the players would only be eligible to challenge the Celestial Tier boss after all Main Cities of all Main Regions are reclaimed. Even though the Celestial Tier boss Kenzack was obviously placed there, the players would have to follow the system's ruling.

However, players were still too weak to get into Level 240 – 270 maps at the current stage of the game. Obviously, the system had designed it to prevent players from attempting to bring down the boss.

Well, maybe when all of the Main Cities are reclaimed, the NPCs will open up a portal and let the players through into the lair of Kenzack. By then, the players should be able to challenge the Celestial Tier boss. Or, the system could just drag Kenzack out of his hiding lair into the public and kick everyone's \*ss. Well, how the events would unfold totally depended on the game company. Their idea could just change at the next moment.

Although 30 days was not a short period, it was merely 10 days in reality. That amount of time would be sufficient for the players to grind 1 level, at least. Well, do not estimate the difference of 1 level. That could mean most of the Level 214 players have leveled up to

Level 215 by now. So, they shouldn't be concerned about the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game when they survive until the last wave of the invasion, where the bosses reveal themselves on the battlefield!

Because the players in China Region had acquired the advantage of earning 10% additional Experience Point, the number of China players reaching Level 215 was obviously higher than the number of players reaching Level 215 in other Regions. At the same time, the number of Level 210 players and Level 205 players had increased substantially...

Because of that, there would be much lesser players getting restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game.

Little by little, the advantages that the players could gain over each wave will be brought over to the last wave, to create an impressive effect in order for the players to defeat the last wave of the demons!

Each wave of the Demonic Invasion would send out an Ascended Tier boss. Therefore, there was no sign of any other Ascended Tier boss across the maps. Therefore, the only way for the players to acquire better equipment to improve themselves was to head down to the Elemental Nest.

30 days had passed without much notice. This time, all eight Regions were ready for the second Demonic Invasion Event.

The invasion was similar to the first Demonic Invasion Event. There were a total of 10 waves of monsters. The number of monsters and the type of the monsters in each wave was exactly the same as the first event. Even the sequence of monsters revealing themselves to the players was the same! The only difference was that the names of the monsters in the third wave and the name of the final boss in the final wave had some changes. Well, their levels, Skills and HP were exactly the same compared to the first invasion event as well.

Although the China Region was the only Region that had managed to last until the end, however, if they hadn't used 10 Forbidden Scrolls while they were fending off the tenth wave of the invasion, they would have been wiped out and their efforts would have been for nothing. Meanwhile, it wouldn't be easy at all to acquire one Forbidden Scroll. Even Lone Desert Smoke only managed to earn back two Forbidden Scrolls from Isles. The other guilds had failed to 'restock' their Forbidden Scrolls.

Therefore, even though they were very familiar with the battles ahead of them, they still struggled through hell in the tenth wave! Zhang Yang did not hold back anything in that battle. He threw out both of the Forbidden Scrolls 'Absolute Zero' and 'Doomsday's Natural Disaster' without any hesitation. Furthermore, there were at least 10,000 players who managed to reach Level 215 and over, this time. They were able to destroy the monsters in the tenth wave with the aid of Zhang Yang's two Forbidden Scrolls.

However, they were sent even closer to death this time. When the final boss Marank arrived, only Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu remained on the battlefield!

"Can we still take the boss down?" Han Ying Xue was not confident at all.

Well, there were still 67 remaining when they began engaging the final boss previously. Although the boss was basically tortured to death by Zhang Yang alone, Zhang Yang did use a Forbidden Scroll 'Stuttering Focus' to weaken the boss's Attack by one third. So, how would they be able to take down the boss this time?

"No worry! Snow Seeker has given me a Forbidden Scroll that focuses on weakening one target!" Zhang Yang activated his God of War Transformation and charged towards the boss. At the same time, he tore off the Forbidden Scroll and threw it onto the boss.

[Forbidden Scroll: Doomed Entanglement] (Consumable)

Use: Curses the target with a doomed fate. The target will have a

50% chance to deal half of the initial damage. The target will have 50% to receive double damage when hit. Lasts for 10 hours.

Required Level: 200

Even though this scroll could not weaken the boss as much as the previous one, the scroll could still add a 50% rate to increase the players' Attack power by an additional 100%! That could make Zhang Yang and the two ladies much stronger! Because the battle was ended in a brief moment, everyone knew that the boss had been weakened by the system.

"Tsk... she's really... good to you!" Han Ying Xue began to get jealous about it. Then she narrowed her eyes while staring at Zhang Yang with blazing jealousy.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly. Well, as long as he just leaves her alone for now, nothing would happen. Or else, if that witch starts to quarrel with him, he would be having a hell of a ride for the day. She would talk about Snow Seeker, then change the subject over to Luo Yu Rou, then change the subject over to Chen Xue Yao. The sh\*t will go on until Zhang Yang admits he's wrong, even though he did nothing wrong.

Felice transformed into her 'Tree of Life' form immediately.

This time, Zhang Yang had come prepared. He would not let Felice repeat the same mistakes again.

Well, Han Ying Xue was 'disabled,' as expected. She was 'imprisoned' for most of the time, during the entire boss battle. However, Felice was able to perform at her best this time. Combined with the {Restoration} that Han Ying Xue would throw at him once in a while, Felice managed to maintain the HP bars of Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu.

Fortunately, Han Ying Xue was safe and sound in the 'imprisonment'. So, she did not even lose one bit of HP. Zhang Yang could just throw his {Surrogacy} onto Sun Xin Yu so that she

could also have a taste of having the world strongest Defence power!

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

‘-4,037,091!’ ‘-8,074,182!’ ‘-24,222,546!’ ... ‘-40,370,910!’

Well, it seemed that the designers of the game had never thought it possible that a player would acquire the two Skills that Zhang Yang had just activated at the same time! The {Charge Up Strike} could ensure the attacks of the next Skill to be 100% Critical Hits! Although {Sky Slicer} could only slice out 10 attacks thoroughly, the 10 attacks were considered as ‘one Skill’. So naturally, each of the 10 hits would become Critical Hits! Furthermore, each upcoming hit would gain 50% additional attack!

The {Charge Up Strike} had really boosted Zhang Yang’s damage tremendously! Zhang Yang had just dealt approximately 330,000,000 damage in merely 10 seconds! That’s a total of 33,000,000 DPS! That had exceeded his initial DPS of 1,300,000 damage by many notches! Of course, such an explosive series of attacks would only happen once in every 5 minutes. Other than that, it was also because Zhang Yang had used the ‘Doomed Entanglement’ which allowed him to have 50% rate to trigger double damage. So normally speaking, he should initially deal approximately 220,000,000 damage only.

Well, a 330,000,000 damage was not a damage amount that a boss could take on. That amount of damage had taken out 3% of the boss’s HP! It was savage!

Not only was the boss heavily wounded, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were stunned to see that! Well, the Skill could only be so powerful when Zhang Yang is the one using it!

The boss was very unfortunate, though. Even though the boss also had the same Skill, he was interrupted by Zhang Yang after he managed to strike once with the Skill. The difference was just huge! If the target of Zhang Yang was a player, the player would

just cry in misery and die!

Even though there were only two players left on the battlefield to deal damage to the boss, but both players were players with Class S Inheritance. Their damage outputs were terrifyingly high! Each of their DPS had exceeded 1,000,000 damage now! Theoretically, they would only need approximately 80 minutes to take out the boss! Furthermore, Zhang Yang could deal a series of explosive attacks once every 5 minutes! That had really reduced the time needed to slay the boss!

About one hour later, the boss let out a pathetic roar and died! Well, the boss was f\*cked up hard by Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu with ease!

Unfortunately, the boss did not drop the Skill Book {Sky Slicer} this time around. Wei Yan Er was extremely disappointed because of that. She pouted and sulked at the sidelines.

Well, the China Region managed to keep their Main City this time as well. The players had received 20% additional Experience Points whenever they were earning EXP. Because of that, they gained an absolute advantage over the other Regions when it comes to grinding.

Another 30 days had passed. The third Demonic Invasion had arrived.

After experiencing the invasion for over two times, the players have become very familiar with the layout and design of the demonic forces' waves. Furthermore, the number of high-level players throughout the entire server had increased substantially as well. This time, finally, China was not the only Region that succeeded in keeping their Main City. The Europe Region, India Region, and North-America Region had also succeeded in fending off the demonic forces from taking over their Main Cities!

However, even though that was the case, the China Region still had the advantage of earning 20% additional Experience Points.



That would not change for now. Because of that, the players from China Region continued to triumph in regard to leveling and staying ahead of the game.

As the number of players retained by the end of the tenth wave increased, Zhang Yang and his gang no longer needed to take on the boss all by themselves. Well, they could no longer take all the loots to themselves because of that. However, when it comes to snatching items and equipment, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were experts among experts in such regard! They were basically 'trained' to be fast in snatching because of their 'money-grubbing' attitude. By the end of it, Lone Desert Smoke still got the largest portion of the loots.

Well, there was already a total of 19 [Normal Demonic Pearl] among the loots! Those pearls were enough to ensure a 100% success rate in enhancing an equipment of a top Tier player to +4 enhancement!

The fourth Demonic Invasion, the fifth Demonic Invasion... the seventh Demonic Invasion!

All Regions had managed to completely fend off the Demonic Forces in the fifth time Demonic Invasion. Therefore, the Japan-Korea Region had only lost over 4 main cities, even though they were hit the hardest. However, they would need at least 120 days of in-game time to completely reclaim their main cities, get back their initial efficiency of grinding and reach the required level to challenge The Demon Lord Kenzack!

--- Provided that the NPCs successfully reclaim the main cities every time they strike back!

Because the China Region had not lost a single main city throughout the 7 times of Demonic Invasion, they managed to acquire the opportunity of being the first in the entire server to ever challenge the Demon Lord Kenzack. However, Zhang Yang did not sign into the game for a few days straight. That was

because Luo Yu Rou was about to give birth to his first child!

# Chapter 834: Demon Lord Kenzack

---

The Unfilial may multiply, but they can never prosper!

That is a main teaching of China. It is also one of the most important teachings that are practically written in every living being.

Zhang Yang had never been able to sleep properly. In fact, he was practically disturbed by every audible grunt coming out from Luo Yu Rou's mouth. He was like a monkey out of a box. Of the times that he had not been logging in to the game, he had used that time of his life to sit beside Luo Yu Rou, caressing her womb and staring at it.

It was then Luo Yu Rou felt like she had made a good decision to keep the baby with a man such as Zhang Yang. The fatherhood he had displayed before the baby was still in her belly had truly moved her.

Despite the doctors' advise, Luo Yu Rou had opted for natural delivery instead of using any sort of drug use or surgical means. After four hours of excruciating pain, Luo Yu Rou endured each painful contraction of her womb and managed to deliver the baby, safe and sound.

Zhang Yang, who was jumping about wildly like a tiger in rage, outside the waiting room could not handle his rage. Every single time he heard Luo Yu Rou crying in pain, he could storm towards the delivery room, only to be stopped by more than 10 security guards. Even they were already on the verge of letting him go due to his unnatural strength. How could Zhang Yang be calm when his wife was practically giving birth to his child!

After Luo Yu Rou's voice died down suddenly, followed by the loud cry of a newborn child, Zhang Yang calmed down as if someone had shot him with an elephant's tranquilizer. Zhang Yang walked like a zombie towards the delivery room when the

guards were finally called off. A female nurse walked towards Zhang Yang with a baby, wrapped in white towel.

"Congratulations. It's a baby girl."

Zhang Yang took the baby girl into his arms and said to the nurse with tears flowing down. "No. She's a princess. She's my princess."

Despite everything he owned, all the wealth, and all the fame, he felt remorseful that he could not provide much more for his little princess. The little life that was less than a kilogram lay in Zhang Yang's arms, squeezing his hand as she sucked Zhang Yang's thumb. At that moment, even if Liu Wei was standing in front of him, Zhang Yang would have felt that all the hatred inside of him was washed away. He felt peace, after a long time. The serenity in the air lasted only for a jiffy when the little girl barged into the waiting room and cried.

"Lemme see her! Lemme see my niece!"

Zhang Yang could not muster any anger in him and smiled. He kneeled down and passed the fragile little life into the little girl's arms. Wei Yan Er took the little babe and rocked her slowly in her skinny arms. Like magic, the little girl was calmed down almost immediately. She poked her fair little fingers on the baby's soft cheeks and laughed.

"Looks like everything is fine," said Han Ying Xue. When she came into the hospital, she was feeling a little annoyed. The fact that someone else had given birth to Zhang Yang's baby and she could not be the one. However, when Han Ying Xue took the baby into her arms, she too, felt all the negative emotions in her beginning to melt away. All she felt then, was love.

"How about that," said the nurse with a gentle smile.

"Please keep me updated on my wife's condition."

"Very well, sir."

10 days later, after confirming the baby's health was superb,

Zhang Yang finally returned to the game.

"Little Yang! Let us arrange a child marriage!" said Fatty Han with the most earnest eyes as he tapped Zhang Yang's shoulders.

"You want me to give you a super slap in the face, that even a palm reader could read my fortune by studying your face?"

"Ayy. Chill. We are bros! Come on! If you are a girl, I'd be marrying you! This sort of bond will last for eternity! I'd swear that we will always be the best of friends even in the next life!" said Fatty Han as he pushed his unborn son to be a candidate for Zhang Yang's daughter.

His wife's expected date was roughly two months later. He had already done every possible scan and health checks on her and had confirmed that the child will be a fat little boy. After Fatty Han found that Zhang Yang's child was a girl, he had immediately "booked" a spot for him. How could he not? That daughter was the child of both Zhang Yang and the super-hot Luo Yu Rou! The possibility of her being the next top model in the world was so high!

"Alright. Enough with my daughter. I want to know, what about the Celestial tier boss? How are we going at it? Has a strategy been formulated? Update, please."

"It's bad. You might want to sit down first." Hundred Shots sighed heavily and continued. "Kenzack was not alone. He was accompanied by Baa'ljilr the Imposter, an Ascended tier boss. Together, they had proven to be undefeatable. Their combined DPS power was too strong that no guild could do it alone."

"I even formed an alliance with Crimson Rage and Imperial Sky but failed even after numerous attempts. We lasted for 8 minutes. That is the longest time we could hold for before everyone is killed.

Zhang Yang sulked and frowned.

"Is it that hard?"

"Well. From a certain point of view. Now that the big boss is back in play, things might get easier now!" said Lost Dream.

"And...why is that?"

"See for yourself!"

The party gathered and headed towards Anthylor. Once they arrived, the team summoned out their mounts and soared towards a canyon that had never been around the vicinity. There, under the shadow of the canyon were the demon army. The sounds of battle could be heard from the top of the canyon when Zhang Yang descended lower. Countless of players could be seen fighting the demon army. One thing that piqued Zhang Yang's interest was the fact that all players there were from China. None of the players from other regions were present.

"I see that only players from China fighting. Why aren't any players from other regions fighting?"

"Case in point. We haven't lost any major cities, have we not? While other regions had lost one or two. When there are still demon armies occupying the cities of other regions, there will be a debuff inflicted on all players around the globe. The debuff increases all damage taken by 10 folds! While we don't need to reclaim any cities, the other players from other regions are busy with theirs. Hence, there are no players from other regions." Endless Starlight explained.

Zhang Yang understood the scenario and nodded. No wonder the system had made the announcement. Only by reclaiming all major cities will the players be allowed to fight Kenzack. If even one city is occupied by the demons, all players will receive 10 times the usual damage. With that buff, there was no wonder why Lone Desert Smoke could not handle an Ascended tier boss. He had been upgraded to a Celestial tier power!

Standing in the center of the canyon was a supermassive demon. Like all demons, he had a bat-like wings and a long tail. Unlike all

demons, however, that one was several hundred meters tall and wielded a long blade was the same height as he. One single swing of his blade could level a mountain!

[Demon Lord Kenzack] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 25,000,000,000

Defense: 62,718

Melee Attack: 691,686 – 891,686

Magic Attack: 409,046 – 509,046

Skills:

[Cleave]: Swings the massive blade and deals 100% melee physical damage to all targets within 100 meters in the frontal direction.

[Thousand Summon]: Summons 1,000 Demon Soldier from the Netherworld and fight in his stead.

[Demonic Bond]: Swallows a demon and restore 1% HP. Recovery rate cannot be affected by any skills.

[Shadow Arrow]: Shots a True Shadow Arrow to a target and deals 200% magic Shadow damage.

[Void Blast]: Explodes a powerful void bomb and deals 800,000 Shadow damage to all targets within 300 meters.

[No Escape]: Once a player enters 300 meters distance from Kenzack, players will be inflicted with the buff. Once a player goes 300 meters away from Kenzack, they will be killed immediately without mercy.

[Death Mark]: Once a player was killed by Kenzack, they will be inflicted with the debuff. Players will carry the debuff even after death and cannot get close to Kenzack for as far as 300 meters. Those who step within the range will die instantly. Debuff will last for 72 hours.

Note: The most powerful Demon ever existed. A true undefeatable entity. Even though Kenzack ranked the last amongst the Nine Demon Lords, his powers and capabilities were unrivaled with anyone else.

It has been a long time since Zhang Yang last laid eyes upon a boss that had so many skills. As expected of a Celestial boss. What a drag. Standing by his side, was a smaller Demon, but was larger than regular Demon Soldiers. It was Baa'ljilr the Imposter.

[Baa'ljilr the Imposter] (Ascended, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 12,500,000,000

Defense: 38,545

Melee Attack: 386,830 – 466,830

Skills:

[Demon Amplification]: Consumes 5% HP and grants 100% attack to Kenzack. Cooldown: 20 seconds.

[Demonic Bond]: Swallows a Demon and restores 10% HP.

Note: The master of disguise. The god of trickery and deception. Loyal to only the Demon Lord Kenzack.

Compared to the Celestial tier boss, Baa'ljilr the Imposter was nothing but a punching bag. Besides his regular attacks, there were not many offensive skills. However, the problem was his supporting skills. With Baa'ljilr the Imposter by Kenzack's side, his presence was a powerful catalyst that could greatly improve Kenzack's prowess.

{Demon Amplification} is the most troublesome skills. Despite having no offensive skills, Baa'ljilr the Imposter serves as a powerful supporter of Kenzack. Although the skill will consume Baa'ljilr's HP, it was completely negligible since Kenzack could summon a bunch of Demons for them so "nom nom" on. They



could kill every player there simply by eating demons and slicing up everyone.

Worst of all, players that are killed cannot return to fight within 3 days! No wonder players from China had spent over 30 days to fight the boss! They could not even come close to even leave a wound on the OP as sh\*t boss! The power level was too much for them!

The most obvious choice would be to first kill Baa'ljilr the Imposter. After that, players would have to eliminate all the summoned demons out to prevent Kenzack from restoring his health. That required the skill to have long cooldown time and players to have superb killing abilities.

Despite having a long HP bar, Baa'ljilr the Imposter would not last long if players coordinate to kill all the Demons summoned. That, and they would have to last for 20 uses of {Demon Amplification}. 20 uses of the skill will consume 100% of his HP, killing himself.

"How long are the boss' skills cooldown? I want to know each and every one of them." Said Zhang Yang.

"Alright. Demonic Bond, 5 seconds once."

"Void Blast, 2 seconds once."

"Demon Amplification, 30 seconds once."

...

The summoning skill had a minute long cooldown. Despite having such a long cooldown time, players would wipe out all the summoned demon in a flash. At most, the boss could only use {Demonic Bond} once. That was under the assumption that all the players around were strong and cooperative.

If they were neither, the boss might be able to restore his HP more than once. If they are unable to kill Baa'ljilr the Imposter with haste, Kenzack would receive his buff and cause the mass

killing of all players around.

Everyone knew that defeating the boss was without hope, yet they were still charging in aimlessly. The reason was as plain as daylight. They were all enticed by the Celestial loot.

"I see what you mean on why I could turn the tables around. You were all waiting for my skill, the {Gates of Hell}!"

"Right on!" said Lost Dream which led to everyone else to nod in unison.

Zhang Yang was not afraid of the boss having summoning skills. In fact, after gaining the skill {Gates of Hell}, he welcomes them with open arms. When the boss summons monsters, especially lower tier ones, his skills would allow him to summon a similar Level elite tier Demon for every target killed!

Zhang Yang started calculating the battle and smiled confidently. "I think, we might have a shot at winning!"

An Elite tier monster would have at least 100 million HP. Hence, even though the Celestial tier boss was strong, he would take close to 2 minutes to kill a single Elite tier monster. Another factor that contributed to their winning was Kenzack's size. Each Elite tier of that Level would have a certain level of attack power. Coupled with his massive size, all the demons summoned by Zhang Yang could surround Kenzack easily and the numbers of them that could attack would be higher than a hundred. In the two minutes it takes for one demon to die, the demons could dish out a considerably high amount of damage.

Zhang Yang began to discuss the battle plans. At then, there were many of other unknown guilds that had tried their own luck at the boss. However, despite all sort of battle plans and strategies being implemented, they could not defeat the boss. Those that chose to kill Baa'ljlir first managed to survive until Kenzack had over 60% HP left. Those that chose to ignore Baa'ljlir could not go any lower than 95% HP.

Zhang Yang waited until the guilds who failed left the canyon. At then, most of the players had left and were only grinding normally outside of the canyon.

Before Zhang Yang's return to the game, Lone Desert Smoke had sortied their own attack forces not too long ago. All of them were bearing the debuff on them and had to wait for one more day to disappear.

Lone Desert Smoke was not the only guild that was bearing the mark. In fact, almost all of China's players had the mark on them as well. Since the time taken for them to reattempt to kill the boss was three days, so they could not spare any time wasted on other things. Once the mark expires, they will return to the canyon again and fight for their chance to defeat the boss, with or without a miracle.

They were all rushing desperately, not just because of the Celestial loot, but also because they taking the opportunity of other players of other regions being busy with their city reclaiming wars. In the next 20 days or so, Europe, India, North America would have already completed reclaiming all their fallen cities. By then, China would not be the only region to fight Kenzack. If they prolong the fight for too long, there will be players from all 4 regions fighting for the boss!

It was a golden opportunity and even Zhang Yang realized its importance.

One day after, and all of Lone Desert Smoke was ready to fight Kenzack again. Mountain Mover made his move and mobilized 20 Type IV War Chariots. Sadly, even though War Chariots were powerful tools, they would last only as long as 60 to 70 seconds. However, it was a crucial investment, since it would help Lone Desert Smoke deal a substantial amount of damage to Baa'ljlir. Killing Baa'ljlir was the first step to their master plan, after all!

As long as Baa'ljlir could be killed, the chances of defeating

Kenzack would rise. Without Baa'ljlir dying, not even a miracle would help Lone Desert Smoke defeat Kenzack.

The entire guild gathered around the canyon, and with the command from Mountain Mover, the entire guild moved towards the boss.

"Kill these lowly beings." Kenzack had not needed to raise his head. He was merely languishing his arms crossed and could sense the guild's presence from as far as a thousand meters away. One swift {Cleave} was cast immediately and Zhang Yang was the first to intercept it. Compared to his long and tanky HP, one prickly little {Cleave} was insignificant to him.

Zhang Yang initiate the first attack and started the Celestial tier boss fight.

# Chapter 835: Harder, Better, Faster, Stronger

---

The fight with Kenzack was far harder than the first Celestial tier boss, Angus. The main reason was due to the fact that Angus was alone, while Kenzack was accompanied by an Ascended tier supporter.

However, after factoring in all the players strength and the boss' skill, the fight with Kenzack was apparently, much easier!

Angus was tougher to defeat, due to several reasons. The main reason was the level gap between players and the boss. None of them were even Level 190 when they were fighting Angus. That, and the fact that Angus had a recovery skill that was a bloody hack! Weak players could not even get close to Angus without being killed and heal him in return.

Secondly, during that period, Ascended tier boss was still a rarity. Hence, Zhang Yang could not farm much-Ascended tier equipment to increase his prowess. Zhang Yang was underpowered, let alone the rest of the world. At then, the true fighters were the 8 major cities Ascended tier bosses. Players were only there to be random side characters. Fighting Kenzack, on the other hand, was all players and no NPCs. The quest, or rather, the developers had recognized that players all around the globe had reached a certain level of prowess, that they could handle a Celestial tier boss without the aid of NPCs.

The fight began when Zhang Yang took a hit and landed a blow on Kenzack. Baa'ljlir the Imposter laughed and spread his arms out. A puff of red hue cloud appeared around Baa'ljlir and floated upwards. The cloud expanded into a large cloud which enveloped Kenzack.

{Demon Amplification}!

Kenzack, who was "chilling" at his own pace suddenly turned berserk. As if something had shot him with Adrenaline, the boss jumped to his feet and punched the ground beneath him, sending out countless of dark rays bursting out of the ground within 300 meters around him.

{Void Blast}!

With the boost provided by {Demon Amplification}, the skill had gained a boost and dealt more than 1,600,000 damage to all players. Luckily, many of the players had already activated their Transformation skills, granting them a certain chance to nullify magic attacks. Those without Transformation skill were all cramped inside War Chariots, allowing the 1.6 million damage to be evenly distributed among 50 players.

As for those players that could not find a place in a War Chariot, nor possess a Transformation skill, they were forced to sit the boss fight out. They could not even be a side character, dealing negligible damage, for they would die before they could even poke the boss. Literally.

Now that the formation was perfect and the plan was already in motion, Zhang Yang took the lead and allowed Mountain Mover to command the rest of the guild.

"KILL!"

Zhang Yang soared to the sky with his radiant wings spread out like a lighthouse in the dark ocean, guiding players to attack Baa'ljilr. Before he attacked Baa'ljilr, he had first landed a barrage of attacks on Kenzack. After filling up his Rage gauge, he turned to Baa'ljilr and launched an array of skills.

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

‘-4,397,691’!

‘-8,795,382’!

...

‘-43,976,910’!

With the aid of everyone’s powerful aura effects stacking on each other, Zhang Yang’s attack skills had soared to more than 4 million. By the time it reached the 10th strike, the damage had reached a staggering 40 million damage. That, and the additional 10% Holy damage, totaling the damage to as high as 260,000,000!

"ARGH!" Baa'ljilr grunted painfully. He had already used 5% of his HP as a sacrifice to cast {Demon Amplification} on Kenzack. Coupled with the godlike damage inflicted by Zhang Yang, Baa'ljilr had lost around 7% HP in the first few seconds of the fight.

"WOAH! That’s hax!" cried one of the guild members.

"It’s not hax! Guild master would never use any stupid hacking program! He is just that strong!"

"I’d be d\*mned! He could kill any player in the game now. He is unbeatable in PvP!"

200 million damage was indeed strong. It was even enough to kill himself if the opponent possessed any sort of skill that could reflect 100% damage back. Sadly, the skill {Sky Slicer} could only work on monsters. Against players, however, it would not be as efficient. Players could easily find a chance to stop the chain attack, preventing the damage from reaching the 10th strike. That, and an easy use of an Invulnerability skill.

Monsters would always be the lowest benchmark to test one’s prowess as they were governed by software and their programming. A boss could have higher HP, higher attacks, more skills, or even faster cooldown rate, but they will always be bound to the aggro system. All in all, the boss was fated to die at the hands of Zhang Yang.

{Warrior’s Will}! {Destructive Smash}!

‘-2,985,678’!

Since Baa'ljilr’s healing skill could be affected by skills, Zhang

Yang had prioritized {Destructive Smash} on him to reduce his recovery rate to only 2.5% per use of {Demonic Bond}. As long as everyone focuses and responds swiftly when the 1,000 demons were summoned, they would kill all 1,000 of them in less than 5 seconds, limiting Baa'ljilr to only one use of healing. To put in all in the equation, every one minute, Baa'ljilr will "sacrifice" 7.5% HP per minute, hence, 13 minutes was all it would take for the party to kill Baa'ljilr.

However, if the battle is dragged on for 13 minutes, the entire party would be wiped out by Kenzack instead. A 100% attack boost is not something that could be ignored, coming from a Celestial tier boss.

With Mountain Mover commanding from afar, 20 counts of Type IV War Chariots headed towards Baa'ljilr. All crosshairs were targeted on Baa'ljilr alone. With a simple command, countless of skills blasted off the Chariots and landed on Baa'ljilr. Everyone, including Zhang Yang and his party, threw out all their skills with the sole aim of killing off Baa'ljilr as fast as they could.

Since all skills had a long cooldown; and stronger ones would have a longer cooldown, hence, the burst DPS could last for only a brief moment before it died down to normal attack rate. At most, they could keep up the firing for 70 seconds. That was the time limit. By then, all War Chariots would have been destroyed by the boss. Without the War Chariot HP sharing system, players without Transformation skills would not last for long. In fact, in less than 2 hits of {Void Blast}, they would die off easily.

"Foolish men. The great Demon race is not weak like the likes of you!" Kenzack spoke with a deep husky voice. He flicked his finger and summoned out 1,000 normal tier demons. Both Kenzack and Baa'ljilr then opened their mouths and two demons from the flock turned into a pile of bloody goo that got sucked into their mouths.

Zhang Yang smirked and immediately activated {Gates of Hell}.



A pair of large twin doors appeared from the ground with chains dangling from the side. Zhang Yang summoned the gates not too far from Kenzack and left it there as he rushed over to the summoned demons to give them a good {Horizontal Sweep} to their face. All that faced him were immediately turned into ashes. Their souls seeped out of their burned corpses and flew towards the {Gates of Hell}. With that single strike of {Horizontal Sweep}, Zhang Yang had killed 16 demons and summoned out 16 Elite tier Armageddon Harbinger to aid him in battle.

"What is this?" cried Kenzack when he saw the demons that Zhang Yang had summoned were attacking him. With rage, he bellowed with disbelief. "Human, how dare you enslave the demon race! I shall have your head and fashion your skull as my candle stand!"

Kenzack swung his gigantic blade so fast that the area behind the blade became a vacuum. After a split second, the air was pulled towards him so violently that the earth was ripped out of the ground like papers in a storm.

"Heed my call, Demons! I am your lord! Obey me!" cried Kenzack as he tried to assume control over the demons that Zhang Yang had summoned through the {Gates of Hell}. However, unlike the Spectres, each demon would have their own conscience and showed no signs of rebelling Zhang Yang.

Not only were the demons were not listening to Kenzack, they were also attacking him since Kenzack was spamming {Void Blast}. Hence, as the number 1 target in their aggro system, the Harbingers were all targeting Kenzack alone.

"Imbeciles! This is blasphemy! How dare you attack your lord! Die! Treacherous demons!" Now that the Harbingers were attacking Kenzack, the aggro on Zhang Yang started to diminish greatly to point where Kenzack was no longer targeting Zhang Yang.

Even though the boss was strong, he was still a monster that is governed by the aggro system. Unless there is a special setting, the boss will always attack those who have the higher aggro. Zhang Yang had only needed to grab the aggro from time to time to help increase the survivability of the summoned Harbingers. That, and to prevent Kenzack from healing himself. Even though each Harbinger could last only for a little while, Zhang Yang was not bothered by the expendables.

That was only the first summoned wave. Everyone was proactive enough to let Zhang Yang be the only player to attack the boss' summoned units. Even though Zhang Yang alone could clear all 1,000 monsters, he would have to wait until he has over 3 EP to use {God of War Crushing Strike}, by then, Baa'ljilr had already swallowed the second demon and gained another 2.5% HP.

Still, even he had lost 3 demons out of the 1,000 summoned ones, and it was a worthy trade. Zhang Yang killed all the remaining 996 demons around and turned them all into his own soldiers. All the demons first targeted Kenzack. However, even though he was huge, there was a limit as to how many Harbingers could attack him at the same time. Hence, those that could not get into range changed their targets to Baa'ljilr instead.

It was the system's setting. If a character is unable to attack the first aggro target due to geological or terrain influence, the character will be moved towards the second aggro target instead. However, if there is a moment where an attack is possible on the first aggro target, the character will then automatically abandon the second target.

After restoring a total of 5% HP from eating two demons, Baa'ljilr had not managed to retain his HP. Although, technically he had only lost the HP that he used to cast {Demon Amplification}, but the party's DPS was strong enough to hack away Baa'ljilr's HP down to 90% in a blink of an eye.

After 70 seconds, Kenzack summoned the second batch of

thousand demons.

{God of War Crushing Strike}!

Zhang Yang Strength points was boosted up to 54,232 points with the help from Wei Yan Er {Strength Aura}. Hence, the damage dealt by {God of War Crushing Strike} was as high as 540,000, enough to kill every single normal tier demon around the vicinity. Since both the bosses had opened their mouths at the very instance the demons were summoned, only a total of 998 demons were killed and 998 Harbingers were summoned.

Just when Kenzack had cleared one-third of the "rebellious" demons, Zhang Yang had sent a whole new batch to him. How could one compare? Kenzack had only the ability to summon 1,000 normal tier demons, yet a human could summon about the same number of Elite tier demons out of thin air! Which one is the real demon lord, then? Zhang Yang? Or Kenzack!?

The previous batch of Harbingers had split into two factions where those that were unable to attack Kenzack had moved to attack Baa'ljilr. Hence, when the newly summoned Harbingers came in, all of them went on to attack Baa'ljilr instead, further increasing the overall DPS on Baa'ljilr.

Crash!

All 20 Type IV War Chariots were destroyed by Kenzack. Losing the protection from the War Chariots, all 1,000 players that were mounted on the Chariots were left unprotected. Sadly, the boss had killed all of them with two hits of {Void Blast}. That is the true prowess of a Celestial boss. Without a certain level of strength and HP, players are not meant to fight a Celestial tier boss.

However, even though losing 1,000 player's worth of DPS, Baa'ljilr was clearly fated to die. Even though Baa'ljilr had his own unique A.I to control his speech, his skills were not controlled like a player. Once the cooldown was completed, Baa'ljilr will use his skill without fail. Hence, he was inevitably killing himself. Each

time he uses {Demon Amplification} he will hack away his own HP. Hence, like the players and the demons that are summoned by Kenzack, Baa'ljilr was dying, rather quickly too at that.

Sadly, the player's side was also facing a similar threat by Kenzack. 100% attack boost was not something that healers could keep up with. They could, if there were 100 players like Han Ying Xue, possessing a powerful healer type S class Inheritance. But, there is only one Han Ying Xue, and she could never heal the damage dealt by Kenzack.

Everyone was merely surviving due to their powerful HP boost granted by their Inheritance Transformations. The fate of the boss fight now lay on how fast could Zhang Yang and his merry little guild kill off Baa'ljilr. The sooner, the better.

{Thousand Summon}! {Demonic Bond}!

{God of War Crushing Strike}!

As soon as Kenzack summons his demons, Zhang Yang would eliminate all of them with {God of War Crushing Strike}. The third wave of 998 Elite tier Harbinger was sent to the bosses again, and they were just in time to fill in the gaps in the first wave. The continuous DPS cycle was astonishingly fast.

5 minutes later, with the second combo of {Charge Up Strike} and {Sky Slicer}, Baa'ljilr was killed.

# Chapter 836: Killing the Celestial tier Boss

---

Well...to say that a Level 250 elite tier monster is strong...would be circumstantial. At most, their DPS level would be as only around 70,000. Based on their damage, they would not be a match to a Level 250 player with a full Ethereal gear. On the other hand, when fighting a boss, the ability to deal high damage and ANY damage at all would make all the difference in determining the victor.

As mentioned, Kenzack's {Void Blast} was an AoE powerful skill. Those without Transformations could not come close to the boss. Even with super-powered attacks, one would die without the ability to take several hits from that.

Elite monsters were different. Their HP would be as high as 125,000,000. They would last for as long as 3 minutes without healing while fighting the boss.

Hence, the ultimate rule of war: Only the living can be useful!

When Baa'ljilr was killed, Kenzack's attack plummeted without the support from {Demon Amplification}. Hence, the Harbingers that were summoned could now last as long as 5 minutes. Even though not all of the Harbingers could attack at the same time, as many as 300 could, since Kenzack was mother\*ckingly huge.

Within 20 minutes of the active duration of {Gates of Hell}, the total summoned Harbinger could provide as high as 25.2 billion DPS. Bear in mind that Kenzack had only over 25 billion HP. Of course, the boss had the ability to restore his HP, but was only limited to 1% HP every minute, since Zhang Yang would eliminate all the summon demons at the very second they pop out. 1% HP would be 250,000,000. Hence, 20 minutes would be 5,000,000,000 HP. That was an amount that Zhang Yang and his entire party could handle without breaking a sweat.

In terms of DPS, Zhang Yang's party would have made the past

the requirements by a long shot. The problem was their endurance. If Baa'ljilr is not killed soon, they would have 100% lost the fight, even with the help from {Gates of Hell}.

When Baa'ljilr was killed, the entire party's HP was fluctuating at around 10% HP. Han Ying Xue was forced to use {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} to fully restore everyone's HP. It was only then they could pull through the hurdle. Any slower, Baa'ljilr would have cast one more {Demon Amplification}, allowing Kenzack to kill most of the players in sight. After Han Ying Xue's massive milk splatters, other healers were able to put their best to heal everyone else.

Since none of the summoned harbingers could last longer than 5 minutes, Zhang Yang was targeted when the front ones were killed by Kenzack. Chains of skills were blasted on him, followed by the AoE {Void Blast}, causing Zhang Yang to take extreme damage. Just as the AoE skills were strong, the single target skills were even deadlier!

Kenzack was a rare kind of boss that had both magic and physical attack abilities. His skills, {Shadow Arrow} and {Cleave} did not share the same cooldown. Hence, when the boss could use {Cleave} with his right hand, he could also blast out {Shadow Arrow} with his right. Both of the skills had only 2 seconds of cooldown. Coupled with {Void Blast}, the total DPS of Kenzack on Zhang Yang was around 1 million. It was almost the same or even stronger than Zhang Yang's own DPS.

A boss' strength would not come from a single target skill, but his AoE skills. The more allies you bring, the deadlier the boss would be.

HOWEVER! Even if the boss is super strong, 1 million DPS would take 200 seconds to kill Zhang Yang. With Han Ying Xue's super jugs and the other healers around, it would take much longer than 200 seconds to kill Zhang Yang.

"Is it just me, or that we are really going to win this fight?"

"Hell yea!"

"What a day, just when I just popped my cherry with my girlfriend, we are going to kill a Celestial tier boss as well! What a day!"

"Hahaha! Is it a girl, or a blow up doll that I saw in your purchase history from Amazon Prime?"

"Shut up!"

Even though they had all fought Angus before, it did not count as the First Kill record since most of the damage was on the NPCs instead of players. Even though Zhang Yang was there all the time to attack, he did not manage to get the First Kill Achievement. Things were different then, even though he had the help from the summoned Harbinger, they were all but the product of his summoning skills. They were all considered to be an attacking character, branching out of Zhang Yang.

It would seem that Lone Desert Smoke was going for the kill. While they were getting close to it by the minute, the other players from other seven regions were too busy with their own matters.

There were almost no players around the canyon then, but they were not wasting time sitting down idly. Initially, they all thought that Lone Desert Smoke was going to be just another guild that was bound to fail the fight. In fact, for the past month, players in the forum had been on a heated discussion about which guild in the world could be the first to kill Kenzack. Before Lone Desert Smoke stepped into the ring, all guilds that had ever challenged Kenzack had failed with absolute certainty. When Lone Desert Smoke had managed to kill off Baa'ljilr, players that were observing the fight had realized that Lone Desert Smoke did have a chance to kill Kenzack.

Without delay, they had immediately summoned all their friends and guild mates to gather at the canyon. Even though they would never have the privilege to loot the boss drops, they could at least

deal a speck of damage to the boss to have their name recorded along with the First Kill Achievement. It was a feat that could be bragged about in the future! Imagine picking up chicks and showing them your name along with other players that were involved in killing the first Celestial boss!

Sadly, it was just a pipe dream. As mentioned before, without the HP boost from Transformation skills, there was no hope for random players to approach the boss without dying first.

Losing the powerful attack buff, Kenzack had also lost the tide of war, even though his own basic damage was strong. On Zhang Yang's side, however, they had the best equipment sets in the entire game. Even his party members were equipped with at least one article of Celestial tier equipment! The rest were all equipped with Ascended tier equipment and had the overall DPS of a warring nation! As such, in less than 10 minutes, Kenzack had lost over 49% HP!

"This is not going well for us. Lone Desert Smoke might take the First Kill!"

"Call all professional players in the guild. We might stand a chance!"

"No. All of our strong players had just fought the boss yesterday and failed. They would have to wait for 2 more days until the mark expires."

"What are you saying? Are you telling me to sit down here helplessly as Lone Desert Smoke takes the first ever Celestial tier boss First Kill?"

"Do you have any other bright ideas?"

A minor dispute began amongst the other bystanders. However, no matter how many plans they could chug out, they had no way of countering {Void Blast} without a War Chariot or Transformation skill. Come 1 or 1 million, their fate would still be the same.



40%...30%...20%...

By then, Kenzack had reached both the berserk state and the vulnerable state.

With rage, his attack speed rose. As a demon lord, he was surrounded by his own kind and was about to be killed by humans!

The boss' skill spamming rate was increased to 1 second at a time! However, that was the limit. It was not possible for the skill to have a higher speed.

As such, the entire guild survivability had dropped once more to when the boss had the attack buff. The healing rate of all healers was not able to hold. Many players started knocking on death's door.

Luckily, the summoned Harbinger were rather tanky enough to last for 2 and a half minutes. Since the boss' own summoned demons were useless, to begin with, Zhang Yang alone had no problems killing the boss. The cycle of Harbingers being killed and replaced at the front line would last until the boss dies!

As time passed by the seconds, more and more players were killed. Basically, almost 95% players had already used their life preserving skills during the fight with Baa'ljilr. All of them were still in a cooldown phase and could not do anything to resist the grasp of death.

From a few hundred Transformed Lone Desert Smoke players, they were all left with less than 30 players now. The boss was still left with over 11% HP.

Zhang Yang frowned and immediately unleashed {Shadow Clone} and consumed an {Amateur Fire Power Transmuted Grade 10} potion.

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

With the help of his shadow clones, Zhang Yang's {Sky Slicer} skill was able to reach 200% its original power, dealing as much as

500 million damage.

"ARGH! DIRTY PESTS! DIE!"

Such a powerful damage was as equivalent to 2% of his HP. Like all beings that are close to death, the boss started to attack without restraint. All skills had only a 1-second interval rate and that was a rather fatal threat to Zhang Yang then.

Fearing the worse, Zhang Yang cried at the top of his lungs. "Do not slow down! Focus on attacking and attacking alone!"

The rest of the core party members nodded their heads and stopped trying to evade skills. All skills, MP and EP alike were used up to cast all sort of skills to end the boss.

9%...7%...4%...

"It's so close!"

"Well, don't stop now!"

"I can smell it! I can smell the Celestial tier scent in the air!"

Compared to the excitement of Lone Desert Smoke members, the rest of the bystanders had lost their color in their face. Unlike the supporting allies like Crimson Rage, other China players were rather envious of Lone Desert Smoke and were even willing to trade their life to prevent Lone Desert Smoke from killing the boss!

There was a saying. Beauty lies in the eyes of the beholder. Yet, if they fail to attain it, they would seek to destroy it.

That was what the bystanders were thinking then. However, no matter how much negativity they would muster, Kenzack was killed successfully.

"I will return. I will be back. I am but returning to the arms of the true King of Demons. I will be back. 100 years or 10,000 years...I shall be back to lay waste upon his wretched land. Mark....my... words...." With his last words, the massive giant falls to the ground, crashing like a towering structure and bursting out

radiant loots.

‘Ding! Congratulations for being the first in the game to kill an Open World Celestial tier boss! Your glorious deeds shall forever be recorded in the Hall of Fame. Please key in your party name for the whole world to know!’

When the system notification popped out and the input box was showed to Zhang Yang, he quickly inserted the regular advertisement he so often used and called out for Wei Yan Er. "Little brat! Get the loots and let's bail!"

"I'm one step ahead of you!" cried Wei Yan Er as she had already picked up more than half of the loot.

After submitting the name input, the server channel flashed with red texts to inform all players across all regions of the feat.

Players from China were constantly observing the fight and had prepared for the sad news. On the other hand, players of other regions were gravely saddened. Regions like North America, Europe, and India had only one city left to reclaim! However, they would still need at least 20 days to have the authority to fight Kenzack, then. Although it was speculated, none could predict that China would be the first to kill Kenzack before them!

Say bye bye to Celestial tier set equipment...

With a quick command, Zhang Yang ordered everyone in the guild that was still alive to teleport to Anthylor. Players that were rushing over from Anthylor had arrived a few seconds too late. Even though they could not fight the boss, they could still kill players! They might still have a chance to get their hands on Celestial tier equipment if they manage to kill Zhang Yang and his team!

However, when they saw Zhang Yang's silhouette, they could only catch a glimpse of his smug grin before he disappeared with a beam of light. Zhang Yang had returned to Anthylor, a place where

PvP is restricted.

# Chapter 837: Goddess of War Scion Form

---

"Hurry! Give it! Give it!"

When everyone had returned to the Holy City, all eyes were locked on Wei Yan Er, as she was the only person then that was holding all of Kenzack's drops.

The little girl fidgeted around shyly and blushed. "Erhm...Please don't stare at me like that. I'm bashful, you know?"

At that moment, everyone that was close to Wei Yan Er was on the urge of actually vomiting in their mouth. Bashful? Really? If Wei Yan Er knew shame, the sun would rise from the north and sets in the south!

Zhang Yang laughed till his tummy ached a little. He wiped his tears away and laughed as he said, "Please stop making us laugh. It's time for our prizes!"

"Okay...Just...don't stare at me. I aware of my own beauty."

Wei Yan Er opened her inventory U.I and pulled out a cape that shone with the colors of the rainbow. She then passes it to Han Ying Xue.

"Cousin sister, this is yours!"

It was a Celestial tier set equipment part, [God of Life's Glory Cape].

As per discussed, those who already possessed one piece of the set equipment will have the priority, in order to complete the set equipment to further increase the party's strength by completing the set equipment as soon as they can. Hence, Han Ying Xue, who already possessed [God of Life's Glory Heels], had received the cape and was able to activate the first set equipment set effect. That is, "Grants a 20% chance to repeat a conjured spell after casting."

"Sister Sun! This is yours!" Wei Yan Er took out another cape and

gave it to Sun Xin Yu.

"Uncle! This is yours," she handed one to Hundred Shots.

"Pervy Dream!"

...

All of the Celestial tier set equipment loot from Kenzack were all Capes. Those who had obtained their first set equipment had also obtained their second part which allowed all of them to activate their first set effects.

"This is mine!" cried Wei Yan Er as she wrapped a cape around her neck whilst jumping around happily. "I look so cool!"

"Well? Don't stop there."

After taking the 6th cape, Wei Yan Er pulled out the 7th and gave it to Endless Starlight. "Pervy Star boy. Take it. It's specially made for Sacred Knights. Hmph. Consider yourself lucky!"

"Woohoo!" cried Endless Starlight with joy as he was the only Sacred Knight in the main and secondary party.

While everyone else was waiting patiently, Fatty Han could not take it anymore and sulked. "Where's mine..."

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were the same class, hence, it was inevitable that when it comes to equipment distribution, there will be a conflict between the two of them. During the first round of equipment distribution, Hundred Shots had won the roll for the Celestial tier set equipment. Hence, he had the priority for the second Celestial tier set equipment as well. Sadly, there was nothing he could do then but to bully Endless Starlight to release his pent up stress.

The 8th Celestial tier set equipment was a Cryomancer type, which was passed to Cheng Xue Yao. She was still unable to equip it, as her level was still low.

Zhang Yang was still empty handed then. "Hey...is there any for

Guardians?"

"Hmph...? Let me check...Tch...tch...tch..." said Wei Yan Er as she pretended to fake a disappointed expression. Zhang Yang knew that she was lying, since her eyes were moving left and right. If she is playing poker, she would have lost the game in the first round. Zhang Yang decided to humor the little girl and walked away from her with his head down. As such, the little girl felt happy that she had succeeded at "tricking" Zhang Yang by fooling him. She laughed, tapped his shoulders and gave him a cape. "Haha! You stupid brother-in-law! This little lady has just bamboozled you!"

Zhang Yang took the cape and faked a grateful face before having the cap identified, immediately on the spot. It would make no difference for him to have the cape identified by an NPC or the scroll, since the price would be the same.

[God Killer Cape] (Celestial, Cape)

Vitality: +25730

Strength: +3312

Dexterity: +3312

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 51,460.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 2,918 damage from attack.

Use: Receives the Divine Ichor and gains immunity and invulnerability for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 250

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

God Killer Set Equipment (2/8) Completion.

Two Equip Effect: Increases your Damage reduction passive

effect by 20%.

A 20% damage reduction passive boost!

In a shielded status, Zhang Yang damage reduction passive was at 40%. With the use of {God of War Shield} he would gain up to 60%! After reaching Level 220, the skill {Rock Solid} was maxed out to Level 10. After being enhanced by the [Book of Revelation,] the skill increased Defense value was boosted to 150%, and 30% damage reduction boost. In conclusion, without {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang would gain something as high as a 90% damage reduction!

By then, activating {Shield Wall} would be meaningless, since the damage reduction effect provided by the skill would not add to the previous number, but multiply it to the previous number. I.e.  $1 - 0.1 \times 25\% = 97.5\%$  of damage reduction.

Zhang Yang had successfully increased his Defense with just an addition of a Celestial tier equipment! That's how powerful a Celestial tier set equipment is! Broken? Heck yeah it is!

With Zhang Yang being the last to claim, all of the Celestial tier set equipment parts had been distributed. There was a total of seven players who had activated their second set equipment set effects. They were Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, Lost Dream, and Hundred Shots.

Cheng Xue Yao and Endless Starlight had received a piece of the Celestial tier set equipment. One more Celestial boss like Kenzack, and they might receive a second part to activate their set effects.

Besides the nine pieces of set equipment, Kenzack had also dropped four regular Celestial tier equipment. Naturally, they were all given to those without Celestial tier set equipment, like Fatty Han and Galileo.

As for the random items, 17 [Skill Point Crystals] were distributed accordingly. 12 [Advance Aura Stone] and two [Forbidden Scrolls] were stored in the guild storage. Seven skills books were up for



rolls. There were also 12 [Advance Demonic Pearls] found, and were all stored in the guild storage.

Sitting quietly in the corner of Wei Yan Er was one black colored crystal rock that had an irregular shape. It was not smooth, and had several perfectly cut edges all over the rock. Wei Yan Er took out the crystal and showed it to Zhang Yang.

"This thing is weird. This piece of rock does not have an item name nor a description. Could it be a random bug?"

Felice jumped out of Zhang Yang's Battle Companion U.I and cried out. "Big brother!" She instinctively reached out her right hand to grab the crystal but immediately retracted her hands.

"Oh ho? Little Felice wants this? I'll give it to you then. Just greet me nicely!" said Wei Yan Er with her chest held up high.

"Big Sister. Can I have that crystal?" said Felice with her most earnest tone ever, which made Wei Yan Er so happy, even though Felice was clearly taller and older than her.

Zhang Yang felt his heart was about to jump out of his chest. Could the crystal rock be a catalyst to unlocking Felice's third seal?

"Here you go! What a nice girl!" Wei Yan Er patted Felice's head.

Felice took the crystal in her hands and placed it close to her chest. The black, soot-like crystal then gave out a blinding light that immediately encased Felice into a large, egg-like structure that was as tall as Zhang Yang.

"F\*ck yeah! Finally!" said Zhang Yang to himself. The crystal was to unlock Felice's third seal! Zhang Yang was breathing raggedly as he was excited to see how strong would Felice be. Could she have another form to transform into? Could she gain growth rate? All that would have to wait until she hatches out of the egg.

With the weird, egg-like structure sitting idly in the center of a busy city, many players could not help but examine the thing. It was sticking out like a sore thumb! Luckily, PvP or any attack was

restricted in the city. Hence, besides Zhang Yang, others had could not select the egg to view its description.

Everyone lingered a little while to see what the egg would do, but left after waiting for several hours. Zhang Yang decided to loiter around Anthylor until something happens. Lo and behold, after three days of random activities around the city, a bright light shone brightly from where the egg was, and Zhang Yang could spot it from the other end of the city. Zhang Yang was around the auction house when he noticed the bright light. He then immediately closed the U.I and sped towards the egg. Halfway through the city, Zhang Yang could see Felice soaring in the sky in her Dragonhawk form.

"Big brother!" she cried happily and she shot down towards Zhang Yang at breakneck speed. Right before she landed, she morphed back into her human form and made a crack on the tiles in front of Zhang Yang.

"I missed you, Felice!" Zhang Yang caressed Felice's forehead and quickly examines her properties.

The most obvious change that she had was that her Star Growth rate had increased to 13 Stars!

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 222

HP: 6,298,830 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 34,900

Melee Attack: 442,688 – 542,688

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear]: Deals 200% melee Fire damage to a target. Requirement: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 second. Cost: 50 Energy.

[Dragon's Spear Barrage]: Deals 300% melee physical damage to a

target and had a 30% chance to stun for 5 seconds. Effective on Boss monsters with lower success rate. Requirement: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 minute. Cost: 50 Energy.

[Absolute Defense]: Gains 99% damage reduction passive for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 4 hours. Skill can only be used in human form. Will be ineffective in other forms.

[Dragonhawk Form], [Spectral Tiger Form], [Tree of Life Form]

[Goddess of War Scion Form]: Transcends humanity and gains the primordial form of the Goddess of War. Gains 300% attack damage and all attacks will have Chaos attribute. Increases 300% Defense and 2000% HP boost. All skills available in human form will also be available during the Goddess of War Scion Form. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Activating the Goddess of War Scion Form will trigger all Dragonhawk Berserk, Spectral Tiger Berserk, and Tree of Life Transformation cooldowns.

(Fourth Seal)

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

What a deadly upgrade...

Without Transformation, Zhang Yang had only roughly 5,340,000 HP. That was with two Celestial tier set equipment in hand, yet he was still weaker than an Ascended tier Felice! It was all mainly due to her Growth stat being at 13 Stars! One Vitality point would grant her 13 points of HP instead of a player's usual 10 HP! The {Vitality Aura} provided by Zhang Yang will stack on that hence, giving Felice the ability to gain 18 HP per Vitality stat.

It was then obvious that after the fourth and final seals are broken, Felice would gain the Celestial tier and gain a 14 Star growth or even 15, to reach the peak of what a Battle Companion could be.

Huhuhu. Celestial tier. A god like entity!

Sadly, there were not more forms after the third seal. Instead,

Felice had gained a Transformation for her human form. Her skills {Blazing Dragon Spear} and {Dragon Spear Barrage} had also gained a massive boost!

In the past, Zhang Yang had always had Felice to attack in her Dragonhawk form, since she could fly and her Fire-based attacks will ignore all Defense values. After the upgrade, Felice's human form had the highest DPS power, as well as the strongest Defense and highest HP limit.

To summarize it, Felice's human form will have 310,000 DPS, while her Dragonhawk form will have only 290,000. Based on the Defense value, both forms were about equal.

# Chapter 838: Song of Despair

---

BANG!

Zhong Xiu Hua's fist had only made a tiny bump on the plastic table in his office. With rage, he lifted his right fist and slams it down again as if he was dissatisfied for not being able to break it. "How is Lone Desert Smoke taking all the good stuff in the game! How could we allow Lone Desert Smoke – no! How could we allow Zhang Yang to beat us!? US!? We are the Eternal Flame guild! Is this goes on, how are we going to be China's number one guild?"

Standing on the opposite side of the table were two grown men in their early adulthoods. They were Scholar Musou and Longrich. Both of them stood there like scarecrows, motionless as they could not muster up any excuses to answer Zhong Xiu Hua.

The atmosphere of the office grew heavier.

After a long silence, Scholar Musou finally found the courage to talk. "It...it's because Zhang Yang has the {Gates of Hell}. The skill had allowed him to fight the boss toe to toe. Without it, not even Zhang Yang's Defenses would hold on."

"Tell me something THAT I DON'T KNOW!" Zhong Xiu Hua screamed. "What am I hiring you for when all you do is give me excuses!"

Both Longrich and Scholar Musou clenched their fists. For the past few days, Eternal Flame finances had dried up. Zhong Xiu Hua had not been issuing his regular member's salary for more than a month. Still, it not for his "princely" social and politic status, the entire guild would have long been abandoned and disbanded.

When a guild is built using the attraction of money, it would be greatly impacted when the money stops coming in. Once the promised wages are delayed, people will start taking actions. One more month and the guild will eventually be empty, no matter

how prominent the guild master may be.

Technically, in their current predicament, Eternal Flame stills stood amongst the top 5 guilds in China. With that standing, there should be companies seeking to be their sponsors. If that is the case, how did the finances suddenly go rogue? The reason was rather simple, actually. Eternal Flame's main sponsor was none other than Zhong Xiu Hua's own mother, the CEO of Hua Yi Trust Fund. Since the entire cooperation was facing problems in the real world, the sponsored monetary funds were cut off.

According to his mother, ever since the Trust Fund gone public, there was an unknown faction that had been buying up a large share of the company. The person was buying so many shares realized that his position was starting to threaten the authority of his mother. Hence, to prevent the liquidation of the company's shares, his mother had been cutting off all outgoing fundings to counter the buyer.

That action was uncalled for but was inevitable. There was nothing that Zhong Xiu Hua could do to make things right. He was not talented in the game. He had been relying a lot on his members to do the deeds. As such, all the sponsored money that came in was shared with others but not himself. When the money stopped coming in from his own family side, he was cut off completely. That had made Zhong Xiu Hua incredibly angry.

"Master Zhong. This may sound harsh but, there is nothing we could do about Lone Desert Smoke nor Zhang Yang at the moment. If we would want Eternal Flame to burn brightly in all of China, there's only one way to do it," said Longrich.

"What ingenious idea have you come up with?" said Zhong Xiu Hua, trying to hold back his urge to punch anyone in the face.

"Kill. Murder."

Zhong Xiu Hua widened his eyes at the idea of killing. However, it did not take long before common sense kicked in. It was not his

humanity, but the consequences of his action that might cause the Sun Family to meddle in his matters again like before. He will be facing with Sun Xin Yu's wrath if things get out of control. No matter what happens, he still had something to hold on to, he would not be willing to give up his life for someone like Zhang Yang!

"No. That's not efficient enough. I want finer method. I want to surgically remove Zhang Yang as a threat from my life!"

...

In the headquarters of Silky Soft Holdings. Zhang Yang's main office.

"Mr. Zhang. I have managed to procure another 20 billion dollars. This would allow us have more than 50% of all the share for Hua Yi Trust Funds," said a young man that was busy tapping on a digital calculator on Zhang Yang's desk.

"Very good." Zhang Yang nodded and swiveled his chair around. "Do report back to me when you have it done."

"Yes, sir," said the young man and he went back to his own world of digits and numerals.

Zhang Yang crossed his fingers and rested his chin on them. With a satisfied feeling in his guts, Zhang Yang smirked. Zhang Yang had played a risk. He had pulled out 70 billion dollars from his own company and borrowed 20 billion dollars from the bank, all for the sake of investing. No matter what it takes, he must have Hua Yi Trust Funds under him. That way, he will ultimately cut off all fundings of Zhong Xiu Hua.

Like a fierce lion that is defanged and declawed, Eternal Flame will, ironically, go up in flames. Like The Myth, the guild would never prosper when it is built up using money. By then, there would be no way for Zhong Xiu Hua to remain in the game.

...

The official site had released a new info along with a new update to the game. Along with the end of the Spectre Invasion and the Demon Descent patch, all Celestial tier bosses will be revealed to the world, allowing players to fight them openly.

Unlike the bosses of other races, the Nine Demon Lord and the Seven Spectre Kings were revealed to the world. Even though Angus and Kenzack are already killed, there will always be a new Celestial boss to replace their seats to keep the number of Celestial tier bosses the same.

After a Celestial boss was killed, the game system would take up to 30 days (real time) to respawn a new one. Those still roaming in the game will have no changes applied to them. On the other hand, the newly spawned boss will have its difficulty and level adjusted according to the average players' Level. However, the system had not released any more information on that matter.

So far, there were 16 Celestial tier boss in the entire game. There were 8 roaming in the Level 270 – Level 300 map, 6 in the Level 240 – Level 270 map, 1 in the Level 210 – Level 240 map, and 1 in the Level 150 – Level 180 map. One of them, that had been alive for as long as the game started had been doing extremely well. The Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich. He had been having his fun time killing countless players.

Zhang Yang was only around Level 220 and the boss the was most suitable for him will be in the Level 210 – Level 240 map. It was better to fight a boss that is within their level radius than fight a boss that is a killer wolf under a sheepskin.

The most important rule to fight any boss is to never be outside the level range. That being said, now that the developers had openly revealed all the bosses' locations, clearly they would not be an easy target.

Zhang Yang got back home, did a little adult recreational fun time with the ladies, and logged back into the game. His first target



to slay was The Demon Lord Regalia. His location, a valley.

By then, there were already many players that were ready in the game, waiting for the rest of the Lone Desert Smoke main party members to assemble. While Lone Desert Smoke was still making their preparations for the attack, other guild master feared that they might not have a shot at digging the gold mine. Hence, even though other guilds were not as prepared, they had already set off to the valley. The battle was already ongoing when Zhang Yang and his attack squad arrived. When he did, he saw one massive guild trying to fight, but they were all killed in less than 10 seconds!

Astonished at the boss' prowess, Zhang Yang was determined to find a weakness that he could exploit.

[Demon Lord Regalia] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 240

HP: 24,000,000,000

Defense: 60,865

Melee Attack: 662,803 – 862,803

Magic Attack: 401,779 – 481,779

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% melee physical attack. 50% chance to strike an additional attack.

[Demonic Soul]: Unleash pools of demonic souls within 300 meters around the caster. Players that made contact with the pool will be converted into Regalia's servant.

[Fiery Blast]: Deals 200% Magic Fire Attack that will explode and deals 500,000 additional fire damage to all targets within 10 meters of the initial target.

[Tornado Cleave]: Deals 100% melee physical attack to all targets within 300 meters.

[Demonic Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any skills or effect.

[No Escape]: After entering 300 meters to Regalia, players cannot leave 300 meters from Regalia or will be subjected to instant death.

[Death Mark]: Inflicted on death after being killed by Regalia. Players with the debuff cannot enter within 300 meters of Regalia or they will be subjected to instant death. Effect lasts for 72 hours.

[Song of Despair]: Sings a song of despair around 300 meters around Regalia. Initial damage of 1,000,000 Chaos Damage will be inflicted and will gain a stacking damage of 1,000,000 every second. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Note: A Demon Lord that stands out amongst the rest of the Demon Lords. Regalia is a demon that kills all that encounters him to hide his presence. No one knows how strong he is. Caution would be an understatement when one approaches him.

Zhang Yang finally understood why all the players that had charged in earlier than he did were killed after 10 seconds. It was the doing of the skill {Song of Despair}. After simple calculations, the total damage that could be dealt was as high as 465,000,000. That's a skill that was even stronger than any [Forbidden Scroll] in the entire game! No one. Not even Zhang Yang could survive with his Transformation.

With such a skill in his skill list, Regalia will undoubtedly be the strongest god amongst all gods! The chances of winning was an absolute zero!

However, the developers will never make a boss or a quest that can never be solved. However, to counter the boss' {Song of Despair} and kill the boss, all players in the world must a full Celestial tier set equipment and the highest class Inheritance, along with the strongest Battle Mount to win!

Such a requirement would be absurd. Hence, unless there is a

method to nullify or weaken the skill, {Song of Despair} will be treated as a bug that makes the boss undefeatable.

"Holy mother of all crap in my \*ss. How are we supposed to fight that?" said Fatty Han. Everyone else shared the same thoughts and was prepared to make their way back to the Holy City. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, had been busy trying to find a way to defeat him. When his sea of thoughts failed him, he turned to the outside world, scouting around any possible points of interest that may help. Suddenly, he saw something and shot down to the ground.

"Heyyya! Where are you going!" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang ignored her and continued downward and finally landed in front of a small dwarf NPC.

[Salygos] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 240

Note: Even though Salygos is a dwarf, there was an unexplainable power emitting from him.

"This place is not for the weakhearted. Why are you here? I must urge you to leave for your own safety." Said Zhang Yang.

Salygos frowned and begun to spat at Zhang Yang. "I am here for the like of you weaklings!"

He then calmed down and explained, "Regalia's strength is currently too strong for anyone, he holds part of the Death God's power. If you try to fight him now, you will be killed."

Wei Yan Er had managed to catch up with Zhang Yang, along with the rest of the main party members. However, there was someone else along with them. Dusk Phoenix came down and winked seductively at Zhang Yang, Hourglass Figure came down and blatantly ignored Zhang Yang. And there were more other random players that Zhang Yang recognized as part of the elites. It was then made clear to him that he was not the only "smart" one

that were trying to find a way to solve the boss' extreme difficulty.

"To defeat Regalia, you must find the Staff of Primordial Life. That magic staff will be your only hope that could purge the Death God's power from him."

Every word that came out of his mouth seems to be emitting a powerful shock wave that made the ground crack and the dust falling off Zhang Yang's armor. Even the valley was vibrating from his sheer power.

The moment he had finished his speech, the dwarf glowed in a bright light. Zhang Yang noticed a large shadow that flew over him and noticed a large blue dragon had flown away.

"The Staff of Primordial Life?"

Obviously, the Staff of Primordial Life was meant to remove the skill {Song of Despair} from the boss list. That, or have it greatly weakened so that players could stand a chance to defeat him.

At then, Zhang Yang had an epiphany.

"I need you guys to handle this. I've got something urgent that needs to be done as soon as possible."

Zhang Yang shot to the sky immediately, before anyone had any chance to say a word.

# Chapter 839: The Fallen Wind Ranger

---

Back when Zhang Yang was still roaming the Beginner's Village as a fresh young greenhorn, he had already accepted a main story quest about the Demon Lord, and the Fallen Wind Ranger Calina. However, due to the outrageous quest requirements, he had prolonged the quest until he was Level 100 to gather the required items. After that, he had accepted the quest - "Quell thy Anger" where he was given a quest item to use on Calina to finish the quest.

It may sound simple, but would a Celestial tier Demon boss let you touch her \*ss? Back then, before the killing of Kenzack, the system had not revealed the location of Calina, and that was why Zhang Yang had completely forgotten about her. However, when he saw the information about the nine Demon Lords, and the Seven Spectre Kings, his took note of Calina and was ready to resume his quest.

Calina was residing in the Level 240 – Level 270 map of Lonhana. Technically, a player would be required to be around Level 240 to have the capabilities to fight the boss. Any lower, and he would be in trouble thanks to the Level Suppression system. Not even a full set of Celestial tier set equipment could save him. Zhang Yang was different, his quest did not require him to kill Calina. Instead, he was only required to "poke" Calina, and he would succeed. He might take some time to complete the mission, but since defeating Regalia would require the [Primordial Staff of Life] which will require some time before it can be found, Zhang Yang could take his time finishing the quest.

Zhang Yang flew along the route and reached the Lonhana map. There, all the monsters were at least Level 240, and more than half of them were higher than Level 250. The moment Zhang Yang set foot on the map, his Level 222 pathetic, under-leveled character had drawn in as many monsters like a bleeding bait in a shark's

den.

Zhang Yang opted for the flight and fight technique. If he could not outrun the monsters, he would fight them. As long as he has the Phoenix pet and the powerful Felice by his side, he could easily defeat most of the monsters there even though they were elite tier. That might take up some time, though. As such, after fighting and running his way through the map, Zhang Yang had arrived at the lair of Calina, the Ghastly Forest.

As an elf, Calina would surely pick a lair that is situated in a densely growing forest. After she was demonized, her choice of habitat remained the same. The only thing that had changed was the fact that her demonic aura would taint the environment and turn the entire atmosphere around the forest somewhat "gloomy". Without the help of the navigation minimap, anyone would be lost in that forest.

Zhang Yang entered the forest and could no longer fly around. Every short distance, tree branches would block the way and force the Phoenix to descend. Hence, Zhang Yang decided to travel by foot, which was ultimately faster than flying. Despite being a Legendary Beast with an inextinguishable flame, the gloominess of the forest was caused by a Celestial tier boss, hence, the illumination of the Phoenix was only good for around 3 meters in front of Zhang Yang. Surely enough, if the Phoenix could reach Level 230 soon, it would be upgraded to a Celestial tier beast! By then, it would and should be on par with a Celestial tier boss!

Ni shi shi shi shi~~

Eerie laughs echoed through the mist in the forest and three shadowy figures appeared in front of Zhang Yang. Despite being slightly shadowed by the lack of light, Zhang Yang could make out its shape and appearance. The problem was, he could not detect any faces! They were all magically formed out of the mist and only had humanoid shapes. The rest was simply shadow and darkness.

[Demonic Mist Guardian] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 125,000,000

Defense: 15,350

Melee Attack: 109,064 – 169,064

Skills:

[Misty Spear]: Collects the magic in the air and thrusts to stab a target. Deals 100% melee physical attack.

[Mystify]: When in danger, the Guardian will discard its physical form to restore 1% HP every second. Receives 50% less damage. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: The Guardians of the Ghastly Forest that are created from the Demonic aura of Calina. Naturally born to kill, destroy, and mutilate all living beings that enter their domain.

There were three of them, and all of them was collecting the air around them to form long spears in their hands. Once the spear solidified, the monsters then hurled the spear towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang launched himself to the front and attacked the first monsters with a normal attack to charge up his Rage points. Once he was done, he used {Charge Up Strike} and {Sky Slicer}.

The two most powerful attacks were unleashed and dealt more than 100 million damage after {Sky Slicer} had reached the 10th strike. The monster took so much damage and immediately turned into a clump of mist that was still visible enough due to its color. However, Zhang Yang immediately landed {Destructive Smash} to reduce its healing rate and kill it easily with the combination of Felice and Phoenix.

Zhang Yang turned to the second Guardian and cast {Glare of the Death God}. The skull appeared on the monster's character after a

few hits and swallowed the monster whole.

2 down, 1 more to go. If anyone else besides the usual crowd around Zhang Yang was present during the fight scene, they would grovel at Zhang Yang's feet and beg him for some fighting lessons.

Elite monsters in higher level maps were extremely strong and cannot be underestimated when they are in large groups. Fight three elite tier monsters would require a team of 5, well-equipped players to fight on equal level. 3v1? That's impossible!

For example, player A has 300 HP. Player B, C, and D has only 100 HP. All four players have the same attack power. If Player A were to fight player B, C, and D in an orderly manner, all of them would die eventually. However, if player A were to attack player B, C, and D at the same time, player A would die before anyone else does.

Zhang Yang had not only chosen to fight all three at once, but he had also managed to kill 2 of them within 20 seconds! Though, he was technically using those broken OP skills. {Glare of the Death God} and {Sky Slicer}.

{Glare of the Death God} had an hour long cooldown while {Sky Slicer} had a shorter 5-minute cooldown. Zhang Yang would be lying if he said that he was satisfied with them. Since he had used up all the stronger skills, he had to fight the last monster normally.

Even though the monsters do have powerful attacks, Zhang Yang had super defense to counter that. He had enabled his first set equipment set effect and gained 20% damage reduction. If he uses {God of War Shield}, his Defense would be so strong that the elite tier monster would not be able to deal any damage at all!

However, {God of War Shield} had over an hour long cooldown. He would not want to waste that skill, hence, he decided to use {Rock Solid}. Once the skill is used, his Defense would reach as high as 89,050 points, and gain up to 70% damage reduction for only 10 seconds. Although it was short, the main point was in that 10 seconds, the monsters would not even make a scratch on Zhang



Yang! 60 seconds cooldown time was short enough for Zhang Yang to spam them endlessly.

As if that was not enough, Zhang Yang still had the Inheritance recovery skill which was almost the same as gaining a 10-second long invulnerability effect! That, and {Block}, {Blast Wave}, {Brutal Smash}, and other status effect skills. He did not even need Felice to morph into her Tree of Life form!

"Big brother sure is strong!" cried Felice as she clapped her hands and jumped around like a little girl. How could anyone get angry at such cute little girl?

Zhang Yang laughed and pats her head as thanks. He then walked to the corpses of the Guardians and left when there was no loot to be picked.

Along the route towards Calina's lair, Zhang Yang encountered more of those same monsters. Sadly, his killing speed was not as fast as the first group of monsters due to the cooldown of the skills. In fact, he could only perform as fast as the first kill once after a long duration. Still, he had Felice and Phoenix helping him out. In the end, it was no longer as fast as the first one.

Due to the slow killing speed and the insanely huge forest size, Zhang Yang set his course to the center of the forest and only managed to find what he sought for after 10 plus days. Sitting quietly in a large clearing was a palace that was made of wood. That should be where Calina was waiting.

As he walked, he thought to himself. "The quest to procuring the Primordial Staff of Life is not going to be easy. We must first collect all 8 parts of the staff and then fix them all together to get the complete form. If I'm not wrong, there're 6 parts found and are all in the hands of different guilds. It's going to be hard to have them hand over the parts."

Naturally, collecting all parts to form a complete [Primordial Staff of Life] would be hard. Of course, the guilds that had them

would never hand over the parts they had without a price. Perhaps a guild war will break out when the last part is found. Either that, or the guild masters would come together and decided on a more peaceful solution. That, however, would be unlikely.

Tap! Tap! Tap!

When Zhang Yang stepped on the wooden flooring of the palace, his metal greaves made a loud clattering noise that echoed throughout the entire palace. Zhang Yang frantically unequipped his greaves and tip-toed his way around the palace. Don't forget, he was there to sneak up on Calina and give her a prod. He could not afford to let Calina find out that he was there in the first place!

Even though what he did was considered to be redundant since monsters can only "notice" a player through the aggro system, the Celestial tier bosses had such an advanced A.I programming that it might actually affect their decision and movement. Even a tiny gesture or verbal taunt would affect how a boss triggers its skill! It was too obvious for both Kenzack and Regalia. Although the developers had revealed all the Celestial tier boss, they would either have ultimate skills to kill everyone, or super tanky skills that made them basically invulnerable! (1)

Zhang Yang continued on further and deeper into the palace and came across a truly haunting revelation. There was not a single monster inside! It was so quiet that it was starting to give Zhang Yang the creeps.

After 10 minutes or so, Zhang Yang reached the central hall of the palace and found his target, Calina. She was as sexy as she was when Zhang Yang first saw her. Her body was a perfect 10/10 and less than 10% of her skin was covered with a black cloth. She was sitting on her wooden carved throne, enjoying what seemed to be red wine. Every time she took a sip, her angled elf eyes would twitch. That tiny movement was so sexy and exquisite that it would make any fantasy hardcore fan go bonkers.

[Demon Lord, The Fallen Wind Ranger Calina] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 270

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack Power: ???

Skills: ???

Note: Once a glorious hero of the elven race and a powerful Wind Ranger of the Elves. However, after being betrayed by her own comrade in battle, her rage was used by the Demon King to turn her into a demon! Her once graceful manner was all lost and was replaced by an unrelenting urge to kill!

Due to the extreme level gap between Zhang Yang and Calina, he could only see the boss' Level while the other properties were hidden away. However, that didn't matter, since he was not going to fight her!

Zhang Yang took out the contraption that the quest had given him and prepared himself.

[Memento Glory] (Quest Item)

Use: Refresh Calina's memories of her glorious past and the days she had spent with her comrades before she was turned into a demon. Can only be used 3 meters around Calina.

Zhang Yang braced himself and sprinted like he had never sprinted before. He prepared all sorts of life-preserving skills, invulnerability skills, {Shield Wall}, {God of War Shield}, and other skills that would keep him alive, long enough to get close to Calina, and use the item!

Translator Note:

(1): I have no idea what does having strong skills have to do with a boss' AI. The author is not making sense. Editor Note: I don't think the author was referring to them in the same breath, lol.

Probably talking about how OP the bosses would be, either because they would be super intelligent, OR/AND have broken skills. Still, wouldn't want to provoke a boss into using more of its brain cells eh, heheh...there's this TV trope called – Powerful buffoon – check it out.

# Chapter 840: God Killer Chest Plate

---

"Urgh...what is that?" Calina placed down her goblet and leaned forward, revealing her deeper-than-any-canyon cleavage.

"Ah hah!" She squeaked. "It's the warrior from back then! I remember you now! Did you come to join me? Perhaps I would permit you. Only if you can reach me!"

Calina's had only managed to detect Zhang Yang when he was 100 meters away from her. Her level range was not too far from Zhang Yang, hence her aggro range had been reduced, unlike Kenzack or Regalia where their Level gaps were too far apart, causing their aggro range to extend as far 300 meters.

The demonic elf picked up her goblet and took a sip. A small trail of wine dribbled down to her chest and slid down seductively into the creeks of her chest plate. Zhang Yang could not help but stare and trace the tiny droplet with his eyes, failing to notice that Calina was preparing a spell. A cloud of black smoke formed around her hands and solidifies into a long arrow, which she sent hurtling at Zhang Yang.

The arrow whistled through the air and struck Zhang Yang within a microsecond.

BAM!

‘-4,346,500!’

Zhang Yang had taken the exact amount of damage to empty his HP bar which incidentally, killed him.

The [Book of Revelation's] revival effect instantly kicked in and revived Zhang Yang with a full HP. Without stopping, Zhang Yang kicked the ground hard and launched himself straight towards Calina.

"Hmph? That's odd. I could have sworn that I kill you. I don't miss. Oh well. There's always a first for everything!" Calina flicked

her fingers once more and immediately fired another arrow.

This time, Zhang Yang was ready. The moment Calina's fair little fingers snapped, Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall}.

The arrow hits Zhang Yang and still deals the same exact amount of damage to kill Zhang Yang, without fail. Zhang Yang frowned. That skill should be an attack that ignored 100% defense and could even pierce through invulnerability effects. It's a skill that will kill off anyone with a single strike. Talk about being broken AF.

Then again, no developers will give such a skill to a boss without proper reason. It must be a skill that is linked to the quest. Due to the plot armor in play, it would be understandable if Calina turns Zhang Yang into a beast.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms in his spirit form and frowned furiously. After cracking his head to think of a plan, he revived himself at the nearest graveyard and returned to Calina for another go. Due to the vast distance between the wooden palace and the graveyard, Zhang Yang had taken up to 5 days to return to Calina. He knew at then that he had to finish the quest as quickly as he could. If he dies repeatedly, he would have spent more than freaking month just to kill Calina! That was even after he has confirmed Calina's exact location, and is able to fly to the top of her palace to reach her directly with the Phoenix.

This time, he had figured out a plan. No wonder the accomplishment of the first quest had given him the skill {Shadow Clone}. It must be for this reason! This was also why a strong boss like Calina did not use her powerful AoE skills when she is fighting Zhang Yang. It must be for the quest! The quest had limited her to only one skill, and that is the point and kill magic arrow!

Zhang Yang returned to the palace and confronted Calina for the second time.

"Little soldier boy. I'm afraid you're far too weak to be here. Leave now. I'm busy enjoying this wine."

Zhang Yang charged forward and when Calina flicked her finger to cast the arrow, Zhang Yang dodged the first arrow by activating the {Shadow Clone}. A total of 11 Zhang Yangs went running towards her.

"HAH! Interesting! Come! Conjure as many of you can, I shall smite you down either way!"

Pew!

‘-4,346,500!’

Poof!

One of the clones turned into a puff of cloud.

"Trickly little mouse!" Calina smiled from ear to ear and fired another arrow.

Pew!

Poof!

"A game of chance eh? I like it!" Calina randomly pointed her finger at a random target and fired off an arrow that struck the real Zhang Yang.

Instant death.

"Blast it! What luck!" cried Zhang Yang as he revived at the graveyard for the second time. Along the way back to the palace. Zhang Yang spent his time calculating his chances. Based on the boss' attack pattern, the rate of fire, and the speed at which he ran, Zhang Yang would have to be extremely lucky, 10 times in a row in order to be the last standing 'Zhang Yang' to be in range of Calina to use the device. The chances of him succeeding the quest was less than 10%!

"O. Goddess of luck. Please have mercy on me!"

Since {Shadow Clone} had a long 2 hour cooldown duration, Zhang Yang had tried other methods like using {Shadow of the Void}, and {Burrow} to get close to Calina. Somehow, she could

even detect him from within the Netherworld and kill him easily with a single blast. {Burrow} was more unsightly. She would laugh and blast the arrow deep into the earth and instantly determine his grave there and then.

It then was made obvious that the developers was testing a person's luck! The only way to defeat Calina was by using the {Shadow Clone} or by bringing in a large army to raid her as a boss. That would not be very efficient. In fact, both methods weren't.

To save time, Zhang Yang had chosen to use the [Book of Revelation] skill's strengthening slot on {Shadow Clone}. Even though the duration of the cooldown was reduced down to only 90 minutes, 30 minutes was plenty enough. Think of it this way, if he fails again and again, the total time wasted would not be as long as not having the skill cooldown shortened.

After being killed, again and again, Zhang Yang suddenly felt the need to wash his feet and visit the nearest shrine to beseech the gods for good luck. He had failed 8 times in a row and his best record was having survived until the seventh clone.

"Aiii! Noobie tank! Where in tarnation are you!?"

Every now and then, the little girl would call him and ask about his whereabouts. Before he had left the party, he had failed to inform about his quest. After giving her a vague answer every time she nudged him, the little girl had finally left him alone after being bored of his answers.

Again! Die...

Again! Die...

Again! Die...

@#%@\$%^#@ AGAIN! @%\$!@%^#\$ DIE!

ARGHHHHHH

Zhang Yang had gone mad. He had lost count to how many times



he had died to return to try again! In the end, Zhang Yang felt numb. He had lost his mood to even smile when Felice tried to comfort her master.

Three days later...

"Noobie tank! Guess what?" Wei Yan Er shouted at Zhang Yang.

"What..."

"We found a piece of the staff thing!"

"About bloody d\*mn time!"

"What's that supposed to mean?!"

"Erhm...well. I mean it's time to contact the other guild masters to discuss the next step. Everyone has a piece and cannot proceed with the quest, or the boss, if they do not work together."

"About that. Uncle Hundred had already contacted them and they are discussing it right now! So, when are you coming back?"

"I'm not sure myself. But if you guys have combined all the pieces together. I'll come back to fight the boss, regardless."

Zhang Yang ended the call there and focused on the fight with Calina. For the past three days, he had been using the {God of War Transformation} to gain its speed boost to shorten the time taken to reach to Calina's side. However, the palace itself seems to have placed a speed cap limit on which a player could move. Sadly, even with his radiant wings, Zhang Yang's movement speed would be the same as it is when he is normal.

Zhang Yang then left his Transformation be and put it aside.

At then, after failing the Transformation attempt, Zhang Yang went back to his usual attempt.

{Shadow Clone}!

RUN!

"HAHAHAHA!"

Pew! Poof!

1...

Pew!

2...

Pew!

3...

Pew Pew Pew!

8...

When the eighth clone was killed, Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine. Could it be, that he might win this round?!

Pew!

Poof!

There goes the ninth one and Zhang Yang was only 15 meters away from Calina! With one last strike, Zhang Yang will win!

There were only two Zhang Yangs left on the field and the boss lifted her fingers to take aim.

At that moment, time seems to slow down for Zhang Yang and he could feel his guts tightening up, surprised that he was not vomiting.

Pew!

...

...

...

Poof!

Heck yeah! Zhang Yang cheered in his heart and sprinted as fast as he could with the quest item in his hands directed at Calina.

10 meters...5 meters...3 meters...!

Activate!

The small like pendant flung opened and unleashed a powerful bright light that surrounds Calina and engulfed her in a cocoon.

"What is this!"

Calina tried to struggle free from the light. She spread her wings and randomly flew around the room to get rid of the light that surrounded her. She struggled on and on but eventually, the blinding light was all too powerful for her to get rid off. She crashed landed on the wooden floor and writhed in pain. She clutched her head with her hands and began to scream in pain.

Image of her past memories when she was still an elf was projected in front of her eyes. Zhang Yang could see the images around of her when she had a fair skin and radiant complexion, laughing and cheering with her companions.

Zhang Yang finally relaxed and fell to his knees. Calina's struggling stopped, yet she was still writhing in pain, just not as loud as the beginning. Her internal struggles continued on for a least 10 minutes before she finally came to. Her demonized features were gone and her calm, kind, and gentle appearance returned to her.

"I...I....what have I done!" Calina cried and Zhang Yang went to comfort her. When Zhang Yang came to her, she immediately cast a magic spell that clad her back in a tight hunter's outfit. Decent yet sexy.

"It's fine now." Said Zhang Yang.

"I...I was betrayed! You have to understand! I didn't have control over my rage and when the Demon King took over my soul, he only made the rage burn even more violently. He made me a demon!"

"No. You're not a demon. That's why I had faith that I can rescue you."

"I...I can never thank you enough for what you have done for me.

From the bottom of my heart. Thank you for restoring me. I am finally back!"

Calina got back to her feet and wiped away her tears. "I swear. In the name of a Hunter, I will kill all the Demons until the Demon King himself is slain!"

Zhang Yang checked her status and saw a change to her properties.

[Calina, The Reborn Wind Ranger] (Celestial, Half Elf – Half Demon)

Level: ???

Note: The soul of Calina, the true Wind Ranger has returned, stronger than ever!

Nothing was showed. Not even her level! Just how powerful is she now?

Calina's name tag was now a green name NPC. She walked slowly towards Zhang Yang and took his hands, and cupped it against her chest.

"I, Calina will forever be in your debt, young warrior."

"Don't mention it."

"There is still some demonic blood within me. I must go back to the Pool of Life to purify myself in order to become a true elf. Warrior. I will rest in Athuran, the Sacred Land of the Elves. Normally, no humans are allowed to set foot on the land. But I'll make sure that you will be treated as our honored guest. Please visit me when you have the time."

The beautiful Celestial tier boss spread her half-angelic, half demon wings and shot into the sky, breaking the wooden palace ceiling and disappearing into the bright horizon.

"Well...damn." Zhang Yang sulked. It's not like he could not enter Athuran without invitation. That sort of reward was not the

reward he wanted. Might as well give him her weapon or some Celestial tier equipment as a reward!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and returned to the Holy City. After that, he traveled all the way to a Territory and beamed back to White Jade Castle to talk to Felon.

"Good job, young warrior!" The old wizard praised Zhang Yang. "Calina is finally back to our side! You have done well! Not only have the Demons lost one of their great Generals, we have gained one powerful ally! This might turn the tables around!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Quell Thy Rage. Obtained 2,000,000,000 Experience Points!’

"Here. Take this. I found it when I was cleaning my old armor collection. I have no use for this." Felon gave Zhang Yang a radiant chest plate to Zhang Yang.

Nonchalantly, Zhang Yang took the chest plate and inspected it.

Hm? A CELESTIAL SET EQUIPMENT!?

[God Killer Chest Plate] (Celestial, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2560

Vitality: +102919

Strength: +13249

Dexterity: +5468

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 205,830

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 5,835 damage on attack.

Equip: Grant a chance to invoke the power of the Death God. Chance to inflict 1,000,000 Chaos Damage to a target that attacks

you.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 250

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

A third set equipment! What a wonderful and worthwhile reward! No wonder Calina had nothing to give him when he managed to restore her "sanity".

All in all, the chest plate's properties were powerful in terms of defense. It had increased Zhang Yang maximum HP by a total of 1,000,000! Paired with the {Vitality Aura}, he had gained a total of 1,400,000 HP! Hence, with the third Celestial tier equipment in hand, Zhang Yang's maximum HP was now 6,271,790!

# Chapter 841: Regalia

---

"Noobie tank! We have already discussed about the battle setting and had come in agreement to fight Regalia together. Each guild will surrender their part of the magic staff thingy. After the boss is killed, each guild that has contributed one part will receive one portion of the loot while we take two!" cried Wei Yan Er when Zhang Yang was just finishing with socketing gemstone in his [God Killer Chest Plate].

Even though she had left out some information, Zhang Yang basically understood what had happened. There were a total 8 parts to the [Primordial Staff of Life]. Lone Desert Smoke had two parts, while the other 6 were in the hands of other guilds. It would seem that all the guilds had sorted out their spats and had decided to work together instead of fighting one another. Since it had come down to that way, everyone had agreed to split the loot equally. Since Lone Desert Smoke had contributed two parts of the staff, they had the right to claim two parts of the loot.

The sevens guilds that will participate in the killing of Regalia were Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Hell's Family, Land of Savages, Dark Palace, Paragon, and Justice League.

If Zhang Yang was the one deciding, he would have resort to violence after the fight and grab what he could. However, since Hundred Shots had chosen the path of diplomacy, Zhang Yang's bad route was eliminated. Everyone then belonged to their own region's top guild. The stage that they were playing on was at the global scale. A tiny mistake would cost their popularity and fame.

"It's time to fight yooo! Come back here! The other guild masters were complaining! They said that if you're not coming, they would want to claim our one extra share of the loot!"

Zhang Yang chuckled. Although they had agreed to let Lone Desert Smoke have one more share of the loot due to the extra

contribution to the [Primordial Staff of Life], the real reason they had agreed to such terms was due to the fear of Lone Desert Smoke. It had nothing to do with having 2 parts of the staff. It was the guild itself that they feared.

Such a thing should be mentioned whispers. Everyone knew about it and should be quiet about it. Having it discussed out loud would be quite an awkward situation.

Zhang Yang returned to the Holy City and joined with his guild. When everyone was gathered, all seven guilds sortied out in unison and flew towards the valley with vigor.

Perhaps it was considered too early to decide, but Zhang Yang had acknowledged that the guilds that had followed behind him were the strongest guilds in the entire game. Each guild had sent out 30 players with Transformation Inheritance skills. Other members from all the guilds were commanded to guard the valley to prevent any outsiders from trying to meddle with their fight.

In total, there were 210 players who were going to fight Regalia. Even though the number was far too low, if everyone's prowess is not made up, killing the boss would be easy and fast. Having too many players would not be beneficial, since the boss had the skills to convert players into his own slaves. In short, more players = more slaves, which would mean a greater threat.

The fighters were ready and the other guild members started to push anyone who was not participating in the fight back out of the valley. Although their move had angered many of the spectators around, the players that were not involved dare not disobey their orders. The most they could do was to curse them silently, hoping that all seven guilds will be killed by the boss!

Out of the, blue someone shouted, "We are all from different regions of the game. AoE attacks will cause damage to other players. Hence, unless its necessary skills like {Tornado Cleave} and {Horizontal Sweep}, anyone who dares to use any AoE skills at



all shall be killed on the spot."

Zhang Yang tried to search for the source of the voice but failed, for there were too many players around.

"I agree."

"We should not harm each other until the entire ordeal is over. When this is done and the dust settles, we can go back to becoming enemies."

"How bout that? It's bout time I hear something nice. I'll play along with your game. No AoE skills innit? Gotcha loud and clear boss."

Zhang Yang cringed at a player who was talking like a cowboy.

"If there's nothing else, let's just start the fight now!"

Zhang Yang took the initiative and activated his Transformation and had Felice Transform into her Goddess of War Scion form. The Phoenix pet was excluded from the fight, since its attacks were all AoE based. Since there were plenty of strong DPS around, it would not put a dent in his overall damage without the Phoenix.

With Zhang Yang taking the lead, everyone else flashed out with their skills and charged towards the boss. Amongst the 210 players around, only 29 players had A Class Inheritances. The ones taking the lead were the S class Inheritance players, followed by the A class and the rest were only running on their battle mounts. Once the gap between the boss was narrowed, everyone started launching their attacks.

"Hmph? Are you all so willing to offer up your life to the God of Death?" Regalia picked up his sword and swung it, blasting out a hundred meter long power blast. Right after the skills, Regalia opened his mouth and starting singing a melody with lyrics that was alien to anyone.

{Song of Despair}!

"Endless! DO IT NOW!"

"HEH! Shut your dirty mouth up! HAH!" Endless Starlight pulled out a magic staff and pointed it at the boss. The green colored emerald that was encased in the magic staff glowed brightly and engulfed the boss with the light. The light cocooned Regalia and seeped into his body, muting him completely.

{Song of Despair} nullified!

Endless Starlight was the one in charge of the staff, since his DPS was not useful enough to be in the fight. When the boss was muted from casting {Song of Despair}, the battle soon became a normal boss fight.

Zhang Yang sliced and diced the boss until he had enough Rage points. Then, he used {Charge Up Strike} and combined it with {Sky Slicer}. With the help from everyone's aura skills, Zhang Yang had dealt more than 300 million damage within 10 seconds.

When the numbers jumped up, everyone was baffled by the damage.

In reality, Zhang Yang was not the only one who had the skill. In the previous invasion war, each region will have one player earning the skill by being the first to kill the Demon Lord. However, {Charge Up Strike} was a skill that was unique to Zhang Yang only. No one could deal such a powerful nuclear strike!

It was unfortunate that the European player that had obtained the skill {Sky Slicer} was God's Left Hand. Although he was an S class Inheritance player, he was famous for his Defense, healing powers and not his attack. That, and the fact that he is unable to wield a two-handed weapon like Zhang Yang. With a one-handed weapon, the skill would never reach its full potential. As such, even though he could use {Sky Slicer}, the total damage dealt was only 70,000,000.

As the fight proceeded smoothly, Zhang Yang had a bright idea.

"Hey guys, instead of the previous agreement, how about we decided the guild to have the first pick by competing with our total DPS?" His tone and voice contained the utmost sarcasm.

"Hmph! Bring it!"

"Come on! Let's see who will have the last laugh!"

Each guild had 30 guild members, then. If they lose in the DPS contest, there will not be any excuses that they could conjure up. It was a fair bet, since it will decide the guild having the first pick. Now that everyone had agreed to it, Zhang Yang decided to go all out. In fact, everyone else had decided to do the same as well. No one would want to be the last to pick the leftovers.

With that thought in mind, all sorts of power boosting skills, buffs, potions, and items were used to increase their attack.

"You think you could defeat me?! I may have lost the ability to sing but my power with the sword lies unchanged. I shall be the one that prevails!"

It was true. Despite losing the skill, his sword blast was still as strong as any boss-level attack. Still, {Song of Despair} was a skill that could considered to be an impossibly powerful skill that should not exist in the first place! Technically, Regalia was not weakened but merely reduced to a normal boss.

Like all Celestial boss that Zhang Yang had encountered, Regalia's physical and magic attack did not share the same global cooldown system. Both {Force Strike} and {Fiery Blast} could be used at the same time. Worse still, both skills had only a 2-second cooldown. The DPS was incredibly strong. Then again, Zhang Yang's defense was also incredibly strong.

At that moment, Zhang Yang had over 180,000 Defense and 40% damage reduction passive. With {Rock Solid}, he would have 460,000 Defense and 70% damage reduction. Although the skill will last for 10 seconds, it was more than enough to help Zhang

Yang be a temporary immortal!

Attackers were trying their best to be the highest damage DPS; tankers were trying their best to have the highest aggro. Be it Zhang Yang or Mellow Poison, God's Left Hand, Hell's Warrior, everyone was fighting to be top on the list. However, Zhang Yang had both the highest DPS and Defense. How could any tank take away his aggro position? If they wanted to, they would have to first try to exceed his DPS!

{Tornado Cleave}! {Tornado Cleave}! {Tornado Cleave}!

As expected of a Celestial tier boss, his most powerful aspect was his AoE damage. Like other skills, the boss' {Tornado Cleave} also had a 2-second cooldown duration. All main healers were busy healing everyone, while the secondary healers were busy healing the healers themselves!

Right then, Lone Desert Smoke had started to gain the upper hand in the fight. Amongst the 30 players, 7 of them had enabled their first Celestial tier set effects, allowing them to gain a strong offense and defense power. Even though it was just one set effect, its prowess was strong. Take Zhang Yang for example, he had gained a 20% damage reduction just from the first set effect!

The average HP of all Lone Desert Smoke was roughly around 70%. All other players were struggling at 50%. Either way, healers were already pumping out their best efforts to heal. In cases of mortal dangers, players themselves would have to rely on their own skills to survive. Either way, it would not be easy. It was, after all, a Celestial tier boss. It can never be easy for them.

Seven groups of players were fighting at their best efforts to make every second they spend fighting count. They were fighting for their lives! The thought of competing was no longer in their mind, as their lives were on the line!

To make things worse for players, the boss was throwing out black pools which was the skill - {Demonic Soul} which could turn

players into the enemy once touched. Players were forced to run around chaotically once the pool appeared.

Even though they were having a tough time, all 210 players there were the best in the world. No matter how hard it was, they could still deal powerful damage to the boss.

90%...80%...

Even with {Demon Constitution}, it was almost not possible for the boss to slow down the HP drop.

"ENOUGH! DIE!" Regalia started to lose his temper at that point and swung his sword like a madman. As a Celestial tier boss, there was a certain pride for Regalia. He would never allow himself to be killed by a bunch of ants.

After 20 minutes, all seven groups of players had suffered from numerous members lost. At the same time, the boss had also lost 80% of his HP!

203 players left...194...143...

Every second mattered, especially when the boss has gone berserk and was vulnerable.

112...94...63...31...

As the total number of player started to drop like flies, so did the HP of the boss. The last surviving members were definitely the strongest amongst all players. Surely, they would have high DPS and extremely good hands-on skills to survive that long.

4%...3%...2%...1%...

Regalia would perhaps be the most pathetic boss ever, since he was killed in less than 3 to 4 (real time) hours. It was even safe to say that Regalia was the most short-lived Celestial tier boss.

Players did not even care about that! All they cared then, was the loot!

# Chapter 842: Sharing is Caring

---

Regalia fell to the ground, dead and lifeless, spitting out a mountain of loot for the players.

"Well...well...well. Will yer look at that eh? Thank god we skipped school today for this!"

"D\*mn straight."

Not many players besides Zhang Yang's party have ever seen such an amount of loot. Those who had died in the beginning of the fight had already managed to return to the valley. Those who survived the entire ordeal were just sitting down by the side of the treasure, panting like dogs as they feasted their eyes on the glittering treasures. Luckily, all that were present then were core members of the guilds. Gaming mannerisms were already buried deep in their hearts and they knew better than to snatch and run.

Then again, all the seven groups had set the looting system to Party Leaders only. That meant that only the guild master could pick up the items.

"Alright. Boss' dead now. Time to compare d\*cks!"

"You mean DPS."

"I know what I said."

"Sigh...men..."

All seven party leaders posted out their own party total damage dealt to the boss and compared. Without a doubt, Zhang Yang was sure that Lone Desert Smoke would be the first on the list. In fact, he was a little disappointed when he saw Lone Desert Smoke was only 30% higher than the second group, which was Land of Savages. He was hoping for more. He was just being a little greedy. However, it was only normal that Lone Desert Smoke could be much stronger than the rest. They had two S class Inheritance DPS in the party and a total of 7 players that had enabled their first set

effects. As for the rest of Lone Desert Smoke party members, they were all wearing a full set of Ascended tier equipment. There was no one in the party still wearing a Holy tier equipment excluding accessories.

With Lone Desert Smoke being the only party that had a large gap between their total damage dealt, the rest of the group had only a tiny 5% gap in between them.

There was no argument that they could make to deny Lone Desert Smoke their first pick for the loot.

Zhang Yang walked nonchalantly towards the pile of loot and started rummaging through the loot to check the items. There was a total of 9 Celestial set equipment and all of them were gloves. There were 5 more regular Celestial tier equipment, 11 [Advance Demonic Pearl], 21 [Level 8 Gemstone], 7 skill books, and 9 [Skill Point Crystal].

Zhang Yang thought for a while and turned to his party. "Guys. I have 3 set equipment right now and I will pick the Guardian set equipment. Will that be okay with you guys?"

"What are you talking about? Go ahead. I'm surprised you'd even ask!"

"Guild master. You don't have to be modest with us. Please take the equipment and have a half your set effects activated! With that achievement, you could lead us to glory!"

"Guild master. Don't mind any of us. Go for it!"

"Screw you noobie tank! Why you'd get to ---UFFMMM!"

Fatty Han walked in and muffled Wei Yan Er's little mouth. The scene of which looked like a fat guy was about to kidnapped a little girl. Everyone laughed and persuaded Zhang Yang to go for his choice. In fact, besides the little girl who was only being playful, everyone else was supporting Zhang Yang's selfish actions. It was not a secret that when a player equips a fourth set equipment, he

or she could enable the second set effect. Zhang Yang picked the [God Killer Gauntlet and activated the second set effect: All allies within 40 meters will receive 10% reduced damage. It was a damage reduction buff for the entire party!

Everyone cheered for Zhang Yang when they saw the effect.

[God Killer Gauntlet] (Celestial, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2560

Vitality: +49401

Strength: +6394

Dexterity: +2624

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 98,880.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 5,654 damage on attack.

Equip: Grants an additional attack blocking instance for the skill {Block}.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

God Killer Set Equipment (4/8)

Two equip set effect: Increases damage reduction passive by 20%.

Four equip set effect: All allies within 40 meters will receive 10% reduced damage.

It was a damage reduction buff for the entire party!

The second set effect was a passive skill like an aura skill. When Zhang Yang equipped the gauntlet, a faint golden glow appeared around Zhang Yang and formed a barely visible shield that covered 40 meters around him.



Although it was nice to have a protective aura effect, it was incredibly unfortunate for Zhang Yang that the skill did not affect him!

Other guild members were stunned when they saw the effect Zhang Yang gave off when he equipped the gauntlet. Without any doubt in their mind, they knew that Zhang Yang had managed to activate his second set effect. Even though they were not the ones with the God Killer set, they knew that it was and could guess that it was an aura effect.

"My darling <3. Did you get yourself a fourth God Killer set equipment?" Dusk Phoenix literally cried out with her utmost lustful voice. Everyone else that was present gave her weird looks while the rest of the Hell's Family guild members' nostrils were flaring up!

"Shh! It's a secret!"

Everyone knew that there could only be 3 Celestial tier set equipment since only three Celestial tier bosses have been killed. So, how could they explain Zhang Yang managing to conjure up a fourth Celestial tier equipment? It did not make any sense! Everyone was madly thinking about for a second but suppressed the urge to know as they went back to the pile of loot to continue the looting process.

Hourglass Figure stepped forward and when she first touched the Celestial tier equipment, she could not help but smile in ecstasy. It took her a while to move away from the pile with a Sniper's set equipment glove in her hands. Dusk Phoenix was next, followed by Heart of Destruction, God's Left Hand, Snow Seeker, and Captain America.

Zhang Yang walked to the front for his second turn since Lone Desert Smoke had earned the right to have a second pick. Hence, when the other six guild masters had picked their loot, Zhang Yang could still go for another round.

"Zhan Yu. I implore you to let me have one of your picks. Name your price and I shall fulfill whatever you want."

"Dearest <3 <3. Give me one of the Celestial tier set equipment! I'll accept it as an engagement present. You can skip the ring!"

"Guild master Zhan Yu. Since we have known each other for so long and have been cooperating with each other. How about selling us one of your picks? I'll cut a good deal with Silky Soft Holdings for your sake!"

Before Zhang Yang could even touch the loot, a series of private messages rang in his inbox. They were all from Hourglass Figure, Dusk Phoenix with love, and Snow Seeker. Zhang Yang felt extremely awkward but quickly shook his head and gestured no to every one of them with a sad face. He went ahead and picked two equipment, which was a Defender and a Beastmaster set equipment.

Amongst the set equipment, while everyone else only had one, Lone Desert Smoke was extremely lucky to claim three! Besides the guild masters, other guild's members were extremely jealous and angry at Lone Desert Smoke. As such, the remaining 5 regular Celestial tier equipment was split up according to the guild masters' turns. Hence, Zhang Yang had not managed to haul any of them. Justice League was also one of the guilds that had not managed to get a regular Celestial tier equipment.

"What bullcockery is this!" cried Captain America as he cursed.

"ahem" Snow Seeker cleared her throat on purpose and said, "Language."

"Oh screw you."

He was being grumpy and cursed the boss for not dropping one more regular Celestial tier equipment. If that is the case, Lone Desert Smoke would be the one eating dirt.

# Chapter 843: Blazing Coral

---

While the procurement of Hua Yi Investment Fund is still in the midst of processing, Zhong Xiu Hua's mom took the initiative to raise money and perform a reverse acquisition, causing a huge uproar within the stock-market. This decision was made due to her unwillingness to forfeit the ownership of the organization. As a summary of the current scenario, Hua Yi Investment Fund is not an easy prey which could be devoured within a short period of time.

Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was not worried at all. After all, the teleportation service provided within his territory actually brought in a profit by the billions. The initial 20 billion loan could be easily paid off within half a year. Whereas, their current competitor should be the one to be concerned whether they could continue this protracted war of funds. Moreover, mommy Zhong does not dare to use her political connections yet, as this case involved too much money. Any information disclosed could lead to unsalvageable chaos. At most, procedures for loans could be reduced by a bit, however debts should still be cleared on time, without any room for delay!

Zhang Yang still prioritized on leveling. After all, he is not well-versed in business operations. It is still best handled by business professionals.

Of course, other than his level grinding sessions, he would have to become a temporary "model". On and off he would have to wear 4 of his Celestial tier equipment and patrol within Holy City, presenting himself like an advertisement to the crowd. The current Lone Desert Smoke is now a Level 8 guild and had a lot of new room.

To be honest, even if Zhang Yang does not become a roaming advertisement himself, tons and tons of players would willingly compete for any chance to join the guild, as long as any news about

Lone Desert Smoke openly recruits new member were to be released. The benefits of joining the guild were very lucrative, being able to get a slot within their elite team would enable them to get an allowance worth thousands. Although the sum of money might not be much, having the right to exchange guild points for higher tiered equipment posed as one of the biggest attractions, which caused everyone to be envious of. Currently, Lone Desert Smoke was ranked as the world's number one guild. Being able to join such a guild is a glory in itself. Now, this temptation made everyone squeeze all their brain muscles, crafting a way up to join this guild.

The recruitment task had been assigned to Hundred Shots. Recruitment criterias were still strict to prevent parasites from existing within the guild, which may cause reputational damage if not taken care of properly.

Lone Desert Smoke had a very good reputation within the China server. They would not monopolize training zones, random PvP zones and possessed a strict user activity record. Unlike Eternal Flame guild, although the upper echelons were well-behaved professionals, the lower-ranked players were pretty much a bunch of rascals. On and off, there would be cases of the strong bullying the weak happening within their guild.

Somewhere far away in the Holy City...

"Splassshhh !!" From the bottom of the lake, Zhang Yang had just finished killing a bunch of water fiends and emerged on the surface of the lake. Once reaching the short, the speed of Mystic Turtle immediately slowed down, comparable to the speed of an ancient Pentium I Processor. Fortunately, the NPC for the quest clearance was right beside the lake, thus Zhang Yang to dismount himself from Mystic Tortoise and clear the task, earning him 50 million experience points.

Before he could get away from that particular area, a group with more than 10 members from Chinese server surrounded the NPC to

clear their quests as well.

"Hooh, This warrior dude here has some pretty neat equipment!" said one of the members after taking a glance at Zhang Yang.

"Pretty nice indeed, looks like a full-set of Holy tier equipment!"

"This dude here is definitely the main tank for some prestigious guild!"

"Dammit, I'm so envious of him!"

For ordinary players, having a full-set of Holy tier equipment is already classified as a symbol of one of those top-tier players. As for Ascended and Celestial tier equipment, they can never imagine the possibility beyond that!

One of the knights moved towards Zhang Yang and asked: "Fellow warrior, could you help us tank a boss? It is a Holy tier boss. We would give you the rights to pick a loot from the boss first!"

Zhang Yang chuckled a bit. Considering his current strength, even without initiating a Transformation he could solo kill a Holy tier boss easily. Even for a Holy tier boss, as long as they do not have HP regeneration skills, Zhang Yang was confident enough to fight them alone after using his Inheritance Transformation skill.

The suggestion by the opposition definitely did not provide any attraction for Zhang Yang. Before he voiced out his rejection, he noticed a female hunter within the group. After pondering for a while, he decided against rejecting their invitation and proceeded to join their party.

After gaining Zhang Yang's approval, the leader immediately sent out an invite for Zhang Yang and accepted the request and joined the team.

"Wait!? Why did my HP increase!?"

"Me too!"

"Me three!"

"Guys! It's at least a 30% boost!"

"Crap...that's more than my yearly salary increment..."

"Hold up! My damage...It's boosted!"

Just as Zhang Yang joined the team, his {Vitality Aura} spreaded across the party, together with the [Book of Revelation] effect, and the buff from his second Celestial tier equipment was also successfully initiated.

"This is a powerful {Vitality Aura}! What the heck is this? [Book of Revelation]? God Killer Protection? Unbelievable! No wonder he is the main tank, these skills are too imba!"

Turns out, quite a fuss occurred once Zhang Yang actually joined their party. Being only ordinary ranked players with only Ethereal tier equipment who hardly possessed any Holy equipment, there's no way for them to know the effects and benefits that could be brought forth by God Killer set equipment.

"Wow, I could even solo a BOSS with these buffs!!" Once this cocky statement was spilled within the group, inevitably, it caused quite some laughter among the peers.

"Well, enough is enough. We should depart soon. Don't let other parties steal our boss kill!" says the leader, known as Bull Demon King. He as a Guardian as well. Initially, he only had 750,000 HP. However, after getting the buff provided by Zhang Yang, his HP surged to 1,050,000. In addition to the HP buff, he also got a 10% of passive damage reduction which raised his eagerness to try tanking a boss once again.

During the journey, mounts were summoned by the team, however only 2 persons possessed flight-based mount. Zhang Yang did not want to disclose his current identity, hence he did not summon his Phoenix. Instead, he decided to only summon the White Bear as his mount for this trip. For the first time, the

summoning of a gold-rank mount gave the team a sense of relief. For once, they felt that they finally had something superior.

Zhang Yan did not bother about it. When he cast his gaze towards the female hunter in front of him, a surge of emotions ripple through his heart.

Make no mistake, it was not the sense of love. It was all because she was one of his teammates in the A-rank League in his previous life. Among the 10 members within the team, Blazing Coral was ranked second within the team, with only Zhang Yang being stronger than her. She was also one of the main reasons and contributors which allowed the team to compete up to the A-Rank League.

As per implied by her name "Blazing Coral", she was a hottie in real life. Due to the fact that there are offline ranked matches for A-Rank League, Zhang Yan was able to meet with Blazing Coral quite often and had quite a good relationship. Despite not being a married person, Blazing Coral had a very lovey-dovey boyfriend, and both of them had a pure relationship. Zhang Yang's feelings for her only capped at friendship. Nothing more, nothing less.

It was precisely because of their previous friendship, did Zhang Yang agree to join the party, offering help for Blazing Coral.

After traveling for approximately 10 minutes, they reached a dense forest and encountered the boss.

The boss was a huge tiger, with colorful stripes covering its whole body. The length of the tail measured more than 3 meters long, and a pair of canine teeth displaying the might of a sharp blade. Its mighty features and size emphasized the image of the king among all beasts!

[Saber Tooth Tiger King Mangfei] (Holy, Beast)

Level: 230

HP: 2,300,000,000

Defense: 22,500

Melee Attack: 185,530 – 265,530

Skills:

[Tiger Pounce]: Activates a quick attack, causing 100% melee physical damage to all targets within 30 meters.

[Bite]: Deals 150% melee physical damage to a target.

Note: The beast is not to be underestimated. There was a reason why it was a King of all tigers.

For a player who only have Ethereal tier equipment, a Holy tier boss will be quite a challenge to them. If a certain player possesses a strong skill, then it might give them an edge against the boss. However, ordinary players could hardly obtain an OP skill. Hence, Saber Tooth Tiger King Mangfei became a high wall for the team to overcome.

"Warrior, you only need to sustain the buff for us. We will take care of the boss. Worry not of your promised share of the loot," said Bull Demon King. With the vitality aura buff, 10% damage mitigation and 50% damage increase, he is very confident at taking down the boss.

Zhang Yan smiled casually. After all, he only helped the team because of Fire Coral. He could care less about how the other people behaved and thought of the situation.

The battle began with Bull Demon King leading the charge against the boss, while other team members released their fierce attacks.

With the increase of a 40% vitality and 10% damage mitigation, the pressure and precision in terms of sustaining the healing process among team members had greatly been eased, allowing more room for errors during the fight. Moreover, with the 50% damage buff, it had given a significant boost of damage towards all players, especially towards the poorly equipped ones.



For Ethereal tier equipment, they could only be buffed by up to 110%. With an increment of 50% of buff stacked on top of it, effectively a 24% DPS were added to the players. Of course, for Zhang Yang who had a 300% damage bonus which came from all sorts of effects, he would only enjoy a 12.5% overall damage increment from the buff itself.

Under normal circumstances, King Devil Cow's party would never be able to deal with this boss. However, with the 3 buffs provided to the team, they could easily suppress the boss. With the constant healing provided by the healers, the team's overall HP pool was able to remain within a safe zone all the time.

"HAHA! THIS IS AWESOME! Saw my crit there? That's 370,000 crit damage I dealt there!"

"I wish I could have these buffs forever, that'll be great!"

While fighting, everyone cried out in excitement and joy whilst enjoying the boost Zhang Yang provided.

Zhang Yang noticed that the party was a very random party. While there was a total of 17 members within the party, all of them belonged to 9 different guilds. There was even 3 of them who were guild-less at the moment, including Blazing Coral.

"Perhaps I should invite her..." Zhang Yang thought to himself.

In his previous life, Blazing Coral had only mingled within a small guild as well. The only reason that she was able to team up with Zhang Yang was all because they had met quite a few times in the C-rank Leagues. Both parties were not able to advance further due to lacking strong party members. When the both of them actually join forces together, they breezed over the B-rank League and was able to advance further towards A-rank League despite only being able to be placed within the lower tier of A-rank League.

Zhang Yang had full respects of Blazing Coral's capability as a player. In fact, if it was not for the issue of not having stronger

equipment, she would be even stronger than Lost Dream! She would definitely have an A-Rank prowess with good equipment in hand.

After thinking about it for a while, he decided to send out an invite for Blazing Coral after the boss session. After all, she did not have a guild, which will not cause any form of conflict.

Holy tier bosses are weak, to begin with. Thus, after approximately half-an-hour of hack and slashing, the boss finally howled his last and perished on the battlefield. Loot was scattered around the field after its defeat.

# Chapter 844: Returning A Favor with Emnity

---

Because the party was in Leader-Distribution Mode, everyone could only look at the loot and drool. They had to wait for the Bull Demon King to distribute the loots.

Bull Demon King turned his eyes around and passed an Ethereal Tier equipment over to Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Warrior, this is the payment that I have promised you!"

Huh? Did he just strike his own head with the stone that he tried to bear?

Zhang Yang thought to himself quietly. Immediately, he understood something. His powerful damage output had triggered some jealousy among the others. So those people would, of course, want to provoke Zhang Yang now! The first one to attack would become a red-name player. Red-named players would be killed on the spot! That also would grant an additional 20% chance of dropping an item or equipment when the player is killed.

What an insidious bastard!

At first, Zhang Yang did not even have any desire for any of the loot. However, the situation was like lending his hand out to help an old lady, only for the old lady to hold on to him and accuse him of pushing her down to the ground! Of course, he was infuriated now!

However, this Bull Demon King would have never thought that he was currently robbing the Number One player in the entire server! A man whose heart is not content is like a snake that is trying to swallow an elephant. However, this snake was about to swallow something that would kill it!

"What? Do you think you deserve better than this?" Another player from the same guild as Bull Demon King came up and said.

Well, it was pretty obvious that they had already planned everything out nicely. Their intention was to provoke Zhang Yang and lure him into hitting any one of them.

"Bull Demon King! How can you do this?" Blazing Coral immediately stood up, trying to bring 'justice' to the table. She was infuriated by what she just saw, "Didn't you promise him that he gets to choose one equipment first? How can you break your promise just like that?"

Bull Demon King smiled coldly and said, "He didn't even deal any damage to the boss! All he did was to stand there and do nothing! Does he think he can do that and walk away with the best equipment here? How can we allow him to do that? It'll be unfair!"

"If it wasn't because of his Aura Skill support, we couldn't have taken out the boss at all! You should be ashamed of yourself!" Blazing Coral was still as bad-tempered as always. Zhang Yang could not help to reveal a nostalgic smile on his face.

"Pui! It's true that we took down the boss all on our own! So, we deserve everything we earned. You get what you work for! Do you understand?" Bull Demon King spoke in disdain. Well, the look on his face could really provoke people into slapping him!

That bastard turned to his party members and said, "You guys won't want to let a guy that did nothing back there to walk away with an equipment that we fought hard to get right?"

Well, it was most probably because he was quite popular in his own guild, so those players nodded still, even though they revealed a vague sense of shame on their faces.

"You! YOU ---" Blazing Coral had lost herself to her anger. She pointed her finger at the others as she trembled in rage.

"Cut the crap now... you guys just want to provoke me so that I would hit you. Well, you wanted me to become a red-name player and let the system kill me, right?" Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and

posted out his {Vitality Aura}, [Book of Revelation] and his [God Killer War Greaves]. "Don't you guys want this? This? Or this?"

Well, they wouldn't be able to get the {Vitality Aura} of course. Even if they are capable of killing Zhang Yang over a billion times, he would not drop the Skill. However, the [Book of Revelation] would definitely drop though. That Legendary item caught the breath of everyone. Meanwhile, the [God Killer War Greaves] was Celestial Tier, after all. When the information about the equipment was revealed to the players, they widened their eyes and stared the sh\*t out of it! Their greed had clouded their sanity for the moment. They did not even think about how Zhang Yang got those items and equipment in the first place! They had not even thought about who might Zhang Yang be! How could one guy have so many legendary items and equipment on him?!

--- Because the effect of 10% Passive Damage Immunity could only be effective when four Celestial Tier equipment were together.

Zhang Yang even posted out the fragment of the Class A Shadow Meister Inheritance for everyone to see.

Desire, a powerful motivator. However, it could be a push that brings you straight to your own demise!

Everyone was looking at Zhang Yang with murderous intent now. They were just one step from charging towards Zhang Yang and take everything from him!

"Are you crazy?! How can you show them all that?!" Blazing Coral widened her eyes, looking at Zhang Yang and screamed aloud. Well, she actually thought that Zhang Yang was just some spoilt rich kid who had spent tons of money to purchase all those equipment. She thought that Zhang Yang was just trying to show off how rich he was!

"Blazing Coral, move aside! OR we'll have to kill you as well!" Bull Demon King said coldly.

Upon seeing Zhang Yang's Celestial Tier equipment and his [Book of Revelation], he could no longer hold his greed from overwhelming his desire.

"I'll rather die than be on the same party as you are! Pui!" Blazing Coral chose to leave the party.

Zhang Yang had also left the party. Instantly, Bull Demon King and his party members no longer had the support of Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}. The 50% additional Damage and the other effects had faded away from them as well. Well, the situation was like a beggar suddenly acquiring a billion dollar cheque. However, before he could go to the bank to claim the money, the cheque was already stolen by others. In another way to say it, it was like falling from the sky straight down to the ground!

These players continued to look at Zhang Yang with murderous intent and greed.

Zhang Yang invited Blazing Coral to join his party. She did not hesitate a bit before she chose to join. Zhang Yang waved his hand and cast his {Surrogacy} onto Blazing Coral. That was also why he had invited her into his party. That Skill could only be used on one's own party members, after all.

With Zhang Yang's current insanely high Defence, even if Blazing Coral is surrounded by all those players, it would take quite a while before they could kill her. By doing that, Zhang Yang would have nothing left to worry about.

"Felice!" Zhang Yang waved his hand again and summoned Felice out from her Battle Companion Slot. The dragon lady came out and glared at Bull Demon King and his goons with rage.

"Big brother! They're too mean!"

"Leave your equipment and items behind. We shall let you live! It's not easy to level up these days! It's not necessary for you to die here over nothing!" Bull Demon King was still acting like an

\*sshole. He seemed to be asking Zhang Yang to spare those things for him and his goons. They really thought that Zhang Yang was a spoilt rich kid who could just buy all that again. Well, he had no idea how stupid he sounded to Zhang Yang.

Well, even if the player turns red-name, the player would not drop equipment or item for sure. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had over a full set of powerful equipment and he had quite a number of items in his inventory. They would have to kill Zhang Yang over a hundred times before they could get everything off Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and made a gesture with his finger, "Cut the crap and come at me now!"

"Kill!"

Other than the four Healers, the others had come up to Zhang Yang and had him surrounded. Then they began to launch their attacks at Zhang Yang as aggressive as they could.

‘-0!’

‘-7,221!’

‘-0!’

‘-11,022!’

‘-7,83!’

Tens of damage values popped up on top of Zhang Yang at the same time. However, some attacks could not even penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence, though. The highest damage that Zhang Yang received was about 11,000 damage. Well, that amount of damage was so insignificant to Zhang Yang's long \*ss HP bar of 6,680,000 HP! He did not even feel an itch! With Felice turning into the 'Tree of Life', she could easily heal Zhang Yang back to maximum HP by throwing a few {Bloom of Life} at him.

"This guy is a monster!"

"How can his HP stay still even after we hit so hard!"

"It's not staying still actually! Look closer! I think his HP bar is just too freaking long!"

The players finally realized that Zhang Yang had over 4 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment! So it made perfect sense that his HP bar would be so freaking long!

"Fear not! He's just a Tanker! He doesn't have the Attack power to kill us! Healers, make sure you do your job! We just have to treat him like a boss! We've even taken out a Holy Tier boss before! There's no reason for us to fear a Tanker without any Attack power!" Truth be told, Bull Demon King was decently skilled himself. Well, at least he managed to reassure the others into battling Zhang Yang.

"No attack power?" Zhang Yang smiled a little and swung lazily at a Thief right beside him.

‘-672,122!’

A player with a full set of Ethereal Tier equipment would only have approximately 500,000 HP. Of course, the player would not be able to survive Zhang Yang's attack! Immediately, the Thief let out a miserable scream and died on the spot.

Zhang Yang stood up with his axe and laughed, "So how about now?"

Everyone revealed a sense of horror on their faces. What kind of monster is this? Not only is his Defence as high as f\*ck, his Attack power is also insanely high! This is madness! They were roaring in anger, complaining about Zhang Yang's absolute power while they continued to throw their Skills onto Zhang Yang.

Sparks were seen across the surface of Zhang Yang's armor as the weapons clanged against his armor. Zhang Yang just stood there quietly, allowing the others to attack him with their insanely vigorous attacks.

Well, it was quite satisfying to do such a thing, once in a while.



Zhang Yang was thinking quietly to himself while he was looking at the others in disdain.

Well... although those players were attacking him as madly as they could, they could not even move him by a tiny bit! 5 minutes later, Zhang Yang did not even move a muscle! He was just standing there doing nothing! However, his HP bar was still hovering about at 98%! The results of that had really gave the others an intense chill up their spines. They could not help but stop their pointless attacks.

"So, have you guys had enough?" Zhang Yang smiled vaguely, "I guess, it's my turn then!"

{Horizontal Strike}!

A series of damage values that exceeded millions popped right on top of 9 players. The nine of them instantly collapsed onto the ground and died. Well, Bull Demon King was a Tanker with slightly thicker 'skin. So he managed to survive that wave of attack with a low HP bar. The other 4 Healers and 5 Hunters got away for the moment because they were standing at the rear.

Summoning Phoenix pet!

"Felice! Little Fiery! I'll leave the rest to you!"

Felice let out a roar and charged towards the players together with Phoenix pet.

"You! You're Zhan Yu!" Upon seeing the Phoenix pet, everyone had finally knew Zhang Yang's identity! Unfortunately, everything was too late now!

Let the slaughtering begin! Kill! Kill! Kill!

Zhang Yang felt no remorse for taking on this kind of people. Phoenix pet and Felice were both Ascended Tier now. Each of them only needed two normal strikes to take out one player. It did not take long before the tens of them were slaughtered up! Bull Demon King could not believe his own eyes after witnessing everything

that just happened right before his eyes. His eyes were widened up as his body collapsed to the ground. If he could have known earlier about Zhang Yang's identity, he would have used everything he had to butter Zhang Yang up instead of robbing him!

Well, an attempt to repay a generous act with enmity had backfired. Now, he has tasted his own medicine!

Blazing Coral was stunned to see what happened as well. Then she said, "You're the real Zhan Yu?"

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang revealed his personal information to the girl. The long \*ss title right above Zhang Yang's head stunned Blazing Coral for a brief moment.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, can I join Lone Desert Smoke?" Blazing Coral had already automatically proposed, before Zhang Yang could 'seduce' her into joining his guild.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. He purposely pretended to think for a moment and said, "Alright! But you will have to undergo a probation stage. If your performance is not good enough, you might be kicked out of the guild, you know?"

"Rest assured that I'll definitely try my best!"

Zhang Yang nodded and invited the girl to join his guild. Blazing Coral immediately accepted the invitation and became the newest member of the Lone Desert Smoke.

After that, Zhang Yang also passed the fragment of [Shadow Meister Inheritance] over to Blazing Coral. Then he said, "This is a small gift for joining my guild!"

Because Inheritance Fragments could only be carried in the inventory of a player, Zhang Yang had been carrying that piece of fragment ever since he got it.

"This... this is too good to be a gift!" Blazing Coral could not believe the fact that joining Lone Desert Smoke could get such a good treat. Upon joining, she has been given a Class A Inheritance?

Wow! There was no other guild that would do that!

She suddenly blushed and said, "Guildmaster, I'm sorry! My heart already belongs to someone else!"

Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment. She mistakenly thought that Zhang Yang was trying to get to her heart! Zhang Yang could not help to smile bitterly. Well, it is really hard to be a good guy, these days.

# Chapter 845: Maya the Devourer

---

Because Bull Demon King could not pick up the loots in time before he was slaughtered, the loots had all went to waste. The system would probably flush everything away after an hour or less.

Zhang Yang had no need for any new equipment for the moment. However, he did feel that the few [Lesser Demonic Pearls] would be wasted. However, Holy Tier bosses were not like the Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier bosses. They were much easier to find. Therefore, it would be simpler to search them, slaughter them up and acquire [Lesser Demonic Pearls] upon killing them. Currently, the Auction House had these Demonic Pearls on sale already. However, the price of each pearl was unbelievably high! One Lesser Demonic Pearl could cost up to 1,000,000 gold pieces. It was obvious that those who were selling these pearls were trying to suck off people's wallets!

Well, one Lesser Demonic Pearl should cost about 10,000 gold pieces, at most. Meanwhile, a Greater Demonic Pearl should cost 1,000,000 gold pieces. That should sound about right. An increase of 60% additional success rate would allow one player to get his or her equipment up to +4 Upgrade with a 100% success rate. Whoever's rich, could easily enhance their equipment up to a +6 Upgrade.

Blazing Coral set off to gather the remaining pieces of the Inheritance Fragments. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang stayed behind. Well, even though he did not care about the equipment, he did not want to let Bull Demon King get them as well. It was not because he was vengeful, or what. He couldn't just let a selfish bastard like Bull Demon King to get away with what he had just committed.

The equipment and the dead body of the boss vanished after an hour of waiting. Well, there goes the loot full of good stuff. Zhang Yang grinned for a while before he hopped onto Phoenix pet and disappeared into the sky.

After that, Bull Demon King and the others quickly resurrected themselves on the spot. However, right after they started to sit down and take their Snacks, Zhang Yang circled back suddenly and swung his [Frost Destroyer's Blade] across their necks! After just a few seconds, they were all slaughtered up once again and reported themselves to the nearest Graveyard.

Bull Demon King and the others were so terrified by Zhang Yang's presence. However, they quickly selected to resurrect on the spot. These players were not on the same side, in the first place. Well, it was a fact that they had just lost the loot dropped from a Holy Tier boss. Therefore they were infuriated just by the thought of it. Well, everyone knew the fact that everything happened because Bull Demon King and his goons had broken their promise for selfish reasons. Instantly, they began to punch each other in the guts and an in-fighting soon started.

Zhang Yang shook his head after looking down at the chaos. Then, he left the vicinity on his Phoenix pet.

Grinding! Grinding! Grinding!

In order to acquire the first chance of challenging the Celestial Tier boss, every guild once again started grinding like hell. All of the parties from top Tier guilds were busting their \*sses, trying to grind as effectively as possible. Their main intention was to reach Level 230 as soon as they are able to. By doing that, they could remove the restriction of the Level Gap Suppression before challenging the fourth Celestial Tier boss in the game!

So far, the players were currently about Level 222. They were just about 8 levels from reaching Level 230. Normally, they would need approximately 80 days of constant grinding in order to reach that level. However, with their current high Tier equipment and restless grindings, the players managed to shorten the time to 60 or even 50 days!

Zhang Yang had also been keeping an eye on the movement of

the Hua Yi Trust Fund while he was grinding his butt off. However, the Hua Yi Trust Fund was fighting back. They actually attempted to do an 'Reverse Takeover' instead. The war between these two companies had become even more fierce and complicated than before. If Zhang Yang wins this battle, the Hua Yi Trust Fund would change its name to 'Zhang'. However, if he ever loses the battle, his company would be suffering a loss far from what anyone could imagine. The estimated amount would be at least 150,000,000,000!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang felt a chill up his spine, because the bank began to hustle his company to pay the bank back!

Obviously, his enemies have found out that Zhang Yang is the one attempting to purchase the stocks of Hua Yi Trust Fund from the shadows. It seemed that Madam Zhong had used her forces of the 'dark' to do something behind the shadows. Zhang Yang's company still had over half a year before his company was required to pay back the loans. The bank had stated that their staffs did not verify the statement or whatever correctly. Well, they came with a 'valid' reason, stating that they wanted to end the loan at an earlier time. So, Zhang Yang now had to pay back the loans in one week or he shall be attending a court session!

If the loan was cut, Zhang Yang was forced into an extremely difficult situation!

After giving it some thoughts for quite a while, he made a call.

...

Time flies. Two months had passed in a blink of an eye. The top Tier players managed to reach Level 230 and beyond. Well, that should prove that those lunatics are really insane! However, some of them did not use their game helmets at all. They used the game capsule to sync into the game. So, they could settle their meals, their sleeps, and their sh\*ts in one place. Of course, they would be much more efficient in their grinding process!

Although Zhang Yang is rich enough to buy a game capsule, he was no longer a hikikomori who would be cooped up in his room, all day long. He's currently the CEO of a large-scale company who had beautiful wives. So, he could not afford to spend all his time staying in a game capsule. Therefore, he buried his urge to buy a game capsule without hesitation and continued using his game helmet.

At the end of it, Zhang Yang was still the first one to reach Level 230.

With his current Defence power, Zhang Yang could lure a large quantity of Elite Tier monsters at the same time. With the support from his Phoenix pet's AoE Attacks, Zhang Yang could earn a substantial amount of Experience Points in a short period of time. So, it made sense that he would be the first to reach the required level.

Upon reaching Level 230, Zhang Yang went straight over to Antia Mountains to take a closer look at the Skills of the Level 260 Celestial Tier boss. If the boss also has the {Song of Despair} that seemed like a buggy Skill, it would be wiser for Zhang Yang to trigger the quest first, acquiring an advantage over the others.

This Level 260 Celestial Tier boss was a Spectral King called 'Maya the Devourer'.

[Maya the Devourer, One of the Seven Spectre Kings] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level: 260

HP: 100,000,000,000

Defence: 100,000

Magic Resistance: 100,000

Melee Attack: 720,576 – 920,576

Magic Attack: 426,310 – 526,310

## Skills:

[Explosive Blow]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. Upon hitting the target, causes 400,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters around the target. Cooldown: 5 seconds

[Shadow Arrow]: Causes 200% Magic Attack with Physical Damage to the target. Instant. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 2 meters.

[Dark Vortex]: Creates 16 vortexes in the surroundings. Players who get sucked into any of the vortexes would lose 3% HP. Lasts for 30 seconds. Cooldown: 2 minutes

[Devour]: Upon devouring a soul, Maya will recover 1% HP. The recovery will not be affected by any other effect. The target devoured will die immediately. Range: 300 meters. Cooldown: 30 seconds

[Hardening Transformation]: Increases body mass. Increases 100% additional Defence and 100% additional Magic Resistance. Lasts until the effect wears off.

[Lose Control]: Aggro becomes chaotic and randomly picks a target to attack. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[No Escape]: Upon entering the area of 300 meters from Maya, targets will acquire one effect. Once the targets get 300 meters further from Maya, the players will die immediately, regardless of the players' remaining HP.

[Death Mark]: When Maya is killed. Players will get this effect. Upon entering an area of 1,000 meters from Maya's dead body, players will be instantly killed. Effect lasts for 72 hours.

Note: Maya was once a bard. However, after witnessing how a conqueror dominated the land with darkness, Maya became the general of the resistance. After dying for the cause, his hatred towards the corrupted conquerors have brought him back to life as



a Spectre. Because of that, he has acquired an enhanced Spectral power!

Unlike the demons, the Spectre Kings were once humans, elves. After being resurrected by the Spectral force, their bodies would remain normal in size. Unlike the Demon Lord Kenzack, none of them were hundreds of meters tall. Furthermore, Maya had retained his human form. Well, he was considered the highest form of a Spectre, after all. Greenish light would flash across his eyes once in a while. That was the only characteristic that gave away his Spectral nature.

When Zhang Yang noticed that the boss had over 100,000,000,000 HP, he forcefully swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

What the hell?! Isn't that insane!?

That {Devour} would function like {Spectre's Constitution}, which could recover HP once every 30 seconds. The worst part about it was that the Skill would not be affected by the effect of {Destructive Smash}! With a total of 100,000,000,000 HP, each recovery would recover over 10,000,000,000 HP! In other words, the boss could heal over 33,000,000 in each second!

The two parties that Zhang Yang built were indeed powerful. However, they would not have enough firepower to deal more than 33,000,000 damage to counter the recovery rate of the boss. Even if everyone activates their Inheritance Transformations, they would not deal so much damage in a single second. Well, even if they could deal so much damage, it wouldn't be possible for them to deplete the insanely long HP bar of the boss in 2 hours!

Furthermore, the boss's Defence and Magic Resistance had reached over 200,000! Players with a full set of Ethereal Tier equipment would not even be able to penetrate the Defence of the boss, not even by the slightest chance! Even if the Lone Desert Smoke upgrades their guild into a Level 10 Guild and sends 100,000 players over to challenge the boss, they would still be struggling

like ants. They would only be able to slightly increase the DPS of the guild!

The only good news was that the boss had the Skill {Hardening Transformation}. When the body mass of the boss increases, more players would be able to hit the boss at the same time. Furthermore, the boss did not actually have a decent AoE Skill. Well, the boss's {Dark Vortex} should count as one, though. However, the Skill did not have any special effects that would deal a lot of damage to whoever who gets hit. On the other hand, if other bosses use their {Tornado Cleave}, they could deal damage across an area of 300-meter radius. As long as players are within range, they would suffer the damage head-on.

Therefore, this boss could potentially be swarmed up by players and beaten to its death, eventually. However, judging from the length of HP bar the boss had and the HP recovery rate of the boss, the boss battle would be torturously long!

Other than that, Maya was currently located on top of a mountain. Countless Spectre monsters were already roaming by the mountainside. Those monsters were all Level 250 Elite Tier monsters! As not all players had a Flying Mount, the players would need to clear a path up to the mountaintop before they could reach the boss!

Meanwhile, those Elite Tier monsters would be respawned again, after 15 hours. By then, the players would need to spend some time to clear them out once again! If the boss battle exceeds 30 hours, the players would need to clear out the Elite monsters twice. If the boss battle exceeds 45 hours, the players would need to clear out the Elite monsters thrice!

Although Maya's HP was substantial, Maya could only be deemed as a civilian-type boss. The boss' AoE attacks were not deadly at all. Players could use their numbers as the advantage to push the boss back. Theoretically speaking, as long as the players are numerous enough, any guild should be capable of killing the boss, eventually.

Well, tens or hundreds of players would not be sufficient to take down this boss. It seemed that the players would need to combine the strength of at least 10 guilds in order to get enough players to take the boss down!

Zhang Yang went back and told everyone about the attributes of the boss. Everyone was shocked and surprised, of course. Although they were not willing to share the loots with the other guilds, however, they couldn't just take down the boss all by themselves. It seemed that they had no other way of solving this.

Although the boss also had some 'underlings', those 'underlings' were still Elite Tier monsters. Zhang Yang would need to kill them with his own bare hands in order to summon his demons through his 'Gate of Hell'. By the time he is able to summon the 1000th demons, the first one that he summoned earlier on would already be unsummoned back to the demon realm.

Other than that, even though Maya did not have any AoE Skills that could cover most of the battlefield, the boss could still rely on his {Dark Vortex} to deal damage worth 99% HP of his targets immediately. Well. That Skill basically ignored the targets' Maximum HP and would get them all heavily wounded in an instant! Summoned demons would not know how to dodge an attack or a Skill. The boss could easily wipe out the entire army of summoned demons!

This boss was wild and ferocious. Because of that, he could nullify the effects of the 'Gate of Hell'!

# Chapter 846: Drawn-out Battle

---

Zhang Yang began to contact the old allies of Lone Desert Smoke. He wanted to gather them all together to challenge Maya.

However, Zhang Yang was surprised to find out that other than Snow Seeker, the other guildmasters did not agree to lend a hand in this. They expressed themselves clearly that they wanted to challenge the boss all on their own. Obviously, they had already found out that the boss did not have a decent 'AoE Skill'. So they were determined to take out the boss with the strength of their own guild. Zhang Yang was so pissed because of that.

It did not take long before the first guild launched their attacks on Maya. The first guild who acted was Paragon from Europe Region.

Things went like Zhang Yang had predicted. The Attack power of Celestial Tier was indeed powerful. However, as long as the main Tanker does not die instantly or gets killed instantly by a series of attacks from the boss, the Tanker could be healed back with hundreds of Healers healing from the rear. Under those circumstances, it would be easy for the Healers to heal a player that is losing over millions of HP in a set of time.

Meanwhile, although the {Dark Vortex} could really pack a punch, players who get sucked into the vortexes with full HP state would still have 1% HP left when they get back out from the vortex. They wouldn't die on the spot, though. Meanwhile, the Skill had a 2-minute cooldown. That amount of time would be sufficient for the players to heal themselves back up again.

The biggest headache was the boss's {Lose Control}. The boss would turn away from the Tanker and attack one player at random. Meanwhile, the impact of the {Explosive Blow} would spread out to other players upon contact with the target. Well, 500,000 damage could instantly end those who have just escaped

the 'Dark Vortexes'.

However, no matter what, this boss was still weaker, compared to the previous few Celestial Tier bosses that revealed themselves before. Under the leadership of God's Left Hand, Paragon had battled the boss for over two full days!

By the end of it, the boss annihilated the entire Paragon guild by merely spamming its {Explosive Blow}! Because of the {Death Mark}, players who are killed by the boss were not be able to continue the fight with the boss for the next 3 days. Having not been able to last to the third day of the battle, Paragon had lost their capability to replace their ranks with new 'blood'. All of their members were killed by the boss!

On the other side, when the Paragon was wiped out, the boss still had over 94% HP remaining! It was a depressing situation for anyone to see it!

Well, 100,000,000,000 HP would cause the boss to have a recovery rate of 33,330,000 HP per second. Meanwhile, the boss also had over 200,000 Defence and Magic Resistance! With those combined, the boss would be immortal! The boss was nearly unkillable! That's right. Even though the boss had not much Attack power, to begin with, the boss could still mash the players slowly to their demise with its super long-\*ss HP bar! The boss actually managed to do that to one of the top Tier guilds! From a certain point of view, this type of bosses would be much more annoying than those ferocious type of bosses! Maya had 'depleted' all the top Tier players in Paragon in over 2 days! For both players', mental and physical health, that's torturous as f\*ck!

The top Tier guilds calmed themselves down for the moment. Meanwhile, many other guilds were charging into the battlefield, attempting to battle the boss. They thought that they finally stood a chance against a Celestial Tier boss. However, the Attack power of Maya was not weak either. Using {Explosive Blow} and {Shadow Arrow} consecutively throughout the battle, the boss managed to

instantly kill 99% of the Tankers without Inheritance Transformations at the current stage of the game!

Without a Tanker keeping the boss occupied, the boss could just kill the other players in the surroundings, one at a time! With the support from its {Explosive Blow} and {Dark Vortex}, the boss could easily wipe out an entire guild, once provided with enough time.

Theoretically speaking, it seemed easy to take down the boss. There was no tactic required in such a boss battle at all. However, reality was very different.

After many failed attempts, Hourglass Figure took the initiative to gather more than 10 top Tier guilds in order to challenge the boss again!

"The boss does not actually have a decent AoE Skill. But we're getting our \*sses kicked, even after we tried so hard! It's possible that after all out hard work to take down the boss, when the boss is finally dead, those cunning ones could easily send a few Thieves to steal all the loots by the end of it!" Zhang Yang agreed to join in. However, he had a different idea of how to distribute the loots though.

Unlike battling Rougelier, Maya did not have the ability to cause any devastating AoE attacks. It would make it easy for the Thieves to sneak over and steal the loots while the guildmasters are still considering what equipment and items to take!

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, what do you currently have in mind, then?"

"We shall take on the boss together. However, when the loot drops, it's everyone for themselves. Those who act quickly will gain more from it!"

After all, there was no absolute way of confirming that everyone would get the loot by the end of it. Instead of leaving the loots out

there for others to steal, why not make it more fun by snatching then? Everyone gets a fair chance to snatch!

After a brief moment of consideration, Hourglass figure and the other guildmasters agreed to it. Well, back when they were battling against Rougelier, they did spend a lot of time picking up the loots. If there are Thieves in the surroundings when they are busy picking up the loot, the loot would be stolen in the snap of a finger.

"Let's settle it like that, then!"

Everyone had ended up on the same page.

Zhang Yang went back to inform his gang, "... so, when the boss dies, we'll need to act quickly! No mercy to those who act slowly!"

"Rest assured that nothing good will slip through our fingers! You have me, and cousin sis!" Wei Yan Er tapped her chest and said.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Other than that, make sure you survive until the end. If you die during the boss battle, you cannot get near to the boss for the next 72 hours. If the boss dies within that 72 hours after you, you won't be able to snatch the loot!"

"Roger!"

"However, the boss's {Devour} and {Lose Control} are picking targets at random, right? What if we're not lucky, then?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "{Lose Control} is random, for sure. But the {Devour} still has a limited effective area. According to my observation for the past few days, {Devour} will only be used on players who are not Tankers. Also, the targets must be on the top 20 on the list of the boss's aggro, or the last 20 on the list of the boss's aggro. That's why people misunderstood the Skill as random!"

"Does that mean that we'll be safe, as long as our aggro does not get into the top 20?"

"Hmm, that's right. Remember to reserve your special Skills to clear out your aggro. Once the aggro value reaches a certain level, just use it to clear out the aggro. Our target is more than just killing the boss. We need to secure as many loot as possible!"

3 days later, 11 guilds began to gather before the boss.

Ever since there were players over Level 230, the boss no longer had the luxury to sit quietly and enjoy peace. From time to time, there would be guilds or assault parties attempting to attack Maya. When Zhang Yang and the others arrived at the scene, there were already tens of thousands of players surrounding the boss, throwing their best attacks at the boss. Unfortunately for them, their main Tanker was dead, so the boss was wiping them out.

Well, no prairie fire can completely burn the grass, after all. The number of Level 230 players was increasing by the second. The boss was only getting busier and busier every single passing day. Well, it seemed that Maya no longer had the chance to live a peaceful life --- unless Maya could just toss a Celestial Tier equipment out to the players and roars, "You pitiful beings! Will it satisfy you if I just give you this!?"

It seemed impossible for them to clear out the other players at the moment. Although everyone on the 11 guilds were top Tier players in the entire server, they would still be drowned by the sheer number of players in the vicinity at that moment. Well, one spit from the tens of millions of players in the area would literally drown anyone!

That was also one of the many reasons why Zhang Yang did not want to agree to distributing the loots one by one --- there'd be no time for that bullsh\*t! There was no need to even think about sending any Thieves! With tens of millions of players in the area, who would be stupid enough to talk about clearing the area!? Well, with one single hit on the boss, anyone would have the 'authority' to pick up the loots!



"Charge!"

Zhang Yang charged towards the boss on his Phoenix pet. Well, he wouldn't activate his {God of War Transformation} at such an early stage of the battle. Who could predict how long the boss battle would be, right? Zhang Yang was wise enough to reserve his {God of War Transformation} until the very end of the battle.

Because the boss's level, Defence and Magic Resistance were far beyond the standard for the normal Tier players to handle, they could only deal 1 damage to the boss throughout the entire boss battle. However, one clean swing from Zhang Yang's axe could cause up to 700,000 damage on the boss, though. Because of that, he immediately took over the aggro of Maya.

Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart, Mini Piglet, Female Raid Covert were the players who had the best equipment in the entire guild. Their Skills in the art of healing were the best among the best. With the four of them focused on healing Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had no problem at all with tanking the boss. Even though the boss had quite a powerful Attack power, Zhang Yang had over 6,680,000 HP, after all. He also had terrifyingly high Defence as well! Truth be told, he did not really need the support from the four Healers! He only needed two!

Well, it would be better to play it safe, though. Now that the situation was totally out of hand, no one could predict if some lunatic might take that opportunity to attempt killing Zhang Yang! Everyone should be aware of that, as well. Well, it would be stupid if players drop their own equipment before getting anything from the boss!

"Endless pieces of mother--- Imbeciles!" Maya continued to roar in rage while it was swinging its sword around. Although its HP bar did not move much at all, getting hit by the players for over a couple days non-stop had really infuriated the boss.

Unfortunately for the boss, it did not possess any decent AoE

Skills. Even though the {Dark Vortex} is powerful, the Skill could not instantly kill anyone. That had really limited the boss's killing ability.

When top Tier players such as Zhang Yang surround the boss, the firepower of the players suddenly shot up! The HP bar of the boss finally started to drop visibly!

However, Maya would use its {Devour} once every 30 seconds to recover over 1,000,000,000 HP! That was enough to make 99.9% of the Attacks go to waste!

Fortunately for the players, everyone came prepared, knowing that this would be a drawn-out battle. None of them were expecting the boss to be taken out within hours.

About an hour later, the boss's HP had only dropped by 0.5%! That was an extremely low rate, and no one could actually believe with their eyes, even though they were prepared for it!

At the current rate, the players would need approximately 200 hours before they can completely empty out the boss's HP! That would be a total of 8 days! Even though it was just 8 days of in-game time, that would mean 3 full days in the real life... well... one must really enter a game capsule, under those circumstances.

Everyone went to the boss with super high morale. However, the players would begin to feel tired after a long time of battling the boss. Once they get distracted by that, they might not be able to come back with the same level of morale to take the boss on. If that ends up true, the players would need more than just 8 days to take out the boss. They may need 9 or even 10 days for that!

Although Zhang Yang had predicted this to be a drawn-out battle, the duration required to kill the boss was far longer than expected. He wouldn't last that long in-game.

However, since the battle had begun, Zhang Yang could not find any reason to retreat now. He would still need to carry on the

battle for quite some time before he could retreat, BY then, he should be able to use his {Shadow of the Void} to get free of the boss so that he could go offline to settle his 'personal' stuffs such as eating, resting and, you know... 'personal stuff'.

Well, it was an extreme battle of wills!

"My vortexes! Kill all these living imbeciles for me!" the boss roared out loud and activated its {Dark Vortex}. 16 dark vortexes appeared in the surroundings out of nowhere and began to whirl around the boss in an area with a radius of 300-meters!

# Chapter 847: Takedown

---

The abundant number of players had clogged up the surroundings of the boss. Players without Flying Mounts were not even able to move freely. They could not even dodge the attacks of the boss. They could only witness themselves getting sucked into the vortexes, and their HP bars getting reduced at an insanely fast pace. Right after they get out of the vortexes, they would have lost over 99% HP!

The players were from different Regions after all. So when some of them are using Skills such as {Tornado Cleave}, they would accidentally wound the players from different Regions with their attacks as well. As many of them had lost quite a number of HP during the boss battle, they would just die on the spot right after they receive the attacks from the {Dark Vortex}.

Fortunately, the top Tier players were all equipped with a Flying Mount, at the very least. So, when the vortexes began to swirl across the area, countless players began to fly up into the sky, one after another. At the same time, many of them had also activated their Inheritance Transformations. Obviously, it would take at least 9 days before they could get the boss down to its knees. They could at least use their Inheritance Transformations twice before using the third to snatch loots when the boss battle is finally over.

Well, it was easy to understand why the players did that in the first place. However, top Tier players like Zhang Yang still did not use their Inheritance Transformations. Why? The reason was simple. Because once players are 300 meters away from the boss, there would be a transparent dome covering the entire area. Whoever who tries to get more than 300 meters from the boss would be instantly killed.

If the players ever use their Inheritance Transformation now, they would lose more than they could imagine if they ever get rounded up by other players.

For instance, Hourglass Figure had quite a number of Celestial Tier equipment. If she ever dies and drop her equipment... well... for the other players, a top Tier player from a top Tier guild would be similar to the existence of a Celestial Tier boss. Killing one of them would mean that they would stand a chance to drop Celestial Tier equipment! If the opportunity ever presents itself, why would anyone pass it up, then?

Therefore, Inheritance Transformations should be reserved for life-saving and warning purposes. Even if the top Tier players are surrounded by those greedy bastards, they could still fight back and slaughter them up by using their Inheritance Transformations as one of the last resorts.

Well, normal Tier players could only deal 1 forced damage to the boss. Therefore, 95% of the total firepower came from most of the players who had reached Level 230 and beyond. In other words, most of the attacks came from the players from top Tier guilds. So when some of them entered their Transformed forms, their attacks became even more powerful.

Unfortunately, Inheritance Transformations would only last for 2 hours.

When the duration for their Inheritance Transformations came to an end, the HP of the boss had only dropped to 97.2%. They were still very, very far from taking out the boss!

Zhang Yang's movements have become a fixed pattern. He only needed to repeat the movements like a robot to activate his high-damage Skills at the boss. Whichever Skills come available, he only needed to spam them on the boss. There was nothing else for him to think! Well, it was because there were no Status Restriction Skills at all. As long as Zhang Yang remains first on the boss's aggro list, it wouldn't hurt much at all for him to waste some potential damage output by spamming Skills like there is no tomorrow.

The players had started with battle cries and roars. However, they had simmered down now. By the end of it, they had totally stopped with all the shouting and screaming. Even Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were too tired to even tease the ladies. Everyone was just dealing damage to the boss in silence.

Truth be told, the boss was not difficult to handle at all. However, the long duration required for the players to take down Maya had made this the worst and most difficult boss battle in history.

Currently, the players had Zhang Yang keeping the boss occupied, kiting the boss around. However, the boss's {Dark Vortex} and {Lost Control} could still pose quite a threat to the players in the surroundings. Many players had fallen because of that. For the next three days, those who already reported themselves at the graveyard would not be able to join back into the battle. However, the number of players were just too abundant! For every 10 deaths, 100 fresh players would rush in! The only concern was that they could not deal much damage to the boss. Well, each player with a full set of Holy Tier equipment could only deal thousands of damage to the boss.

4 hours, 5 hours... 10 hours... 20 hours!

Zhang Yang could no longer keep up with the pace. He quickly sent Sun Xin Yu a message and used his {Shadow of the Void} right after. Then, he immediately went offline and took off his game helmet.

Right after he took off his game helmet, he ran straight to the kitchen. It was currently 7p.m. It was about time to have dinner now.

Ever since Luo Yu Rou was pregnant, Zhang Yang had hired a chef to make meals rich with Chinese herbs and medicine for her. Well, because Wei Yan Er stole some of the meals and it became her habit of doing so, everyone had changed their diet and were

used to taking herbal meals by now. At first, the chef did not agree to cook for them. She had only promised to do it for short term. To keep working for them, Zhang Yang had no choice but to offer her a greater deal of money. He even bought a villa for the chef and her family. After settling the worries of her family, the chef decided to continue cooking for them.

Well, this chef is a really good cook! If the dishes she made were to be compared to the dishes in a five-star restaurant, anyone would believe that the money Zhang Yang spent was well spent! Furthermore, the purpose of Zhang Yang earning more money was to live a luxurious life. What's the use of keeping all the money to himself, then? Why would he want to take the money with him into his own coffin?

Although Luo Yu Rou did not really 'play' 'God's Miracle', she had been spending quite a lot of time in the game as well. Well, one of the main reasons was because she wanted to focus on completing her second 'product'. Well, the game did provide her a time that was three times longer in the game that she could get in the real life. Furthermore, she has the experience of making a movie before. Therefore, she was currently very near to completing her second movie.

Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and the others were also a small part of the movie. Well, they had cameo'd in the movie for a bit. The little brat actually had more screen time than the other members of the gang, though. Furthermore, Luo Yu Rou somehow gave the little brat quite an important role as well. So now, everything would depend on whether the audiences would buy it or not. If the audience could accept it, Luo Yu Rou would be able to create a second miracle in the box office!

After filling up their stomachs and after a moment of rest, everyone logged back into the game.

Actually, it is quite dangerous for any player in the server to go offline while in the middle of a boss battle, or any other battle for

that matter! Well, that was because if they log back into the game 300 meters from the boss, they would just die on the spot!

Fortunately, the Tankers from the Hell Family, Land of Savages and other top Tier guilds had taken over the role of tanking the boss for the moment. Everyone was facing the similar situation now. They needed to get offline to eat and handle their personal 'issues'. If anyone was stupid enough to try something funny on the other players, they would have to face the wrath of many others.

Therefore, even though the boss would run around whenever its {Lost Control} is triggered, it would not take long before the boss is pulled back to its initial position by the Tankers.

The moment when Zhang Yang logged back into the game, he immediately summoned his Phoenix pet and Felice. Then, the three of them charged right at the boss and gave everything they got on the boss. Well, he could not afford to hold back, now. After all, if he gets too little aggro, he might receive the boss' {Devour} and die immediately.

Zhang Yang would fail a little at getting the aggro of the boss once in a while. So, he unequipped his shield to maximize his damage output.

Other than the boss's {Dark Vortex} and {Explosive Blow}, {Devour} was also considered one of the boss' ultimate Skill. Whoever who gets targeted will die. There was no other way out of it. Many players who did not know how the Skill actually worked would die horrific deaths and opt to resurrect at the graveyard.

Although it had been quite some time, the boss still had over 92% HP. It seemed it would still take ages before they can take down the boss...

One day, two days, three days... eight days, nine days!

The players were taking turns to rest during the boss battle.



However, when the ninth day ended, the boss' HP bar finally dropped to 5%!

Well, that was a record that would make everyone who participated in the boss battle cry. It took a full 9 days for all of them to remove 95% of the boss's HP! What kind of sick joke is that?! The worst part about it was that all of Zhang Yang's attempts of casting the {Glare of the Death God} on the boss had been resisted! Or else, each successful attempt of the Skill could have saved over half a day for them! That could have made a lot more difference!

Finally, the boss battle seemed to be coming to an end now!

At first, everyone was numbed by the 9 day repetition. However, when they noticed that the boss battle was about to come to an end, their morale increased, instantly. Even though they knew that it would still take about 10 hours to deplete the last 5% HP of the boss, at least they were very near the end, now!

4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

The remaining HP of Maya had dropped to 1,000,000,000 HP!

That was the moment they've been waiting for. Every single one of the top Tier players activated their Inheritance Transformations at the same time!

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

'-5,006,922!'-10,013,844!'...'-50,069,220!'

Zhang Yang began to use his combo-10 axe attacks. The damage each strike increased from approximately 5,000,000 to 50,000,000 damage!

Zhang Yang's assaults were so powerful that it made the boss's Defence seemed useless! He managed to deal a total of 275,000,000 Physical Damage to the boss within merely 10 seconds! With the 10% additional damage that the {Holy Aura} bestowed on him for the moment, his total damage dealt on the boss had reached over

300,000,000 damage!

Sun Xin Yu, Hourglass Figure, and the others had also given their best shot. They threw out their most powerful attacks on the boss in an attempt to kill the boss before the boss could use its {Devour} again!

600,000,000! 500,000,000! 400,000,000! 300,000,000!

After the top Tier players activated their Inheritance Transformations, their Attack power had increased tremendously. They were also spamming their Skills with very long cooldowns, increasing their DPS to another whole new level!

200,000,000! 100,000,000! 50,000,000! 10,000,000!

17 seconds later, it was obvious that the boss would not be able to use its {Devour} again in time to heal!

5,000,000!

2,000,000!

1,000,000!

"No! No! NO!" The boss kept roaring in rage until its last drop of HP was gone. After that, the boss collapsed to the ground heavily, and dropped a substantial amount of loot!

Everyone immediately turned hostile against each other and began to snatch as much loot as they could!

It was time for everyone to outshine each other, in order to get as many stuff as they could!

Zhang Yang took an [Advanced Mobility Potion (Transmutation Grade 6)] and which immunized him from any form of Status Restriction Effects for 20 seconds.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang smashed the ground with his axe and created a conical area of shockwave, out front. The shockwave stunned all of

the players within the effective area immediately. After that, he took the opportunity to snatch as many loot as he could.

At the same instant, Sun Xin Yu, Hourglass Figure, God's Left Hand and the others began to use the same tactic like Zhang Yang. They were restricting the others around them while attempting to avoid being affected by any other Status Restriction Effects. Then, they quickly picked up as many stuff as they could. From that moment onward, the entire place was very merry. All sorts of Skills could be seen flashing across the battlefield at every moment!

How many players were left on the battlefield after the boss died? Well, there were over tens of millions of players remaining in the vicinity at the moment, for sure. Although it wouldn't be possible for them to gush into the same spot at the same instance, there were also quite a number of players who had Flying Mounts. If each of them used only one Status Restriction Skill at the same time, the entire situation would become chaotic!

Snatch! Snatch! Snatch!

Zhang Yang reached out with both hands like an old gambler in a casino! Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Instantly, 3 new equipment had appeared in his inventory!

Although the boss' loot were numerous, they were cleared out of the ground in one brief instance. There were just too many players around to pick them up! In just 3 seconds, the entire ground became empty!

"Kill!"

It was still good for those who managed to pick up something. However, for those who got nothing after ten days of restless battling, of course, they were not willing leave the place empty handed! They raised up their weapons and started attacking the others indiscriminately.

A chaotic battle had erupted!

Zhang Yang and the gang would not waste their time participating in such a messy battle, of course. So they flew into the air to get themselves out of the messy battlefield. After flying far away from the battlefield, they took out their Teleportation Scrolls and traveled back to Holy City.

It was time to distribute the loots!

"Wahaha! Noob Tank, I've managed to get two equipment!"

"I have three, yo!" Han Ying Xue smacked the little brat's head.

After making a number count on the equipment everyone got, there was a total of 14 equipment. Among the 7 Celestial Tier equipment, 5 of them were actually Armor Set pieces while the other 2 were just spare parts. The other 7 among the 14 were just Ascended Tier equipment. Other than that, there were also a few pieces of [Greater Demonic Pearls], some Skill Books and other negligible items.

# Chapter 848: Demon Lord Hulkish

---

Although they couldn't get all of the Celestial Tier items from the boss, having 5 Celestial Tier Armor Set pieces and two Celestial Tier normal pieces should suffice. After all, the boss had only dropped about 13 to 14 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment upon its death! Well, Zhang Yang and his gang had already taken half of the total amount! If they were still not content with their achievement, they should be struck by lightning a couple of times!

"Aaah! It would have been great if we're the only guild that killed the boss!" Fatty Han was speaking out of his greed.

Everyone had gotten used to taking down a boss with their party of 10, or their party of twenty over the past years. So now that they had to share the loot with the others, they still felt a little disgruntled about it.

"It's a special boss, so we had no choice!" Zhang Yang tapped Fatty Han's shoulder and said. Well, it was utterly true that Maya was a boss that can never be taken down by merely one guild.

"Quick! Distribute now!" Wei Yan Er started poking others like a little impatient monkey.

Unfortunately, none of the 5 Celestial Tier Armor Set pieces belonged to Guardians. The five necklaces were given to Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er and Female Raid Covert. However, Zhang Yang was not disappointed at all. Well, he managed to acquire a new shield.

[Holy Light's Blessing] (Celestial, Shield)

Defence: +47,385

Vitality: +178,394

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 356,780 points.

Equip: When hit, absorbs 18,055 damage.

Equip: Increases Passive Damage Immunity by 10%.

Equip: Upon a successful block, there is a 10% rate that you can recover 1% HP.

Required Level: 260

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

A shield could be considered the face of a Tanker. It would decide how the Tanker looks for a long time! Meanwhile, this shield seemed to be the pinnacle of shields, in both attributes and Special Effects.

Well, this shield is worthy to be deemed as a Celestial Tier equipment!

It would bestow Zhang Yang with approximately additional 180,000 HP if Zhang Yang just equips it. Under the boost of his {Vitality Aura}, he could get his Maximum HP up to 2,500,000! Meanwhile, a normal shield would only have one Special Effect. This shield had two Special Effects, though.

With the additional 10% Passive Damage Immunity combining with the Special Effect of having two pieces of Armor Set pieces, Zhang Yang would have over 50% Passive Damage Immunity! Well, this 50% Passive Damage Immunity would stay forever on him! Even if Zhang Yang did not have any Damage Absorption effects, he would still only receive half of the damage that he is supposed to receive! What kind of madness would that be?

Furthermore, Zhang Yang also has his {Rock Solid}. Whenever he activates that Skill, he would have over 80% Passive Damage Immunity!

The second Special Effect was a little underwhelming, though. Each successful block could only recover 0.001% HP. The enhanced version of {Block} could only be used once every 5 seconds. That would mean that Zhang Yang would only recover 0.0005% HP each second. In other words, Zhang Yang would need 2,000 seconds in

order for him to recover to full HP. That would be 33 minutes!

However, Zhang Yang's {Radiance of the God of War} would need 30 minutes to cool down. Well, the amount of HP recovery for this Special Effect was not much different from the amount of HP recovery for {Radiance of the God of War}. Too bad, the amount of HP would only recover overtime, not in an instance like the {Radiance of the God of War}. This Special effect could be used to boost the endurance of Zhang Yang. However, it could not be used to save his life.

After equipping the shield, Zhang Yang's Vitality had reached up to 8,337,790 points, with the support of his {Vitality Aura}! His Defence had also reached up to 57,625 points while his Damage Absorption had reached up to 49,348 points. Now that he had acquired a 50% Passive Damage Immunity, his enemies would need to deal at least 156,321 damage before they can actually deal any damage to Zhang Yang. Well, they also need to deal more than 98,696 Magic damage in order to hurt Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang has become so insanely powerful, that he might be even beyond godlike now!

Zhang Yang could now easily keep his HP full with merely his {Block,} and his slow recovery rate, even if he comes under the attack of a player with a full set of Level 200 Holy Tier equipment.

Meanwhile, the average player at the current stage of the game was still striving to acquire Ethereal Tier equipment. Not even 10% of the total players in the entire server have managed to acquire a full set of Holy Tier equipment. Zhang Yang could literally walk like a king in the server, merely his Defence, without the need to even activate his Inheritance Transformation!

"You're insane!" Everyone began to flip their middle fingers at Zhang Yang while making complaints.

Zhang Yang grinned for a while. Well, this gang of his used to have the idea of challenging him at the beginning. However, as

Zhang Yang had gotten better equipment over the time, even Sun Xin Yu who did not like to lose, no longer challenged him! Instead of a battle, it should be called a torture, by the hands of Zhang Yang of course!

Well, none of them loved being tortured, after all. If they keep getting tortured by Zhang Yang in PvP, they might really lose their mind, one day!

"It's just too bad that there's no extra Celestial Tier equipment. Or else, we could have used some high level 'spare parts' to enhance the Armor Set pieces. Not only can we increase the level of the Armor Set pieces, we can also enhance the attributes of that equipment!" Zhang Yang sighed faintly.

Well, there were all sorts of Celestial Tier bosses, out there. Their levels would range from Level 230 to Level 300. Of course, they would drop Celestial Tier Armor Set as well. However, the levels of that equipment would range from Level 230 to Level 300. Well, the Officials had once announced that if a Level 300 Celestial Tier equipment is fused with a Level 230 Celestial Tier Armor set piece, the new equipment would retain the special effects of the Armor Set equipment. However, the attributes of the new equipment would be at basic Level 300 levels. With another enhancement, the level would increase even further.

Zhang Yang and the others had the [Tesseract] and [Greater Demonic Pearls] to aid them in enhancing their equipment up to +6 upgrades without any risks at all. However, acquiring a +6 upgrade also meant that the player would need 7 pieces of similar Celestial Tier equipment in terms of armor type and armor part. That would be insanely difficult at the current stage of the game. No, it would still be insanely difficult even in the future!

If Snow Seeker and the others could hear Zhang Yang sighing at such a thing, they would definitely be super mad about it! Each of them only had about one Celestial Tier equipment on them. However, Zhang Yang was already considering the idea of fusing



Celestial Tier equipment to enhance his equipment and get better ones! His thoughts would be considered luxurious as f\*ck!

"So everyone, do your best and grind well. Get to Level 235 or Level 240 as soon as you can. We're going to take down the next Celestial Tier boss. This time, we're taking the boss all to ourselves!"

"Yes!"

Zhang Yang was currently Level 232. However, Hourglass Figure, who was second in place on the list of level ranking, was just Level 230, currently. Even though the two-level gap seemed small, it would take approximately half a month for Hourglass Figure to catch up to Zhang Yang's current level.

New dungeons would be available to the players, once they reach Level 230. Well, there were four dungeons, to be exact. Of course, they were Grouped Dungeons. One was a 10-player scale dungeon and the other three were just 5-player scaled dungeons. They were named the 'Devil's Ridge'. They were strongholds built upon the foundations of the 'Demon's Descend' patch. Players would be required to finish them off to prevent any further unforeseen events in the future.

However, the top Tier guilds had put all of their attention on Celestial Tier bosses, now. They had no intention of challenging the four dungeons as of now. By the end of it, the 'First Clear' of those four dungeons were acquired by four unknown guilds.

Well, players with Inheritance Transformations would be far better to perform at their best, if the scale of dungeons were any smaller. Obviously, that would reduce the difficulty of the dungeons. Therefore, from Normal Mode to Hard Mode, and from Hard Mode to Hardcore Mode, the four dungeons were cleared within a day. It was quite obvious that the difficulty of clearing those dungeons were quite easy, to begin with.

Let's look at Zhang Yang now. With his current Defence and

Attack, even if he doesn't activate his Inheritance Transformation, he could have cleared the Hardcore Mode of a 5-player or even a 10-player scale dungeon with the aid of Felice's healing ability. Well, that is, if the boss has no HP Recovery Skills, of course.

The Grouped Dungeons were similar to the Spectre's Cavern and the Elemental Lair. Their Normal Mode only dropped Mythical Tier equipment. Their Hard Mode only dropped Ethereal Tier equipment. Last but not least, their Hardcore Mode would drop Holy Tier equipment. Well, even though Zhang Yang had no interest in Level 230 Holy Tier bosses, the equipment would still be very precious to all of his middle-tiered members of his guild.

After all, the number of Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier bosses that have been defeated so far have only reached 50. Even if each of those bosses dropped about 20 equipment, that would only be about 1,000 pieces of equipment. That would not be enough to satisfy so many players in the server. So, the dungeons would be the only place for the players to acquire better equipment to power themselves up.

Zhang Yang started to bring in some parties to clear the four Grouped Dungeons. Firstly, he wanted to gather as many equipment as possible for his guild members. Secondly, the number of monsters in the dungeons were abundant and concentrated. It was much more convenient for him to grind that way. However, when he reaches Level 240, clearing the monsters in these dungeons would not be enough for him anymore.

Another twenty days passed. Zhang Yang managed to level up to Level 235. He immediately went over to Koussou Snowy Mountain.

That place was a Level 210 – 240 map as well. It was just located somewhere among the Misamlock Lake Valley. A Level 265 Celestial Tier boss was hiding quietly there --- the Demon Lord Hulkinsh!

Previously, Zhang Yang was more than 30 levels behind the level

of the boss. So, Zhang Yang couldn't see the Skills of the boss. Therefore, when he reached Level 235, the first thing he wanted to settle was to take a closer look at the boss' Skills. By doing so, he would be able to plan out some tactics for him and his gang to take down the boss.

This was a gigantic Hellfire Demon. The boss had the features of the high Tier demons such as two horns on the forehead, a pair of bat wings behind his back and a lizard tail slightly above his butt hole. However, his entire body was engulfed in blazing flames. Because of that, the area around the boss was torched in a sea of flames that seemed unlikely to be put out! The air was burned to the point that the very air seemed twisted.

[Demon Lord Hulkinsh, Hellfire Demon King] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 265

HP: 26,500,000,000

Defence: 64,540

Melee Attack: 720,663 – 920,663

Magic Attack: 426,538 – 526,538

Skills:

[Hell Rage]: Unleashes the raging flames and causes 1,000,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the area of 300 meters.

[Blazing Impale]: Spits a stream of flames and torches a conical area before himself, causing 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to all targets. Targets will suffer 1% additional damage when struck by fire attacks. Can be stacked. Instant, Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Furious Hammer Strike]: Hammers the target with brute force, causing 100% Melee Attack, Physical Damage to the target.

[Blazing Mine]: Randomly plants mine across the area of 300-meter radius. The mine can only be seen for 2 seconds after it is planted. When a player steps on the mine, the mine will explode,

causing 1,000,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the area of 30-meter radius from the explosion as the center point. The mine can be disabled by Thieves with their profession Skill {Diffuse}.

[Life of Fire]: The damage that Hulkinsh deals will turn into his HP. The HP amount recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

[No Escape]: Upon entering 300-meter range from the boss, players will acquire this effect. Once the players with this effect get more than 300 meters further from the boss, the players will die immediately, regardless of their remaining HP amount.

Note: Hulkinsh is the Hellfire Demon King! He's the conqueror of Hellfire! Anyone who attempts to challenge him will be incinerated to dust!

Well... Zhang Yang could no longer stay calm!

Although the boss had the HP, Attack power of a Celestial Tier boss, Hulkinsh had a fatal weakness. Most of his Skills were Fire type Skills! Furthermore, the amount of HP that the boss could recover would depend on the amount of damage he could deal. The amount of HP recovery would differ, based on the boss's performance himself.

Well, it would be hard to say if such a HP Recovery would be good or bad. The more the boss attacks the players, the more HP amount the boss recovers. If the boss recovers 1% HP in 30 seconds, then the boss would be able to recover 8,830,000 HP in every second. Everything would differ, based on the situation as well.

Because the {Hell Rage} was an AoE type Skill, it could cover over 300 meters. The Skill would also function according to a regular pattern. However, the Skill only had a 2-second cooldown. When the HP bar of the boss is reduced to 20%, the cooldown period would become 1.5 seconds. Meanwhile, when the HP bar of the boss is reduced to 10%, the cooldown period would become 1 second! As long as there are a total of 1,766 players attacking the

boss at the same time, the HP Recovery of the boss would exceed 8,830,000 HP!

That would be the point where you thread a needle.

# Chapter 849: Soloing a Celestial Tier Boss!

---

So, this boss appears to be the type that grows stronger as the battle continues on. He would recover more HP if more players were to attack him! Theoretically, the 300-meter radius area around the boss should be able to hold quite a substantial number of players.

Hulkinsh was rather similar to Angus. They were both the type of bosses that would become even more fearless if they were to battle a larger number of enemies. It would best to battle these bosses with a bunch of elites!

Of course, that would work for the other players.

Zhang Yang revealed a crooked grin on his face. Could this boss be designed for him and only him? His Phoenix pet had the ability to ignore all Fire Attacks along with their special effects. Furthermore, the Phoenix pet could also recover HP by absorbing Fire Damage! Even though the boss is also equipped with the ability to deal Physical Damage, the amount of Physical Damage the boss could deal with his normal attacks and his {Furious Hammer Strike} were almost the same as the amount of Fire Damage that the boss' {Hell Rage} and {Blazing Impale} could deal to the Phoenix pet. That should balance out the damage the Phoenix pet receives and the amount of HP that the Phoenix pet could recover.

In other words, the Phoenix had the absolute advantage of being undefeated in this boss battle!

It would be natural for Zhang Yang to allow the Phoenix pet to be the main Tanker of this battle. He would only be dealing damage to the boss from the sidelines. After all, he would only be receiving approximately 1,000,000 AoE Damage every 2 seconds before the HP bar of the boss goes as low as 20%. With his current Defence, he would only take 450,000 damage head-on. Meanwhile, Zhang

Yang's HP would reach over a total of 33,354,000 HP if he activates his Inheritance Transformation. The boss would still need at least 25 minutes to deplete Zhang Yang's HP bar with AoE attacks alone.

Well, that would only work, if Zhang Yang did not have his {God of War Restoration} and the additional 30% Passive Damage Immunity provided by his {Rock Solid}. In simpler words, one of Zhang Yang's HP bars would definitely be able to last for 30 minutes, at least.

Meanwhile, the cooldown for his {Radiance of God of War} was 30 minutes. As long as Zhang Yang does not become the boss' main target throughout his Transformed period, he should be able to win the battle and stay alive by the end of the battle.

Now that Zhang Yang and his Phoenix pet would not die battling the boss, the outcome of the battle would only depend on one factor now. That would be whether the boss could be taken out within two hours.

The answer would be a definite 'yes'. Theoretically, he should be able to kill the boss in 110 minutes. Furthermore, if he triggers the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}, he could further shorten the time needed to kill the boss!

Soloing a Celestial Tier boss!

Zhang Yang could not help to feel a blazing rush of excitement up his chest. Although Celestial Tier equipment had no longer seemed rare to him, having the opportunity to solo a Celestial Tier boss alone will never come every day, or even never! He was shaking with excitement!

After making some calculations and assumptions, he noticed that there were a large number of Elite Tier Hellfire Demons in the entire mountain valley. However, those monsters were staying at least a couple of hundred meters away from the boss, as if they were terrified by the existence of the boss.

"There shouldn't be any possibility that the monsters would be drawn in while I'm battling the boss, then."

After thinking by himself, he immediately patted the Phoenix pet and charged straight at the boss. 300 meters from above the sky, he leaped off the back of the Phoenix pet and activated both his Inheritance Transformation and the Phoenix Pet's Transformation Skill.

"Kill him!"

Phoenix pet divebombed the boss to trigger the battle. It began to spit streams of blazing flames towards the boss and caused a series of insanely high damage to the boss. Each damage value had reached over millions! In one brief instant, the boss was already heavily wounded!

"You bastards!" Hulkinsh let out a furious roar and swung his blazing fist straight at Phoenix pet. At the same instance, the boss's nostrils were flared. Two streams of powerful blazing flames were seen gushing out of the nostrils, reaching the ground! The flames did not stop there, they continued to spread out and radiated into the surroundings.

‘-829,321!’

‘+1,000,000!’

At first, the Phoenix pet received a damage value. However, a healing value appeared right after the damage value popped out! The lost amount of HP was instantly recovered!

Well, that was the Phoenix pet's specialty, after all. Any Fire Attack would become useless on the Phoenix pet. Instead, the fire damage that the Phoenix pet receives would be turned into the source of the Phoenix pet's HP Recovery.

However, Zhang Yang was not equipped with the ability to absorb Fire Damage. Immediately, he received a blow from the boss's {Hell Rage} head on. However, only 450,000 damage from



the 1,000,000 Basic Damage of the boss managed to penetrate Zhang Yang's insanely high Defence! That was really nothing to him.

Zhang Yang waved his hand and summoned Felice out from her slot. The little lady immediately entered her Goddess of War Scion Form before launching her fierce attacks on the boss.

Theoretically, as long as the DPS exceeds 500,000 damage, the boss would be receiving effective damage. Or else, whoever who could not do that would only be a burden to all. Felice's DPS had surpassed 900,000 damage. Although each {Hell Rage} would allow the boss to recover a certain amount of HP, the effective damage dealt to the boss was still about 400,000 damage. It was quite a decent progress for the moment.

However, Felice no longer had the ability to heal when she is in her new form. Therefore, after a brief moment of battling head-on against the boss, Felice would be forced to return back to her slot.

{Charge Up Strike}, {Sky Slicer}!

In order to maximize the damage output, Zhang Yang activated his strongest Skills. Instantly, he dealt over 250,000,000 damage and took over the aggro of the boss.

{Shadow of the Void}! By using that Skill, Zhang Yang disengaged the aggro of the boss.

Right after that, he resurfaced to continue his ferocious strikes on the boss. A few minutes later, he did the same thing and took over the aggro again. However, he did the same thing as well, using his {Shadow of the Void} again to disengage the aggro of the boss again. Well, because he needed to use the same Skill before it cooldowns, he had to use {Rearm} to reset the cooldown of his {Shadow of the Void}.

With two rounds of that, the Phoenix pet managed to generate enough aggro --- upon reaching Level 230, the Phoenix pet had

automatically become Celestial Tier. Its power level had increased tremendously --- so that should allow Zhang Yang to focus on attacking the boss for at least 10 minutes. After that, he could just use his {Shadow of the Void} to vanish from the sight of the boss whenever that Skill is ready. Upon the third round of the same routine that Zhang Yang did with his {Shadow of the Void}, it became impossible for Zhang Yang to OT within the timeframe of 10 minutes. In that sense, that would also mean that Zhang Yang would never OT again, ever for the boss battle!

Although Fatty Han also had a Phoenix pet, that fatty's Defence was too weak for the moment. He could at most, last for 5 minutes under the onslaught of the boss with his {Hell Rage}. It would be impossible for the fatty to solo the boss. Only Zhang Yang, who had one Phoenix pet, a super high Defence, and also insanely powerful Attacks would be capable of soloing the boss!

Of course, that would only work for Zhang Yang, thanks to this unique boss. A miracle like this would never be replicated again!

"God damned fire chicken! I'm the Lord of Flame, the conqueror of Fire!" Hulkinsh let out a raging roar as he was launching his attacks at the Phoenix pet repeatedly. Truth to be told, if the boss was only using single-unit attacks, the Phoenix pet would not have held on for long as well. However, a monster would always remain a monster. The boss would not possibly leave his Skills there when they are ready for use. So, the boss was destined to be helpless against the Phoenix pet.

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Such a thrilling joy does not come easy. He had already switched on his in-game footage recorder to record everything down so that he could rewatch the footage.

Well, soloing a Celestial Tier boss while oppressing the boss with absolute power was absolutely satisfying!

{Glare of the Death God}, resisted!

Zhang Yang told himself that it wouldn't matter much at all. As long as no other player comes in all of a sudden and lets the boss recover his HP, Zhang Yang should be able to kill the boss within 2 hours!

‘-15,763,980!’

An extremely high value popped right on top of the boss. It was Zhang Yang's {Rising Dragon Strike}! It was an attack 10 times higher than his normal attack! Well, the good fortune did not stop there. Zhang Yang's {Frost Strike} had also dealt over 12,551,792 damage! It was the weapon's 8-time damage special effect!

Well, that's what we call 'when one door shuts, another opens'. Unfortunately, even though the {Rising Dragon Strike} could deal a damage 10 times higher, the effect would never be as great as the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. Each special effect of that Ultimate Skill could have dealt over 265,000,000 damage! The only Skill that could match the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} would be the {Sky Slicer} after Zhang Yang activates his {Charge Up Strike}.

{Sky Slicer} could deal 12 hits in a row once in every hour. The total damage that the Skill could do was about the same as the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. Of course, the {Sky Slicer} would need to be paired with {Charge Up Strike} before it could reach that potential. However, using {Charge Up Strike} to buff {Sky Slicer} was a 100% feasible method of dealing super high damage to the boss. Unlike the {Glare of the Death God}, Zhang Yang could just use it without having to worry about failing.

34 minutes later, Zhang Yang had used his first {Radiance of God of War}. Instantly, he recovered his HP back to full.

50 minutes, 90 minutes!

The HP bar of the boss had dropped to 20%. It was time to enter the 'Killing Cleave' Stage.

Instantly, the cooldown for the boss's {Hell Rage} had been shortened to 1.5 seconds. That would also mean that Zhang Yang would receive additional 50% damage from the boss.

{Indiscriminate}, {Killing Cleave}!

‘-36,194,934!’

The 100% Critical {Killing Cleave,} stacked with the {Lucky Strike} had brought misfortune to the boss. It dealt over approximately 40,000,000 damage to Hulkinsh in one instance! The boss could only roar in pain.

Because Hulkinsh was considered as a special boss, Zhang Yang's {Block} could do nothing in this boss battle. So Zhang Yang had used all three Skill Enhancement effects of his [Book of Revelation] to enhance his {Radiance of God of War}, {Shield Wall} and {Rock Solid}. By doing so, he managed to increase his survival throughout the boss battle. Now that he could use his {Radiance of God of War} once every 25 minutes, Zhang Yang's ability to survive longer in battle had increased to another whole new level.

10%!

Hulkinsh had entered his most ferocious state. The cooldown for his {Hell Rage} had been shortened to merely 1 second, now! Not only could he deal much higher damage to Zhang Yang, the boss could also recover HP at twice the amount that he used to be able to recover --- although the amount of HP recovery had only been increased from 230,000 HP per second to 450,000 HP per second.

Activating {Tribulation}!

{Hell Rage} could only deal 450,000 damage to Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang could deflect a total of 1,000,000 damage back to the boss. The boss had no choice but to suffer.

Because {Tribulation} could only last for 10 minutes, Zhang Yang chose to activate it much later into the battle in order to deflect a higher amount of damage back at the boss! Well, the boss was

using his {Hell Rage} once every second, so Zhang Yang's {Tribulation} would be deflecting 1,000,000 damage back to the boss in every second! That amount of DPS was as much as the DPS of his Phoenix pet!

9%, 8%, 7%!

Hulkinsh's HP was dropping lower and lower by the second. It seemed that he would become the first Celestial Tier boss in 'God's Miracle' to be killed by one player in another 10 minutes.

What a pathetic fate!

"God damned fire chicken!" Hulkinsh was infuriated to the point that he jumped around, venting out his rage with all his Fire Attacks. However, he could do nothing to the Phoenix pet. Instead, he increased his rate of using {Hell Rage}, which resulted in helping the Phoenix pet to restore even more HP!

The {Blazing Mine} was even more pathetic. It couldn't even deal 1 damage to the Phoenix pet, just because it could only deal Fire Damage! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was flying with the flight ability he was bestowed with after activating his God of War Transformation. So he would never ever trigger the mines.

The boss had already ran out of tricks up his sleeves. He could only witness the fall of his HP bar. He was drawing closer and closer to his own death in every passing second.

3%, 2%, 1%!

When the battle entered its 112th minute, Zhang Yang finally sliced away the last drop of the boss's HP. Well, Hulkinsh has become the most pathetic Celestial Tier boss in entire history of the game --- he had been slain by one single player!

The gigantic body of the boss collapsed onto the ground heavily and he also dropped tons of loot across the ground. Well, the number of loots was enough to put a smile on Zhang Yang's face for hours.

This time, Zhang Yang has really hit the jackpot!

Upon checking out on the loots, he noticed that there were a total of 9 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment. Furthermore, this boss has dropped the same equipment as Maya --- they were all Necklaces. Coincidentally, Zhang Yang did not get a Necklace back when they slayed Maya. This should make it up for him.

[God Killer Necklace] (Celestial, Necklace)

Vitality: +26,759

Strength: +3,428

Agility: +3,428

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 53,510 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 15%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,009 when being hit.

Use: When you activate {Shield Wall}, you can deflect all attacks that are directed towards you.

Required Class: Guardian

Required Level: 260

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

# Chapter 850: Acquisition Succeeded!

---

Other than the 9 Celestial Tier Armor Set pieces, Hulkinsh had also dropped another 5 pieces of normal Celestial Tier equipment. Among those pieces of equipment, one of them was a two-handed battle axe!

[Akensh, Hell Lord's Battle Axe] (Celestial, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 83,633 – 103,633

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 24,640

{Level 9 Socket 1}

{Level 9 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 70%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 20%.

Equip: Normal Attacks have a certain rate of dealing a damage 10 times higher than normal damage.

Use: Within 5 minutes, afflicts your target with a negative effect upon every successful hit on your target. Causes the target to receive an additional 1% damage whenever struck again by you. Can stack. Can only stack up to a maximum of 100%. Lasts for 30 seconds. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Required Level: 260

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Note: This axe once belonged to the great Hell Lord. It became a collection of Hulkinsh after the Hell Lord fell.

A Celestial Tier weapon!

Zhang Yang was overjoyed with his discovery! After equipping the weapon, his basic damage has reached up to 789,686 – 873,286 damage! That amount of Attack was extremely powerful! Well,

even if a Holy Tier player with a Class B Inheritance activates his or her Inheritance Transformation, the player would not reach that Attack power either. It seemed that Zhang Yang's Attack power has become ridiculously powerful!

Other than that equipment, Hulkinsh had also dropped quite a number of Skill Books, Greater Demonic Pearls, and other trivial items. Unfortunately, none of them was suitable for Zhang Yang. However, there was a crimson red rock that was snatched by Felice. She has actually entered her 'Golden Egg' form. It seemed that the fourth seal is about to be unsealed!

Because the process would require a long time, Zhang Yang brought the few Level 9 Gemstones that were dropped by the boss and went straight to the Holy City. Then, he immediately inserted two gemstones into the two sockets of the battle axe.

He gathered his gang around and distributed the loots he picked up from killing Hulkinsh. When they received the loots, they were shocked to the point that they dropped their jaws as well.

"Little Yang, did you just take out a Celestial Tier boss all by yourself?" Fatty Han took in a cold breath.

"Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed without saying anything about it.

"What the hell! Boss, you're too crazy! That Celestial Tier boss was killed by you?!" Endless Starlight let out a strange scream, "That's amazing! You can even solo a Celestial Tier boss now! Boss, do you have anything else to do in this game?!"

Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment there. Well, he was about to step up to the pinnacle of 'God's Miracle,' now. If the officials are not going to release a new patch or increase the level cap up to Level 400, or even introduce new Tiers such as Super Celestial Tier, God Tier or Supreme Tier, Zhang Yang would have nothing left to do in the game!

When he managed to get the full set of 'God Killer Armor Set'



which included a Celestial Tier weapon, Celestial Tier shield and Celestial Tier Accessories, so what should he do for the rest of his days in the game? The dungeons offered no challenge for him. The bosses offered no challenge for him. Even the players were no match to him! Zhang Yang would be lonely at the top of a snowy mountain!

"When I get a full set of Celestial Tier equipment, it should be about time I leave this game..." Zhang Yang thought to himself.

Although 'God's Miracle' was realistic, it was still, just a virtual reality where players use to pass time and relax. Well, there was no reason for anyone to treat this as their entire career. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had also yielded enough money from the game. Upon reaching the peak, money has become insignificant to him. The difference between having 100,000,000 and 10,00,000,000,000 was just figurative now. He wouldn't be able to use all of the money if he makes too much of it!

However, Zhang Yang would like to slay all of the Celestial Tier bosses in the entire server at least once, before he is willing to leave the game.

"Haha! These Celestial Tier equipment have come at the right timing! We're about to participate in the World League Championship Finale soon. By then, we should be able to oppress all of our opponents!" Lost Dream spoke in excitement.

They were just 10 days from the 4th World League Championship that was going to be held in Shang Hai. The Silky Soft Battle Team had won a secured seat in the finales. Meanwhile, the second battle team who managed to secure the other secured seat into participating the finale would be the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team from Imperial Sky. Well, only two battle teams were going to participate in the championships.

Well, Eternal Flame has gone downhill into the abyss because of Zhong Xiu Hua's 'Sexual Transmitted Disease' event. They only

managed to 'hang on' to the Top 5 in the Class S Professional League Championship. Recently, Hua Yi Trust Fund had been trying to fend off Zhang Yang from taking over their company. Without any juice left to even fund Eternal Flame in their daily activities, the guild seemed to be dying soon. Every member of the guild was beginning to feel worried for themselves.

Meanwhile, Crimson Rage was not performing up to their former standards, because quite a number of their core players got married all of a sudden. They even planned to have children after their weddings. Therefore, the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team managed to acquire the second place thrice. Before the final season of the Professional League Championship could begin, it was already decided that the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team was the winner to participate in the World League Championships as one of the two battle teams.

"Little Yang, are you sure you want to do it, then?" Fatty Han pulled Zhang Yang to a corner and asked with concern.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Well, Zhong Xiu Hua is too great a threat now. I will not rest until I 'get rid' of him!"

"But what if he tries something funny or maybe do something dangerous?"

"Well. I'm counting on that! I'm just concerned if he runs away!"

...

Zhang Yang brought a few lawyers and Business Excellence along over to Yan City. They arrived to join the Hua Yi Trust Fund's Board Meeting.

"We're all here because we need to decide who should be the new Chairman of the board." Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile on his face while sitting on the couch, in the middle of the office.

That lazily rough way Zhang Yang sat on the couch had caused many in the conference room to look at him with contemptuous

looks on their faces.

"Mr.Zhang, you're just the second largest shareholder of this organization. You've no authority to make such a significant decision for our organization!" a middle-aged woman in her fifties said. She was wearing a custom made Armani branded uniform. She seemed to have kept her body and her health well cared. She looked rich enough and she definitely looked intimidating.

Well, she is the mother of Zhong Xiu Hua, Li Wan Rong. She is also the largest shareholder in the entire organization.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and snapped his fingers. The lawyer standing behind him immediately walked up and placed a document on the table before Zhang Yang. Then Zhang Yang said, "This is Mr. Ma, Mr. Zhou and Mr. Feng's signature for letting go of their shares to me. This means that not only am I the organization's biggest shareholder now, I also have more than 50% of the shares of the entire organization. So, I can do whatever f\*ck I want!"

Li Wan Rong immediate lost the colors in her face. She instantly snatched the documents over and took a closer look at the pages. Her face instantly turned, well, twisted. She slammed the table hard and spoke in rage, "Ma Yuan Shen! Zhou Li Tao! Feng Dong Ming! You guys are great! Very great!"

She pointed her fingers at three men in the conference room. They were the main three biggest shareholders in the Hua Yi Trust Fund. Well, the total shares that these three held and the shares that Zhang Yang was currently holding was indeed more than 50% of the shares for the entire organization. Zhang Yang had acquired absolute control over the shares of the company.

Even though the three were a little ashamed of what they did, they were not afraid at all. Zhang Yang had paid them more than enough for them to live like kings for several lifetimes over. Well, when they are well fed and their wallets are fat, they no longer

have to worry about Li Wan Rong retaliating.

"From now on, Ms.Li is no longer the Chairman of the Board. Every decision on investments and any visions related to Ms.Li will be re-evaluated. Alright, the meeting is over, dismissed!"

Zhang Yang was the first to walk out of the conference room, leaving Li Wan Rong standing stiffly like a statue. Well, eventually she did start screaming and shouting. She could not understand it at all. She was actually winning the battle of 'the hostile Anti-takeover' on her company. So how did Zhang Yang managed to cut the ground from beneath her feet! He actually bought the company from the inside!

How did Zhang Yang get so much funds, then?

Ring! The phone rang. Zhang Yang picked it up and heard a lady's voice with weird accent, "Darling, everything going fine?"

"Thank you for lending me so much money! I'll pay you back as soon as I can!"

"Darling, you don't have to pay me back at all. That's my dowry as your bride!"

Zhang Yang frowned. Well, he did not have enough funds to overtake the shares of the entire Hua Yi Trust Fund. However, after getting sufficient funds from Dusk Phoenix, the princess of Luxembourg, the future Duchess to support him, he managed to pull it off!

After flirting with Dusk Phoenix for a moment, the woman had finally hung up unwillingly. Zhang Yang sighed heavily after that. Well, he has to make sure that he returns the money as soon as possible. Zhang Yang would not want this seductive woman to cling onto him anymore. Or else, his backyard would get burned down!

Upon leaving with the necessary paperwork related to Hua Yi Trust Funds, Zhang Yang cut off the partnership of the company

with the Eternal Flame for a start. He wanted to completely cut off Zhong Xiu Hua's source of income, after all. Other than that, he also began to liquidate the stocks and shares in order to kick Li Wan Rong out of the organization completely! His main intention was to force Zhong Xiu Hua's hands to the point that he has to act, or he'll lose everything!

Zhang Yang did not stay in the city for long. After 3 days of meddling around, he went back to Zhou Shu immediately. It was only 6 days before the World League Championship Finale begins. It was about time for Zhang Yang and the ladies to pack their things and get ready to travel.

This time, they went to Shang Hai. Zhang Yang had also brought Luo Yu Rou and his precious baby girl along. Well, he would not be able to feel safe if he just leaves her and the baby girl back in Zhou Shu. Coincidentally, Luo Yu Rou's second movie was wrapped up and had premiered in cinemas. It was a great time for her to come out and take a breath of fresh air.

Time waits for no man. It was time for the World League Championship Finale to begin! Top Tier parties from all Regions came over to Shang Hai to witness the matches. Because of that, quite a huge number of fans were attracted over to make the scene merrier.

18th January, the premier league of the championship began. Among the 16, only 8 of them would make it to the next round. The first match was Silky Soft Battle Team versus Shadow Ghost Battle Team from the Japan-Korea Region. By the end of the match, the Silky Soft Battle Team won both rounds with the same scores of 5:0. Because of that, the passion of the audience was ignited. Everyone started screaming and cheering. The championship had reached a climax on its first day.

Up to this point of the game, the difference between the controls and awareness between top Tier players were getting smaller and smaller. So now, the equipment on the players and the Skills that

they had would determine the outcome of a PvP battle.

The Normal Tier players were able to witness how influential equipment could be and how significant a person's Defence could be. A super Skill could even change the tide of the entire battle!

For instance, the {Sky Slicer} had destructively high damage. If the Skill is not interrupted, it would bring a tremendous amount of pain and damage to a player. Well, players were not allowed to use their Inheritance Transformations. If they ever take 10 solid hits from {Sky Slicer}, even if the players had a full set of Holy Tier equipment, they would still be as good as dead. However, it might be possible that a top Tier Tanker with a long \*ss HP bar like Zhang Yang and an insanely high Defence might survive the 10 hits from the {Sky Slicer}, head-on. Any other player of any other Classes would be as good as dead!

...

Zhong Xiu Hua was sitting high up with his eyes red. He looked wretched and intimidating.

His mood was extremely bad right now!

Previously, his mother had gone through quite some trouble just to gather some money for him to get through the difficult times. However, once his mother found out that Zhang Yang was the one behind the 'takeover' on the Hua Yi Trust Fund, she immediately pulled all her strings and had the banks push Zhang Yang to return the loans. As long as Zhang Yang is willing to return the loans, her organization would have made hundreds of million dollars from the incident.

Zhong Xiu Hua intended to wait and see Zhang Yang's pathetic face when he loses. However, he heard the news about Zhang Yang secretly buying over some of the major shareholders with larger shares. By doing so, Zhang Yang managed to take control over the entire stock market of the Hua Yi Trust Fund. Meanwhile, Zhong Xiu Hua's mother borrowed quite a substantial amount of loans in

order to fight Zhang Yang. After she was kicked out of the board by Zhang Yang, her net worth dropped tremendously. The money she had left was mostly used to pay the loans she borrowed earlier on. Therefore, she almost had nothing left by the end of the incident.

In other words, he's now out of 'rations' for real!

# Chapter 851: The Disbanding of Eternal Flame

---

Although Zhong Xiu Hua has a very powerful father, he has never been fond of asking favors from other people, especially his father.

From his point of view, maintaining good connections would mean wealth and fame, a total control over the others. Meanwhile, he also witnessed quite a number of events that convinced him that his thoughts were true. One must at least act like an upright officer. It would be impossible for Zhong Xiu Hua to behave otherwise!

Since he joined 'God's Miracle', pursuing Sun Xin Yu was merely one of his smaller aims. Well, he wanted to get Sun Xin Yu in order to form an 'alliance' with the Sun Family. The Zhong Family would still have a limited capability. His father was the only one who managed to slip himself onto the political stages. He would need to search for a new political platform for him to shine in his own way, because he did not intend to follow his father's footsteps.

There, he saw the opportunity to make big bucks in 'God's Miracle'.

The game was basically a gigantic marketplace with more than 2,000,000,000 people in it. The scale of that marketplace had exceeded any other marketplace in the entire world! Judging by the movie industry, the movie companies have managed to earn a lot more money and spend lower cost on movies ever since they decided to shoot their movies in 'God's Miracle'.

Of course, he also had something to regret, whenever he thought about picking that sexy superstar Luo Yu Rou, to frame Zhang Yang. Well, instead of defaming Zhang Yang, she actually became Zhang Yang's money tree! The first movie she made had provided Zhang Yang with an additional 1,000,000,000 dollars as his pocket



money! Meanwhile, her second movie had premiered as well! The movie received quite good responses too! Even if this movie cannot earn them as much as they could from the first movie, the amount of money they could earn this round would still be decent.

Meanwhile, Luo Yu Rou was one sexy, seductive minx. Zhong Xiu Hua could not help but regret every single decision he had made now. If only he knew all these, he would have kept Luo Yu Rou to himself. Not only would he get money from her, he could also toy with her whenever he needs to release! The benefits of having her would definitely weigh the same as having Sun Xin Yu!

No, it would provide him an even better future!

Marrying Sun Xin Yu would only be the means of forming an alliance with the Sun Family, expanding his influence by a little. On the other hand, Luo Yu Rou could earn about 1,000,000,000 dollars from making one movie. So if she just makes two movies in a year, she could earn over 40,000,000,000 dollars in twenty years! Would marrying Sun Xin Yu and forming an alliance with the Sun Family be worth 40,000,000,000 dollars?

The answer was obviously no!

Therefore, Zhong Xiu Hua's mood became worse by the second... the worst part about it was that there was a mole among his own people. That mole had given up the information saying that Hua Yi Trust Fund has been bought to the public. Everyone had found out about the fact that this master Zhong no longer had the money to support everyone's salaries!

That news was a fatal blow to Eternal Flame. Although his mother has still managed to squeeze some money out for him to get through the storm, Zhong Xiu Hua still owned a month's salary to all of his guild members. Under the harsh pressure of the guild, he finally stood up to explain the situation. Many of his members there and then, decided to leave the guild and never see his face again!

Up till this point, the number of members remaining in the guild had dropped from 68,967 to only 29,873. Meanwhile, it was obvious that the imminent danger was far from over. Everyone stood to believe that if Zhong Xiu Hua could not find a way to continue paying the salaries of his guild members, only more would quit the guild!

Everything was happening now, all because of the god damn Zhang Yang!

Zhong Xiu Hua slammed the table with a heavy blow. His face was so twisted that juice might just come out of it!

Scholar Musou and the others remained silent. Although the man had lost all his money, his family was still influential as f\*ck. Well, if he ever wanted to get more money, Zhong Xiu Hua could just abandon Eternal Flame and start all over again, any time he wanted to.

Therefore, they did not dare to provoke master Zhong just yet. Well, unless they have already decided to leave the guild.

"So who's the mole that gave up the information?" Zhong Xiu Hua glanced at his fellow 'underlings' with his blazing eyes. His eyes looked as if they were about to explode. After all, he only told the information to all of them, his most trusted 'underlings'.

Scholar Musou frowned and said, "Master Zhong, everyone here is very loyal to you. There's no way any of us would have betrayed you! I think that Zhang Yang must have planted a mole in our guild!"

"Well, he better stay hidden, then!" Zhong Xiu Hua let out a vengeful tone. Actually, it would be easy for Zhong Xiu Hua to get money. He could just ask for official contracts from the government by pulling some strings. By then, he could easily earn back the money!

As long as he could get through this hardship, Eternal Flame

would not die. Of course, he would have to do everything behind the back of his father. Otherwise, his father would have him skinned alive over and over again.

"Master Zhong, I know who did it!" Longrich suddenly raised his hand and said.

"Oh!" Zhong Xiu Hua widened his eyes and spoke with a murderous tone, "Who the f\*ck is it?!"

"That should be --- me!" Longrich pointed his finger right back at his own nose.

"Humph! I've no time for jokes!" Zhong Xiu Hua was infuriated. If Longrich was not one of the big shots in the Eternal Flame, he would have him hung and make Longrich disappeared from the world. Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was in need of anyone's support during a time like this. He had no choice but to keep his temper in line for now.

"Master Zhong, I'm not joking around!" Longrich grinned with pride. The expression on his face was now scornful, "You want to challenge Mr. Zhang with that level of IQ? Well, that's like an old man pushing a car upslope with its parking brake on! Hahaha! You really thought that you could do anything you want just because your father's influential, huh?"

"YOU ---" Zhong Xiu Hua confirmed that Longrich was not joking around. He was instantly filled with rage and pointed his finger at Longrich, "What made you do it, then?!"

"Traitor?" Longrich laughed out loud and shook his head, "Mr. Zhong, you've overestimated yourself. This is merely a game. You can just switch sides whenever fits you!"

"Humph! How much did Zhang Yang pay you!?"

"400,000,000!" Longrich showed 4 fingers at Zhong Xiu Hua's face. Scholar Musou, Death Arbiter and the others were shocked to hear that amount. If Zhang Yang had provided them that much

money as well, they wouldn't mind stabbing Zhong Xiu Hua in the back, or even up, down, and front!

Well, Zhong Xiu Hua jumped in anger that he did not even know how to express. Then, he suddenly stopped, "Wait a minute... back in Brazil, was it you who led us to that backalley?!"

Longrich laughed again and said, "Master Zhong, how did you like getting your \*ss poked?"

"You f\*cking bastard!"

This time, it was not just Zhong Xiu Hua popping his veins all over his head. Even the faces of Scholar Musou and the others turned green! Well, they were also the victims in that incident. No matter how many women they paid ever since then to release their steam, they just could not shake the horrific memory of having poked in their own \*sses! They would constantly wake from their sleep because as it haunted them in their nightmares!

Knowing that the culprit was just standing before them, everyone was so infuriated that their eyes turned red. They charged at Longrich one after another, swinging their fists and kicks at Longrich.

Well, the Holy City forbade any form of PvP matches, though. Their fists and kicks landed on nothing by air. Meanwhile, Longrich was just sitting calmly and quietly, observing the monkeys performing their 'tricks'.

"Good! Very good!" Zhong Xiu Hua was raging and laughing at the same time, "Longrich! You are finished! We all know where you live! You will regret what you did today! You'll regret the decision you made for the rest of the days!"

"Haha! Your IQ is really so low that anyone would worry for you, Mr.Zhong!" Longrich showed no signs of fear at all, "Do you really think I'll still be in China when I decided to reveal my identity? Of course, I'm no longer in China by now! Ha! You can do anything

you like in China, but you did not know that you can't do whatever you want in Brazil, right? Or maybe, you want another fresh poke in your \*ss?"

"Argh ---" Zhong Xiu Hua let out a strange roar. Well, it was utterly true that he could do whatever he wants in his own country, because he could cover them up easily. However, he was just like any other foreigner when he steps foot in any other country outside China.

Now that Longrich has hidden himself in Brazil, Zhong Xiu Hua would never have the chance to take his revenge on Longrich ever again.

"Oh, right! Mr. Zhang has a message to deliver to you. He has begun investigating cases regarding people that you made 'disappear'. Maybe, he still has a surprise for you!" Longrich started playing a recorded message from Zhang Yang himself. Things were just getting more and more out of hands for Zhong Xiu Hua. He was so angry to the point that he could no longer feel anything.

Pfff! Pfff!

Zhong Xiu Hua began to breathe heavily as if he was panting like a hairdryer. Although he was very confident that he left nothing left that can be traced back to him, he would never rest peacefully, knowing that someone was trying something behind his back. Well, he could feel a rush of raging heat up his chest that almost got him dead. It was the rage towards Zhang Yang!

At that instance, the only thought left in his mind was how to kill Longrich, and kill Zhang Yang! Whatever the cost!

"Meanwhile, I've also pulled quite a number of people along. I'm going to start a new guild now! Mr. Zhang said it himself, you're not fit to play games. You better quit and go home to your mummy as soon as you can! Stop embarrassing your F\*CKING self already!" Longrich suddenly spoke vulgarly. Then he stood up and walked

out of the house.

"You ungrateful son of the b\*tch! Traitor! You're not going to get away with this! You and Zhang Yang! I'll shred you two into tiny pieces! Just wait and see! F\*ck!" Zhong Xiu Hua screamed from the bottom of his stomach.

Scholar Musou and the others looked at each other. Then, they decided to leave the guild as well without saying a word --- judging from what they just witnessed, Zhong Xiu Hua's identity as a 'Prince' no longer had any effect in the game. He was being tortured by Zhang Yang left, right, upside down. Meanwhile, if they remain by the side of Zhong Xiu Hua to fight Zhang Yang... well, Brazil was not the only place with psychotic \*ss pokers in the entire world.

'Ding! Guild Announcement: Longrich has left the guild!'

'Ding! Guild Announcement: Scholar Musou has left the guild!'

'Ding! Guild Announcement: Death Arbiter has left the guild!'

...

As the core players of Eternal Flame left the guild one after another, Eternal Flame descended into chaos. Those who were already angry because they did not get their salaries immediately followed and quit the guild as well. This so-called top Tier guild was instantly torn into pieces. There was only approximately 1,000 members remaining in the guild at the moment. They were just weak players that did not even reach Level 200 yet! In a flash, the guild became as weak as a newly founded guild.

In a nutshell, Eternal Flame was totally gone.

Looking upon the countless streams of Guild Announcements about his members' resignations, Zhong Xiu Hua totally fell into the dark abyss of despair. A few hours later, his eyes turned red, and he looked at the table as if his eyes could burn the table to crisp. With murderous intent overwhelming his head, he said,

"Zhang Yang, I will kill you! I will!"

...

"Mr. Zhang, I've done everything you've asked!" Longrich switched on his voice communicator in the game and contacted Zhang Yang. He greeted Zhang Yang with a 'congratulations'.

Zhang Yang was currently in Shang Hai. He revealed a smile on his face and said, "Thank you very much for your service! It's been a pleasure!"

"The pleasure is mine, Mr. Zhang!" Longrich quickly cut back in and said. "But Mr. Zhang, wouldn't that rich brat would try to kill you after all we've done? That man has been staying up high in his influential position. I bet he can't even take a punch! He might get mad and do something horrific!"

"Hmm.. well, you don't have to concern yourself with that, I guess. Just enjoy your beaches and bikini girls!"

Zhang Yang switch off the voice communicator and swung his axe at a gigantic elephant monster right before him, "Well, if you don't go insane, how can I play you into my hands then? Zhong Xiu Hua, my dear Zhong Xiu Hua... Do you even understand what does 'Angered man would splat his blood 5 feet across the ground' means? So let's observe and see if you might try something that would destroy yourself, then."

"After settling Zhong Xiu Hua, I guess it's time for me to rest as well. It might be a good time to solve the problems between ice queen, witchy snow, and the other ladies. I guess it's unwise to drag the problem any further."

## Chapter 852: Reckless Attempt

---

After proceeding into the quarterfinals, the Silky Soft Battle Team would only have one day of rest before the semifinals. Well. Their opponents were just some players they knew long ago. The Philosopher Stone Battle Team.

Although their opponents were not weak at all, Zhang Yang and his gang had acquired enough Celestial Tier equipment to get the first special effect of the Armor Set. They were able to take the lead in the battle. Because of that, they managed to win the matches with ease. By scoring 5:1, they managed to proceed into the semifinals.

At night, back in Zhang Yang's room, Sun Xin Yu revealed a sense of worry on her face. She was serious, "Zhong Xiu Hua has just arrived at Shang Hai. So have you made up your mind? Are you sure?"

"Yes. Even though the hatred we have for each other is a little messed up, now it's either me or him. One of us must go down," Zhang Yang nodded and revealed a smile on his face all of a sudden, "Rest assured, everything is according to plan! I'm very confident, knowing that you have my back!"

"You must be careful!" Sun Xin Yu was still very worried. She still believed that Zhang Yang's idea was too insane, to begin with.

During that night, Zhang Yang left the hotel to have a drink at the bar. He even flirted with two hot chicks all the while he was in the bar.

After a while, Zhang Yang went to the washroom. Immediately, two huge men came into the washroom as well. Then the two of them stood at the sides of Zhang Yang. One of them smacked the back of the head of Zhang Yang with a karate chop while the other one carried Zhang Yang after he collapsed.



"The goods have been secured. We're on our way."

One of the two men spoke into the device on his wrist. The device seemed to be some sort of mini communication device.

Half an hour later, Zhang Yang was rudely woken up by a pail of cold water. He immediately woke up. At the same time, he noticed that he was held in the middle of some sort of broken down, abandoned warehouse. Well, of course, his hands and legs were tied to a chair. The light in the surroundings was dimmed. There was a handsome looking man sitting right in front of him. However, that handsome looking man seemed dishevelled and unstable.

It was Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang spat out the water caught in his mouth and looked at Zhong Xiu Hua in disdain, "Master Zhong, so this is your definition of 'what you got'?" Other than Zhong Xiu Hua, there were also two other men in black suits standing behind Zhong Xiu Hua. Well, they still wore sunglasses, even though they were in a dark place like this. There was no telling if they were just acting cool or if it was their way of fashion.

"How dare you to speak even after knowing you're in a tough spot!" Zhong Xiu Hua snorted, "Didn't you already know that many men have 'disappeared' by my hands? I'll let you taste the pleasure of 'disappearing'!"

He stood up from his chair and walked around Zhang Yang twice. Suddenly, he gave Zhang Yang a slap in his face, "Who are you to fight me, huh? Today, I shall let you know the consequence of going against me, the authority! Money will not be able to buy you out of this!"

"Well, this is an abandoned factory for smithing metal. However, even though the factory is abandoned, their facilities still work like a charm! I'll put you into the stove and cook you bit by bit until you burn into crisp! Then, you'll disappear from this world!

Hahaha!"

Zhong Xiu Hua swung both of his hands to loosen his hands, "It's as simple as that! No one will know where you died. It will be just like you've never existed! You're going to feel endless pain before you die. Believe me when I say so. You're going to wish you die as soon as you can!"

"So are you satisfied with the tomb I picked for you?" Zhong Xiu Hua was looking at Zhang Yang as if he had won. Not only did he want to destroy Zhang Yang's body, he also wanted Zhang Yang to suffer mentally before he dies. Only then could Zhong Xiu Hua relieve himself of his rage towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, "So you finally found a way to conquer your fear of the Sun Family, huh?"

"How did you ---" Zhong Xiu Hua immediately revealed a twisted face. It was terrifying to look at his face.

Ever since, he had been jabbed in the ss back in Brazil, he had a psychological phobia where he would remember the pain of being poked again and again. He could not even make his 'brother' stand up whenever he wanted to fck a girl. Well, that was psychological. So, no matter how much viagra he chugs down, he could not solve the problem at all. Well, how many women had suffered by only having his hands on them, then?

"Humph! You'll face justice until you cry and beg for mercy!" Zhong Xiu Hua told himself that there was no reason for him to be angry at Zhang Yang, a man that was about to be condemned to a torturous death by him. Zhang Yang would become a pile of ashes and the wind would blow the ashes away, leaving nothing behind. Meanwhile, he would be able to live happily ever after.

"Brother Zhao, Brother Bin, put him into the coffin now!"

"Yes, Master Zhong!"

The two big guys immediately walked up to Zhang Yang and

untied him. Then he picked him up from the chair.

"People inside the warehouse, listen up! You've been surrounded! Release the hostage immediately! Do not resist!" Just when everything was going smoothly for Zhong Xiu Hua, suddenly, they heard sirens that were loud and clear.

"WHAT?!" Zhong Xiu Hua immediately panicked, "You bastard! Did you just set me up?!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and shook his head, "With your IQ, I could easily beat you, if it weren't for your dad!"

Zhong Xiu Hua had thought himself to be a very capable strategist all the while. So when Zhang Yang bested him like his, his brain was overwhelmed by rage and humiliation. Without any delay, he pulled out his gun from his waist and pointed it at Zhang Yang. His face was gloomy, "You say it one more time! I dare you to say it one more time!"

Zhang Yang shut up without any hesitation. Well, he had forced Zhong Xiu Hua far enough. If he tries to push Zhong Xiu Hua little more, he might be the first to die. Well, he did not plan to die, obviously.

Right outside of the factory house, the police sirens were loud. Countless flashings of the police sirens were seen through the windows in all four directions of the house. It was obvious that the entire building was surrounded by the police!

Zhong Xiu Hua had finally understood that everything that Zhang Yang did was to force him into committing such a stupid crime!

Now that he was caught red-handed, even if he has the president to back him up, he would never be able to get out of this anymore! Holding a hostage... if his previous crimes were revealed to daylight, he would be shot more than just a hundred times in his head!

Well, even if his past crimes stay hidden, holding a hostage and possessing a firearm without a legal license would be crimes that would put him in jail for 8 to 10 years! Getting into jail was not something Zhong Xiu Hua could accept. If he is really going to jail, that would mean that his entire life would be over.

At that instant, he became more fearless than he ever could. His eyes were filled with murderous intent. It seemed that he had to bring someone down with him, no matter what.

"Master Zhong!" The two huge guys saw that Zhong Xiu Hua had lost himself to his rage and impulse to kill someone. They quickly tried to persuade him to calm himself. From their point of view, as long as Zhong Xiu Hua does not die, the Zhong family would have a way to get him out of this mess.

"Put down the gun!" A police spoke through a speaker sternly, "Put down your weapon immediately, raise both of your hands where we can see them!"

Zhong Xiu Hua was breathing faster and faster by the second. He could no longer hear anyone talking. He only saw the face of Zhang Yang right before him. All he could think of was the suffering and the torture that he was about to get after he gets into jail. According to rumors, some inmates have collected so much junk, and they would also have men as well for their...

Well, because he had experienced that before, he would rather die now than experience being poked in his \*ss again!

Madness!

Zhong Xiu Hua's eyes were filled with madness. He was no longer the calm and clever young man he used to be. He had 'transformed' into a sick person with painful memories. He held his gun so tightly that his hands were shaking now. His face was absolutely pale.

"Put down the weapon!"

"Put down your gun!"

The police had warned Zhong Xiu Hua a couple of times. However, Zhong Xiu Hua could not hear them at all. He was completely in the state of panic.

Even Zhang Yang started feeling nervous. This man has totally lost his mind! Well, no one could ever imagine what a madman would do if provoked! Although Zhang Yang had planned well to lure Zhong Xiu Hua here, he had never planned to give his life while doing that. No one had expected Zhong Xiu Hua to breakdown during all this!

Seeing the murderous eyes of Zhong Xiu Hua, Zhang Yang knew that he would shoot!

His hands were tied so tightly that he could not even move. So he moved his body back a little and charged forward with all the strength left in him! Bam! His huge movement had caused the chair to fall. Zhang Yang fell to the ground with his face. However, his back was still tied to the chair. Now, he looked like a turtle on the ground.

Zhong Xiu Hua was already on the verge of losing himself completely. Zhang Yang's move had ignited the dynamite!

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Zhong Xiu Hua could no longer resist. He gave in to his insanity and started pulling the trigger on his gun. He fired three shots at Zhang Yang!

Bam!

Another shot was heard coming from afar. The next thing that happened was Zhong Xiu Hua's brain splattering across the ground like cotton candy! Then, his body collapsed to the ground. However, his eyes were still wide open, staring at Zhang Yang. It seemed that he was still trying to confirm whether Zhang Yang was dead or not, even after he was shot in the head!

However, he could no longer confirm Zhang Yang's death anymore. His pupils had dilated. His consciousness slipped away, slow and easy. Then, he died.

"Master ---" the two huge guys were extremely shocked. They quickly charged towards the dead body of Zhong Xiu Hua. However, the Police thought it was them trying to fight back. They thought the two huge guys were trying to take Zhang Yang as a hostage. So the police let out two more shots from their handguns and the two bullets went straight into the skulls of the two huge men. The aftermath of having three brains blown out of their skulls was disastrous. The grey matter and blood was everywhere.

"Zhang Yang ---" Sun Xin Yu ran towards the scene with a panicked voice. She quickly pulled the chair up and noticed that Zhang Yang's eyes were closed. His face was pale, as if there was no life sign anymore. Instantly, Sun Xin Yu sat on the ground helplessly. She lost her strength to even stand. She stopped breathing for a moment.

A few more policemen followed and made a quick check on Zhang Yang's body. Then they told Sun Xin Yu, "No worries, he just had a concussion. He just passed out."

Sun Xin Yu felt so relieved that she could breathe again.

After untying Zhang Yang's hands, it was about time for him to wake up, "Oh, I'm not dead yet!"

Bam!

Sun Xin Yu swung a solid punch at Zhang Yang's face. However, before he could talk again, Sun Xin Yu had pulled him into her arms. Then she said in rage, "If you ever dare to pull a stunt like that, I'll punch you to death with my bare fists!"

Her trembling body had revealed her fear for almost losing Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang reached out and hugged Sun Xin Yu, "There won't be a next time, I promise."

Well, he was also panicking when things were escalating earlier. Place a hand on his shirt, and you'll know that is it soaking wet!

Who would not feel anything after having a gun pointed at his or her head? If that person feels nothing, he or she must not be human anymore!

...

Although he almost lost his own life back there, Zhang Yang only wanted to have a good sleep back at his own hotel room. Well, he wouldn't mind having Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue accompanying him in bed, doing some 'excercises' so that he could forget about the dark hole of the gun's muzzle pointing at him. However, Zhang Yang was brought back to the police station for his statement to be taken down. Well, three people had died in that incident, after all.

Fortunate for him, he only mentioned the in-game name of Zhong Xiu Hua in the 'God's Miracle'. He managed to keep the police from knowing about the grudges the two of them held against each other. Well, that was the main reason why Zhang Yang got abducted in the first place, while he was participating in the championships in Shang Hai.

Because the police did not know Zhong Xiu Hua's identity just yet, Zhang Yang was soon released back to the hotel to join the championship. However, there was no telling about how long the death of Zhong Xiu Hua could be kept silent.

# Chapter 853: An Unprecedented Finale

---

Zhang Yang had only wanted Zhong Xiu Hua to be caught red-handed. However, he would never have thought that Zhong Xiu Hua would descend into insanity and force himself upon his own demise.

The moment Zhang Yang was abducted by the two men in black suits, Sun Xin Yu had immediately called the police. Then, she quickly traced the GPS device that was planted on Zhang Yang to get the precise location of Zhang Yang. After that, she allowed the Police to rush to the crime scene without any delay. By doing so, the police would be able to catch Zhong Xiu Hua red-handed. If they could post the video footage they had for the police operation, with so much hard evidence, Zhong Xiu Hua would never escape the law this time, even if he was still alive.

However, things escalated beyond Zhang Yang's imagination. Although Zhong Xiu Hua was dead, Zhang Yang now has to face the wrath of the Zhong Family. Their retaliation was at hand now!

"We should be able to cover Zhong Xiu Hua's death for a few more days. Let's make visas now and get out of the country for the time being."

Zhang Yang only told Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han about the death of Zhong Xiu Hua. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu had already utilized all her connections and connections to speed up the process of acquiring everyone's visas. So, when the Zhong Family finds out about the death of Zhong Xiu Hua, Zhang Yang and his ladies should have already gotten out of the country.

Zhang Yang believed that Zhong Xiu Hua's father would deal with things by following the justice system. However, Zhong Xiu Hua's mother... if Zhang Yang ever gets caged in the police station, he would be dead the next day!

Zhang Yang had put his life on the line once. He wouldn't risk it



for the second time.

The three of them acted normal, as if nothing had ever happened for the moment. They just carried on with the upcoming matches.

During the Semifinal, the opponent that the Silky Soft Battle Team had to face was Paragon, one of the best guilds from Europe Region.

5:1! 5:2!

The Silky Soft Battle Team had once again triumphed over their opponents, proceeding into the finals without facing much of a problem. It seemed that they were about to create another new record in the history of 'God's Miracle' by being the champions of the World League Championship for the fourth time.

However, when the Steely Dang Battle Team managed to proceed into the final, a very dramatic twist of events took place.

God's Left Hand, Heart of Destruction, Captain America and other top Tier players from all around the world had switched their loyalties over toward the Indian Region and joined the Steely Dang Battle Team.

Wouldn't that be cheating, then?

It seemed that all of the top Tier guilds from all over the world were not willing to see Lone Desert Smoke's Silky Soft Battle Team complete the great cause of being the Champion of the World League Championship for 4 years straight. So they decided to try a new approach this time!

If their actions are permitted by the organizers of the championship, then the new Steely Dang Battle Team would have 3 players with Class S Inheritances after they assemble their battle team. However, they would also have over 7 players with Class A Inheritance. They would have even more players with Class A Inheritances than the Silky Soft Battle Team!

According to the rules, there was nothing wrong with this.

However, from a personal perspective, that was obviously an act of cheating!

However, even though they did not violate any of the rules in the championship, the organizers were a little confused at the moment. By the end of it, they decided to let the players vote on whether to approve it or not.

Well, that was obvious, though. Other than the China Region, all Regions would never want to see the China Region become the champions again. Over 85% of the players had voted for the new Steely Dang Battle Team to be qualified for the finals! They really wanted to see the newly formed Steely Dang Battle Team go up against the Silky Soft Battle Team.

For the organizers of the championship, the audience are most important of all. Even if the matches might seem unfair, they would not even give a sh\*t about it. They would only require people's support.

Meanwhile, the organizers had approached Zhang Yang to ask for his opinion as well. If the Silky Soft Battle Team does not have the will to participate in such an unfair match, these organizers would be blamed by the players who were very keen to watch the matches!

At that, Zhang Yang spoke in absolute confidence, "Let's fight then!"

Zhang Yang had the idea of quitting 'God's Miracle' eventually. Meanwhile, getting a challenge from a 'World Alliance Battle Team' would serve as the best parting gift for Zhang Yang!

However, he also made a request of his own: During the finals, all restrictions are to be lifted!

After a brief session of voting, the organizers decided to grant him his request.

On 21 January, 7 p.m, the finale for the fourth World League

Championship finally began!

The two battle teams handed in their lists of line-ups before the first match could begin.

Sun Xin Yu VS Heart of Destruction!

These two were basically old rivals since forever. However, Heart of Destruction would begin to flee every single time, before the battle between the two of them could be concluded. Therefore, the two of them had never actually had a definitive showdown before. However, on the arena, one of them must fall before the battle ends!

Let the battle begin then!

As all restrictions had been lifted. The two of them activated their Inheritance Transformations. Both of them flapped their radiating wings and charged towards each other. They began slaughtering each other up without showing any signs of mercy. The battle went on for approximately 20 minutes before Sun Xin Yu claimed victory over the match.

Although it was a battle of endurance, the two of them had put up a great performance for everyone to watch. The crowds felt so intense watching the match that they almost forgotten to breathe! They did not even feel that the match had gone on for over 20 minutes! It was like a few seconds for them! When the match ended, they only wanted more!

Since lifting all of the restrictions on the players allowed them to use all of their Skills, the players were able to unleash their full potential on the arena. Although the power level between players with top Class Inheritance and players with low-Class Inheritance differed greatly, the match would be incredibly interesting to watch when two players with the same Class Inheritances were to clash on the arena!

1:0, the Silky Soft Battle Team was in the lead for the moment.

On the second match, it was time for the match between Wei Yan Er VS Captain America!

During the battle between these two Berserkers, everyone could tell that the two of them were on the same standards, in regards to their experiences and controls. However, Wei Yan Er had acquired 3 pieces of Celestial Tier Equipment. Her Attack, Defence and HP amount were beyond Captain America! It was no surprise for Wei Yan Er to claim victory in the second match as well!

2:0!

On the third match, it was time for the match between Lost Dream VS Hourglass Figure!

Although Lost Dream also had 3 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment, there was no way that he could cover the gap between having a Class B Inheritance and having a Class S Inheritance. When the two of them activated their own Inheritance Transformations, the power level between the two of them became so obvious that everyone already knew who would win by the end of the battle!

Lost Dream lost... 2:1, the 'World Alliance Battle Team' has earned back one point!

On the fourth match, it was time for the match between Daffodil Daydream VS God's Left Hand!

God's Left Hand had extraordinarily powerful Defence and high HP. Furthermore, he also had his godly powerful Healing ability which made him a 'dual-Class' player! Even though his Attack power was not very strong, he still managed to slowly torture Daffodil Daydream to her demise by relying on his endless healing ability and his Defence!

2:2! The two battle teams had gotten a tie for the moment!

On the fifth match, it was time for the match between Han Ying Xue VS Seductive Wild Pussy!

Previously, God's Left Hand had slowly tortured Daffodil Daydream to death. This time around, it was Han Ying Xue's turn to torture Seductive Wild Pussy to her demise.

3:2! The Silky Soft Battle Team was once again in the lead.

On the sixth match, it was time for the match between Hundred Shots VS The Cupid!

The Cupid was a new Top Tier player who rose from India Region, a Cryomancer who acquired the Class A 'Heart of the Swarm' Inheritance. This player had been kept in secret by Hourglass Figure until now. Because of that, this player became an element of surprise that won the match! Upon summoning a sea of insects to drown Hundred Shots, even though the insects were just Normal Tier monsters, they managed to eat Hundred Shots alive!

3:3! The two battle teams were tied again!

Zhang Yang decided to forfeit for the seventh match. He intended to let the two battle teams decide the champion through the team battle session.

Truth to be told, it would be pointless even if any of them could score the fourth win just now. When both sides had scored at least 3 wins, the only way of deciding which battle team wins would be participating in the team battle session of the championship.

In the team battle session, the 'World Alliance Battle Team' had sent forth Hourglass Figure, Heart of Destruction, God's Left Hand, Seductive Wild Pussy and Captain America. With three players possessing Class S Inheritances and two players with Class A Inheritances, they formed quite an impressive team there. That was basically the same standard as the Silky Soft Battle Team's best line-up, currently!

Meanwhile, on the Silky Soft Battle Team, Zhang Yang was the only contestant who stepped forth!

"Silky Soft Battle Team, please notify the other four of your team

members to come onto the arena. Or else your battle team is going to be forfeited due to time out." The host of the event immediately notified Zhang Yang. Well, the two battle teams only had 2 minutes to get ready. Meanwhile, it was already 90 seconds after the clock started ticking.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "I'm going to take you 5 all by myself!"

"WHAT?!"

"He's insane!"

"There're 3 players with Class S Inheritance and 2 players with Class A Inheritance over that side! Wouldn't it be too cocky of him to think about taking all 5 of them all by himself?!"

"He's arrogant as f\*ck!"

The finale had attracted at least 2,000,000,000 players to watch the match. Upon hearing what Zhang Yang had to say, everyone revealed their disagreement on their faces. Maybe, just maybe, one player with Class S Inheritance might be capable of taking on 5 players with Class A Inheritance at the same time. However, if there is one extra player with a Class S Inheritance on the opposition team, there was no way in hell he would survive that!

"Zhan Yu, you arrogant f\*cker!" Captain America screamed in rage.

Zhang Yang looked at him in disdain and said, "My teammates trust me. They allow me to do this once! Even if I lose here, so what? We can win again, a couple more times in the upcoming matches. However, if you guys lose here today, will you still have the confidence to continue on with the upcoming matches? I'd say, no! Haha!"

Let's assume that the five of them could not beat Zhang Yang when he's all alone now. Unless they win the next 1VS1 session with the score of 5:0, 5:1, or 5:2, they would not stand a chance to

even enter the Team Battle session later on!

However, no one could change the fact that Zhang Yang was acting as if he was overestimating himself at the moment!

He is indeed a player with Class S Inheritance. However, Hourglass Figure, God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction were also players with Class S Inheritances! They were basically on the same standard as Zhang Yang!

Could it be possible that the Silky Soft Battle Team intended to lose for once this time?

Every single audience by the side was thinking alike at the moment.

2 minutes passed in blink of an eye. After that, all of the contestants received the notification from the system. The Battle Team finally begun! So, it did not matter if Zhang Yang is trying to put up an act, or if he had just lost himself in his confidence. The pace of the match would not be disrupted anymore.

The 6 of them activated their Inheritance Transformations at the same instance!

Currently, everything would work similarly to the 1VS1 matches. Once the players were in the arena, their Skills would be automatically refreshed. Therefore, Hourglass Figure and the others could use their Inheritance Transformations again after they have used them in their previous PvP matches earlier on.

Phoenix pet appeared! Felice appeared! All of them had activated their Transformation Skills!

"Kill!"

Zhang Yang looked deadly serious on his face. He flapped the wings on his back and flew straight towards Captain America. Captain America could not even blink once before Zhang Yang arrived right before his eyes. With a solid swing from his axe, Zhang Yang smashed Captain America with a powerful blow.

‘-1,879,803!’

Even though the approximately 2,000,000 damage was not low at all, Captain America had boosted his HP amount up to about 1,000,000,000 HP upon activating his Inheritance Transformation. That amount of damage was not much of a deal to him.

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-3,768,802!’

Upon receiving that attack, not only Captain America received a high damage value, and he was also afflicted with a 75% reduction in his Healing Efficiency.

"Zhan Yu! Your overwhelming pride will be the one reason you're digging your own grave!" God's Left Hand began to heal Captain America. Although he could only unleash 25% of his healing ability on Captain America, it was enough to keep Captain America's HP bar from being depleted. Meanwhile, the other four were quite powerful as well. They definitely packed enough firepower to kill Zhang Yang within a brief period of time!

{God of War Shield} activated!

{Rock Solid} activated!

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

A series of damage popped up on top of Zhang Yang. However, all the damage values were zero! Their attacks did nothing at all to him!



# Chapter 854: Battle!

---

"That's unbelievable! A Guardian has 20% Passive Damage Immunity. Zhang Yang's full Celestial Tier Armor set has a 20% Passive Damage Immunity. His shield has a 10% Passive Damage Immunity. The skill {God of War Shield} will provide another 20% Damage Immunity. Furthermore, his {Rock Solid} also bestows him with a 30% Passive Damage Immunity. So Zhan Yu's Passive Damage Immunity has most certainly reached 100%! Any attack will be nullified by the Passive Damage Immunity on him! That's really unbelievable! Oh my god! No wonder Zhan Yu decided to take all 5 of his opponents at once! I can't believe that his Defence has become so insanely horrifying!"

"No no no, Jack... You've overestimated Zhan Yu. This 100% Passive Damage Immunity is just temporary. His {God of War Shield} only lasts for 10 minutes. Meanwhile, his {Rock Solid} only lasts for 10 seconds. Therefore, Zhan Yu has to end the battle within 10 minutes, or his Defence will go back to normal!"

"But, he will still have 70% Passive Damage Immunity for those 10 minutes, right? That's still a terrifying value for a Defence, don't you think? Also, not only does Zhan Yu have a terrifyingly high Defence, his Attack power is also incredibly high!"

"That's right. According to the data shown, Zhan Yu's basic attacks can range from 1,730,000 to 1,910,000 damage upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. His Critical Rate will reach up to 27%. His {Lucky Strike} will reach up to 3.5%! Meanwhile, his HP will reach over 343,160,000 HP! Also, his Defence shoots up to 280,000! Holy mama god! How can a player have such stats in the game?!"

The 3 commentators were speaking until their saliva drooled all over the place. Well, they were the officials. Of course, they would be capable of checking on the attributes and Skills of any player. Also, their voices were only heard by the audiences. The 6

contestants inside the arena would not be hearing those noisy commentators babbling about with their own theories, anyway.

"So let us make some comparison then. On the Steely Dang Battle Team, the player with highest HP is God's Left hand. However, he only has approximately 180,000,000 HP. Well, he's also a Tanker. However, because his equipment and his Aura Skill are weaker, the differences between the amount of HP amounts on both sides are huge."

"Meanwhile, the other two players who have activated their Class S Inheritance are considered less durable than both of them. Look at Hourglass Figure. Her Basic Attack range only from 1,220,000 to 1,400,000 damage. In other words, her Attack power is 30% weaker than Zhang Yang's. Holy mama god! How can there be such a huge difference!?"

"Well, we can't just compare the attributes of a Spell Type player to the attributes of a Melee Type player. Let's take another more specific example then. Heart of Destruction's Magic Attack is approximately 100,000 points. That being said, his 200% Magic Attack could deal approximately 1,640,000 damage!"

"However, everyone, don't forget that Zhan Yu still has one powerful pet and one powerful Battle Companion. Those two can also activate Transformation Skills! Let us provide you with some information about those two, then!"

"So let's look at the Phoenix pet first. Upon activating its Transformation Skill, the Phoenix pet will have over 210,000,000 HP! Holy mama god, Bruce! Are my eyes still working? That's even higher than the HP of God's Left Hand!"

"My brother, your eyes are definitely looking at the correct figures! Because Zhan Yu's Phoenix pet is indeed a Legendary Tier pet. Meanwhile, Zhan Yu also has the Skill {Beast Taming}. He can ride on his pet mount in an indoor environment. Meanwhile, the Attack power of the Legendary Tier pet... holy god... it's ranging

from 1,360,000 damage and 1,660,000 damage! That's even more powerful than the Attack power of Hourglass Figure!"

"Well, let us look at Zhan Yu's Battle Companion, Felice! That Battle Companion has over 15 stars of attribute growth! She's a walking Celestial Tier Boss! Oh my god! She now has over 630,000,000 HP and her basic Attack power ranges from 2,640,000 to 3,000,000 damage!"

"That's totally insane! These two are basically having the same amount of HP and Attack power of two players with Class S Inheritance! No, the HP and Attack power of Felice has exceeded any player in the current game!"

"Everyone, we first thought that this would be an unfair battle. But now, we have to change our view towards this battle!"

"That's right! This should be a battle that's full of suspense!"

"Even though Steely Dang Battle Team has the upper hand in the battle, but they have a glaring weakness. They have not actually cooperated before after all this time. Zhan Yu might use that to his advantage and give them all a good surprise!"

"So everyone, open up your eyes and witness this great battle! This is going to be a battle that will be remembered for centuries!"

Well, the Chinese used to say, injuring all of a man's fingers is not as effective as chopping off one. So Zhang Yang decided to focus all his attacks on Captain America. Captain America was afflicted with the effect of {Destructive Smash}. His healing efficiency had been greatly reduced because of that. So it would be wise to target him and take him out first!

Upon taking a [Mobility Potion], Zhang Yang could ignore any form of Status Restriction Effects for the next 20 seconds. So, he could deal as much damage as he could during that period of time.

Phoenix pet spat out a stream of blazing flames. As the flames scorched across the ground, the five of them were forced to stay

away from each other so that they would not get burned to death at the same spot! The Legendary Tier pet's DPS had reached over 2,100,000 damage. If one is burned too many times by staying on the same spot, that player would have to receive a devastating amount of damage.

After Felice unsealed her fourth seal, the star growth for all of her attributes had reached 15 stars. There, she finally acquired her strongest Humanoid Form Transformation Skill!

[Goddess of War Scion Form]: Upon entering the 'Goddess of War Scion Form', Felice's damage dealt will increase by 500%. Furthermore, her damage dealt will be Chaos Damage. Felice's Defence will increase by 500%. Felice's HP will be multiplied by 40 times. She'll have immunity to all Status Restriction Effects. In her 'Goddess of War Scion Form', she can use all her Skills of her Humanoid Form. Last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Upon entering her 'Goddess of War Scion Form', her Dragonhawk Form, Spectral Tiger Form and Tree of Life form will all enter the state of cooldown at the same time.

Well, Felice was really a pain in the \*sses for all of them, especially her ability to be immune to all Status Restriction Effects! Well, that dragon lady had a HP bar that was far beyond Zhang Yang's. Furthermore, she was totally immune to any form of Status Restriction Effects! In other words, the others could only leave her be and let her attack them! However, each of Felice's attacks could deal approximately 2,800,000 damage! If she just unleashes a few Skills as she attacks, her DPS could become as strong as Zhang Yang's DPS!

Well, Zhang Yang would never give a sh\*t about those detailsss. With Phoenix pet tagging along with him, the two of them unleashed everything they've got on Captain America. Their main intention was to deal as much damage as they could to Captain America. Because Captain America was afflicted with the effect of {Destructive Smash}, God's Left Hand was not capable of healing

Captain America back up. God's Left Hand can only witness the rapid reduction on Captain America's HP bar.

Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the others were targeting Zhang Yang from the sidelines.

Unlike the real 5VS5 matches, it would not matter much, even though Phoenix pet and Felice were extremely powerful. They were merely 'followers' of Zhang Yang. As long as Zhang Yang is killed, the both of them would vanish! Well, Zhang Yang's {Rock Solid} was about to expire. However, Zhang Yang would still have over 70% Passive Damage Immunity and 280,000 Defence power. The amount of effective damage they could deal on Zhang Yang was approximately 400,000 damage only. They would still need approximately 3 minutes to deplete Zhang Yang's entire HP bar. Well, Captain America would have died a couple of times during that period of time!

Captain America quickly activated an Accessory and went into a state of invincibility.

Zhang Yang immediately switched over to attack another player. His next target was God's Left Hand! Well, he did not intend to deal much damage on God's Left Hand. His real intention was to disrupt God's Left Hand from healing Captain America up as much as he could!

Everyone was dealing as much damage as they could to their respective targets. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang's Defence was overwhelmingly high. It was considered a good outcome for Hourglass Figure and the others to deal 20% of their damage on Zhang Yang!

{Brute Smash}! {Blast Wave}! {Heroic Leap}!

Zhang consecutively used three of his Status Restriction Skills on God's Left Hand and had him restrained for over 109 seconds. God's Left Hand was not able to heal Captain America at all during that period of time. Because the effect of {Destructive Smash} on

Captain America had vanished, Zhang Yang could now deal 100% damage to him.

The moment the 10-second invincibility effect had ended, Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Charge} and clashed into Captain America. Right after that, he began to poke Captain America as hard as he could.

However, that moment was also the moment Zhang Yang's [Mobility Potion] wore off. So, Hourglass Figure and the others quickly took the opportunity to throw their Status Restriction Skills onto Zhang Yang. As long as they could restrain Zhang Yang's movements, not only could they deal a tremendous amount of damage to Zhang Yang, they could also have spare time to heal themselves. Well, they did have the advantage in numbers.

Unfortunately for them, they had never actually practiced together in a battle. So it could not be helped that they would accidentally stack their Status Restriction Skills altogether on Zhang Yang at times. Because of that, some of their Status Restriction Skills went to waste, because their effects would not stack.

{Warrior's Will}!

{Destructive Smash}!

After using {Warrior's Will}, the {Destructive Smash} would be a guaranteed Critical Hit. Not only did it deal quite a number on Captain America, the attack had also afflicted Captain America with 75% reduction to his Healing Efficiency.

Felice's DPS had reached over 2,000,000 damage, while Phoenix pet could also deal over 1,000,000 damage in each passing second. So, these two could easily take out Captain America within 40 seconds. Also, Zhang Yang had an even higher Attack power than the two of them! When Zhang Yang still had approximately 83% HP remaining on him, Captain America's HP bar had dropped to 20% only!

Without having any choice left, Captain America was forced to use his {Warrior's Will} to disable to effects he got from {Destructive Smash}. Right after that, he activated his ultimate life-saving Skill to instantly recover 50% of his HP bar. Then, he recovered another 50% of his HP in the next 5 seconds.

Captain America is quite a skilled player indeed. He waited for Zhang Yang to smack him with {Destructive Smash} first, before using his {Warrior's Will}. Because of that, Zhang Yang had to wait for another 8 seconds before he could use another {Destructive Smash} to maintain the Healing Efficiency Reduction Effect on Captain America. There, Captain America managed to gain a little time to make sure that his 50% Healing amount is not affected at all.

"Nicely done!"

The three hosts were beginning to speak in high voices again.

However, Captain America was a little disappointed with himself at the moment. Well, he was forced to use his ultimate life-saving Skills in less than 30 seconds! He had never felt so humiliated in all his life. However, he was currently facing Zhang Yang, the best of the best among all Regions in the game!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Let's see how you keep this up!"

"Zhan Yu, you better don't get too cocky!" Hourglass Figure and the others scolded and cursed at Zhang Yang.

God's Left Hand activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} and covered his teammates in a bluish barrier in the shape of a dome. By doing so, the damage that his teammates received were all reduced by 90%. Of course, the damage that he would be receiving would increase by 100%! Instantly, the five of them had become one party for the moment.

Zhang Yang had no choice but to switch his targets again. By

using his {Blast Wave}, he stunned all five of his opponents, closely followed by activating his {Charge Up Strike} and {Sky Slicer}! That was the most deadly Skill-combination he had at the moment!

The five of them were so shocked to see that. With God's Left Hand's current Defence, 10 hits from {Sky Slicer} might not be able to kill him just yet. However, now that God's Left Hand had activated his {Vanguard's Aggression}, he would be receiving more damage than before whenever he was attacked. In other words, he had lost all of his Defence power for the moment. So how would he survive Zhang Yang's onslaught then?

Without further ado, they began to activate all of their Anti-Status Restriction Skills one after another to disable the Stun Effect Zhang Yang 'bestowed' upon them with his {Blast Wave}. The moment they recovered from stun effect, they began to activate their Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang.

Meanwhile, God's Left Hand was shocked into activating his {Ancient Defender's Shield}. It was a Skill similar to {Shield Wall}.

Zhang Yang was instantly stunned!

However, the usage of that many Skills had managed to force Zhang Yang into using his most powerful Skill of all. It was a good trade!

"Haha! Your Status Restriction Skills are all used up! It's our turn to strike!" Captain America and God's Left Hand cried out loud in joy almost at the same instant.

Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the others also took the opportunity to activate their strongest Skills in an attempt to aid Captain America and God's Left Hand at killing Zhang Yang instantly!



# Chapter 855: Smoldering Intensity

---

Zhang Yang grinned faintly. Although he still had one Accessory that could allow him to break out of any Status Restriction Effect once, he did not intend to use it for the moment.

So, he activated his {Shield Wall}. That Skill would still be accessible even while he is under a Status Restriction Effect.

Although his {Rock Solid} was no longer in effect, Zhang Yang could still have over 92.5% Passive Damage Immunity under the support of his {Shield Wall}.

Even if any of his opponents could deal as much damage as the last hit of his {Sky Slicer}, the amount of damage the strike would deal would drop from 1,200,000 to 700,000 damage!

In the meantime, Heart of Destruction and the others were trying their very best to restrain Zhang Yang as much as they could. They were attempting to buy enough time for God's Left Hand and Captain America to fully unleash the full potential of their {Sky Slicers} on Zhang Yang.

Unfortunately, 10 seconds later, Zhang Yang only lost approximately 14,000,000 HP!

He laughed out loud and got out of the Stun Effect. Immediately, he returned the favor to Captain America with his {God of War Restoration}.

‘-9,758,923!’

{God of War Restoration} could recover all the HP lost over the past 6 seconds. Meanwhile, Captain America was focused on using his {Sky Slicer}. He had opted to forego his {Destructive Smash} on Zhang Yang earlier on! Because of that, Zhang Yang managed to heal 100% of his healing efficiency!

In other words, all the ultimate Skills that Hourglass and the others used on Zhang Yang only managed to take away

approximately 5,000,000 HP of Zhang Yang. That was... really a blow to their faces!

"He got through! Zhan Yu has avoided being killed without facing any difficulties!"

"Actually, I'd say that the two {Sky Slicer} should have been used separately. Then, at least one of their {Sky Slicers} would not have been affected by Zhan Yu's {Shield Wall}!"

"However, the Status Restriction Skills of the players are limited, after all! If they had used their {Sky Slicer} separately, the second person who uses it might get interrupted by Zhan Yu easily!"

"Well, they could wait for the cooldowns of their Status Restriction Skills to be over before using them, right? They can just wait for 1 minute for everything to cool down first."

"But can Captain America last another 1 minute? Look at his condition now!"

"That sounds dangerous and risky!"

While the three hosts were explaining the situations to the audience, Zhang Yang had once again started his ferocious attacks on Captain America. In just 30 seconds, he had once again reduced the HP bar of Captain America to 20%!

{Apocalyptic Bondage}!

God's Left Hand had activated his most powerful Skill to hooked Zhang Yang over to him, putting Zhang Yang into a situation where he could only attack God's Left Hand for the next 10 minutes!

That was a very powerful Skill for luring monsters. At the same time, the Skill was also deemed to be the best at protecting the player's teammates! Captain America instantly vanished from the sight of Zhang Yang. Even Felice and Phoenix pet were not able to lock on to any targets in their vicinity!

To defeat Captain America during this period of time, the only way was to hit Captain America with all sorts of AoE Attacks. Well, only the splash attacks of AoE Skills would work for the moment. Furthermore, Captain America had to be within the effective range of Zhang Yang's AoE attacks!

In other words, Captain America had been saved from meeting his own demise. 10 minutes was more than enough for the others to heal Captain America's HP back up!

"Do you think that I can't move you, just because you have a super thick skin?" Zhang Yang laughed out loud and switched his target to God's Left Hand. At the same time, he activated his {Tribulation} to deflect any form of attacks for the next 10 minutes. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang's Defence was insanely high. If his enemy was to deal approximately 500,000 damage on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang could deflect approximately 1,300,000 damage back to his enemy! Who could afford to receive that much of a damage then?!

As the Chinese say, killing a thousand of your enemies would require you to sacrifice 800 of your own. Well, at least you're still earning something, if you compare the numbers, right? However, the situation was like killing fifty of your enemies by sacrificing a hundred of your own! That's quite a great loss, don't you think?

Well, the battle had to go on, even though he was suffering a great loss. Could he be beaten up by Zhang Yang within 10 minutes? God's Left Hand's Defence and Healing Ability were stunningly powerful. However, he could not survive long against Zhang Yang, Felice, and Phoenix pet after all!

Without any choice left, he could only charge into battle. When worst comes to worst, God's Left Hand would have to use his life-saving Skills. Meanwhile, he was also the toughest player among the 5 of them. If he can't last against Zhang Yang, the others would definitely fail as well!

All sorts of Skills were seen across the arena. Zhang Yang could

only see God's Left Hand and God's Left Hand only in his sight. Therefore, he could not make any accurate moves to dodge or avoid being hit by the Skills thrown at him. Sometimes, he would even collide into someone, because he could not see anyone else! It was really troublesome.

Zhang Yang was losing HP rapidly. However, God's Left Hand was suffering as well. He was being pushed back so violently that he had to use one of his life-saving Skills to heal himself.

Although God's Left Hand had quite a high amount of HP, a powerful Healing Ability, a super high Defence, he was still not capable of withstanding the combined Attacks of Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet. In just less than two minutes, his HP bar was about to hit the bottom!

God's Left Hand was so shocked that he quickly activated his Invincibility Skill, followed by his ultimate healing Skill that he could only use once in every 30 minutes! Instantly, his HP bar was healed back up.

Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the others had retreated to the sidelines after battling for approximately 1 minute. Well, they were constantly getting hit by the deflected attacks throughout the entire battle, after all. So, they had no choice but to spam using their Healing Potions and Bandages to heal themselves back up. They looked pathetic.

For them, Zhang Yang was a Celestial Tier boss! It was just too difficult for them to battle against Zhang Yang!

{Charge Up Strike}, {God of War Devastation}!

Although Zhang Yang could not see the other four of them around, his {God of War Devastation} has become an AoE attack because his EP bar was full at that particular moment! Well, the attack would spread across into the surroundings, finding the targets automatically, dealing approximately 15,000,000 basic damage to all 5 of them on the arena!

"F\*CK!" Captain America could not help but curse. As he was only taking care of himself, Captain America could only rely on using his own Bandages and Potions. He did not even dare to go up and hit Zhang Yang. It was mainly because he might get hit to death by the deflected attacks before he could kill Zhang Yang. So, he could only stay at the sidelines, staring at Zhang Yang. It was quite humiliating for him.

Hourglass Figure grit her teeth and suddenly, she took out a scroll. Then she tore it and threw it over her own head.

[Forbidden Scroll: Sacred Glory] (Consumable)

Use: Recover 10% HP once in every second for all friendly units in the range of 5-kilometer. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 200

"Holy god! She has a Forbidden Scroll that heals everyone on her side! A large-scale healing Forbidden Scroll!"

"Holy mama god! She's worthy of being the guildmaster for the number one guild in India Region! She's just so willing to spend!"

"More importantly, she actually used that scroll on 5 players, only! I have no words to describe her actions!"

The three hosts sprayed their saliva across the table once again. Even though the finale in this championship had lifted some restrictions, however, using one Forbidden Scroll in a match was a little too much. After all, the final reward for becoming the champion of this World League Championship was not as valuable as one Forbidden Scroll!

Although Zhang Yang could not see Hourglass Figure tearing a Forbidden Scroll and using it on herself, he could still make a deduction by observing the rapid increase on God's Left Hand's HP bar.

Well, none of that mattered, anyway. It was futile for them to try any tricks!

30 seconds had passed, Zhang Yang immediately threw {Glare of the Death God} onto God's Left Hand!

God's Left Hand immediately panicked. That was because he had used all of his life-saving Skills once. The only thing that he could do was to pray that Zhang Yang does not trigger the special effect of his {Glare of the Death Gpd}.

However, it was a wild dream! Not only was Zhang Yang hitting him, Phoenix pet and Felice were also hitting him!

'-183,693,459!'

{Glare of the Death God} activated! God's Left Hand only had 1 HP remaining on him, all of a sudden!

{Blazing Dragon's Spear}!

Felice quickly struck God's Left Hand before he could even react and sent him straight out of the arena!

One down!

However, the {Apocalyptic Bondage} did not fade upon God's Left Hand's death. Instead, Zhang Yang had lost the only target he could aim at! So he immediately rose into the air and used his speed to fly blindly in the arena. His main intention was to drag the battle on for the remaining 4 minutes before the {Apocalyptic Bondage} expires!

Or else, Zhang Yang would be a live target for the remaining 4 enemies on the arena! Although his {Tribulation} was quite powerful, to begin with, the other four had managed to heal themselves up with the use of a Forbidden Scroll. Even if they were planning to deal damage to Zhang Yang by receiving damage from Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang would still be the one who suffers a greater loss! After all, he would be receiving damage from 4 other players!

He flew around with no patterns whatsoever. So, he could still dodge some of the attacks by chance. However, he would also

accidentally rush into the crossfire of all four players at the same time! Well, it was fortunate that Zhang Yang managed to survive the remaining duration of the {Apocalyptic Bondage}.

Zhang Yang still had 27% HP remaining. Meanwhile, other than Captain America who only managed to recover his HP up to 49%, the others still had more than 90% HP on them!

"Zhan Yu! You'll pay for your own cockiness!"

"I don't think so!" Zhang Yang once again focused all his attacks on Captain America. With a flutter in his wings, he charged in and began his attacks on his target like a madman. Meanwhile, Phoenix pet and Felice had also locked their targets on Captain America.

35%, 30%, 25%... the HP bar of Captain America was reducing so rapidly!

However, Zhang Yang's {Tribulation} was over as well!

Hourglass Figure and the others had nothing left to worry about now! So they began to launch their fiercest attacks on Zhang Yang. They were also using their Status Restriction Skills at Zhang Yang as frequent as they could in attempt to save Captain America. Well, it was because Captain America was quite a powerful source of DPS! After all, Zhang Yang had not used his {Radiance of God of War} just yet. If Captain America's {Destructive Smash} could just affect Zhang Yang, that would reduce 75% of Zhang Yang's Healing Efficiency! Zhang Yang would be losing the ability to heal over 200,000,000 HP!

However, it would still be futile if they just restrain Zhang Yang. The firepower of Felice and Phoenix pet combined was deemed to be as powerful as Zhang Yang's Attack power! So, the two of them could still take out Captain America within 30 seconds! Well, Felice would not be affected by any form of Status Restriction Effects. Unless Zhang Yang is killed or Zhang Yang is occupied by Skills such as {Apocalyptic Bondage} that causes him to lose his ability to target something, this dragon lady could be deemed as the most

terrifying existence on this arena right now!

Well, Felice's HP was insanely long. Also, she could not be affected by any Status Restriction Effect. Not to mention that her Attack power was insanely high! With these three attributes combined, Felice has become one of the most difficult beings to kill!

20%, 15%, 10%!

Well, Status Restriction Effects had limited durations, after all. Zhang Yang continued to pursue Captain America. Upon activating {Indiscrimination} and {Killing Cleave}, Zhang Yang finally sent Captain America out of the arena.

However, Zhang Yang only had approximately 9% HP remaining on him at the moment! The situation seemed to be very dire for him!

{Radiance of God of War}!

‘+347,160,000!’

Zhang Yang instantly recovered his full HP! Then he looked at the three remaining ‘kittens’ on the arena with murderous eyes.

Sacrificing two players just to empty out one bar of Zhang Yang's HP was not an optimistic outcome that they were hoping for. Although the two dead players were not the strongest DPS players, however, with two players missing from the arena, it would require an even long time for them to take out Zhang Yang's entire HP bar!

Zhang Yang went on to pursue Seductive Wild Pussy. After a series of intense and deadly attacks, Zhang Yang sacrificed 30% of his HP in order to force Seductive Wild Pussy to use all of her life-saving Skills once!

The Invincibility Effect of the [God Killer Cape] was activated. Zhang Yang then activated {Charge Up Strike}, closely followed by his {Sky Slicer}!



Seductive Wild Pussy was instantly shocked to the point, that her face turned pale!

That's right. Players who use {Sky Slicer} would be pretty easy to interrupt. Even if they are uninterrupted, their enemies could activate their Invincible Skills or other Skills such as {Apparate} to get out of the effective range of the {Sky Slicer}. However, now that Zhang Yang activated his Invincibility Effect while spinning his axe with his {Sky Slicer}, it would be impossible for anyone to interrupt him. Meanwhile, on the other side, Hourglass Figure had just used up all of her life-saving Skills. Although she still had over 90% HP remaining, she basically had nothing left to save herself now! All of her Skills were on cooldown!

In other words, she could only take all of the damage dealt head-on!

‘-5,570,961!’

‘-11,141,922!’

...

Before the tenth strike commenced, Zhang Yang had already sent Hourglass Figure out of the arena with his eighth strike of his {Sky Slicer}. That strike had reached over 150,000,000 damage!

And then, there were two.

Zhang Yang smiled at them, or should we say...snarl...

# Chapter 856: Conclusion

---

"I cannot believe my eyes! My lord! Zhang Yu had killed the third member of Steely Dangs Battle Team! What the hell is actually happening!? Just look at Zhan Yu's HP! It's still at 68%! Looks like Hourglass Figure and Heart of Destruction have no chance of defeating him!"

"Calm down. They had still plenty of opportunities. After all, those two remaining players are the strongest DPS units in the party! What's more, Zhan Yu only has 69% HP left. He has already dispensed {God of War Radiant} and can no longer recover his HP. On the other hand, both Heart of Destruction and Hourglass Figure still have their HP recovery skills. Despite your observations, I think that Steely Dangs would still advance come up top!"

"Relax a little, both of you. You guys look like you're about to start a fight with each other. Enjoy the match. I believe that the winner will show itself soon."

All three commentators were getting hyped at broadcasting their commentaries. Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little relaxed then. Still, he could not let down his guard for even a second. He was facing off both Heart of Destruction and Hourglass Figure at the same time.

"Hmph. I still have my trump cards."

"GARH!" Zhang Yang roared with vigor and leaped forward. With a snap of his fingers, 10 puffs of smoke appeared in the field and 10 Zhang Yangs emerged, concealing the real Zhang Yang somewhere in their ranks. Naturally, he grouped all of himself together and mixed them up to confuse the enemy.

His sudden attack worked marvelously as both Hourglass Figure and Heart of Destruction wavered for a brief second. Zhang Yang caught that moment and immediately made a poker face while the rest of his clones were commanded to express themselves fully.

Even though the clones would only last for 2 minutes, it was equivalent to double damage if Zhang Yang were to attack one of the two players on the field.

"No time to think!" cried out all the Zhang Yangs as he leaped towards them and begun the attack.

With a quick maneuver, Zhang Yang controlled all the clones to attack Heart of Destruction. Even though he had over 120,000,000 HP, he was unable to hold on for long when he is surrounded by 11 Zhang Yangs! All skills were used, including the precious invulnerability and 100% HP restoration.

The last three players that were on that field were no doubt the strongest players. Heart of Destruction welcomed all the clones and with utmost proficiency, and killed them one by one. The real Zhang Yang moved around swiftly, switching occasionally from his clone and himself, taking hits from Heart of Destruction, in the end managing to survive until all 11 Clones had little to no HP left.

"Tired?" one of the clones talked and was continued by the other clone.

"How about-"

"A rest?"

"You look a little-"

"Stressed there."

Heart of Destruction panted heavily but smiled.

"Right back at you."

However, just when there was a glimmer of hope for Heart of Destruction as he thought that he had spotted the real Zhang Yang, the real Zhang Yang revealed himself from behind Heart of Destruction and dealt an upward slice to kill him.

"This....cannot be..."

"OH MY GOD!!!!!!" one of the broadcasters yelled in the

microphone.

"DID YOU SEE THAT!? WHAT A MIND BLOWING SKILL!"

"Calm yourself. I won't say that the second time."

Panting heavily, Zhang Yang stood still as the rest of the 10 clones disappeared in a puff of smoke.

His HP was still roughly the same as before, at 67%. He had made a living proof of himself that Zhan Yu the player is not someone you can mess with. He f\*#\$@ you up inside out, upside down! Heart of Destruction had made a fatal mistake. He should have used AoE skills to deal damage to the real Zhang Yang.

"I give up."

...

...

...

"Hey man. Did I yell too loud? I think I heard something wrong. Did she just say that she is giving up the fight?"

"Yes. You were practically yelling like a gorilla without his daily banana. And yes, she did say that she gave up."

"...This is unexpected."

Zhang Yang widened his eyes in disbelief and lowered both his weapons. Even Phoenix and Felice both flew down and landed next to Zhang Yang. Hourglass Figure walked towards Zhang Yang with no intention of attacking.

"Why?"

She did not reply. After sighing heavily, she turned around and walked away disgruntledly.

At that moment, she had a total of 2 HP bars worth of HP. (100% HP restoration counts as one HP bar). However, with the combined attack of Zhang Yang, Phoenix, and Felice, she had calculated that

she could last for 2 minutes, at best. Even though Zhang Yang only had 67% HP left, the number was over 230,000,000 HP. That HP amount was exactly the same as Hourglass Figure's total HP.

As for Defense, if Zhang Yang was a brickwall, Hourglass Figure would be a thin A4 60gsm paper. As for attack power, Zhang Yang had Phoenix and Felice to account for, what else could she do then but give up? Fighting would only be a waste of time.

"You're going to give up without actually fight it out?" Zhang Yang asked as he dropped his shield.

"I'm not a fool. I know my weaknesses as well as your strengths. It's futile to even try. Although it pains me so to acknowledge this, you're one hell of a fighter, Zhan Yu. Victory is yours. You won fair and square..."

Hourglass Figure raised her hands up into the sky to announce her defeat.

5:4. Silky Soft Battle Team had won the first round!

Zhang Yang laughed. He had accomplished what he wanted to, and that was to crush the hopes of the opponent by fighting five of them, alone. In the second round, Silky Soft Battle Team won the match with a high score of 5:2. They had won the fight against Steely Dangs Battle Team with a perfect score of 2:0!

"Well? Do you want to do it? Or should I?"

"Be my guest."

"ahem LADIES AND GENTLEMAN! Feast your eyes on the winners of the fourth World Battle Team S class World Championship League! The mighty, the strong, the powerful SILKY SOFT BATTLE TEAM!"

Zhang Yang could never get used to that battle tag. Not only it does not have a ring to it, it sounds extremely awkward! Still, a champion remains a champion. Zhang Yang raised his sword up high and the entire audience stood up to cheer for him.

Zhang Yang walked back asked Wei Yan Er. "Did I do good?"

The little girl scoffed and wiped away her tears, even though she had wanted to hide it.

"Well...I'd give you a 7.5 out of 10. There was no style."

"Hahahahaha! In that case, I shall make a special sure-kill skill combo and name it "The Drizzler Drop"! How about that?"

"Do that, and I'll give you full marks."

Everyone laughed even though their hearts were literally at their throats not two minutes ago.

All was well. All was good. With the title of World Champion, Zhang Yang and the entire gang returned to Zhou Su City. Not long after, Sun Xin Yu had called in and told everyone that she had just made preparations to leave the country for good. Everyone in the mansion, Fatty Han, two troublemakers, Yu Li and her mother, and Cheng Xue Yao boarded the plane and left for Luxembourg. There, no one could touch them. Dusk Phoenix, the future Queen of the castle will ensure everyone's safety.

Just then, everyone had just received the news about Zhong Xiu Hua's death and although they bore hatred to him, they still mourned for his death. Zhang Yang alone felt a little different. How did that son of a couple of strong powerful parents end up doing something that would get himself killed? Sigh, there's a saying that would fit the situation perfectly. No matter how well a monkey climbs a tree, once it drops to the ground, it will die.

Zhang Yang felt paranoid during the entire time and had everyone he knew and cared for, leave the country to seek refuge in Luxembourg. He could not afford to lose any one of them or he feared that he too will become another Zhong Xiu Hua with all the power he had. There was nothing he could do then except to choose to live a quiet life for a brief period. The sun waits for no man. Even if Zhang Yang wishes otherwise...

The death of Zhong Xiu Hua was not something that the police could hide for long. After just a short duration, the case was taken over by the National Central Investigation Division. Since there were recordings of the accident and countless of human witnesses, physical evidence, and Zhong Xiu Hua's psyche evaluation, the Division had unraveled the truth of the case and had discovered his life of crime.

The case was revealed and brought to light. As such, Zhang Yang was called all the way back from China. The C.I.D wanted his cooperation to solve the case, and wanted him to return to the mainland to present himself in court. However, Zhang Yang was not stupid. With a solid answer, Zhang Yang rejected the call and remained overseas. To go back to China would be to enter the den of tigers. If he were to return, not even the House of Sun could protect Zhang Yang from a mother who has lost her only son. Take away a mother's son, and she has nothing to lose.

However, Zhang Yang did not choose to stay long in Luxembourg even though Dusk Phoenix had tried all sort of methods (including her favorite BDSM stuff), to make Zhang Yang stay. Zhang Yang himself was rather creeped out of her and had made arrangements to move to United Arab Emirates to stay in Dubai. The main reason of him choosing to go to Dubai was not because he liked it. The real reason was because he could legally register all of his women as his legal wives.

"Could you buy us a suite in Burg Khalifa?" asked Wei Yan Er.

"Erhm...I'm not sure if that is possible."

"Meh..."

...

Several years later...

"Daddy! Daddy! Aunt Yan Er is bullying me!" A young boy at the age of four came running to Zhang Yang and buried his face into

his embrace.

Zhang Yang lifted the boy to his face level and comforted him. No sooner than that, Wei Yan Er reached Zhang Yang, panting and wheezing in pain. "You sly little brat! I'll have your butt smacked later when Zhang Yang is not at home!"

Zhang Yang sighed. "Yan Er, you're not getting younger, you know? It's been years since you last dated someone. It's really time for you to find yourself a guy and get the hell out of my HOUSE! You're seriously making too so much noise in my already cramped up house!"

"Nishishishi. Aunt Yan Er is a flatty chesty. No man would want to marry that flatboard!" said the little boy after he was sure that he was safe in his father's hands.

That little playful boy was the son of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

After several years of pushing peter into the playpen, Zhang Yang finally managed to get both Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu a child of their own. Although Zhang Yang wanted to have more children to make a football team, both delicate flowers had enough with just one son. Luckily for him, Yu Li and Cheng Xue Yao were fine with having one more kid. Hence, with Zhang Jing Jing as their leader and manager, Zhang Yang could really assemble a team of football players!

"Little brat!" cried Wei Yan Er as she pulled the little boy's ear.

"Perhaps I shall teach you a lesson about respecting women!"

Even though she was no longer the little 18-year-old girl, she was still behaving like an 8-year-old girl. What's even sadder for her was the fact that her chest has remained the same since Zhang Yang first met her! It got to such a point that when Wei Yan Er went to the nearest mall to buy liquor, she would be detained several times until the police even started recognizing her and



befriended the poor gir---woman.

"Yan Er, you do realize that you're threatening my son in front of me?"

"So?! He deserves it!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Nishishishi!" The little boy made faces at her and ran away as soon as Zhang Yang put him down.

"GET BACK HERE! I'LL SKIN YOU ALIVE!"

"Nyehehehe! Aunt Yan Er is a board! Aunt Yan Er is a board!" cried another little boy from the door.

"ARGHH! Is that how you want to play? You want the entire world to know that I am a flat chested girl!? Fine! I don't care! I'm not buying you chocolates anymore!"

Out of the blue, two more little rascals came out from a room and joined the two boys. Together, they started to chant. "Aunt~ Yan Er~ is a flat chest~~"

"Zhang Yang...save me...I don't wanna be a flat chest girl. Please let me go for a breast enlargement surgery."

A young girl who was clearly elder than the rest of the four rascals came out of her room and bellowed with a commanding voice. "That's no way to treat your elders."

She had a clear and beautiful face. Even at her age, anyone would know that this little beauty will grow up to be a world-class hottie! She was Zhang Jing Jing, the eldest daughter amongst all of Zhang Yang's kids. Although she was extremely beautiful, she bore little resemblance to both Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou. Her features were the perfect mix of both and even more.

Once Jing Jing voiced out, all the screaming little rascals immediately came to her and lowered their heads to apologise. Instead of being angry, she lowered herself and patted everyone's head and lectured them kindly.

Zhang Yang smiled satisfyingly and nodded. The little girl was growing up well.

"Ahh! Jing Jing will always be the best! Auntie will always love you!"

"Jing Jing? Could you be a dear and bring the kids to the TV room? I'm actually reading the news right now."

"Yes, papa."

"Guys, you heard what papa said. Let's go."

"But I still wanna play."

"Yeah!"

At then, Han Ying Xue, Cheng Xue Yao, Luo Yu Rou, Sun Xin Yu, and Yu Li returned home with bags of groceries.

"Honey, I found a poster when I was shopping," said Han Ying Xue as she handed a poster that had a graphic of what seemed to be game.

"...God's Miracle will end soon but there will be a new world that transcends even the God's creation. Players, it is time for you to start a new chapter! It is time for "Glory"!"

Zhang Yang read the poster and the message and sighed. "I see that 'God's Miracle's is finally shutting down."

Wei Yan Er took the poster when Zhang Yang was done with it and said curiously. "What's this 'Glory' thing? Looks interesting. Shall we play it?"

"Games? I'd rather you find a husband before any games!" said Han Ying Xue worriedly.

"No problem! If no one wants this sweet piece of \*ss. Noobie tank can take responsibility!" said Wei Yan Er nonchalantly.

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow and gestured no. "Sorry. I have no interest in being a lolicon."

"LO-LI-CON!? How---GRRRR!" Wei Yan Er snarled at Zhang Yang and pounced at the man with her fingers clawing at his face.

Sun Xin Yu ignored the petty little fight and read the poster. "Hmm...I think it's a good idea. It's been rather dull for the past few years, anyway. The advertisement even mentioned something about a new system that exceeds 'God's Miracle'. It sounds fun."

Zhang Yang and all the main party members had reached Level 300 four years ago and had conquered all Celestial tier bosses in the game. They had even managed to retain their championship title until the sixth World Battle Team League. At that point, they had made themselves known the entire world as the strongest, undefeatable battle team that had ever existed. After that, they started to step out of the limelight.

After traveling the entire world a few rounds, the happy family then chose to buy out an entire floor in Burg Khalifa and live there permanently. During that time, 'God's Miracle' had entered a new game event which was the Age of Heroes, and the War of Nations. However, these were all but empty, repetitive content that got most of the players bored. There was not even a patch to increase the Level cap limit after Level 300. Hence, after witnessing the downgrade of in-game content, many players had chosen to leave the game while new fresh players found no interesting content to play for. Hence, coming out with a new game was the most sensible action that Dream Tech could come up with.

"Honey, stop messing around with Yan Er. Bring out the computer and search for the game's information. The game will officially launch the day after tomorrow. It's time for us to rise anew!"

"Good one sister! This time, I want to be a Guardian! We can't let noobie tank hog all the fame to himself now, can we?" cried Wei Yan Er happily.

"...After so many years...Could you please stop calling me noobie

tank. I am your brother-in-law! Call me big brother, or I won't buy you the game! You can start earning your own pocket money from now on!"

"Aiyayaya! Big brother? More like a big bully! I'll never call you that!"

"Well then, perhaps there's an advertisement here that is offering a job. I think you can work at a maid café. Some guys dig lolis, after all."

"WAAAA. Please don't. I'm so sorry. Big...brother..."

"There. It wasn't so hard now, was it?"

Han Ying Xue smiled at Sun Xin Yu. After both of them had given birth, the Ice Queen and the Snow Demon had been closer than ever.

Wei Yan Er picked up the game poster and shouted. "Ah. I think we should also call Uncle Fatty, Uncle Hundred, Dreamy, and the pervy Star!"

"Call them now. Tell them. We're coming home," said Zhang Yang as he got up from his seat.

"Home?"

"Zhou Su City. I don't know about you guys, but I miss the regular old food stalls by the roadside. I'm sick of these fancy steaks and caviar here in Dubai."

"Hahahaha."

"Let's go home then."

"Jing Jing! Pack your stuff! It's time for us to return to the motherland!"

THE END

# Author's Note:

---

Hey guys. This is my first time writing a gaming genre novel. I had realized that I've made a few conflicting settings in the story like not being able to dodge skills and certain attacks. The problem was, I have no idea how to balance the skills. It pains me so that the pros of the game could not be stronger opponents for Zhang Yang.

Furthermore, I also found out that I've made many skills in the story with nonsensical cooldown durations. (I've been referring to WoW system a little too much). As result, the characters in the story became unbalanced over time. Even though I made skills with 1-minute cooldowns in the latter part of the story, but there were just too many skills with 10 seconds or even 6 seconds cooldowns in the story. Hence, my apologies.

All in all, I want to thank all my fans and supporters. Without you guys, this book could have never met its conclusion.

The next book that I'll write should be in the Xuan Huan genre. Although I have not much of experience, to begin with, I should do fine. If I don't, I'll just continue writing gaming novels. At least, I have some experience now, so I can keep the mistakes at bay.

Cheerios~

# Translator Note:

---

It's been a heck of a run, guys. Here's to you guys and Qidian for giving us the chance to translate this awesome novel! This is my first novel translation and although I may have made a few mistakes here and there, I want to thank you guys so much for your support. I, too, like the author, could never have finished this without your support! Much has happened to me while I was translating this novel. For example, I have begun to develop a knack for reading, which was long gone when I was taking my bachelor's degree. Be it for naught, I've taken a liking to translate novels. Hence, for my next novel, I'll put my back into it. Last but not least, Mucho Gracias! ARIGATO! XIE XIE! THANK YOU VERY MUCH!

# Editor Note:

---

Hey guys. The translators have said most of what the team has to say, but I too would like to apologize for the numerous occasions where errors and mistakes go past my negligent gaze. I took this job as means of getting away from the mundane, horrifying 9-5 life. I have never regretted that for even one moment, thanks to the constant support from you guys, and the fun of working with the team. See, my main goal in life is to write my own story, eventually. In fact, before I got here, I did start something off at [tonicquill.wordpress.com](http://tonicquill.wordpress.com) but it didn't pick up, and is now back on the drawing board, for now. You could still read what I left there and tell me what you think! So, it has indeed been a heck of a run, thank you for sticking to the end! It almost brings a tear to my eyes as I add the finishing touches to the final chapter! Do keep an eye out for more Endless Fantasy translations, we will constantly improve our standards!

# Table of Contents

[MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701: Book of Revelations - The Eighth Chapter](#)

[Chapter 702: Identity](#)

[Chapter 703: Mythical Dragon Realm](#)

[Chapter 704: The Four Man Team](#)

[Chapter 705: Dominance](#)

[Chapter 706: Victory](#)

[Chapter 707: Blood Thirsty Skeletal Soldier](#)

[Chapter 708: Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper](#)

[Chapter 709: Crimson Fire Crow](#)

[Chapter 710: Darok](#)

[Chapter 711: The Way to Fight is to Lose?](#)

[Chapter 712: Savage Bone Crushing Hammer](#)

[Chapter 713: Probing into the truth](#)

[Chapter 714: Information For Sale](#)

[Chapter 715: The Ghostface Monkey King](#)

[Chapter 716: Empowered Damage Output](#)

[Chapter 717: High Tier Territory](#)

[Chapter 718: Forrest Gump's Fortress](#)

[Chapter 719: A Second Forbidden Magic](#)

[Chapter 720: A Chaotic Battle](#)

[Chapter 721: Book of Revelation: Chapter 4](#)

[Chapter 722: A Fierce Battle with God's Left Hand](#)

[Chapter 723: Book of Revelation: Chapter 10](#)

[Chapter 724: The Spectres Invade](#)

[Chapter 725: Tower Clearing](#)

[Chapter 726: More Set Equipment](#)

[Chapter 727: The Proof is Here](#)

[Chapter 728: Everything Out](#)

[Chapter 729: Destruction of the Mithril Refinery](#)

[Chapter 730: Skeletal Smith](#)

[Chapter 731: The Dragon Race – Longador](#)

[Chapter 732: Two-Handed Weapon](#)

[Chapter 733: Ancient Spiritual Beast King](#)



[Chapter 734: A 'Fun' Situation to All Parties Indeed](#)  
[Chapter 735: A Seize](#)  
[Chapter 736: Apocalyptic Bondage](#)  
[Chapter 737: Fall between Two Stools](#)  
[Chapter 738: Protect the Giant Dragon!](#)  
[Chapter 739: World Boss](#)  
[Chapter 740: Skeleton Admiral Mathuven](#)  
[Chapter 741: Siege](#)  
[Chapter 742: The Fall of Mathuven](#)  
[Chapter 743: A Sight to Behold: The Lord of the Seven Spectre King](#)  
[Chapter 744: Dark Source Stone](#)  
[Chapter 745: Newly Researched and Developed Corrosive Beast](#)  
[Chapter 746: Darkness Falls](#)  
[Chapter 747: A Losing War](#)  
[Chapter 748: The Search for Reinforcement](#)  
[Chapter 749: Unauthorized Entry](#)  
[Chapter 750: A Stronger Felice](#)  
[Chapter 751: The First Attempt to Counterattack](#)  
[Chapter 752: The Light of Victory](#)  
[Chapter 753: Adequate Preparation](#)  
[Chapter 754: Ending the Boss Fight](#)  
[Chapter 755: Magnificent Treasure](#)  
[Chapter 756: The Additional Effect of the Book of Revelation](#)  
[Chapter 757: Loch Ness Monster](#)  
[Chapter 758: Island in the Center of the Earth](#)  
[Chapter 759: Frosty Chimera Cub](#)  
[Chapter 760: Servant Guardian](#)  
[Chapter 761: Book of Revelation: Chapter 5](#)  
[Chapter 762: Gold Tier Servant](#)  
[Chapter 763: Drop it with Money!](#)  
[Chapter 764: A Solid Hit in the Face](#)  
[Chapter 765: The Second World League Championship](#)  
[Chapter 766: Retaining the title as the Champions](#)  
[Chapter 767: Marlin's Land of Salt](#)  
[Chapter 768: Searching for Water](#)  
[Chapter 769: Exterminating the Z'orlak Orcs](#)  
[Chapter 770: The Spectre Cavern](#)  
[Chapter 771: Skeletal Guardian, Antarkt](#)  
[Chapter 772: Taking down the first boss!](#)

[Chapter 773: Aluonu the Gargoyle](#)  
[Chapter 774: Remedial Measures](#)  
[Chapter 775: Replicating the Magic Circle](#)  
[Chapter 776: The War Chariot System](#)  
[Chapter 777: Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks](#)  
[Chapter 778: The Function of the Kingcross's Sword](#)  
[Chapter 779: The Revival of a Salted Fish](#)  
[Chapter 780: A Variable Tank](#)  
[Chapter 781: Tank's Prowess](#)  
[Chapter 782: Sandra The Rover](#)  
[Chapter 783: A Wind-Up Work!](#)  
[Chapter 784: Armadillomon's Leash](#)  
[Chapter 785: Planning](#)  
[Chapter 786: Kidnap!](#)  
[Chapter 787: Ill-Fate](#)  
[Chapter 788: Beginning of a storm](#)  
[Chapter 789: Proof of Innocence](#)  
[Chapter 790: The Race to Level 200](#)  
[Chapter 791: Battle of the Best](#)  
[Chapter 792: The Gates of Hell](#)  
[Chapter 793: Entering the Holy City](#)  
[Chapter 794: The Qualifications](#)  
[Chapter 795: Harcus the Old Gambler](#)  
[Chapter 796: The Ancient Hybrid Beast King](#)  
[Chapter 797: Greling Crypt](#)  
[Chapter 798: Spectre Ghost King Hargino](#)  
[Chapter 799: The Prowess of the Gates of Hell](#)  
[Chapter 800: Snow Queen Inheritance](#)  
[Chapter 801: New Party Members](#)  
[Chapter 802: Tesseract](#)  
[Chapter 803: Baa'ljilr the Imposter](#)  
[Chapter 804: Death Source Stone](#)  
[Chapter 805: Poseidon's Pearl](#)  
[Chapter 806: RE:Gates of Hell's](#)  
[Chapter 807: The Spectre's Heart](#)  
[Chapter 808: Enhancing the equipment](#)  
[Chapter 809: The Search for the Wind Essence Pearl](#)  
[Chapter 810: The Four Essence Pearls](#)  
[Chapter 811: Fire Elemental Core](#)

[Chapter 812: Flame Elemental Lord Ganesh](#)  
[Chapter 813: The Ice Weaver Set Equipment](#)  
[Chapter 814: Frost Lord, Antoine](#)  
[Chapter 815: Shadow Lord Margalor](#)  
[Chapter 816: Switch Targets](#)  
[Chapter 817: Lord of Light, Dustan](#)  
[Chapter 818: Ending the Fight](#)  
[Chapter 819: Unlimited Life Works](#)  
[Chapter 820: Equipment Upgrade System](#)  
[Chapter 821: The Start of the Invasion](#)  
[Chapter 822: Void Dweller, the Crosser](#)  
[Chapter 823: Queen of Misery Zhura](#)  
[Chapter 824: Demonic Pearl](#)  
[Chapter 825: The Fifth Wave, Flames of Fire](#)  
[Chapter 826: Aimore Mage Captian Heaphy](#)  
[Chapter 827: Tactical Retreat](#)  
[Chapter 828: Gate of Hell Activated!](#)  
[Chapter 829: Annihilation!](#)  
[Chapter 830: Demon Commander Isles](#)  
[Chapter 831: A Close Call](#)  
[Chapter 832: Sky Slicer](#)  
[Chapter 833: Staying In The Lead](#)  
[Chapter 834: Demon Lord Kenzack](#)  
[Chapter 835: Harder, Better, Faster, Stronger](#)  
[Chapter 836: Killing the Celestial tier Boss](#)  
[Chapter 837: Goddess of War Scion Form](#)  
[Chapter 838: Song of Despair](#)  
[Chapter 839: The Fallen Wind Ranger](#)  
[Chapter 840: God Killer Chest Plate](#)  
[Chapter 841: Regalia](#)  
[Chapter 842: Sharing is Caring](#)  
[Chapter 843: Blazing Coral](#)  
[Chapter 844: Returning A Favor with Emnity](#)  
[Chapter 845: Maya the Devourer](#)  
[Chapter 846: Drawn-out Battle](#)  
[Chapter 847: Takedown](#)  
[Chapter 848: Demon Lord Hulkinsh](#)  
[Chapter 849: Soloing a Celestial Tier Boss!](#)  
[Chapter 850: Acquisition Succeeded!](#)

[Chapter 851: The Disbanding of Eternal Flame](#)

[Chapter 852: Reckless Attempt](#)

[Chapter 853: An Unprecedented Finale](#)

[Chapter 854: Battle!](#)

[Chapter 855: Smoldering Intensity](#)

[Chapter 856: Conclusion](#)

[Author's Note:](#)

[Translator Note:](#)

[Editor Note:](#)